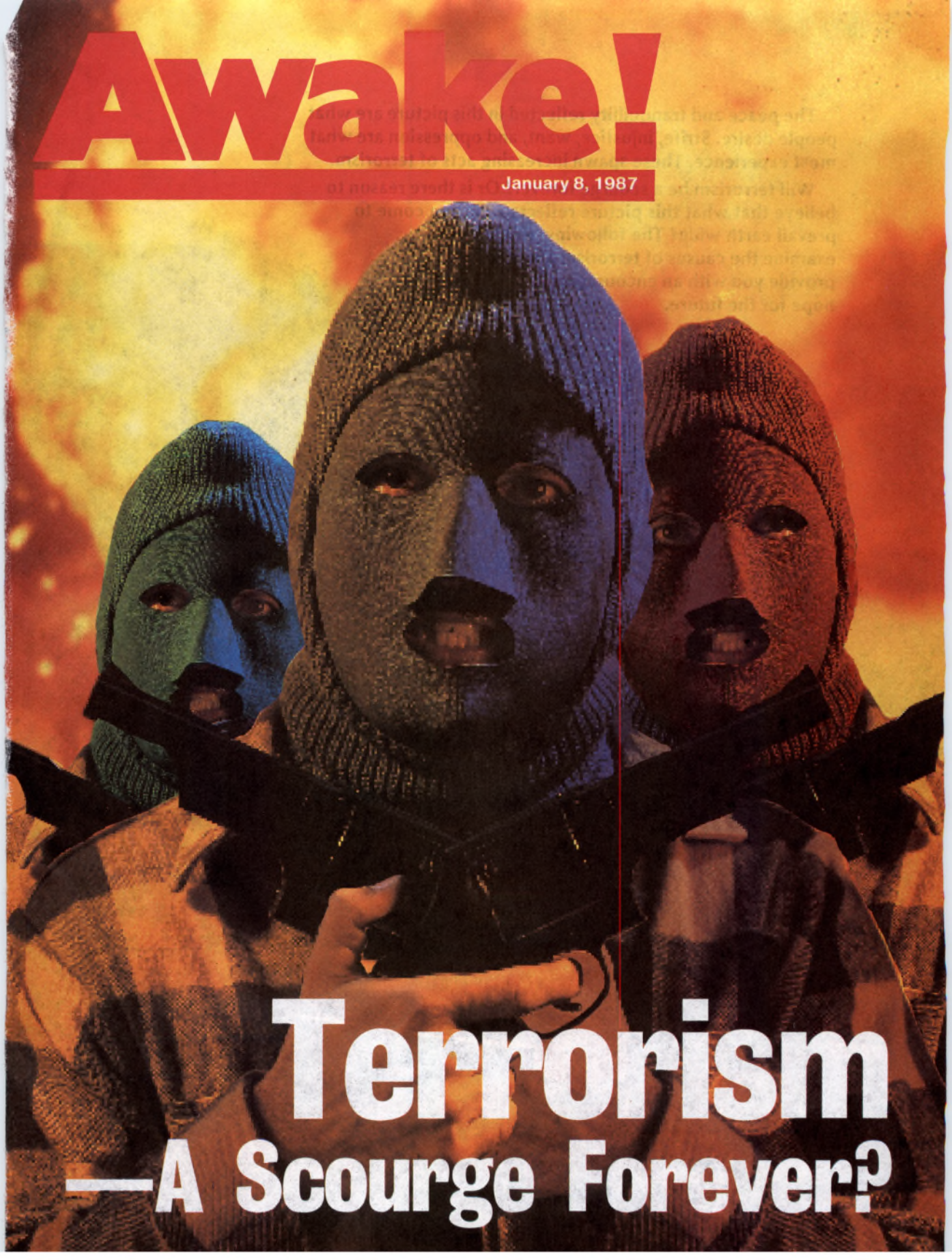
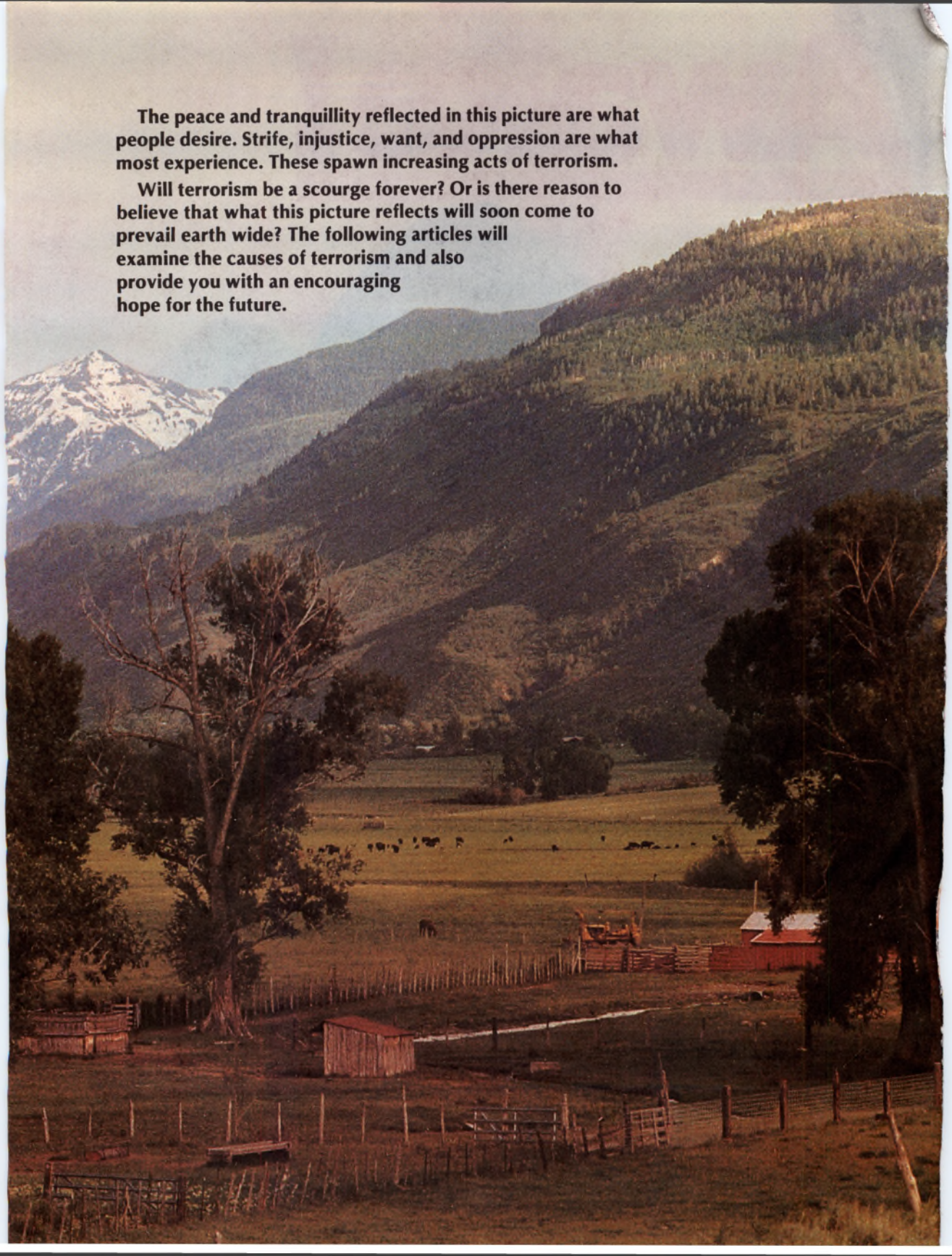
Awake!

January 8, 1987



Terrorism —A Scourge Forever?



The peace and tranquillity reflected in this picture are what people desire. Strife, injustice, want, and oppression are what most experience. These spawn increasing acts of terrorism.

Will terrorism be a scourge forever? Or is there reason to believe that what this picture reflects will soon come to prevail earth wide? The following articles will examine the causes of terrorism and also provide you with an encouraging hope for the future.

TERRORISM
—Who Are Affected?

***Awake!* has no involvement in politics. It takes a neutral position in this world's political conflicts. However, in accordance with its purpose, it probes beneath the surface and points to the real meaning behind current events. For that reason, *Awake!* examines the deeper motives behind terrorism as experts in the field see them. We leave our readers to draw their own conclusions.**

"Today the streets of the world's great cities, its airport tarmacs, and military bases are being turned into battlefields as small bands of terrorists and lone assassins seek to achieve political goals."

"From 1973 to 1984 there were over 5,000 terrorist incidents recorded worldwide that took over 4,000 lives and wounded twice that many."

"During the past fifteen years, diplomats from 113 countries have been targets of acts of terrorism occurring in 128 different nations."—*Fighting Back—Winning the War Against Terrorism.*

ARE you affected by terrorism? Did you cancel or change any travel plans during 1986 because of the fear of terrorists? Terrorism is now either a subliminal or a conscious stress factor in the lives of many people today. As Yitzhak Rabin, Israel's minister of defense, wrote: "Fear of terrorism has become the normal way of life for many people all over the world." It is very likely that you are helping to cover the costs imposed by terrorism. How so? A part of your taxes probably goes toward the higher costs of better security and increased preparedness that many governments are incurring because of the threat of terrorism.

Northern Ireland and the Middle East have been living with terrorism for decades. In recent years terrorism has left its mark on many European and Central and South American countries. And through television, radio, and the press, all of us have become acquainted with terrorist violence. It has almost become our daily fare. Terrorist bombs, murders, and kidnappings are so frequent that we have perhaps become callous. As a consequence, the abnormal seems normal, the unthinkable thinkable, and in some countries, such as Lebanon, the intolerable is tolerated.

Yes, terrorism is a fact of life—part of the regular output of the media, who have converted terrorist leaders and groups into

Awake!® January 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 1

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Terrorism—Who Are Affected? 3
Terrorism—What Is Behind It and Why? 6
Terrorism—What Is the Answer? ... 11

Also in This Issue

College Education —A Preparation for What? 15
The Ostrich and the Stork 16
The Bible's Viewpoint Does God Have Time for Me? 18
Young People Ask... Who Says It's Just a Crush? 20
A Closer Look at Four-Color Printing 23
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
***Awake!* Shares in Spreading the Good News** .. 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.20	$2.60
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

household names. Terrorism is now a worldwide scourge.—See accompanying map.

What Is Terrorism?

It might seem simple to define a terrorist. But that depends on which side of the issue you find yourself. Are the subversives of El Salvador terrorists or a 'people's national liberation movement'? Are the *contras* of Nicaragua terrorists, or are they "freedom fighters"? Terrorism, like beauty, is in the eye of the beholder. Political persuasion can distort a definition.

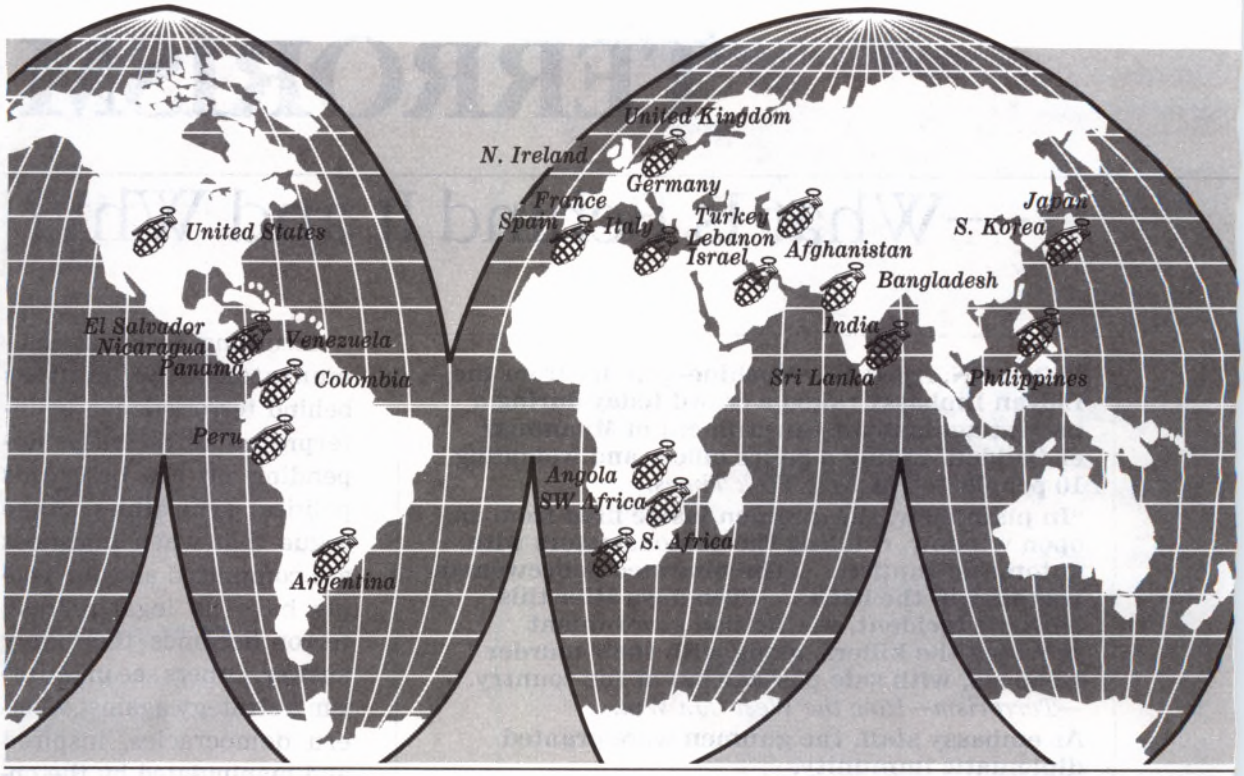
Benjamin Netanyahu, Israeli ambassador to the United Nations, offers this definition of terrorism: "The deliberate and systematic murder, maiming, and menacing of the innocent to inspire fear for political ends." (*Terrorism—How the West Can Win*) Sam Sarkesian of Loyola University, Chicago, defines it as "usually characterized by a variety of tactics, such as assassination, hijacking, kidnapping, sabotage, and the use of 'innocent' victims to affect a third party. Terrorism, in short, is the creation of fear in a population in order to force the existing system to respond to the terrorists' demands and/or objectives."—*Hydra of Carnage.*

On the other hand, Catholic professor of theology James Burtchaell writes: "Terrorism is the warfare of the desperate. . . . [It] is always the gesture of those who feel themselves at a disadvantage."—*Fighting Back.*

Whichever way you look at it, terrorism usually means violence and death for innocent people. As Jan Schreiber writes in his book *The Ultimate Weapon:* "Like an army, a terrorist gang operates in a dehumanized mode, making atrocity the stuff of daily life."

Not a New Phenomenon

Although centuries old, terrorism as a form of political persuasion has especially



Some countries recently in the news because of terrorism

been used in recent decades. Back in 1945, when it became evident that the British Labour government was not going to cede Palestine to the Jews, terrorist groups sprang up, including the *"Irgun Zva'i Leumi* (National Military Organization, called *Etzel*) and *Lohamei Herut Yisrael* (Fighters for the Freedom of Israel) [also known as Lehi or the Stern gang]—[who] engaged in acts of terrorism. On July 22, Etzel blew up a wing of the King David Hotel in Jerusalem, which housed the government administration, and about 100 Jews, Britons, and Arabs were killed." —*The Jews in Their Land,* by David Ben-Gurion.

Since the 1960's, terrorism has gathered momentum, especially in relation to the problems of Israel, the Palestinian refugees, and the Arab states.

Terrorism is not confined to Northern Ireland and the Middle East. Spain has its Basque ETA terrorists; India is troubled by Sikh separatists; Sri Lanka has been torn with strife because of Tamil militants; Peru has the Maoist *Sendero Luminoso* (Shining Path) fighters. In the so-called democratic world, the list seems endless.

But why are the democratic countries so affected? And what really are the causes behind terrorism? Are terrorists simply oppressed groups seeking justice and redress? Or is there more to it? And is terrorism here to stay? The following articles will examine these and other questions.

TERRORISM

—What Is Behind It and Why?

"LONDON, April 17—Machine-gun fire from the Libyan Embassy raked a crowd today during a protest against the Government of Muammar el-Qaddafi, killing a police officer and wounding 10 people."—*The New York Times.*

"In plain view, the gunmen inside fired from an open window, riddling the demonstrators with automatic gunfire . . . The unarmed policewoman was shot in the back. . . . Ten days after this barbaric incident, the British government provided the killers, along with their murder weapons, with safe passage out of the country."
—*Terrorism—How the West Can Win.*

As embassy staff, the gunmen were granted diplomatic immunity.

WHY do people and groups resort to terrorism? Who are the main targets? What does terrorism accomplish?

One point of view is that terrorism is a symptom that can indicate a variety of racial, social, and political injustices. Catholic priest and theologian James T. Burtchaell stated: "Some terrorism is perpetrated by an ethnic and/or religious (and usually economic) minority that demands self-governance: Basques in Spain, Catholics in Ulster, Huks in the Philippines. . . . Some is undertaken by governments threatened by majority dissent . . . Some is the venture of a national minority that aspires to control the government."

But is it just minority groups that resort to terrorism? Burtchaell continues: "Some terrorism is sponsored by governments to discredit, destabilize, and displace the government of another, uncooperative nation."—*Fighting Back.*

According to other commentators, the motives behind terrorism can be interpreted differently, depending on the observer's political sympathies. Some argue that when injustices are committed and the people have no legal redress, terror becomes their only answer. Others see in terrorism a strategy against Western democracies, inspired and manipulated by the opposing political ideology. Let us examine some of the facts and opinions about this complex problem.

Why the Terror in Northern Ireland?

According to the writers of *Northern Ireland—The Divided Province,* British Protestants, many from Scotland, were transplanted onto Irish Catholic soil over 350 years ago, which created a clash of cultures and later led to competition for jobs. That book states: "The Protestants of Northern Ireland mostly arrived during the 17th century in a pro-

cess begun in 1607 and known as the 'plantation' of Ulster. This at last established firm English rule upon the whole island of Ireland." This English rule has been the basis for bitterness and violence for centuries.

The Catholic Irish Free State (Eire) was formed in 1921, and the six mainly Protestant counties in the northeast were left as a separate entity, forming Northern Ireland. From the Irish nationalist viewpoint, this act dismembered Ireland. Ever since then, the illegal IRA (Irish Republican Army) has continued its fight to reunite Ireland—which the Protestants strongly resist. Why? Because they refuse to come under what they perceive to be 'Catholic Papist rule' in Dublin.

The Protestant viewpoint is summed up in the words of *The New York Times* regarding the recent vote in Ireland to keep a ban on divorce, which was upheld by a 3 to 2 margin: "Politicians in Northern Ireland who oppose any ties with the republic were among the first to denounce the vote as a measure of the 'stranglehold' of the Roman Catholic Church on the Irish Republic."

The IRA is presently divided into two factions—the Officials and the Provisionals (Provos). According to professor of history Thomas E. Hachey, "the IRA Officials are committed to an all-Ireland, thirty-two-county socialist republic. . . . The Provos advocate a federal solution and a federal constitution for Ireland." (*The Rationalization of Terrorism*) How seriously the latter feel about their aims was illustrated in 1984 when the Provos left a time bomb in a Brighton hotel, nearly killing British Prime Minister Thatcher and her cabinet.

Pacemaker Press Int'l, Belfast

The motives behind much of terrorism are related to Daniel's prophecy regarding the time of the end

In spite of religious, political, and ethnic factors, some questions remain: Are there any deeper motives behind terrorism? To what extent are the great powers involved?

The Motives Behind Terrorism

Most of the Arab terrorist groups justify their actions by pointing to the plight of the

Palestinian refugees who lost their homeland, Palestine, when the nation of Israel was formed in 1948. Over the decades, feelings have run so high that now the Arab terrorists' aim is not just a separate homeland but something more sinister to Jews—the annihilation of Israel. How is this known?

The following quotation is taken from the "Open Letter" of Hizballah ("Party of God"), a Shi'ite group operating in the Middle East.

Reuters/Bettmann Newsphotos

Modern terrorism has made effective use of the news media

"Our sons are now in a state of ever-escalating confrontation against these enemies [Israel, United States, France, and the (Lebanese) Phalange] until the following objectives are achieved:

"Israel's final departure from Lebanon as a prelude to its *final obliteration from existence* and the liberation of venerable Jerusalem from the talons of occupation." —*Hydra of Carnage.*

On the other hand, many terrorist acts have been perpetrated by "martyrs" under the influence of Iran's Ayatollah Khomeini and his philosophy, expressed in these words quoted from the book *Sacred Rage:* "The governments of the world should know that Islam cannot be defeated. Islam will be victorious in all the countries of the world, and Islam and the teachings of the Koran will prevail all over the world."

This perspective leads to his further conclusion: "We have in reality, then, no choice but to destroy those systems of government that are corrupt in themselves . . . and to overthrow all treacherous, corrupt, oppressive and criminal regimes. This is the duty that all Muslims must fulfill."

The driving force behind other terrorists is revolutionary socialism and the overthrow of capitalism. Writer Jan Schreiber states in his book *The Ultimate Weapon —Terrorists and World Order:* "In general the capacity to exploit is equated with capitalism, and capitalism, whether or not tempered by democracy, is equated with fascism." As a Japanese supporter of terrorism expressed it: "What we will never accept in this world is the fact, brought about by capitalism, of people exploiting other people. And *this* is our motive for being willing to fight."

However, others see terrorists in a different light. Israeli ambassador Benjamin Netanyahu writes: "Terrorism is not an automatic result of anything. It is a choice, an evil choice." He reasons: "The root cause of

terrorism lies not in grievances but in a disposition toward unbridled violence. This can be traced to a world view which asserts that certain ideological and religious goals justify, indeed demand, the shedding of all moral inhibitions."—*Terrorism—How the West Can Win.*

But why has our modern society suddenly become the victim of terrorism?

A Vulnerable Society

Neil Livingstone, a U.S. expert on terrorism, writes: "As our world has become ever more urban and complex, we have correspondingly become ever more vulnerable to the designs of small groups, or even single individuals, bent on disrupting the lives of or inflicting their will on, the majority." Why is our society so vulnerable to terrorist activity? "Our slender lifelines of water, energy, transportation, communication, and sanitation are all at the mercy of sophisticated terrorists and saboteurs." —*Hydra of Carnage.*

Because of the fragility of our life-support systems, one terrorist can exercise the power of an army of ancient times. Livingstone adds: "As a result of technological advances . . . one man can command more killing technology than ever before. One individual in the age of technology is potentially the equal of an army [of the age] when the chief weapons of war were the sword, the bow, and the spear. This is one of the chief reasons why terrorists represent such a threat to the contemporary world."

Another vulnerable point in modern society is the instant impact of news events. Television multiplies the power of terrorism. The terrorist wants international publicity for his cause—and thanks to the media, he gets it!

Only about a century ago, it took days for news to travel around the world. Now news is instantaneous. In some cases the terrorist can actually see himself enacting his role on TV. Often he knows what the other side is doing while he continues to play his cards close to his chest. Jan Schreiber goes so far as to say that "the drive to seize public attention" has been "the most consistently successful terrorist ploy."

But are there any other reasons why terrorism continues to prosper?

Terrorism and Two Opposing Ideologies

Offering no hope for the future, two consultants on terrorism write: "Terrorism will not disappear. Small, weak states have discovered that it can greatly increase their political clout, and plagued as they are by resource shortages, they are not likely to abandon terrorism as a political and military tool." At the same time, they add, some major powers see advantages in waging surrogate warfare through terrorism. "Larger, stronger states, by contrast, have discovered that terrorist proxies can help them achieve their national objectives without the risk attendant to other forms of warfare."—*Fighting Back.*

If the stronger states have discovered that terrorism can help them achieve their aims, could this account for some, or a major part, of world terrorism? Jan Schreiber writes: "Disclosures in the mid-seventies confirmed what dispassionate observers had long known without proof; that the two dominant ideologies of the world had employed, and would likely continue to employ, all means, fair and foul, to confound their enemies and gain, or retain, supremacy."

This clash of ideologies is implicit in a speech by Soviet leader Gorbachev when he said: "It must be crystal clear that

international relations can be channeled toward normal cooperation only if the imperialists abandon their attempts to solve the historical argument between the two social systems by military means."—*A Time for Peace.*

Others also recognize this international "chess game" between the two major powers. For example, Robin Wright states in her book *Sacred Rage:* "Muslim militants also feel the United States has looked at the Middle East primarily as an area for rivalry with the Soviet Union, virtually ignoring the powerful local forces at play. In a bipolar world, the U.S. has not been sensitive to the frustrated calls for recognition of the emerging Third World." Apparently, some smaller nations see themselves being used as pawns in the clash of ideologies.

Western experts view much of terrorism as another weapon being used to destabilize the capitalist system. Ambassador Robert B. Oakley, a U.S. expert on counterterrorism, stated: "Left unchallenged, the rise of terrorism will undermine the system of political, economic, and military relationships which the United States and its allies have come to rely upon to preserve, protect, and promote their national and mutual interests . . . During the years ahead, we must be prepared for continued serious threats from international terrorism . . . much of it supported or encouraged by a handful of ruthless governments."

U.S. ambassador Robert M. Sayre expressed his opinion more directly: "Terrorism is politically motivated and is planned and organized. . . . Most of it is carried out by states and groups of Marxist-Leninist persuasion, and the Soviet Union and its Eastern-bloc partners lend support and comfort to them."—*Department of State Bulletin.*

Terrorism and Bible Prophecy

Why is the clash between the two great powers, with terrorism as a tool, of special interest to Bible students? Because of a significant prophecy found in the Bible book of Daniel, chapter 11. This prophecy describes an ongoing conflict between two great powers, "the king of the north" and "the king of the south." "The king of the north" is identified as being atheistic, having rejected "the God of his fathers." (Daniel 11:37) He magnifies himself and gives glory to the god of fortresses, or armaments. He acts effectively against fortified strongholds and establishes his world position. (Daniel 11:38, 39) Does "the king of the south" stand idle while his opponent expands?

The ominous prophecy states: "And in the time of the end the king of the south will engage with him in a pushing, and against him the king of the north will storm with chariots and with horsemen and with many ships; and he will certainly enter into the lands and flood over and pass through." (Daniel 11:40) Logically, terrorism under its different guises is now being used by both kings in their struggle for world dominance.* Daniel's words indicate that there will be competitive coexistence between the two leading world powers until God brings an end to their rivalry at his war of Armageddon.—Revelation 16:14-16.

The questions remain: Can man alone end the scourge of terrorism? If so, how and when? If not, why not? Our next article will discuss these questions.

* For further information about these kings, see *"Your Will Be Done on Earth,"* chapter 11, published in 1958 by the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc.

TERRORISM
—What Is the Answer?

IF YOU travel by air at all, you have seen for yourself the effects of terrorism. Security checks are mandatory at nearly all international airports. Terrorism is costing governments and airlines a fortune in security measures. At the 1984 Olympic Games in Los Angeles, security cost the U.S. government some $65 million. How effective are these measures?

In some respects they are paying off. Over the last 20 years, in the United States alone, some 35,000 pistols or explosive devices have been found and 13,000 arrests made. (*Department of State Bulletin*) El Al, the Israeli airline, which has perhaps the strictest security check of all, has drastically cut down terrorist success in the air.

However, governments and agencies are really dealing with symptoms rather than causes. Their remedies do not get to the root cause for a disease that goes deep into modern society—a disease based on hatred and selfishness. Injustices and inequalities abound and multiply—whatever the prevailing ideology may be. Therefore, where can an answer be found? Can religion change hatred to love? Can politics bring unity out of disunity? Can the United Nations really unite the nations? Or is there some other answer?

> Over the last 20 years, in the United States alone, some 35,000 pistols or explosive devices have been found and 13,000 arrests made.
> —Department of State Bulletin

Does Religion Have the Answer?

The terrorist situation that has prevailed in Northern Ireland since 1969 has taken over 2,000 lives, with more than 20,000 injured in a country of some 1.5 million. The antagonists profess to share the same Christian heritage, based on the premise that "God is love." (1 John 4:8) Yet Catholic and Protestant terrorism continue. As John Hickey writes in *Religion and the Northern Ireland Problem:* "It is possible now . . . to accept danger or death as a consequence simply of being a Roman Catholic or a Protestant; to accept savage retaliation—sectarian murders—as the way of keeping Northern Ireland's particular version of the 'balance of terror.'"

The same writer also states: "Politics in [Northern Ireland] is not politics exploiting religion. . . . It is more a question of religion inspiring politics." And if that is the case, it is the politics of mutual murder and revenge.

Most religions claim to teach love as a basic maxim. A high percentage of terrorists have a religious affiliation—professed

Christian, Jewish, Muslim, Buddhist, Hindu, Sikh, or other. But how far does their religion influence their actions? In his book *The Ultimate Weapon—Terrorists and World Order,* Jan Schreiber quotes IRA leader Ruairi O'Bradaigh: "I was with a very hard man once. We'd set up a mine together, to go off under a party of British soldiers. . . . Sure enough, they were right on target. And what did this hard fellow do? Just before making the connection, to explode the mine and blow them all to smithereens, he closed his eyes. Then he crossed himself and whispered devoutly: 'May the Lord, now, have mercy on their souls!'"

Religion has not prevented right-wing Catholics in Spain from forming their own terrorist group, known as the *Guerrilleros del Cristo Rey,* or Guerrillas of Christ the King. According to the writers of *The Terrorists,* the *Guerrilleros* "owe their existence to religion as much as to politics."

"Just before making the connection, to explode the mine and blow them all to smithereens, he closed his eyes. Then he crossed himself and whispered devoutly: 'May the Lord, now, have mercy on their souls!'"

Should religion's failure to stem terrorism surprise us? Professor C. E. Zoppo, of the University of California's political science department, writes: "Organized religions in the West, when confronted with the uses of violence for political purposes, denied their religious enemies those moral rights that they promoted among their followers . . . and even permitted terrorism against the 'infidels.'" He continues by citing the Holy Crusade in the time of Pope Urban II. He states: "The Crusade was expected to subdue Islam permanently and was considered a 'war to end wars.' Islam was regarded as the incarnation of all the forces of evil, so whereas killing an enemy Christian soldier would earn a Christian soldier forty days' penance, killing Muslims became the 'epitome of all penance.'" —*The Rationalization of Terrorism.*

Other religions also attribute merit to the killing of an unbeliever, or infidel. They believe it is a passport to their heavenly paradise. Therefore, a terrorist's religious faith can actually strengthen his motivation to murder and even to carry out suicide bombing.

Is There a Political Solution?

Political and military experts in the West have their answers for terrorism, even though not always united in their application of them. The policy of victim nations right now is to fight fire with fire. William Casey, director of the CIA (Central Intelligence Agency) states: "We cannot and will not abstain from forcible action to prevent, preempt, or respond to terrorist acts where conditions merit the use of force. Many countries, including the United States, have the specific forces and capabilities we need to carry out operations against terrorist groups."—*Hydra of Carnage.*

The United States raid on Libya in April 1986, in retaliation for a terrorist bomb explosion at a Berlin nightclub, illustrates that philosophy. But it also exacts an immediate price—civilian casualties in Libya, viewed as unavoidable by U.S. authorities, and the loss of a U.S. plane with its crew. Terrorism and counterterrorism also have their hidden price—prestige and credibility.

The politicians and militarists view these as normal sacrifices in this form of covert warfare. As Benjamin Netanyahu writes: "All citizens in a democracy threatened by terrorism must see themselves, in a certain sense, as soldiers in a common battle. They must not pressure their government to capitulate or to surrender to terrorism. . . . If we seriously want to win the war against terrorism, people must be prepared to endure sacrifice and even, should there be the loss of loved ones, immeasurable pain." —*Terrorism—How the West Can Win.*

Then could the underlying causes of terrorism be removed by politics? Could injustices be righted and the situation defused? Not according to political commentators. Why not? Because, as we have seen in our previous article, they say that much of terrorism is just another tool in the clash between the two great political systems. Therefore, politics breeds terrorism.

As an example, French writer and journalist Jean-François Revel wrote: "In their manifestos and books, the terrorists describe their attacks on democracies as the 'strategy of tension.' The idea is that it is much easier to go from fascism to communism than from democracy to communism. The 'revolutionaries' must therefore first push the democratic governments toward a fascist pattern of behavior so as to build, in the second phase, socialism on the ashes of fascism." Thus, in some countries terrorists will deliberately murder military officers in order to provoke a right-wing military coup.

Can the UN Stem the Tide?

Political scientist C. E. Zoppo explained the quandary that the UN finds itself in: "It is not surprising . . . that the United Nations has not been able to reach any agreement on what constitutes international terrorism or on what would be appropriate responses by the member states." It should not be surprising to anyone when we realize that the UN is an international arena in which the major powers, like fighting elks, lock their horns in battle and become immobilized by semantics.

Another factor is that in the UN the democratic victim-nations of terrorism find themselves in a minority. As Zoppo illustrated: "A U.N. General Assembly resolution on international terrorism . . . while 'deeply perturbed over acts of international terrorism,' reaffirmed 'the inalienable right to self-determination and independence of all peoples under colonial and racist regimes and other forms of alien domination.'" This same resolution condemned "the continuation of repressive and terrorist acts by colonial, racist, and alien regimes in denying peoples their legitimate right to self-determination and independence."

Thus, according to Zoppo, the UN has approved a double standard on terrorism. He continues: "Implicitly, terrorism is condoned when it is a means to national self-determination and condemned when it is state terror to prevent independence. Newly established nations, having used terrorism themselves as a tool for liberation, find condemning it in others awkward." (*The Rationalization of Terrorism*) Therefore, as an effective instrument against terrorism, the UN is stymied. Morality does not prevail because, as Zoppo concludes, "politics basically defines what is moral." In the meantime, the innocent victims of terrorism suffer and die.

A Brotherhood Without Terror

Jan Schreiber explains the dilemma the nations face: "The disconcerting fact is that those countries wishing to eliminate

terrorism from the world—and they do not appear to be in a majority—are forced to content themselves with halfway measures. Either the standard punishments do not impress terrorists dedicated to making sacrifices for the sake of an ideology, or they call forth a violent response from those still able to fight."—*The Ultimate Weapon—Terrorists and World Order.*

In his analysis of the problem, Professor Zoppo concludes: "Hardly a modern nation was born without terror." That would seem to indicate that terror is an unavoidable ingredient of the political process. Yet we can affirm that there is one "nation" that has been formed without terror or violence —or political intervention. It is a nation numbering over three million, of peoples from all over the world, drawn from different cultures, languages, and religions. Who are they? The people who call on you with this magazine—Jehovah's Witnesses.

They are more than an *international* association of people. They are a *supranational* brotherhood, who now share a common belief and God-given hope. They are spreading their influence worldwide, not by terrorism, but by peaceable Bible education. In virtually every nation of the earth, they are recommending God's Kingdom government by Christ as the only solution to mankind's problems.—Matthew 6:9, 10.

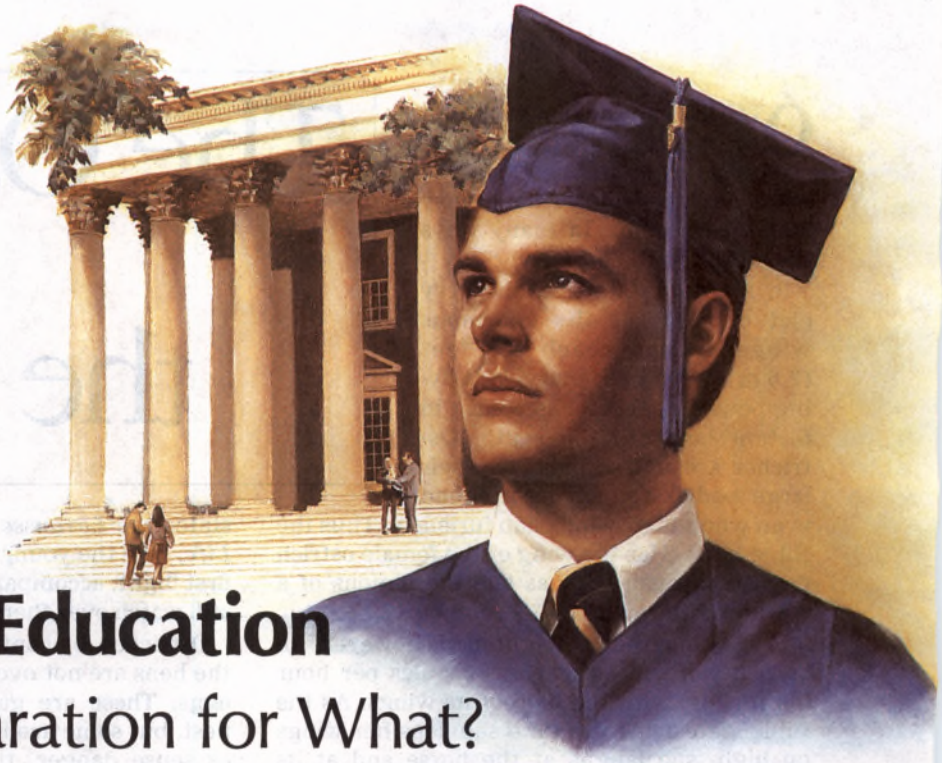
Yes, Jehovah's Witnesses have risen above divisive politics and nationalism, which result in wars and terrorism. They now form a people living in genuine peace, and they are preparing for the time, very soon, when the earth will be ruled only by God's Kingdom. That will not be brought about by world conversion but by a world cleansing at God's war of Armageddon.—Matthew 24:37-39; Revelation 16:14, 16.

Then, true peace and everlasting life will be the portion of the meek of the earth. (Titus 1:2; Revelation 21:3, 4) If you would like to know more about this Kingdom, where terrorism will be no more, please feel free to contact Jehovah's Witnesses in your community or write to the publishers of this magazine in your country.

God's Kingdom by Christ Jesus Will Remove Terrorism

Terrorism is said to be the warfare of the desperate who feel themselves at a disadvantage. Under God's Kingdom no one need feel at a disadvantage, as can be seen in the following prophecies pertaining to rule by Christ Jesus:

"O God, give your own judicial decisions to the king, and your righteousness to the son of the king. May he plead the cause of your people with righteousness and of your afflicted ones with judicial decision. Let him judge the afflicted ones of the people, let him save the sons of the poor one, and let him crush the defrauder. For he will deliver the poor one crying for help, also the afflicted one and whoever has no helper. He will feel sorry for the lowly one and the poor one, and the souls of the poor ones he will save. From oppression and from violence he will redeem their soul, and their blood will be precious in his eyes."—Psalm 72:1, 2, 4, 12-14.



College Education —A Preparation for What?

A FEW years ago, columnist Bill Reel wrote an article that appeared in the *Daily News*, a New York City newspaper, in which he presented some sobering facts about college education.

"What do you know after four years of higher education?" he asked. "No offense, but you don't know much. Oh, you might know quite a lot about Romantic poets or Renaissance painters or computer technology or accounting procedures. I hope you learned enough to make a living. . . . But nobody 22 years old knows much. You haven't lived long enough. Wisdom comes only with age. So get humble.

"You graduate from college with dreams for the future. Sadly, most of your aspirations will turn to ashes. I don't want to demoralize you, but you might as well hear the truth: When you acquire the possessions you covet, if you acquire them, and when you achieve the successes you pursue, if you achieve them, they won't satisfy you. Instead, at those very moments when you would expect to be reveling in triumph, you will feel empty rather than fulfilled, depressed rather than elated, agitated rather than peaceful."

As for the materialistic temptations that would face such college graduates, Reel pointed out "that all the magazines aimed at bright, upscale, affluent young Americans—aimed, in other words, at you—are packed with ads for sleek automobiles and heady alcohol and chic clothes and elaborate stereos and exotic beauty aids. The media hope to suck you into an unceasing orgy of conspicuous consumption. They will try mightily to persuade you that you urgently require what you merely wish for. They will attempt to confuse needs and wants in your impressionable minds.

"Many of you will be seduced by these smooth media manipulators, who are expert at exploiting your defects of character. . . . Your flashy acquisitions will give you no satisfaction whatsoever. Quite the reverse, in fact. The quest for possessions is an insatiable appetite that will sap your soul."

The Ostrich and the Stork

OTHER than the fact that both are large, winged, and feathered creatures with long legs, the stork and the ostrich have very little in common. In many ways they are opposites.

In flight the stork is the very picture of grace. Its enormous wingspan can reach 8.5 feet (2.6 m). With their marvelous flying power, some storks winter in distant lands to the south. Ostriches are not so blessed. Their large bodies remain earthbound even when their wings flap furiously. Thus the Bible asks: "Has the wing of the female ostrich flapped joyously, or has she the pinions of a stork and the plumage?"—Job 39:13.

When angered or frightened, however, an ostrich can run as fast as 40 miles per hour (64 km/hr) with the help of its wings. As the Bible states: "At the time she flaps her wings on high, she laughs at the horse and at its rider." (Job 39:18) One observer watched an ostrich chase a horse, giving it powerful kicks.

The two birds also have contrasting traits. The name for stork in Hebrew is derived from a word meaning "loving-kindness," or "loyal love." How appropriate this name is! After separating for migration, a pair of storks will reunite at the same nest year after year. They share in rebuilding the nest, incubating the eggs, and caring for newly hatched chicks. The brood usually numbers four, and for many weeks, the parents are kept busy feeding them. "Not until they are two months old," states the *Larousse Encyclopedia of Animal Life,* "are the young storks able to make their first flight, accompanied by their parents, who still watch over them and teach them to hunt."

Ostriches, by contrast, are polygamous, and the hens are not overly concerned about their eggs. These are gathered into a communal nest, but some are left outside. When ostriches sense danger, they temporarily abandon their eggs or chicks.

Marabou stork

Ostrich

Such seeming neglect harmonizes with the Bible's description of the female ostrich: "She leaves her eggs to the earth itself . . . And she forgets that some foot may crush them . . . She does treat her sons roughly, as if not hers." (Job 39:14-16) "Few readers of the Bible realize how exact is this passage," state ornithologists Dr. R. C. Murphy and Dr. D. Amadon.

Ostriches have a small head, and their brain is the size of a walnut. This explains why zoo director Terry Murphy wrote: "If there is one species that is an exception to the rule that birds are intelligent creatures it is the ostrich."

In his book *Some of My Best Friends Are Animals,* Murphy describes how one ostrich slept close to the fence on a cold night and froze to death. Another was strangled to death by entangling its neck between two bars of the fence. "But the most ridiculous thing about them," wrote Murphy, "is the things they eat."

Recently, while trying to get a closeup picture of an ostrich, a tourist had his camera wrenched from his grasp. In dismay he watched it slowly descend down the ostrich's long neck! *The Guinness Book of Animal Facts and Feats* lists the following items discovered in the stomach of one specimen: "A 3 ft long piece of rope, a spool of film, an alarm-clock key, a cycle valve, a pencil, a comb, three gloves, a handkerchief, glove-fasteners, pieces of a gold necklace, two collar-studs, a Belgian franc, two farthings and four halfpennies."

Appropriately, the Bible speaks of the female ostrich: "God has made her forget wisdom." (Job 39:17) Does this imply that an error was made by the Creator? By no means. Actually, the seeming neglect of the ostrich works for its preservation. Those eggs carelessly left outside a nest are sometimes needed to feed new chicks. Also, since the ostrich has no teeth, natural objects swallowed, like stones, are an important aid to digestion.

When an ostrich abandons its eggs or chicks, this distracts enemies. Sometimes ostriches display amazing bravery when doing this. One ostrich, on seeing an approaching truck, abandoned her chicks and ran toward the vehicle! She then veered to the side of it with one of her wings sagging, feigning injury.

Saddle-bill stork

Wood stork

The ostrich and the stork draw attention to the unfathomable mental resources of the One who designed them so differently. (Romans 11:33) As the psalmist exclaimed: "How many your works are, O Jehovah! All of them in wisdom you have made." —Psalm 104:24.

Does God Have Time for Me?

"IF THERE'S a God, he's not interested in you or me!" Have you ever heard people say that? Most people believe that God exists, but many feel that he could not possibly have the time to be concerned about them.

How can we be sure that God cares? He has provided us with loving gifts, including life itself. He created pleasures for us—the taste of food, the sound of music, the marvels of nature, the scent of fresh mountain air, the soft touch of a loved one, the laughter of children, and the warmth of a baby's smile. All of these are gifts from God. We enjoy them only because he lovingly gave us the ability to do so by means of our five senses.—James 1:17.

In addition, if God did not care about humans, why would he have provided the Bible that gives so much guidance and comfort to people and that is filled with information about his ways and dealings?—2 Timothy 3:16, 17.

The Bible shows that God is interested in individuals—that he is interested in *you*. His written Word shows how you can have a happier life, a better family, and finer children. Yes, the Bible shows you the way to contentment and satisfaction. It relates God's wisdom and strengthens your faith in his promises. It provides a firm hope for the future. Does that sound like the kind of help that comes from someone who does not care?

Further, a person who cared about you would be approachable. Is that true of God? Consider what these Bible writers say: "Taste and see that Jehovah is good," wrote David. Further, the disciple James admonished: "Draw close to God, and he will draw close

God has time for you. Do you make time for God?

to you." And the apostle Paul said that God made humans "to seek God, if they might grope for him and really find him, although, in fact, he is not far off from each one of us." —Psalm 34:8; James 4:8; Acts 17:24-27.

Do You Make Time for God?

Isn't that interesting? These Biblical statements say that God is close but that we must make time to pursue a relationship with him. He cares, but we must make an effort, show some initiative!

Jesus said: "Keep on asking, . . . keep on seeking, . . . keep on knocking, and it will be opened to you." He said that if your son asks for bread, you will not give him a stone, or if he asks for a fish, you will not give him a snake. "Therefore," Jesus continued, "if you, although being wicked, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more so will your Father who is in the heavens give good things to those asking him?"—Matthew 7:7-11.

Think of what Jesus was saying—if you seek God's favor, he will show greater interest in you than parents show in their own children!

'Will God Even Listen to Me?'

However, some may have done very bad things—both in the eyes of God and of men. They might say: 'Surely, God would never listen to *me!*'

But those people can do something about their lives. They can change. The Bible says: "Let the wicked man leave his way, and the harmful man his thoughts; and let him return to Jehovah, who will have mercy upon him, and to our God, for he will forgive in a large way."—Isaiah 55:7.

The Bible gives quite a list of things people might have done. It says: "Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor men kept for unnatural purposes, nor men who lie with men, nor thieves, nor greedy persons, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit God's kingdom. And yet that is what some of you *were.*" They had changed. They had put aside their old ways. They had turned around, been washed clean, been sanctified and "declared righteous in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ and with the spirit of our God." So there is hope for all who really want God to care for them!—1 Corinthians 6:9-11.

Someone Died for You

However, there is far greater proof that God cares for individuals—that he has time for you. God sent the one dearest to Him in all the universe to give his life as a ransom for those who will accept it. The Scripture says: "God recommends his own love to us in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us."—Romans 5:8.

Do we really show appreciation for that magnificent act of love? Do we make the time to speak with thanksgiving to the God who cares so much? And do we take the time to speak to others about him?—1 John 4: 16, 19.

What He Expects

Thus, the Scriptures already cited show that God is close but that he expects us to make an effort. They urge us to take positive action: "Taste," "search," "seek," "grope," 'ask,' 'knock.' Such actions show willingness, determination, appreciation, and faith.

We are counseled to search the Scriptures, to learn about God, to bring our lives into harmony with his ways, to accept his Son as Ransomer, and to come under God's arrangement for salvation. If you make the effort to do so, you will see that God really does have time for you.

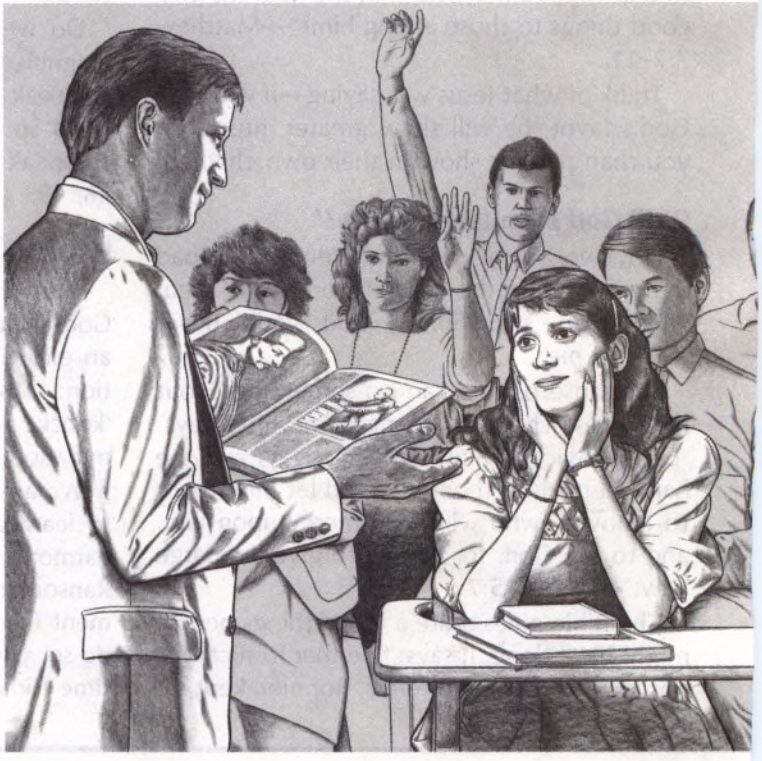
Who Says It's Just a Crush?

"DID you ever have a crush on someone when you were a teenager?" The *Awake!* reporter has aimed his query at a group of adults, ages 21 to 70. The immediate response? Laughter—and a flurry of memories.

"Did I!" replies Jerry.* "I was just a teenager, and I had a real crush on a girl six years older than I. She was gorgeous—big brown eyes! But I kept my feelings secret. Not even my mom could detect that I liked the girl."

"I had a terrible crush on my art teacher," recalls Valerie, now a married woman. "He was so good-looking." Not to be outdone, Jane, a mother of two, says: "When I was a teenager, I had a crush on my favorite singer. I'd get up early in the morning so I could get a front-row seat at his concerts. Once a couple of girls and I even ran down to his dressing room! But when I finally saw him, I just stood there with my mouth open." Why, even the senior member of our group recalls having had a crush on a movie star!

Yes, ask just about any group of grown-ups, and you'll find that almost all had infatuations, or crushes, when they were younger. Often these centered on persons that were unattainable—teachers, singing stars, older acquaintances. Psychologist Kathy Moricca says: "Crushes are part of



Crushes on older —unavailable—members of the opposite sex are quite common

* Some of the names have been changed.

growing up. Almost all young people have them." And most manage to survive their infatuations—pride and sense of humor intact. Indeed, years later most can usually laugh off the experience.

However, when you are caught in the grip of a crush, there seems to be little to laugh about. "I was frustrated," recalls Jerry, "because I couldn't *do* anything about it. I knew she was too old for me, but I liked her. I was really bent out of shape over the whole thing." Valerie adds: "I pictured myself married to my teacher. We would have four children and live in a lovely home. It was really hard getting over him."

It hurts to care for someone you can never have. And being told that what you feel is nothing more than a childish crush does not make you feel any better. As far as you are concerned, your feelings are *real!* 'Why doesn't anyone believe me when I say I'm in *love?'* you wonder.

The Anatomy of a Crush

"Love is from God," says the apostle John. (1 John 4:7) It is therefore no sin to have strong feelings for someone—provided such feelings are not immoral or improper (such as for someone married). However, Christian love is based on principle, not passion. (Compare 1 Corinthians 13:4-7.) And the Bible associates such love, not with youths, but with spiritually mature, or "full-grown," Christians.—Ephesians 4:13-15.

When you are young, "desires incidental to youth" often rule your thoughts and actions. (2 Timothy 2:22) Indeed, puberty unleashes new and potent feelings. It takes years for most of us to learn how to bring such desires under control. Interestingly, the book *The Individual, Marriage, and the Family* further observes: "Because of our society's emphasis on the importance of romantic love, the young person . . . dreams of the fulfillment of love long before he is ready for or even encounters an appropriate object of romantic love."

How frustrating it is to have whipped-up romantic feelings—and no one to lavish them on! Further, often "girls become poised and socially at ease at an earlier age than boys," as *Seventeen* magazine observes. As a result, "they often find their male classmates immature and unexciting compared to teachers" or other older, unattainable men. A girl might thus imagine that a favorite teacher, pop singer, or some older acquaintance is the "ideal" man. Boys, though, can become similarly infatuated.

However, the odds of a real romance developing with that charming teacher or sensual singer are about nil. Obviously, then, any love felt for such distant figures is rooted more in fantasy than reality. No wonder that, according to *The Individual, Marriage, and the Family,* such infatuations tend to be "rather short-lived"! Or as *'Teen* magazine put it: "For most teens, crushes are as common as colds." Some youths, though, persist in their fantasies, insisting they feel real love.

Crushes—Harmless or Harmful?

'But if almost everyone experiences crushes,' you ask, 'what's the harm?' Well, 'almost everyone' has also had the measles. The fact is, crushes can be harmful.

For one thing, many objects of teenage affection are not worthy of a Christian's esteem. A wise man said: "Foolishness has been put in many high positions." (Ecclesiastes 10:6) Thus a singer is idolized because he has a smooth voice or striking looks. But what are his morals? Is not the life-style of many rock idols one of foolishness? The Bible also warns Christians:

"Friendship with the world is enmity with God." (James 4:4) Would it not jeopardize your friendship with God if you set your heart on a person whose conduct God condemns? It is also wrong to harbor amorous feelings for someone married.—Proverbs 5:15-18.

Further, the Bible says: "Guard yourselves from idols." (1 John 5:21) This is true even when the idolized one leads a reasonably acceptable life. What do you call it when a youth's room is decorated wall to wall with pictures of a beloved singing star? Is it not dangerously akin to idolatry? "I don't idolize him at all," claims one young girl of her favorite singer. But she also admits: "I am always thinking about this particular person . . . I have to get this person out of my mind."

Indeed, some allow their fantasies to override reason. Writes another girl of her infatuation with a popular singer: 'I want him to be my boyfriend, and I have prayed that it come true! I used to sleep with his album because that was the closest I could get to him. I'm at the point where if I can't have him, I'll *kill myself.*' Could such mindless passion be pleasing to God, who commands us to serve him with "a sound mind"?—Romans 12:3.

Says the Bible at Proverbs 13:12: "Expectation postponed is making the heart sick." Cultivating romantic 'expectations' for an impossible relationship can literally make you sick. Unrequited love is cited by doctors as a cause of "depression, anxiety, and general distress . . . sleeplessness or lethargy, chest pains or breathlessness."

Think, too, of the havoc you wreak when you allow a fantasy to dominate your life. Dr. Lawrence Bauman observes that one of the first evidences of a runaway crush is "slackening off of school effort." Isolation from friends and family is another common result of being caught in a crush. (Compare Proverbs 18:1.) "Even my family was upset about my behavior," confesses one young girl who "loved" a popular singer to the neglect of everyone else.

Even where no dire consequences result, there is also the humiliation of making a fool of oneself. "I'm embarrassed to admit this," says writer Gil Schwartz, "but I behaved like a buffoon during my crush on Judy." Long after the crush has dissipated, memories of your following someone around or perhaps making a scene in public can linger.

Fortunately, like the adults mentioned at the outset, most youths simply outgrow their crushes. And a future article will help those who do not. In the meantime, the best advice is to recognize a crush for what it is—a youthful fantasy.

Perhaps there may be some redeeming value in 'having loved and lost.' However, never let a hopeless infatuation gain control of your life or waste your emotions. Writer Gil Schwartz recalls just how futile this is. "For all the passion and plotting I invested in Judy," he recalls, "I'll bet she never gave me a second thought."

In Our Next Issue

- How Did Life on Earth Begin?
- Florida's Looe Key, a Sanctuary for Beauty
- Now I Play a Different Tune

Beginning with this issue, most English-language editions of "Awake!" as well as some other language editions join "The Watchtower" in changing permanently to a four-color format. Four-color printing is the process of reproducing natural colors by combining three basic colors and black. How are four-color pictures produced on a printed page? What technology is now being used? The following article describes part of what is involved in four-color work at the Watchtower Society's headquarters in Brooklyn, New York.

A Closer Look at Four-Color Printing

THE printing of pictures in magazines, newspapers, and books produces an optical illusion. For example, consider how a black-and-white photograph or drawing is reproduced by the widely used offset-printing method.

Printing in black and white uses one printing ink—black. When you look at a black-and-white picture, however, your eye sees tones of gray too. How are the various tones of gray, as well as the black, produced on a printed page? By the use of dots.

Dots? Yes, dots of ink. If you use a strong magnifying glass to look at a printed picture, you will see that the picture is made up of many small dots. There is no longer the continuous tone of an artist's drawing or of a photograph. To get on the printed page, a picture must be transformed into dots.

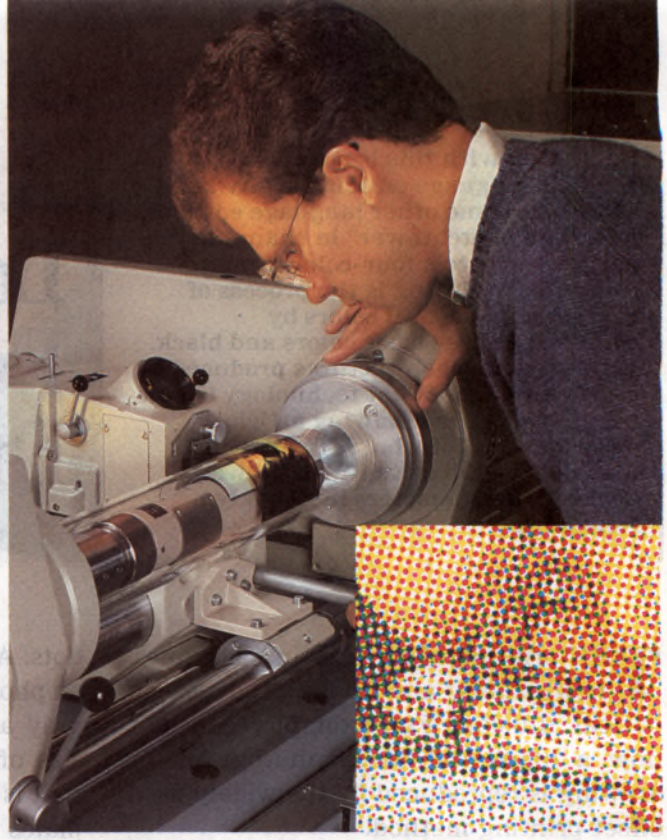
How are the dots made? The drawing or photo is reconstructed into a pattern of small and clearly defined dots by a large machine called a scanner. The scanner has a computer that electronically interprets tones and produces varying sizes of dots. A laser is used to expose those dots on photographic film. The various tones of gray are thus obtained by changing the size of these dots, which accept the ink that is then transferred from the printing plates to the paper.

When printing is done on white paper, the lighter the shade, the smaller the dots will be. Darker shades will be reproduced as bigger dots. Thus, the dots "trick" the eye into seeing what appears to be continuous tones of black and shades of gray of the original photo or drawing.

Color Reproduction More Complicated

Full-color reproduction is more complicated than black and white. Here, three basic colors plus black are used: (1) cyan (greenish blue); (2) magenta (raspberry red); and (3) yellow; plus (4) black. Dots carrying each of these four inks are combined in layers on the paper by the printing press to reproduce the wide range of colors your eye sees on a printed page.

However, from the original drawing or photograph, it is first necessary to isolate each of the three main colors and the



**Operator setting up scanner
Inset: Blown-up section of picture**

black into sets of dots that indicate the lighter or darker intensities of each color. But how do these four colors make all the other different colors that you see on a printed page?

Let us say that we have a photo of green grass that we want reproduced in our magazine. During printing, the paper will pass through four sections on the press, each section adding one of the colors. The dots on one set of printing plates pick up cyan ink and transfer their shape to the paper. As the paper moves at high speed along the press, another set of plates with its dots picks up yellow ink and transfers their impression to the paper alongside the dots of cyan. Light reflected from the cyan and yellow inks plus white paper is seen by the eye as green. All the other colors of the rainbow result when the four printing sections lay down their dot combinations in the four colors of ink.

Our Production Sequence

Long before the finished product comes off the press, much work must be done. Film (negatives or positives) must be made of the photo or art to be printed. This film will be the basis for making the printing plates for the press.

A color page of a printed magazine requires, at a minimum, four pieces of film, one for each of the three main colors plus one for the black. This film is produced by our laser scanner. The scanner analyzes the photo or art work to be reproduced and stores the image in its memory.

The scanning machine looks like a ten-foot-long (3 m) lathe. It has a high-intensity light-beam that probes across the color picture as it spins on a cylinder. As it scans, the light is reflected and is split by optical devices into three light-paths, one for each primary color. Each light-path has a filter that blocks out all but one basic color. The black is produced by combining the signals for the three basic colors in the areas that appear black in the original.

The scanner, with the help of a computer, translates the intensities of each color into electronic signals, and through an electronic "screening" process produces the corresponding dots, which are then stored in the computer's memory.

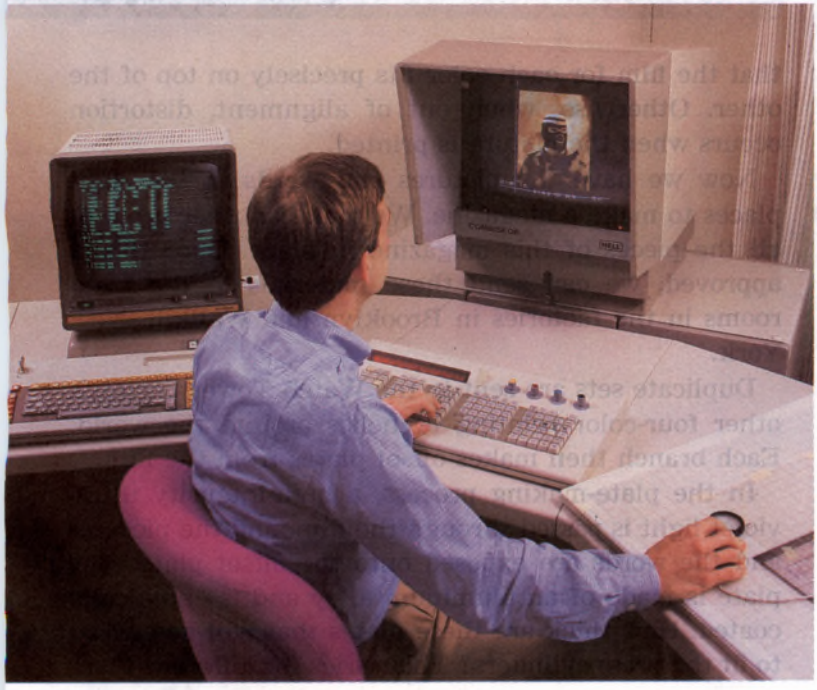
What if the photo or drawing is too big or too stiff to bend around the cylinder of the scanner? Then a color photograph or transparency (35 mm or larger) is made and mounted on the cylinder. The scanner can enlarge or reduce the image as desired.

Page-Makeup Station

Next, the information stored in the computer is displayed at a page-makeup station. This station has a keyboard and a monitor that resembles a large television screen. By pressing certain keys, the operator causes the picture to appear on the screen. By electronic means, he makes needed adjustments in color tones. Details can be either sharpened or eliminated.

The station can also combine elements of different pictures to make a single picture. For example, a sunset from one picture, a man from a second, and a house from a third can be combined to form one picture of a man in front of a house at sunset.

After adjustments, the electronic signals representing the picture can be sent by computer to other machines to make either proofs or film.



Operator at page-makeup station

Making Color Proofs

The color-proofing device uses beams of red, green, and blue light to make a color proof. This proof material is made of the same kind of paper that you get back from a camera shop when you send in pictures to get processed.

Several staff members analyze the proofs. Perhaps some feel that the sky in a picture is not blue enough—it is too green. "Take some yellow out," others suggest. "But the bananas in the fruit basket have to stay just as yellow," another cautions. So adjustments in color tone need to be made to take some yellow out of the sky but not out of the bananas. To do this, we go back to the page-makeup station, where the operator makes the changes.

Now we have an actual copy of the picture that we will be printing. Once

Comparing color proofs with original transparency

this picture is approved, we tell the computer that it is time to put the pages in order for producing the film.

The Final Product

The film recorder has a laser. The laser reacts to the signals and in turn exposes the electronic dots onto film negatives. A separate piece of film is made for each color. One film has the dots representing the magenta in the original picture; a second has the cyan; a third has the yellow; and a fourth has the black. These films are the actual size of the picture as it will appear in the magazine.

The final assembly of text with pictures is made on a light-table. Now we take our pieces of film with all the dots representing the pictures, and in their proper printing sequence. These flats of film are given to a person called an image assembler. He looks at the quality of the film, and adds on a separate sheet of plastic the words or text in negative form. The people doing this work use magnifying lenses to make sure

that the film for each color fits precisely on top of the other. Otherwise, when out of alignment, distortion occurs when the picture is printed.

Now we have the pictures and words in the right places to make a magazine. We make another proof of all the pieces of this magazine in place. Once this is approved, we can send these materials to the plate rooms in the factories in Brooklyn and Wallkill, New York.

Duplicate sets are sent to the Watch Tower Society's other four-color printing branches around the world. Each branch then makes offset plates from the film.

In the plate-making process, a high-intensity ultraviolet light is passed through the film, and the pictures and the words are exposed onto the offset plate. The plate is made of an aluminum alloy and is chemically coated. How thick are these plates that will be curved to fit the press cylinders? This varies for different types

of presses, but at our Brooklyn plant the plates are only 8/1,000 inch thick! At our Watchtower Farms plant, located outside New York City, the presses are larger, and hence the plates are thicker.

The plates are mounted on the press in proper color order and are now ready for the printing of the magazine. As the cylinders of the press rotate, each plate gets its one color from a special reservoir that contains ink of that color. The ink is transferred from the metal plate to a cylinder covered with a rubber sheet, or blanket, which in turn transfers the ink to the paper. When all four colors are imposed on top of one another on the paper, we approximate natural color.

But we are not through yet. Imposing four inks on top of one another creates a sticky combination that needs to be dried quickly. So the paper passes through a high-velocity hot-air drying unit toward the end of the press. High temperature quickly dries the ink. Then the heated paper runs over water-cooled rollers to bring the temperature down and harden the ink.

Color Limits

How well does this process reproduce the colors of an original photograph or drawing? No machine can reproduce exactly what the human eye sees. The human eye can see from five million to ten million shades of color! But an offset press can print only five hundred to a thousand shades. Thus we cannot duplicate the brightest white or the darkest color details of the original picture.

Another important factor is the type of paper used. The color brightness achieved is limited by the quality and makeup of the paper and how effectively the inks are laid down on that type of paper. With the *Awake!* and *The Watchtower,* the paper quality is limited by cost considerations because we want these magazines to be as low in cost as possible so they can be readily obtained by millions of people earth wide, including those with limited funds.

The cost to readers is also reduced because our work is nonprofit. Something else that contributes to the low cost is the fact that the thousands of workers producing the magazines in Watch Tower branches throughout the world are all full-time volunteer ministers who receive only room and board and a small monthly reimbursement for expenses.

Worth the Effort

The average person looking at a magazine in full color may not at first appreciate the enormous amount of work and technology that is involved, from writing the material to printing it and bringing it to his home. In fact, to get a magazine ready for the press, virtually the same effort must be put forth for one in a language requiring just a few thousand copies as for an English *Awake!* or *Watchtower* magazine with its millions of copies.

But it is worth the effort. Natural color makes printed material more interesting and appealing and therefore encourages reading. Obviously we respond favorably to color because our Creator made us to see in color. Therefore, this step forward to regular four-color printing in *Awake!* is desirable. And as we keep learning how to improve our printing methods, we will continue to upgrade the quality of our magazines to make them even more beneficial and enjoyable.

From Our Readers

Hope for the Mentally Ill

I must express my appreciation for the articles on mental illness. (September 8, 1986) Although suffering from schizophrenia and having been in a psychiatric hospital, I still did not understand or accept the diagnosis until I read your articles. I take medication once a month to control the symptoms, and I think it is a small price to pay to be able to function normally and feel well.

B. B., England

I just had to write and thank you for the articles on "Hope for the Mentally Ill." There was mental illness in my family and family background. Your articles stated how mental illness is often a badge of shame, a malady draped with the language of contempt. That's exactly how I felt. Your articles will enlighten many people, I'm sure, and help them to show more compassion for those who suffer from emotional disorders.

J. R. F., United States

My grateful thanks to you for the articles on "Hope for the Mentally Ill." For six years now I have been suffering from schizophrenia without being aware of it and was even interned in a mental institution where, fortunately, they discovered what my problem was. Now under medication I feel practically normal, for which I thank Jehovah. Before reading the articles my knowledge of schizophrenia and its symptoms was limited. Now, however, with a better understanding of this ailment, how happy I am to know that even though there is no cure, it can be controlled and that in the near future Jehovah, through Christ Jesus, will put an end to all sickness.

A. M. S., Brazil

I am writing about the last sentence in the article "Mental Illness—Is There a Cure?" It states: "Her faith helps more than any medication doctors have to offer." Might this statement cause some in the truth to put off seeking medical help for mental problems?

I. V. R., England

We believe that statement should be understood in the context of the entire series of articles. It was shown that Irene needed to stay on her medication. But the point is that at best the medication, though necessary, was of limited value and had undesirable side effects. Her faith in Jehovah not only helps sustain her through these problems but gives her a sure hope of a complete cure in the new system under Christ Jesus, something far better than the limited benefits medicine can give her.—ED.

Down's Syndrome

I am writing concerning the item "Down's Syndrome—A Modern Approach," dealing with newly developed cosmetic surgery to alter the appearance of children suffering from Down's syndrome. (February 8, 1986) Although you take a strong attitude toward the blood issue, you deal with this subject in a favorable light.

T. N., Japan

The information was presented only as a news item, not as a recommendation. The last paragraph stated: "Of course, plastic surgery in such instances has its critics. And 'Awake!' does not endorse or recommend specific forms of therapy, recognizing that these are matters for personal decision." Such an operation would be different from taking blood, something strictly forbidden in God's Word.—Leviticus 17:10-14; Acts 15:29.—ED.

Watching the World

Music and Satanism

Law enforcement authorities in recent years have observed that crimes ranging from arson to child abuse to murder are frequently surrounded by an increasing amount of satanic and occult trappings. In many cases, authorities state that adolescents involved in criminal activity are strongly influenced by punk and "heavy-metal" rock music, notes *The Register,* a California newspaper. One police probation officer explained: "Basically, the music teaches that you don't have to listen to your parents, and that you should live life the way you want." She added that some rebellious teens take lyrics literally and begin to live them—including embracing Satan as a symbol of power. Orange County deputy district attorney Dick Fredrickson says: "Once you fall into that heavy-metal syndrome and the embracing of Satan, then it's easy to do things you otherwise would not do." The article pointed out that satanic messages and traces of the occult have become so common at the scene of a crime that police officers are receiving special training to recognize them.

Baby Experiments

Each year, as many as 2,000 babies in Britain have medical experiments carried out on them without the knowledge of their parents, according to 19 senior doctors and academics at Britain's Institute of Medical Ethics. *The Medical Post* reported that the group's study revealed that such failure to obtain parental consent occurs "most often with research involving newborn infants." Dr. Richard Nicholson, deputy director of the Institute, stated that doctors publicly admit that such unauthorized experiments occur because "difficulties in obtaining consent from parents are so great that they don't even make the attempt."

"Paperless Marriages"

When a man and a woman live together as husband and wife

without benefit of a legal marriage, how long does that relationship last? Statistics from Norway and Sweden show that "half of the paperless marriages do not last over two years, and 60 percent to 80 percent of them break up in a maximum of five years," reports the French daily *Le Monde.*

Illiteracy Up

"There have rarely been so many . . . illiterate people" in France. This statement by the French daily *Le Figaro* is based on a report establishing "that about 15 percent of the [French] population, namely 8 million people (immigrants excluded), are as good as illiterate. . . . They can scarcely read and can only write phonetically. Also, according to the UNESCO definition of illiteracy, they are incapable of 'understanding a brief and simple text relating to facts of everyday life.'" Schoolchildren are no exception, as approximately a quarter of those entering high school cannot read properly.

Suicides and TV

Two new studies claim that television dramas about suicide, as well as television news coverage on the subject, seem to cause "a temporary increase in the number of teen-agers who take their own lives," notes *The New York Times.* The reports suggest that media coverage of the subject results in an "imitative effect" on teenagers, thus influencing the suicide rate. A

study by two sociologists revealed that the number of suicides increased by as much as 7 percent in the seven days after special reports or televised coverage of news incidents of suicide. The results were "nearly 3 extra suicides nationwide per program, or 110 more suicides than would otherwise be expected in the [six] years covered in the study." Dr. David P. Phillips warns that "for about a week after news stories on suicide, teen-agers and their friends, parents and counselors should be especially alert for signs of suicidal tendencies."

Youths' Fears

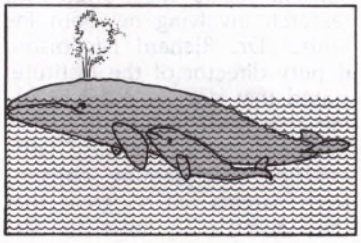
Unemployment is the biggest fear among British teenagers, reports *The Guardian* of London. A survey of 15- and 16-year-olds reveals that fear of nuclear war ranks as their second greatest worry. Though girls expressed more pessimism than boys, "a substantial proportion of both sexes felt helpless or fatalistic" about nuclear war prospects. Such anxieties are not limited to Britain. Throughout much of western Europe, the worsening employment situation contributes to what the European Common Market's Economic and Social Committee calls "vague feelings of uneasiness about the future" that have led to a 'sharp fall in the birth rate.'

Murderous Traffic

Since the State of Israel was founded in 1948, there have been 13,717 traffic deaths on the country's roads—three times more deaths than the 4,500 killed during the Middle East wars and in terrorist attacks. According to a news release by Israel's Minister of Transport, the government in Jerusalem has decided to appoint a select committee to investigate the causes of the unusual number of traffic deaths on Israeli roads.

Whale Migration

Radio transmission is helping to unravel the mysteries of whale migration. "Whales off the coast of Japan have been tracked over a distance of 2,000 kilometers [1,250 mi]," says the French daily *La Croix*. "Gray whales from the Mexican coast migrate as far as Alaska."



By equipping certain whales with transmitters, scientists have collected reams of information concerning diving time, travel speed, and migratory cycles. Gathering these facts was a challenge because radio signals can be received only when the whale surfaces—for no longer than three seconds each time!

Shock Treatment

Recently, a new form of treatment to save victims of snakebite was discovered, and *The New York Times* reports that it defies scientific explanation. The remedy involves a series of high-voltage, low-current electric shocks that by means of a modified stun gun are administered to the area of a bite approximately five to ten seconds apart. Each of the 34 cases treated showed evidence of venomous bites penetrating the victim's skin. The researchers explained that when treatment was given within a half hour of an attack, none of the victims showed the usual serious medical complications, and no deaths occurred among those treated. The researchers also noted that within 15 minutes of the therapy, the pain caused by the poisonous bites disappeared. Similar relief was also obtained in two cases where victims were not treated until two hours after suffering venomous bites. In addition to snakebites, researchers say, the bites of venomous ants and scorpions can successfully be treated with shock therapy.

Harmful Habit

Gastroenterologist Dr. Keith Taylor at the Stanford Medical Center says that late night snacks can be harmful, especially if a person repeatedly goes to sleep an hour or so after eating. Why? He explains that most body functions, including digestion, are slowed down during sleep. Thus, the excess acid produced as a result "frequently backs up into the esophagus when you're lying down, causing irritation," notes *Parade Magazine*. People already suffering with ulcers of the stomach or the duodenum will likely suffer even greater discomfort. Dr. Taylor suggests eating at least two or three hours before retiring at night. Milk is not recommended for ulcer patients, since researchers claim that, rather than being a neutralizer to line the stomach, milk stimulates acid production.

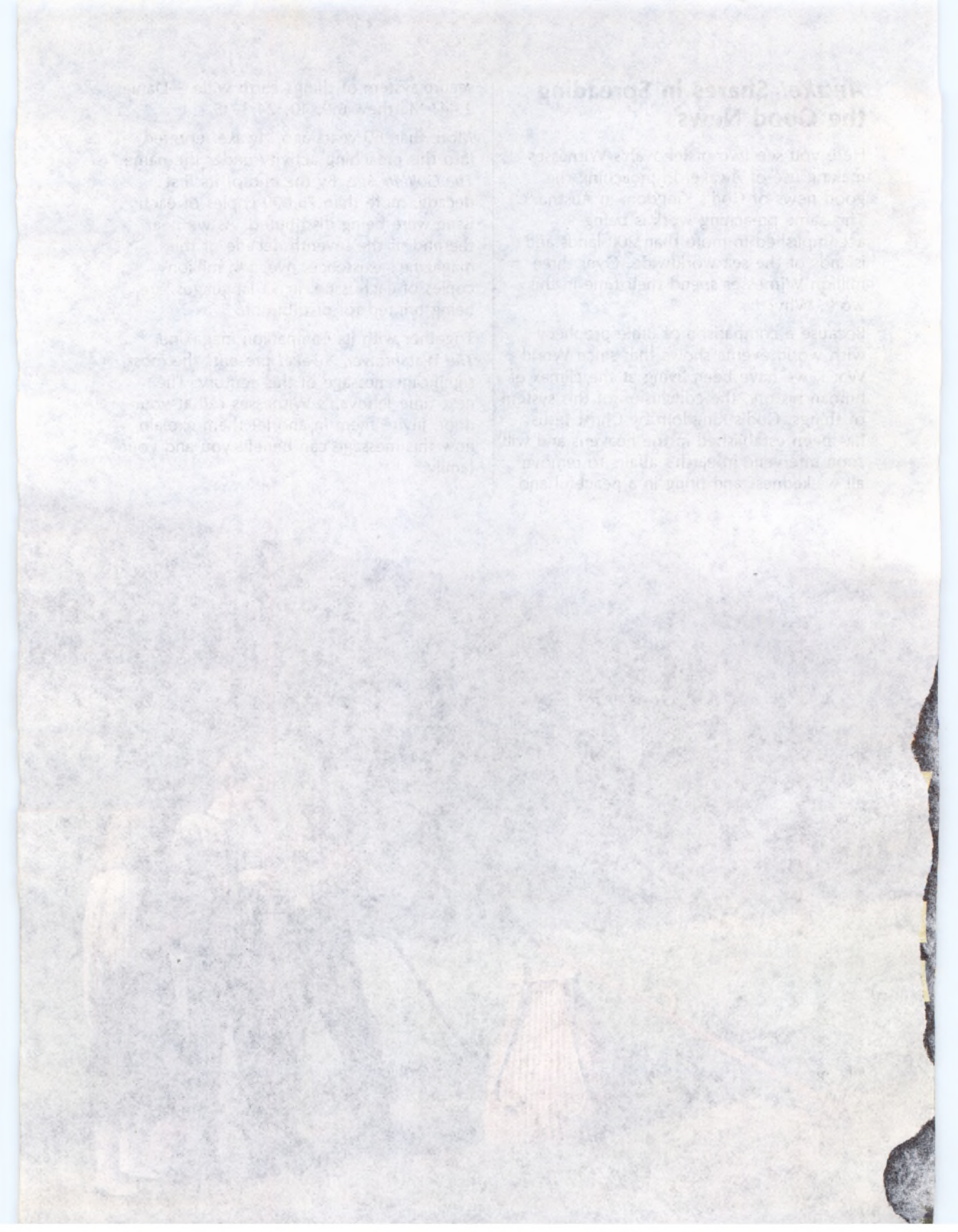
Awake! Shares in Spreading the Good News

Here you see two of Jehovah's Witnesses making use of *Awake!* in preaching the good news of God's Kingdom in Austria. This same preaching work is being accomplished in more than 200 lands and islands of the sea worldwide. Over three million Witnesses spend their time in this work. Why?

Because a comparison of Bible prophecy with world events shows that since World War I, we have been living at the climax of human history, the conclusion of this system of things. God's Kingdom by Christ Jesus has been established in the heavens and will soon intervene in earth's affairs to remove all wickedness and bring in a peaceful and secure system of things earth wide.—Daniel 2:44; Matthew 6:9, 10; 24:3-35.

More than 60 years ago, *Awake!* entered into this preaching activity under the name *The Golden Age.* By the end of its first decade, more than 75,000 copies of each issue were being distributed. As we near the end of the seventh decade of this magazine's existence, over ten million copies of each issue, in 53 languages, are being printed for distribution.

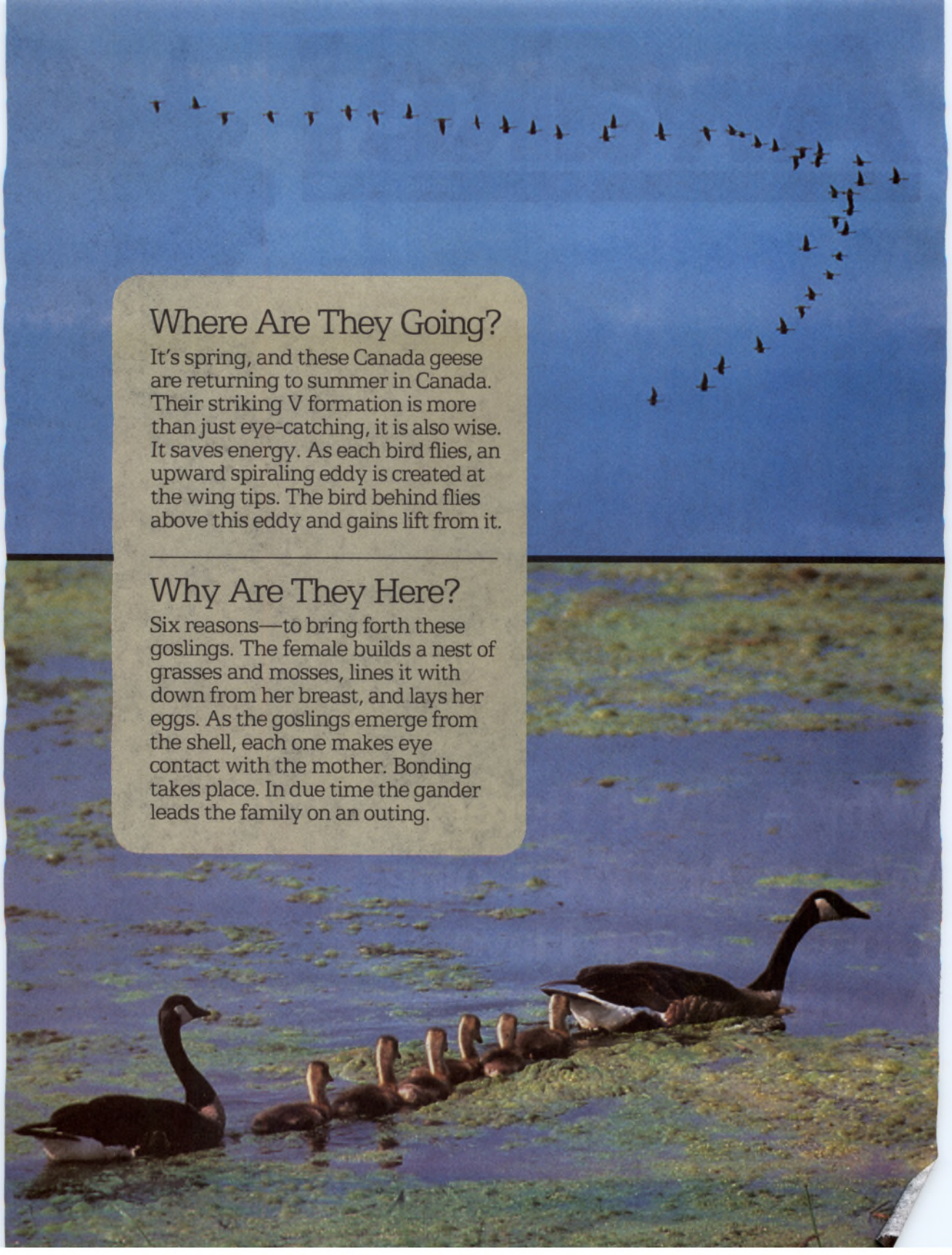
Together with its companion magazine, *The Watchtower, Awake!* presents the most significant message of this century. The next time Jehovah's Witnesses call at your door, invite them in and let them explain how this message can benefit you and your family.



Awake!

January 22, 1987

Why Are We Here? Where Are We Going? Do Our Lives Have Meaning?



Where Are They Going?

It's spring, and these Canada geese are returning to summer in Canada. Their striking V formation is more than just eye-catching, it is also wise. It saves energy. As each bird flies, an upward spiraling eddy is created at the wing tips. The bird behind flies above this eddy and gains lift from it.

Why Are They Here?

Six reasons—to bring forth these goslings. The female builds a nest of grasses and mosses, lines it with down from her breast, and lays her eggs. As the goslings emerge from the shell, each one makes eye contact with the mother. Bonding takes place. In due time the gander leads the family on an outing.

The Ultimate Questions Deep Within Us

Why are we here? Where are we going? Do our lives have any meaning? For that matter, how did we get here in the first place?

THE EARTH teems with life. From the darkest depths of the sea to the tops of the highest mountains, life is there. From the frozen polar regions to the steamy tropical jungles, it flourishes. Life's presence in the grasslands is rivaled by its abundance in the "pastures of the sea." It survives in water hundreds of degrees Fahrenheit above boiling and in cold a hundred degrees Fahrenheit below freezing. It thrives in the thin air miles above earth as well as in the ocean's seven-mile-deep Mariana Trench, where flat fish swim under a pressure of seven tons per square inch.*

Life also goes to extremes in size, ranging from an invisible bacterium to a blue whale a hundred feet long and a hundred tons in weight—its tongue alone weighs as much as an elephant!# But what bacteria lack in size they make up for in numbers. In one teaspoonful of fertile topsoil, there may be five billion bacteria. It is bacteria by the billions inside the digestive tracts of termites and cows that enable them to digest the cellulose of wood and grass.

It has been estimated that more microbes live on and in one of us than there are people on earth. "The total mass of microbes on Earth," one scientist says, "has recently been estimated to be a good 20 times greater than the mass of all earthly animals." Truly, life on earth reaches into numbers beyond the counting.

Yet neither the bacteria nor the whales, nor any of the uncountable trillions of creatures in between, ask the ultimate questions: Why are we here? Where are we going? Do our lives have meaning? How did we get here?

But people do. They ask. Over and over again down through the centuries, they have been asking. Why? Because people are different. Their needs are different. There is an impassable gulf separating people from all other creatures on earth. The very fact that they alone ask the questions proves it. Peter Medawar in his book *The Limits of Science* says that the fact that science has a limit is "made clear by its inability to answer childlike elementary questions having to do with first and last things—questions such as 'How did everything begin?' 'What are we all here for?' 'What is the point of living?'"

Yet these ultimate questions keep returning, they refuse to be silenced, they cry out for answers. We have a built-in hunger for answers. Scientists attempt to give the answers. Do they have the key to open the door to Medawar's first ultimate question: How did everything begin?

* 1 mi = 1.6 km; 1 sq in. = 6.5 sq cm.
# 1 ft = 0.3 m.

How Did Life on Earth Begin?

One man's search for the answer

EARLY in life I knew the answer. God created it. My parents taught me that from the Bible. As I grew older I observed life around me. It fascinated me. My heart was filled with the wonder of it all.

The flowers of summer died in the fall but left behind seeds that brought back their colorful displays in the spring. The sap in the trees went underground but months later returned to clothe the bare limbs in spring green. The woodchucks in the fields curled up in their holes and slept through the winter but were out again with the return of the warm sunny days. The pair of bluebirds that nested in the hollow iron post in our backyard flew south in the fall but returned to the same post in the spring to raise another family. I gazed up in awe at the V formations of geese flying south and listened fascinated to their continuous gabblings—and wondered what all this chatter was about.

The more I learned about life, the more design I saw. And the more design I saw, the more I saw the need for the Master Designer my parents had told me about.

No Designer Needed?

Then in high school I was told that no designer was needed: 'It all just happened. Chemicals in earth's primitive atmosphere were shattered by lightning and ultraviolet rays, their atoms recombined to form ever-more-complex molecules, finally a living cell appeared. As it multiplied, random changes occurred, and thousands of millions of years later life in its myriads of forms covered the earth. Man is its latest production.'

They made evolution sound so simple. Maybe too simple. I clung to my belief in creation, but I didn't want to be gullible. I wanted to be logical, to keep my mind open, to know the truth. I began to read science. I learned many things. My eyes were opened wider than ever to the wonders of nature. The more I learned the more I marveled. But the more design I saw, the more my mind balked at believing that random change and blind chance could create what brilliant men in their laboratories could not duplicate—not even the tiniest bacterium, much less the flowers, the bluebirds, the V's of geese.

During my years of study at both high school and university, I exposed myself to all the science I could get—chemistry, physics, biology, mathematics. Thereafter I continued to read books and magazine articles by evolutionists. It was still unconvincing. The evolutionary statements flowed so glibly, too glibly in view of the assertions that accompanied them.

That was years ago. This is the 1980's. Maybe now there is more proof and less assertion. Maybe it's time for another look. I focused on one aspect—how life got start-

ed on the earth. After all, if evolution cannot make a case for the first living cell, how can it sustain its claim to produce living creatures with trillions of cells—and you and me with our one hundred trillion each?

For my investigation I selected recent books by scientists with impeccable credentials—all evolutionists. I would adopt Jesus' way of dealing with the false religionists: "By your words you will be declared righteous, and by your words you will be condemned." (Matthew 12:37) My research limited itself to evolution's major steps en route to life: (1) a primitive atmosphere, (2) an organic soup, (3) proteins, (4) nucleotides, (5) nucleic acids called DNA, and (6) a membrane.

Assumptions About Early Atmosphere

First needed, an atmosphere on early earth that, when bombarded with lightning or ultraviolet rays or other energy sources, would produce simple molecules necessary for life. In 1953 Stanley Miller reported on just such an experiment. He selected a hydrogen-rich atmosphere for early earth, passed an electric spark through it, and produced 2 simpler amino acids of the 20 required to make proteins.[1] No one knows, however, what the early earth atmosphere was like.[2] Why did Miller choose this one? He admitted prejudice in favor of it because it was the only one wherein "the synthesis of compounds of biological interest takes place."[3]

I discovered that experiments are often rigged to give the desired results. Many scientists acknowledge that the experimenter can 'manipulate the outcome profoundly,' and 'his intelligence can be involved so as to prejudice the experiment.'[4] Miller's atmosphere was used in most of the experiments that followed his, not because it was logical or even probable, but

Awake!® January 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 2

Average Printing: 10,610,000

Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

The Ultimate Questions Deep Within Us 3
How Did Life on Earth Begin? 4
The Other Questions Answered 10

Also in This Issue

When It Touches On Science, the Bible is Scientific 13
"Speaking of Working Together" 14
Florida's Looe Key, a Sanctuary for Beauty 15
Young People Ask ... How Can I Get Over a Crush? 18
Does It Really Come Back? 21
The *Creation* Book Goes to School 25
"Evolution Is a Religion Which Masquerades as Science" 25
Now I Play a Different Tune 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Our Beautiful Earth 31

Cover photo: D. Muench/H. Armstrong Roberts

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.20	$2.60
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

because "it was conducive to evolutionary experiments," and "the success of the laboratory experiments recommends it."[5]

Nevertheless, evolutionists hailed Miller's feat as a great breakthrough. Many experiments followed, using various energy sources and different raw materials. Through much manipulation and doctoring, and ignoring the conditions existing in a natural environment, scientists in their rigidly controlled laboratory experiments obtained additional organic chemicals relevant to life. They made a Mount Everest out of Miller's molehill. It opened the way for an organic soup of life's building blocks to accumulate in the ocean. Or did it?

The Organic Soup Is a Myth

Miller's molehill was flawed, and with its demise their Mount Everest collapsed. Miller used a spark to break up the simple chemicals in his atmosphere to allow amino acids to form. But this spark would even more quickly have shattered the amino acids! So again Miller rigged his experiment: He built a trap in his apparatus to store the acids as soon as they formed, to save them from the spark. Scientists claim, however, that in the early earth the amino acids would have escaped the lightning or ultraviolet rays by plunging into the ocean. Thus evolutionists seek to save the soup.

But for several reasons, to no avail. Amino acids are not stable in water and in the ancient ocean would exist in only negligible quantities. If the organic soup had ever existed, some of its compounds would have been trapped in sedimentary rocks, but in spite of 20 years of searching, "the earliest rocks have failed to yield any evidence of a prebiotic soup." Yet "the existence of a prebiotic soup is crucial." So "it comes as . . . a shock to realize that there is absolutely no positive evidence for its existence."[6]

The Chances of a Protein Forming

Allow the soup that nature disallows. Millions of amino acids in the soup, hundreds of different kinds, roughly half *of* them in a left-handed form and half right-handed. Would the amino acids now connect up in long chains to make proteins? Would only the 20 kinds needed be selected by chance out of the hundreds of kinds in the soup? And from these 20 kinds, would chance select only the left-handed forms found in living organisms? And then line them up in the right order for each distinctive protein and in the exact shape required for each one?[7] Only by a miracle.

A typical protein has about one hundred amino acids and contains many thousands of atoms. In its life processes a living cell uses some 200,000 proteins. Two thousand of them are enzymes, special proteins without which the cell cannot survive. What are the chances of these enzymes forming at random in the soup—if you had the soup? One chance in $10^{40,000}$. This is 1 followed by 40,000 zeros. Written out in full, it would fill 14 pages of this magazine. Or, stated differently, the chance is the same as rolling dice and getting 50,000 sixes in a row. And that is for only 2,000 of the 200,000 needed for a living cell.[8] So to get them all, roll 5,000,000 more sixes in a row!

By now I felt that I was beating a dead horse. But I continued. Assuming that the soup did give us proteins, what about nucleotides? Leslie Orgel of Salk Institute in California has indicated nucleotides to be "one of the major problems in prebiotic synthesis."[9] They are needed to make the nucleic acids (DNA, RNA), also called an overwhelming difficulty. Incidentally, proteins cannot be assembled without the nucleic acids, nor can nucleic acids form without proteins.[10] It's the old riddle in

Which Came First?

The egg comes from a chicken, but the chicken comes from an egg

Proteins can't form without nucleic acids, but nucleic acids can't form without proteins

A membrane can't form without a protein synthetic apparatus, but this apparatus can't form without a membrane

chemical garb: Which came first, the chicken or the egg?

But let's set that mountain aside and have evolutionist Robert Shapiro, professor of chemistry at New York University and a specialist in DNA research, dispose of the chance formation of nucleotides and nucleic acids in early earth's environment:

"Whenever two amino acids unite, a water molecule is released. Two molecules of water must be set free in assembling a nucleotide from its components, and additional water is released in combining nucleotides to form nucleic acids. Unfortunately, the formation of water in an environment that is full of it is the chemical equivalent of bringing sand to the Sahara. It is unfavorable, and requires the expenditure of energy. Such processes do not readily take place on their own. In fact, the reverse reactions are the ones that occur spontaneously. Water happily attacks large biological molecules. It pries nucleotides apart from each other, breaks sugar-to-phosphate bonds, and severs bases from sugars."[11]

The final step of the six listed at the outset: a membrane. Without it the cell could not exist. It must be protected from water, and it is the water-repellent fats of the membrane that do this.[12] But to form the membrane a "protein synthetic apparatus" is needed, and this "protein synthetic apparatus" can function only if it is held together by a membrane.[13] That chicken-and-egg problem all over again!

Molecular Biology Sounds Its Death Knell

The evolutionists' dream was discovery of a supersimple first living cell. Molecular biology has turned their dream into a nightmare. Michael Denton, specialist in molecular biology, sounded its death knell:

"Molecular biology has shown that even the simplest of all living systems on earth today, bacterial cells, are exceedingly complex objects. Although the tiniest bacterial cells are incredibly small, weighing less than 10^{-12}gms, each is in effect a veritable micro-miniaturized factory containing thousands of exquisitely designed pieces of intricate molecular machinery, made up altogether of one hundred thousand million atoms, far more complicated than any machine built by man and absolutely without parallel in the nonliving world.

"Molecular biology has also shown that

Hundreds of thousands of chemical reactions are happening simultaneously in each living cell —without a traffic jam!

the basic design of the cell system is essentially the same in all living systems on earth from bacteria to mammals. In all organisms the roles of DNA, mRNA and protein are identical. The meaning of the genetic code is also virtually identical in all cells. The size, structure and component design of the protein synthetic machinery is practically the same in all cells. In terms of their basic biochemical design, therefore no living system can be thought of as being primitive or ancestral with respect to any other system, nor is there the slightest empirical hint of an evolutionary sequence among all the incredibly diverse cells on earth."[14]

Not surprising, then, that Harold Morowitz, a Yale University physicist, has calculated that the chances of getting the simplest living bacterium by random changes is 1 in 1 followed by 100,000,000 zeros. "This number is so large," Shapiro said, "that to write it in conventional form we would require several hundred thousand blank books." He charges that scientists committed to the chemical evolution of life ignore the increasing evidence and "have chosen to hold it as a truth beyond question, thereby enshrining it as mythology."[15]

One scientist specializing in cell biology says that millions of years ago "just a single cell could make weapons, catch food, digest it, get rid of wastes, move around, build houses, engage in sexual activity straightforward or bizarre. These creatures are still around. The protists—organisms complete and entire, yet made up of just a single cell with many talents, but with no tissues, no organs, no hearts and no minds—really have everything we've got." She speaks of a single cell percolating with "those hundreds of thousands of simultaneous chemical reactions that are life."[16]

What an unbelievable maze of chemical traffic within the confines of a microscopic cell, *yet without a traffic jam!* Obviously, this demands a Master Designer of supreme intelligence. The information content coded into a speck of DNA weighing "less than a few thousand millionths of a gram" is enough "to specify an organism as complex as man."[17] Even the information content of a single cell, "if written out, would fill a thousand 600-page books."[18]

How awesome! Intelligence far beyond our powers of comprehension is an absolute must to start life on earth.

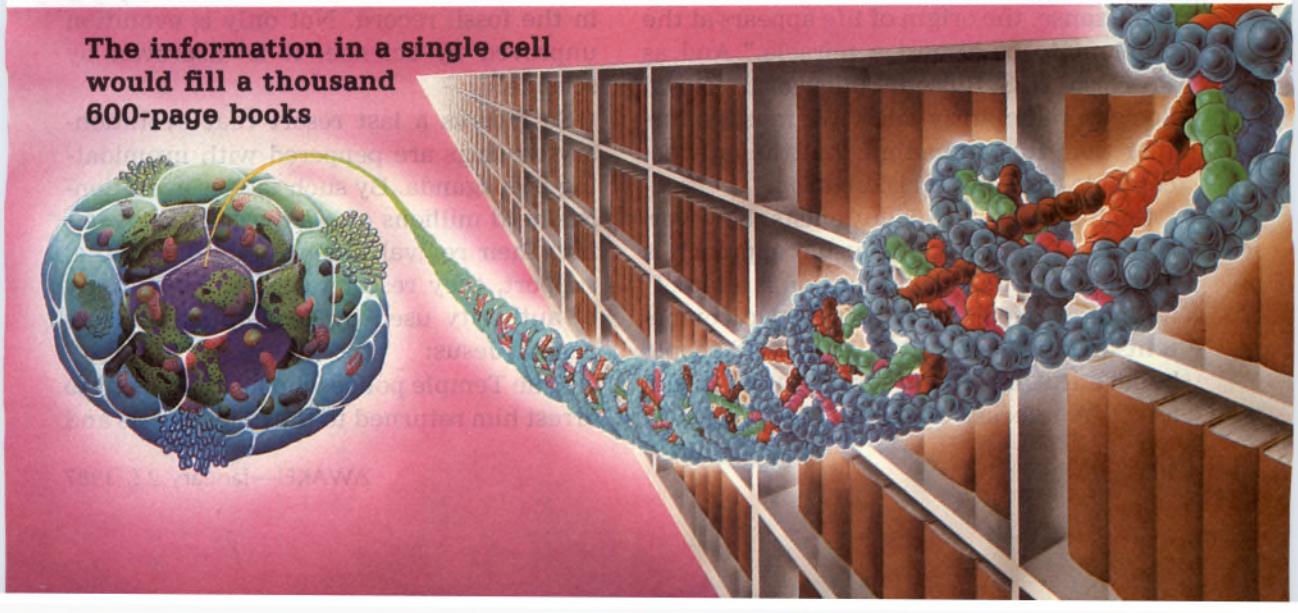
My conclusion after all of this: Without the right atmosphere, no organic soup. Without the organic soup, no amino acids. Without amino acids, no proteins. Without proteins, no nucleotides. Without nucleotides, no DNA. Without DNA, no cell that reproduces itself. Without a covering membrane, no living cell. And without intelligent design and direction, no life on earth.

But scientists have rendered a great service to believers in creation. Their discoveries about life are a powerful reinforcement of my faith in creation, and I now read with deepened appreciation Romans 1:20, 21, 28: "Ever since God created the world his everlasting power and deity —however invisible—have been there for the mind to see in the things he has made. That is why such people are without excuse . . . They made nonsense out of logic and their empty minds were darkened . . . In other words, since they refused to see it was rational to acknowledge God, God has left them to their own irrational ideas and to their monstrous behaviour."—*The Jerusalem Bible*.

My search convinced me that what my parents taught me is true: Jehovah God alone is "the source of life." (Psalm 36:9) —By an *Awake!* staff writer.

References

1. *Origins: A Skeptic's Guide to the Creation of Life on Earth,* by Robert Shapiro, 1986, p. 105; *Life Itself,* by Francis Crick, 1981, p. 77.
2. *Origins: A Skeptic's Guide,* pp. 96-7.
3. *The Origins of Life on the Earth,* by Stanley L. Miller and Leslie E. Orgel, 1974, p. 33.
4. *Origins: A Skeptic's Guide,* p. 103.
5. *Technology Review,* April 1981, R. C. Cowen, p. 8; *Science* 210, R. A. Kerr, 1980, p. 42. (Both quotes taken from *The Mystery of Life's Origin: Reassessing Current Theories,* 1984, p. 76.)
6. *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis,* by Michael Denton, 1985, pp. 260-1, 263; *Origins: A Skeptic's Guide,* pp. 112-13.
7. *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis,* pp. 234-8.
8. *The Intelligent Universe,* by Fred Hoyle, 1983, pp. 12-17.
9. *Origins: A Skeptic's Guide,* p. 188.
10. *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis,* p. 238; *Origins: A Skeptic's Guide,* pp. 134, 138.
11. *Origins: A Skeptic's Guide,* pp. 173-4.
12. *Ibid.,* p. 65.
13. *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis,* pp. 268-9.
14. *Ibid.,* p. 250.
15. *Origins: A Skeptic's Guide,* pp. 32, 49, 128.
16. *The Center of Life,* by L. L. Larison Cudmore, 1977, pp. 5, 13-14.
17. *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis,* p. 334.
18. *National Geographic,* September 1976, p. 357.



The Other Questions Answered

The answer to how we got here determines the answers to the other questions: Why are we here? Where are we going? Do our lives have meaning?

BY ITS very nature, evolution proceeds willy-nilly, without purpose or goals. If we arrived through evolution, we are here for no reason, we are going nowhere, and our lives are meaningless.

Fortunately for us, evolution is not true. It never got started, much less reached down to us. The scientific evidence is unanimous: A living cell packed with thousands of purposeful functions could not originate by undirected, accidental changes. When reason prevails over evolutionists' desires, this is obvious. As Francis Crick said: "An honest man, armed with all the knowledge available to us now, could only state that in some sense, the origin of life appears at the moment to be almost a miracle." And as Professor H. S. Lipson, Fellow of the Royal Society, reluctantly said: "We must go further than this and admit that the only acceptable explanation is *creation.*"

Such honesty by evolutionists, however, is rarely expressed. The usual approach is dogmatism, such as: 'Evolution is a fact. It no longer needs to be proved. No competent scientist doubts it. All educated people believe it. Only the ignorant reject it.' On a NOVA telecast, Stephen Jay Gould said that science "often reflects the largely unconscious biases of those who do the work." Two minutes later he demonstrated his own bias when he said that Darwin did more than any other human to "establish the fact of evolution."

Darwin believed that life was "originally breathed by the Creator into a few forms or into one." His belief in evolution by inherited gradual changes is collapsing. The fossil record he relied on for proof has failed him. Gould himself has abandoned all these positions of Darwin because they are not founded on fact. To rescue the theory, Gould has switched from slow changes to big fast jumps to get from one form of life to another. There is no basis for this. It is an arbitrary maneuver to eliminate the need for the intermediate fossils that are lacking in the fossil record. Not only is evolution unproved by science, it is disproved by science.

So it is as a last resort that evolutionary writings are peppered with intimidating propaganda. By such tactics evolutionists herd millions of brainwashed converts into their revivalist tent. *Lacking* factual support, they resort to the same tyranny of authority used by desperate Pharisees against Jesus:

"The Temple police who had been sent to arrest him returned to the chief priests and

Pharisees. 'Why didn't you bring him in?' they demanded. 'He says such wonderful things!' they mumbled. 'We've never heard anything like it.' 'So you also have been led astray?' the Pharisees mocked. 'Is there a single one of us Jewish rulers or Pharisees who believes he is the Messiah?'" When one of their own number protested, they derided him: "Are you a wretched Galilean too?" (John 7:45-52, *The Living Bible*) Similarly, evolutionists today brand as incompetent any scientists that reject evolution and heap vitriolic ridicule upon them if they dare to espouse creation!

Creation is far more scientific than is evolution. It accounts for the purposeful design we see in heaven and on earth, in plants and animals, in our own bodies and in our amazing brain. The information content we see in DNA certainly testifies to an awesome intelligence at work. Einstein never liked the God of Christendom's religions, but he was profoundly impressed by "the harmony of natural law, which reveals an intelligence of such superiority that, compared with it, all the systematic thinking and acting of human beings is an utterly insignificant reflection."

Creation also opens the way to answer the ultimate questions.

Why Are We Here?

Jehovah told why when he created the first pair of human creatures. "Let us make man in our image," God said to the Logos (who later came to earth as Jesus), "according to our likeness, and let them have in subjection the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and the domestic animals and all the earth and every moving animal that is moving upon the earth." God also made a garden in Eden and "proceeded to take the man and settle him in the garden of Eden to cultivate it and to take care of it." Moreover, he gave a mandate to the first pair in Eden to "be fruitful and become many and fill the earth."—Genesis 1:26, 28; 2:8, 15.

As offspring of Adam and Eve, we are here to populate the earth, to care for and cultivate it, and to exercise a loving stewardship over its plants and animals. We are equipped by God to do this by being made in his likeness—not in any physical appearance but in being endowed with certain attributes of his, such as love, wisdom, power, justice, and a desire to do purposeful work and feel achievement. It is being in the likeness of God in this way that sets us apart from all animals and causes us to ponder the ultimate questions that never occur to any other earthly creatures.

Atheists, however, contend that we are not created in God's image but that we created God in our image. Not so. The gods created by men are in the image and likeness of sun, moon, stars, trees, thunders, lightnings, mountains, animals, rulers, money, sex, belly, plus whatever else man is pleased to deify. (Romans 1:25; Philippians 3:19) Man's image does not reflect God's attributes in balance. Rather, in our fallen state we are urged to return to his image. (Colossians 3:9, 10) Evolution does not explain the tremendous gulf between man and animal, nor would it produce or preserve as useful our inner urge to raise the ultimate questions. Being in God's image and likeness does explain this.

Where Are We Going?

No animal raises this question. Animals have no conscious sense of time, past or future. But man does. God made this additional gulf between man and animal, as stated in Ecclesiastes 3:11: "He has also set eternity in the hearts of men." (*New International Version*) Man is therefore

aware of the millenniums past and knows that future time will continue on. It concerns him. What will happen to him when he dies? Does he have an immortal soul that will live on? Will he go to heaven's bliss or to hell's torment or to the grave's oblivion? Or will he perhaps transmigrate to another life?

He certainly does not wish to face the thought of his extinction. It is devastating for him to think that time will continue on endlessly without him, the earth and people continuing on without him, while he is consigned to eternal oblivion. To avoid this unacceptable thought, he clings to the idea of an immortal soul—a doctrine taught nowhere in the Bible.—Ezekiel 18:4.

The Bible does say that when man dies he returns to the dust. "In that day his thoughts do perish." He is "conscious of nothing at all." (Psalm 146:4; Ecclesiastes 9:5) But there is to be a resurrection for billions: "The hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out." Those who then love God and neighbor will hear the words of the King Jesus Christ: "Inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the founding of the world."—John 5:28, 29; Matthew 25:34.

From the beginning it was Jehovah's purpose for the human family to dwell on earth forever in a paradise. Now the time draws near for obedient mankind to inherit that Kingdom. It is described in Revelation 21:3, 4: "Look! The tent of God is with mankind, and he will reside with them, and they will be his peoples. And God himself will be with them. And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be anymore."

That is where obedient mankind is going. But the incorrigibly wicked will be going to sleep forever. "Just a little while longer," the psalmist writes, "and the wicked one will be no more; and you will certainly give attention to his place, and he will not be. But the meek ones themselves will possess the earth, and they will indeed find their exquisite delight in the abundance of peace."—Psalm 37:10, 11; Romans 6:23.

Do Our Lives Have Meaning?

There are billions of galaxies in the universe and billions of stars in each galaxy. In the vastness of space our solar system is reduced to a speck, and the earth becomes microscopic. The five billion humans on earth shrivel to less than nothing. But it is not simply our smallness in space that makes us feel insignificant. Our fleeting existence in the eons of time also makes us feel that our lives lack meaning. Nevertheless, our minds demand meaning. We were created to feel this way.

We may seem less than microscopic in this vast universe, and we may be as a fleeting moment in the endless stream of time, but our position on earth is unique, and our lives are involved in the most meaningful issue in the whole universe. Not only were we put here by Jehovah God the Creator of the universe but we were given work to do: Fill the earth, take care of it, exercise loving dominion over its plants and animals. And even more meaningful than this—we may share in declaring Jehovah's Kingdom under Christ that will cleanse the earth of wickedness, vindicate God's name and Word, and remove demonic rule from the earth.

Lives lived like this have meaning. They will last forever. God's people are as the pupil of his eye. (Deuteronomy 32:10) They are at rest, for the ultimate questions deep within them have been answered.

When It Touches On Science, the Bible Is Scientific

"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth." (Genesis 1:1) Scientists teach a beginning, the Big Bang.

"He is . . . hanging the earth upon nothing." (Job 26:7) The Egyptians said it was supported by pillars; the Greeks said by Atlas; others said by an elephant.

In the eighth century B.C.E., Isaiah wrote of Jehovah's "dwelling above the circle of the earth." The Hebrew *hhug*, translated "circle," can also mean "sphere," as Wilson's *Old Testament Word Studies* shows. Hence, Moffatt's translation of Isaiah 40:22 reads: "He sits over the round earth."

The Bible states: "Star differs from star in glory." Scientists now know that there are blue stars, yellow ones, white dwarfs, neutron stars, and others. —1 Corinthians 15:41.

Centuries before naturalists were aware of migration, Jeremiah wrote (seventh century B.C.E.) "The stork in the sky knows the time to migrate, the dove and the swift and the wryneck know the season of return." —Jeremiah 8:7, *The New English Bible*.

A thousand years before Christ, Solomon wrote in figurative language about the circulation of the blood. (Ecclesiastes 12:6) Medical science did not understand it until the 15th century C.E.

The Mosaic Law (16th century B.C.E.) reflected awareness of disease germs thousands of years before Pasteur.—Leviticus, chapters 13, 14.

The creation account of Genesis is accurate biology —testified to by the fossil record and by modern genetics—when it says that each family kind was to reproduce "according to its kind."—Genesis 1:12, 21, 25.

The genetic blueprint in the fertilized human egg cell contains programs for all the bodily parts before any hint of their presence. Compare Psalm 139:16: "Your eyes [Jehovah's] saw even the embryo of me, and in your book all its parts were down in writing, as regards the days when they were formed and there was not yet one among them."

"Speaking of Working Together"

Recently Jehovah's Witnesses in Tiverton, Rhode Island, erected a quickly built Kingdom Hall. Under the above title, a local clergyman reported on his visit to the building site. The substance of it follows.

'SEVERAL strange reports came to me about a church being built on Fish Road. It was reported that 500 people were building a church in two days. I went to Fish Road to check this story out. There were some 1,500 people there working —carpenters, plumbers, electricians, lath workers, glaziers, landscapers, plasterers, heating men, bricklayers, cement finishers, and hundreds of laborers and helpers.

'Open trucks were all over the grounds, three acres [1.2 ha] in all. One sign read "Lost and Found." If a person lost a tool, he could go to this truck and find it returned. If you arrived in clean clothes and wanted to work, there was a truck with work clothes and hard hats available. A first-aid truck if anyone got hurt or needed medical attention.

'A large circus tent was set up out back where men and women fed 1,500 people in 15 minutes. I saw women going around with cans of water to dampen down the soil just to keep the dust down, and that's all they did all day. As boards were nailed in place, painters were on hand to paint the wood. It was a sight few of us had ever seen.

'General contractors in the area said it couldn't be done. But it was done, and I went there and saw it with my own eyes. Who were these people? Jehovah's Witnesses, and the church was a Kingdom Hall. The foundation was done earlier, but the rest of it was built in two days! I didn't hear a cuss word. No arguments. A very strange group to behold indeed. Very quietly they went about their business. Their hands were where all the action was—not their mouths!

'You know one thing we have been concerned about in Unitarian-Universalist circles is why we are not attracting more blacks and more interracial and nationality groups. Here I saw lots of black people and mixed racial groups all working together as a family. The people here were from all over New England and beyond. A mixed racial group mostly of young people with lots of enthusiasm.

'I have never learned a lot about these people due to poor press and poor word-of-mouth reports, but what I saw was all good. I've never cared for those people who come knocking at my door over the years, but be assured I'll greet them with a lot more respect and admiration.

'It's occurred to me that many of us close our minds to ideas and new approaches because of ignorance and prejudgment. I think we all have to sit up and take notice when they pass us by in the race. Ignorance and fear do a job on us long before we've started to listen. But especially when they are doing such a good job of growing and generate a lot of enthusiasm.

'If they had contracted this building out—cellar and all—it would have cost about $500,000 or more. I wondered whether we in Unitarian-Universalist circles and in our formal New England ways would ever try anything like this. Think about it—especially those of you who are lovers of committee meetings and lots of talk. Yes! Think it over!'

Florida's Looe Key, a Sanctuary for Beauty

YOUR boat is chugging out from Big Pine Key into the open ocean. The gentle breeze ruffles the water and makes it sparkle in the morning sunlight. For seven miles you luxuriate in the fresh air, warm sun, and open water. What a respite from the hubbub of New York City!

Then you see a scattering of yellow buoys riding the waves. You have arrived at Looe Key, a protected national marine sanctuary. But you don't see it yet. First you tie up at a buoy, and then you look over the side—and gasp in disbelief! Thirty feet below is a canyon with white sandy bottom, craggy elkhorn, fan coral, and schools of fish. You rush to the other side of the boat. Just three feet down lies an underwater coral garden—the splash of brilliant colors takes your breath!

Quickly you don snorkel and

flippers and let yourself down into another world. You gaze enthralled as with slow kicks of your flippers you propel yourself out over this fantasyland. You glide over corals of many shapes, sizes, and colors—elkhorn, staghorn, fan, gorgonian, and others nameless to you. In among them move brilliantly colored fish in great variety. You feast on the exquisite beauty and smile in wonder—and suddenly realize that you don't smile underwater with a snorkel in your mouth!

Floating out over the canyon, you see 30 feet beneath you an impressive stand of craggy elkhorn coral. Holding your breath, you upend yourself to dive down for a closer look, and find resting beneath its heavy spreading antlers a school of 60 or more grunts. Nearby a huge purple fan coral perched on the side of the cliff waves lazily in the water.

You surface again to the shallow reef to see a pink squirrelfish with a big eye fixed on you. You hear the crunching of a parrot fish as it dines on some stony coral, creating as it does sand that settles to the bottom. Two yellow butterfly fish wiggle by. You spot a long, pinkish stick —it's a trumpet fish lurking in a dark hole. Next, a pugnacious little damselfish patrolling its coral turf indignantly chases off an intruder twice its size. You smile in amused delight, forgetting the lesson you had learned previously and paying for it with coughing and spluttering.

A blue cloud of fish moves

quickly past you, intent on some business elsewhere. You resolve to go to the library to identify them (and later learn that they are blue tang).

You take a swing out over an expansive sea-grass meadow that adjoins the reef. The tall green grass sways just beneath you—a home for crabs, shrimps, clams, conchs, grazing fish, and other thousands.

Now your diving partner beckons you back to the coral reef. She has found a vicious moray eel. Only it isn't vicious. It's very shy. Its head barely shows out of its hole. But the offer of the leg of a spiny lobster entices it out for quick bites followed by hasty retreats. Out and back it slithers until the leg is gone. A parrot fish has noticed, and now it comes to nibble on a second leg that's extended to it. A four-foot shark is found resting under a ledge—quite harmless.

The hours slip by unnoticed. You hate to leave, but schedules are dictators. You find yourself back in the big city, in crowds and traffic, assaulted by noise, stress building again, fearful of being out on the streets after dark.

But the lovely memories of Looe Key you have carried back with you. In quiet reverie you once again glide under the spreading antlers of the elkhorn, smile as the damselfish chases the intruders, hear the parrot fish making sand, and again the shy moray slips quickly out and back to dine on lobster.

Lovely Looe Key, a sanctuary for beauty. And for you.

How Can I Get Over a Crush?

"I'VE written him letters expressing my feelings," the young woman says. "Whenever I ask him how he feels—he always denies having any feelings for me. But I can tell by the way he looks and acts that this isn't true."

Reality means little to one wearing the blindfold of infatuation. The young man in question has tried to be kind in expressing his disinterest, even enlisting the aid of Christian elders. But the young woman just won't take no for an answer. Even innocent words and actions on his part are seen as veiled signs of affection for her. Thus her fantasy feeds on itself.

Perhaps you, too, find yourself craving a relationship with someone who does not share the same feeling or, worse yet, doesn't even know you exist. All your efforts to attract his or her attention have fizzled. In fact, you may even have embarrassed yourself trying to do so. Yet you desperately hope that somehow things will change.

If so, more than likely you are experiencing a youthful infatuation, or crush. This is a counterfeit love based, not on a reasoned acquaintance with someone, but on pure fantasy. Indeed, among young people, the object of infatuation often is someone clearly out of reach—a movie star, a popular singer, a teacher, or an older acquaintance.* Fortunately, most simply outgrow these crushes. But for some, terminating a crush causes painful

* See "Young People Ask . . . Who Says It's Just a Crush?" appearing in the January 8, 1987, issue of *Awake!*

For some, terminating a crush is painful

withdrawal symptoms. Is there any way to ease the pain?

You Are Not Alone

First of all, take comfort in the fact that you are not the first to experience unrequited love. Solomon, one of the wisest men who ever lived, fell desperately in love with a charming Israelite girl. He poured upon her some of the most beautiful poetry ever written. He told her she was "beautiful like the full moon, pure like the glowing sun" —and got absolutely nowhere with her! —Song of Solomon 6:10.

You will therefore likely find that many of your peers—and even your parents—have been through the same thing. So there's not necessarily anything abnormal about how you feel. But while infatuations are common, they can also get out of hand.

The Bible, for example, tells of a young man named Amnon who developed such an overpowering infatuation for a young woman "that he felt sick." (2 Samuel 13:1-14) Similarly, one infatuated girl confesses: "I can't eat. . . . I can't study anymore. I . . . daydream about him. . . . I'm miserable." Yes, your health and emotional well-being can be adversely affected by a crush. How, then, can you regain control of the situation?

Facing Reality

"He that is trusting in his own heart is stupid," says the Bible. (Proverbs 28:26) This is particularly true when you are caught up in a romantic fantasy. You tend to put on emotional blinders and see only what you want to see. However, the proverb continues: "But he that is walking in wisdom is the one that will escape." This means seeing things the way they are.

"How do you tell legitimate hope from unfounded hope?" asks Dr. Howard Halpern. "By looking carefully and coldly at the facts." Consider: How much of a chance is there of a real romance developing with this person? Is he or she already married? Certainly romantic fantasies toward such a one are vain—and most improper. Is the person some celebrity? Then the odds are you will never even meet this person, much less start a romance! Your chances are also dim when some older person, such as a teacher, is involved.

If someone has thus far failed to show interest in you, is there any *real reason* to believe that things will change in the future? Remember, 'the heart is treacherous.' (Jeremiah 17:9) Reading romantic interest into innocent words and actions often amounts to 'pulling the wool over your own eyes.' It is a waste of time and emotion. Incidentally, in most lands it is customary for men to take the initiative in romance. A young girl can humiliate herself by aggressively pursuing someone who simply isn't interested.

Finally, face up to your own limitations as a young person. What would you do if the person actually returned your affections? Are you ready for the pressures and responsibilities of marriage? If not, then "remove vexation from your heart" by refusing to dwell on fantasy. There is "a time to love," and in your case that might be years later when you are older.—Ecclesiastes 11:10; 3:8.

Analyzing Your Feelings

'But what about these feelings I have *now?*' you ask. Take a hard look at what and how you feel. For example, Dr. Charles Zastrow observes: "Infatuation occurs when a person idealizes the person she or he is infatuated with as being a 'perfect lover'; that is, concludes that the other person has *all* of the characteristics desired in a mate."

However, no such "perfect lover" exists. "For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God," says the Bible.—Romans 3:23.

So ask yourself, How well do I really know this person I have set my heart on? Are my feelings based on knowledge, or am I in love with an image? Am I 'looking at things according to their face value'? (2 Corinthians 10:7) Do I clearly see this person's flaws, or am I blind to them? One objective look at your dream lover may pull you out of romantic stupor!

Examine, too, the kind of love you feel. The Bible says: "Love is long-suffering and kind. Love is not jealous, . . . does not look for its own interests." (1 Corinthians 13:4, 5) Is this the kind of love you feel? Or is it what writer Kathy McCoy refers to as "immature love"? Says McCoy: "*Immature love* can come and go in a moment . . . the focus is on you, and you're simply in love with the idea of being in love . . . *Immature love* is clinging, possessive, and jealous. . . . *Immature love* demands perfection."

It can be painful to realize that you have wasted emotion on a mere dream. However, Dr. David Elkind makes this observation: "These shocks of disillusion can be useful learning experiences in helping young people to differentiate between physical attraction and personal compatibility."

Getting Him/Her Off Your Mind

Admittedly, all the reasoning in the world does not entirely erase how you feel. But there are a few things you can do to get your mind off your hurt. First of all, *avoid feeding the problem!* Reading steamy romance novels, watching TV love stories —or just listening to certain kinds of music—can worsen your feelings of loneliness. So refuse to dwell on the situation. "Where there is no wood the fire goes out."—Proverbs 26:20.

Try developing some real friendships. A fantasy romance is no substitute for people who really love you and care for you. Do not 'isolate yourself.' (Proverbs 18:1) You'll probably find that your parents can be quite helpful, especially if they are Christians. "They're the *last* ones I would tell about my crushes," said one young man. But for all your attempts to conceal your feelings, they have probably already discerned that something is eating away at you. Why not approach them and 'give your heart to them.' (Proverbs 23:26) A mature member of the Christian congregation may also prove to be a good listening ear.

"Keep busy," exhorts teen writer Esther Davidowitz further. Take up a hobby, do some exercise, study a language, begin a Bible research project. Staying engrossed in useful activities can ease the withdrawal symptoms quite a bit.

Getting over a crush is not easy. But with the passage of time, the pain will subside. And you will have learned much about yourself and your feelings. Perhaps these lessons are well worth the pain of experiencing a heartbreaking crush.

In Our Next Issue

- Phobias—The Fears of Millions
- As a Lawyer, I Put God to the Test
- What Do Clothes Mean to You?

Does It *Really* Come Back?

By "Awake!" correspondent in Australia

MAURICE lives in Huonville, Tasmania, an island-state southeast of mainland Australia. He has the rare skill of being able to throw a boomerang so that it returns to him. Demonstrating this art sometimes clinches a sale in his retail business. Most of his customers are tourists visiting Hobart, Tasmania's capital city, and among them are many Japanese seamen. When first introduced to the boomerang, the seamen usually are skeptical and often ask: "Does it *really* come back?"

"I find that an actual demonstration is the best way to overcome their doubts," says Maurice. "Often to satisfy the skeptics, I have thrown the boomerang from the wharf around the front of their ship. The boomerang disappears from sight, only to reappear, curling around the back of the ship's superstructure, to land on the wharf nearby."

Those still not convinced accompany Maurice to a nearby park or playing field to try the boomerang themselves after a little instruction. Can you visualize what follows? "The next minute, a group of normally inscrutable Japanese are laughing and scampering around the field like children, cameras clicking to record the amusement, surprise, and thrill of their first throw—especially when they get the boomerang to return somewhere close to them."

What Is a Boomerang?

A dictionary describes a boomerang simply as "a hard-wood missile used by the natives of Australia, shaped like the segment of a circle and so balanced that when thrown to a distance it returns towards the thrower." Of course, as a verb "boomerang" refers to a scheme that backfires and harms the perpetrator. But let's concentrate on the throwing type.

Today, boomerang-throwing is mainly a sport. Some who take it quite seriously have formed clubs. One of these is the Mudgeeraba Creek Emu-Racing and Boomerang-Throwing Association in Queensland, Australia. But it was not always a sport. The boomerang was developed as a hunting instrument and a weapon of war among the Australian aborigines.

But do not think that the boomerang is solely an Australian weapon. Boomerangs have been found in ancient Egyptian tombs. Some had their tips covered with gold, presumably to increase their range. What their ancient name was is not recorded, but the modern name "boomerang" is from the term *bou-mar-rang* in the language of the Turawal tribe of aborigines who lived on the banks of the Georges River, near Sydney.

Throwing sticks closely resembling the boomerang have been found in Holland,

Denmark, Germany, northeast Africa, India (where they were made of steel or ivory), and among the Hopi Indians of Arizona in the United States. Whereas the boomerang was generally superseded by the bow and arrow, among the Australian aborigines this ancient weapon has been in common use up to modern times.

Its Use in the Hunt

Come with us and witness the use of the boomerang as a hunting weapon. Notice that the aboriginal hunters have carefully strung nets between suitable trees. The birds they are pursuing have settled in a position directly facing the nets, and the aim is to force the birds to fly low and get entangled in the nets. If they rise above the trees, all will be lost.

Look! Several hunters spring to their feet. With careful aim they hurl boomerangs toward the prey. The rotating missiles climb rapidly into the air, skim over the trees, and circle just above the birds. Those whirring blades must sound like hawks. The birds keep low. Notice how the hunters add to the illusion by making hawklike cries. The panic-stricken birds crash into the waiting net. The hunt is a great success.

Meanwhile, each of the spinning boomerangs has completed a full circle. As if by command, each one has returned, either to be caught by its thrower or to fall at his feet.

For a boomerang to return to the thrower, however, it must be relatively small and light. So most are about 30 inches (75 cm) long. This makes them too light to inflict serious damage on larger animals such as kangaroos and wallabies. Such a boomerang might bring down a bird in flight or wound a small animal if the thrower's aim is exceptional. But apart from the kind of hunting just described, the returning boomerang was really used for little more than throwing-practice or recreation.

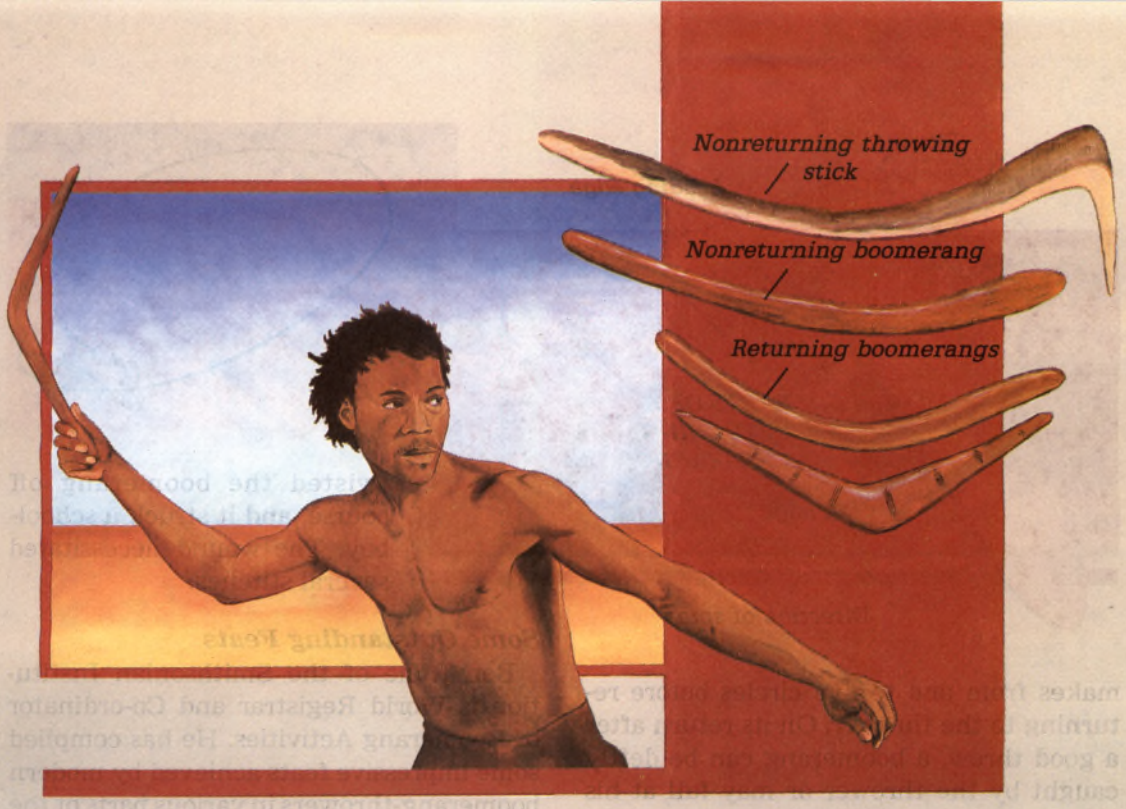
A Nonreturning "Boomerang"

The instrument used mainly as a weapon in hunting and warfare was the kylie, or killer stick. It was made in the same shape as a boomerang but was much larger—up to 4 feet (1.2 m) in length and weighing about 1 1/2 pounds (0.7 kg). However, the kylie would not return when thrown. It was a far more deadly weapon than its smaller counterpart, and its spinning action enabled it to travel much farther. The kylie could be aimed with greater accuracy than a spear, and because of the swath of its 4-foot spin, the kylie's killing power was spread over a much larger area than just a point, as is the case with a spear. Some accurate throws of up to 660 feet (200 m) have been recorded, and it would have been easy to get within that distance of an unsuspecting kangaroo or wallaby.

Aerodynamic Design

The throwing stick, the boomerang, and the kylie all follow aerodynamic principles of design, enabling them to stay aloft for a longer time than any other thrown object. Their "wings" are comparable in shape to those of an airplane or a soaring bird. In flight, the rounded edge of the boomerang pushes through and "splits" the air, causing it to pass above and below the "wing." The air above the "wing" races across its surface and causes a lifting action. A thrower can add to this lifting action by a flick of the wrist as the boomerang leaves his hand.

An outstanding feature of the boomerang is called the skew, one end being twisted upward and the other downward. It is amazing that the aborigines learned the



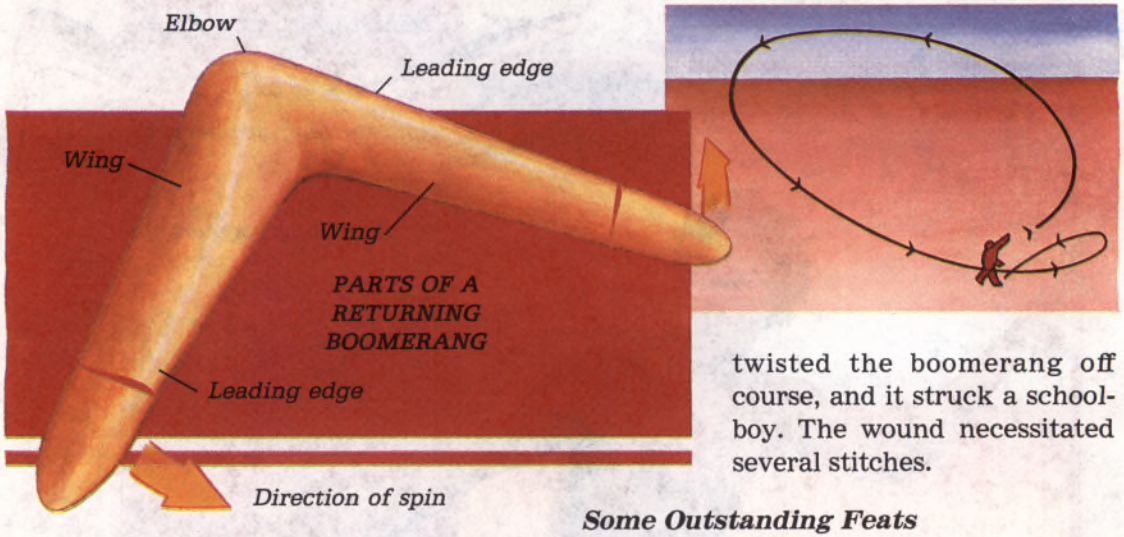
need for this without any aerodynamic training. One method used was to heat the boomerang in hot ashes until it was pliant. Another was to soak it in water until the wood was soft enough to be twisted to the desired shape.

Throwing for a Good Return

Those adept at getting the boomerang to return claim that this is not difficult and requires only patience and practice. The "elbow" of the boomerang should be away from the thrower, and it should be held in a vertical, not horizontal, position. (See the illustration.) In their book *All About Boomerangs,* Lorin and Mary Hawes claim that if the boomerang is thrown correctly, it does not matter which end is held in the thrower's hand. The boomerang will always return if it is thrown with plenty of spin. They state:

"The action of throwing a boomerang is not so much a matter of opening the hand and turning loose the boomerang as it is giving a snappy throw with the hand closed —so that, in leaving, the boomerang has to pull itself free and pivot round the hooked index finger, thus gaining a lot of spin as it does so. . . . The throwing motion of the arm is not unlike the action of cracking a whip. The hand starts its throw at a point behind the shoulder and ends with a snap, straight in front, where it usually stops about an arm's length from the shoulder. Most of the throwing force is transmitted by bending the elbow. There should be no conscious pulling back of the hand before the end of the throw, but rather a smooth follow-through action."

If thrown from the right hand, apparently the boomerang travels straight ahead for about 30 yards (27 m), then inclines to the left. As it inclines, it lays over to the horizontal position, rises high into the sky, and



makes from one to five circles before returning to the thrower. On its return after a good throw, a boomerang can be deftly caught by the thrower or may fall at his feet.

There Are Some Dangers

Throwing a boomerang is probably the only sport in which the thrower is aiming at himself, because he is his own target. But there is also danger for spectators or anyone passing nearby. The effect of the wind also has to be taken into consideration. In fact, many experienced throwers caution against throwing at all if the wind is more than a gentle breeze. Wind speed can be determined by dropping light pieces of grass or leaves and noting their drift.

Inexperienced throwers need to be extremely careful and should throw only in wide, open spaces. Serious injury or even death could result from an unfortunate accident. To illustrate: An aboriginal senator from Queensland is a recognized boomerang thrower. But once, when he was giving a demonstration of the art at a school centenary celebration, a sudden gust of wind twisted the boomerang off course, and it struck a schoolboy. The wound necessitated several stitches.

Some Outstanding Feats

Ben Ruhe of the Smithsonian Institution is World Registrar and Co-ordinator of Boomerang Activities. He has compiled some impressive feats achieved by modern boomerang-throwers in various parts of the world.

- **Greatest Distance Thrown:** 480 feet (146.3 m).
- **Accuracy:** Eleven straight catches without moving either foot.
- **Most Courageous Throw:** A thrower in Parramatta, Australia, regularly threw a boomerang while blindfolded, standing motionless, and allowing the boomerang to hit an apple on his head.
- **Best Double Throw:** In Balby, England, a thrower is reported to have thrown a right-handed and a left-handed boomerang together for landings, one on top of the other, between his feet.

The boomerang is rapidly becoming as popular with tourists visiting Australia as are the koala and the kangaroo. And although you personally may have little chance to throw one, you can be assured that when it is thrown correctly the boomerang *really does come back!*

The Creation Book Goes to School

I am 12 years old and attend 7th grade at Hazel Park Junior High School in St. Paul, Minnesota. When my science teacher mentioned our next unit would be on animals and where they come from, she suggested we would be discussing evolution. I thought it was a perfect opportunity to take to school our book *Life—How Did It Get Here? By Evolution or by Creation?*

When she looked at it, the illustrations caught her eye. She asked if she could take it home and look it over. It so happened we had a two-week break. When she returned to school, she asked if there was a way she might purchase this book. Of course, I said. It is only $2.50.

She said this book would help her because of a law prohibiting teaching religion in school. She could now make information on creation available to her classes without teaching religion herself. Many times in the classroom she would hold the book up and point out illustrations suitable to what she was teaching that day. After referring to the book many times in this way, she invited the students to check the book out whenever they wanted. She also made available a copy of the Bible, so the students could read the Genesis account of creation.

When our unit was almost complete, I looked at the list to see how many checked the new *Creation* book out. I was so surprised to see how many of the students I go to school with really cared about whether we evolved or were created. My teacher said she has read our literature before, but she really liked *this* book.—A. P., United States.

"Evolution Is a Religion Which Masquerades as Science"

"An Associated Press-NBC News poll discovered that 76% of Americans believe that both the theories of evolution and creation ought to be taught in public schools. Only 8% wanted the evolution theory alone and only 10% wanted just the creation theory taught. Six per cent were unsure. . . .

"The central argument against teaching the creation theory in public schools is that it is religion masquerading as science. But according to Dr. Carl Sagan, evolution is a religion which masquerades as science. . . .

"No theory, whether scientific or political, can be sustained if a wall must be built to keep adherents in and opponents out. If the bondage which flows from a flawed political ideology like communism can be denounced, should not the wall surrounding the citadel of evolution be torn down and the opponents allowed to do battle on an equal basis? . . .

"Evolutionists don't want to fight. They have already declared victory and view any assault on their domain as pretension. Could it be that the reason they want to avoid a fight is because they evolved from chickens?" —Cal Thomas' column in the New York *Daily News*, Friday, August 22, 1986.

Now I Play a Different Tune

AS A ten-year-old the countries I heard of around the Mediterranean were in my childish imagination remote exotic places wrapped in mystery. Their strange music had chords with mystic associations and ancient sounds that fascinated me. I never imagined that as an adult I would get to see many of these countries. Yet later, as a musician in a Spanish dance-band, I played in Morocco, Ethiopia, Greece, Libya, the Sudan, Egypt, and others.

I was born in the village of Cervera del Río Alhama of the famous wine region of La Rioja, in northern Spain. Since childhood, my father had forced me to study the trumpet; my mother made sure that I got a strict religious upbringing. She taught me to go to Mass every Sunday and on the holy days.

This custom was so strongly rooted in me that years later as I traveled I always looked for a church so I could go to Mass.

A Different Instrument

In 1959 I signed up to play in the Spanish Five (*Los Cinco de España*) orchestra. On one occasion while playing in Cyprus, another musician asked me what I liked to read. My answer was, "Sacred history." "If you like sacred history," he said, "I know someone who can teach you."

I never got to meet that person, but he left me a Bible. What an unexpected gift! I began to read it avidly. It became like a new instrument to me—a magnificent instrument. But in my hands it was like a professional accordion in the hands of a beginner.

Later I arrived in Libya and met a Greek called Panos. He was one of Jehovah's Witnesses. Purely by chance we shared the same bedroom. The first day, when I unpacked, I pulled out my illuminated crucifix that I plugged into the wall. Then I took out some pictures of "saints" and spread them out on the table. In the case, I still had four more crucifixes that I had bought for my sisters back in Spain. I also wore around my neck my own crucifix on a gold chain. The last thing I took out was the Bible I had been given in Cyprus.

Panos observed me, but he made no com-

Now the Bible is my instrument, and the Kingdom message is its melody

ment. A few days later the subject arose and a discussion ensued. I was very impressed at how Panos could handle the Bible. He spoke about Exodus chapter 20, verses 1 to 7, and Deuteronomy chapter 7, verse 25.

I read them. "What's this?" I asked. "You must not make a graven image nor a form like anything in the heavens or earth . . . You must not bow down to them nor be led to serve them." And, "The graven images of their gods you should burn in the fire. You must not desire the silver and the gold upon them."

I looked at my illuminated cross, the pictures of "saints," my gold crucifix. I thought of the churches full of images where I had attended Mass—*for me those were objects of worship and adoration!*

Several days passed after that conversation. I meditated on what the Bible said and finally made my decision. I did not waver. I took a heavy stone and smashed those images and threw the pieces into the sea. A regular study of the Bible with the help of that Greek musician did away with my doubts.

A Different Tune

Before returning to Spain, I began to write to my family about my newfound faith—sometimes not too tactfully. When I got back to my hometown, I collected all my symbols of worship and smashed and burned them.

One night I brought together about 80 of my neighbors and friends and gave them a witness. Someone warned me that I would pay dearly for my zeal. In those years, prior to 1970, religious freedom for Jehovah's Witnesses did not exist in Spain. I was even told that in a neighboring town, they had prepared a stake from which to hang me. But I viewed it as an idle threat. The important thing was that I was acquiring ability in using the instrument of instruments —the Bible.

As I used it more and more, it became easier to prove points with texts: Exodus 20:1-5, God disapproves of the use of images in worship; Ezekiel 18:4, 20, the soul is not immortal; John 1:1, 18, Jesus is the Son of God, not God himself. From a simple solid basis, I could prove my faith.

Playing in a Better Cause

Later, during a concert tour of Holland, I was baptized on May 19, 1968.

That represented for me the beginning of a new career. I returned to the Rioja region, where my sister and my niece had also got baptized. They were the firstfruits of my early, impetuous preaching. During this period I was arrested while preaching with a circuit overseer in Soria. This was prior to the 1970 legalization of Jehovah's Witnesses in Spain. After 12 hours of interrogation, I was jailed for three days. I used that time profitably preaching in prison. One of the prisoners, from Seville, became interested in the truth. On his return to Andalusia, he accepted a Bible study and in time got baptized.

Now dedicated and baptized, I decided to go into the full-time ministry. In 1970 I was appointed as a special pioneer minister, and in the years that followed, I preached in many different areas of Spain. In all these assignments, people responded to the melody of the good news of God's Kingdom by Christ. Strong congregations of Jehovah's Witnesses are active where 20 years ago there were only tiny groups or nothing at all.

It has been my privilege to play a small part in that expansion, not with my trumpet, but with God's Word, the Bible. (Psalm 9:11)—*As told by José María Peláez.*

From Our Readers

Hope for the Mentally Ill

I have just read the issue on "Hope for the Mentally Ill" and wish to compliment you for doing such an excellent job. (September 8, 1986) I am sure that some of your objectives in such articles were to be understandable, accurate, informative, and to be helpful and encouraging to those with a mental illness. In my professional opinion you have achieved your objectives.

J. T. C., M.D., United States

The Unborn Child

I have just read "A Letter From the Mother of an Unborn Child." (July 22, 1986) It seemed as though the person was actually writing about me and describing my feelings. I also trust that the blood of Jesus Christ will purify my serious sins, but the memory of what I have done is always present. Keep on writing such articles so that others may be helped to avoid doing such a bad thing.

A. M. L., Italy

I have just read "A Letter From the Mother of an Unborn Child," and "From Our Readers" in the issue of October 22, 1986. I think this was good for young ones just entering high school. I am 13 years old and will be entering high school next year. If the girls now in the higher grades could read this material, at least a few of them would change their minds about sex and abortion. When I read the letter I cried. Sometimes sad things get the point across. Thank you for publishing that letter.

D. W., United States

Recovering From Drug Abuse

Thank you for your article "Young People Ask . . . How Can I Recover From Drug Abuse?" (July 8, 1986) For eleven months I have been suffering from a confused mind, the result of regularly taking LSD. The last time I took LSD, I took several other things as well. The combined effect was incredibly frightening. When I woke up the next day, I thought I was dead and believed this for three months. When I slowly came to realize that I was still very much alive, I decided to find out, before it happened, what would happen to me when I died. Jehovah's Witnesses helped me to study the Bible and find the truth on this subject. It was not until I was shown God's view on this matter from the Bible that I finally found the incentive that has enabled me to give up my long-term habit of smoking cannabis. My life has improved greatly, though I continue to have problems identifying my emotions. Having read your article, I realize that the way I feel is normal for recovering drug abusers and I feel much better. When things don't go too well, I reread the article, as it gives me real encouragement to keep fighting.

J. H., England

Like an Encyclopedia

Thank you for the wealth of information that we have learned through your magazine. The bound volumes of past issues are like encyclopedias of knowledge on just about any subject. And it's all upbuilding material that points us to the hope of a bright future, even if we face so many problems in this world today.

F. L., United States

Watching the World

Population Dilemma

According to population experts, Europe now has a dozen nations that are getting close to a demographic growth rate of zero (the point where births are equal to the level of deaths), notes *El Universal,* Mexico City's daily newspaper. The average world growth is said to have declined to about 1.6 percent and seems to be decreasing slowly each year. "That is not enough," claims Werner Fornos, president of the Population Institute in Washington, D.C. Why? Lester Brown of the Worldwatch Institute explains that despite the fact that the percentage of population growth is decreasing on a world level, the total number of persons on the globe keeps growing. The year 1950 saw a net increase (births minus deaths) of 35 million in world population. In 1970 it grew by 70 million. In 1986 it is expected to grow by 82 million. This means that the world population is increasing by 2.6 persons each second, 9,360 each hour, and 224,640 each day! At this rate, it is predicted that there will be six billion persons on earth by the end of this century.

Crime Increasing

A recent FBI report revealed that serious crime in the United States increased by 8 percent during the first half of 1986, compared to a 5-percent jump during the previous year. Some major cities have experienced over a 15-percent increase. Crime in Dallas, Texas, however, skyrocketed 19.5 percent! Cited as potential links to crime's increase are drug use, financial problems, and America's appetite for violence. Commenting on the latter, Jerald Vaughn of the International Association of Chiefs of Police explained: "Violence has become an accepted way of life in America—we seem to thrive on it."

Reindeer Killing

At least 38,000 reindeer in Norway and Sweden have been

scheduled to be killed as a result of the Chernobyl nuclear accident. The animals, worth $225 to $300 each, are unsuitable for eating because of their high levels of radiation after grazing on contaminated lichen. "This will be a blow to the Lapp people who herd more than 600,000 reindeer in the Arctic wasteland," reports *The Sunday Times* of London. The strongly flavored meat is popular in Scandinavia and is exported to countries such as the Federal Republic of Germany and Japan. "This is a threat to our entire livelihood," a reindeer herder commented.

Immorality by Computer

When "minitels," small computer terminals linked up with the telephone system for consulting data banks, were instituted in France, they gave access to a host of useful information. Railway timetables, bank information, and games were among the many features accessible to users. However, the minitel has also opened up new commercial horizons in the field of pornography. The French daily *Le Monde* reported that among nine hundred services offered to minitel customers, "three hundred . . . are opening the door to convivial message systems," an expression that more often than not means conversations of a pornographic nature. The article added that these "'convivial' conversations can end up soliciting minors, inciting to immoral behavior, or even opening the way to the prostitution network."

Kidney-Stone Breakthrough!

A new technique for destroying kidney stones by laser has just been tried by two British scientists. According to the French weekly magazine *L'Express,* a laser beam can break up stones already in the ureter, a duct leading from the kidney to the bladder. Stones cannot be crushed at this stage by the use of ultrasonic waves. However, by means of an endoscope "the laser device—a long flexible tube with a quartz fiber head of a quarter of a millimeter [0.01 in.] in diameter—is introduced into the ureter. At the rate of five shots a second, it takes 2,000 pulses to destroy an average sized stone. The stones are progressively broken up as if by a pneumatic drill. Reduced to tiny particles like tiny grains of sand, they are . . . eliminated simply and painlessly when urine is passed."

Baby's Best Friend

A newborn infant abandoned in a "weed-choked, bottle-strewn alley in 60-degree weather" was kept alive by a stray German shepherd, reports the *Detroit Free Press.* According to one of the police officers who discovered the infant, the animal had "curled [itself] around a baby that was holding onto a little twig. And the baby was being licked by the dog." This bizarre discovery came about three hours after the officers had learned that a woman suffering from severe bleeding due to childbirth was admitted to a hospital. When no baby was found and the woman claimed she had never been pregnant, the police went to her apartment and followed a trail of blood to the alley where the child had been abandoned. The six-pound, four-ounce baby boy is listed in stable condition after suffering from hypothermia.

Record Distribution

Information supplied by the United Bible Societies reveals that by May of last year the Bible had been translated into 1,829 languages or dialects. This represents an increase of 21 languages within a year! Only a few Bible books, however, are actually translated into that number of languages. The whole Bible is currently translated into only 293 languages, some of which are no longer spoken.

New Panda Cub

"The birth of a giant panda Aug. 10 at a center run by China and the World Wildlife Fund is a major step in efforts to save the

species from extinction," reports *The New York Times.* The panda cub, weighing only three and a half ounces (99 g), was born to Li Li, a 15- to 18-year-old female weighing 237 pounds (108 kg). The father, Quan Quan, is a male 6 1/2 to 7 years old who weighs 198 pounds (90 kg). Because the center tries to create conditions similar to the pandas' natural habitat, it is said that pandas being cared for there can be returned to the wild more easily than those born in zoos.

Dissension Growing

The Vatican's recent penalizing of two Catholic prelates in the United States because of their liberal views on birth control and other sexual issues has increased the discord among American Catholics, says Archbishop Rembert G. Weakland of Milwaukee. According to Weakland, continued disciplinary action taken against Roman Catholic leaders in the United States may cause many ordinary Catholics to drift away from the church and "begin pursuing their faith privately in their own fashion," notes *The New York Times.* Comparing present church conditions in the United States to the church in the Netherlands, Weakland pointed out that it was possible that the American church would follow the path of the Dutch church. In what way? "Dutch Catholics are among the most liberal in the world, and many in the church there have distanced themselves from Rome and its teachings," reports the *Times.* It should be noted, however, that "liberal" teachings often go contrary to Bible teachings.

Memory Metal

A unique metal alloy that was developed by the U.S. military nearly 25 years ago is now available to consumers. What makes the alloy unique? Its ability to "remember" its original shape when heated. For example, *Time* magazine notes that the Beta Phase company of California has produced a pair of frames for eyeglasses that can be restored to their original shape when exposed to a temperature of 130 degrees Fahrenheit (54° C.). The Memory Wire bra, made by Japan's Wacoal Corporation, that is currently sold in the United States was also cited as a product containing the unique metal.

Our Beautiful Earth

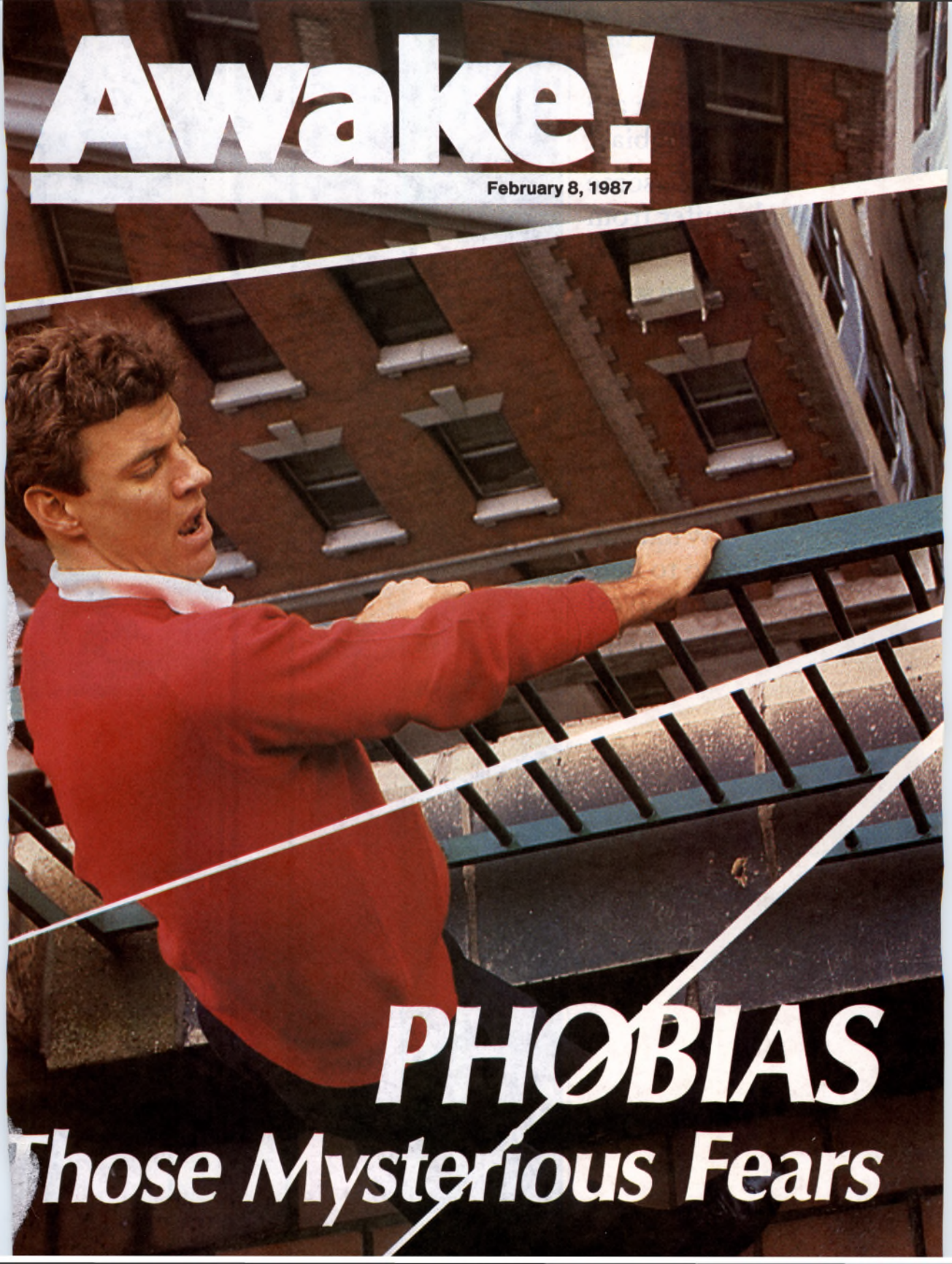
and man's responsibility toward it:

To preserve its beauty, which he hasn't.
To care for its plants and animals, which he hasn't.
To fill it with righteous offspring, which he hasn't.
To love his neighbor, which he hasn't.
To love its Creator, which he hasn't.

While mankind has failed in his responsibility toward it, will we as individuals show appreciation for it and its Creator?

Awake!

February 8, 1987



PHOBIAS

Those Mysterious Fears

What are phobias?

Why do some people suffer from them?

Why are some afraid of confined spaces, such as a telephone booth, while others fear open spaces and heights?

What can phobics do to help themselves?

Can others help?

Phobias

The Fears of Millions

"I stepped into the telephone booth. Suddenly a terrifying fear swept over me. I had to get out. I pushed the door, but mistakenly the wrong way, so it didn't budge. I went berserk. I clawed, I kicked, and I screamed. I lost all control. I was shaking. My legs felt weak. I was trapped in there. It seemed like an eternity—yet in reality it was barely five minutes.

"As soon as a passerby released me, I went to my doctor. After tests, he eventually diagnosed *claustrophobia,* fear of confined spaces. He called my experience a typical panic attack. Four years later I am still learning how to cope with my phobia. It is a fear that lives with me now."

THE fear and panic generated by a phobia can be terrifying, as Helen, the woman who had the experience related above, testifies. In the United States, where this took place, nearly one in 10—about 22 million people—suffer from phobias. In Britain the figure given is about four million. But not all cases—even severe ones—are reported or are under medical scrutiny. Many people just live with their phobias and keep them to themselves. Maybe you are one of these.

How many different phobias are there? About 300 are classified, but the list may be endless. Some cause mild distress or are just a nuisance. Others can completely change the lives of those plagued by them, calling for much understanding and loving care from family members, friends, and associates.

What is the cause of phobias? Can anything be done to prevent them? For those gripped by a phobia, what hope is there of a cure?

Phobia: An excessive fear of a specific object or situation. Phobias "are divided into *common phobias,* or exaggerated fears of things most people are afraid of, such as death; and *specific phobias,* or fears of things that aren't in themselves frightening, such as open fields or elevators. Phobias are usually rooted in anxiety, in the fear that, having been 'bad,' something is bound to 'get you.' The phobic person projects anxiety onto some external situation which he or she then feels has to be avoided."—*The Complete Medical Guide,* by B. F. Miller.

Awake!® February 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 3

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Phobias
—The Fears of Millions 3
Fenced In by Phobias 4

Also in This Issue

As a Lawyer, I Put God to the Test 9
Crossword Puzzle 14
What Do Clothes Mean to You? 15
Money—Its Origin and Use 19
Young People Ask...
Why Should I Be Thankful? 20
Mute Stones Speak Out 23
The Bible's Viewpoint
Jehovah's Witnesses
—Different From Other Religions 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Why All That Dust? 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

Fenced In by Phobias

THREE QUARTERS of those with the worst phobic symptoms are women, but the statistics do not tell us why. The age bracket for most men and women sufferers is 25 to 45, but the reason remains unknown.

"We are truly in a state of disagreement about the origin of phobias," confessed psychiatrist Dr. Thurlow Oppenheimer in an address to a group of therapists in New York, adding: "We are in a dark forest of human conflicts." Phobias are a mystery.

What Can Cause Phobias?

Research indicates that phobias may develop for a number of reasons. A panic attack, for example, can follow a traumatic experience or loss of a loved one. Helen, quoted earlier, had nearly died in a vacation-trailer fire some months earlier. Did the shock trigger the panic situation in the telephone booth? According to this theory, it could have done so.

On the other hand, many scientists believe that phobias are learned from others. By observing their parents, children can, as they grow up, learn to react to parental phobias in a similar way. In some instances,

however, as the child matures, the fear can be transferred from its original source and manifest itself in a different situation. Helen admits: "I have had a tendency toward mild phobias for as long as I can remember." Was the experience something learned, or perhaps transferred, in her case? There is really no sure way of telling.

A phobia that originates in a specific experience is more easily identified. If, for example, a child is badly frightened by a dog or bitten by one, such an event can develop into *cynophobia,* a fear of dogs, in later life. Similarly, *aquaphobia* (or, *hydrophobia*), a fear of water, may stem from an experience of nearly drowning.

According to modern analysis, all phobias fall into three well-known basic types. It is helpful to be able to identify them. So first of all, let us look at

Social and Simple Phobias

Do you know people who are afraid to sign their name in public because they are terrified their hand will tremble? Or some who are afraid to speak up in public or to attend a party? Such problems are examples of *social phobias.* They are induced by the presence of other people.

Simple phobias relate to specific objects or situations, such as the fear of dogs or of water. An excessive fear of cats, mice, or spiders is also commonplace, as is a fear of heights. In this same category doctors will include *claustrophobia,* fear of confined spaces, as it fits into the pattern of being triggered by a specific cause.

Irrational as it must appear to most of us for anybody to be completely terrified by such basic fears, it is not difficult to imagine how extremely frustrating life can be for those who cannot escape their grip.

Why 'the Fear of Fear'?

The third type of phobia, *agoraphobia,* is the most complex of all phobias. Literally, the word means "fear of the marketplace." Some authorities maintain that this fear is really of what the marketplace represents: crowds and a loss of safety or control that one can enjoy in a more confined area. Sufferers therefore describe agoraphobia in different ways, perhaps as a fear of crowds or even as a fear of leaving home.

As it is so all-embracing, agoraphobia is also described as 'the fear of fear itself.' Many victims are immobilized to the extent that they will go to extremes to avoid any situation that they feel could bring on a panic attack. As a result, their lives become more and more closely fenced in by this gripping phobia until they eventually become too cramped to make any movement at all.

Is it all in the mind? Some research indicates that agoraphobia may be a physical illness, a disorder of the nervous system. Psychiatrist Dr. David V. Sheehan, author

Nobody can pinpoint a common cause of phobias

of *The Anxiety Disease,* asserts: "What is becoming increasingly clear is that we are dealing with a medical illness." Some feel that there is validity to this medical-illness idea, indicated by the fact that injections of sodium lactate can bring on panic attacks in people suffering from this phobia, as Dr. Ferris Pitts, professor of psychiatry at the University of Southern California, discovered. This, however, is only one theory.

Research into the cause of phobias is systematically being pursued in many directions. Some seek a genetic connection. Others believe that hormonal imbalances may be at the root of the trouble. Has what we eat anything to do with it? According to Dennis Charney and his team of researchers at Yale University School of Medicine, caffeine can produce "anxiety, nervousness, fear, nausea, palpitations, restlessness and tremors" in some agoraphobics.

Yet the fact remains that nobody can pinpoint a common cause of phobias. They are still a mystery.

What Aid for Phobics?

Can phobias be cured by medication and the vast array of modern drugs? In some cases, it would seem so. But here again, the response of individuals can vary as much as their phobias. "In spite of promising successes in treating some anxiety disorders with medications," comments psychiatrist David Burns, "there is a complete lack of evidence that drugs alone will do the job." In fact, for many victims some drugs have no effect at all, or if they do, it lasts only for a short time—a few months or as little as a week or so.

Side effects from drugs also have to be taken into consideration, and they can be quite unpleasant. For this reason it has been estimated that only 70 percent of phobics can take them. Aside from insomnia, blurred vision, and other problems, some drugs in certain cases can produce symptoms of a panic attack, much to the distress of the sufferer.

It is therefore not uncommon for phobics to pursue more than one therapy in their quest for relief. "The method which has worked wonders for one may do little for another," observes Muriel Frampton in her book *Agoraphobia—Coping With the Outside World.* In addition to the orthodox medical treatments, homeopathy, osteopathy, acupuncture, and various nature remedies are all on record as helping some individuals.* Personal preference plays its part in the selection of medications. Even so, it is good to be alert to some problems in this regard.

Thorough physical relaxation is essential to the easing of mental tension

ECT and Hypnosis

In Britain, one therapy for anxiety is ECT (electroconvulsive therapy), or shock

* *Awake!* does not recommend any one type of medicine or therapy over another and does not offer medical advice. Its aim is simply to present facts and to leave it to the reader to make judgments and decisions.

treatment as it is commonly called. A weak electric current is passed through the brain to induce a mild fit. It can bring relief, but as far as removing phobias is concerned, its effects may not be long lasting. There are also possible side effects, such as a loss of memory. This treatment has now been banned or restricted in parts of the United States and in some European countries.

Hypnosis, or hypnotherapy, has also been recommended by some doctors. But as Frampton states: "Experience has suggested that therapy is more soundly based when it involves the conscious will of the patient." (*Agoraphobia—Coping With the Outside World*) Christians, however, are aware of the dangers involved in passing control of the mind to another and they avoid hypnosis.

The Value of Self-Help

In view of the limitations of medication, can phobics do anything to help themselves? Yes, and many doctors and therapists teach that self-help is the best way to treat phobias. Results can be rewarding and often long lasting.

First of all, the victim has to learn the art of relaxation. Thorough physical relaxation is essential for the all-important easing of mental tension. Along these lines, psychologist Alan Goldstein reports: "We teach agoraphobic patients to relax, to use breath control and to stop their panicking thoughts and focus on the 'here and now' to help them deal with panic attacks."

Once this far (and it is not easy, as it can take weeks of patient effort to learn to relax adequately), the next step is to identify the source of the fear and face up to it. A skilled therapist can help a patient to understand the stages that lead to a panic attack. Then, step by step, he encourages the patient, in his imagination, to overcome them. As Alan Goldstein puts it: "We help them to identify their feelings and get in touch with them."

Not all sufferers can master this desensitization technique, as it is called. But it can eventually lead those who do master it to face the actual experience and overcome it. Even if a complete cure is not effected, the cause, or causes, of the phobia may at least be tolerated thereafter. Therapists using the technique claim that eight out of every ten

By adding either Greek or Latin prefixes to *phobia*, Greek for "fear," hundreds of words have been coined to identify specific fears. Here are examples of some better-known phobias.

acrophobia: fear of height
agoraphobia: fear of open spaces
ailurophobia: fear of cats
aquaphobia (or, *hydrophobia*): fear of water
astraphobia: fear of thunder storms
claustrophobia: fear of confined spaces
cynophobia: fear of dogs
demonophobia: fear of devil/demons
gephyrophobia: fear of crossing bridges
hematophobia: fear of blood
hodophobia: fear of travel
lalophobia: fear of speaking
mikrophobia: fear of germs
mysophobia: fear of dirt, or contamination
nyctophobia: fear of the dark
ophidiophobia: fear of snakes
pyrophobia: fear of fire
thanatophobia: fear of death
xenophobia: fear of strangers, or foreigners
zoophobia: fear of animals

Facing up to the phobia takes courage

phobics who try this approach gain substantial relief.

Fighting the Fear

An extension of this desensitization idea is to have the patient deliberately face the source of his fear for as long as possible. This takes a lot of courage and can be exhausting and emotionally upsetting in some cases. For these reasons it is often best pursued under some type of professional direction rather than on an individual basis. Either way, it often brings good results.

A pioneer of this approach, Tony Elliott, himself a former agoraphobic, formed a phobic association in Nottingham, England. To help sufferers beat the phobia of traveling by train, he arranges for those involved to visit a train station and sit in a railway carriage in a siding. Later on, a short ride in the station is the first step, progressing eventually to a journey of a few miles to the next station. Doctors monitor the trip and stand by with a supply of tranquilizers.

Results have been encouraging. "I can get some of them 90 percent cured," is Elliott's claim. The same therapy is now being applied to bus and airplane travel and is being used by numerous associations.*

Empathy and Religious Faith

How easy it is to laugh at other people's phobias! Such fears, however, are very real and call for deep understanding and compassion. Those who suffer are rarely exaggerating or pretending. The ironlike grip of fear can be intense and the handicaps experienced completely genuine.

Yet it is not unknown for well-intentioned friends to make light of the problem, encouraging the phobic to 'snap out of it.' 'You give in too easily!' 'Don't be silly, it can't hurt you!' are commonly heard expressions. But they are, in fact, counterproductive—and unkind. The phobic person requires patient help and empathy.

Another strong factor in helping the phobic person can be a strong religious conviction. As one writer expressed it: "I am firmly of the opinion that religious faith is relevant to every part of life, and those who profess such a faith should 'mobilize' it in their fight against fear."

Certainly it is good counsel for a Christian to turn to God in prayer when a phobic panic situation seems to be developing. Trust in God and in his love and power can be a strong spiritual aid.—Philippians 4:6, 7, 13.

The aforementioned writer warns: "I must add, however, that religious faith does not necessarily work a 'miracle' and provide instant cure." No one claims that it is easy to overcome a phobia. It is a battle that takes place in the *mind*, and perseverance is vital. The same expert writes: "If you give up as soon as you panic, you will be back in your prison again. It is only by facing the fear, and living through it, realizing that the *fear itself cannot harm you,* that you will gradually lose your anxiety and find freedom."

* In many countries there are now societies to help phobics. They can be contacted through normal medical or government agencies.

As a Lawyer, I Put God to the Test

MY PARENTS valued education. So, despite the financial burden, they sent all eight of us children to Catholic schools.

Each evening during the month of May, our family recited the Rosary. Occasionally during this month of special Catholic devotion to Jesus' mother, my brother and I would set up at home a little altar for flowers and a statue of Mary.

Daily during Lent we would all get up at six to attend Mass. One summer while I was serving as an altar boy, I assisted at two and three Masses a day. I even considered becoming a priest.

Doubts Arise

Things changed, though. In high school I was quite involved in athletics, leading to a football scholarship that helped to pay my way at university. High school was also where I began to have doubts about my religion. I remember one class taught by a priest. We started with the premise that there is no God, and the goal was to conclude that there definitely is an almighty God. The problem was that by halfway through the discussion, the priest was unable to deal with our questions about evolution. It was embarrassing also to see him squirm over such questions as: "Why do we call you father when Jesus said we should call no man father?"—Matthew 23:9.

At the time, I tried to overcome my doubts and continued praying and attending Mass. But when my scholarship took me to the University of Washington, things got worse. As with many student athletes, my worship was soon totally selfish. Before every game I would go to Mass and pray for victory. After the game I

I study the Bible with prisoners

Our boys enjoy sharing in worship with us

forgot God while partying with my teammates. The Vietnam War was raging, too, causing me to question how things were done. By my last year in college, I was using marijuana daily.

Feeling We Did Not Belong

Next, in 1968, came law school at the Catholic University of San Diego. Here I tried to bargain with God. I felt that if I went to Mass, I could be assured that he would see that I got good grades. During my first semester I met Melinda; the following summer we got married. The day after our wedding, we got up to attend Mass but arrived a bit late. After standing in the back of the church for a while, we looked around and then at each other. We felt we simply did not belong. We left, never to attend Mass again.

By the time our first son, Joshua, was born a couple of years later, I was practicing law with a group of attorneys who defended poor persons accused of committing federal crimes. To me this seemed to be a perfect job, for I had become somewhat of a radical because of the unrest over the Vietnam War. I felt that I could frustrate a corrupt government by forcing it to use money in the courts. At the same time I might be helping people.

A Baby-Sitter Has the Answers

I once was assigned to represent a man being prosecuted for refusing to be in the military. It turned out that he was one of Jehovah's Witnesses and was determined not to kill others but rather to pursue the way of peace. (Isaiah 2:4) His explanations and the literature he gave me made no impression. From a different source, though, the matter came up again. Melinda used a baby-sitter who was a Witness. This became significant when Melinda was stumped by our son Joshua's simple questions about God.

Melinda was raised as a Catholic and attended a Jesuit-run university. Still she lost faith in God. In fact, during a vacation in Rome, she prayed that if she could see the pope, this certainly would restore her faith. She did see him being carried on the shoulders of other men. Rather than building faith, this convinced her that this was not the simple way of Jesus.

It is easy to see, then, why Melinda might be stumped by Joshua's questions. She was pleased, however, to find satisfying answers in the book *Listening to the Great Teacher,* obtained from the baby-sitter. Later, she met a former high school acquaintance who was now a Witness. Melinda asked her: "How could you possibly be one of Jehovah's Witnesses, and how can you believe the Bible? It is so contradictory." Wisely the Witness asked Melinda if she had ever read the entire Bible. Melinda's answer, "No," paved the way for a visit and a regular Bible study.

Cross-Examining the Bible

I told Melinda that she could go ahead with her Bible study as long as no one bothered me. Several months later I met the couple who were conducting the study, but I treated them very rudely. In reply to Melinda's, "Why?" I said: "Those weren't people. They were Jehovah's Witnesses!" That led to quite an upset in our family. Finally, in desperation, I said: "Invite the Witnesses over. I will be nice to them, and I will show you what a fool you are for studying the Bible."

The Witness couple, Dan and Sharon, arrived and, using just the Bible, withstood my intense cross-examination. I was frustrated that Dan seemed to have a Biblical answer for every problem I raised. There were three of those courtroomlike sessions. Finally Dan leaned back in his chair and said: "You know, I really like you." That cut through the air of hostility. In the resulting relaxed atmosphere Dan showed me a marvelous prophecy found in Daniel chapter 9 about the coming Messiah. I was so impressed that I became angry—not at him but at the religious training I had received that had been so shallow.

With a study of this and other Bible prophecies, my attitude toward the Scriptures quickly changed. I began to think that my own rebellion against human government, and my use of drugs, might not reflect a bad heart but a reaction to a system that needed to be replaced by God's Kingdom government.

My Drug Problem

I was thoroughly enjoying my Bible study with the help of the book *The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life.* Yet I was still using marijuana, reasoning, 'If I got through law school under its influence, surely I can learn the Bible in the same way.' I attended some meetings at the Kingdom Hall, but I did not want to continue as I had had enough of classes after 19 years of schooling.

I did agree to go to the smaller and more informal mid-week study with my wife. For the first three weeks, each time I was getting ready to leave the office a client would stop by and offer some powerful marijuana. After smoking it I certainly was not in any shape to attend a Christian meeting. So I would telephone Melinda and tell her to go without me. Finally she asked: "Don't you know who is doing this to you?" That brought me face to face with something I had not thought about. I did not like being used, and especially being used by the Devil. The next week the same sort of temptation occurred in the office, but I refused the marijuana.

'Could it be,' I wondered, 'that my smoking marijuana is more of a hindrance than I realize?' When our family took a ten-day vacation, I determined to put Jehovah to the test, as it were. With his help I would not use marijuana for that period at all. It was amazing how good I felt by the time I returned. Also, our study of the Bible each day of the trip convinced me more than

'Could it be,' I wondered, 'that my smoking marijuana is more of a hindrance than I realize?'

ever of the truth of God's Word. What a blessing that trip produced!

I remember the first meeting after that. Instead of my being the moping man in the corner, I was an eager participant. What a thrill it was for Melinda to see the difference in my personality! Soon our old friends and drug associates were replaced with warm, clean friendships among the Witnesses.

My Legal Career—A Trial

In 1975 Melinda and I symbolized our dedication to Jehovah God by water baptism. Later that year our second son, Jesse, was born. It certainly seemed that I was enjoying Jehovah's blessing. My practice in criminal law, though, required many trips to distant cities, meaning absences from my family and the congregation. I began to resent this schedule as my love for the Christian ministry grew.

On one trip, I met a number of fellow Witnesses who were lawyers and doctors. Two of them particularly impressed me, for they were devoted men who, while lawyers, had spent years in the full-time service of Jehovah God. It sparked in me a desire to use my legal skills in defending God's people and serving him in a greater way. A major step in that direction was when I began to devote 60 hours each month to the Christian ministry. For several years I did this, missing only a month when our third son, Ryan, was born.

One day an elder in our congregation brought up the possibility of my becoming a full-time minister. "There is no way I can do more than I am doing right now," I responded, "with my business to run and my family to care for." But for the next few days, I was plagued with the question, 'Really, why can't I be in the full-time ministry?' I took the matter in prayer to Jehovah, having in mind his words at Malachi 3: 10, where he invites humans to put him to the test and see if he will not bless them.

Three Obstacles to Overcome

Analyzing my situation, it seemed that I had three obstacles to my being in the full-time ministry. I certainly would need financial security to cushion the loss of income if I decreased my legal practice. So barrier number one was that I owned a house that I would have to sell. Connected with this was barrier number two. A fellow Witness lived in the house, and I did not want to force him to move. The third barrier was that I was in a law partnership.

I prayed to God: "If you want me to be in the full-time ministry, help me to sell this house without causing problems for my fellow Witness and help me to end my law partnership. If these three things can be done, I will enter the full-time ranks." About a week later, that Witness came with a startling message. He said that he hoped I would not be upset, but he was going to have to move because he was taking a job in another city!

The day of his move I drove over to help him finish his packing. On the way, I stopped by a hardware store and purchased a small "For Sale" sign. After we loaded his truck, I put the sign in the front window and locked the door. When I reached home, Melinda told me that a woman had called

and left her phone number. Telephoning her, I was shocked when she said that she 'just had to have that house.' What house was she talking about? She said that before she got married, she told her future husband that she would marry him upon his promise that if ever her dream house came on the market, he would buy it for her. She meant the house that I now wanted to sell. Of course, I said that she could buy it!

Soon thereafter one of my law partners told me of his decision to take another job and thus to dissolve our partnership. I could hardly wait to get home to tell Melinda and my sons what Jehovah had done. All agreed that it would be fine for me to begin the full-time ministry, which I did in June 1979.

Has He Blessed Our Family?

In September 1979, I was appointed to be an overseer in our congregation. Melinda shared in increased service for many months and now is my partner in the full-time ministry. Our three sons, too, are active in the Christian preaching work and bring us great joy. Through the help of God's Word and the congregation, Melinda and I have learned to be better parents, and this has brought a blessing to the children.

Over a year ago another blessing developed when I was accepted to go to the headquarters of the Watchtower Society in New York to do temporary work in the construction going on there. The first couple of days of manual labor were a different experience for me. Then a special opportunity opened up because of a temporary need for additional legal assistance at headquarters, and I enjoyed being useful.

Now I am back in San Diego, and I must say that for me the greatest blessings and joys come in the day-to-day preaching work. For instance, one day I knocked on a man's door, but he brusquely turned me away. I went on to occupants in other apartments in the complex. As I left the building the same man came out and asked me to step inside. There he told me that actually he had been praying to God for some help with his life, which was all messed up. When I knocked, it upset him because I disturbed his prayer. After he had rebuffed me, he realized that perhaps my call was in answer to his prayer. "So," he said, "whatever it is you have come to tell me, I know that I am supposed to listen." He did and after a year of Bible study has become a baptized minister.

Responding to inquiries from those in the local jails has brought me a special blessing. Conducting Bible studies with men in the San Diego County Jail, as well as with many others I find in the ministry, can make for a very busy life. Sometimes I have to adjust my law practice and my career as a full-time minister. Usually, however, I can schedule my court appearances for the early morning and still have most of the morning left for the field ministry. My office hours are in the afternoon. In the late afternoon and early evening I can get back to the ministry and my Bible study activity.

When I think about where my life might have gone with my use of drugs and my rebellious attitude, I can really appreciate how Jehovah has blessed me by drawing me into a relationship with him and with the Christian congregation. Without his blessing, I know I would not have the happy family life that I enjoy, in addition to being part of a united worldwide Christian association. Let me assure you wholeheartedly that if you put Jehovah to the test, he will pour out upon you a blessing until there is no more want.—*As told by Jim McCabe.*

crossword puzzle

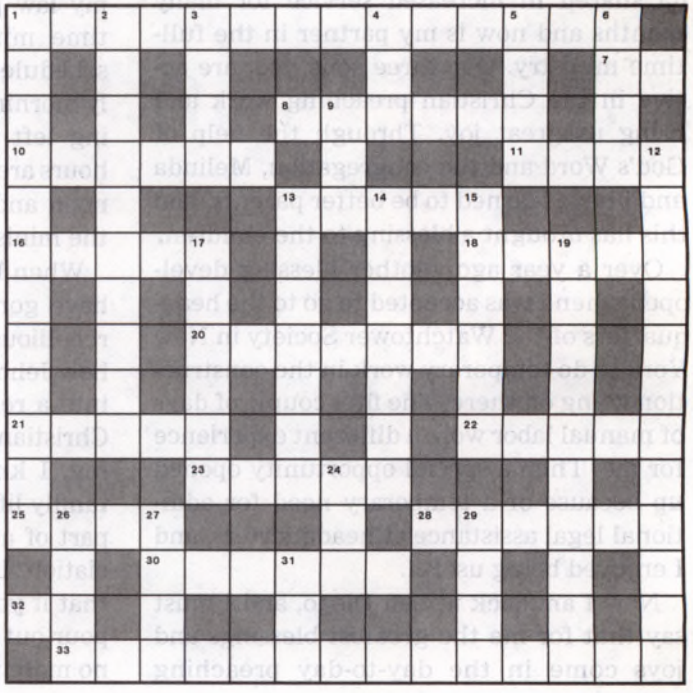
Clues Across

1. Discovered in 1947, they confirm the accuracy of our modern Bible text [3 words]
7. Where Israel suffered defeat due to Achan's sin (Joshua 7:4-15, 20)
8. A source of water (1 Samuel 29:1)
10. By spoken word (Luke 1:4)
11. Required by Mosaic law to be added to every offering on the altar (Leviticus 2:13)
13. He released the Jews from captivity (Ezra 1:1-4)
16. Where the Israelites defeated the forces of Sihon (Numbers 21:23, 24)
18. Skilled artisan who made many of the furnishings for Solomon's temple (1 Kings 7:13-45)
20. Rampart (Habakkuk 2:1)
21. One of Tyre's trading places (Ezekiel 27:3, 19)
22. The utmost extent (Job 34:36)
23. Warning signal (Amos 2:2)
25. Injury (Acts 28:5)
28. A sheared sheep's wool (Judges 6:37)
30. Chieftain of Asher who assisted in dividing the Promised Land (Numbers 34:18, 27)
32. Sixteenth letter of the Greek alphabet
33. Oily substance noted for its special medicinal properties [3 words] (Jeremiah 46:11)

Clues Down

1. Time period when God acts against his enemies and delivers his people [3 words] (Joel 1:15)
2. Son of Shem born two years after the Flood (Genesis 11:10)
3. Land (Numbers 11:12)
4. A measure equal to one homer, or ten baths (Ezekiel 45:14)
5. Cut timber (Ezekiel 24:5)
6. Travel on water (Acts 27: 1, 2)
9. To discharge an obligation (Jonah 2:9)
12. The conclusion of a certain period [4 words] (Daniel 12:4)
13. The territory of Babylonia (Jeremiah 50:10)
14. One of Javan's four sons (1 Chronicles 1:7)
15. The basic Hebrew unit of weight and money (Amos 8:5)
17. One of the seven sons of Nebo who dismissed their foreign wives at Ezra's command (Ezra 10:43, 44)
19. Payment in return (Hebrews 10:30)
24. This son of Peleg was an ancestor of both Abraham and Jesus (Luke 3:35)
26. This Jewish month was later called Nisan (Exodus 13:4)
27. Type of armor (Nehemiah 4:16)
29. He and Simeon avenged their sister Dinah (Genesis 34:25)
31. To --- in (Jeremiah 19:9)

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS PAGE 18



What Do Clothes Mean to You?

"TO ME, clothes mean warmth, covering, and comfort," replied one woman.

"Decoration!" responded another.

"They mean everything," said one man. "Why, without them I couldn't go outside or do my work."

Indeed, views about clothes are varied, since no two persons are exactly alike. So how do you view clothes? Do you give thought to what you wear and how you wear it? And what do your clothes say about you?

More Than Covering

Of course, the basic function of clothes is to cover the body. But within this framework, the variety is endless. For example, the Indian sari, the Japanese kimono, the Hawaiian muumuu, and the Middle Eastern aba all cover the body but in completely different ways. The German homburg, the French beret, and the Arabic kaffiyeh all cover the man's head, yet they are very different from one another. Sabots, sandals, and boots all cover the feet but in different ways. And who is to say which is more comfortable—the Scottish kilt or the American slacks?

Regardless of how we feel about our clothes, they reveal much about us and about our feelings toward others. Before we even say a word, our clothes have said something about us. People judge and categorize us based on what we wear and how we wear it. For instance, a beggar in his rags and a man in a tuxedo both have clothes on, but there is a vast difference

in the impression they make and in the way they are treated.

More and more, clothes are being used as a means of expressing one's choice of life-style, political views, nationalistic identity, and so on. For example, in Shanghai, China, many women are favoring more make-up, leg-revealing dresses, and Western wedding garb—a definite departure from the past. On the other hand, in some Middle Eastern and other Muslim countries, women are going back to the traditional Islamic dress.

Even on a more personal level, decisions must be made as to what to wear, and when and where to wear it. Dungarees, or blue jeans, may be ideal for farming or working around the house or on casual occasions, but they are hardly appropriate for formal occasions, for business, or at meetings for worship. What we usually put on when going shopping for food may not be right for an evening out with friends. Care must also be exercised in choosing certain types of clothing, since trends and fashions are heavily influenced by the "new morality" and the life-styles that it reflects.

The vast array of clothing possibilities presents everyone, male or female, young or old, an interesting challenge that calls for personal discretion and scrutiny. Do you give proper thought to what you wear and how you wear it? On what basis do you make your choices? And what do your clothes reflect about you?

The Challenge of Choice

"What once was a concern for quality had become an obsession with the designer label," says Barbaralee Diamonstein in *Vogue* magazine. Indeed, for most people, clothing choices are no longer simply a matter of quality, function, and need. Rather, we are constantly bombarded by advertisements that promise beauty, status, fame, and popularity if we wear clothes endorsed with the signatures or emblems of one designer or another.

Resisting such advertising gimmicks, or controlling one's own impulse to buy, takes willpower and discipline. Rare are the individuals who can resist the suggestion: "Oh!

Discreet and attractive styles of dress vary from country to country

Go ahead and buy it. It looks great on you." While such words may be music to our ears, they can also spell disaster to our budget. Do you easily give in to the persuasive words of an aggressive salesperson? Or can you resist the pressure to buy an item that you really neither need nor can afford? If you can, you are to be commended.

This is not to say that one cannot choose something that is new and fashionable. But caution is the key. It is always a good policy to dress according to age, personality, and life-style rather than be controlled by what is the latest or give in to peer pressure and adopt a certain style. The fact that a certain look is "in style" does not mean it is right for you. For example, the androgynous look, recently popularized by certain rock singers, blurs the line between the masculine and the feminine by using makeup, hairstyle, and mannerisms borrowed from the opposite sex. It is not sensible to adopt such a style just because it is popular with certain groups. And note in the Bible what Deuteronomy 22:5 states on this matter.

Basically, style, as the dictionary defines it, is the way in which something is done rather than the thing itself. In clothing, it is the overall presentation of oneself rather than the kind of clothes one wears. It is far more valuable to cultivate a personal style that reflects good taste and moderation than to be endlessly pursuing the latest in fashion and design.

Shrewd Shopping

A good wardrobe is not a matter of having a lot of clothes or being up to the latest in fashion but is usually the result of careful shopping and selection. So before you go shopping, take a good look at the clothes you already have. Perhaps you can alter or eliminate things you have not used for some time. Experiment with the clothes you have and discover how you can interchange your items of apparel to create new looks. Doing this will put you in a better position to determine what you really need.

When you shop, give thought to how a new item will blend with outfits you already have. Select those items that will harmonize with both the color and the style of your clothes. Classic simple lines are good investments because they are flexible and wear well for a long time. Also, learn to make the most of your existing

Tips for a Quality Wardrobe

"Quality in a garment guarantees that it will feel good, fit well and regain its shape after cleaning for many years," says a senior officer of Hart Schaffner & Marx Clothes. Here are some tips on assembling a quality wardrobe.

- ☐ Spend as much as you can afford for quality
- ☐ Avoid fads and extremes in color, fabric, and style
- ☐ Insist on good fit and workmanship
- ☐ Select fabric and color to suit purpose of garment
- ☐ Hang garment up, air it out, and allow 24 hours' rest between uses
- ☐ Clean garment only when needed; follow instructions carefully

wardrobe by the effective and varied use of accessories. Such practices will enable you to wear your clothes longer and enjoy them more.

Shopping at the right time and the right place can make a big difference. This takes a little planning, but the rewards are worth it. "I make it a point to shop for clothes only during the seasons when they are on sale," says one woman. However, the fact that something is on sale does not make it a good buy. So try to develop an eye for garments of good quality. "I seek out discount shops or wait for drastic reductions in others," she adds. "That way I can get good quality and still stay within my budget."

Maintaining Balance

A sloppy appearance may convey indifference and a lack of self-esteem, even selfish disregard for the effect one has on others. On the other hand, an extremely style-conscious appearance may reveal a self-centered, narcissistic outlook. Thus, it would be good to check out motives. Ask yourself: Am I trying to outshine everyone else by a showy display of clothes? Am I using clothes to compete with others or keep up with them? Are my clothes appropriate for the time, place, and occasion?

Without a doubt, clothes do tell a lot about us. They can tell if we are modest or conceited, respectful or haughty. They can testify to our good taste and self-respect, or they can betray us as being egotistical and uncaring. Yes, they can whisper, talk, or shout about us. So maintaining balance in our choice of clothes is essential.

Keeping in mind that clothes are merely an extension of the person we are within, our clothes should be pleasing and attractive, avoiding fashions that are immodest or extreme. If we give proper attention to what we wear and how we wear it, our clothes will speak well of us.

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS

D	E	A	D	S	E	A	S	C	R	O	L	L	S	
A		R		O				O			O		A	I
Y		P		I		S	P	R	I	N	G		I	
O	R	A	L	L	Y		A				S	A	L	T
F		C				C	Y	R	U	S				I
J	A	H	A	Z		H		O		H	I	R	A	M
E		S		E		A		D		E		E		E
H		H		B	U	L	W	A	R	K		C		O
O		A		I		D		N		E		O		F
V	E	D	A	N		E		I		L	I	M	I	T
A				A	L	A	R	M				P		H
H	A	R	M				E		F	L	E	E	C	E
	B		A	H	I	H	U	D		E		N		E
P	I		I			E				V		S		N
	B	A	L	S	A	M	O	F	G	I	L	E	A	D

Money —*Its Origin and Use*

IT ONLY cost them $24, but it wasn't paid with coins or bills—money as we know it today. The purchase was of Manhattan Island, New York, now worth countless millions of dollars. In 1626 those Dutch settlers purchased it from the native Indians with beads, trinkets, and cloth.

Money throughout history has come in various forms. Just about every useful commodity has been used as money—hides, grain, seashells, tobacco, salt, cattle, stones, feathers, and cacao beans. Our word "salary" comes from *salarium,* the Latin word for salt. Similarly, "pecuniary" comes from the Latin word for cattle, *pecus.* At different times, both salt and cattle were used as money in ancient Rome.

But for trade and industry to flourish, money had to have a convenient and widely acceptable form and be equally valued everywhere. For example, cowrie shells were accepted as currency on the west coast of Africa. They were rare there and highly valued. They were also light in weight and impossible to counterfeit—important factors for money. But they could not be used for trade with India, where the seashores teemed with them!

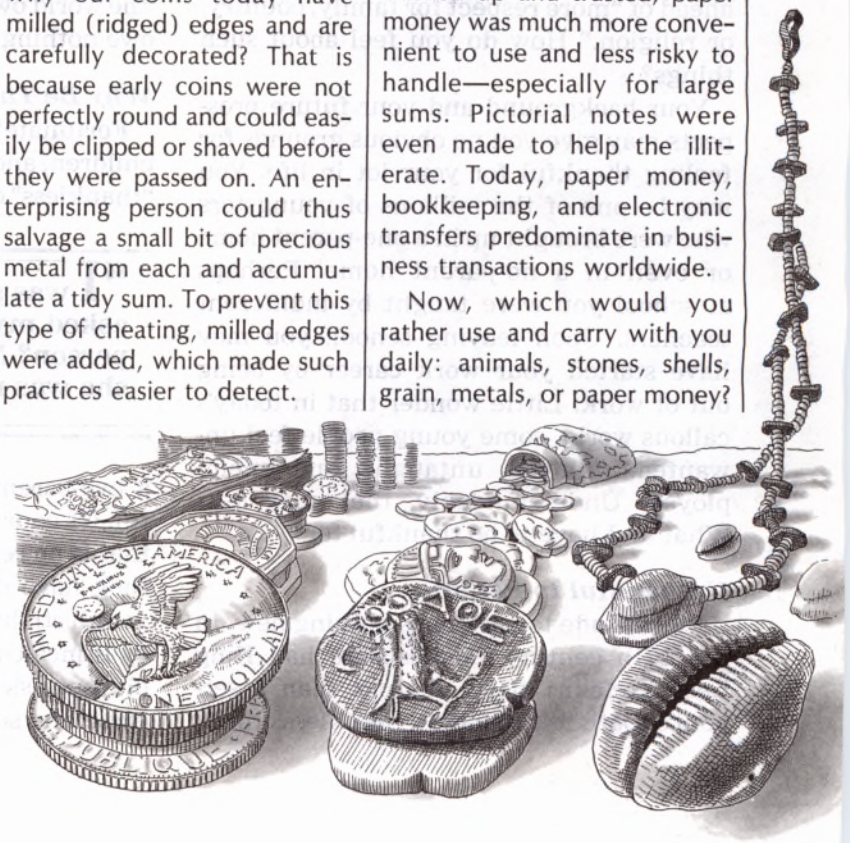
Gradually, precious metals such as gold and silver began to replace other forms of currency. They were durable, widely accepted, relatively scarce (giving them a high and stable price per unit of weight), and could more easily be carried and divided into smaller amounts. Merchants, though, had to carry a set of sensitive scales with them to ensure that all transactions were exact and neither party was cheated. Later, marked coinage was introduced, which eliminated the need for scales.

Have you ever wondered why our coins today have milled (ridged) edges and are carefully decorated? That is because early coins were not perfectly round and could easily be clipped or shaved before they were passed on. An enterprising person could thus salvage a small bit of precious metal from each and accumulate a tidy sum. To prevent this type of cheating, milled edges were added, which made such practices easier to detect.

Paper money, in the form of letters of credit and treasury notes, was known in China in the ninth century B.C.E. and also in Roman times. Modern bank notes, though, came into usage in Europe. London goldsmiths began using their secure vaults to store gold and valuables for others. A receipt was issued for each item deposited. As confidence in the integrity of the goldsmith grew, the receipts themselves would be exchanged and used as money, rather than moving the items. Also, signed orders to the goldsmiths to hand certain sums of gold to a named person became the forerunners of our modern checks.

As long as it was securely backed up and trusted, paper money was much more convenient to use and less risky to handle—especially for large sums. Pictorial notes were even made to help the illiterate. Today, paper money, bookkeeping, and electronic transfers predominate in business transactions worldwide.

Now, which would you rather use and carry with you daily: animals, stones, shells, grain, metals, or paper money?



Young People Ask...

Why Should I Be Thankful?

"THE world owes me a living"—so sang a character in Walt Disney's version of *Pinocchio*. And such appears to be the philosophy of life adopted by many young people living today. They feel no particular debt of gratitude toward anyone —parents, society, or even God.

A poll carried out in France among young people from 16 to 22 years of age showed that the majority of them put freedom to live their lives as they please far ahead of "more respect for family, country, or religion." How do you feel about such things?

Your background and your future prospects may give you no obvious grounds for feeling thankful for your lot in life. You may be one of the millions of youngsters who were brought up in a one-parent home or even in a no-parent home. Perhaps at school you were taught by indifferent teachers. Upon leaving school, you may have started your work career by being out of work. Little wonder that in today's callous world, some young people feel unwanted, unloved, untaught, and unemployed. Understandably, they may ask: What do I have to be thankful for?

Unthankful to Parents

Ingratitude to parents is nothing new. In the 17th century Shakespeare had King Lear exclaim: "How sharper than a serpent's tooth it is to have a thankless child!"

In all fairness, it must be admitted that while many youngsters today are "thankless" children, the fault often lies with their parents. A wise man of long ago wrote: "If one is pampering one's servant from youth on, in his later life he will even become a thankless one."—Proverbs 29:21.

This has been the case with many pampered children. They have grown up to be adolescents and young adults who feel that 'the world owes them a living' but that they owe nothing to anybody.

Why Be Thankful to Your Parents?

Fortunately, not all parents pamper their children, and not all children grow up to be "thankless" ones. If you have been raised in a two-parent home, you should be thankful. Of course, no parents are perfect. But that is no reason to be ungrateful for what they have done for you. What you since your birth have cost them in time and money is incalculable. You may reply that you did not ask to be born. True, but you do exist, and someone has had to take care of

"I was greatly helped when I asked myself: Is Mum a bad person? No, I was convinced that she was really a good person"

Children, too, can show gratitude in simple ways

you for many years. Thousands of children are abandoned by their parents and not all get adopted. Your parents lovingly kept you and did the best they could to bring you up. Don't you owe them gratitude?

Even if you were raised by foster parents, you should be thankful to them, especially since they were not responsible for your coming into existence. They may have paid a large sum of money to have the right to rear you. Or, depending on where you live, the State may have paid them to bring you up. Either way, you owe them gratitude, for money can't buy love and attention.

Or perhaps you were raised in a one-parent home. One young woman, now living in Italy, reflects on her youthful attitude toward her mother, who brought her up alone. She writes: "Young ones seem to think their parents should be perfect. I must admit that this was true in my case when I was younger. Only later did I realize that I was in no way justified in not showing her due respect. I was greatly helped when I asked myself: Is Mum a bad person? No, I was convinced that she was really a good person. She always did her best according to her understanding. But she is imperfect, as I am imperfect. So I felt very sorry about the thoughtless way I acted before I grasped that point."

Others Deserve Your Gratitude

How many youngsters, at a crucial point in their lives, have received help and guidance from someone who owed them nothing? It might have been a friend of the family, a schoolteacher, or a person, of either sex, within a Christian congregation.

As an ancient proverb says: "A word at its right time is O how good!" (Proverbs 15:23) Good advice, given at the right time, can prevent catastrophic consequences. (1 Samuel 25:33) The Bible shows that sensible, experienced women can give valuable guidance to young women. (Titus 2:3-5) In particular, elders within a Christian congregation can help young people to avoid pitfalls and pursue fine goals in life. (See 2 Timothy 2:20-22.) Yes, a word of guidance can mark a turning point in a young person's life. Do you remember benefiting from such timely counsel? If so, have you remembered to be thankful?

Lydie, a young Christian woman in

France, recalls a crisis she went through when she was 16. After becoming a baptized Witness of Jehovah, she became absorbed in her school studies, and her interest in Christian activities and meetings cooled off. One day she calmly announced that she no longer wished to share in Witness meetings and preaching work. Her parents spoke to her kindly but firmly. Then three congregation elders asked to speak with her. She expected them to 'drown her in Scriptures proving that she should go out and preach.' Instead, they listened to her grievances, showed kind understanding, and offered her brotherly help. She writes: "What a surprise! I was overwhelmed by their kind attitude. Thanks to their loving help I came to my senses." Lydie is now serving as a full-time Christian minister.

Thankful to God

Undoubtedly the worst form of ingratitude displayed these days by many young people is unthankfulness to God. Most of them put material things ahead of God.

Happily, many young people throughout the world realize how much they owe God. Young Michel lives with his Witness mother in a small, isolated town on the French island of Corsica. When an *Awake!* correspondent asked him to write down any reasons he could think of for being thankful to God, he listed 24. He began with the gift of life and the things needed to sustain it and enjoy it. Then, after reflection, he noted down spiritual blessings he enjoys—a believing mother and spiritual brothers who are willing to travel long distances to help them both.

Like Michel, many thousands of youngsters feel gratitude to "the living God" who "gives to all persons life and breath and all things." (Acts 14:15-17; 17:24-28) For these, the ingratitude of many of their peers is just one more proof that we are living in "the last days" of the present wicked system of things. The apostle Paul wrote: "Remember that there will be difficult times in the last days. People will be selfish, greedy, boastful, and conceited; they will be insulting, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful."—2 Timothy 3: 1, 2, *Today's English Version.*

Hundreds of thousands of young Jehovah's Witnesses have a brilliant future ahead of them in the righteous "new earth," now near. (2 Peter 3:9, 13) Meanwhile, many of them are showing their gratitude by spending as much time as possible telling others about this grand hope. And even if their fleshly family does not share their faith, they enjoy the warmth of a worldwide spiritual family of brothers. —Mark 10:29, 30.

So whether you are thinking of your parents, your teachers, experienced friends who have counseled you, or, above all, Jehovah, "the God who gives hope," reflect on the many reasons you have to 'show yourself thankful.'—Romans 15:13; Colossians 3:15.

In Our Next Issue

- *Coping With Today's Hectic Pace*
- *Cambodia —Surviving a Nightmare*
- *Good Health Is Good for Business*

Mute Stones Speak Out

Nat'l Institute of Anthropology and History, Mexico

The goddess Coatlicue

By "Awake!" correspondent in Mexico

ON February 21, 1978, some workers for the city electric company were digging a ditch in downtown Mexico City when they uncovered a piece of stone sculpture. That led to what was to be one of the most important archaeological discoveries in the history of Mexico.

The stone sculpture was found in an area where the main temple of the Aztec city of Tenochtitlán used to stand. Today the ruined remains of the temple have been excavated and are open to visitors. Some of these visitors are merely curious. But others are interested in seeing what these ruins can tell us about the Aztecs, the founders of an ancient Mexican empire. For these mute stones have a fascinating story to tell.

The Main Temple

Close by the excavations is the Zocalo subway station. Here you can see a scale model of what the main temple is thought to have looked like. It was pyramid-shaped with two towerlike buildings on the top. As the main center of Aztec worship, it stood surrounded by other temples in the central square of Tenochtitlán. Here were the principal idols worshiped by the Aztecs, Huitzilopochtli, the war god, and Tláloc, the god of rain.

When the Spaniards arrived, Tenochtitlán was an island in a valley full of lakes. Parallel to its streets were canals where goods were transported in *chalupas,* little boats. Salvador Toscano, in his book entitled *Cuauhtemoc,* describes it for us: "The great square of the main temple took up the center of the island, and Cortés adds 'that there is no human language that can describe the grandeur and uniqueness of it, so big that dwellings for 500 people could

be built within its bounds. The square contained several pyramids for worship, an area for ball games, priests' homes, skull platforms (*tzompantlis*), and temples made out of hewn stone and aromatic cedar wood. Besides all of these, there was the main temple pyramid for the sun god of war, Huitzilopochtli, 30 meters [100 ft] high—116 steps up to the top—which commanded the view of the island.'"

Visiting the Excavations

With this information in mind, let us now walk to the handrail that leads down into the excavations so that we can get a view of the whole area. What do you see? At first, just a collection of ruins! The site has been left exactly as it was found, with only a few minor restorations. But a closer look reveals some interesting facts.

For example, in the middle of the excavation, you see the places where Huitzilopochtli and Tláloc were worshiped. Interestingly, the structure that Cortés described was much bigger than this. The Spaniards wanted to extirpate the Aztecs' culture and particularly what they regarded as a bloodthirsty religion. Hence, after conquering the city in 1521, they systematically destroyed the temple until nothing but rubble was left. Then they erected their own buildings on the site.

What the Spaniards did not know, however, was that the

Nat'l Institute of Anthropology and History, Mexico

The goddess Coyolxauhqui

temple they destroyed was only the last of a series of constructions. The initial building had been enlarged seven times, each enlargement burying the previous one. Hence, parts of the earlier temples survived the Spaniards' destruction. The two places of worship that we see here are part of the second enlargement.

A Bloodthirsty Religion

It was in these places of worship that human sacrifices were carried out, and these sacrifices brand the Aztec religion as a bloodthirsty one. Yet, in comparing that religion with present-day religion, the comment of Dominique Verut is worthy of note: "The Aztec civilization carries along the horror of institutionalized human sacrifices, a cultural phenomenon that has had many defenders, yet still causes repulsion in its enemies, who are forgetful of the Holy Inquisition [and] Nazism."

However, one cannot help but feel chills when looking at the sacrificial stone in front of Huitzilopochtli's oratory. It was on the flat surface of this stone that

the victim was laid, face up, ready to have his heart torn out and offered to the gods.

Another stone, the statue of the goddess Coyolxauhqui, reveals another aspect of Aztec worship. Coyolxauhqui was said to be Huitzilopochtli's sister whom he killed and divided into pieces. Hence, the flat sculpture represents her as dismembered, with the head detached from the thorax. Apparently, the Aztecs felt no qualms about worshiping a dismembered goddess.

Comparisons—Ancient and Modern

Bible readers are aware that human sacrifices have often been a part of false worship. The Canaanites, and sometimes even apostate Israelites, sacrificed their children to demon gods. (2 Kings 23:10; Jeremiah 32:35) The Aztecs, too, practiced child sacrifice. We read about this in the book *El Templo Mayor:* "The remains of sacrificed children were found in one of these [pits] along with representations of the rain god. Would this be a special offering because of famine?"

On page 219 the same books adds: "Fray Juan de Torquemada tells us something about this in the book *Monarquía Indiana* (Indian Monarchy): 'The children would be taken to the sacrificial place richly dressed, atop portable platforms or litters, abundantly decorated with flowers and feathers, and these would be carried along on the shoulders of priests and ministers. Others would go before them playing instruments and singing and dancing. This is the way they would be conducted to the place where they would be sacrificed and offered to the demon.'"

Pointing up further resemblances between the religion of the Aztecs and the religions of the Old World, it is reported that the god Tláloc was also the god of fertility. One of the main altars is dedicated to him. Also represented in the temple are two huge snakes, the snake being a fertility symbol. Similarly, many of the ancient pagan religions of the Old World had a god of fertility, and the serpent was a widespread religious symbol. Interestingly, too, Huitzilopochtli was said to be born to Coatlicue, and this mother goddess was later called the "mother of all the gods."

Aztecs Adapted to New Religion

The Spaniards tried hard, and often violently, to uproot the Aztec religion from Mexico. In many cases, they built their own churches on top of Aztec temples, using the stones of the older building in their construction work. Even pieces of Aztec idols became building material.

However, it was not difficult for the Aztecs to get used to the new religion. Idols of wood and ceramic were substituted for their stone idols. These new idols were more human-looking, but they were idols nonetheless. And many of the old religious ideas remained a part of Mexican culture. For example, there was still a cult of the dead, observed each year at the beginning of November. And followers of the new religion believed in the immortality of the soul, as had the ancient inhabitants of Mexico. So there were really many similarities between the religion Cortés introduced and the one he was trying to destroy.

These mute ruins of the main temple, now open to visitors, strongly evoke an empire and a culture that is gone forever. They remind us of cruel religious customs, of gods that are no longer worshiped, and of practices that are still preserved, albeit under a different name and in a different religion. And they remind us of the remarkable similarities that existed between the false religions of the Old World and those of the New World.

Jehovah's Witnesses —Different From Other Religions

"LOOK, I'm busy, and besides, I never talk with Jehovah's Witnesses." That was the householder's response to a knock on the door by one of Jehovah's Witnesses.

The visitor kindly replied: "I heard you say you're busy, but may I at least ask you why you say you don't talk with us?" The reasons turned out to be only misunderstandings of what Witnesses believe and practice. Once these were cleared up, an excellent conversation resulted.

Do you know what Jehovah's Witnesses believe? Do you know what makes them different from other religions and the importance of this to you?

Their Beliefs

Their beliefs—not mixed with traditions, pagan ideas, or nationalistic ideals—are based entirely on the Bible, which they believe to be the unerring, inspired Word of God. This makes for some significant differences in basic beliefs.

Use of the divine name: The name JEHOVAH, Yahweh to some, may sound strange to many people, yet the use of it more than 7,000 times in the Bible argues that God's worshipers are expected both to know and to use his personal name. (Psalm 83:18) Since Christians are "a people for his name," Jesus used it in teaching his disciples. (Acts 15:14; John 17:26) In view of this, rather than thinking Jehovah's Witnesses strange for using the name, would it not be more appropriate to ask why other religions do not consistently use it?—Malachi 3:16.

God's Kingdom: A real government—though heavenly—with Christ Jesus as king, with dominion over the earth. It is not just 'something in the heart.' "The government *will be upon* his [Christ's] shoulder." (Isaiah 9:6, 7, *Revised Standard Version*) It will vindicate the rightful sovereignty of God. He "will set up a kingdom that will . . . put an end to all these [human]

kingdoms," restoring unity and world peace forever.—Daniel 2:44.

The human soul: Not something immaterial and immortal that somehow survives the death of the body but, rather, the person himself or the life he enjoys. When created "the man *came to be* a living soul." (Genesis 2:7; 1 Corinthians 15:45) "Immortality of the soul is a Greek notion formed in ancient mystery cults and elaborated by the philosopher Plato." (*Presbyterian Life,* May 1, 1970) So the dead are not really suffering anywhere. They are asleep. (Ecclesiastes 9:5, 10) The hope for a future life for the dead hinges on the role of Christ Jesus as a ransom sacrifice and depends on having the favor of God for a resurrection.—John 5:28, 29; Acts 17:31; 24:15; 1 Corinthians 15:13, 14.

The earth's future: Earth will not become a lifeless cinder, either by God's hand or by a nuclear holocaust. God "did not create it simply for nothing." He "formed it even to be inhabited." (Isaiah 45:18; Ecclesiastes 1:4) God's Kingdom will see to it that his will shall "take place, as in heaven, also *upon earth.*" (Matthew 6:10) Then, "the righteous themselves will possess the earth, and they will reside forever upon it."—Psalm 37:29.

Those who embrace such beliefs experience a change of attitude toward God, life, and fellowman. Life has purpose and meaning. —Romans 8:19-21.

Their Practices

These are also based on the Bible. Even though some of them may be viewed as odd, these very practices constitute significant identifying marks of true worship.

Public ministry: Many bring this up as a major difference in activity and organization. Yet, in this work Jehovah's Witnesses obey Jesus' command to "*go* . . . and make disciples." Imitating the apostolic example, all who qualify as ministers can teach "publicly and from house to house." (Matthew 28:19, 20; Acts 20:20) Some churches have the traditional clergy-laity division, but "there is not the slightest justification . . . for that 'split-level' distinction," says *Theology Today.* Rather, as the *Encyclopedia Canadiana* observes: "The work of Jehovah's Witnesses is the revival and re-establishment of the primitive Christianity practised by Jesus and his disciples during the first and second centuries. . . . All are brothers."

Christian neutrality: Though little understood on this matter, Jehovah's Witnesses remain neutral as to politics and to all forms of conflict that require one to hate one's fellowman. (John 18:36; Isaiah 2:2-4) About early Christians, historian Edward Gibbon says: "They refused to take any active part in the civil administration or the military defence of the empire." So, what at first might appear to be radical is really the peaceful role of those who must be "no part of the world."—John 17:16.

Racism: "Racial discrimination—still an issue in some churches—is not a problem for Witnesses," said a newspaper in the southern United States. A genuine love for their Christian brothers unites them in a worldwide brotherhood. Though imperfect like anyone else, they strive to apply among themselves the teaching of Jesus: "By this all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love among yourselves." —John 13:35.

Get to Know Them Better

Of course, not all the things that make Jehovah's Witnesses beneficially different have been discussed here. So why not get to know these Christians better? Your prospects for a happy present and future life are bound up in accurately identifying the religion that *must* be different if it is to meet God's standards. —Matthew 7:21.

From Our Readers

Our Greatest Need, Love

I have just read the article "From the Cradle to the Grave, Our Greatest Need Is Love." (September 22, 1986) Not only was the article encouraging and helpful in ways to show love but it exuded love from you as well. Being raised without love, I have been well acquainted with the difficulty of loving myself, as well as loving others. Through the congregation I was in several years ago, I was encouraged to apply the scripture to "practice giving" in Luke 6:38. It has taken about 14 years, but I am finally beginning to reap the benefits of applying this counsel.

L. R., United States

Scientific Dates

I wish to thank you for the article "Scientific Dates for Prehistoric Times." (September 22, 1986) It has greatly helped me to progress spiritually. I must confess that the dating of historical finds caused me to doubt some of the Bible's dates. I am grateful for your help.

M. M., Italy

Beating Cancer

I would like to thank you for the articles on "Cancer—Can You Beat It?" (October 8, 1986) My husband was diagnosed as having kidney cancer in 1978. At that time we were encouraged to alter our diet, and the very foods you recommended are what we have eaten for the most part. Since his surgery about five years ago, we have continued eating this way. At his checkup last year, he was still found to be cancer free, so far. Our observation is that most people have very little knowledge of nutrition and have no idea of what foods are best, so many needlessly have health problems because of their poor eating habits. Articles like this will educate people, and many of them will feel better as a result of heeding your practical advice. Keep supplying us with this timely information.

R. I., United States

I just want to thank you for your excellent articles on cancer. Your articles helped me to see that by eating right and taking care of our bodies, we can reduce the risk of cancer.

H. E., United States

I just had to take a few minutes to express my appreciation for your series on cancer. I recently underwent surgery for cervical cancer and am currently on the Hoxsey treatment. You are to be praised for publishing such fine information on this subject. I am looking forward to sharing these articles with others. Most of all, I am anxiously looking to the "new earth" under God's Kingdom when cancer and like diseases will be things of the past. I am also excited about receiving the October 22, 1986, issue, with the article "Cancer—How Can You Be Supportive?"

J. P., United States

None of the information published was intended as advice for a sure cure for cancer or a sure defense against it. The only sure defense or sure cure will come by the healing efforts of Christ Jesus during God's coming new system of things. But proper eating habits and other good care of our bodies may well provide at least a better defense or a help toward extending our life a little longer at present.—ED.

Watching the World

Breast-Cancer Survivors

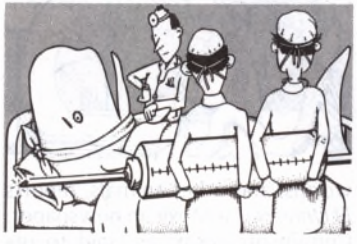
"Women who get breast cancer in their late 40's have the best chance of surviving the disease," says *The New York Times* in a report on new studies done in Sweden and the United States. "The prospects are considerably dimmer for those in their 20's or for the elderly," the report claims. Research points to a lowering of natural hormonal production, which occurs after menopause, as an apparent influence in the slowing of tumor growth, although other biologic mechanisms also appear to be involved.

Ad Angers Some Catholics

"Eat free at Italian restaurants," blares the bold-type headline over a photograph of an actor-comedian portraying a priest. The caricature of a Roman Catholic priest, who is wearing a wide-brimmed hat, clerical collar, and twirling a forkful of spaghetti, appears in a full-page advertisement in *Newsweek's* college edition, *Newsweek on Campus,* and is part of a recruiting effort by the Missionary Oblates of Mary Immaculate. The satiric figure promises prospective priests such "padre perks" as "sleeping late, getting first crack at parish rummage sales, and helping your fellow man." The order is seeking college-age students to bolster the dwindling ranks of candidates and hopes that the ad featuring the comic will help, according to an Associated Press report. Not all sincere Catholics, though, found this humorous. "What depth are we reaching that we have to use a comedy approach?" asks a vocations director at a Chicago seminary.

Unusual Patient

A group of surgeons had their hands full when they recently operated on a patient weighing 1,775 pounds (805 kg). Who was the patient? A 15-year-old beluga



whale named Big Mouth, a resident of the Minnesota Zoo. For the past year and a half, the mammal had been suffering from a lingering mouth infection, and zoo authorities felt that an operation was needed to stem the spread of the infection. *American Medical News* notes that the surgery required the removal of a portion of jawbone about the size of a clenched fist. Dr. Frank Wright, zoo veterinarian, noted that a major concern was anesthetizing the whale. The doctors learned, however, that using Demerol and Valium 'made him a more mellow fellow.' Altogether, 22 quarts (21 L) of fluids were pumped into the beluga during surgery, and a team of 35 people was required to carry out the operation. After an initial setback, the patient was reported to be improving.

Fighting Drugs in Hungary

Drug abuse among the youth in Hungary has sparked the government to start a national campaign of information against drugs. An estimated 30,000 young people between 15 and 18 years of age take drugs occasionally, and from 2 to 5 percent of these are said to be addicted. According to the German newspaper *Der Tagesspiegel,* the government wants to prevent drug abuse in the country from "becoming of Western proportions."

Aboriginal TV Station

"Australia's first Aboriginal television channel" has been established in Alice Springs—the geographical heart of Australia. A chief aim of the station is "to save the surviving Aboriginal languages from extinction," notes *The Sydney Morning Herald.* According to Eve Fesl, director of the Aboriginal Resource Centre, the endeavor is a small step in the right direction. "There are about 100 spoken

Aboriginal languages, although only eight are spoken by 1,000 or more people."

Crocodile Tower

The sight of lifeguard towers on Australian beaches is not rare. Many struggling swimmers have been saved from drowning because of quick detection from the tower and swift action from lifeguards. Countless shark warnings have also been sounded because of the sharp eyes of lifeguards on watch. But now a bathing beach in the Northern Territory boasts Australia's first "croc tower." Since crocodiles are protected animals in Australia, evidence of increased numbers roaming on local beaches is reported. The tower stands 34 feet (10 m) high and is manned each weekend during the swimming season.

Abortion Trend Up

The world will see more permissive abortion laws, predicts the Alan Guttmacher Institute of New York, a private organization that studies population issues. Their latest survey estimates that from 40 million to 60 million induced abortions are performed in the world each year, about 33 million of them legally. The United Nations estimated that 131 million babies were born in 1986.

Gold's High Prices

A conference was held in Johannesburg, South Africa, to coincide with the centenary of the city's gold-mining industry. W. Malan, vice president of the Chamber of Mines, told delegates that "the 40,000 tons of gold mined from the [Witwatersrand] basin accounts for 32 percent of all gold ever mined." All this gold, however, was not obtained without price in terms of human life and suffering. According to the International Labour Organisation, 8,500 people were killed in South African mines during the 11-year period from 1973 to 1984. Many were gold miners. A grim reminder of the high price became evident when, during the conference, the worst disaster in South Africa's gold-mining history struck Kinross mine. A fire released noxious fumes, causing the death of 117 miners that included migrant workers from the neighboring countries of Botswana, Lesotho, Malawi, and Mozambique.

Earthquake Detectors

Soviet scientists believe that earthquakes can be predicted by studying the behavior of snakes,

worms, and other animals, reports *El Universal*, a Mexican newspaper. Certain organisms are said to respond to the geomagnetic vibrations and to temperature and water-level changes that precede earth tremors. According to scientist Albert Skovitin, it may be possible to analyze animal behavior with the aid of a computer and thus accurately predict earthquakes long before they happen. For example, studies have disclosed that about one month prior to a strong earthquake, snakes will crawl out of their nests and abandon a dangerous zone. Scientists believe that the sensitivity of these animals greatly exceeds that of modern man-made earthquake detectors.

Hungry Eye

Researchers suspect a close biochemical relationship between the eye and the stomach. According to Dr. Volker Schusdziarra from the University of Munich, peptides (chemical compounds) that control digestion and arouse feelings of hunger and satiety and that are normally found in the stomach and intestine have recently been detected not only in the brain but also in the nerve cells of the retina. The German medical magazine *Zeitschrift für Allgemeinmedizin* reports that new variations of these substances are discovered continually. It appears that they carry messages between the sensory organs (eyes, nose, tongue, and so forth), the brain, and the digestive system.

Disappearing Storks

Storks, once a common sight in the Alsace region of northeastern France, are now disappearing from the French countryside. "The storks' first enemy is the change in environment," claims a member of the World Wildlife Fund. The French newspaper *Le Figaro* reports: "Chemical products scattered over the land make the eggshells more fragile. Also, with the draining of marshes in Europe and with fewer hedges, there has been a decrease in the wildlife that storks have always preyed upon, such as small rodents, snakes, grasshoppers, and frogs." Moreover, as African deserts spread, these wading birds are obliged to extend their migratory flights as far as Sudan, where many of them fall victim to local hunters.

Why All That Dust?

Have you ever watched, fascinated, as particles of dust danced in a ray of sunlight? Yet that same dust is the bane of housewives and scientists. Just leave a room for a few days and there will be a powder-fine layer of dust awaiting you when you return. Dust can clog a sewing machine, stop a watch, and foul a computer system. Little wonder we tend to think of dust only as a nuisance. And yet, have you ever thought about what we would lose if there were no dust at all?

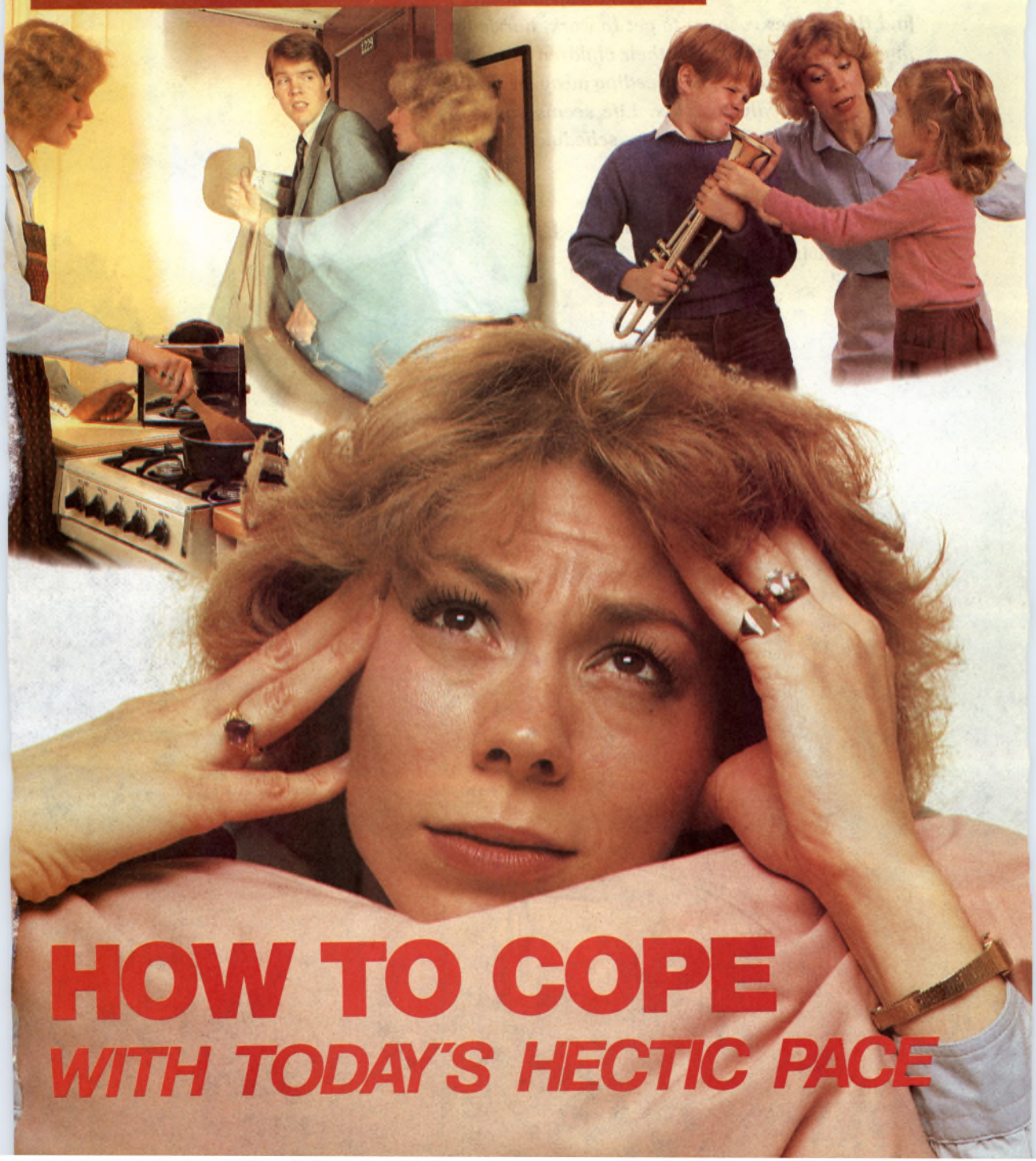
Dust can also be beneficial. Did you realize that without dust in the atmosphere we would have much less rain and snowfall? Water droplets and ice crystals are formed partly because of dust particles that act as nuclei for the formation of rain and snow.

Without dust, one of the most wonderful sights on earth—the sunset—would not be as beautiful. As the sun dips toward the horizon, its light must then travel through the greater thickness of air near the earth. That light strikes particles of dust and other substances in the thicker air and tends to scatter. However, the shorter bluish waves of sunlight tend to scatter or be absorbed by the particles more than the longer reddish waves. Hence, the bluish colors do not reach us as much as the reddish colors. This is what helps to produce the gorgeous orange, pink, and reddish glow of sunsets.

Thus, a little dust around the place is a small price to pay for such a beautiful reward: an awe-inspiring sunset!

Awake!

February 22, 1987

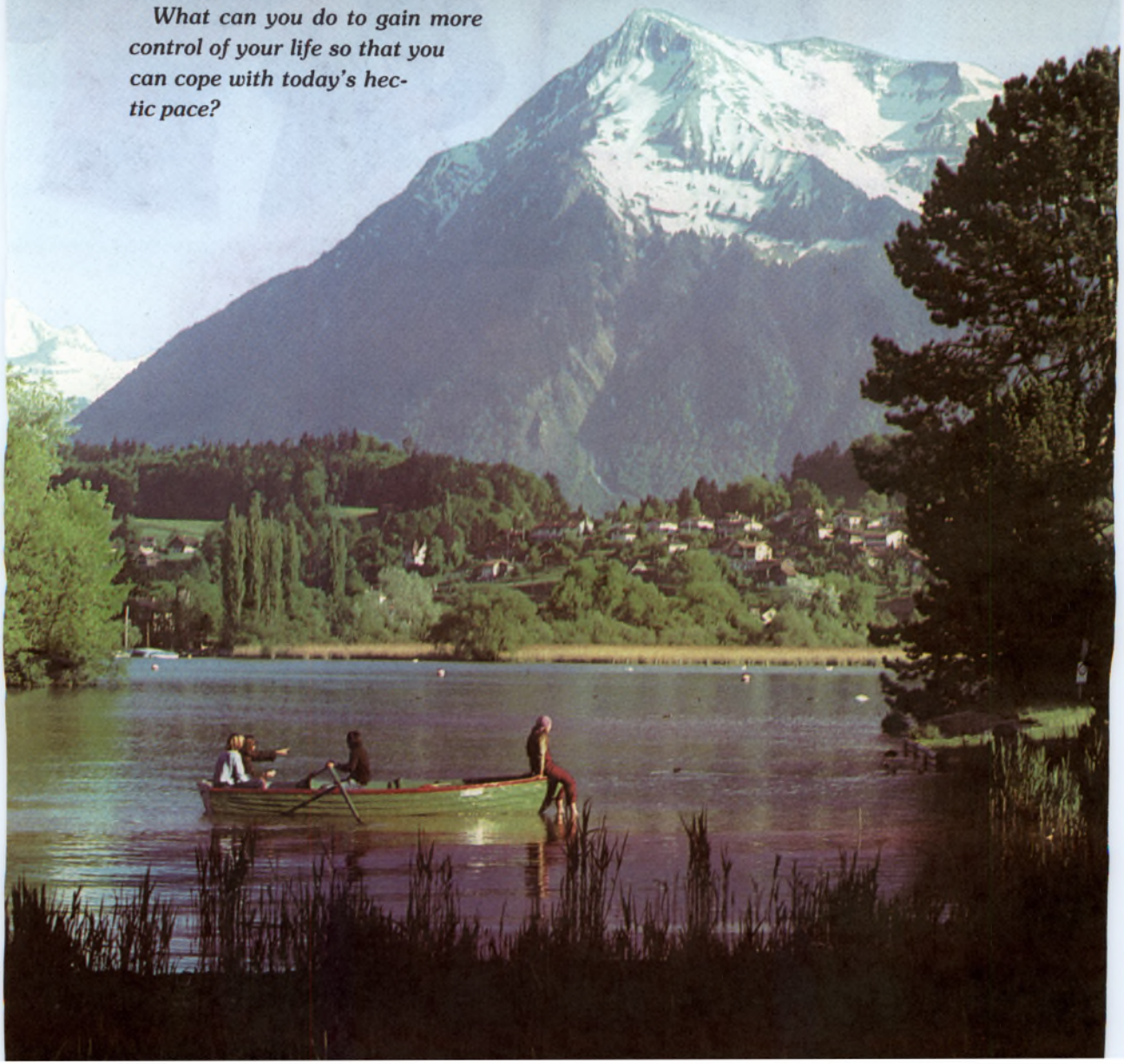


HOW TO COPE
WITH TODAY'S HECTIC PACE

This century has witnessed profound social changes. Former generations were largely confined to small villages. Because work centered on the home, travel was a luxury. But industrialization changed that.

As a result, the pace of life has speeded up. People find themselves rushing to get to work, hurriedly shopping, hastily dropping off their children at nurseries or day-care centers, and speeding away on weekends—supposedly to relax. Life seems controlled by time clocks, train schedules, and store hours.

What can you do to gain more control of your life so that you can cope with today's hectic pace?



In a Hurry—But Getting Nowhere?

THE DRIVER cruised along at what he considered a comfortable speed: 80 miles (130 km) an hour! His passengers, though, used to the restrictions of a fixed speed limit, were thoroughly unnerved by the fast-moving traffic on West Germany's autobahns. For there, except in designated sections, no speed limit exists. Indeed, even at 80 miles per hour, cars and motorcycles were whizzing by! Able to restrain herself no longer, one of the passengers demanded: "Why is everyone in such a hurry? Where is everyone *going?*"

"Probably nowhere," her smiling host replied, obviously in jest. Because it was apparent that everyone was going somewhere—and rather fast at that!

Nevertheless, why is everyone in such a hurry? Have they forgotten that half the pleasure of traveling is in taking time to enjoy the scenery? Was life really meant to be a breathtaking hundred-yard dash?

Fast cars, fast-food chains, and supersonic planes are the earmarks of an age that makes ever-increasing demands: Faster! Quicker! More efficient! True, few would opt to return to the horse-and-buggy era. And most will agree that some amount of rushing has its place. After all, call for a doctor or a policeman, and you certainly hope they won't head your way in a casual manner.

Still, is all this rushing around necessary or beneficial? Some feel that it isn't. Says a writer for the *Los Angeles Times:* "Harried, hurried and haunted, [many people] rush through their lives under the tyranny of the clock in an Age of Haste."

The current preoccupation with speed has also contributed to what *The Toronto Star* called "an epidemic raging out of control"—stress! Stress seems to affect people like an evil potion. It is blamed for an awesome array of maladies, ranging from dandruff and split nails to high blood pressure and heart attacks. Human relations also sour under the pressure of the clock.

Why, then, is ours what is termed "an Age of Haste"? If you feel harried and pressured now, what will your life be like in a few years? Is there any way of gaining more control of your life—of coping with today's hectic pace?

Awake!® February 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 4

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

In a Hurry
—But Getting Nowhere? 3
Why the Hectic Pace? 4
Coping With Today's
Hectic Pace 6

Also in This Issue

Young People Ask ...
Can't I Do Something About My Acne? 10
Cambodia—Surviving a Nightmare 13
The Flight—and Faith in God 15
Finding the Purpose of Life 17
Good Health Is Good for Business 20
Further Expansion at Watchtower Farms 25
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
The Marvel of Snow 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

Why the Hectic Pace?

WHY, though, is our age such a hectic one? It is a far cry from the utopia of tranquillity with plenty of leisure time that industrialization was supposed to bring. The "less work and more play for everyone" predicted by many economists, sociologists, and futurists simply hasn't worked out.

Indeed, writer A. Kent Macdougall observes: "Work consumes as much of the average wage earner's time as it did a generation ago, while commuting to and from work takes more."

Rather than simplifying life, modern technology has contributed toward making it more hectic. Says marketing professor Harold H. Kassarjian: "Mass communications and mass transportation are doing us in. We are put under more pressure because we have created artificial reasons to be in a hurry. We are digging ourselves into our own high-pressure graves."

Major Factors

Today many fathers are burdened with overtime work or two jobs just to support their families. There are also record numbers of women who have been forced to enter the job market. Wrote Paul Johnson in the *Daily Telegraph:* "Indeed, it is ironic that, at the very moment in history when women's traditional chores have been dramatically reduced by commercial technology, . . . they work as hard as they ever did; perhaps harder."

So after spending all day at a paid secular

Today's Hectic Pace

"The image of the harried overachiever is [ever-present] in today's stressful society," observed *The New York Times*. "Typical is the person running for the subway when another will follow in a few minutes, the executive who is obsessed by goals to be met and surpassed, the doer who is compulsive about staying ahead of the pack, indeed who goes out of his way to take risks that give him a charge."

job, many women come home to a second job—caring for the home and the children. Studies indicate that husbands do relatively little to ease their wives' increased work load. As a result, for working wives, time is often a scarce and elusive resource. The authors of *Working Couples* quote a working wife as saying: "I feel lots of pressures because of not having enough time for the things I want to do or those that have to be done."

For many, changing sexual mores and skyrocketing divorce rates have also contributed to the hectic pace of life. How so? Explains an article in *Family Relations:* "Our society [U.S.] has seen a 79% increase in the number of single parent families over the past nine years . . . The incidence today is far greater than at any time in the past." For a parent who single-handedly must train youngsters, shop, cook, and clean, life may seem to be a nonstop, hectic rush.

Other Factors

Other less tangible reasons also contribute to today's hectic pace of life, such as the following:

Life Is Short—"Man, born of woman, is short-lived and glutted with agitation," says the Bible. "Like a blossom he has come forth and is cut off, and he runs away like the shadow and does not keep existing." (Job 14:1, 2) Realizing the truth of this Bible verse, many people rush through life, trying to crowd as much action into it as possible. "Let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we are to die" is their philosophy.—1 Corinthians 15:32.

Life Is Uncertain—"The swift do not have the race," said wise King Solomon. Why? "Because time and unforeseen occurrence befall them all," he explained. (Ecclesiastes 9:11) Thus people seemingly hurry to reach their goals for fear some unforeseen occurrence will prevent them from doing so.

Fear of Missing Something—Like little children, many adults are fidgety, have short attention spans, and always have to be rushing off into something new. They cannot relax to enjoy the present because of their hurry to experience the future.

Nervousness and Impatience—Add to this nervousness, impatience, and you can perhaps better understand that driver you eye in your rearview mirror from time to time. Apparently considering every car ahead of him a personal affront, he tries to pass all of them as soon as possible, often for no good reason. Sometimes you meet him again at the next traffic light!

Boredom—Finding their secular work or daily routine boring and uninteresting, some people rush through these so-called necessary evils as fast as possible so as to have more time for leisure activities.

"Time Is Money"—Some people live by

this principle—and by the clock—forgoing free time or vacation lest it cost them a dollar. Seldom satisfied, they are always in a hurry to pile up material possessions that they scarcely have time to enjoy.

Whatever the reason, perhaps *your* life is a hectic race. If so, the question is . . .

Where Does It Get You?

For one thing, the hectic pace of modern life has resulted in many stress-related illnesses. But the truthfulness of the proverb that "haste makes waste" is borne out in other realms of human endeavor also. For example, the German journal *Ärztliche Praxis* reports: "The number one cause of traffic accidents is still excessive speed."

A youngster in school who is hasty about mastering basic skills will have a hard time getting and keeping a job. A hasty eater can develop a nervous stomach, poor digestion, and a host of physical ailments. A man "hasty with his words" can cause embarrassment, hurt feelings, or even broken friendships. (Proverbs 29:20) And one hasty in seeking a marriage mate may find himself hastily seeking a divorce.

What of those who are in a hurry to obtain material possessions, to get ahead in a career, to set up a family, or to get the most out of life? True, the pursuit of such things may not in itself be wrong. But when the pursuit becomes a frantic race, how does it benefit people in the long run?

Ancient King Solomon engaged in such pursuits, but he concluded: "I, even I, turned toward all the works of mine that my hands had done and toward the hard work that I had worked hard to accomplish, and, look! everything was vanity and a striving after wind, and there was nothing of advantage under the sun."—Ecclesiastes 2:11.

Is there a way, therefore, to cope with today's hectic pace and lead a relatively calm life?

Coping With Today's Hectic Pace

A WORKING man spends his weekends watching football games on TV and then complains he has no time to take his children to the zoo. A housewife religiously follows a TV serial week after week and then bemoans having so little time to care for her household chores. Is the problem a lack of time or the *poor use* of it?

Good management of time requires following the principle stated in the Bible at Philippians 1:10: "Make sure of the more important things."

Yes, first set your priorities so that if something *must* be neglected, it will be something relatively unimportant. Try making a list of all the tasks to be performed in, say, a week and divide them into two categories: (1) What I *must* do and (2) What I would *like* to do.

Secular work, shopping, and household repairs, as well as spending time with the family, would fall into the first category. For the true Christian, attending congregation meetings, sharing one's faith with others, and Bible study should also be given priority.—Matthew 6:33.

If the list seems overwhelming, perhaps some must-be-done activities are really not so necessary after all. Or you might try combining activities. For example, if you have household chores, why not teach your children how to do some of them? This not only will increase your capacity to get things done but will give you precious moments to enjoy with your children.

But what about the list of things you would "like to do"? The possibilities are enormous. Yet you simply cannot do everything. So calculate the expense of such activities. (Luke 14:28) Will they reduce—or add—stress to your life? Will they add to the burden of household expenses? Might they interfere with things that need to be done?

Avoid the snare of overscheduling yourself—cramming in so many things that you run around frantically. Allot yourself sufficient time in which to accomplish your tasks. A retired building contractor gave a sound piece of advice to a young man whom he had invited for a cup of tea. The young man declined the invitation, saying: "I have to be downtown at 4:50 p.m."

"What kind of appointment is that?" the contractor asked. "Try to make your appointments for full hours," he advised, "or otherwise you can run yourself to death."

Why Coping Is Difficult

These suggestions may prove helpful. But remember that stress and hurry are just the legacies of the "hard to deal with" times in which we live. (2 Timothy 3:1-5) Today's world is truly a world in a hurry. But the fact that human relations are deteriorating and world problems are proliferating shows that all this hurry is getting people nowhere.

Actually, the world is living on borrowed

Haste is often caused by poor scheduling of time and having too many things in one's schedule

time. "The time left is reduced," the Bible warns. (1 Corinthians 7:29) Jesus Christ pointed forward to this very time in which we are now living, saying that the present world distress is evidence that his Kingdom is at hand. (Luke 21:10, 11, 28-31) Satan the Devil therefore has "great anger, knowing he has a short period of time." (Revelation 12:12) His entire world system is rushing toward destruction, and all his attempts to prevent this are for nothing!

True, there is little you can do about the direction in which the world is heading. But you can do much to ensure peace and tranquillity in your own life. No, tranquilizing drugs are not the answer; nor do time-management techniques work for everyone. Far more helpful are knowledge and understanding of the Bible. The Bible?

Yes, for the Bible indicates that it is desirable for Christians to go on leading *"a calm and quiet life* with full godly devotion and seriousness." (1 Timothy 2:2) Is that possible? It is, for though you are still subject to the pressures of these critical "last days," the Bible can help you develop a fresh perspective on life.

Take your job as an example. If your life revolves around "godly devotion and seriousness" rather than material things, you won't be in a big hurry to accumulate things you cannot afford. Knowing that "the love of money is a root of all sorts of injurious things," you can be content with "sustenance and covering." (1 Timothy 6:8, 10) And because your job will occupy only a secondary place in your life, you may even make time for needed rest and relaxation. "Better is a handful of rest than a double handful of hard work and striving after the wind."—Ecclesiastes 4:6.

Some are able to cut back on their secular work. One man who was the director of a large firm recalls: "After 23 years of exertion, I had a good salary, free health care, good pension, and so forth. But to get all these things, you have to spend more and more time and energy at your job. Eventually you have no time of your own. And anytime something other than work is set before you, you find yourself saying, 'I am sorry, but I am much too busy.'" So this man left his prestigious post. True, this meant a simpler life-style. But it also meant more time for his family and Christian activities.

Setting Proper Priorities

In view of the critical times in which we live, a true Christian cannot have a casual attitude toward spiritual matters. Consider Zacchaeus, a man the Bible calls a rich tax collector. Desiring to know more about Jesus, he once climbed a tree to get a better

Wise Warnings Against Improper Haste!

"He that is hastening to gain riches will not remain innocent."
—Proverbs 28:20.

"The plans of the diligent one surely make for advantage, but everyone that is hasty surely heads for want."
—Proverbs 21:5.

"Have you beheld a man hasty with his words? There is more hope for someone stupid than for him."
—Proverbs 29:20.

"Do not hurry yourself as regards your mouth; and as for your heart, let it not be hasty to bring forth a word before the true God."
—Ecclesiastes 5:2.

Jesus helped Zacchaeus set proper priorities in his life

look at him as he passed through town. The account reads: "Now when Jesus got to the place, he looked up and said to him: 'Zacchaeus, hurry and get down, for today I must stay in your house.' With that he hurried and got down and with rejoicing he received him as guest."—Luke 19:2-6.

Imagine the benefits Zacchaeus received by entertaining Jesus and discussing spiritual matters with him! Jesus helped Zacchaeus set his priorities in order, so that Zacchaeus stopped placing emphasis on obtaining material things. "Look! The half of my belongings, Lord, I am giving to the poor," he told Jesus, "and whatever I extorted from anyone by false accusation I am restoring fourfold."—Luke 19:8.

True Christians today are likewise eager to take advantage of opportunities to discuss spiritual things. No longer is gaining material things a major priority with them. Rather, when they receive Christian publications that help them to learn about God and his purposes, reading them becomes a priority. And when there are meetings of fellow Christians, they strive not to miss a single minute of instruction and upbuilding fellowship.

Another good example for us is that of Lot. God's angel had warned him that Sodom and Gomorrah were to be destroyed. Showing loving interest in others, Lot "began to speak to his sons-in-law who were to take his daughters, and he kept on saying: 'Get up! Get out of this place, because Jehovah is bringing the city to ruin!'" But Lot himself "kept lingering," prompting the angel to urge him to escape to God's place of safety without delay, saying: "Hurry! Escape there, because I am not able to do a thing until your arriving there!"—Genesis 19:14, 16, 22.

Today's world has taken on global Sodom and Gomorrah dimensions and likewise faces destruction. That is why warning others about this coming destruction foretold in the Bible is a priority in the lives of Jehovah's Witnesses. Will you put as a priority in your life the investigation of this warning?

Hurrying about in vain pursuits will surely gain you nothing but heartache and nervous distress. Far better it is to learn about God and his purposes to bring about a new system of things wherein life will no longer be a mad rush!—2 Peter 3:13; Isaiah 65:17, 21-25; Psalm 37:10, 11.

In the meantime, learn to be productively, not frantically, busy. And when it comes to learning about God's purposes, don't delay! Put it as your first priority!

Can't I Do Something About My Acne?

'HEY, "crater face"!' 'Hey, "pizza face"!' How utterly devastated, how ashamed, you feel! You want to creep away and hide. If only the ground would suddenly open and you could disappear!

Why such unkind, cutting words—words that bring titters from some standing nearby? Because you are suffering from the teenage scourge of acne.

Acne is a disorder of the skin that causes it to be spotted, even disfigured, by pimples, blackheads, and red swellings, or cysts. Often it is more than a passing discomfort that lasts a few months; it is a serious skin disorder. People of all ages can be afflicted with it, but teenagers suffer the most, some *80 percent* developing acne in varying degrees, according to some experts. Acne sufferers thus have plenty of company.

Not surprisingly, when 2,000 teenagers were asked to say what they disliked most about themselves, problems with skin far outnumbered every other complaint. F. Philip Rice, in his book *The Adolescent,* tells of young Jim who began getting acne in his early teens. By the time he was 14, his face was so badly affected that pus at times ran down his cheeks. He changed from secure and outgoing to withdrawn and self-conscious.

"Oh, no! Not another pimple!"

Sandra, who had a bad case of acne while still in high school, later told of her ordeal in the magazine *Co-Ed.* She said: "I had such bad acne, I was always hiding my face from other people. I was shy because I was embarrassed about the way I looked. . . . I looked so bad."

Of course, we all like to look our best. But it is good to remember that there is much more to life than personal appearance. It may encourage you to know that physical attractiveness does not influence

God in any way.—1 Samuel 16:7; Galatians 2:6.

What Causes Acne?

Why, though, does this scourge appear during your teenage years—at the very time you want to look your best? Because you are growing up. With the onset of puberty, skin glands increase their activity. *The World Book Encyclopedia* explains in simple terms what happens: Each gland empties into a hair follicle—that is, the little bag surrounding each hair. Normally the oil would drain out through a pore of the skin, but sometimes a pore gets clogged and the oil cannot get out quickly enough. The clogged pore now forms a blemish called a blackhead because the trapped oil oxidizes, dries, and turns black.

If the pore is so clogged that no air at all can get to it, then instead of a blackhead, a whitehead develops. A pimple develops when pus forms. Cysts are formed when germs breed in the backed-up oil. It is the cysts that leave permanent scars. Pimples do not scar unless they become infected because of squeezing or picking—so don't squeeze or pick!

Interestingly, tension and emotional upsets can activate the skin glands. Some experience the blossoming of a large pimple just before an important event or before and during exams. Sound advice, though, on the futility of undue anxiety is found in the well-known Sermon on the Mount: "So, never be anxious about the next day, for the next day will have its own anxieties. Sufficient for each day is its own badness." (Matthew 6:34) It's not always easy to follow this advice, is it? But if you can follow it, you may find that it at least helps with the emotional aspect of the acne problem.

Self-Treatment Tips for Acne Sufferers

- ☐ Estimate the severity of your case by counting the number of lesions: 10 or less, a mild case; 11 to 30, a moderate case; over 30, a severe acne problem
- ☐ Plan skin-care regimen to meet your special needs
- ☐ Discuss matter with your pharmacist
- ☐ Wash affected parts gently with hands or soft washcloth
- ☐ Avoid any beauty products that cause aggravation—oil-based makeup makes skin oilier
- ☐ Trouble spots need extra attention
- ☐ Stick to your skin-care plan every day, even if results are slow

Is There a Cure?

Sad to say, there is no single treatment for acne. Dr. Sidney Hurwitz, an authority on the subject, points out that there are medications available that can, in most cases, gradually help bring acne under control. Of course, if the outbreak is severe and persistent, you should not wait to outgrow it, but you may wish to consider seeking the help of a dermatologist. He or she may prescribe one of the several acne preparations available or even antibiotics.

Patience seems to be a key to successful treatment. Remember, the trouble built up over quite a period of time, so it will not clear up overnight. Unfortunately, many do not stick to their treatment plan after they see initial improvement. For worthwhile results, it is important to apply carefully any instructions given by your physician.

Teenage Sandra, mentioned earlier, says in her article for *Co-Ed:* "I guess it took about a year for my skin to completely clear up, but I could see changes in my skin within six weeks." Thus her doctor had warned: "Don't expect results overnight. Have patience."

Some have found that by taking care of their overall health, such as by getting plenty of exercise, being out in the fresh air as much as possible, and getting enough sleep, their complexion benefits and their acne condition improves. It will also help to cleanse your skin thoroughly to prevent perspiration mixed with dirt and pollution from clogging pores. Some doctors claim that diet plays a big part in controlling acne and recommend eating as little fat as possible.

Develop the Right Attitude

Dr. James Dobson recounts a conversation he had with a teenager, Darrell, who said: "When acne does flare up, it can be devastating—it really can knock you out. And even though you tell yourself, 'I know where my priorities are and I know that beauty isn't the most important thing,' it still affects your self-confidence."

However, if you cultivate an outgoing attitude rather than becoming introverted because of self-pity, you will find that it helps a lot. When you do something for someone else, you become aware that other people also have problems, often much greater than your own. This can help you to feel better about yourself and at least helps keep things in the right perspective. Jesus' teaching highlighted the effectiveness of doing things for others when he taught that "there is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving."—Acts 20:35.

Yes, there *is* something you can do about your acne. True, in some cases scars develop and remain long after the disease has gone. However, remember the importance of inner beauty: a pleasant personality, kindness, helpfulness, and qualities like these. Inner beauty—unlike physical beauty—never fades; rather, it increases as the years go by. Strive for this inner beauty, and you will find it easier to keep physical appearance and skin problems in their proper place.—1 Peter 3:4.

Perhaps, though, you are one of the 20 percent of teenagers who are not troubled with skin blemishes. If so, you may not fully comprehend the trauma and self-consciousness of those battling with such an embarrassing problem. Try hard not to tease, even in a good-natured way. Certainly, such cruel comments as "crater face" or "pizza face" would be uncalled for, no matter how humorous they may seem to some.

One day soon there will be no more scars and skin problems, for we are assured that everybody's flesh will "become fresher than in youth." (Job 33:25) Until that blemish-free time, try to keep a positive, happy spirit. And do what you can for your acne right now.

In Our Next Issue

- *Will Africa Ever Be Free From Hunger?*
- *The Roaring Twenties —Lull Before a Storm*
- *What Happens to the Soul After Death?*

CAMBODIA

Surviving a Nightmare

As told by Khem Sou

FOR many years Cambodia (or, Kampuchea) was at peace. Then, in 1970, Lieutenant General Lon Nol seized power. As a result, communists known as Khmer Rouge, or Red Khmer, rose up in revolt. Lon Nol mobilized everyone he could throughout Cambodia to fight the communists.

At the time, I was studying law and medical science at Phnom Penh University, as well as working as a writer. Actually I wrote my first book, *Tears of Orphans,* when I was only 15. It was mainly the compilation of diaries that I had kept since I was seven. The book sold very well, and since I didn't need the money, I donated the royalties to the orphanage.

While at the university, I was well known as an author, songwriter, and singer. Altogether I wrote about 20 books and many songs. My penchant for writing could be due to the influence of my mother, who was a professor of French literature at Phnom Penh University. She wanted me to be a lawyer.

However, when Lon Nol mobilized to fight the communists, I had to discontinue my studies and decide whether to join the military or the police force. Although my stepfather was a top-ranking general, I wanted nothing to do with the military. So I joined the police force, and by 1973, at the age of 22, I had attained the position of first lieutenant.

Yet, while doing police work, my dissatisfaction with life grew. In fact, I was moved to write a book entitled *Life Has No Purpose.* Sadly, this was my verdict even after having given much thought to Buddhism and a number of French philosophies, as well as pursuing careers as a writer and a policeman.

Early Background

While very young, I had lived with my grandmother, an uncle, and two aunts —but not with my parents. In time my mother remarried, so when I was 12, I was able at last to live with my mother, my stepfather, and my two sisters.

My grandmother reared me as a Buddhist. At the age of ten I was sent to a monastery for three months to receive religious training. Outside the monastery, I noted, the monks walked about with their heads bowed and appeared to be the very personification of meekness, but inside not

a day passed without their quarreling with one another.

At our pagoda, there was a small golden statue of Buddha that from time to time was not in its place. Where was it on those occasions? The monks said that the statue could fly and that it visited various pagodas in the vicinity. After watching carefully, I discovered that a monk would remove the statue and hide it. It distressed me that the monks practiced such a deception. When I told my grandmother, she became very angry with me because she wanted to believe in the flying statue.

Upon leaving the monastery, my disbelief grew. In high school even the religious teacher taught that Buddhism is divided into many schools and that it is nothing but a philosophy. I turned to the teachings of several French philosophers, hoping to obtain answers to my questions about life. But these actually increased my doubts about the existence of God. What was a person to believe? I did not know, but I asked myself repeatedly why I was living.

End of Lon Nol's Administration

During 1973 and 1974 the turmoil of the war increased, and people in all walks of life became more distressed by the injustices they saw. Since as a policeman there was little I could do about the grievances, I tried to do something as a writer. I wrote a critical social novel, *The Sky Is Dark*.

That was the last book I ever wrote. I went to prison for it. My sentence was for two years, but thanks to my kinship to both the royal family and one of Cambodia's ambassadors to a nearby Asian country, I was freed after only a few days. The ambassador used his influence in my behalf.

Obviously, I preferred freedom to imprisonment, but I did not really feel free. The establishment, which tried to impose a certain way of thinking and living on everyone, was almost as repugnant to me as imprisonment. Life in the capital, Phnom Penh, the place of my birth, seemed so unnatural. The corrupt, materialistic, and pleasure-seeking society sickened me, and I wanted to escape. No longer wanting to serve in the police force, I resigned.

Soon afterward I moved to the province of Pailin near the border of Thailand. To earn a living, I began working for a company that mined for precious stones. The country way of life appealed to me a little more, but I could not enjoy it for long. That was because in April 1975 the communist Khmer Rouge marched into Phnom Penh, ousted Lon Nol, and immediately tried to create a completely new society.

To this end, all officials who had served in the former regime had to report so that they could be sent to special camps for retraining purposes. I did not report because I did not want to become a police officer again. This failure to report saved my life. I learned later that "retraining" really meant execution. All who reported were killed.

A Time of Horror

According to estimates, in the months that followed, from one to two million Cambodian people were put to death. I personally witnessed executions, saw mass graves, as well as rivers and lakes literally red with blood and full of dead bodies. Families were torn apart and driven from their homes and land. An unprecedented revolution swept away Cambodian traditions of more than two thousand years. No Cambodian would ever have thought such radical change possible.

Disconcerted and filled with horror, I asked myself if there was any purpose left in living in such an inhuman society. I re-

One of the buildings of the royal palace in Phnom Penh. As a boy, I danced here before the king

solved to flee to a foreign country. The Red Khmer had already been searching for me; I was on their blacklist. Since leaving the police force, I had been living under an assumed name, and this had delayed their finding me. However, since I was well known as a songwriter and author, many people knew who I was and would even call me by my real name. So I realized I was in great danger.

Even so, the decision to flee to Thailand was by no means easy. Whatever the ruling regime, I still loved my home country. Also, I knew that once I left, I could never expect to come back to see my parents, my brother, and my sisters. Besides, there was no way to find routes to Thailand. I couldn't ask. I had seen the corpse of a man who had been shot and left lying on the ground because it had become known that he was planning to flee the country.

The Flight—and Faith in God

EXACTLY two months after the Red Khmer took power, another man and I attempted to flee. However, we got lost and had to return. But I didn't give up. A few days later, I set out again with a former police colleague. We were later joined by seven others, including a three-year-old child.

In the jungle, we heard the bloodcurdling roars of tigers. But even more frightening than tigers and poisonous snakes were supporters of the Red Khmer, who were constantly combing the jungles in search of refugees. Sometimes we saw them. The slightest noise would have attracted their attention and meant death. At times fear deprived us of sleep.

On the third day of our flight, we mistakenly thought that we had crossed the border. We were so happy that we cooked and ate up all the rice we had. That was a serious mistake! For the next four days, there was no food available. We were beginning to lose both hope and strength

when suddenly we saw a group of monkeys jumping from tree to tree with bunches of bananas. Hungry as we were, we begged the monkeys for their bananas. And believe it or not, one of the monkeys dropped us a banana! Then the others started imitating him, so that altogether they gave us 20 bananas.

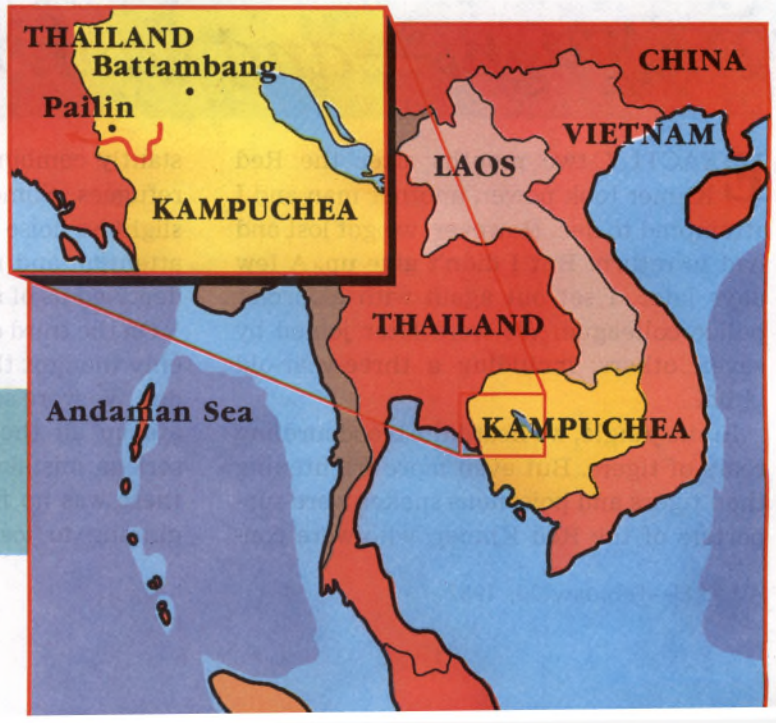
Because of the exciting events of the day, I found it hard to sleep that night. I gazed up at the cloudless heavens and saw a full moon poised in the dark-blue velvet sky. Myriads of stars sparkled. It was to become an unforgettable night for me.

My thoughts for quite some time had been occupied with questions regarding the existence of God. When I observed all the wonderful and intricate processes in nature, I wondered why we should not give honor for this to a wise Creator. Now, as I admired the beauty of that night, I felt the urge to pray. Knowing that God must be far above the sky, I looked heavenward, and with the same intimate feeling I would have if I was talking to my own father, I prayed from my heart for the first time in my life. That prayer proved to be an important turning point.

After I had opened the door of my heart to God, things began to fall into place, and I became convinced that (1) God does exist and that (2) life does have a meaning. My reasoning was that all natural processes give evidence of intelligent design. Should not then the Originator of these meaningful laws have put man on the earth to serve a certain purpose?

Next, the question presented itself: Since God evidently possesses the power and wisdom to eliminate human suffering, why has he permitted so much misery until now? I also wanted to know which religion truly worships the living God. The search for answers to these burning questions was to have priority in my life. I could not believe that God would be so unloving as to withhold from man the answers to them.

As we continued our struggle through the jungle, I thought of my mother. She had shown some interest in Christianity. Missionaries from France had been frequent visitors to our home. Sometimes Mother talked to me of that strange religion whose followers did not eat blood. She also spoke of "good news" about righteous, even paradise, conditions that God would bring. In those days I had not believed one word. But now I asked myself: 'Do I have



Kampuchea and adjoining countries, with inset of the path of my flight into Thailand

reasons to disbelieve? Is not my mother an intelligent woman who weighs and examines these things?' I wanted to find out. But first I would have to get out of Cambodia alive.

I was scantily clad, wearing only a sarong. By this time my bare feet and legs were badly swollen. All of us were exhausted and half starved. We chewed tree leaves to stay alive. On the tenth day of our trek, we had to climb a mountain. From the top we looked down on what we thought was Thailand. Coming down the mountain we came across a shack that stank of rotten meat. Inside was a half-rotten human corpse as well as a skeleton! Around the shack were the telltale footprints of the Red Khmer's shoes. Terrified, we fled! We were not safe yet. Those corpses must have been victims who had tried to escape from Cambodia.

Farther along in the jungle, we came to a river that we thought was at last the border. But a waterfall was about 30 yards (27 m) downstream! An argument broke out between my friend and me. In view of the risks, he insisted that only adults should attempt to cross. Yet, ignoring him, I waited for darkness, and with the little girl tied to my back, I struck out for the other side. The water was deep and I went under, but I finally made it! All of us were safe!

The next day we came to a small village where there were cornfields. To ease our hunger we helped ourselves, eating the corn raw. Nearby was a small hut, and in it we found a matchbox. The label showed it had been made in Thailand, not Cambodia. Can you imagine how we felt? Here was proof! We were in Thailand!

How beautiful the mountains and rivers looked to us now! Shortly afterward I ran a high fever and became unconscious for three days. Apparently I had contracted malaria in the jungle. Even so, we thought that we must be the happiest people on earth.

Finding the Purpose of Life

IN THE refugee camp in Thailand, we were accommodated with 200 other Cambodians. Here I was able to study the Bible with a member of a Protestant denomination called Children of God. This group perceived my interest in Christianity and wanted to baptize me right then and there. I refused baptism, since I was still lacking in conviction. Many Cambodians were baptized quickly because they were given clothes after being baptized.

From the "Children of God," I obtained a Bible translation in my mother tongue, the Cambodian language. I learned from this that God has the personal name Jehovah and that this God who revealed himself in a special way to the ancient Jews is also the God of Christians. It was this God that I wanted to get to know more fully.

In December 1975, after I had been five months in Thailand, the International Committee of the Red Cross helped me to emigrate to Austria. First I was put in a refugee camp, where I studied German. After six months I was transferred to Linz, where I began living in an apartment. I continued my German studies by night and worked in a packaging factory by day.

My wife and me, studying with our two children

During this period, I became involved with the Evangelical and Catholic churches, but there was no one who could give satisfying answers to questions such as, "What happens after death?" and, "What is God's Kingdom?" I asked a Catholic priest for the meaning of the "good news" and whether there was something like a "good news religion." He had no answer. I wondered, 'What is that good news my mother tried to tell me about?'

Twice, while I was alone at home, I prayed to God, and each time after praying, I found handbills pushed under my door. They were invitations to attend meetings at a place called Kingdom Hall of Jehovah's Witnesses. The name Jehovah already meant something to me, but who were "Jehovah's Witnesses"? Of what were they witnesses? Full of questions and curiosity, both times I set out to find the Kingdom Hall. Both times I ended up in churches. The Kingdom Hall was located on a second floor above a disco hall, and I was unable to find it.

A few days after my second attempt, I was visiting the home of a friend from Thailand when two persons identifying themselves as Jehovah's Witnesses came to his door. As I saw my friend turning them away, I told him that I would like to talk to them. First, I asked them what God's Kingdom is. They explained from the Bible that it is a heavenly government by Christ to rule over the earth. They again used the Bible to answer my next question concerning the condition of man after death. I was deeply impressed by their logical Bible-based answers and immediately asked for a Bible study. The same day, my friend and I went to the meeting at the Kingdom Hall.

I listened to the talk, although I did not understand the greater part of it as I was still learning German. However, I understood it was about the good news, the good news of God's Kingdom. By means of Jehovah's Kingdom, the earth was to be made a paradise where people will no more shed tears of grief and where God will 'make all things new.' (Revelation 21:3-5) I recalled that my mother once read these same words to me from the Bible. A world free from all the evils of this world was exactly what I expected from a mighty and righteous God.

Now, however, I wanted to know why Jehovah had not created such a world long ago. These and many other questions were answered to my satisfaction in the course of regular Bible discussions. I rejoiced in having found a religion that was not asking

blind belief from me. Moreover, Jesus Christ's teachings and his way of life appealed to me very much.

In sharp contrast to my experience with the "Children of God," the Witnesses did not ask me to get baptized after a short time of instruction. I understood that baptism was a Christian requirement, so I asked them if they would baptize me. I expected them to do so before I changed my mind. To my surprise, they wanted me to take time in deciding that I really wanted to take the step. I realized that quality counted with the Witnesses rather than quantity. Finally, after studying the Bible for about seven months in the German language, I was baptized in July 1977, at the Linz convention of Jehovah's Witnesses.

Realizing the Purpose of Life

At this same convention, a new book was released. Four years before this, I had published my book called *Life Has No Purpose*. Now Jehovah's Witnesses were releasing the book, almost like an answer to mine, *Life Does Have a Purpose*. Recognizing the nonsense that I had written, I welcomed that new book with all my heart.

How I longed to make known this good news to the grief-stricken people of Cambodia! This good news would offer them an unfailing hope and a wonderful goal in life. Since it was not possible to return to that country, I did my best to publish the good news to Cambodians living in Austria. I prayed as Isaiah did, "Here I am! Send me," hoping that Jehovah would use me to help my fellow countrymen.—Isaiah 6:8.

In 1980 I married a Japanese witness in Vienna. I met her at a wedding of Jehovah's Witnesses. My wife, too, had found what she was searching for when a fellow Japanese student at the Vienna Academy of Music, one of Jehovah's Witnesses, helped her to understand the Bible. After our second child was born, my wife had health problems, and it seemed best that she return to Japan. We made the move in 1983 and settled in Tokyo.

My sincere desire to help Cambodian refugees has not changed. There are about 600 of them in Japan, mostly scattered in the suburbs of Tokyo. It brings me great joy to work among them and help them to understand Jehovah's loving purpose for mankind. I have the great privilege of helping with about a dozen home Bible studies with Cambodians, either conducting studies myself or assisting the Japanese conductors. Twice a month our entire family spends whole days serving only Cambodians. Although this involves driving almost 180 miles (300 km), we receive great encouragement from seeing the steady spiritual progress that some of them are making.

After a long interval without communication with my family in my home country, I received a reply to a letter I wrote in 1981. I learned that my stepfather and a sister had been killed in the civil war. Three of my family, my mother, my brother, and a sister, are still alive. We are able to correspond a few times a year now, but it is hard to tell from their letters just what the religious situation is in Cambodia.

I can say with confidence that my search for the purpose of life has certainly been richly rewarded. Having found life's true meaning and purpose, I am so very happy to have a loving family united in serving our great God, Jehovah. How I look forward to the day when I can be reunited with my mother, brother, and sister! In the meantime, what a privilege it is to have a share in bringing the good news of God's Kingdom to the downtrodden and oppressed!

Good Health Is Good for Business

THE annual cost of health care in the United States has skyrocketed to $400 *billion,* many times more than it was in the 1970's! Not only do rising medical costs threaten the financial security of families but they also take a tremendous slice from business profits. For employee health-insurance premiums alone, businesses in the United States pay out over $80 billion a year!

Ford Motor Company, for example, estimates that during 1980 the cost of health care for employees added $290 to the price of each automobile. General Motors spends in a year more money on health insurance and disabilities than for steel from the USX Corporation (formerly U.S. Steel), one of its principal suppliers.

It is estimated that backaches alone are costing U.S. business firms $1 billion a year in lost productivity. Because of ailments such as this, as many as a million American workers fail to report for work each day. Especially devastating is heart disease. About 700,000 Americans—many in the prime of life—die of a heart attack every year while another 700,000 survive such an attack and may miss work for months afterward. The cost to business is tremendous.

"A single employee who undergoes quadruple [heart] bypass," explains Dr. Richard H. Stein, "is going to cost the employer, depending on salary base, conceivably up to $100,000. An all-encompassing disease prevention program for an entire corporation could cost less. I think the possibility of reducing the burden for corporations makes good economic sense."

Does Prevention Make Sense?

Much of the $400 billion health bill goes for ailments resulting from potentially controllable problems, such as being overweight, smoking, having high blood-cholesterol, and hypertension.

As you may be aware, most businesses invest in a maintenance program to keep their machinery in good working order. They do so because it makes good economic sense. What, then, about a program to prevent the breakdown of the health of their employees? Does it make sense?

'Keeping healthy is the individual's responsibility,' an employer may argue. Yet in our modern, stressful society that fosters deplorable eating, drinking, and sleeping habits, not to mention a sedentary life-style and an emphasis on the use of medication, business firms are rethinking the matter.

In 1974 the Association for Fitness in Business was formed by two dozen industry fitness directors. Now the Association has over 3,500 members! The consensus is that a disease-prevention program does make sense—both economic and humanitarian sense.

Coping With Tragedy

Dr. John Bagshaw lamented: "There's nothing more frustrating than seeing someone in your office, knowing they're headed for trouble, advising them how to take better care of themselves, and then seeing no improvement—or, worse, seeing them in the hospital with a heart attack."

The sad situation moved Dr. Bagshaw to make an adjustment in his medical practice and develop a disease-prevention program. That such a shift in emphasis makes sense is illustrated by a dream that another doctor said he had.

"I was standing by a river," he reports, "and a man drifted by. He was drowning. So I jumped in, swam out to him, pulled him back to shore, gave him artificial respiration, and saved him. By then, another man was calling for help. So I jumped back in to save him, only to have more drowning men appear. Before long the riverbank was covered with people I'd saved. What made the dream memorable is I recall thinking 'What I really need to do is to go upstream and find out who's pushing all these people in.'"

Actually, people are pushing themselves in the doctor's dream "river" by smoking, abusing drugs, eating improperly, and neglecting to exercise. This is confirmed by figures of the U.S. Centers for Disease Control that show that of all deaths of people under 65, more than half are directly attributable to unhealthy life-styles.

Nevertheless, most American medicine is concerned primarily with the treatment of illness rather than its prevention. Unlike many other countries, the United States has given little attention to disease-prevention programs—*until recently*. Now even Ronald Reagan, the president of the United States, encourages learning from the programs of others.

"We are all aware of the fitness programs in Japanese companies," he said. "A healthier work force means higher productivity. In the long run, it also means a reduction in the cost for employee health benefits."

What Corporations Are Doing

Certain Japanese corporations have invested heavily in programs to protect the health of their employees, placing emphasis on physical exercise. The Nissan Motor Company, for example, has built a vast $41 million fitness center easily accessible both to its main factories and its head office. At the new head office of Tokyo Gas, the entire 27th floor has been made into a fitness center that includes even a running track.

Rather than building its own fitness facility, Nomura Securities, the large Japanese stockbroking firm, provides its employees tickets to the finest health clubs and urges that they make maximum use of them. NEC, the computers and electronics giant, stops its production lines twice a day so its employees can participate in isometric exercises.

In the past few years, many American companies have started making similar provisions for their employees, principally for their executives and those in white-collar jobs. Besides providing classes that feature guidance in proper nutrition and help for employees in stopping smoking, the General Foods Corporation included a sleek, in-house fitness center at its beautiful new corporate headquarters in Rye Brook, New York. The facility contains a squash court, a racquetball court, weight-training equipment, exercise bikes, and treadmills. And outside there is a jogging track amid pleasant surroundings. Supervisory personnel and an exercise physiologist regularly monitor the progress of members.

In 1979 Pepsico began a wellness program at its corporate headquarters in Purchase, New York. The program has since been put in operation in about a dozen of its other locations. The AT&T Communications Corporation has a similar program known as "Total Life Concept." These company programs, besides monitoring physical exercise, include diet-weight management, nutrition instruction, and relaxation techniques.

Dr. Dennis L. Colacino, director of Pepsico's program, noted that experts in various health fields are invited to give lectures to company employees on a wide range of health-related subjects. In the company cafeteria, he said, healthful eating is promoted by providing a calorie guide to the various foods. "We have a salad bar and a fruit bar. We make a choice available." However, he emphasized: "We use exercise as our hub and driving force."

Many other corporations do the same. Tenneco, the large United States oil and gas conglomerate, installed exercise facilities in 17 of its locations in a recent three-year period. Even certain small companies have made the provision of such facilities for their employees.

For example, Siegfried Tunger, owner of a business employing five persons, built a combination tennis-volleyball court next to his factory. For the last five years, the employees have played volleyball at the end of the workday. "The work we do can be monotonous at times," Tunger explained. "It's good to get out and move around—everyone looks forward to it."

On the other hand, since it is expensive for smaller companies to have a really adequate fitness center, many pay, either in full or in part, for their employees to use nearby gyms or health clubs. In larger cities such fitness centers have recently been built to serve the needs of employees of a number of corporations situated in the area. According to Dr. Jerome Zuckerman, a promoter of this concept, "in the next ten to 15 years, the future of corporate fitness in the 50 largest cities in the country lies in the multicorporation fitness center."

Is Exercise Really That Valuable?

Some people, however, question that regular exercise can actually ward off disease and improve an employee's productivity. Yet evidence that it does continues to increase. Dr. Peter Lindner, a specialist in treating the overweight, notes: "Exercise has been shown to produce endorphins, natural brain chemicals which relieve depression and produce a sense of well-being."

But besides simply making one *feel* better, regular exercise can actually make one healthier and hence more productive. It can even lengthen one's life. Under *The New York Times* front-page heading "Study Indicates Moderate Exercise Can Add Years to a Person's Life," a feature article last March said:

"Men who participated in activities such as walking, stair-climbing and sports that used 2,000 calories or more a week had death rates one-quarter to one-third lower than those in the study [of nearly 17,000 Harvard alumni] who were least active." And, significantly, the risk of death for such active men with high blood pressure was less than half that for inactive men with hypertension.

Director of the study, Dr. Ralph S. Paffenbarger, Jr., noted: "There are lots of skeptics who say people are active because they are healthy." However, he emphasized: "You're healthy because you're active."

Japanese companies provide facilities such as these for their employees

This, too, seems to be the consensus at companies where fitness programs are being operated successfully. Of their program, Russ Cunningham, personnel manager at Pacific Gas & Electric, observed: "We think of it as an insurance policy against disaster." And he added: "In our view, it has paid for itself several times over." John Sculley, former president of Pepsi-Cola, a division of Pepsico, was quoted as saying: "Fitness is the department with the best return on investment."

At Exxon, the huge oil company, a study of executives also confirmed the benefit of the fitness program. Three quarters of the participants were found to have experienced an enhanced sense of well-being, 29 percent lost weight, and 27 percent of the smokers quit smoking. Similarly, the Control Data Corporation determined that health-care costs for their personnel who regularly exercise were $115 less each year than for those who did not exercise.

A 1982 study at the University of Toronto, Canada, revealed that a company having a wellness or fitness program would save $233 annually in health costs for each participating employee. And a 1983 survey by the Health Research Institute showed that corporations sponsoring fitness programs paid $1,061 each year for health care for their employees while those without them paid $1,456. That is a 37-percent saving, or $395 per employee!

Promoting Participation

Realizing the benefit of wellness and fitness programs, many business firms are trying to get more of their personnel involved in them. But this is often not easy. Even though people may realize that they are endangering their lives by smoking, overdrinking, eating improperly, abusing drugs, and not exercising, it's hard to get some to change their unhealthful lifestyles.

Often less than 30 percent of a company's employees take advantage of its fitness program. So to get more employees involved, some companies offer various incentives, including monetary rewards. For example, Hospital Corporation of America

Exercising regularly is also good for the family

pays participants 24 cents for each mile (1.6 km) run or walked and for each quarter mile swum or four miles biked.

To discourage smoking, SpeedCall Corporation gives employees $7 a week for not smoking at work. Significantly, at the end of four years, the number of smokers had declined by 65 percent and the number of insurance claims filed by those who had quit smoking had dropped by 50 percent.

Important to the success of a company's fitness program is its support by top management. If persons in positions of oversight exercise, others are more likely to do so. Dr. Lindner urges people not to begrudge the time spent exercising. "You'll actually have *more* time," he says, "because the exercise gives you so much energy that you'll accomplish more work in a shorter period."

What You Can Do

Regardless of whether you work for a company that has a fitness program or not, you may be motivated to begin exercising. However, a word of caution. If you have not done so for some time, take it slowly. Too much at one time can do more harm than good.

Also, thinking that you can engage in vigorous exercise on a weekend without exercising during the week can even be fatal. Dr. Lawrence Power noted: "Too many people drop dead around the weekend. One study indicates that 26 percent of sudden deaths occur on Mondays and 25 percent on Saturdays. That's half the week's deaths in two days."

To be a real health benefit, exercise must be practiced regularly, preferably three or more times a week for a period of 20 to 30 minutes or more each time. Making a regular habit of walking is a fine way to begin. One doctor explained: *"Vigorous walking,* if practiced from youth on, would in itself drastically reduce the disability and early deaths due to coronary heart disease."

Since the good health of employees is good for business firms, the good health of its members certainly is good for the family. As family heads, therefore, why not encourage some form of regular exercise, especially if you, your wife, or your children spend a lot of time watching television or in other nonphysical activity. Regular exercise will be good for the whole family.

Further Expansion at Watchtower Farms

EARTH WIDE the preaching work of Jehovah's Witnesses is expanding remarkably. In 1986 there were 3,229,022 of these Kingdom publishers, about three times the number 20 years before! And last March 24 over 8,100,000 Witnesses and their friends attended the Memorial of Christ's death!

To keep pace with such growth, the facilities at the international headquarters of Jehovah's Witnesses in Brooklyn and Wallkill, New York, need regularly to be expanded. October 18, 1986, saw the dedication of a recent major addition, the triple-wing, 176-room residence building at Watchtower Farms seen below. It will accommodate 346 of the more than 900 headquarters personnel living there.

The afternoon dedication program highlighted the history of Watchtower Farms, located about 95 miles northwest of the principal printing facilities of Jehovah's Witnesses in Brooklyn, New York.*

The first farm near Wallkill was obtained in January 1963, and the second, four miles away, was purchased in 1967. However, besides these two farms of about 3,000 acres (including leased land), there is a 550-acre farm near South Lansing, New York, a 150-acre farm near Port Murray, New Jersey, and a 670-acre farm at Patterson, New York.#

'But why does a publishing society have

* 1 mi = 1.6 km.
# 1 a. = 0.4 ha.

farms?' you may ask. They are for the production of quality food at low cost for the more than 3,500 headquarters workers, over 2,500 of whom eat in ten dining rooms linked by closed circuit television in Brooklyn. Feeding the entire staff of headquarters workers is comparable to feeding a small town! For example, at a typical meal about 275 gallons of milk, 400 quarts of vegetables, 20 bushels of potatoes, and 1,100 pounds of roast beef are consumed!*

Hence the extensive facilities at Watchtower Farms. Over 40 types of fruits and vegetables are grown there, and most are processed at the on-site cannery. The dairy herd produces, on the average, about 775 gallons of milk a day; the hens lay over 4,500 eggs daily; and each year some 535,000 pounds of meat are obtained from the processing of about 500 beef cattle, more than 1,300 pigs, and about 25,000 chickens.

More Than Food Production

When construction of the first residence building of about 40 rooms was completed in 1968, it was intended that Watchtower Farms remain only a farm. But space for printing became limited in Brooklyn, so that in 1970 construction began at Watchtower Farms on a one-story 200- by 300-foot printery, as well as another residence building to accommodate about 60 persons.*

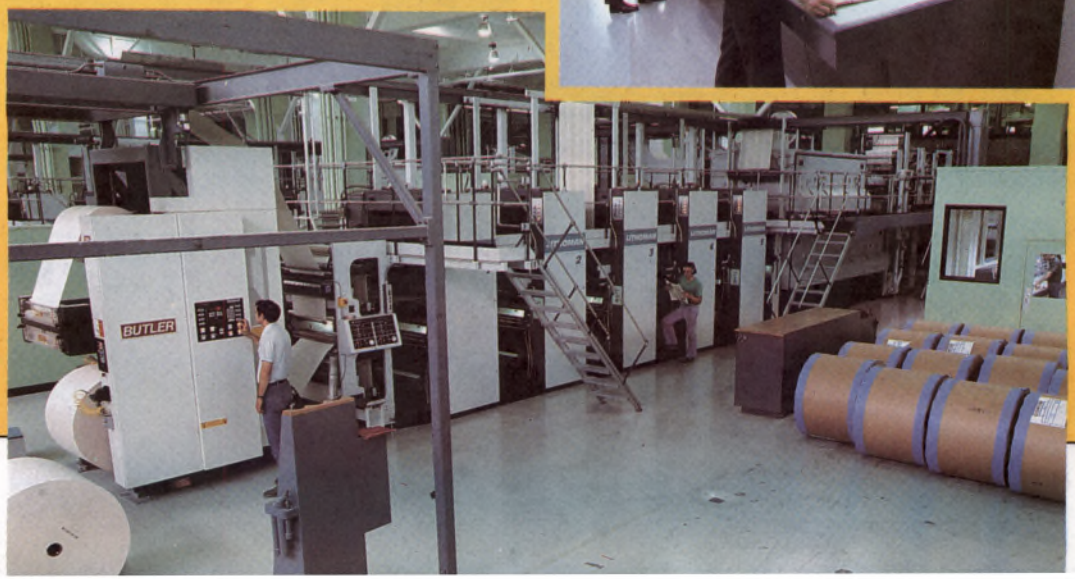
However, even before these buildings were completed in March of 1971, construction had begun on an adjoining three-story 350- by 350-foot factory addition and a six-floor residence for about 450 persons. On April 3, 1973, the completed new home was dedicated.

Printing began at Watchtower Farms with the March 1, 1973, issue of *The Watchtower*. By 1980 there were in use 15 large rotary letterpresses, weighing between 40 and 50 tons each, that turned out over 17 million magazines a month. By this time, faster offset presses had been installed at the Brooklyn printery, so a complex program of replacing letterpress printing with offset printing was also begun at Watchtower Farms.

* 1 gal. = 3.8 L; 1 qt = 0.9 L; 1 bu = 35 L; 1 lb = 0.5 kg.

* 1 ft = 0.3 m.

Rotary offset press, with an inset of its control room



Each of the three huge new offset presses now operating at the farm factory is 101 feet long, 25 feet wide, 15 feet high, and weighs 197 tons! Each can produce 60,000 magazines an hour, or a combined production of well over a million magazines a day!

To accommodate such giants, a 27-foot-high ceiling section that is 350 feet long and 125 feet wide was added to the pressroom. This brought the total factory area to 812,625 square feet of floor space, almost equal to 19 acres, or 14 United States football fields of 360 by 160 feet!

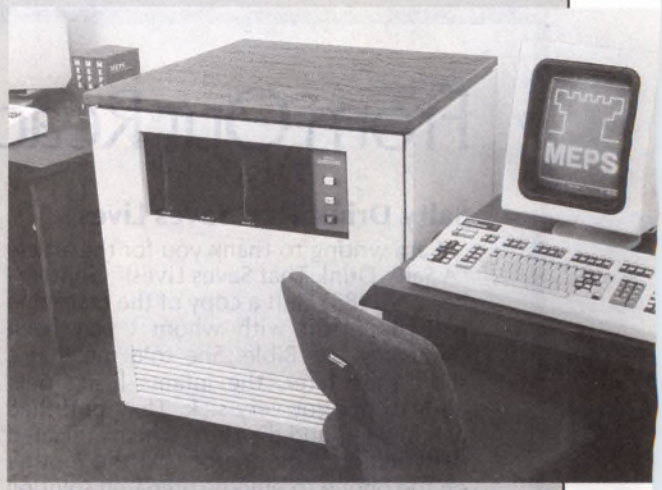
Earlier the Kingdom Hall had been increased in size to accommodate 916 permanent seats. And in 1986 the dining room was doubled in area, so that over 1,200 can now be comfortably seated.

In 1979 a team of Jehovah's Witnesses at Watchtower Farms began developing a computerized system, called MEPS, for producing literature in many languages. By May 1986, when the project was completed, a total of 79 MEPS computers, 45 MEPS typesetters, and 181 MEPS terminals, or work stations, had been manufactured and shipped to 27 different branches. In the past few years, 131 Witnesses from 31 countries have been trained at Watchtower Farms in the use and maintenance of MEPS.

Dedication Day

The Watchtower Farms family was delighted to have over 800 invited guests share the dedication program with them. Most of these were from the Brooklyn headquarters, but others came from Canada, England, Ireland, Taiwan—altogether from 15 countries! Many arrived during predawn darkness to attend the morning worship program. When it began at 7:00 a.m., over a thousand had assembled in the spacious, enlarged dining room to hear the comments of Karl F. Klein, a member of the Governing Body of Jehovah's Witnesses.

Guests by the hundreds continued to arrive, and during the morning hours, they were treated to a special tour of the expanded farm and factory facilities. In the Kingdom Hall, the 45-minute slide program "Watchtower Farms —Sharing Joyfully in the Harvest" was shown at intervals throughout the morning, which provided a welcome rest from the walking tours. The program gave a progressive history of the expansion at Watchtower Farms over the past 23 years.



After a break for a delightful cafeteria-style lunch, 958 packed out the Kingdom Hall for the dedication program that began at 2:00 p.m. Overflow seating in the factory accommodated another 758, who watched the program on two huge screens. Another 217 in Brooklyn listened to the proceedings over the Watchtower Society's telephone tie line, making a total attendance of 1,933.

The first two parts of the program reviewed the fascinating history of the progressive developments at the Farms, especially of the construction work. Short talks by five members of the Governing Body followed, and then Milton Henschel, one of the Watch Tower Society's vice presidents, gave the stirring dedication talk.

How grand it is to see the expansion of the facilities at Watchtower Farms, since it is just further evidence of the blessing of Jehovah God on the worldwide work of Kingdom preaching!

From Our Readers

Salty Drink That Saves Lives

I am writing to thank you for the article "A Salty Drink That Saves Lives!" (September 22, 1985) I left a copy of the magazine with a person with whom I had been discussing the Bible. She told me that a short time later, the infants living next door to her got very sick. They both had parched lips and diarrhea, which indicated dehydration. The doctor told the mother on the phone to buy the prepared solution at the drugstore, but it was out of stock. The woman I had been calling on went next door and mixed some solution, following the recipe in *Awake!* The children responded quickly.

L. A. C., United States

The Tragic Saturday

Upon reading the article "A Tragic Saturday That Shattered My Family," I was confused and wondered why you would print such a gruesome story. (October 22, 1986) Truthfully, was an article dealing with the needless murder of five innocent children by a crazed suitor the most uplifting experience you could have printed? I think not.

R. G. M., United States

We agree that it was a tragic story with strong impact, but still we believe that there were a lot of positive things in the account. For example, though his family was shattered, William Cox did not allow himself to be overcome with bitterness and hopelessness. Though he could not understand why this had happened, he prayed for help. Though he did not receive from Catholic and Protestant clergy satisfactory answers to his anguished questions, he kept searching. Further, a woman in California who had read about the case in the papers took the kind initiative to send him the book "The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life" and subscriptions for "The Watchtower" and "Awake!," which helped him to find the answers to his questions. Yes, the experience on that Saturday was tragic, but all of us can benefit from observing how William Cox was helped to cope by getting strong grounds for faith in God's purposes.—ED.

I would like to thank both you and William Cox for the article "A Tragic Saturday That Shattered My Family." I lost a daughter earlier this year in a similar situation, and I really needed to read about this experience and about the resurrection.

V. W., United States

I have just finished reading the article "A Tragic Saturday That Shattered My Family," and my heart hurt so much for the parents of these five murdered children. Six years ago my husband and I lost our son in an automobile accident. He was at the tender age of 14. It still hurts unbearably at times. Isn't it wonderful that we have the hope of the resurrection? It's so comforting.

G. V., United States

I feel compelled to write to you after having read the article "A Tragic Saturday That Shattered My Family." If only I could let William Cox and his wife know how I feel for them and their children. When I look at the pictures of those five smiling young faces, full of the joy of living, my heart rejoices with the family over the hope of the resurrection. As James 5:16 states: "A righteous man's supplication, when it is at work, has much force." What a wonderful privilege we have in prayer for "the whole association of brothers." —1 Peter 2:17.

D. M. F., England

Watching the World

Italy Recognizes Jehovah's Witnesses

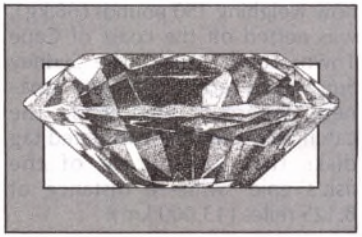
In October 1986, with a presidential decree, Jehovah's Witnesses in Italy became a legally recognized religion. "Italy has one more 'official' religious confession, the Jehovah's Witnesses, who have become by right the second religion of the land," reports *La Stampa*. Prior to that, under Italy's "friendship treaty" with the United States, Jehovah's Witnesses enjoyed a legal standing, but this did not give them the same status as will official recognition. In 1908 the first congregation of Jehovah's Witnesses was formed in Pinerolo, a town in Piedmont, Italy. Ten years ago Italy had 60,000 active Jehovah's Witnesses. Today they number more than 141,000.

Drugs in the U.S.S.R.

"Drug-taking has contributed to the death of dozens of people in Krivoj Rog, an industrial city of 600,000 inhabitants in the Ukraine," states the French daily *La Croix*. Based on a report published in the Soviet weekly *Sobessednik*, the article noted that "this upsurge in drug-taking is a result of idleness of youths, extreme industrialization in Krivoj Rog, and the fact that it is impossible for people to spend all their pay in view of the scarcity and poor quality of available goods. Most drug victims are not rich adolescents but working-class youths."

Topaz Record?

After digging a tunnel over 260 feet (80 m) long, workers in Brazil were able to bring to the surface what may well be the world's largest topaz, reports the



Daily Express of Scotland. The stone weighs approximately eight tons, stands over six feet (1.8 m) tall, and is nearly that wide. White in color, its value is estimated at $4.5 million.

Smart Oldsters

A ten-year study by a University of Florida psychologist has revealed that, contrary to popular opinion, people do remain intellectually sharp in advanced age. The researcher tested 1,100 people between the ages of 51 and 92 in 30 Florida cities. Of that number, 450 were still available ten years later for retesting to determine if there were any changes in their intellectual abilities. While the study revealed that there was some decline of intellectual abilities among these older people, the decline was minimal. No significant reduction in verbal comprehension was observed, although there was a modest decline noted in basic arithmetic skills as well as in the ability to recognize incomplete or scrambled words. Researcher Walter Cunningham observed that "the exercise of intellectual abilities helps preserve them."—*AARP News Bulletin*, a publication of the American Association of Retired Persons.

Rapists Speak

How can a potential victim perhaps prevent being raped? Rapists themselves recently answered this question in Japan. The answer was found in the 1985 Crime White Paper published by the government, which included results of a psychological survey on criminals. "Seventy-two percent of the rapists surveyed said that they raped victims who happened to be near them. However, 45.1 percent of them also said that they would have stopped immediately if the victims had made any resistance," reports *Yomiuri Shimbun*, a Japanese newspaper. A surprising 71.1 percent said they would have stopped their assaults had they

been faced with "strong resistance."

Sudden Infant Death

Hundreds of babies die suddenly for no apparent reason. However, research carried out by British doctors seems to provide a partial explanation for this phenomenon. Notes *L'Express,* a French weekly: "Autopsy findings from 200 babies revealed that 14 died because their bodies did not digest dietary fat. An enzyme . . . is chiefly to blame. This enzyme is normally useful for turning fatty acids into energy. Because of a malfunction, the child's brain is deprived of its 'nutrients': sugars and acetone bodies. Muscles and the heart also suffer as a result." Commenting on the benefits of this discovery, the article explains: "Enzyme-deficiency detection could save nearly 100 children a year in France."

Ending "Dream Weddings"

Japanese couples are disappointed. A tropical island in the Pacific no longer will be their haven for Western-style "dream weddings." The Catholic Church of Guam decided to bring such ceremonies to a halt. Why? For 15 years the church hoped to spread the Catholic faith by performing Western-style weddings for Japanese visitors but has never "successfully produced results to date," states a letter from the archdiocese of Agana, the island's capital. *The Daily Yomiuri,* commenting on the decision of the church, says: "Most Japanese appear to merely savor the ceremony or want to save money." Weddings in Japan can cost from ¥1,500,000 to ¥3,000,000 (from about $10,000 to $20,000, U.S.), while in Guam a Western-style wedding would cost a Japanese couple only from $600 to $700, of which $50 goes to the church.

Tuna Migration

In August of 1968 a 2 1/2-year-old southern bluefin tuna weighing 13 pounds (6 kg) was tagged and

put back into the sea at Bermagui on the south coast of New South Wales, Australia. In June of 1985, nearly 17 years later, the same fish, now weighing 150 pounds (68 kg), was netted off the coast of Cape Town, South Africa. The Sydney *Sun-Herald* reports that the Japanese fishermen who made the catch recovered the two dated tag disks that gave proof of the fish's epic swim—a distance of 8,125 miles (13,000 km)!

Lifesavers Punished

During a strike among medical professionals in Brazil, a doctor performed an urgent, life-or-death cesarean section. Since none of the medical staff were available to provide needed assistance, she enlisted the aid of a hospital janitor to hold surgical instruments during the operation. Though the life of a baby was saved, the doctor was punished with a suspension. It was annulled by a court order. However, when similar punishment was given by the hospital administration to the janitor, his suspension was not revoked. Regarding the incident, the *Latin America Daily Post* ironically stated: "He helped save a life without being employed expressly for this purpose, which is a crime incompatible with medical professional interests."

Religion and War

Last October an interfaith call against war was issued at Assisi, Italy, by Pope John Paul II. But what do people think about religion and war? The results of polls carried out in six different countries were published in the French daily *La Croix.* In France "nearly half the French people (47 percent) consider religions in general to be a war factor, whereas barely a third of them think religions are a peace factor (31 percent)." Interestingly, in Catholic countries Islam and Judaism are held by many to be war factors, but in Israel nearly a quarter of the population feel that Catholicism is a war factor.

Teachers' Example?

"Teachers themselves smoked in the staff room" was the pointed response of schoolchildren being taught the harm of direct and indirect smoking. This student reaction was aired at a meeting of teachers to promote antismoking education in Japan last summer. Stressing the importance of nonsmoking education from an early age, Takaharu Hayashi of the Tokyo Sanitarium Hospital explained: "Once people have formed the habit of smoking, it is very difficult to get rid of it." Still, some teachers who smoke do not fully understand the importance of nonsmoking education at schools. Physical-education teachers, who teach health, were cited among those who use tobacco. Their view was: "Why should we have to listen to students and quit smoking?"

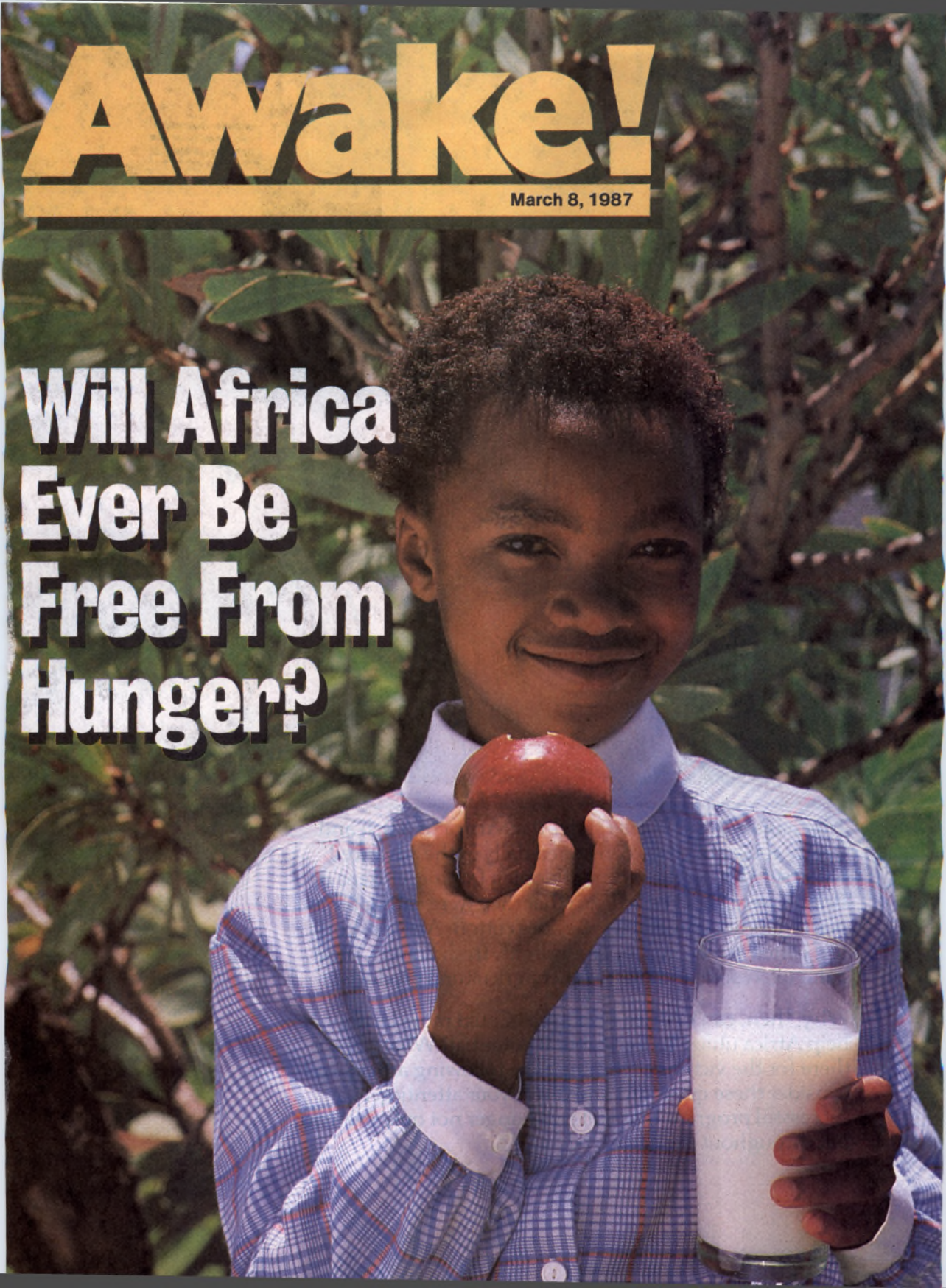
The Marvel of Snow

Many consider the earth to be at its prettiest when it is draped by a blanket of dazzling snow. But snow provides more than beauty. Animals can burrow into this fluffy natural covering and keep warm. Snow holds heat in the lower ground levels, and preserves seeds from freezing to death. It provides such fine insulation that Eskimos within their igloos can keep warm from the heat of their own bodies. It is with significance, then, that the Bible says that God "is giving snow like wool."—Psalm 147:16; Job 37:5, 6.

Awake!

March 8, 1987

Will Africa Ever Be Free From Hunger?



FAO photo

The magazine *The Nation* states that Africa "is a rich and steady source of crops consumed daily in the advanced nations." During the recent Ethiopian famine, citizens of Britain were shocked to learn that they were eating Ethiopian fruits and vegetables. Besides cotton, Africa exports tea, coffee, sugar, cocoa, groundnuts, fresh flowers, meat, palm oil, wood, and many other agricultural products.

Why, then, can't Africa feed itself? Could more be done to help Africa utilize its agricultural potential? What hope is there for the victims of famine? The following articles will consider these questions and direct your attention to a successful program that will end hunger not only in Africa but throughout the earth.

The World Comes to the Rescue

By "Awake!" correspondent in South Africa

"ONE of the world's greatest disasters." "The biggest disaster to strike the planet since World War Two devastated Europe." That is how different authors describe Africa's recent famine.

"In one year," claims the magazine *Newsweek,* "as many as 1 million Ethiopian peasants and 500,000 Sudanese children died." In Mozambique a hundred thousand people are reported to have perished, and for a time, a thousand died each month in Chad.

The world came to the rescue, but for countless Africans it was too late. In some cases the delay was caused by officials who concealed the true extent of the famine. The ignoring of hungry citizens contributed to the overthrow of the Sudanese government in 1985.

In March 1984, Ethiopia appealed to the world for 450,000 tons of emergency grain. This was no exaggeration, for the actual need was twice that amount. Yet the United Nations and its member states paid little heed. Less than 100,000 tons of grain was offered, at a time when world grain surpluses approached 190,000,000 tons! To make matters worse, the small supplies of food took months to arrive. Meanwhile, people were starving. The death toll in

FAO photo

Awake!®

March 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 5

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

The World Comes to the Rescue 3
Why Can't Africa Feed Itself? 5
Hope for Victims of Famine 8

Also in This Issue

The World Since 1914
The Roaring Twenties
—Lull Before a Storm 11
Gilead Students—United Though Diverse 16
Young People Ask...
How Can I Be God's Friend? 19
What Can You Do
When an Earthquake Strikes? 22
Fast Work Far North! 24
The Bible's Viewpoint
What Happens to the Soul After Death? 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
A Multipurpose Animal 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

one relief camp reached a hundred per day.

Then in October 1984 a British television crew was delayed while waiting for a change of planes in Ethiopia. They used the time to visit relief camps and filmed humans starving to death. "I cried when I was editing this film," said cameraman Mohammed Amin. "I actually broke down and cried."

A Dramatic Response

The film was shown on BBC television news and repeated on 425 networks throughout the world. Its effect was dramatic. An angry public demanded government action. Pop musicians turned their lucrative trade into appeals for charity and, to date, have raised over a hundred million dollars! All this publicity resulted in one of the greatest relief programs the world has ever seen.

Shipments of surplus grain began pouring into Africa. Governments of Europe cooperated in an airlift of food deep into Sudan. Even more remarkable was the joint operation to get food to the highlands of Ethiopia. In his book *Ethiopia: The Challenge of Hunger,* Graham Hancock described the scene at Addis Ababa's Bole Airport: "Aircraft with Russian, American, East German, British and a medley of other markings were lined up on the apron loading emergency food supplies... It was like a vision of all the lofty principles that the United Nations stands for suddenly brought to life, and I could almost hear the swords being beaten into ploughshares."

Though late, the world's response to Africa's need is said to have saved over three million lives! But, sadly, Africa is still short of food. According to recent reports, millions in Ethiopia, Sudan, and Mozambique face starvation. 'Why,' you may wonder, 'is Africa unable to feed itself?' And even more important, 'What is the real solution?'

Why Can't Africa Feed Itself?

"I PLANTED . . . but there was no rain," explained Idris, an Ethiopian farmer. All his seeds rotted in the ground, forcing him to leave his farm for a new life in a relief camp. "Once," he added, "I had four oxen for ploughing and of these, when there was no food left to eat, I sold two and slaughtered two for meat. . . . I have eaten my future."—From the book *Ethiopia: The Challenge of Hunger.*

Like Idris, many African farmers find it difficult to produce enough food. Once self-sufficient, the continent now depends on large food imports. Why is this? Why do so many Africans go to bed hungry?

Drought

Africa is notorious for treacherous droughts. Particularly vulnerable are countries on the southern border of the Sahara Desert. Since 1960 rainfall in this region has steadily declined in what the magazine *Ceres* calls a "prolonged Sahelian drought." Yet, many farmers manage to survive.

In the 1983-84 season, though hit by drought five Sahelian countries produced record crops of cotton. The clothes you now wear may be made from this cotton. While cotton earns valuable foreign exchange from exports, there is a price to pay. In 1984 the countries of the Sahel had to import a record 1.77 million tons of cereals. "The fact that cotton can be grown but grain cannot has more to do with government and aid agency policies than with rainfall," states Lloyd Timberlake in his book *Africa in Crisis.*

Besides cotton, Africa exports tea, coffee, sugar, cocoa, groundnuts, fresh flowers, meat, palm oil, wood, and many other agricultural products. "Africa," states the U.S. magazine *The Nation,* "is a rich and steady source of crops consumed daily in the advanced nations." During the recent famine, British citizens were shocked to learn that they were eating Ethiopian fruits and vegetables. Apparently, then, drought alone is not the reason Africa cannot feed itself.

Population Growth

Some Africans refuse to limit the size of their families. To them, having many children is viewed as a sign of prestige. Not surprisingly, Africa has the highest population growth rate in the world. Undeniably, this aggravates the problem of hunger. Some estimate the present population to be 553 million. By the year 2000, according to current trends, there could be an additional 324 million mouths to feed!

Does this mean that Africa is too small to grow enough food? No. Much suitable land is not being cultivated. India, with an even larger population and a fraction of the land, produces huge grain surpluses. "China," adds *The Star,* a newspaper of South Africa, "has 1000 million

people and yet, year after year, it produces a food surplus. . . . We suggest that Africa is starving because of misguided advice."

Wrong Advice?

Advice is one thing Africa is not short of. "If the hungry could eat words," said a BBC television commentary, "Africa would recover." Some 80,000 foreigners provide this service. "Advising Africa," states Timberlake, "has become a major industry, with European and North American consulting firms charging as much as $180,000 for a year of an expert's time."

These experts promote expensive farming methods that require high-yield seeds, chemicals, and heavy machinery. This has meant good business for overseas suppliers but has brought little benefit to Africa's rural poor. Attention is given first to farms that produce cash crops for export and then to farms that produce food that is sold in Africa's more affluent cities. Many of these projects have proved inefficient, and some have failed. Africa's climate, explains *Newsweek* magazine, "is often far too harsh for the high-yield seeds put to such good use in Asia." Also, Africa's soil is fragile, and crops are sometimes damaged by new farming methods.

Development Aid?

Overseas governments and aid agencies promote other expensive schemes. These likewise bring "benefits to their own companies and consultants and economies," states the development journal *People*. The schemes are attractive because they make African countries look modern, and they are backed by large loans of money. This helps some African governments to satisfy rich city dwellers whose support they need to stay in power. Thus, impressive hotels, universities, airports, highways, cars, and luxuries are seen in African cities while the countryside is neglected. Africa's rural peasants have a name for their rich city neighbors. In Swahili they call them the *Wabenzi,* meaning "the Mercedes-Benz tribe."

The humanitarian motive behind development aid is questioned by many. "Far from aid being charity," state the authors of the book *Famine: A Man-Made Disaster?,* "donor countries are getting a bargain. . . . The influence and economic opportunities that both West and East get from aid is cheap at the price." Development aid has contributed to Africa's staggering $175,000,000,000 debt.

"Two decades of 'development' brought Africa to the precipice in 1984," states Peter Gill in his book *A Year in the Death of Africa*. Development aid, according to Gill, has been "a sham." The ones who really need it, Africa's peasant farmers, have had little share. "Yet," explains the journal *The Ecologist,* "peasant farmers make up 75-80 per cent of the population of most African countries," being "the backbone of Africa's food production."

Food Aid?

Food surpluses have become a heavy burden to rich nations. Storage costs are high. In the article "A World Awash in Grain," the U.S. magazine *Foreign Affairs* lamented: "This is a strange and painful year to talk about grain. Our televisions bring us pictures of starving African children, but world grain stocks exceed 190 million tons —a record surplus."

Cheap surplus grain does not always benefit hungry Africans. Sometimes it ends up in the hands of greedy merchants, or recipient governments sell it at a profit to help balance their budgets. Dumping surplus grain in Africa has also weakened the posi-

Generally, African peasants are not helped to succeed as farmers

FAO photo

tion of rural farmers. "How can a local producer compete against free foreign food?" ask the authors of the book *Famine: A Man-Made Disaster?*

Traditional African-grown foods, such as millet and sorghum, are fast losing their popularity. Yet these withstand drought much better than other types of grain. City dwellers have developed a taste for wheat and rice—grains that are hard to grow in much of Africa's harsh climate. Some advisers promote a liking for overseas foods and thereby increase Africa's dependence on food imports.

Neglecting Peasant Farmers

Farmers like Idris, the Ethiopian quoted earlier, need seeds and simple farming equipment. Food aid alone is of limited value. As the Chinese proverb says: "Give a man a fish, and you feed him for a day. Teach a man to fish, and you feed him for a lifetime." Generally, African peasants are not helped to succeed as farmers, though there are exceptions in some African countries.

Since colonial times, Africa's best land has been devoted to the production of cash crops for export. In addition, large farming projects have been developed to provide food for the more affluent cities. Thus peasant farmers have often been pushed off good land and forced to subsist on land that is less productive. Left to fend for themselves, Africa's peasants have degraded fragile land by overcultivation and overgrazing, and by cutting down too many trees. Large portions of Africa are turning into desert.

Their position has also been undermined by price-fixing. To please city dwellers, many African governments keep the price of farm produce very low. This policy, according to the scientific journal *Nature,* has "contributed powerfully to the decline of agriculture, the hunger of the same urban populations and the dependence of potentially fertile Africa on food imports."

War

"Half a million Angolans have fled from their farms, driven off by the civil war," an African newspaper stated recently. Angola, unlike some other parts of Africa, enjoys good rainfall. Yet, in the fertile highlands tens of thousands depend on having a regular supply of emergency food flown to them.

It is no coincidence that African countries that suffer the most from famine are also involved in civil war. Though rains brought some relief to Ethiopia, Sudan, and Mozambique, civil war in those

countries continues to disrupt food production, and *millions* are starving.

Recently, the Independent Commission on International Humanitarian Issues, whose 25 members include representatives of five African countries, made this strong statement: "Armed conflicts and violence, in certain parts of Africa, add unnecessary bloodshed and turmoil to a tragic situation. . . . Priority is given to weapons of destruction, when people need hoes and seeds to grow food, clean water to drink and simple, low-cost preventive health programmes."

Africa is not solely to blame for this. In his book *A Year in the Death of Africa,* Peter Gill refers to the part outside governments play in "the militarization of Africa" and asks: "Whose arms manufacturers benefit from African arms races?" Nations of the East and the West promote African wars and benefit financially from them.

Needed—A Superhuman Aid Program

The question "Why can't Africa feed itself?" is controversial, and the answer is complex. Drought, the population explosion, aid policies, greed, the neglect of rural farmers, the degradation of land, and war are all among the causes, as cited by authorities. Of these, only drought can be called natural; the rest are man-made.

Actually, Africa's drought has served to highlight human limitations and selfishness. Man's inability to administer earth's affairs independently of his Creator, Jehovah God, is clear for all to see. As an ancient prophet said: "I well know, O Jehovah, that to earthling man his way does not belong. It does not belong to man who is walking even to direct his step."—Jeremiah 10:23.

This indisputable fact is recorded in the Bible. The Bible also foretold the present-day "food shortages," accompanied by war and human mismanagement of the earth. Happily, all of this points to the nearness of a superhuman aid program that will succeed in ending hunger not only in Africa but throughout the whole earth.—Luke 21:10, 11, 28-31; Revelation 6:3-8; 11:18; 21:1-5.

Hope for Victims of Famine

"MOST major famines since World War I have been caused in part by war and revolution," state Drs. Brown and Anderson in the book *Historical Catastrophes: Famines.*

This fact brings to mind an old prophetic vision popularly called the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse. Picking up this theme, an African newspaper reported: "The Four Horsemen are on the rampage in the unhappy land of Ethiopia." Few, though, realize the marvelous hope this vision contains.

Causes of Premature Death

The third horseman of the Apocalypse pictures famine. He rides with "a pair of scales in his hand," and a voice calls

out: "A whole day's wage for a loaf of bread." (Revelation 6:6, *Weymouth*). Ahead of him gallops a horseman picturing war—war so widespread and prolonged that he is said "to take peace away from the earth." These horsemen show the close connection between famine and war. —Revelation 6:3-6.

As to this connection, the book *Historical Catastrophes: Famines* comments: "Often food production is reduced because of a shortage of manpower . . . The fighting may cause the destruction of valuable crops. Trees and other plants that take many years to replace may be destroyed. Transportation and trade may be disrupted so that one region starves while another nearby region has surpluses of food." This was the tragic experience of millions during World Wars I and II, as well as between those wars, and it continues to affect millions today.

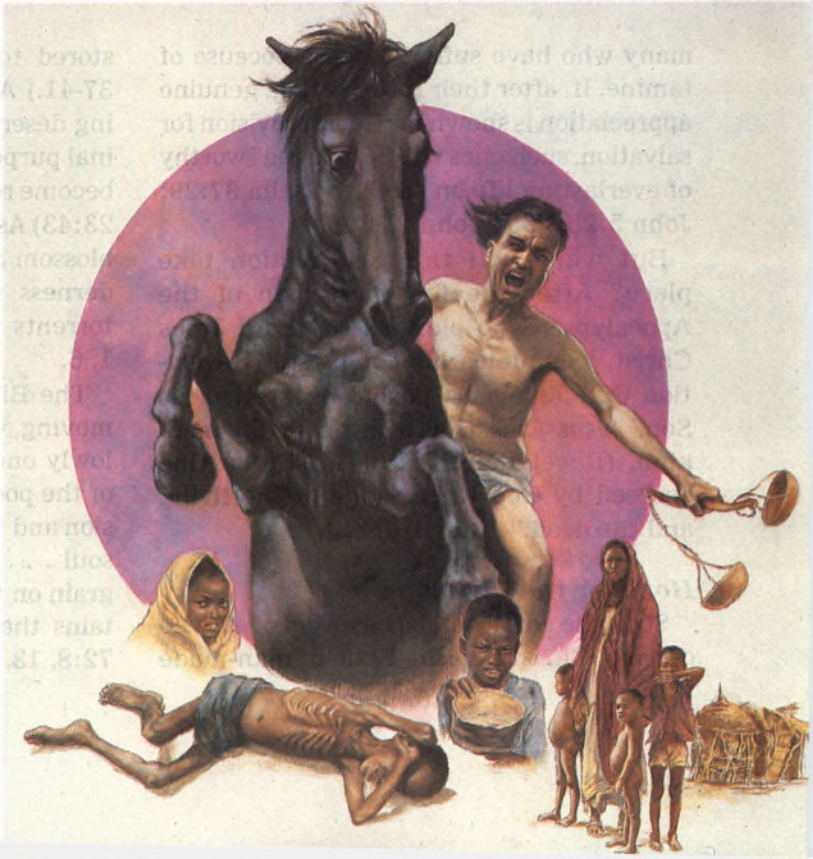
The two horsemen described above are followed by another named "Death." He pictures the premature deaths that have struck millions since the critical year 1914. War and "food shortage" top the list of foretold causes. (Revelation 6: 7, 8) Wars have claimed over 100,000,000 victims since 1914 and "food shortage" even more. "More people have died of hunger in the past five years than have been killed in all wars, revolutions and murders in the past 150 years," states the book *The Hunger Primer*.

Famine, the third horseman of Revelation, rides today in much of Africa

Hope for the Dead

Closely following horseman "Death" is something that spells hope. It is "Hades." Apparently, then, many victims of premature death are in Hades. What is meant by the word "Hades"? It is a transliteration of the Greek word *hai'des* used in the Bible, and it corresponds to the Hebrew transliteration "Sheol." (Compare Psalm 16:10 with Acts 2:31.) These terms refer to a place of unconscious rest, the common grave of mankind *from which there is hope of a resurrection.*—Ecclesiastes 9:5, 10; John 11:11-14.

Later, this assurance was recorded in the book of Revelation: "And I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne . . . And the sea gave up those dead in it, and *death and Hades gave up those dead in them,* and they were judged individually according to their deeds." (Revelation 20:12, 13) Thus a marvelous future awaits



Soon there will be a time of plenty for Africa and all the world

many who have suffered death because of famine. If, after their resurrection, genuine appreciation is shown for God's provision for salvation, such ones will be "judged" worthy of everlasting life on earth.—Psalm 37:29; John 5:28, 29; 1 John 2:1, 2.

But when will this resurrection take place? After the first horseman of the Apocalypse, who pictures the Lord Jesus Christ, 'completes his conquest.' (Revelation 6:2) Jehovah God has enthroned his Son, Jesus Christ, as King over all mankind. (Revelation 11:15) He "is the One decreed by God to be judge of the living and the dead."—Acts 10:42.

Hope for the Living

Soon the earth will be cleansed of all who oppose Christ's rule. Selfish man-made governments will be removed. (Daniel 2:44) "As regards the wicked, they will be cut off from the very earth," but those who submit to earth's heavenly King "will be left over in it." (Proverbs 2:21, 22) For such survivors, hunger will become a thing of the past.—Isaiah 25:6; 65:21, 22.

With his God-given superhuman power, Jesus Christ will ensure that earth's ecology is restored to perfect balance. (See Mark 4: 37-41.) Africa's Sahara and other advancing deserts will be driven back. God's original purpose for an earth-wide paradise will become reality. (Genesis 1:28; 2:7, 8; Luke 23:43) As foretold, "the desert plain will . . . blossom as the saffron. . . . For in the wilderness waters will have burst out, and torrents in the desert plain."—Isaiah 35: 1, 6.

The Bible describes Christ's rule in this moving way: "He will feel sorry for the lowly one and the poor one, and the souls of the poor ones he will save. From oppression and from violence he will redeem their soul . . . There will come to be plenty of grain on the earth; on the top of the mountains there will be an overflow."—Psalm 72:8, 13, 14, 16.

THE WORLD SINCE 1914

Part 1: 1920-1928

The Roaring Twenties —*Lull Before a Storm*

In 1983 *Awake!* published three articles dealing with World War I. We now undertake to cover in a series of eight articles some of the major events that have occurred since that war. These events have affected everyone alive, and they are of greater significance than many of us might imagine. We are sure you will enjoy reading THE WORLD SINCE 1914, part one of which follows.

MOST people "did not realize they were witnessing the turning point in modern history," says historian Hans Kohn about the effect of the first total war in mankind's history, World War I. He explains that even after the war was over, "few were aware of the profound revolution that had taken place in the minds of peoples all over the globe, or that this revolution would express itself one day soon in the reordering of national and international society." And why should they be? After all, the 1910's appeared to be ending on such a positive note.

Had there not been a formal end to the war with the signing in 1919 of the Treaty of Versailles at the Paris Peace Conference? Had this conference not provided for the establishment of a League of Nations designed to unite the world in peace? Was not its formal inauguration on January 16, 1920, reason enough to believe that another world war could now be avoided?

The Roaring Twenties—An Appropriate Name

The carefree world of the Gay Nineties (the name given the 1890's) was destroyed at the latest by the global nightmare that started in 1914. Now that the war was over, disillusioned people wanted to forget it as soon as possible. Particularly in Europe, the situation was marked by political confusion and economic chaos. Historian R. B. Gruver says that "many of the young saw themselves as survivors of a purposeless war to which they had been condemned by their elders. Because of this perspective, they began to

regard the values of the older generation as highly suspect. . . . They became preoccupied with material success and physical comfort."

And in the United States? "Most Americans," says Gruver, "seemed to believe that the value of goods and property would increase indefinitely and that the individual who bought something today could sell it tomorrow at a profit. . . . Speculation in stocks became widespread [as] barbers, stenographers, and elevator boys seized their opportunity to make money in an expanding economy."

On both sides of the Atlantic, the happy-go-lucky, materialistic spirit of the period was mirrored in its morals and attitudes, as well as in its music, of which Gruver says: "The popular music of the 1920s also expressed a rejection of tradition and a new emphasis on spontaneity, individualism, and sensuality." Jazz, the United States' contribution to 20th-century music, now came of age. It was a "music that represented a generation's disdain for restraint and respectability." This rejection of long-accepted standards of conduct and values caused author F. Scott Fitzgerald to refer to the 1920's as the Jazz Age. And as jazz rapidly gained worldwide acceptance, so did the pleasure-seeking attitude it represented.

There may be disagreement about who it was that first dubbed this postwar period the Roaring Twenties. But there can be little disagreement about the appropriateness of the name. One definition of "roaring" is: "Marked by prosperity . . . esp[ecially] of a temporary nature." That certainly fits the 1920's. They were years marked by prosperity and were characterized by an uninhibited search for pleasure, riches, and gratification. Long before the decade was over, however, danger signals indicated that the "good times" were of only temporary nature.

Gathering Clouds of Political Tension

Throughout the 1920's the League of Nations went about its delicate task of preserving peace. This was extremely difficult. Gerhard Schulz, Professor of Modern History at Germany's University of Tübingen, explains: "The initial political, moral and economic burdens of peace were aggravated by the fact that nationalism had survived the world war, in fact had even been rekindled." In Italy nationalism was rekindled in the form of fascism under Benito Mussolini, whereas in Japan it was in the form of increased military influence. In China communism was making inroads, after having consolidated its power in Russia following the October 1917 revolution. All this nationalism worked contrary to the interests of the League of Nations.

Meanwhile, in Germany the National Socialists, later to become known by the originally taunting nickname "Nazis," were gaining support. In 1928 their flamboyant leader, Adolf Hitler, spoke out for the rekindling of nationalism when he declared: "Our people must first of all be liberated from the hopeless confusion of internationalism, and be deliberately and systematically trained in fanatical nationalism. . . . There is only one right in the world, and this right lies in one's own strength."

In the United States nationalism appeared in the form of isolationism. More and more Americans were in favor of letting Europe stew in its own juice. They were also opposed to membership in "the evil thing with a holy name," as some called the League of Nations. Despite President Wilson's pleas, Congress bowed to the prevalent spirit of the times and voted in

The Bettmann Archive

Gaiety and wild antics characterized the Roaring Twenties

1920 against U.S. membership.

The intrinsic dangers hidden in these gathering clouds of political tension were magnified by the fact that they went largely unnoticed, or they were simply ignored. Nevertheless, they were building the basis for a storm more terrifying and destructive than any ever experienced before.

Stormy Winds of Social Change

The threatening political clouds were accompanied by stormy winds of social change. Attitudes and standards changed as people were caught up in a consumer market hitherto unknown. For the first time, modern conveniences like automobiles, radios, and refrigerators could be produced in sufficient quantities to supply everyone. To promote their sale the advertising industry rapidly developed into a billion-dollar business. It introduced easy credit and installment-plan buying and strove to convince people to buy things they possibly did not need, perhaps did not even want, and to do so with money they probably did not have.* In the radio it saw a powerful medium for achieving its goals, and it used it to the full.

All the newfangled contraptions now available, although saving time and energy, were not always appreciated; neither were the lazy, easygoing, spoiled tendencies that some people felt they fostered. One elderly lady, for example, was highly distressed upon discovering sliced bread at her grocery store for the first time. Shaking her head in disbelief, she muttered: "When people get too lazy to cut their own bread, you really wonder what the world is coming to." What would she think today?

But the situation was actually more serious than this. The ready availability of products that the advertising world made so appealing caused people's attention to shift slowly away from spiritual needs and values and to focus more upon material things. Organized religion had long failed to supply needed spiritual guidance and was helpless in preventing this drift away from God. An increasing number of people

* Half a century later Daniel Bell, a Harvard sociologist, said of this: "One of the most fiendish inventions of modern times was the installment plan. . . . It used to be work hard and then buy. Now you can get instant gratification through the use of credit."

began promoting human theories and philosophies. For example, as Gruver tells us, Sigmund Freud's "new science of psychoanalysis fascinated a generation that had become supremely interested in itself and in its own experiences."

Darwin's theory of evolution also helped erode belief in God and the Bible. Its effects upon world history should not be underestimated, as the book *Europa zwischen den Kriegen* (Europe Between the Wars) tells us. It calls Hitler a "genuine social Darwinist" who firmly believed that survival of the fittest is a law of nature. "His concept of war," explains its author, Hermann Graml, was that it "was a completely normal form of national intercourse necessary for strengthening ones own people, and which the true statesman would repeatedly try to bring about himself."

Of course, not everyone allowed the stormy winds of social change to weaken their faith in God and his Word. Some took advantage of new technology, for example the radio, to help defend their Creator. This was in sharp contrast with those who were using the radio waves solely in the pursuit of selfish commercial interests. In 1924 a group of Christians associated with the Watch Tower Society inaugurated WBBR, New York City's first noncommercial radio station. They continued to use it until 1957, at which time it was sold, after having served its purpose and the interests of God's Kingdom for over three decades.

The Roaring Twenties and "a Roaring Lion"

"Lovers of themselves, lovers of money, self-assuming, . . . lovers of pleasures rather than lovers of God, having a form of godly devotion but proving false to its power." A description of the Roar-

Other Items That Made the News

1919—Austria, France, the Netherlands, Sweden, Spain, and Yugoslavia adopt eight-hour workday

1920—In India Mohandas Gandhi gains support for his nonviolent protest movement

United States gives voting rights to women (at least 13 other countries were earlier, including New Zealand in 1893)

1921—Insulin for treating sugar diabetes is discovered

Ireland divided into Irish Free State and Northern Ireland

1922—Formal formation of the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics

1923—Over a hundred thousand killed in Tokyo earthquake

1924—Ten millionth Ford rolls from Detroit assembly line; its Model T selling for less than $300, U.S.

1925—First television attempts made in Britain, Germany, and the United States

1926—First successful liquid-fuel-rocket flight; rocket flies 184 feet (56 m) in 2.5 seconds

1927—Charles Lindbergh makes first nonstop solo flight from New York to Paris

Belgian astronomer Georges Lemaître formulates big bang theory of expanding universe

First Hollywood talkies produced

1928—Penicillin discovered

Walt Disney's first Mickey Mouse film

Kingsford Smith and companions make first trans-Pacific flight

J. F. Rutherford, president of the Watch Tower Society, used the radio from 1922 onward to announce God's Kingdom

ing Twenties? Yes, although the Christian apostle Paul wrote these words almost two thousand years ago. That the human weaknesses mentioned here became more pronounced in the money-oriented, pleasure-mad, spiritually weak society of the Roaring Twenties is no coincidence. It is an unmistakable indication that the world had moved into the period of time called by Paul "the last days." It also indicates that "the Devil . . . like a roaring lion" was stepping up his activity to turn people away from their Creator.—2 Timothy 3: 1-5; 1 Peter 5:8.

To counteract this, Christians associated with the Watch Tower Society began stepping up their own activity in defense of true religion. In 1922 they intensified an advertising campaign designed to publicize God's incoming Kingdom. In 1927, to facilitate the printing of Bible literature, they constructed their own factory in Brooklyn. The number of "advertisers" was still small, yet during 1928, as the Roaring Twenties were reaching their end, 44,080 of them were preaching God's Kingdom in 32 countries around the world. The "roaring lion" was powerless to prevent this.

Their message was everywhere the same: the folly of placing one's trust in materialism, human theories, or political schemes, like the League of Nations, instead of in God's Kingdom. *The Watch Tower* of July 15, 1926, boldly declared the League of Nations to be against God, saying: "Its approval by the clergymen, as a substitute for Messiah's kingdom, has caused gross darkness to settle down upon the peoples of the world. . . . The Lord foretold its birth, its short existence, and its everlasting end.—Revelation 17: 10, 11; Isaiah 8:9, 10."

These Christians were convinced that the storm of God's judgment day was fast approaching. But first, the Roaring Twenties were destined to end with another kind of storm, a financial storm, one that would strike with unexpected suddenness. It in turn would pave the way for a political storm that would give new meaning to the word "war." Read part two of this series in the next *Awake!:* "Worldwide Depression and On to War Again."

Gilead Students
—United Though Diverse

THEY come from seven nations as diverse as Finland, Italy, and Australia —24 people with 24 different personal histories. Yet, a common goal unites them—that of serving God in the foreign missionary field.

But how could such a diverse group of individuals be so united in purpose? For the answer, let's get better acquainted with some of the students of the 82nd class of the Watchtower Bible School of Gilead—a school devoted to training Jehovah's Witnesses for foreign missionary work.

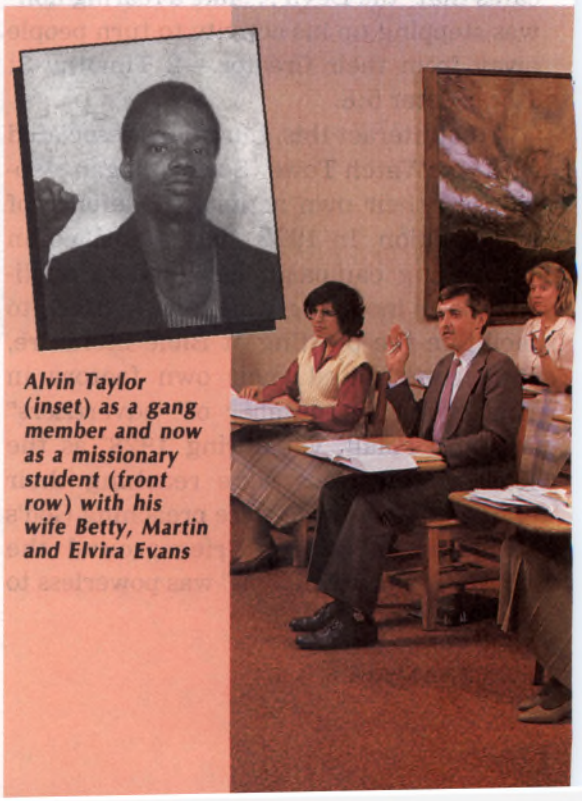
'I Learned to Mistrust Religion'

Although several of the students were raised as Witnesses, others became such more recently. Alvin describes his turbulent urban life as a black youth growing up in Chicago, U.S.A., this way: "I left home at 13 to live with my sister. Since I had more freedom away from home, I associated with young people involved with alcohol and drugs. For protection my friends and I formed a gang and experienced the violence and hard drugs that go along with such a life-style. Since adults, including a Baptist clergyman, sold the illegal drugs to us, I learned to mistrust older people and religion. So when my sister began studying the Bible with Jehovah's Witnesses, I didn't trust them either.

"A turning point in my thinking came when I got involved with a racist organization. They realized that we needed better government. They tried to organize all black people and to unite all the gangs against white people. Of course, this would be accomplished through violent means. I began to realize that this was not the answer to man's problems.

"So I looked to religion for the answer. I tried the Seventh-Day Adventists, to my disappointment. I finally agreed to study the Bible with the Witnesses. A year later I was baptized."

Alvin recalls an experience he had while preaching from house to house: "I called at the house of two gang leaders who were former enemies of mine. Before learning the truth, I had fought with them. Our gang had



Alvin Taylor (inset) as a gang member and now as a missionary student (front row) with his wife Betty, Martin and Elvira Evans

returned to their neighborhood and had shot out the windows of their house with guns. Later they had retaliated by shooting two of my partners as we were coming out of a store. Now here I was standing at their door with the Kingdom message. On seeing me, they began laughing in disbelief. I was relieved that they no longer viewed me as a threat.

"I'm thankful that Jehovah has a teaching program that reached even into my neighborhood and into my heart. Now, my wife Betty and I can devote our lives to Jehovah's service and use that teaching program in the missionary field to help others."

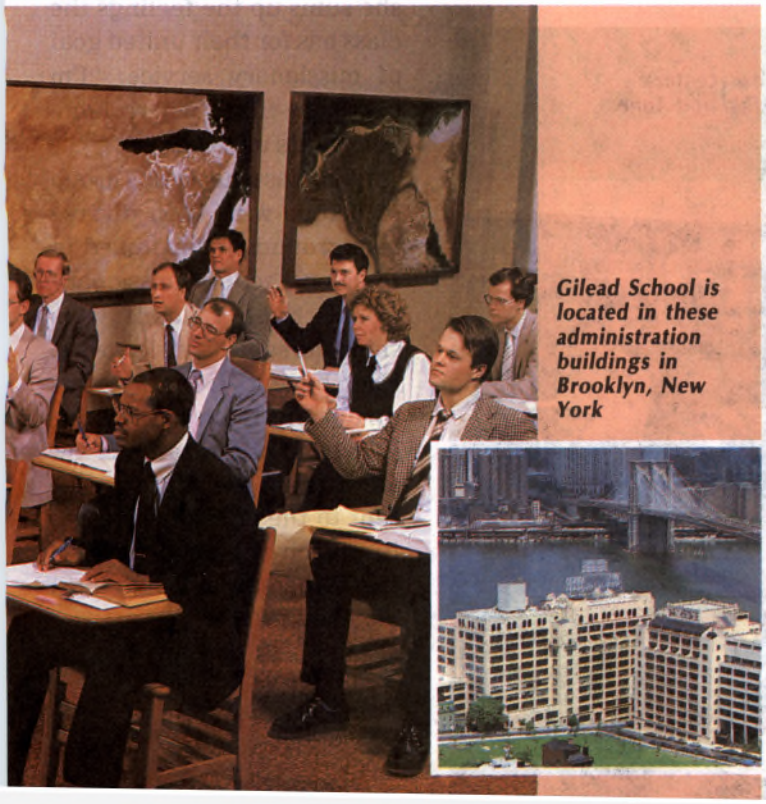
'This Is the Life for Us'

Martin traveled around the world twice with the British Merchant Navy before settling again in England, his native country. What did his experience teach him? "I had my eyes opened to reality. I wondered if the world's problems could ever be worked out. I discussed with my prospective wife Elvira ways in which we might be able to do something." He continues: "Then, one rainy afternoon, a young Witness called at my door. He showed me from the Bible that we are living in the last days. I was astounded. I started studying the Bible and attending Christian meetings at once. Eventually, we were both baptized. It was the best thing we ever did!"

But why choose the full-time ministry rather than pursue a full-time secular career? Elvira answers: "We realized soon enough that money doesn't bring happiness. Martin is a skilled baker, so he could work part-time. There was no doubt about it—the ministry was the life for us."

Heikki, from Finland, relates a similar experience: "I was 16 years old when my classmate told me what he had learned from the Bible. So I began studying with Jehovah's Witnesses too. However, my father arranged for several Lutheran ministers to try to readjust my thinking. After various meetings with these clergymen, they became frustrated. I was more proficient at explaining the Scriptures than they were. They never once opened the Bible."

A few years later Heikki began serving Jehovah as a full-time pioneer minister. There were some difficult decisions for him to make. He explains: "Studying architecture in college made me go into debt. After two years I quit the studies and eventually began pioneering. I had no job, no training for work but debts to be paid.



Gilead School is located in these administration buildings in Brooklyn, New York

However, Jehovah always provided the necessities."

But why did Heikki and his wife Anne choose the missionary work? Anne replies: "As we pioneered we learned that it was good to let Jehovah choose our assignment. Moreover, we have good health, and we have no family responsibilities that prevent us."

Before Mats learned about the truth from God's Word, he was an atheist and had strong communist leanings in his native country of Sweden. Mats explains: "Religion presented to me a greedy and cruel god because of its hellfire teaching and blessing of wars. I didn't want to be in contact with such a god, so politics was the only hope in my mind. However, my uncle repeatedly invited me to his home. I was reluctant to go because I knew he was some kind of Christian.

"However, on one occasion while visiting him, I preached to him about my political ideals. He calmly listened and then showed me evidence of Bible truth. He began an organized study of the Bible with me. Soon I made the decision to resign from the army. My army superiors were shocked. They even sent a minister to talk to me. I asked the minister if he felt my decision was Scriptural. After a long pause he said, 'Yes.' Ten months later I was baptized."

Mats spent six years in northern Sweden near the Arctic Circle in the pioneer work. And how does he feel about the full-time ministry and the missionary work? "I have never had any thought of quitting. I am completely free to move anywhere in the world. It was only natural for me to apply for Gilead School."

Their United Goal

Terry and Lori are a married couple from the United States. They exemplify the diversity of the 82nd class of Gilead. Terry learned the truth as a young man when a fellow employee witnessed to him on the job. In contrast, Lori represents the fourth generation of Witnesses in her family. Perhaps she sums up the feelings the class has for their united goal of missionary service: "I'm very sure this is where Jehovah wants us to be."

What has caused this group of people with such diverse backgrounds to be unified in their one goal of missionary work? Each student worships the same God, Jehovah. Each benefits from the same direction from Jehovah's Word and organization. Now all of them are willing to be sent to the ends of the earth to preach the good news of the Kingdom.—Isaiah 6:8; Matthew 24:14.

Gilead library with Terry (right) and Lori (center) Gish studying at the first table and Heikki and Anne Soumalainen (behind right)

Young People Ask...

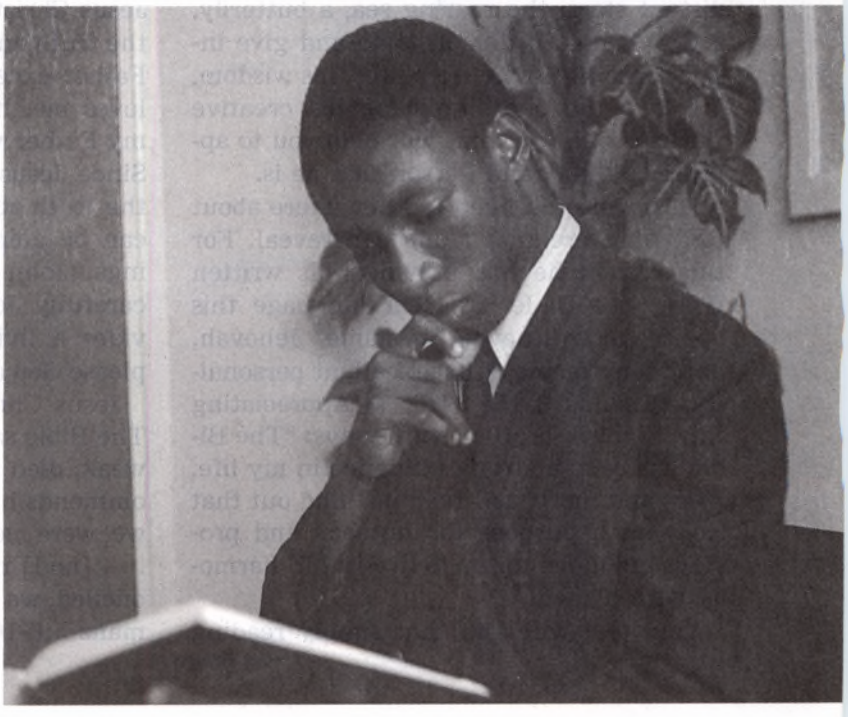
How Can I Be God's Friend?

"SOME youths worship God because others around them do it," observes a Nigerian student named Yemisi. She adds: "But they do not know him or regard him as a person." Yemisi therefore believes that because their whole approach to the matter is wrong, people often fail to become God's friend.

Whether you agree with her or not, many youths are skeptical about the possibility of having any relationship with God —much less being his friend. Some have been put off by religions that make God seem distant and aloof. Yet others have tried to get close to God via drugs, transcendental meditation, or the occult—and have failed.

It would be a mistake, though, to conclude that God is so far removed from us that there is no way of approaching him. After all, who gave birds their happy songs and the trees and flowers their delightful colors? Who made the beautiful valleys, the majestic mountains, the glorious sunlight, and your wonderful body and mind? Who is the source of the many fine abilities that people have? Is it not our Creator?

Well, then, surely this shows that he is keenly interested in us. Does it therefore seem reasonable that he would distance himself from us, make himself unapproachable? On the contrary, the Bible assures us that "he is not far off from each one of us" and invites us to seek his friendship.—Acts 17:27.



Studying the Bible will give you an intimate knowledge of Jehovah

But how can you do that? And how would having God's friendship benefit you?

What God Requires

The Creator already has a certain link with everyone by virtue of giving "to all persons life and breath." (Acts 17:25) However, being a friend of God is a far closer tie than merely being a creature of God. A prerequisite for enjoying such a favored relationship is *making the right approach*. Explains the Bible: "He that approaches God must believe that he is and that he becomes the rewarder of those earnestly seeking him."—Hebrews 11:6.

"Earnestly seeking" God involves getting to know him as a Person. How can you do that? With good logic, the Bible further says that "what may be known about God is manifest . . . His invisible qualities . . . [are] perceived by the things made, even his eternal power and Godship." (Romans 1:19-28) The things made by God—the distant stars, the roaring sea, a butterfly, a tiny leaf—all demonstrate and give insight into his immense power, his wisdom, his love. So contemplating his creative works is one way that will help you to appreciate the Grand Person that he is.

However, you need to know more about God than creation alone can reveal. For this reason he has provided his written Word, the Bible. In clear language this book makes known his name, Jehovah, and many facets of his excellent personality. (Exodus 3:15; 34:6, 7) Appreciating this, Yemisi's brother Kunle says: "The Bible has been a strong influence in my life. More and more, as I read it, I find out that God has a purpose for humans and provides guidance for us to live in full harmony with his will."

You, too, will find that simply reading the Bible is a very pleasing experience. A careful study of it will be even more rewarding, as Kunle has found. God's Word says: "If you will receive my sayings and treasure up my own commandments with yourself, . . . you will understand the fear of Jehovah, and you will find the very knowledge of God."—Proverbs 2:1, 5.

Since these sayings of Jehovah are found in the Bible, it is worth your while to take the time to read it. Do not be discouraged by its size. It is really made up of 66 small books that are full of interesting history, biographies, prophecies, doctrines, and counsel on relations with fellow humans and with God. By reading for just a few minutes every day, you can dig into this wealth of knowledge that will draw you close to your Creator.

God's Avenue of Friendship

Merely learning about God, however, is not enough. You must also avail yourself of God's avenue of friendship with him. Jesus Christ explains: "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me . . . If anyone loves me, he will observe my word, and my Father will love him." (John 14:6, 23) Since Jesus is "the truth," knowledge of the truth about God and his requirements can be gained by studying Jesus' teachings. (John 1:8; 17:26) In addition, study carefully Jesus' life course, for this provides a living demonstration of how to please God and enjoy friendship with Him.

Jesus Christ, though, is also "the life." The Bible says: "Christ, while we were yet weak, died for ungodly men . . . God recommends his own love to us in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us . . . [and] now that we have become reconciled, we shall be saved by his life." (Romans 5:6-10) Without Christ, there could

be no friendship with God, for we are born as sinners. However, Jesus' blood, shed in sacrifice, "cleanses us from all sin" and 'reconciles' us, puts us back on friendly terms, with God. This, in turn, opens up for us the prospect of everlasting life! (1 John 1:7; John 17:3) Faith in Jesus Christ as "the life" is therefore essential to our enjoying God's friendship.

Make Sure of God's Friendship

God, through Jesus, has already taken the initiative toward friendship with you. But what should be your response? As you learn more about him and grow in appreciation of his goodness, you should be moved to love him and to want to serve him. You should delight in telling others about your heavenly Friend.—Romans 10:10.

Remember, though: Others can point out to you the way to be God's friend, but you yourself have to take the initiative! Jehovah does not compel you. He recognizes you as an individual and wants you to come to him freely. As a young woman named Omolara put it: "I am grateful to my parents for helping me to know Jehovah; but it is up to me to find out whether I really want to serve God and practice good or not."

So put forth effort. As you come to know God, let your life be molded by God's Word rather than by the world. In time you will develop a "new personality which [is] created according to God's will." This means that your mental inclination will now begin to harmonize with God's thinking and will move you to conform closer to his righteous standards.—Ephesians 4: 20-24; Colossians 3:10; 1 John 2:3, 4.

All of this may sound quite difficult at first. However, one of the benefits of knowing Jehovah and being known by him is that you can approach him in prayer and experience his help and direction in your life. As Omolara says: "We know that, in times of grief or when we have weighty decisions to make, God is there to help us. He is always ready to do something for us." (1 John 5:14, 15) Further help will come from close association with those who are already Jehovah's friends. Say some young ones who are Jehovah's Witnesses:

"I have found that close association with others who love Jehovah helps me to stay close to him."—Omolara.

"Congregation meetings have helped me to understand the Bible and how to live in harmony with Jehovah's ways."—Kunle.

"Association with other Witnesses and sharing in meetings has helped me to maintain a good relationship with Jehovah."—Ifeyabo.

You, too, can have the happiness that these and many other young people enjoy. Yes, 'exult in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation.' (Romans 5: 8-11) You will receive the reward God gives to his friends—everlasting life. —John 3:16.

In Our Next Issue

- *Why Is the Vatican Worried?*
- *How Knowing Greek Led Me to Know God*
- *Forests in the Sea*

What Can You Do When an Earthquake Strikes?

By "Awake!" correspondent in Greece

HOW long does it take for a city to be destroyed by an earthquake? Actually, an astoundingly short time. In the case of Kalamata, a city at the very south of mainland Greece, it took less than five seconds.

A quake with a magnitude of 6.8 on the Richter scale turned this coastal city into a ruin. Of 21,000 buildings affected by the quake, 6,930 could be repaired, 13,440 were declared to be uninhabitable, and 630 were total ruins. The nearby village of Eleochori was almost totally destroyed, with 117 of its 125 houses collapsed or severely damaged. The number of injured ran into the hundreds, yet only some 20 persons died. Why was that? What saved so many lives?

Survivors Tell Their Story

"It was like an explosion, as if dynamite was exploding under the house. And I heard a curious roar," one eyewitness told *Awake!* She added: "I felt as if I were falling into a gulf. I called out to my husband, 'George, hurry, take the children out!' Then the lights went out. I grabbed one child, and George grabbed the other, and we rushed down the stairs to the street. There was dust everywhere. Almost all the houses in our neighborhood crumbled. Yet no one was killed because most people were in the streets."

That last remark is a clue to safety during an earthquake—get out of the buildings and into open areas. In Kalamata the quake struck on Saturday at about 8:20 p.m. At that time many of the people were already in the streets. In fact, crowds were down at the docks watching the inauguration of a new ferry service to Crete. Without a doubt that fortuitous circumstance saved many lives.

Another eyewitness, Mr. Karalekas, explained: "I have lived through many earthquakes, but this was something altogether different. It was terrible. It was like being on a ship in a storm, and the rolling motion hindered your walking. As soon as I felt it, I went to stand beneath the doorframe and shouted to the children to do the same. For the moment, that would provide some protection. Then, as soon as I could, I rushed the family downstairs into the courtyard. Fortunately, my house did not crumble."

As a temporary safety measure, a solid doorframe can be a lifesaver. But as in this case, a quick exit to an open area is the best policy.

Government Aid —Rapid and Good

Official reaction to the disaster was immediate, and massive aid was sent to the region. Thousands of field tents were soon erected in open areas to shelter the homeless families. Improvised plumbing installations were set up to supply water to the tent "towns." According to one newspaper report, the defense minister, Ioannis Haralambopoulos, was on the scene directing

the rescue work. Aid was also offered by foreign governments. One Greek shipping magnate brought his luxury cruiser *Marianna* to Kalamata harbor and offered shelter and provisions to more than a thousand people.

Jehovah's Witnesses also took immediate steps to cover the needs of their brothers and other interested persons in Kalamata. Provisions were sent from nearby congregations and from Athens by train. Although some of the Witnesses lost their homes and other property, they showed that they had not lost their appreciation for spiritual values. It was too dangerous to use their meeting place in town, so they set up a tent "Kingdom Hall" a few miles out of town for their Sunday meetings. In addition four smaller tents were erected in town for the mid-week Bible study meetings. In spite of the inconvenience, the attendance exceeded 100 percent of the congregation.

The Witnesses suffered no injuries or deaths during this disaster. However, we recognize that "time and unforeseen occurrence" affect people indiscriminately. (Ecclesiastes 9:11; Acts 27:13-20, 41-44) On other occasions, Witnesses have been injured and killed in disasters and accidents. Therefore, it is always wise to be prepared to the degree possible for those natural disasters—such as floods and earthquakes—that might be common to certain areas. Knowing how to act in such circumstances is the course of wisdom. As the Bible counsels: "A shrewd man sees trouble coming and lies low; the simple walk into it and pay the penalty."—Proverbs 27:12, *The New English Bible*.

Seven persons died here, but a ten-day-old baby was rescued

A temporary tent installation to house the homeless

The tent "Kingdom Hall" set up outside Kalamata

Fast Work Far North!

By "Awake!" correspondent in Norway

"JUST fantastic. That is the only expression we can find that describes what Jehovah's Witnesses did last weekend."

Thus the Norwegian newspaper Finnmarken begins a report on the building of a Kingdom Hall, a meeting place for the congregation of Jehovah's Witnesses, in the small town of Kirkenes up in northern Norway last summer. What was so fantastic about it?

The 2,258-square-foot (210 sq m) building, seating some 100 persons, was constructed in three days by over 200 volunteer workers from five nations. The building had to be carefully put together and well insulated because Kirkenes is situated in the cold area about 217 miles (349 km) north of the Arctic Circle where the borders of Norway, Finland, and Russia meet. How did this building work come about?

It began with the small congregation of about 30 members inquiring of the local authorities about the possibility of purchasing a lot. First they were told that no area was available for such a purpose. But being favorably inclined toward the project, the authorities rezoned a whole area for the building of meeting places, and the like. The three-day construction schedule was set for Friday, June 27, through Sunday, June 29, 1986.

International Cooperation

The foundation walls were already completed, and the evening before the work was to be started the materials were on hand at the site. But what about the workers? In addition to members from the local congregation, fellow Witnesses had arrived from far and near. Entire families had come by car, bringing their trailers. A busload of volunteers had come from the Oslo area in southern Norway. It included Witnesses from Denmark, the United States, and Canada. A bus with 44 Finnish friends had also arrived. Altogether over 200 were there.

The same evening all the workers gathered for an information meeting in the nearby Sports House, which the congregation had rented for the construction period. All information given was translated into Finnish and English. The loving and cooperative spirit that would characterize the whole construction work was already felt.

Friday at 7:00 a.m. a Bible text for the day was discussed in Norwegian and Finnish. After prayer and breakfast everybody got ready for work. At eight o'clock sharp, the first hammer strokes were heard. By 9:45 a.m. five of the six walls were up. Then the scaffolding started. One hour later the first roof truss was put into place.

That morning a man in the neighborhood had noticed the crowd outside his window. He went into the kitchen, made himself a cup of coffee and a sandwich, returned to the window, and almost dropped his cup when he saw a building already taking form.

Under the direction of craftsmen—each assigned a certain task—the work progressed rapidly. Some worked till late in the night finishing the roof boarding. So far north the sun is up 24 hours a day that time of year, guaranteeing sufficient light. Inside, the work of putting plaster boards on the walls and ceiling was finished.

Sign language solved most of the language problems. It was found that a lot can be said that way. And when insufficient, those of the

Finnish friends who knew English or Swedish —similar to Norwegian—acted as interpreters. Thus breaking through the language barriers added to the feeling of unity.

Helpful Townspeople

Helpful townspeople contributed to the speeding up of the work. When, for example, the Witnesses asked at a lumber merchant's and at an electrical supply store if somebody would mind opening if supplies were needed during the weekend, they were given the keys and told to list whatever they took and return supplies not used.

The town gardener was asked on Saturday evening if flowers could be bought for the flower beds. Although having guests, the gardener—wearing a suit and tie—came over and planted the flowers himself. "This is the town's gift to your building," he said.

The electrical inspector came on Saturday. He astounded the workers by asking if he could come back the next day to connect the power. It usually takes weeks to get this done, and prior to this, it had never been done on a Sunday. After the power was on and the Witnesses had thanked the people from the power company for coming, the inspector said: "I would have come at five this morning if necessary. Something would be wrong with a person who would not want to help with a project like this. This is a once-in-a-lifetime experience."

Completing the Work

When Sunday arrived, the exterior of the building was almost finished and the trees were planted. By 9:00 a.m. the grass for the lawn was sown.

Inside, the workers painted, papered, laid floor covering, and did other finishing work. Commenting on the tidiness of the site, a newspaper wrote: "We all know what a building site looks like—plastic, stubs, lots of trash lying around. But when Jehovah's Witnesses were building their Kingdom Hall, not one single piece of wood or plastic messed up the place."

At 6:00 p.m. the hall was finished, except for some plumbing and electrical installations. In addition to the main hall, the building contained a multipurpose room, a library, a storage room, a lounge, and rest rooms.

At 7:00 p.m. the first meeting was held, with 250 present. A Bible study based on a Watchtower article was held, and a video recording of the work was shown. All expressed appreciation for the privilege of working together in helping their Christian brothers to build a place of worship so fast in the far north.

Different stages of the Kingdom Hall construction from Friday to Saturday

What Happens to the Soul After Death?

JAMES KIDD, a recluse miner, often puzzled over the subject: 'Do I really have a soul living as part of me?' Obsessed with proving his lifelong suspicion, Mr. Kidd left behind a small fortune of nearly $300,000, stating in his will that the money was to be used in "research for some scientific proof of a soul of a human body which leaves at death."

Unlike Mr. Kidd, you may not be very interested in actually proving that you have a soul that will survive your death. But in the back of your mind, you may believe it. Millions today do because of religious teachings, reports of so-called life-after-death experiences, or their own personal feelings.

Interestingly, though, an *Awake!* survey of those who believe in the immortality of the soul revealed that all answered the following question in the same way: "Do you think the soul breathes to stay alive?" "No," they said.

A Soul Breathes

In Genesis chapter 2, verse 7, the thrilling account of the creation of man begins: "And Jehovah God proceeded to form the man out of dust from the ground."

Picture the miracle taking place! From the elements of the very earth are formed 206 bones, complex organs, over 600 muscles, and the amazing brain, all surrounded by a garment of skin, to form a perfect specimen of a man. Yet, one more "ingredient" is needed to complete the fascinating act of creation: something to animate and bring this body to life. God then began "to blow into his nostrils the breath of life." At this point, introducing air (with its oxygen), God simultaneously animated millions of cells in the physical body with spirit, or life force. Now alive, this man named Adam inhaled and exhaled about 14 times a minute, or over 20,000 times a day! Concluding verse 7,

All of these are souls

notice that the now breathing, living man is called "a living soul."

This outcome may be likened to the magazine you are now reading. Paper, inks, and glue make up this journal. But separately these items are uninteresting. Only if they are combined will you have a magazine. So the physical body, the breath, and the life-force are of little value without one another. But combined, they make up a living soul. Thus, Adam "came to be" a living soul.

Since nothing is said to imply that the first man was implanted with a soul or received it, we must ask: If the soul "came to be" only after breathing began, why conclude that it continues to live when a person stops breathing and dies? There is no mistaking this fact: Breathing is of do-or-die importance to a soul.

Thus, Bible writers often use the word "soul" as a synonym for a breathing person. For example, notice what happened to the enemies of God's people in the land of Canaan. God's people "went striking every *soul* that was in it [the land] with the edge of the sword, devoting them to destruction. No *breathing thing* at all was left over." (Joshua 11:11) Every soul was a breathing thing. Likewise, every breathing thing was a soul. It was a fleshly, visible, breathing human that died, not an unseen spirit entity.

Are All Living Creatures Souls?

While man is distinct from animals, it is not because of his being a soul. When God let loose devastating floodwaters in Noah's day, 'all flesh, flying creatures, domestic animals, wild beasts, all the swarms, and mankind, everything in which the breath of the force of life was active in its nostrils died.' Those same kinds of animals are called "living souls" in the creation account.—Genesis 7:21, 22; 1:24.

As the Bible shows, 'all flesh, all the swarms, and mankind' need air and depend on the function of their varied respiratory systems to continue living on as souls. When this life-sustaining process stops, a soul returns to the dust. The soul—person or animal—becomes unconscious and nonexistent. —Genesis 3:19; Psalm 146:4.

A Soul Can Live Forever!

Since the belief that a soul lives after death is so widespread, it is evident that humans instinctively feel that there must be more to life than what they now experience. These feelings are quite natural, for the Bible says that God "has put eternity into man's mind." (Ecclesiastes 3:11, *Revised Standard Version*) For many, that desire for "eternity," or living forever, will actually be realized. First, something needs to be corrected—the imperfection and sin that cause the human soul to die. (Romans 5:12) Once these are eliminated, the human body sustained by God can live forever.—Revelation 21:3, 4.

But what hope is there for those already dead? The research society named as beneficiary of Mr. Kidd's fortune did not find the answer. After four years of study, they could not prove that a human soul is a separate part of a human that leaves the body at death. But how positive the hope in the Bible! The promise of dead souls being brought back to human life on earth, yes resurrected, is assured.—John 5:28, 29; Acts 24:15; Hebrews 6:18.

God's purpose for the human soul will then be learned by those resurrected individuals. And for those now applying God's Word, who are "the sort that have faith to the preserving alive of the soul," the breathing process need never stop!—Hebrews 10:39.

From Our Readers

Cancer—Can You Beat It?

I would like to thank you for your articles on "Cancer—Can You Beat It?" (October 8, 1986) I had no idea when I received that magazine that two weeks later I would be diagnosed as having this "fearful" disease. But I am young and had an early diagnosis, all of which accounts for my 90% chance of complete recovery. Thanks to your articles, I understood a lot more about cancer than I probably ever would have, and I even knew what questions to ask my doctors.

L. F., United States

Thank you so much for your articles on cancer. I'm sure there are many who are suffering from this terrible disease who will find the articles encouraging. It's nice to read correct information on the subject for a change. The newspapers hardly ever print success stories of the thousands who have beaten cancer, but the odd celebrity who becomes its victim makes headline news. This is very damaging to sufferers because we live on hope.

J. W., England

How refreshing and sustaining the article was on cancer. When I got the magazine, it was only two days after visiting a dear friend in the hospital who had to have a leg amputated because of cancer. I wanted to have some encouraging words when I visited him again. Your articles had all that I needed, and I recorded them on tape so that he could listen to it in bed. All the material is interesting, but I was particularly impressed with the material on page 12 under the heading "Facing Up to Cancer Treatment."

A. M., Dominican Republic

Overcoming Stuttering

I can only heartily agree with the comments made in the article "Understanding the Stutterer's Challenge." (November 8, 1986) I myself have long had to struggle with this speech defect. I would like to add that stutterers should *always* be allowed to finish saying what they have started to say, regardless of how long it takes. It has always made me angry when the person I was speaking to finished my sentences for me, more often than not ending up saying things for me that I had not meant to say. This is particularly important when the stutterer is a child. Since becoming one of Jehovah's Witnesses, I have made great progress in overcoming stuttering. Speaking to others in the preaching work forces me to concentrate on their problems and their thoughts, and I have no time to worry about my speech problem. This has been helpful.

B. Z., Federal Republic of Germany

I have benefited greatly from the article "Understanding the Stutterer's Challenge." It helped me to understand my child, who has been stuttering since the age of six. I hope that all parents of such children will read this article because it really helps us to communicate with our children. I do encourage other parents not to stop their children when they are trying to speak.

J. K., Malta

I want to thank you for the article on stuttering. It has helped me to see that other people also have this problem. It seems unbelievable, but I am recovering from my stuttering by following a treatment that is called "Rhythm against stuttering." A device is used that transmits pulsations by means of an earphone. These serve as a guide for pronouncing the words, syllable by syllable.

D. C., Spain

Watching the World

Heart-Disease Risk

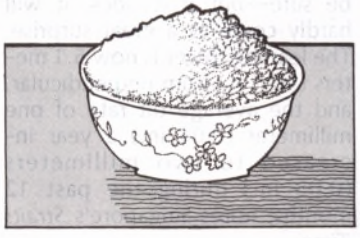
In an eight-year study, involving more than 350,000 men between the ages of 35 and 57, cholesterol was found to increase the risk of premature death of middle-aged men by 80 percent. A report published in a special issue of *The Journal of the American Medical Association* revealed that four out of five middle-aged American men could suffer heart disease and die prematurely because of even moderate levels of cholesterol in the blood. Such danger was said to be present even in men who do not have high blood pressure and who do not smoke. After the data was analyzed, Dr. Jeremiah Stamler, a cardiologist affiliated with Northwestern University, explained that "the numbers speak rather clearly for themselves. The optimal level is 180, and 80 percent of this population is over 180." Previous studies estimated that each percentage point of cholesterol reduction will result in a 2-percent drop in heart disease.

Teenage Victims

A U.S. Justice Department study has revealed that teenagers are twice as likely to be victimized by violent crimes as are adults. From 1982 through 1984, youths between the ages of 12 and 19 were victims of approximately 1.8 million violent crimes and 3.7 million thefts each year. The Bureau of Justice Statistics director, Steven Schlesinger, pointed out that roughly one third of all violent crimes and 83 percent of the thefts affecting those in their early teens took place at school. Similarly, 42 percent of the thefts and 14 percent of the violent crimes experienced by older teenagers occurred at school. The study revealed that relatives or casual acquaintances were usually responsible for the attacks.

Better Use for Rice

The leaders of the Lutheran Church parish in Kirchenlamitz, Bavaria, recently forbade the scattering of rice at weddings. Ac-



cording to the German newspaper *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, they gave three reasons for the prohibition: First, a Christian church is no place to practice a fertility rite stemming from the Far East. Second, in view of widespread hunger in the world, food should not be thoughtlessly wasted on the ground. Third, the church lady, who has to sweep up all the rice, is 80 years of age.

'Super Glued' Retinas

Using a "medical-grade variation of commercial 'super glues,'" scientists have been able to reattach loose or torn retinas successfully, reports *The Times* of London. By adding a chemical that slows the hardening process, scientists have modified the adhesive so that it does not cause the retina to stick to the injector. Speaking at a recent seminar sponsored by Research to Prevent Blindness, Dr. Brooks McCuen claimed success for 12 out of 17 blind patients treated by this new technique. Although the technique is still experimental, half the successful operations restored enough vision "for normal life." Compared with laser spot-welding and the use of freezing probes, reattaching the retina with 'super glue' produces bonds to the eye that are twice as strong.

Bicycle Dangers

Facial injuries caused by bicycle accidents send more children in the United States to the hospital emergency room than any other sport, reports *American Health*. A study by the Consumer

Product Safety Commission has confirmed that facial injuries in one year amounted to 67,075 from the use of bikes, followed by 46,527 due to falls from stairs, 30,063 from playing baseball, and 5,696 from playing football. After the age of five, knocked-out teeth as well as injuries to the cheek, eye sockets, upper jaw, and nose increase. The use of protection for the head and face is recommended for reducing the number of such injuries.

Drinking and Driving

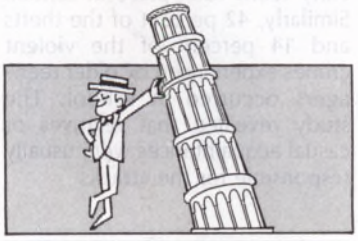
Since 1980, automobile accidents have caused the majority of deaths in Mexico City, claims Raúl Carrillo Silva, director of accident prevention and health attention during disasters. He said that in 1973, auto accidents caused 28,313 deaths, but in 1983, more than 50,000 such accident-related deaths were registered. Only 5 percent of the tragedies were due to environmental problems, such as fog, rain, hail, lack of proper road signs, and roads under repair. Fifteen percent were due to mechanical failure. However, 80 percent were due to human error, basically caused by drunk driving, according to Mexico City's *El Universal.*

Killer Fleas

Leading authorities on fleas claim that common cat fleas are potential killers. New research suggests that their ability to carry and transmit disease has been seriously underestimated, notes *The Times* of London. The rodent diseases of bubonic plague and murine typhus are believed to be passed on to humans by fleas from infected animals, claims Dr. Bernice Williams of the Medical Entomology Centre at Cambridge University. Also, contrary to the belief that an infested cat or dog is not significantly affected by the fleas, Williams indicates that numerous ills are caused by them. Until American scientists discovered the flea's ability to absorb dangerous microorganisms, fleas were believed to be relatively harmless.

Heading for a Fall

Pisa's famous bell tower has been leaning for most of its 813 years. During that time it has



withstood numerous vibrations and earthquake tremors with "considerable elasticity," reports Professor Geri Gero of the University of Pisa. Will it ever fall? According to Gero, nobody can be sure—but if it does, it will hardly come as a great surprise. The leaning tower is now 5.1 meters (16.7 ft) from perpendicular, and the average tilt rate of one millimeter (0.04 in.) a year increased to two millimeters (0.08 in.) during the past 12 months, notes Singapore's *Straits Times.*

"Bloodless Apocalypse"

Figures relating to the first five months of 1986 reveal that, for the first time, the population growth in Italy is below zero. The reason? More people are dying than are being born. From January to May 1986, 10.4 persons per thousand died, while only 9.5 babies per thousand were born —a growth rate of -0.9. This means that for every 10 couples 14 babies were born—6 persons fewer than the 20 parents who generated them. Commenting on the phenomenon, *Il Corriere della Sera,* a Milan daily, stated: "Our small, bloodless apocalypse is already under way: we are becoming fewer and older, not because of the Bomb or the [Space] Shield, but because of our own free will. Because we don't want children." Some of the reasons suggested for the population decrease, according to *Il Messaggero,* a Rome newspaper, were difficulties of modern living and "not enough faith in ourselves and in our future."

Shocked Tigers

An increasing number of tiger attacks on humans have prompted authorities in India to find a more effective means of protection against the dangerous man-eaters. In a 1,600 square mile (4,100 sq km) area known as the Sunderbans, officials have been testing lifelike dummies that have been charged with 230 volts of electricity, reports *The Economist.* When a tiger attacks a dummy dressed to appear like a local villager, it receives a convulsive shock. Mr. Pranabes Sanyal, field director of the Sunderbans tiger reserve, says that the experiment is intended to cause the tigers to associate pain with a human being and transmit their fears to one another. More than 400 people have been killed by tigers in the Sunderbans over the past ten years. Nine out of 20 dummies have been attacked thus far.

A Multipurpose Animal

CAN you think of an animal that can be used for transportation, food, clothing, shelter, tools, and decoration? Certainly the arctic reindeer fits the description.

From time immemorial this stockily built animal—standing as much as four and a half feet (1.4 m) at the shoulder—has been one of the most valuable resources in the Arctic region of Europe. It has provided the Lapps with almost all their material necessities.

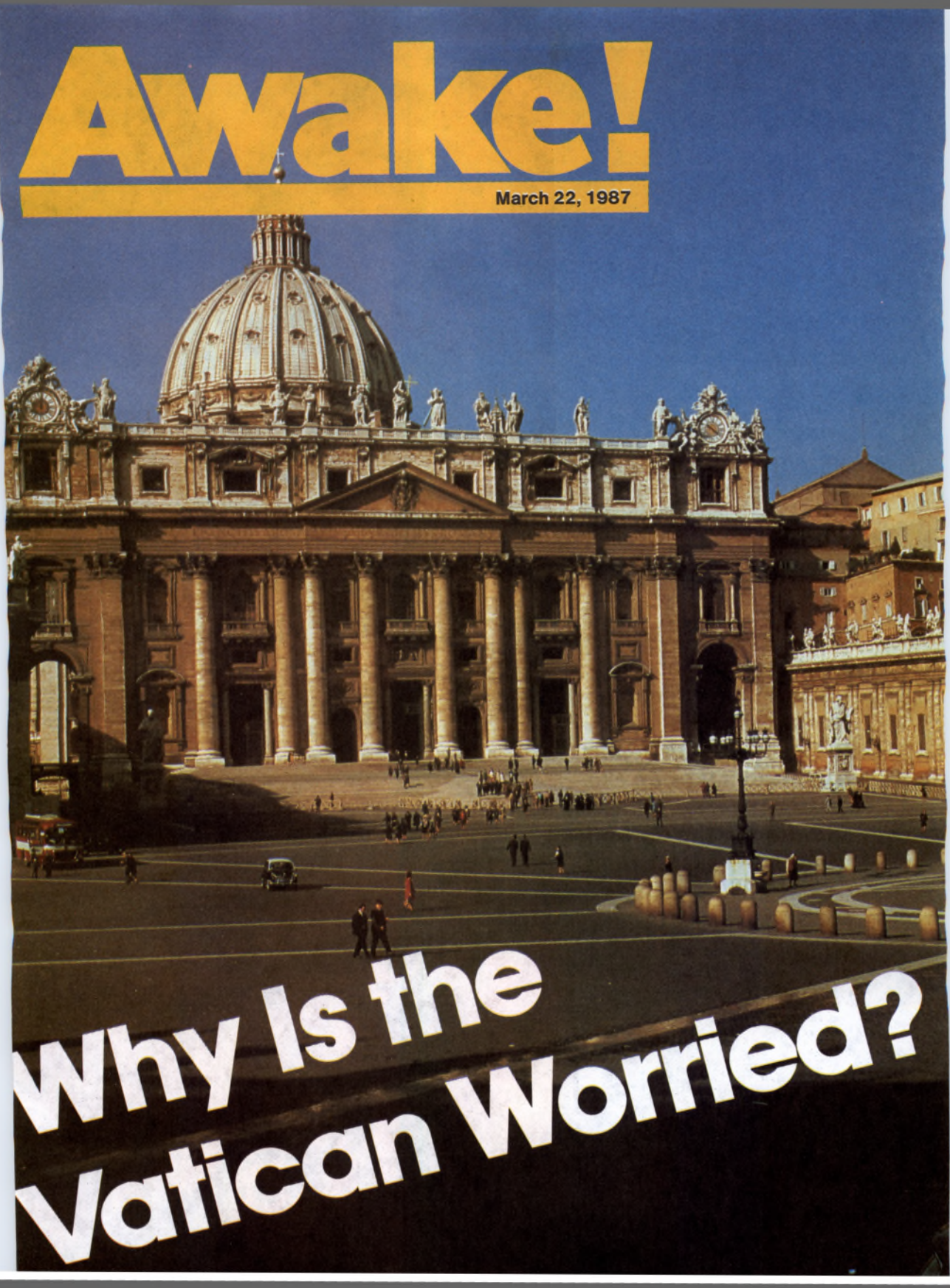
The agile and large-hoofed reindeer can pull a heavily loaded sledge at 12 to 15 miles per hour (20 to 25 km/hr) over cold, snowy wasteland. It can easily swim across lakes and rivers and readily finds its way through a snowstorm. In Siberia it has even been used for riding.

Reindeer milk is four times richer in butter fat than is cow's milk. A few drops can turn a cup of coffee white. The Lapps usually either jerk (sun dry) or smoke the animal's strongly flavored meat. They make clothing, shoes, bedding, and tents of its soft hide. They use its hair for mattresses, its sinews for thread, its intestines and six stomachs for food containers, and its bones and antlers for tools, buttons, and ornaments. A vest of its fur makes a good life jacket, since reindeer hair is hollow and filled with air.

Almost every part of this creature can be utilized. You can hardly think of a more useful animal.

Awake!

March 22, 1987



Why Is the Vatican Worried?

In many parts of the world, religious leaders are concerned about the number of people leaving their churches. In this issue, our report from Italy takes up the matter regarding the situation in the Catholic Church. At a later time, Awake! will consider the situation in other religions.

R. Krubner/H. Armstrong Roberts

Why Are They Worried About Losing Members?

Many churches are losing members. These first three articles, by *Awake!* correspondent in Italy, show that the Vatican itself, as well as many Catholic papers and commentators, is concerned. What reasons do they and others give for loss of church members?

THE Vatican is concerned. It issued a report last May entitled *Sects or New Religious Movements: Pastoral Challenge.* This document was the result of a study begun in 1984 by four Vatican departments to determine why so many Catholics are leaving the church.

Among the many reasons the Vatican gave for Catholics' leaving the church were the following: 'Concern over the future; the nature of truth and how it is to be found; the meaning of life; the lack of answers to their questions; feeling betrayed, deceived, exploited, not listened to; and disillusioned with Church laws and practices.'

It sounds like the condition of the crowds that flocked to Jesus: "They were harassed and dejected, like sheep without a shepherd." (Matthew 9:36)* The Vatican document admitted that there are "many deficiencies and inadequacies in the actual behaviour of the Church" and emphasized that "there is a vacuum crying out to be filled." It also referred to the "lack of leadership, patience and personal commitment on the part of church leaders."

Other sources list further reasons for the departures from the churches. The well-known Dutch Catholic theologian Johannes Baptist Metz made this statement: "Our Western religion is secularized to the bone. No trace of messianism has been left over in it. Rulership by God has vanished out of it. He does not figure anymore within the churches, within theology, nor within the social and political issues of our day."

Commenting on the situation regarding young people in Spain, *Concilium,* an international theological magazine, said: "Youth and the church represent two totally separate worlds, far removed from each other." This magazine mentions parallel situations in Holland, Belgium, Federal Republic of Germany, and Australia.

One press report referred to the papal document as "the Vatican's cry of alarm." The document suggests a 'rethinking of the parish community approach.' It should

* Quoted from *The Jerusalem Bible,* a Catholic Bible. All scriptures quoted in this article and the two that follow it are from this Catholic Bible, unless otherwise indicated.

Awake!® March 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 6

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Why Are They Worried About Losing Members? 3
Why Are So Many Becoming Jehovah's Witnesses? 5
Are You Open-Minded Toward God? .. 8

Also in This Issue

How Knowing Greek Led Me to Know God 10
Forests in the Sea 15
When Kelp Comes Ashore 18
Young People Ask... Does Prayer Really Help? 20
A Time to Possess, a Time to Share 23
Worldwide Depression and On to War Again 24
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
It Was the Talk of the Town 31

Cover photo: K. Scholz/H. Armstrong Roberts

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

be 'outgoing and witnessing.' It observes that the sects go "out of their way to meet people where they are, warmly, personally, and directly, pulling the individual out of anonymity, promoting participation, spontaneity, responsibility, commitment."

It calls for an "ongoing education in the faith" to combat the religious ignorance so widespread among members of the churches today. "The word of God," the document declares, "should be rediscovered as an important community-building element," and the preaching work should have a "biblical dimension."

Turning from its self-examination, the document strikes an ominous note: *"At times we may have to recognize, and even support, radical interventions on the part of the state acting in its own sphere."* (Italics ours.) This "invitation" to the State to step in to help in the war was not lost on the press. "Is the shadow of the *'secular arm'* reappearing with regard to non-Catholic religions, and particularly with regard to the so-called 'sects'?" asked Marco Tosatti in *La Stampa* of June 4, 1986.

Does this possible use of the government indicate that the Vatican wishes to return to its methods of the Dark and Middle Ages to suppress freedom of worship? Did Jesus ever request the help of political authorities to neutralize those who opposed his teachings? Did Peter ever do so? Did the other apostles ever do so? Was it not the Pharisees who appealed to Pilate in order to have Jesus impaled? Is requesting governmental help proof of spiritual strength, or is it an admission of weakness?

Not all Catholics leaving the church are joining another religion, but large numbers are flocking to one particular religious organization. What group is that, and why is it the one being chosen by so many who are leaving their church?

Why Are So Many Becoming Jehovah's Witnesses?

IN MANY lands people are doing just that. For example, at Bologna, Italy, church authorities, with the pope's approval, held a congress to study how to combat the success of Jehovah's Witnesses. The Catholic Church raised a "cry of alarm," according to *La Repubblica,* because every year ten thousand Catholics become Jehovah's Witnesses.

The Jesuit Giusseppe De Rosa said that "from a religious point of view the most dangerous are Jehovah's Witnesses. They come fully trained; they always have the Bible in their hand."

In an editorial dealing specifically with Jehovah's Witnesses, the Jesuit magazine *La Civiltá Cattolica* of February 18, 1984, wrote:

"The first reason for the spread of the movement lies in the propaganda techniques [that is, in the preaching work]. The work on the one hand is painstaking, carried out from door to door by people who are scrupulously trained in this work and strongly convinced . . .

"The second reason for the success of the JWs is in the attractive force of the jehovist message, in being able to cater to the needs, demands, and expectations of the people of our times. First of all, it fulfills the need for certainties, something very much appreciated at a time when all is uncertain and unsteady. . . . Above all, it is an absolutely certain revelation of the future, and therefore all who accept it are freed from all fear and anxiety and can face the future with joy, with the certainty of surviving the ruination of God's tremendous judgment day for a wicked world and to live in eternal happiness on earth. Secondly, the jehovist message helps in overcoming the anxiety of the individual in the face of this world's woes, announcing that the overturning of today's unbearable situation is near, and that soon, therefore, there will be a new era, a new world will be born from which all the wicked who are now triumphant will be eliminated. . . .

"The third reason for the success of JWs is that the movement gives its members a precise and strong identity, and it is a place for them where they are welcomed with warmth and a sense of brotherhood and solidarity."

The Vatican document analyzed people's needs at the present time, and the foregoing quote from the Jesuit magazine *La Civiltá Cattolica* showed that it is the

"They always have the Bible in their hand."
—Jesuit Giusseppe De Rosa

> ***"Jehovah's Witnesses are the first to live the faith they preach."***
> ***—The Catholic magazine* Mondo erre**

message of Jehovah's Witnesses that is fulfilling those needs. This is further evidenced by the Catholic writer Vittorio Messori in his recent book *Scommessa sulla morte* (A Bet on Death), in which he writes:

"It makes you think when you realize that one of these apocalyptical sects—Jehovah's Witnesses—is the fastest growing confession, or religion, in the world. It is among the most practiced religions in many lands . . . and it is perhaps in first place when it comes to fervor, zeal, activism, ability to make proselytes.

"Neither is their ever more accentuated presence limited to lands of Christian tradition, but it reaches the whole of the world where, in the name of Jehovah, and in a very short time, results are obtained that are often superior to those of Catholic, protestant, and orthodox missionaries in centuries of work.

"This impressive force of expansion is incomprehensible only to the one who does not want to admit that . . . Jehovah's Witnesses' way of reading the Bible evidently meets real needs that other theologies no longer fill.

"One cannot avoid the issue by insinuating that the Witnesses prosper because they play on fear. Just the opposite: Unlike the 'official' churches, they deny the existence of hell, preaching annihilation for the wicked and unbelievers, definitive disappearance after death. An unpleasant prospect, perhaps; but certainly less terrorizing than the threat of terrible pains for all eternity."

Yes, the God of Jehovah's Witnesses is a loving God, not one that strikes people with terror.

The following quotation is taken from the Catholic magazine *Mondo erre* of March 1986: "It ought to be said that Jehovah's Witnesses are the first to live the faith they preach: They don't get angry, they don't smoke, they don't accumulate riches, they keep out of political discussions, . . . they pay the taxes, they follow a virtuous and honest life-style, they are happy and obliging. All of this has made them well liked."

Ex-Catholics Interviewed

It is interesting to consider some firsthand accounts indicating the reasons why two ex-Catholics chose another religion.

Rosanna C., a young married woman who lives in the province of Parma (northern Italy), says:

"I had a peaceful infancy. I received much affection from my parents and had a normal Catholic education. During adolescence, I developed a desire common to many young people: I wanted to make myself useful to God and serve him. This desire was nourished by reading a copy of the Gospel I bought at a bookstall. I had never read it before. What I read made me love Jesus. I realized that he had a message of hope for mankind, even though I did not

"They gave me a clear answer from the Bible"

"I've finally achieved my childhood goal of serving God"

grasp the meaning of it. I also realized that his disciples must show deep love for God and their fellowman."

Awake!: Were you satisfied with the way you practiced your religion?

Rosanna: Not really. When I was 17, I taught catechism to children who were from 10 to 12 years of age. As a member of a Catholic Action youth group, I took part in meetings and spiritual meditation. I was very occupied, religiously speaking. But there were two things I didn't like. The Bible, the book I so deeply respected, was never examined, and in the group I belonged to, there was no real unselfish love or unity. And that was not all. I was also concerned by the fact that a sodomite and a Lesbian were accepted and highly esteemed by the group. One afternoon I just broke down and cried.

Awake!: Was it easy for you to become one of Jehovah's Witnesses?

Rosanna: No, it certainly wasn't! When my parents first began receiving visits by Jehovah's Witnesses, I had no wish to join in. Later, however, impressed by the good manners of the Witnesses, I decided to get to know them and joined in on a Bible discussion with them. This was decisive for me. What most impressed me was the fact that for every objection I raised, they gave me a clear answer from the Bible.

Awake!: Did you ask any priests for advice after this conversation?

Rosanna: Yes, several, and a nun. They were not too concerned about helping a 'lost sheep.' After an accurate study of the Bible, in 1977 I symbolized my dedication to Jehovah God with water baptism.

Claudio C., 30, from Isérnia (central Italy), said:

"When I was ten years old, of my own free will I entered a seminary run by the Capuchin friars. My desire was to serve God as a missionary. Seminary life had its problems due to certain situations existing there; but what really disturbed me was when my superiors refused to give me a copy of the Bible, a book I greatly desired to read. I was even more concerned when a priest told us that man's origin was through evolution. I realized that I could not achieve my goal of serving God in the seminary, so I left at the age of 15."

Awake!: How did you come in contact with Jehovah's Witnesses?

Claudio: They came to my house. I remember asking them direct questions, and they gave me direct and precise answers. They left two books with me, *Did Man Get Here by Evolution or by Creation?* and *Is the Bible Really the Word of God?* After reading them, I realized that the theory of evolution is unfounded and that the Scriptures are inspired by God. My brother had joined me in my search for the truth, and we wondered if the Witnesses really were the representatives of true Christianity.

We needed to examine their doctrines more thoroughly.

Awake!: What did you do then?

Claudio: We had conversations with three priests and with ministers of several Protestant denominations. After a thorough investigation, we were convinced that it was Jehovah's Witnesses that really helped people to understand the Bible. We got baptized as Jehovah's Witnesses, and I've finally achieved my childhood goal of serving God.

Are you willing to compare your religious views with God's Word the Bible? Do you have the courage to do that with an open mind?

Are You Open-Minded Toward God?

DO YOU love God? Do you want to know him better? The way to do so was shown 19 centuries ago. The apostle Paul preached to a mixed crowd of Jews and Greeks in a Jewish synagogue in Thessalonica. Some Jews and some Greeks were convinced and changed their religion, but many of the Jews, "full of resentment, enlisted the help of a gang from the market place, stirred up a crowd, and soon had the whole city in an uproar."

Under cover of darkness, Paul escaped the mob and moved on to Beroea and soon was in the synagogue preaching to both Jews and Greeks. "Here the Jews were more open-minded than those in Thessalonika, and they welcomed the word very readily; every day they studied the scriptures to check whether it was true. Many Jews became believers, and so did many Greek women from the upper classes and a number of the men."—*Acts 17:1-12.*

The Jews in Thessalonica clung to their centuries-old religion with its oral traditions that made void God's Word. (Matthew 15:1-9) How different were those of Beroea—they listened with open minds, checked the Scriptures to see whether Paul's words were true, and changed their religion.

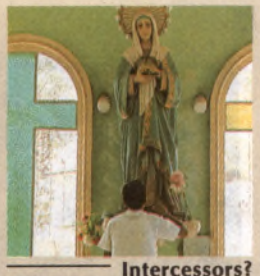
Catholic commentators, as quoted in the previous article, have this to say about Jehovah's Witnesses. They are "in first place when it comes to fervor, zeal, activism." They "are the first to live the faith they preach," and they "follow a virtuous and honest life-style." One is "welcomed with warmth and a sense of brotherhood and solidarity." "They always have the Bible in their hand," and their "way of reading the Bible evidently meets real needs that other theologies no longer fill." Their

message "helps in overcoming the anxiety of the individual in the face of this world's woes." All of this and more is said by Catholic clergymen and commentators. Is not all of this high praise for Jehovah's Witnesses?

Would it not be wise, then, to listen to their Bible-based conversations when they call at your door? And remember, the fact that their religion is disparagingly called a "sect" does not make it false. The first Christians were called "the Nazarene sect." The Bible admonishes all of us to "prove all things: hold fast that which is good." (Acts 24:5; 1 Thessalonians 5:21, *Douay Version*) Should not all who love God and want to know him heed this divine counsel?

Hellfire?

Trinity?



Intercessors?

If you are a Catholic and wish to know God better, with an open mind consider these questions along with the scriptures cited, using your own Bible.

The Catholic Douay Version Bible teaches that the soul dies—does your church teach that it is immortal?—Ezekiel 18:4; Acts 3:23; Apocalypse 16:3.

It teaches that the wages sin pays is death—does your church teach that sinners are tortured in hell or in purgatory?—Ecclesiastes 9:5, 10; Romans 6:23.

It teaches that Jehovah is one God and that Jesus is not equal to him—does your church teach that God is one God in three persons and that Jesus is one of three equals?—Deuteronomy 6:4; John 14:28.

It teaches that Jesus is the rock on which God's church is built—does your church teach that it is built on Peter?—Ephesians 2:20, 21; 1 Peter 2:4-8.

It teaches praying to God through Christ Jesus—does your church teach praying to or through others?—Philippians 4:6; 1 Timothy 2:5.

It teaches addressing confession of sins and requests for forgiveness to God through the advocacy of Jesus Christ—does your church teach that these favors come through a priest?—1 John 1:9; 2:1.

And that same Catholic Bible teaches that friendship with the world and political involvement with this world is enmity with God—does your church involve itself with the political or military affairs of this world?—John 15:19; 18:36; James 1:27; 4:4.

How Knowing Greek Led Me to Know God

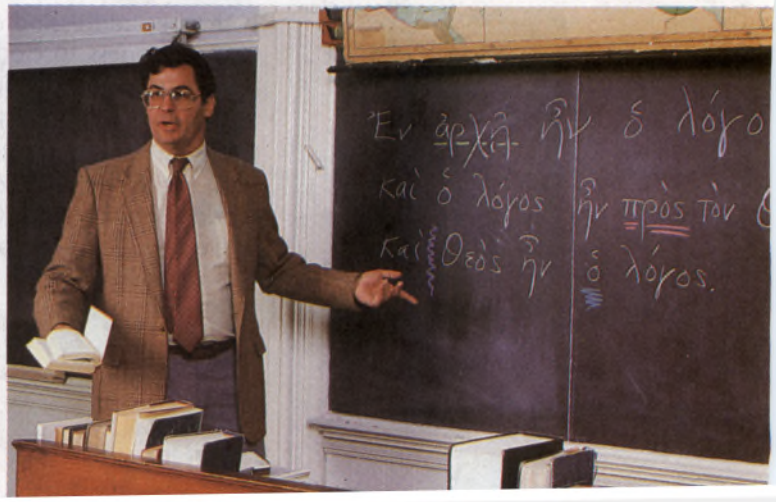
"NICHOLAS, I'd like you to give serious thought to taking Greek." "Oh, yes, Sir, Mr. Benton, yes, Sir." This was in the 1950's. I was in my tenth-grade year at Phillips Academy, a private school in Andover, Massachusetts. I was already taking Latin and French. Now he wanted me to take Greek too? Well, I did like languages. Maybe he had a point about Greek.

So at the start of my 11th-grade year, I signed up for Greek. I found it amazingly flexible, very expressive and creative, yet very simple too. Soon I was hooked on the language. Thus it was that I began my very exciting trip through Greek—never dreaming where it would lead me!

From Phillips Academy I went on to college, to Princeton. In my senior year I decided I wanted to teach, and after graduating, I did start at an Episcopal boys' school, St. Paul's, in New Hampshire. This was consistent with my background. Growing up, I was a longtime choirboy at the local Episcopal Church. In my area the respectable people were either Unitarian or Episcopalian. So I'd been steeped in the very High Church Episcopalianism but exposed to very little Biblical or spiritual understanding. The Bible was swallowed up in church formalism. Now at St. Paul's I was immersed in it once again. Everybody—faculty and students—had to go to chapel every weekday and twice on Sunday.

I taught Latin and Greek there for four years. After my first year I got married to a young lady named Suzanne. The next three summers I studied for and got my master's degree in Latin and Greek. While considering going for my doctoral degree, I received a letter from my old Greek mentor at Phillips Academy, Dr. Chase. "I've just had an opening in Andover," he wrote. "I know you want to go to graduate school. But would you please come down and talk to us?" I did, and wound up teaching Greek there. I've taught there ever since.

We hadn't lived in our new home for more than three weeks when there was a knock on the door. It was one of Jehovah's Witnesses. She started a Bible study with Suzanne. That was in 1968. The Watch Tower publication they studied along with the Bible was *The Truth That Leads to*



Nicholas Kip teaching Greek

Eternal Life. It used some original-language Greek words, such as *hades* and *psyche* and *stauros*. Suzanne would come to me and ask:

"Oh, Nicholas, here's a word that Karen and I studied in the Bible. Could *stauros* just mean 'stake'?"

"Well, sure. It does mean 'stake.' I don't know how they ever got 'cross' out of *stauros*. But I'm not surprised. The Christian church has been doing things like that at least since Constantine's time."

Later I met Karen's husband, and after some general discussions a regular Bible study was started. But I had problems. Episcopalianism had given me no knowledge of the Bible, no faith in it. I needed an approach to the study that would satisfy my demand for logic. Was it reasonable to think that the Witnesses—an unpopular minority often scorned and ridiculed—had the scholarship to meet my need?

But then I remembered, minorities with different ideas were often ridiculed by the majority, even despised and persecuted by them, yet ultimately were proved right. Now here are these Witnesses—a minority, different, running around knocking on doors, standing on street corners with their magazines, scoffed at, and often despised and persecuted. Maybe it would be worth listening to them—they just might have something!

So I took as a working hypothesis, or theory, "Maybe Jehovah's Witnesses can show me who God really is." My theory began with just two assumptions: (1) that the majority isn't necessarily right and (2) that, except for popular opinion, I had no reason to consider the ideas of Jehovah's Witnesses false. After a few sessions to discuss the Bible, I realized there was a third underlying assumption to be dealt with. I

"It does mean 'stake.' I don't know how they ever got 'cross' out of stauros"

brought it up to the Witness studying with me: "Arthur, how can I be sure that the words of the Bible are not just old stories?"

"Do I have the book for you!" he exclaimed.

He brought me a book just recently published (1969) by the Watch Tower Society, *Is the Bible Really the Word of God?* It was packed with facts on science and archaeology that confirmed the Bible's historical accuracy and discussed many fulfilled prophecies that proved its inspiration. So this important assumption held up—the Bible had to be God's Word!

Arthur and other Witnesses then showed skill in bringing together *all* the scriptures on given points, and by thus 'combining spiritual matters with spiritual words,' they brought clarity and harmony into material that otherwise seemed obscure or contradictory. (1 Corinthians 2:13) My questions were answered with scriptures, the pieces fit together, harmonious patterns of truth emerged. My second assumption was also correct: The Witnesses understood it correctly.

By this time I had started going to Witness meetings at the Kingdom Hall. Next I went from door to door with Arthur. One woman, a Baptist, gave me one of these little tracts about the Witnesses, supposedly exposing their errors. In several places it referred to the Greek. So I was curious: Just how knowledgeable were they in Greek. Within a few weeks I had acquired several more similar tracts to examine.

Most of them revolved around the

They see only what can be used, or misused, to prove their preconceptions

Trinity. They assumed the Trinity to be true, then carefully selected their scholarly authorities to prove it. In fact, the attacks on Witness teachings often focused on the Trinity and on their *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures.* In Greek, as in English, some words can mean different things in different contexts. The English word "bow," for instance, can be a courteous bow, a bow of ribbon, or a bow with which to shoot arrows.

In Bible study, however, you look not only at the context but also at other scriptures to see how the word is used in different settings. So you check to see whether you're leaning on your assumptions or on the evidence. I noticed that these tract writers frequently manipulate the evidence, misrepresent it. On the other hand, the Society was quite honest in looking at all the evidence, all the possibilities, offering their conclusions, but then telling you to decide. After a careful examination of the points of controversy, I saw that the Society was right.

In some places the Trinitarians clearly manipulate the evidence. The classic example of this is, I guess, John 8:58. There Jesus said: "Before Abraham was, I am." (*King James Version*) The Trinitarians pick up Jesus' use of "I am" here and relate it to Jehovah's statement to Moses in Exodus 3:14 (*KJ*), "I am that I am." Because both Jesus and Jehovah used "I am," they argue that this makes Jesus and Jehovah one. And the Greek root does say *am* in the present tense at John 8:58.

However, even their own theological grammar books acknowledge that where an expression of past time appears in the sentence, the present tense verb can sometimes be translated as if it has begun in past time and continues up to the present.* This is also true in French and it is true in Latin. Hence, when the *New World Translation* says "I have been" instead of "I am," it is translating the Greek correctly. (John 8:58) Yet the Trinitarians act as if 'No, that's not even possible!' So I began to notice this misrepresentation of the evidence on the part of the detractors of the Society.

'Well, since the Society's scholarship is credible in the Greek,' I reasoned, 'must it not also be in its other writings?' It was this that led me to study in earnest, which in turn led me to baptism in 1970.

The year before this, a publication was released by the Watch Tower Society entitled *The Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures.* It proved to be crucial for me. Perhaps more than any other single thing, it was instrumental in causing me to become one of Jehovah's Witnesses. In the left-hand column on each page is the original koine Greek text, and under each line is a literal translation of the Greek. In the right-hand column of each page, in modern-day English, is the *New World Translation of the Christian Greek Scriptures.*

Incidentally, right at the time when this publication came out, I was assigned to teach at Phillips Academy a course in New

* *A Grammar of the Greek New Testament in the Light of Historical Research,* by A. T. Robertson, 1934, pages 879-80; *A Manual Grammar of the Greek New Testament,* by H. E. Dana, 1957, page 183. See also appendix 6F of the *New World Translation Reference Bible,* 1984, pages 1582-3.

Testament Greek. Since I did not learn Greek from a theologian who was teaching New Testament Greek, I was probably much more objective about it. I could look at the words with fresh eyes, free of the traditional, doctrinal notions.

Such preconceptions can really give you eyes that don't see and ears that don't hear because if, as you do your research, you're looking for something to confirm what you already believe, that's all your eyes and ears will see or hear. Instead of looking to see 'Well, what's the whole case?' they see only what can be used, or misused, to support their preconceptions.

Incidentally, most theologians that I've met are not strong in Greek. The quality of Greek scholarship in the *Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures,* however, is very good. It's the kind of thing that a person who really wants to work with the Greek, even though not knowing much Greek, can do a lot with. I feel it's one of the greatly underappreciated jewels of the Watch Tower Society's publications.

Now, as to my becoming one of Jehovah's Witnesses. In addition to all the help from these scholarly works of the Society—especially those relating to the Greek—the time period was important for me. The years '68, '69, '70—remember what life was like then? I sympathized with the hippie movement because I didn't like what my country was doing and I didn't like what the establishment was doing. On the other hand, I didn't like the idea of dropping acid or smoking marijuana. The hippies didn't really have the answers; neither did the establishment. I was looking for better answers, more meaning, some larger purpose in all of this.

Life has to be more than going through the motions of teaching or selling insurance or what have you. Life isn't just books: It's people—not just people going to elite prep schools and Ivy League colleges. I'd been that route, and something was still missing. I was looking for something that was bigger than the usual mold, something of real value.

And I found it in Bible truth. Bible truth has it all—loving God and loving people. This truth made me really see people. People who are auto mechanics, ditchdiggers, railroad engineers, people who are all kinds of different things, people that I would have missed meeting in any other way. And it wasn't just getting to meet them; it was getting to know them well and coming to love them.

This is really what it was with Jesus, too, wasn't it? The people. He related to people. To the needs of people. He was so involved with people. Paul too. Much in Paul's letters is counsel about people getting along with people. I said to myself at one point: 'If they're going to start throwing people into concentration camps, I want to be in there with people I care about. Let me in too!'

Nicholas and his wife Suzanne, checking in the *Kingdom Interlinear*

I thought: 'If it comes to the time when you have to stand up and be counted, then you've got one choice. Either you're going to be part of the system that is persecuting or you're going to be part of those that are being persecuted.' I wanted to be counted with those who were applying Bible principles and standing up for righteousness, whatever the cost.

I'd spent enough time on the scientific, intellectual aspects. It was time for feelings to take over. These people were doing it. These people were living it. I wanted to be with them. It wasn't some date, it wasn't Armageddon, it wasn't saving my skin. It was my heart talking. These people are right. These other groups are wrong. I want to be where it's right.

All of this was going through my mind one morning as I stepped into the shower, and it was at that moment that I made a dedication in my heart to serve Jehovah God. I'm one of those people that had to go through the intellectual part before I could move on to the matters of the heart. It put my dedication on a solid foundation of faith based on knowledge—the all-important knowledge, namely: "This means everlasting life, their taking in knowledge of you, the only true God, and of the one whom you sent forth, Jesus Christ."—John 17:3.

Thus my life came to have meaning and now rests on a foundation of love—love for Jehovah, love for Jesus, and love for the people who love Jehovah and Jesus.—*As told by Nicholas Kip.*

Some Comments by Greek Scholars on *The New World Translation of the Christian Greek Scriptures*

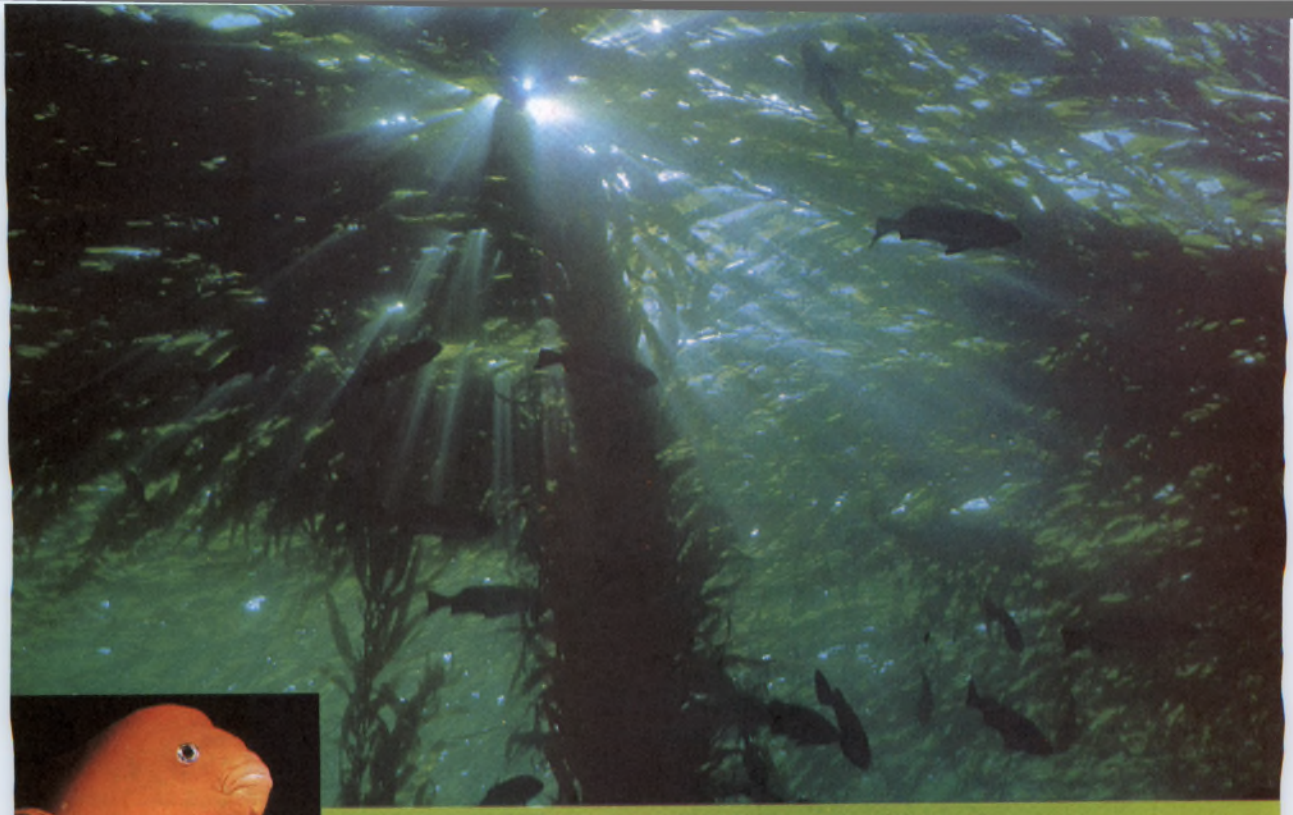
"I am interested in the mission work of your people, and its world wide scope, and much pleased with the free, frank and vigorous translation. It exhibits a vast array of sound serious learning, as I can testify."—Letter, December 8, 1950, from Edgar J. Goodspeed, translator of the Greek "New Testament" in *An American Translation.*

"The translation is evidently the work of skilled and clever scholars, who have sought to bring out as much of the true sense of the Greek text as the English language is capable of expressing."—Hebrew and Greek scholar Alexander Thomson, in *The Differentiator,* April 1952, pages 52-7.

"The translation of the New Testament is evidence of the presence in the movement of scholars qualified to deal intelligently with the many problems of Biblical translation."—*Andover Newton Quarterly,* January 1963.

"The New Testament translation was made by a committee whose membership has never been revealed—a committee that possessed an unusual competence in Greek."—*Andover Newton Quarterly,* September 1966.

"This is no ordinary interlinear: the integrity of the text is preserved, and the English which appears below it is simply the basic meaning of the Greek word. . . . After examining a copy, I equipped several interested second-year Greek students with it as an auxiliary text. . . . The translation by the anonymous committee is thoroughly up-to-date and consistently accurate. . . . In sum, when a Witness comes to the door, the classicist, Greek student, or Bible student alike would do well to bring him in and place an order."—From a review of *The Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures,* by Thomas N. Winter of the University of Nebraska, appearing in *The Classical Journal,* April–May 1974.



My name is Garibaldi. This is my home. Isn't it beautiful?

People once tried to catch me and put me into a small tank. Can you imagine that? I would have died of claustrophobia. Pardon the big word. It means dread of tight places.

But I am safe now. I was made California's state marine fish, and now I am protected.

If you wish to learn about my lovely home and meet some of my neighbors, please read about the

Forests in the Sea

VISITORS to the groves of California's giant coast redwoods stand and gaze up in silent wonder. Surrounded by the huge trunks towering upward, the leafy canopy high overhead, the shafts of light slanting down through this green ceiling, you feel small and insignificant. With the silence, the stillness, the shafts of light so dramatically defined against the shade of the great forest engulfing you—a feeling of reverential awe steals over you. Many relate to these forests of giant redwoods.

Not so many relate to forest giants of another kind. They stand not on the coast but just off the coast of California. They, too, tower upward, spread a canopy overhead, with shafts of light penetrating down into the gloom of their environment. There also is a silence, a stillness, and light beams that add a haunting beauty to the forest surrounding you—and similar feelings of wonder and awe wash over you.

This forest has no trees, but fronds; no trunks, but stipes; no leaves, but blades; no roots, but holdfasts. This forest is underwater. Its fancy name is *Macrocystis pyrifera,* its common one is giant kelp —brown algae and "the largest and fastest-growing marine plant in the world." Visitors to its forests must carry their air with them, so they don scuba gear and also wet suits to protect against the cold of the sea. And if they wish to take away more than memories, they must carry with them underwater cameras and artificial lighting.

Giant kelp starts out microscopically small. Spores attach themselves to rocks up to a hundred feet deep, develop into microscopic male and female plantlets, which combine sperm and eggs to produce an embryo.* From these embryos fronds grow upward; spaghettilike cords grow downward. The fronds reach for the surface and sunlight, the cords glue tightly to rocks and anchor the plants in place. Called haptera, these cords grow into large bundles and are known as holdfasts.

As the fronds grow they add blades with gas-filled floats to keep themselves headed for the surface of the sea. There they continue to grow, spreading out to form dense canopies. Each frond may live only *six months,* but new ones grow up from the holdfast. The whole kelp plant can live for five years or more. It absorbs nutrients throughout its whole supple structure—blades, stipes, and holdfasts.

And the fronds grow up to two feet a day! They may grow a hundred feet or more to reach the surface, then add another hundred feet to form the floating canopy. It is through these canopies of floating kelp that shafts of sunlight penetrate to add an ethereal beauty, an otherworldliness, to this underwater realm.

A kelp bed teems with life. Scientists claim that just one mature kelp plant can

* 1 ft = 0.3 m.

support over a million organisms. Some 178 species live in the holdfasts alone —crabs, nudibranchs, brittle stars, worms, and others. In all, an estimated 800 species live in and around a kelp bed, using it as food, shelter, or hunting grounds. Starfish, anemones, jellyfish, moray eels, and many fish frequent the kelp beds. One very pugnacious little fellow is the bright-orange garibaldi—also distinguished as California's state marine fish.

Late in the 1950's many of the California kelp forests were near extinction. Warmer seas will kill kelp, and storms tear them loose from their holdfasts, but the main threat was from the sea urchin. It was, as it often is, man's doing. Kelco corporation's news release explains:

"Sea urchins are spiney marine creatures that feed on kelp holdfasts, fronds and young plants. The near decimation of the sea urchin's most effective natural enemy, the sea otter, by large-scale hunting in earlier years had upset the ecological balance of the kelp beds. Urchins, left free to satisfy

Sea Otter

Sea Urchins

Holdfast

When Kelp Comes Ashore

Kelco harvesting vess

their appetites on kelp began reproducing unchecked and devoured vast stretches of kelp forest. Urchins were recorded as moving up to 30 feet a month through the kelp beds."

But the remedy was also man's doing. The sea otter became protected, their numbers increased, the sea urchins decreased, and the kelp forests are recovering. As Kelco reports: "Today, our kelp forests are beginning to near the generous boundaries occupied some sixty years ago. The ecological balance is being restored, and a once endangered natural resource has been reborn."

And, with this rebirth, divers once more glide through the kelp jungles and with cameras clicking bring back to us a small measure of the glories to be found in these forests in the sea.

GIANT kelp is more involved in your life than you think. An article in *Oceanus,* by marine biologists Ron H. McPeak and Dale A. Glantz, gives information on how kelp gets from the ocean and into the lives of most of us. It is harvested along the California coast from San Diego north to Carmel.

In productive beds it may be cut three times a year. Modern harvesting vessels are pushed stern first through the beds. Reciprocating blades mounted at the base of a conveyor system operate like a seagoing lawn mower, cutting the floating fronds of the kelp canopy three feet below the surface.* The conveyor carries the cut kelp aboard. In one day a harvesting vessel can reap as much as 550 metric tons. In California the kelp industry has harvested as much as 156,000 metric tons in one year.

The kelp forest is not damaged by this harvesting. The still-submerged part of the kelp is where sexual reproduction occurs. Also, buoyancy and photosynthesis occur the entire length of the fronds. The removal of the thick canopy lets in more sunlight, which stimulates the growth of the new fronds that are beneath the surface. Soon a new canopy is formed, and another harvest is in the making.

When kelp comes ashore, it goes far beyond the coastline. Its products find their way into your kitchen, dining room, and bathroom medicine cabinet. They find their way into feed for livestock and poultry and into fertilizer for crops. Chemicals from kelp end up in the products of industry.

*1 ft = 0.3 m.

Kelp's most important contribution is algin. It was first discovered by a British pharmacist in 1883. But it was not until 1929 that Kelco, a San Diego company, became the world's first producer of algin products. Now the annual sales of these products manufactured in California exceed $35 million. Their uses are legion. "They thicken, smooth, emulsify, stabilize, gelatinize or create a film when combined with other substances." After giving this information, *Sport Diver* magazine elaborates:

"Many brewers use alginates to form tougher beer bubbles, making for a longer-lasting foam head. Alginates keep cosmetic creams from separating and help maintain ice cream's smoothness. Part of the taste and texture of chocolate milk drinks and glazed doughnuts are derived from alginates. They do everything from coating paper to improve its printing quality to making it greaseproof.

"As if those weren't enough uses, it impregnates fabrics to help retard burning. Other forms are used in laundry starches and textile print pastes. Some pharmaceuticals contain algin, as do certain adhesives, rubber products, wallboard cements and auto polishes."

Harvesting of the giant kelp is regulated by the California State Fish and Game Commission. May the commission do its job well to safeguard kelp from human exploitation, and may the delightful sea otters protect it from the sea urchins, that the beauty of its forests may continue to dazzle our eyes and its products continue to tickle our palates.

Young People Ask...

Does Prayer Really Help?

"OF THOSE who pray," said one survey, "about half employ prayer as a 'hotline to heaven,' requesting specific help for themselves, their families and friends." But do such prayers really help? A young girl named Peggy felt they did. After praying to God about her problems, she said: "I felt better and I would go to sleep and I'd wake up the next morning and I wouldn't think about it. I would forget all about it."

Perhaps some personal problem has likewise moved you on occasion to approach God as a last resort. Like Peggy, you may even have felt better as a result. Peggy's prayer, however, did not really help her *solve* her problem. And perhaps the same was true in your case. You may thus have wondered if prayer simply is something that makes you feel better. 'How do I know,' you ask, 'that I'm not just talking into the air? Is there someone listening who really cares about me and can help me?'

'God—Does He Care About Me?'

It may indeed seem hard to believe that God in heaven could be concerned about our little problems. However, in his Sermon on the Mount, Jesus said: "Observe intently the birds of heaven, because they do not sow seed or reap or gather into storehouses; still your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth more than they are?" Jesus continued: "Also, on the matter of clothing, why are you anxious? Take a lesson from the lilies of the field, how they are growing; they do not toil, nor do they spin; but I say to you that not even Solomon in all his glory was arrayed as one of these."—Matthew 6:26, 28, 29.

Surely, then, if God cares so much for birds and lilies—would he not care about *us* enough to listen to our prayers? The Bible thus calls God the "Hearer of prayer." (Psalm 65:2) He promises that when we pray to him in faith, "no matter what it is that we ask according to his will, *he hears us"!* (1 John 5:14) And many youths feel that this has proved true in their case.

A young girl named Kay says: "Prayer helps me to be very happy. Sometimes you just feel like expressing your inner feelings to someone, and there is no one better than Jehovah to express them to because Jehovah understands, and you know that he is the only one who can really help you." Young Peggy (not the one mentioned at the outset) likewise feels that her prayers fall on hearing ears. Notice how she once handled a personal problem: "I just cried and cried about it. But once I stopped crying, I found myself talking to Jehovah, as if he were *right there,* sitting next to me and listening to what I had to say."

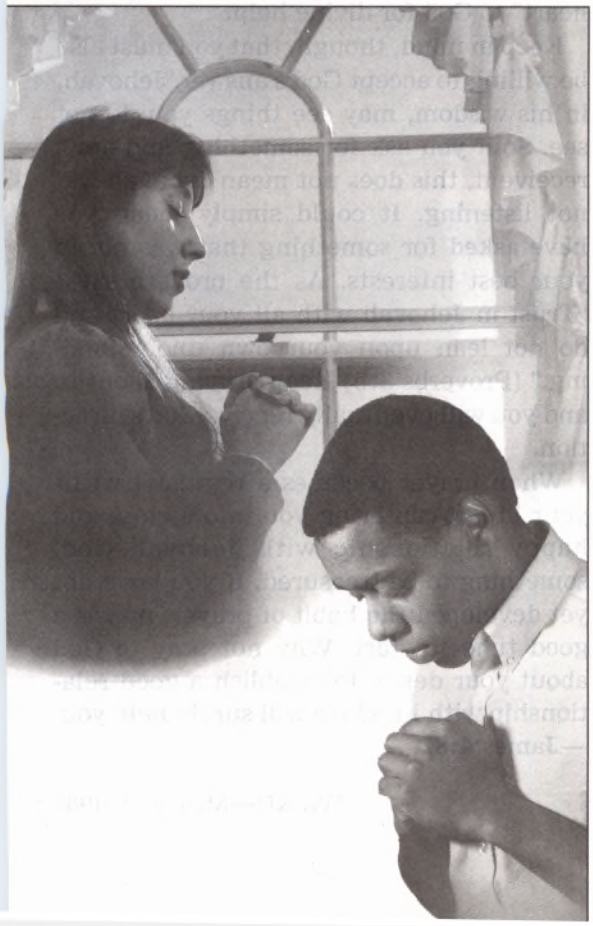
How Prayer Helps

These youths have learned to follow the counsel of the psalmist: "Throw your burden upon Jehovah himself." (Psalm 55:22)

However, prayer helps in ways that go beyond bringing mere emotional relief. A youth named Maria speaks from personal experience: "I know that whenever I have a problem I can turn to Jehovah for guidance and he will help me."

Maria, like Peggy and Kay, is one of Jehovah's Witnesses. All three have developed a close personal friendship with God over a period of time through prayer and study of the Bible. To these youths God is truly "a refuge and strength, a help that is readily to be found during distresses." (Psalm 46:1) However, note that Maria does not pray for the miraculous removal of her problems. Rather, she prays "for guidance." This points to one of the fundamental principles of prayer.

At James 1:2-5 the Bible says: "Consider it all joy, my brothers, when you meet with various trials, knowing as you do that this tested quality of your faith works out endurance . . . So, if any one of you is lacking in wisdom, let him keep on asking God, for he gives generously to all and without reproaching; and it will be given him." James did not encourage us to pray for escape from "various trials." We could, however, "keep on asking God" for the *wisdom to deal with that trial!* God does not 'reproach' us as being stupid for asking for this wisdom. Rather, he generously promises us that such wisdom "will be given."



Suppose, then, you are faced with a difficult situation—a problem with a teacher, a disagreement with your parents. Try praying to God. At the very least, prayer focuses your heart and mind on what is important in God's sight. This helps put your problem in perspective. Jesus further promised that his holy spirit would 'bring back to mind all the things he had taught.' (John 14:26) Similarly, if you pray for guidance, God can call to your mind scriptures or godly principles that bear on the matter. Of course, God will expect some effort on your part, such as researching matters in the Bible or seeking mature advice. God can bless your efforts, at times even giving "the power beyond what is normal" so that you can endure.—2 Corinthians 4:7.

How to Pray to God

Would you, too, like to enjoy a close friendship with God and know that he answers your prayers? Like Kay, Peggy, and Maria, you must begin with a study of the Bible. This will help you to learn about

"I know that whenever I have a problem I can turn to Jehovah for guidance and he will help me."

Jehovah God's personality and qualities. As you learn what a kind and loving God he is, you will feel more comfortable about approaching him in prayer.

'But what do I *say* to him?' you may ask. Praying to God can be much like talking with a close friend. If you had a difficult problem on your mind, wouldn't you speak very openly to such a friend, expressing your most intimate thoughts and concerns? God is a friend with whom you can trust your deepest thoughts, knowing he will understand exactly what you mean. But since he has far greater wisdom and power than any human, he can really help you!

However, should personal problems always dominate your prayers? Jesus gave us a model prayer known as the Lord's Prayer, or Our Father prayer, found in the Bible at Matthew 6:9-13. Note that first in importance was the sanctification (or holding as sacred) of God's name, Jehovah. Next was that God's Kingdom (or heavenly government) come and that God's will be done both in heaven and on the earth. It was only after discussing these great issues that Jesus gave attention to personal concerns, such as food, gaining forgiveness, and enduring temptation to do wrong. Your prayers can reflect the same priorities, showing God that you are not selfishly concerned with just your own problems.

Jesus, however, cautioned: "But when praying, do not say the same things over and over again, just as the people of the nations do, for they imagine they will get a hearing for their use of many words." (Matthew 6:7) Long, complicated prayers do not impress God; neither do prayers read out of a book or recited like a rhyme, as if the choice of words were what is important. Said the psalmist: "Before him pour out your heart." (Psalm 62:8) Do you have some sort of weakness that you have worked hard to overcome but that keeps surfacing? Is there some family problem that makes you very unhappy? These are things about which you can "pour out your heart" to God for divine help.

Keep in mind, though, that you must also be willing to accept God's answer. Jehovah, in his wisdom, may see things you do not see. So if you ask for something and don't receive it, this does not mean Jehovah was not listening. It could simply mean you have asked for something that was not in your best interests. As the proverb says: "Trust in Jehovah with all your heart and do not lean upon your own understanding." (Proverbs 3:5) Keep praying about it, and you will eventually receive God's direction.

When prayer becomes a regular part of your life, it can bring you into a close and happy relationship with Jehovah God, something to be treasured. If you have not yet developed the habit of prayer, now is a good time to start. Why not pray to God about your desire to establish a good relationship with him? He will surely help you. —James 4:8.

In Our Next Issue

- *Abortion—At What Price?*
- *Speaking in Tongues—Is It From God?*
- *Can I Beat Stress?*

A Time to Possess, a Time to Share

THIS lovely bluebird perches on her twig and feels secure. Her mate is very protective. If another male comes close, her mate becomes a feathered fury and chases the intruder off "his" property. He is a possessive little fellow.

Man's "best friend," the dog, is another example of possessiveness. If you do not think so, just try taking away from him a bone that belongs to him!

This trait of possessiveness can even be seen in infants. Did you ever watch two young children wanting to play with the same toy? One has the toy in his hands. The other tries to take it away, but the first noisily refuses to let go. It is "his" toy, and he is determined to keep it that way.

Is it wrong to hold on to your possessions? The Bible establishes the principle of private property. Men are to build houses and live in them, plant vineyards and eat their fruitage, dwell under their own vine and fig tree. (Isaiah 65:21; Micah 4:4) The bluebird was there first and needs his territory in order to feed his family. The dog was given the bone and needs it to sustain himself.

But the child and his toy? It is his possession, but if he does not share it, he will have no playmates. He will be happier if he shares his possessions.

Christians are not to forget "the sharing of things with others." The rich are admonished "to be liberal, ready to share." In such sharing there is great happiness.—Hebrews 13:16; 1 Timothy 6:18; Acts 20:35.

There is a time to be possessing and a time to be sharing. In the final analysis, however, we should remember that "to Jehovah belong the earth and that which fills it, the productive land and those dwelling in it." (Psalm 24:1) Learn to use those things that are temporarily at our disposal in a way that will please their true Owner, Jehovah God.

King David of Israel was a very wealthy man, but he realistically said to God: "Yours, O Jehovah, are the greatness and the mightiness and the beauty and the excellency and the dignity; for everything in the heavens and in the earth is yours. Yours is the kingdom, O Jehovah . . . The riches and the glory are on account of you." —1 Chronicles 29:11, 12.

Rather than possessively hoarding what was his, David made a huge contribution toward the construction of a temple for Jehovah's worship. Did he seek some special recognition for his generosity? No. Rather, he realized that, in a sense, it was not generosity at all. "Who am I and who are my people, that we should retain power to make voluntary offerings like this? For everything is from you, and out of your own hand we have given to you."—1 Chronicles 29:14.

Is not David's attitude the correct one for all of us to have?

THE WORLD SINCE 1914

Part 2: 1929–1934

Worldwide Depression and On to War Again

"IF EVER fortune seemed to smile upon the United States it was on that day." So historian David A. Shannon describes the day in 1929 on which U.S. president Herbert Hoover took his oath of office. Shannon explains: "It was a year of peace, no war clouds were on the horizon, and American wealth was actively expanding overseas and changing conditions in less economically fortunate parts of the world."

But by the end of Hoover's presidency, "the national mood had utterly reversed. Instead of optimism there was pessimism, desperation, a heavy measure of despair." What had happened?

'Black Thursday'—End of an Era

On Wednesday, October 23, 1929, a number of speculators for no apparent reason began selling overpriced stock on the New York stock market. The next day, Thursday, anxious to sell before their stock lost more in value, stockholders set off a stampede that within a week wiped out over $15 billion in stock value and within the next few months many billions more. Thus began the Great Depression.

Economists and historians have many theories as to what went wrong. But, as one of them points out, it is evident that the Depression's many causes "were deeply embedded in the prosperous twenties." Since their prosperity "had been built on a shaky foundation . . . , the stock market crash . . . suddenly revealed the economic rot underlying [them]."—*The United States in the Twentieth Century,* pages 10, 12.

At any rate, the heady years of the Roaring Twenties were gone. Gone also were the heady hopes they had engendered. "The great stockmarket crash of 1929 pricked the bubble," say historians F. Freidel and N. Pollack. "As abundance ebbed, leaving millions suffering privation, the twenties seemed no more than an unreal interlude or a cruel joke—an immoral jazz age, the era of the golden calf."—*American Issues in the Twentieth Century,* page 115.

Suddenly millions were unemployed. People in

debt lost what they had purchased on credit, including their homes. Families doubled up to save expenses. As stock prices plummeted, fortunes were wiped out overnight. Businesses folded. A wave of suicides shocked the nation as thousands of U.S. banks closed their doors. One comedian got big laughs when he said that he was used to having checks returned marked "no funds." But now he was getting them back marked "no bank."

The economic collapse was worldwide in scope and far-reaching in its effects. In fact, the book *The United States and Its Place in World Affairs 1918-1943* claims that "this economic tragedy touched every country and every side of life, social and political, domestic and international."

Meanwhile, in Japan militarists were also using the economic situation to their advantage. Says *The New Encyclopædia Britannica:* "The notion that expansion through military conquest would solve Japan's economic problems gained currency during the Great Depression of 1929." The instability of the early '30's allowed these militarists to gain such control that they were able—even without the approval of the civil government—to overrun Manchuria and to conquer it within just five months. Labeled an aggressor by the League of Nations, Japan answered, not by withdrawing from Manchuria, but by withdrawing from the League.

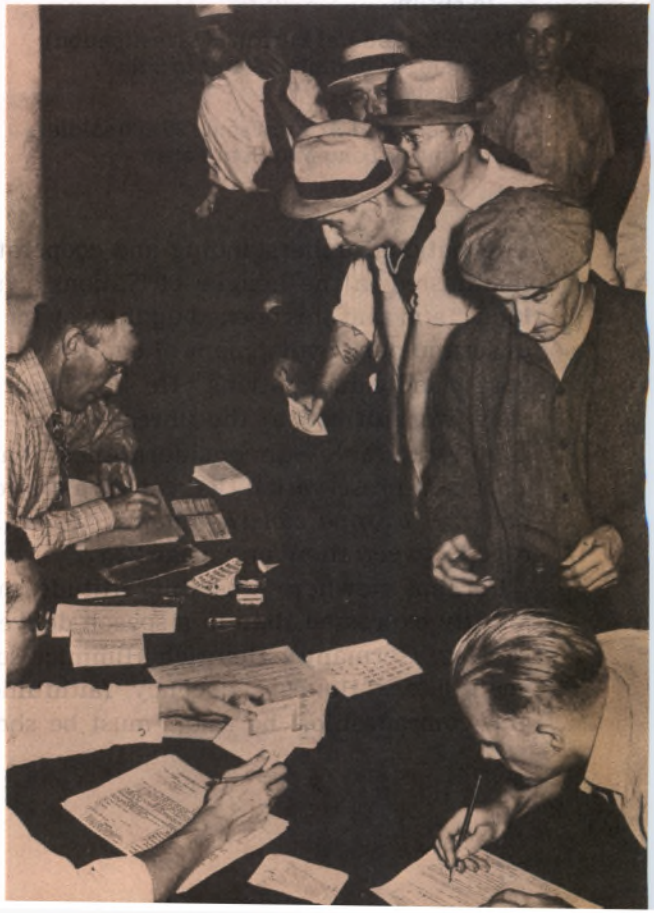
Me First!

By emphasizing pleasures and promoting materialism, the Roaring Twenties had fostered a me-first attitude that strangled spirituality. But "the economic earthquake that began in 1929," as the above-mentioned history book *The United States and Its Place in World Affairs 1918-1943* calls it, now made this attitude even more pronounced. How so? Because the Depression "destroyed any sense of community of interests that might have been growing up, and made each family intent on its own preservation, no matter what the effect on others. Each for himself, save our own skins, no matter who takes the hindmost!"

In individuals such an egotistical, self-centered, inconsiderate attitude is generally viewed with contempt. But under the guise of patriotism, a similar attitude on the part of national groups is often considered justified, at times even desirable. The Great Depression promoted such a spirit.

Historian Hermann Graml says that "the world economic crisis dealt the spirit of

A. Rothstein/Dover



In just a short time, millions were left jobless

Other Items That Made the News

1929—Awards by Academy of Motion Picture Arts and Sciences (Oscars) given in Hollywood for the first time

1930—The planet Pluto discovered

Uruguay first winner of soccer's World Cup

1931—Flood in China leaves over 8,000 dead and 23 million homeless

Over 2,000 die in earthquake in Nicaragua

Tallest building in the world at that time, New York's Empire State Building, completed

1932—Discovery of the neutron and of deuterium (heavy hydrogen) help bring nuclear physics into being

1933—Germany withdraws from League of Nations; Hitler proclaimed chancellor; first concentration camp, in Dachau, opened; concordat between Germany and Vatican signed; public burning of undesirable books in Berlin

1934—FBI (Federal Bureau of Investigation) organized in United States to fight gangsterism

Chinese Red Army of some 90,000 soldiers begins its Long March to Yenan

international understanding and cooperation manifested in the League of Nations a fatal blow," and that this opened up the way for "an unscrupulous development of egotism on the part of individual nations." He says "most nations were driven to the unreasonable—but understandable—inconsiderateness based upon self-preservation that causes a crowd to panic."—*Europa zwischen den Kriegen* (Europe Between the Wars), page 237.

Perhaps nowhere was this attitude more bluntly expressed than in a speech delivered by Nazi Germany's Heinrich Himmler some years later. "Honesty, decency, faithfulness, and comradeship," he said, "must be shown when dealing with those of like blood but to no one else. What happens to a Russian, to a Czech, does not interest me in the slightest. . . . Whether nations live in prosperity or starve to death like cattle interests me only insofar as we need them as slaves for our culture. . . . Whether 10,000 Russian females collapse from exhaustion while digging an antitank ditch interests me only insofar as the antitank ditch for Germany is finished."

With both individuals and nations demonstrating such a me-first attitude and such a disregard for God's law to love "your neighbor as yourself," how could peace possibly be achieved or maintained? (Luke 10:27) "Abundant peace belongs to those loving your law," says the Bible at Psalm 119:165. But since this love was lacking, the nations could easily be maneuvered into position for a new war. Significantly, both a lack of love and a me-first attitude were to characterize "the last days" of Satan's wicked system.—2 Timothy 3:1-5; Matthew 24:3, 12.

In Whom Should Man Trust?

Did the obviously deteriorating world situation cause people to turn back to the God upon whom they had turned their backs during the Roaring Twenties? In some instances, it did. Many people became responsive to the message being proclaimed by Jehovah's Witnesses, the name adopted in 1931 by Christians associated with the Watch Tower Society. But the nations as a whole were unresponsive, placing their trust not in God but in "great" men.

For example, at the start of the 1930's Mohandas Gandhi was gaining increased support in India for his intensi-

fied nonviolent campaign of civil disobedience. Many hoped that the independence from British rule that he was seeking would lead to a stable and peaceful India. Did it?

That same year Chinese President Chiang Kai-shek became a member of the Methodist Church. Many hoped that his conversion to Christianity would open the way for a close alliance between China and Western so-called Christian nations. Did it?

In 1932, at a Vatican-held ceremony, Mussolini celebrated his tenth anniversary in power. Many hoped that the papal blessing there bestowed would ensure pious Italians, their duce, and their land lasting security and protection. Did it?

Also in 1932 Franklin D. Roosevelt, newly elected president of the United States, promised his countrymen a New Deal to get things moving again. A year later he outlined U.S. disarmament plans and appealed to the world to abolish all offensive weapons. Many hoped that this New Deal would lead to an end of unemployment and poverty as well as to peace. Did it?

In 1933 Hitler became Germany's new chancellor. Shortly thereafter, in his so-called Peace Speech, one of the most effective he ever delivered, he downgraded war as "unlimited madness" that would "cause the collapse of the present social and political order." He stressed Germany's willingness to disarm, in harmony with Roosevelt's proposal, saying: "Germany is prepared to agree to any solemn pact of nonaggression, because she does not think of attacking but only of acquiring security." Many hoped that this policy would restore the honor and dignity of the German nation and by peaceful means guarantee its dynamic leader's regime for a thousand years. Did it?

And then there was that "great" organization, the League of Nations. Of it the *Watchtower* magazine of May 15, 1932, said: "The kings of the earth, upon the advice of the clergy, . . . join together in a League of Nations and trust in that and in the ingenuity of man to deliver the perplexed and suffering world out of its present dilemma." Many hoped—although Jehovah's Witnesses were not among them—that the League would indeed deliver the world out of its dilemma. Did it?

Over two thousand years ago, the psalmist wrote: "Rely not upon great men—mere mortals who can give no help." With the benefit of hindsight, would you not agree with the wisdom of these words?—Psalm 146:3, *Moffatt.*

Had There Been No Depression . . .

"It would be a foolish oversimplification to place all the responsibility for the events and trends of the thirties at the door of the depression." So say the authors of the book *The United States and Its Place in World Affairs 1918-1943*. "Yet," they admit, "the widespread want and insecurity of the lean years did set the stage, supplied the actors with some powerful lines, added big scenes to the tragic plot, and gave the audience new heroes to applaud or new villains to hiss." They conclude that had there been no depression, it is very possible that there would have been no second world war.

But there *was* a world depression, and there *was* a second world war. So obviously, despite religious backing, the League of Nations failed to achieve the peace it was designed to maintain. From its very beginning the League was doomed. But it would not die quickly. It would slowly stagger to its death. Read about it in our next issue.

From Our Readers

Pornography

Thank you for your articles on pornography. (December 22, 1986) I am glad to see this topic brought to light for the public to see the real damage it does to people's lives. I am a victim of abuse and the scars it leaves are unbelievable. Porn often results in child abuse, so where is the child's freedom of choice?

V. L., England

Practical Jokes

I have thoroughly enjoyed the article "Young People Ask . . . Aren't Practical Jokes Harmless Fun?" (September 22, 1986) I found that practical jokes were not all that much fun all the time. Sometimes you can lose a friend and not really mean to. I am 13 and really love to read "Young People Ask . . ." I learn from other people's mistakes.

D. D., United States

How Safe Are the Banks?

I just don't know how to thank you for the articles on "How Safe Are the Banks?" (October 22, 1986) I especially enjoyed the first article on "The Need for Money." Thanks to that article, I was able to do some research that the teacher asked us to do at school. Please print more articles that deal with historical subjects, as this will help many other young people of my age to do thorough research. I am a 12-year-old girl.

M. C., Italy

Upon receiving the issue on "How Safe Are the Banks?" I asked my employer, who is a bank president, to give me his honest opinion as to the accuracy of these articles. He stated: "I am very impressed with these articles. On page 11, column 1, paragraph 1, is the key to safe banking. Also, the statement 'Banks are as safe as the governments that back them' is absolutely true. You can't go wrong following these excellent articles and their advice." Thank you for publishing these timely articles.

A. M., United States

Is Marriage Necessary?

I am a mother of four, a Catholic, and yet an ardent reader of your magazine. I wish to comment on the articles on "Marriage—Is It Necessary?" (July 8, 1986) Youths today are really engrossed with modernization, so modern that even the sacred relationship of men and women is taken with just a shrug of the shoulders. As a mother, I too would not want my three daughters' future life to be based on paperless marriages. Young couples will come to understand the far-reaching effects brought about by these nonpermanent, live-in relationships.

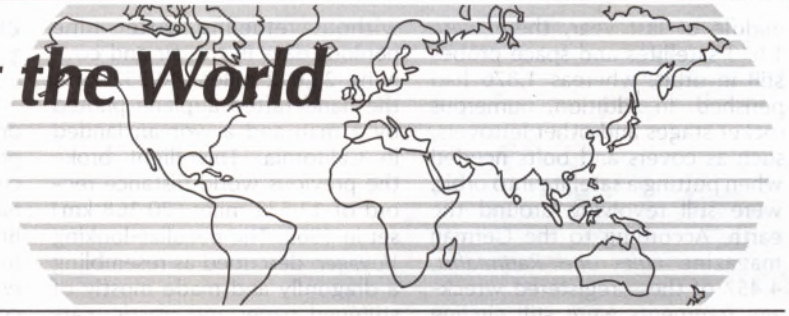
M. E. C., Philippines

Credit Cards

Thank you for publishing the article on "Credit Cards—A 'Plastic Trap'?" (December 8, 1986) Being caught in that trap, reading this article has helped me to understand the importance of exploring the aspects of a credit card before getting involved. I sincerely hope that this article will be as beneficial to others as it has been to me.

D. R., United States

Watching the World



Unwed Couples

The number of unmarried persons living together hit an all-time high, with 2.22 million couples in the United States, reported the Census Bureau last December. For the previous year, the figure was 1.98 million. Thus, the upward trend in the number of unwed-couple households, although temporarily stalled in 1985, continues. Unwed couples now make up 4.1 percent of all couples in the United States, according to the Bureau's statistics.

Unusual "Divorce"

A 15-year-old boy in Melbourne, Australia, was recently granted a "divorce" from his parents. He had applied for a Children's Court Order so that he could be made a ward of the State. The grounds? "Irreconcilable differences"! According to *The Australian,* the parents claimed that their son had 'fallen into bad company' and had been missing school regularly. When they took a stand against his misconduct, the boy ran away from home and began legal proceedings against his parents. Because the boy said that he was afraid of both of his parents but especially of his mother, the court magistrate ordered the boy made a ward of the State. He is now living with a foster family in Melbourne.

They Prayed for Peace

Spiritual leaders from 12 different faiths and representing every major religion of the world assembled in Assisi, Italy, last October at the request of Pope John Paul II. They came as delegates to the "World Day of Prayer for

Peace." Their goal: global peace for 24 hours. In at least 11 nations fighting reportedly stopped temporarily, but in others, such as Northern Ireland and Lebanon, violence persisted.

Although united in their search for worldwide peace, the representatives were divided along religious lines. They came, not to pray together, but as the pope said, to be "together to pray." The religious leaders, 155 or more, divided into 12 groups so that each faith could pray separately. Some of the "religious families" represented were: Buddhists, Hindus, Muslims, Shintoists, Zoroastrians, African animists, Jews, and American Indians. According to *The New York Times,* the Dalai Lama, a Buddhist leader, "converted the altar of the Church of San Pietro by placing a small statue of the Buddha atop the tabernacle and setting prayer scrolls and incense burners around it." And two American Indians of the Crow tribe, John and Burton Pretty On Top, "smoked a peace pipe at the final ceremony."

Pain Costs

The Nuprin Pain Report on "The High Cost of Pain" showed that 550 million workdays are lost each year in the United States because workers suffer pain of one kind or another. Headaches topped the list with 157 million workdays lost. Bone-joint pains of various kinds ranked second with 108 million lost workdays. Then followed 99 million workdays lost for stomach pains, 89 million for backaches, 58 million for muscle pains, 25 million for menstrual pains, and 15 million for dental pains.

Space Scrapyard

Ever since Sputnik blazed a trail on October 4, 1957, almost 3,500 space vehicles have been launched into orbit by man. An analysis revealed that as of the

middle of last year, there were 1,619 satellites and space probes still in orbit, whereas 1,876 had perished. In addition, numerous rocket stages and other leftovers, such as covers and bolts needed when putting a satellite into orbit, were still revolving around the earth. According to the German magazine *Luft- und Raumfahrt*, 4,457 of these registered wreckage fragments were still circling the earth on June 30, 1986.

Vatican View of Homosexuality

A new document by the Catholic Church has reinforced its previous teachings on homosexuality. For the first time, the church has explicitly condemned the mere inclination toward homosexuality as "an objective disorder." In past statements the church concentrated on the sinfulness of homosexual acts. Although not mentioning it directly, the document alluded to the AIDS epidemic when it criticized the prohomosexual movement. The 14-page document, issued by the Vatican's Sacred Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith and sent to all Catholic bishops around the world, also says that persons who engage in homosexual acts commit an "intrinsic moral evil." One reason for the new guidelines, say Vatican officials, is the Vatican's concern that some pastors and theologians may have the wrong view of the church's stand on homosexuality.

Historic Flight

Last December a featherweight aircraft called *Voyager* flew into aviation history after successfully completing the first nonstop flight around the world without refueling. After nine perilous days in the air and covering 25,012 miles (40,252 km), the handcrafted airplane piloted by a man and a woman landed in California. This flight broke the previous world distance record of 12,532 miles (20,168 km) set in 1962. The peculiar-looking *Voyager*, described as resembling a dragonfly and made mostly of stiffened paper and plastic, carried three times as much fuel as its weight of 2,680 pounds (1,216 kg). The craft's designer cited simplicity as its greatest strength. "We succeeded by keeping everything pared to a minimum," he said.

Giraffe Attack

"I thought a giraffe was a tame animal," said a visitor to one of

South Africa's game parks. His party, traveling in a minibus, had to stop because a giraffe stood in the road and refused to move. So one of the tourists got out and tried to chase it away. Instead, the giraffe charged. The tourist quickly dived under the minibus for safety. The animal kept attacking, reared on its hind legs, and smashed its hooves through the windshield. The occupants narrowly escaped injury. The giraffe's anger finally subsided, and it wandered into the bush. Why the attack? It appears that the minibus had stopped between the giraffe and its mate.

Businessmen Terrorist Target

Terrorists now set their sights on businessmen as one of their prime targets. "Forty-eight percent of all terrorist kidnapings have involved businessmen," says Brian M. Jenkins, security director for the Rand Corporation, in *Leaders* magazine. Terrorists kidnap corporate executives to finance violent operations. There have been twice as many terrorist attacks against businesses in the 1980's as there were in the early 1970's. "If terrorists do not spark an Armageddon with chemical, biological or even nuclear weapons, as some observers predict," he adds, "incidents of large-scale, indiscriminate murder will increase."

Gentler Exercises

Running and aerobic dancing have a growing number of adherents. But for people who suffer from weak knees or ankles, or a bad back, those exercises could be hazardous to their health. "Most people shouldn't run, but they don't learn this until after the fact," Dr. James A. Nicholas, an orthopedic surgeon and director of the Institute for Sports Medicine and Athletic Trauma at a New York City hospital, told *The New York Times*. Another doctor, a consultant to the President's Council on Physical Fitness, agrees. "Running is tough on the body," he says. "But it is not as bad as the jumping steps in high-speed aerobic dance. Swimming, bicycling and walking are much better." For these reasons, the gentler exercises—walking for fitness and low-impact or non-impact aerobics—are gaining popularity among the health-conscious population.

It Was the Talk of the Town

THREE Kingdom Halls, two apartments, on three floors in a building of 16,000 square feet (1,500 sq m), constructed in three days—that's what set Waterbury, Connecticut, talking. On the long weekend of October 11-13, it was accomplished by some 1,500 of Jehovah's Witnesses in what *The Sunday Republican* headlined as a "weekend miracle."

Cooperative city officials visited the site. The mayor said: "It's a beautiful building. You must be very proud of it."

A director of a local bank looked on in amazement: "I've been trying to get a branch of our bank built for two years, and here you people get your building up in three days!"

The city planner watched the crews work and said: "It's like a well-oiled machine." His secretary added: "It appears you had divine direction."

The attorney who handled the legal work came with his wife, a professor at the University of Connecticut. She said: "It's amazing what people can do when they work together." He offered: "We have three empty bedrooms. If you need them to house some of your workers, you're welcome to use them."

One of the building inspectors said: "Fantastic, fantastic. The building is not only up to code but exceeds it."

When Witnesses applied for the heating and air-conditioning permit, the inspector studied the plans, then asked: "How long are you going to take to put this building up?" "Three days." He threw back his head and laughed heartily. "Three days? You have two months' work just on these plans!" Again he laughed.

During the construction work, visitors flocked in, tours were conducted, coffee and lunches were served. On Sunday, the second day, 3,000 were fed in 12 minutes.

Faith Plus Works Did It

"It was faith that got a teenager to work mixing cement when his father said he can't get him to cut the grass at home. It was faith that got tour guides to talk proudly of their accomplishments . . . They built a $2 million structure for perhaps $700,000.

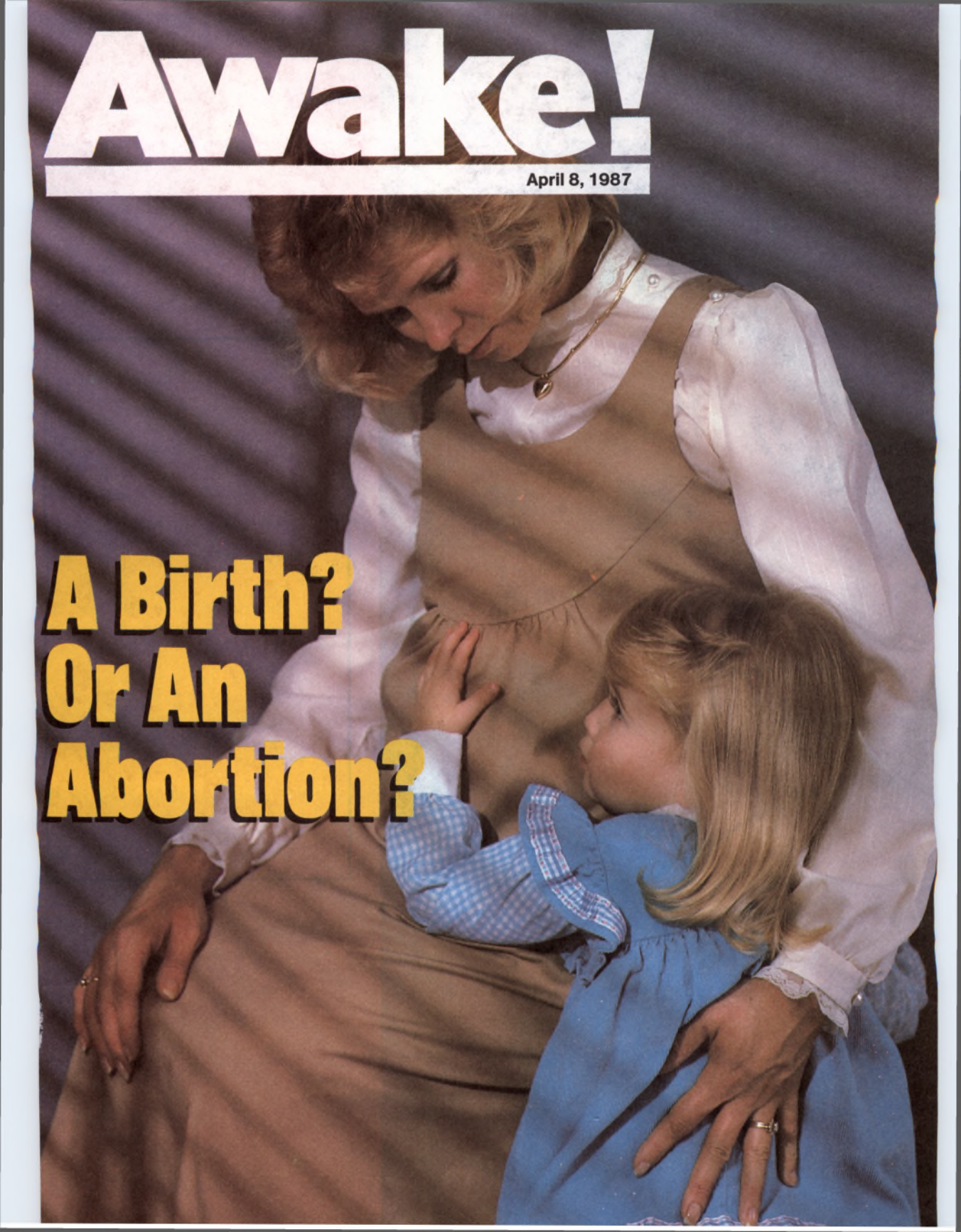
"Black and white, young and old, men and women all had faith and worked side by side, each to his ability. Young children could help pick up stones; women could work in the kitchen; some could drive; everyone could do something. What it means is that this is *their* church and always will be. There is no need to wish them success, because they have shown they have the will to make it so."

—Editorial in The American (Waterbury, Connecticut), October 15, 1986.

An Event You Should Not Miss
"Keep doing this in remembrance of me." Those words of our Lord Jesus Christ, found at Luke 22:19, were spoken at the time when he instituted the memorial of his death. It is Jesus' death that opened to humankind the prospect of attaining everlasting life in paradise conditions. So his death is something we must remember. Will you observe the memorial of it this year?
Please accept this invitation from Jehovah's Witnesses to join them in memorializing this important event. This observance will be after sundown on the date that corresponds with Nisan 14 on the Bible's lunar calendar. Mark down the date on your calendar so that you do not forget. It is Sunday, April 12, 1987. The one giving you this invitation can tell you the exact meeting place and time.

Awake!

April 8, 1987

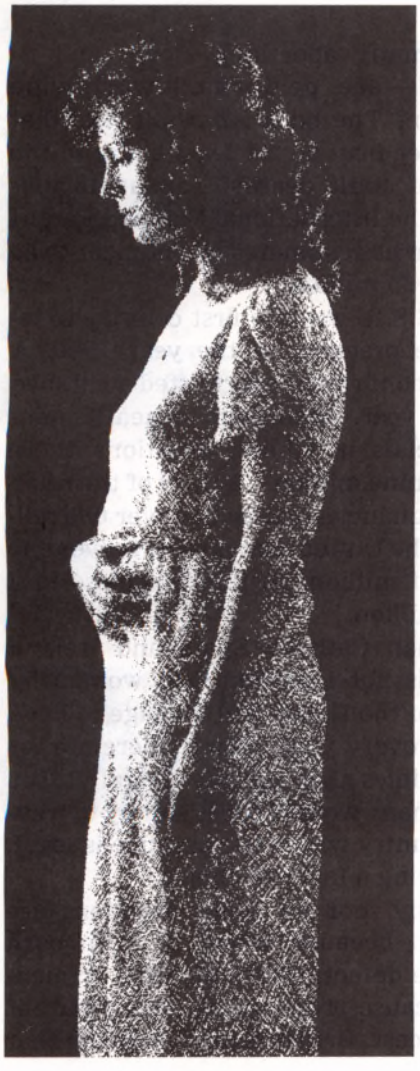


A Birth? Or An Abortion?

Each year, millions of pregnant women are faced with the agonizing decision: 'Should I have my baby, or should I have an abortion?'

How do people all over the world view this question? What price is being paid emotionally if an abortion is chosen? Is there a right and a wrong in this matter?

Abortion
—Who Is Right?



TWO top specialists tell you that your baby has a mere 0.1-percent chance of survival. If it is born alive, it will have serious abnormalities and could die within a few days. What will you do? Take that chance? Or have an abortion?

An unlikely situation, you may feel. But it can happen, and did happen, in London, England. Happily, the hospital backed the parents' decision to continue the pregnancy. "At no stage were we told we should have an abortion," the father explained. They now have a baby son, born without any unusual physical defects whatever.

"We are obviously delighted," said one of the medical consultants, adding: "The difficulty is that nothing in biology is 100 per cent." True, but a doctor's (or a parent's) misjudgment is only one aspect of today's abortion dilemma.

Conflicting Factors

The medical and ethical issues for and against abortion are charged with emotion. Pressure groups from both sides raise sincere voices to be heard and understood, and the debate is often bitter. Who is right?

The parents mentioned earlier obviously made the correct decision. But what if the doctors had been accurate in their diagnosis? Under those circumstances, would it have been right for the mother to have an abortion?

If you find that question difficult, or impossible, to answer, you are not alone. There are, however, guiding principles to help, as we shall see. But first consider the worldwide enormity of the abortion problem.

Awake!®

April 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 7

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Abortion—Who Is Right? 3
Abortion—A World Divided 4
Abortion—At What Price? 8
Abortion—And "the Source of Life" 14
Abortion—Knowledge Brings Responsibility 16

Also in This Issue

The World Since 1914
The League of Nations Staggers to Its Death .. 17
The Bible's Viewpoint
Speaking in Tongues—Is It From God? 22
Crossword Puzzle 24
Young People Ask ...
Can I Beat Stress? 25
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Where Did It Start? 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used.

Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

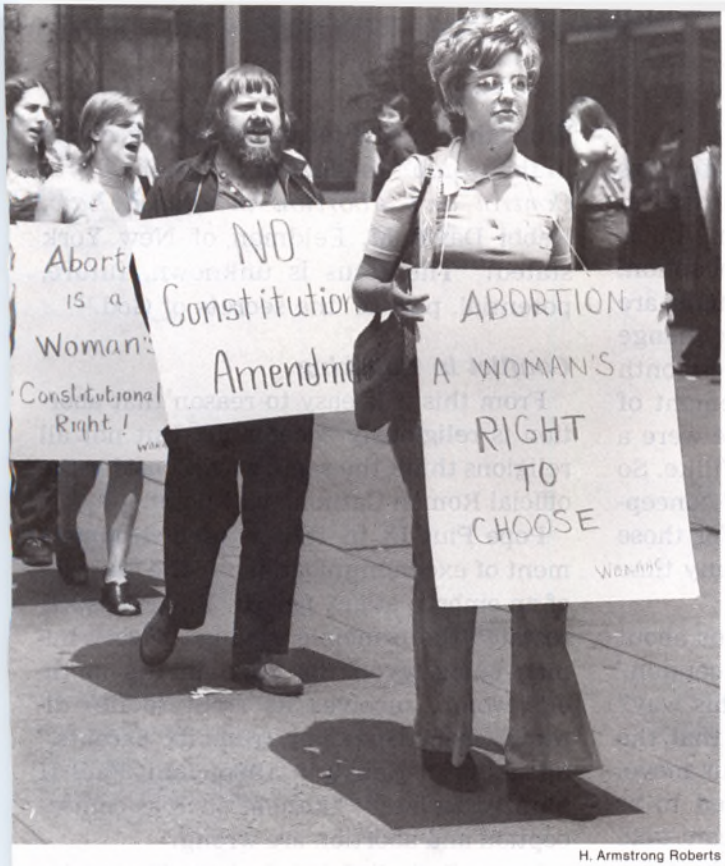
Abortion—A World Divided

HOW many abortions—legal and illegal—are performed worldwide every year? The book *Abortion* says that the number may be "at least equal to the number of adult deaths"—about 45 million. But the International Planned Parent Federation has estimated the number to be as high as *55 million!*

The U.S.S.R. was the first country to legalize the practice, in the year 1920. A recent unconfirmed report listed about five million a year. According to health ministry officials in China, abortions there approach nine million—a third of the number of pregnancies. Japan has over two million, and the United States reports over one and a half million. Britain has close to a quarter million.

In Roman Catholic Spain and Ireland abortion is not legalized. Yet women by the tens of thousands still manage to have abortions every year. How? There are, of course, clinics that operate illegally. But the ploy many women use is simply to travel to a country where the practice is legal, Britain being a favorite choice.

Obviously, not all these abortions are performed because babies may be born with some defect, either physical or mental, or because pregnancies are a result of rape or incest. British figures indicate that



H. Armstrong Roberts

barely 2 percent of abortions are on these counts. Why, then, are there so many? There are two basic reasons.

The Basic Issues

Population control in ancient times was not a problem. Tribes and nations welcomed numerical increase, and women seldom had reason to limit the size of their families. Any abortions were usually illegal and a consequence of adultery or fornication.

In contrast, today a policy of abortion may be government sponsored. By this means the birthrate can be kept in check in countries where there is danger of a population explosion.

Although such a danger does not exist in many Western nations, the number of abortions is still rising. Why? "If we believe in women's freedom," stresses a spokeswoman of the Religious Coalition for Abortion Rights in New York City, "we have to believe that women have the right to make their own moral choices."

"We have to believe that women have the right to make their own moral choices," many state

But once a woman has conceived, does she have an incontestable right to choose to reject the role of mother, to abort her baby? Is such a course acceptable? This is the focal point of today's debate for and against abortion. What is the answer?

So much hinges on definitions. What is life? When does it begin? Does an unborn child have any legal rights?

Alternative Designations

Supporters of abortion often prefer to be referred to as pro-choice campaigners, just as those who oppose the practice often call themselves pro-life workers. In these articles, simply for the sake of clarity, the expressions pro-abortion and antiabortion are consistently used.

When Does Life Begin?

When the male sperm unites its 23 chromosomes with a like number in the female ovum, a new human life is conceived. From this time of conception, the sex and other personal details are immutably established. The only change will be in growth during the nine-month term of pregnancy. "It is a statement of biologic fact to say that *you* once were a single cell," writes Dr. John C. Willke. So does life begin at the moment of conception? Many simply answer yes. For those who think this way, abortion at any time is tantamount to murder.

Others maintain that 'life begins about 20 weeks *after* the initial conception.' Why do they view the matter this way? Because it is at about this time that the mother will begin to feel the fetus move. This period is sometimes referred to as the "quickening." Live births can take place from the 20th week, and abortions are usually performed any time up to the 24th week of pregnancy, a time factor generally accepted. Is this, then, the time when a baby is legally considered to be alive?

In Britain the law does not recognize an unborn child as a human being. Under such circumstances no abortion can *legally* be termed murder. But once a child has left its mother's body, even if the umbilical cord remains intact, to kill that child is a criminal offense. At that time the child has legal rights. Legally, then, from this standpoint, life begins at birth.

The Jewish view, as expressed by Britain's Chief Rabbi, agrees. Life does not "begin until the moment of birth," he says, adding: "We do not regard destruction of the unborn child as murder." What then of the fetus, the baby growing in the womb? In *Marital Relations, Birth Control and Abortion in Jewish Law,* Rabbi David M. Feldman of New York stated: "The fetus is unknown, future, potential, part of 'the secrets of God.'"

Conflict in Thinking

From this it is easy to reason that abortion is religiously acceptable. But not all religions think the same way. Consider the official Roman Catholic viewpoint.

Pope Pius IX in 1869 extended punishment of excommunication for the abortion of an embryo at any age. In 1951, Pius XII restated the principle, saying: "Every human being, even the child in the mother's womb, receives its right to life directly from God, not from its parents." Speaking in Kenya in 1985, John Paul II bluntly declared: "Actions such as contraception and abortion are wrong."

Many Catholics today, however, maintain that such an attitude is out of date and must be revised. As a result, Roman Catholics are divided over the issue. Here are some facts.

The Roman Catholic Dilemma

Cardinal Bernardin, chairman of the American bishops' Committee for Pro-Life Activities, asserts that abortion is a moral wrong and that the official stand of the church is binding on all Roman Catholics. Again, Roman Catholic professor of moral theology at Notre Dame University in the United States, James T. Burtchaell, wrote in 1982: "My argument is straightforward. Abortion is homicide: the destruction of a child." Yet, four years later, priest Richard P. McBrien, chairman of the theology department of the same university, took pains to explain that abortion is not a *de-*

H. Armstrong Roberts

fined doctrine of his church.* According to this view, Catholics who subscribe to abortion cannot be excommunicated, even though they may be viewed as being disloyal.

On account of this ambiguity of church authority, many prominent Catholics are outspokenly pro-abortion. Included among them in the United States are some priests. Also a number of nuns, some of whom endorsed a controversial abortion newspaper advertisement for which they were threatened with expulsion from their orders.

Additionally, lay Catholics now form an active pro-abortion lobby. "I am in the mainstream of Catholic lay thought," asserted Mrs. Eleanor C. Smeal, president of NOW, the National Organization for Women, at an abortion rally in Washington, D.C., U.S.A. At the same time, according to *The New York Times,* she mocked the suggestion that her support for the right to abortion could lead to her excommunication from the Roman Catholic Church.

Many women are outspokenly antiabortion

The Church of Rome is finding it increasingly difficult to resolve such conflicting views within its ranks.

Dangers of Illegal Abortions

To pass laws and edicts is one thing. Yet, even with the best of motives, for any authority to try to enforce a ruling on abortion is quite another matter. People are involved, intimately and personally. Under pressure, people can be unpredictable.

If an antiabortion lobby succeeds, either in preventing a government from legalizing abortion or in repealing existing legislation, what then? Does that solve any problems? "A woman will find a way [to have an abortion], sometimes at the expense of her own life," commented Marilyn Waring, a pro-abortion Member of Parliament in New Zealand, "and there is nothing politicians, or laws, can

* A "defined doctrine" is one viewed as infallible as promulgated by the Roman Catholic Church under papal authority.

do to stop her." And therein lies a powerful argument. 'Which is preferable?' ask those who advocate abortion.

Where abortion is legalized, even though there are still some deaths, the practice is under strict medical supervision. Illegal, "back street" abortions, on the other hand, have a shocking mortality rate, as they are often performed by unqualified personnel under unsanitary conditions. In Bangladesh, for example, it is estimated that every year 12,000 women die as a result of such abortions.

But in all of this, there is another human factor to be considered. How do doctors and nurses feel about handling abortions on an assembly-line basis? What kind of physical, mental, and emotional toll does having an abortion exact from the prospective mother—and father? These are questions we will next consider.

Abortion —At What Price?

IN GLASGOW, Scotland, two nurses had "horrific nightmares" and suffered sleepless nights, reported *The Daily Telegraph*. Why? Because they took part in an operation to abort a baby boy of 24 weeks. Unexpectedly, he lived "for a short time."

In Detroit, U.S.A., a 29-week-old fetus, supposed to have been killed by an injection into its mother's womb, was dumped into a stainless-steel bucket in a hospital abortion ward. But it survived. Its cries were heard, and this baby girl was rushed to the intensive-care unit, just in time.

Justitz/Zefa/H. Armstrong Roberts

It is now possible for premature babies to survive because of advanced medical techniques

The aborting of viable fetuses is a growing problem as the number of abortions increases. Advancing medical techniques provide better care for premature babies, so that at 26 weeks it is now possible for a healthy infant to survive —something that would have been very difficult a few years ago. As a result, nurses in some countries have the legal right to refuse, on grounds of conscience, to participate in abortions.

But what about the doctors? How do they react?

The Business of Abortion

"To be publicly identified as an abortionist is the kiss of death," confided Dr. Phillip Stubblefield in an interview with *Newsweek*. In fact, public pressure has caused many doctors in the United States to cease the practice entirely. A number of bombing incidents have destroyed abortion clinics, and "all over the country, we have clinics that can't get medical directors because doctors are afraid of what the community will do," Dr. Stubblefield explained.

Nevertheless, abortions are still being performed in increasing numbers. And one reason is perhaps not too difficult to find. It is a profitable business.

In Paris, France, for example, parents paid the equivalent of £1,000 ($1,400) for

A Conflict of Loyalties?

The Declaration of Geneva was adopted by the General Assembly of the World Medical Association at Geneva, Switzerland, in September 1948. It is based on the ancient Hippocratic oath. The following is an extract from this Declaration:

"At the Time of Being Admitted as Member of the Medical Profession: I solemnly pledge myself to consecrate my life to the service of humanity. . . . I will practice my profession with conscience and dignity. . . . I will maintain the utmost respect for human life, from the time of conception; even under threat, I will not use my medical knowledge contrary to the laws of humanity."

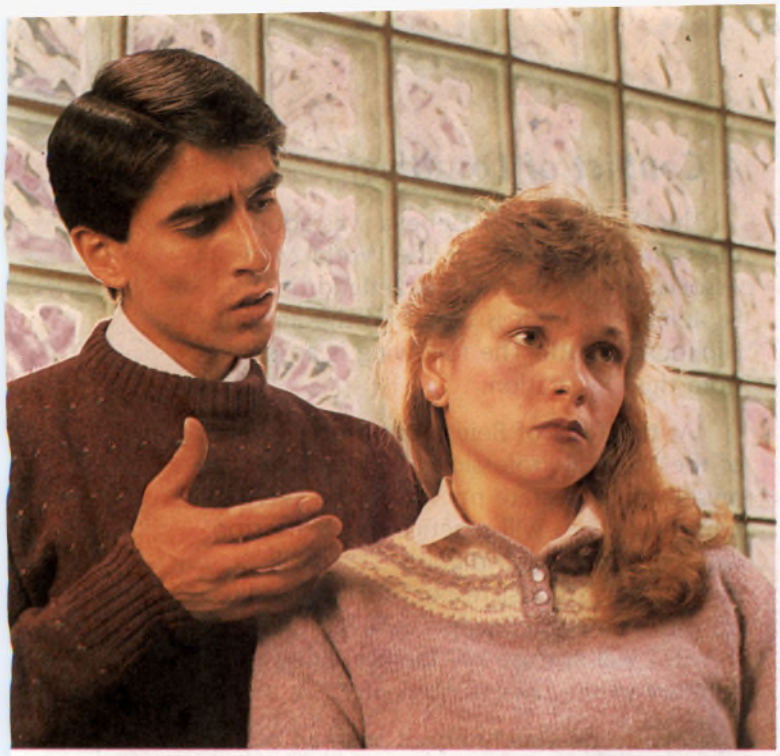
How do doctors interpret such an oath? Here are two conflicting views. Which do you share?

DOCTOR I. M.

"I can never look at the tissues I have removed during the termination of a pregnancy without revulsion. It may be a jelly, but it is, after all, human life that I am destroying."

DOCTOR V. A.

"I don't think abortion is ever wrong. As long as an individual is completely dependent upon the mother, it's not a person."



Few people give much thought to the feelings of the child's father

their teenage daughter to have a private abortion, according to a report in the medical magazine *Pulse*. Some London clinics, says the same report, charge up to £2,000 ($2,800) for every abortion they perform.

In 1982, two of Britain's largest abortion agencies had a combined income of £4.5 million ($6.3 million). Reporting this figure, *Human Concern* comments: "Abortion is a lucrative business." In Japan the government refuses to legalize the birth-control pill. "The ban," reported *The Sunday Times* of London, "is due to lobbying by doctors, who make a fortune from abortion." Wherever you look in the world of abortion, money surfaces.

This is hardly surprising. When faced with a sudden traumatic situation, like that of an unmarried, pregnant teenager, many parents will consider any price a reasonable one to resolve the situation, especially if an abortion can be done safely, speedily, and in strict confidence.

Even so, many doctors are becoming increasingly unhappy about the whole affair. At the opening of the abortion era in Britain, the *Daily Mail* reported Professor Ian Morris as saying: "If I were just beginning my career knowing what I know now about abortions, I would never choose gynaecology." He added: "I detest the operation. It is a complete reversal of all my medical training. The whole aim is to save life, not perform this particular form of homicide." Strong words, indeed, and not every doctor will agree with them. But they do convey some idea of the revulsion to the practice some doctors instinctively feel.

To Abort—Whose Choice?

When a woman faces the issue of abortion, few people, perhaps even the woman herself, give much thought to the father. The decision to have an abortion is often made by the woman alone, drawing on the support of close friends and relatives. But "men also go through the grieving, the sense of loss," reports *The New York Times,* "and may also experience a lot of the ambivalence that women do about becoming a parent."

Some fathers feel strongly that their

wishes should be taken into account, too, that they should have more say before the mother decides to abort their child. "Men wanted to share, not impose, the decision making," says sociologist Arthur Shostak following a ten-year survey of the problem. Surely such thinking is not unreasonable.

Coping With Reaction

Yet, in making the decision, the woman, unlike the man, has to cope with the *physical* shock to her whole system if her gestation period is suddenly terminated. Just what is involved?

Even after an early abortion, it is usual for a woman to feel weak and tired. Cramps, sickness, and possible bleeding are common too. When an abortion is performed much later on, the signs of the terminated pregnancy can last up to a week or more as the hormone level drops. Soreness of the breasts and a feeling of depression are additional factors to face. Yes, having an abortion can be a painful experience, as only the woman knows, and it is seldom an easy choice.

Of greater importance is the fact that, emotionally and mentally, the effect of an abortion can be devastating. The problem is that whereas a physical reaction can be immediate and expected, the mental and emotional wounds appear later and take longer to heal, if ever they do. "Speaking as someone who professionally has to deal from time to time with patients who have *had* abortions, they are often greatly disturbed many years after the clinical event," writes a correspondent to *The Times* of London. How big is this problem?

"It now seems that the size of the hidden problem is greater than previously thought," commented *The Sunday Times*. The effects of depression and emotional disturbance are often so great that "half the unmarried women who have abortions for therapeutic reasons end up needing psychiatric help." These findings have been borne out by a study at London's King's College Hospital. This study reveals, according to *The Times*, that "couples who decide to have a pregnancy terminated can face acute grief reactions" and that they find their grief "difficult to cope with."

The Japanese have an unusual way of handling this human problem. Tiny statues, made of plastic, plaster, or stone to represent aborted children, are placed in temple grounds. There they are committed to the care of Jizo, the Buddhist guardian of children. Parents, as they pray to the

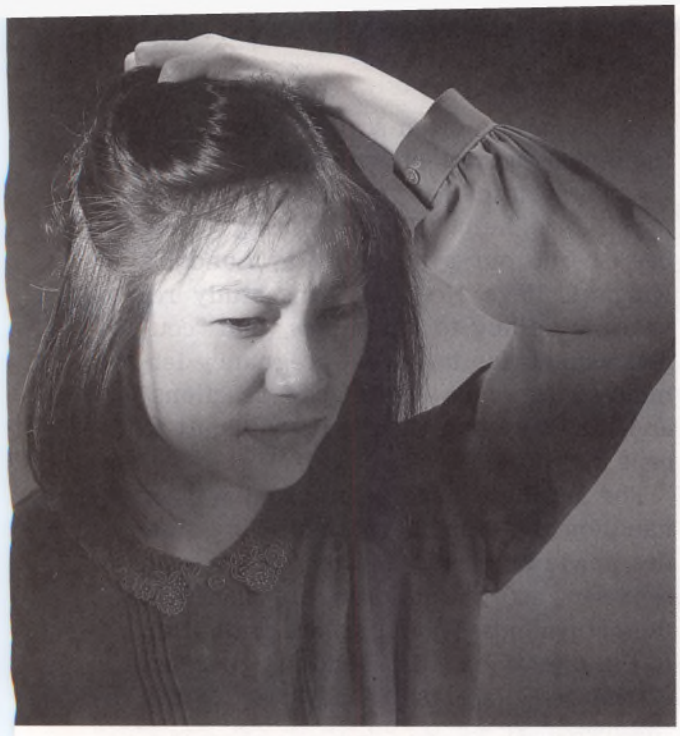
Abortion Techniques

The dangers of an abortion for the mother are directly related to the age of the fetus. They should not be underestimated.

For first trimesters it is usual for the embryo to be sucked out by vacuum pump.* This is usually done in a clinic in a short space of time. For second trimesters the dismembering of the fetus to extract it from the mother, or induced abortion brought on by injection, are usual procedures. A short stay in a hospital is normal. For any third trimesters a major operation, such as a hysterotomy, may be the only option.#

* The nine-month period of gestation is sometimes divided medically into three three-month terms called trimesters.

Hysterotomy is a cutting of the uterus, or womb, to remove the developing child. Not to be confused with hysterectomy, a removal of the uterus itself.



Emotionally and mentally, the effect of an abortion can be devastating

deity for forgiveness, can thus give vent to their feelings of shame, sorrow, and guilt. But they are not alone in feeling the need to do this. Consider the following personal experiences.

"I Soon Became Ashamed"

By the time she was 22, Elaine had had three abortions. She recalls: "I was told that it was not wrong or criminal to do it at only six weeks' gestation, since a baby had not been formed by then, only if it was three months or more. After that, when I heard people passing bad remarks about unwed mothers, I became happy I had terminated my pregnancy. Two years later I repeated the same procedure twice, becoming increasingly happy I had found a way of not bringing children into this world."

Soon after this, Elaine entered the nursing profession, working in midwifery. "It was a delight," she recalls, "to see the birth of a baby and to experience the joy such birth gives to doctors, midwives, and parents. But I soon became ashamed of myself for terminating three innocent lives and found myself struggling with my feelings of disquiet and embarrassment. I kept looking back and counting to see how old my children would be and whether they would have been boys or girls and what they would look like. It is horrible to be in such a situation."

Janet, a mother now 39 years of age, relates her feelings following an abortion: "The only way I coped was by brainwashing myself into believing that it never *really* happened to me. I convinced myself for many years that I couldn't have done it, that it was some horrible nightmare."

Nineteen-year-old Karen confides: "I did my best to pass off what I had done, but I cried when I saw a baby or a pregnant woman. I was so depressed. Then milk started to come out of my breasts to remind me. The nightmares I had made me wake in tears, hearing babies crying. I became so bitter over it all."

To view an abortion as a simple operation of convenience is misguided. Once the step has been taken, it is irreversible. The immediate problem may go away, yet its effects, as we have seen, can be far reaching and long lasting. But what about when an abortion is recommended by a doctor?

"You Ought to Abort the Child"

That was the straight advice given to Sue by her doctor. Why? Sue already had two young children, and no sooner had she realized she was pregnant than one of them caught rubella, or German measles as it is more commonly called. "It was inevitable that I should catch it, too, as I had never had it before," she says. Sure enough, soon she was quite ill herself.

Medical experience has established that rubella, when contracted by a woman early in pregnancy, can cause distressing deformities to the growing embryo. It was with this fact in mind that the doctor spoke as he did. "He told me bluntly," Sue recalls, "that the baby would be deformed and that I would never be able to cope with it. At his clinic he insisted that if I ignored his advice, I would have to sign a letter accepting full responsibility, absolving him." Sue signed it. "In all fairness, I must say in his defense that he was genuinely worried about me, especially since I am an epileptic," she added.

Sue's husband, although naturally very concerned, left the decision to his wife, and she made arrangements to have her baby. In due time a daughter was born. Tests were immediately carried out on the child, but apart from slight anemia, there was nothing wrong with her at all. The doctors were surprised, however, to find antibodies in the baby's blood that her mother did not have, indicating that the developing child had certainly been affected by the rubella.

Coping With Deformity

Even though in that case the outcome was a happy one, the fact remains that many children are born deformed, in need of special care. It is easy to say that it is humane to prevent cripples' coming into the world, but who is in a position to judge the quality of life of another? Are there not people with varying degrees of mobility in every community, enjoying life to the extent they are able and contributing, in turn, something for the good of mankind?*

Sue viewed things this way. But she also had another source of strength upon which to draw—her faith. When her doctor first intimated that her baby would be deformed, she told him that even if this were so, she knew she could count on strength from God to help her cope. Also, she had no right to deprive a crippled child of the "wonderful hope of a cure of all physical sicknesses in God's new system of things," under the rule of his Kingdom. (Revelation 21:1-4) Such faith has its own rewards.

The Crucial Choice

"Birth? Or Abortion?" Faced with the choice, which will it be?

Sue reasoned: "My baby hadn't asked to be conceived, so what right had I to terminate that little life before it had a chance to see life?"

Her question is simple enough. How would you answer it?

* The care of a Down's syndrome baby was discussed in the February 8, 1986, issue of this magazine.

In Our Next Issue

- *Religion in Politics—Is This God's Will?*
- *Finding the Right Army*
- *Why Do I Lose My Temper?*

Abortion —And "the Source of Life"

TODAY, with modern technology, doctors can easily determine the sex of a fetus. But who can determine its disposition? Who can see its potential as a living, human soul? (Genesis 2:7) Only Jehovah God can, since he is "the source of life." (Psalm 36:9) Consider the following Scriptural examples.

The patriarchal laws of inheritance related to the primacy of the firstborn. Yet, when Rebekah, Isaac's wife, was pregnant with twins, God told her: "The older will serve the younger." The lives of their two boys, Jacob and Esau, testified to Jehovah's understanding of their personalities long before their birth.—Genesis 25:22, 23.

Centuries later, an angel told Zechariah the priest that his wife Elizabeth would have a son who should be named John. It was the privilege of this son, later known as John the Baptizer, to prepare the way for Jesus, the Messiah. Humility of mind was an exacting requirement for this commission, as God well knew.—Luke 1: 8-17.

The Human Fetus—How Precious?

King David acknowledged: "You [Jehovah] kept me screened off in the belly of my mother. . . . Your eyes saw even the embryo of me, and in your book all its parts were down in writing." And that is just as true of any one of us.—Psalm 139:13-16.

Every human pregnancy is precious to "the source of life," Jehovah God. Just how precious, the Mosaic Law makes clear at Exodus 21:22, 23: "In case men should struggle with each other and they really hurt a pregnant woman . . . , if a fatal accident should occur, then you must give soul for soul."

Some Bible translations make it appear that in this law the crucial matter was what

A Happy Conception

In 1973, *The Watchtower,* the companion magazine to *Awake!,* carried a short article discussing the Bible's viewpoint on abortion. Two young students read it. The girl was pregnant, and she and the father had agreed on an abortion. But the article made them think. As a result, they decided to have their baby.

Recently the man was again contacted by Jehovah's Witnesses, and he said: "I have the highest esteem for your Bible literature. It is because of that jolting article that my wife and I are the proud parents of a lovable 13-year-old daughter today!"

It was certainly rewarding for them to take the Scriptural course.

H. Armstrong Roberts

happened to the mother, not the fetus. The original Hebrew text, however, refers to a fatal accident to either mother or child.

Early Christian Thinking

Following the death of Jesus Christ's apostles in the first century, many men expounded on their teachings. These writers were not inspired as the Bible writers were, but their comments are of interest, for they reflect the religious thinking of their time on this crucial issue. Here are some excerpts.

***The Letter of Barnabas*, chapter 19:5 (c.100-132 C.E.)**

> "Thou shalt not slay the child by procuring abortion; nor, again, shalt thou destroy it after it is born."

***The Didache*, or *The Teaching of the Twelve Apostles* (c.150 C.E.)**

> "This is the Way of Life: . . . You shall not kill the child in the womb or murder a new-born infant."

***Tertullian: Apology*, chapter 9:8 (c.197 C.E.)**

> "But with us murder is forbidden once and for all. We are not permitted to destroy even the foetus in the womb, as long as blood is still being drawn to form a human being. To prevent the birth of a child is anticipated murder. It makes no difference whether one destroys a life already born or interferes with its coming to birth. One who will be a man is already one."

***Basil: Letter to Amphilochius* (347 C.E.)**

> "She who has deliberately destroyed a foetus has to pay the penalty of murder. And any hair-splitting distinction as to whether the foetus was formed or unformed is inadmissible to us."

The Christian View

A spontaneous abortion or a miscarriage may result at any time from human imperfection or from an accident. A deliberately induced abortion, however, simply to prevent the birth of an unwanted child, is a different matter. According to the Scriptures, as we have seen, it is a willful taking of human life.

Who is "the One laying out the earth and its produce, the One giving breath to the people on it, and spirit to those walking in it"? It is not man but the Source of all life, Jehovah God. (Isaiah 42:5) Our God-given ability to pass life to our offspring is a precious privilege for which, as in all things, "each of us will render an account for himself to God."—Romans 14:12.

Abortion —Knowledge Brings Responsibility

DO YOU always speak when you *know* something is right? It is good to do so, especially when the welfare of others is at stake. After reading an article on the subject of abortion in an earlier issue of this magazine, a mother in England wrote as follows:

"I have just read the 'Letter From the Mother of an Unborn Child' in the July 22 [1986] issue of *Awake!* and it broke my heart.

"I have never experienced an abortion, but when I was four months pregnant with my first child, my sister-in-law was two months pregnant with her third child. She had just got her two little girls off to school and had found herself a well-paying job. There were things she wanted: furnishings, videos, a new car, plants for the garden. But a baby would have put an end to the job and thus to the income to buy all these things. So she decided to have an abortion.

"As the day of the abortion closed in, she felt excitement. But I grew sicker and sicker at the thought of it. I was by this time just beginning to feel my baby kicking within me, and I used to think of the baby within my sister-in-law growing too.

"The eve of the abortion came, and I kept hoping my sister-in-law would change her mind. I could visualise her baby, snug and safe in her womb listening to the soft and relaxing beat of its mother's heart. Then my mind would recoil at the thought of that little child torn away from its safe little world and destroyed. I would cry deeply at the thought. The abortion took place. My little daughter will never know the cousin she could have grown up with, their ages being so close.

"What of my sister-in-law? She lost her job but found another, and she has had several since. She got her videos, her new car, her plants, new clothes, etc., but she went through a stage of depression and left her husband and children, then returned home after a few days. But she isn't happy. When she visits me, her two little girls play with my daughter and my son of 11 months, and they say of my daughter: 'Isn't she lovely, Mummy? I wish we had a little sister or brother.' It's at these words that I steal a glance at her expression. I feel I want to comfort her because at the time of her abortion she didn't really realize what she was doing. But my sister-in-law chose money above the life of her child, and it is for this reason I feel she now regrets it.

"However, this leads to my asking myself a very serious question. I might think of myself as one of Jehovah's Witnesses, although not yet baptized. But I can see I yet have a long way to go, for true Witnesses are like Jesus, feeling love and compassion toward all, no matter what others have been or done. I long for the day when I can truly say I feel as they do toward others and carry Jehovah's name proudly. Perhaps if I hadn't sat on the fence so long, I could have had the courage to witness to my sister-in-law, and the baby might have been saved."

It is the sincere hope of the publishers of *Awake!* that this present series of articles may serve that very purpose.

The League of Nations Staggers to Its Death

THE League of Nations was a sickly child from its very birth. Historian H. Gatzke says its first meeting in 1920 was "less a world confederation of nations than it was a conference of major European powers pursuing national interests, intent upon making the League serve their own political purposes." Until nationalistic thinking could be eradicated, the child's life would be in constant danger.

During the early 1930's, many of the League's members were plainly dissatisfied. Italy, for example, felt it was not getting its fair share of the world's raw materials and that it was being denied access to world markets and investment possibilities. So in 1935, in pursuit of national interests, it invaded Ethiopia. Japan, with similar grievances, moved into China in 1937. In both cases the League was powerless to intervene.

Clearly, the League, not yet 20 years old, was not the strapping, healthy teenager its supporters wanted it to be. Its terminal illness was causing concern as early as 1936 when, according to historian Hermann Graml, "the atmosphere [at the League's headquarters] in Geneva was like that at a funeral." No wonder, faced as the League was with the audacious behavior of Italy and Japan, not to mention that of a man named Adolf.

"Hitler's Favorite Subject"

Yes, Germany, too, was dissatisfied. It was struggling hard to regain a position of European leadership. General Hans von Seeckt, head of the German armed forces in the 1920's, 'held that a renewed ascent of Germany was unthinkable without a new war,' says a German textbook; nor did Hitler rule out the possible need of military action. That is why, according to a German military history research organization, "all the regime's important measures [between 1933 and 1939] served, either directly or indirectly, the purposes of rearmament."

U.S. National Archives photo

U.S. Army photo

War sounded the death knell of the League

As Hitler saw it, "the German 'masses' were composed of 85 million people forming a unified 'racial nucleus.' Hitler's pseudo-Darwinistic approach required that this 'racial nucleus' conquer its 'territory.'" So as Gerhard Schulz, professor of modern history at the University of Tübingen, explains: "The violent conquest of new territory was Hitler's favorite subject."

Actually the League of Nations helped Hitler decide where to begin. At the end of World War I, the Saarland, a region between France and Germany, tossed back and forth between them for centuries, was placed under the administration of the League of Nations. But a provision was made whereby Saar citizens would later decide by vote whether to stay under League control or to become part of either France or Germany. A plebiscite was scheduled for 1935.

At that time Hitler was very popular. Young students were sometimes given dictation, being told to write, for example: "As Jesus liberated mankind from sin and hell, so Hitler saved the German nation from ruin. Jesus and Hitler were persecuted, but whereas Jesus was crucified, Hitler was elevated to the chancellorship. . . . Jesus built for the heavens, Hitler for the German earth."

Far from displaying Christian neutrality, religious leaders became actively involved in plebiscite politics. Predominately Catholic, Saar inhabitants took to heart what their bishops told them: "As German Catholics, we are obligated to support the greatness, the prosperity, and the peace of our fatherland." And the Catholic trade unions warned: "He who is unfaithful to his fatherland will not be faithful to his God."

Of course, not everyone agreed. A renowned author of the time, Heinrich Mann, warned: "If you vote for Hitler, you will prolong his life and will share responsibility for his misdeeds . . . , even for the war that he makes inevitable." But such warning voices were few. This led journalist Kurt Tucholsky to write that the Saar had been "deserted by England, by France, by the League of Nations, by international labor unions, and by the pope."

Given these circumstances, Hitler's victory in the plebiscite was a foregone conclusion. An overwhelming 90.8 percent voted for becoming part of the new German Reich.

After this first major foreign policy victory, Hitler was encouraged to press on. The League of Nations, already on its deathbed, was too weak to interfere when, in violation of the terms of the Versailles Treaty, Hitler remilitarized the Rhineland in 1936. In 1938 no one prevented him from occupying Austria or later that year from annexing the predominately German-populated Sudetenland part of Czechoslovakia, preliminary to invading the rest of the country in 1939. There were loud protests, to be sure, but nothing more.

Dress Rehearsals—For What?

Up until then, Hitler's war of aggression had proceeded without bloodshed. Not so the above-mentioned conflicts in which Italy and Japan had become involved. "Fascistic Italy's attack on Ethiopia," says the Italian reference work *L'uomo e il tempo,* "was prepared down to the minutest detail and was executed with a tremendous expenditure of material and with the support of an enormous propaganda apparatus." That war began in 1935, and the occupation of Ethiopia was completed in 1936. The world was shocked to hear about bombing raids and the use of poison gas.

In Asia, Japanese militarists had become so powerful that when China was charged with trying to bomb a South Manchurian Railway train in 1931, Japan was able to seize upon this as an excuse to move troops into Manchuria. In 1937 they advanced into China proper, capturing large sections of land, including the cities of Shanghai, Peking, Nanking, Hankow, and Canton.

Meanwhile, in Europe the Spanish civil war had broken out in 1936. Hitler and Mussolini saw in this an opportunity to try out their newest weapons and methods of warfare. Like the wars in Manchuria, China, and Ethiopia, it served as a dress rehearsal for something larger in the future. According to one authority, more than half a million persons were killed in the Spanish conflict. No wonder it caught world attention. And if the dress rehearsal merited headlines, what about the main performance that was yet to come?

Lightning Strikes in Europe

The democracies, observing developments on the world stage, were concerned. Great Britain introduced military conscription. Then in August 1939 Germany and the Soviet Union caught the world by surprise by signing a nonaggression pact. In reality it was a secret agreement to divide Poland between them. Gambling that once again the Western democracies would not intervene, Hitler moved his troops into Poland at 4:45 a.m. on September 1, 1939.

But this time he was mistaken. Great Britain and France declared war on Germany two days later. On September 17, Soviet troops invaded Poland from the east, and by the end of the month, for all practical purposes, the Polish question was settled. World War II had begun, launched by a swift military campaign worthy of the German expression *Blitzkrieg,* meaning "lightning war." In the glow of victory, Hitler offered to make peace with the Western powers. "Whether he was serious about this," writes German historian Walther Hofer, "is a question that cannot be answered with any certainty."

The first few war years were characterized by surprise attacks, carried out lightning fast and with destructive results. The Soviets quickly forced Estonia, Latvia, and

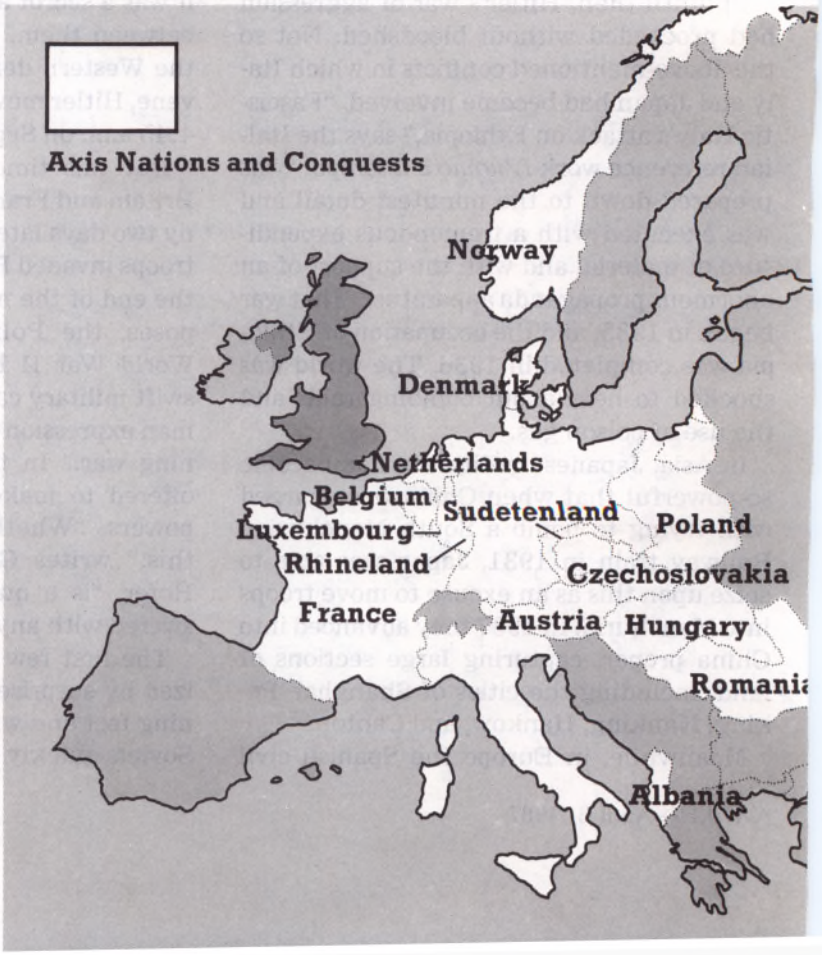
Lithuania into allowing Soviet troops to be stationed on their soil. Finland, when asked to do the same, refused and was invaded by the Soviets on November 30, 1939. Finland sued for peace under Soviet terms the following March.

In the meantime, however, Britain and France had contemplated going through neutral Norway to help Finland. But when Finland sued for peace, the Allies, no longer having any pretext for doing so, postponed those plans. Preliminary to a later landing, they started mining Norwegian waters on April 8, 1940. The next day, while the Norwegians were preoccupied with protesting this mine-laying operation, the Germans unexpectedly landed troops in both Norway and Denmark. Less than a week later, British troops landed in Norway, but after several victories, they were forced to withdraw because of unsettling reports from the south.

For months the question there had been: When and where will Germany make its move against France? Time elapsed with most military action confined to naval battles. On land all was quiet. Some journalists began speaking of a "phony war," no longer a blitzkrieg, but rather a sitzkrieg, meaning literally a "sit-down war."

However, there was nothing phony about the sudden attack by the Germans on May 10, 1940. Bypassing the Maginot Line, the defense line that guarded France at its border with Germany, they struck through the Low Countries, sped through Belgium, and reached the French border on May 12. By May 14 the Netherlands had fallen. Then sweeping down through northern France, German troops trapped thousands of British, French, and Belgian soldiers with the English Channel at their backs. Far from being a sitzkrieg, this was full-scale blitzkrieg!

On May 26, at Dunkirk, France, one of the most spectacular rescue operations in the history of warfare began. For ten days naval vessels, and hundreds of civilian boats, ferried some 340,000 troops across the English Channel to safety in Britain.



European expansion of the Axis powers up till 1940

Other Items That Made the News

1935—Over 200,000 persons killed in China in flooding along the Yangtze River

1936—The *Queen Mary* ocean liner crosses the Atlantic in record time of 95 hours, 57 minutes

Hitler infuriated when black American Jessie Owens wins four gold medals at Berlin Olympic Games

1937—DuPont patents a new product known as Nylon

After trans-Atlantic flight, German dirigible Hindenburg catches fire during mooring in New Jersey, killing 36

1938—Vatican recognizes Franco regime as official Spanish government

Scientists Hahn and Strassmann discover that neutrons can be used to split uranium

So-called *Kristallnacht* (Crystal night) when Jewish shops in Germany are plundered and destroyed

1939—Tens of thousands killed in Turkey earthquake

Development of first airplane jet engine and construction of first helicopter

1940—British make use of newly developed radar in air war

But not everyone escaped. Within three weeks the Germans took over one million prisoners.

On June 10, Italy declared war on Great Britain and France. Then four days later, Paris fell to the Germans. Before the month was out, a Franco-German armistice had been signed. Britain now stood alone. As Hofer describes it: "At a blitzkrieg tempo that even he himself had not thought possible, Hitler had become master over Western Europe."

Contrary to what Hitler expected, the British did not sue for peace. So on July 16, he ordered plans for "Operation Sea Lion," an invasion of the British Isles. Britain braced itself for the lightning that was due to strike again.

And Now What?

For years Jehovah's Witnesses had publicly been foretelling the demise of the League of Nations.* Now the lightninglike outbreak of World War II had ended its agonizing struggle for life. A long overdue funeral could be held. The body could be laid to rest in the abyss of which Revelation 17:7-11 speaks and on the basis of which scripture the Witnesses had foretold its failure.

But after death, now what? Would the war possibly lead to something bigger, perhaps to "the war of the great day of God the Almighty" called Armageddon? (Compare Revelation 6:4; 16:14, 16.) Although eager to see how the war would further develop, Jehovah's Witnesses were determined not to get personally involved. They would maintain Christian neutrality, even though this would subject them—in both totalitarian and democratic countries—to bans, imprisonment, court action, and mob violence. Although numbering fewer than a hundred thousand in that war year of 1940, they pushed forward in spreading the message of real hope, the message of God's established Kingdom.

And hope is exactly what "Nations in Anguish, Driven by Fear," needed. This is the title of our next installment, Part 4, in this series, "The World Since 1914."

* For example, *The Watchtower* of April 1, 1922, page 108, said: "Satan . . . now attempts to establish a universal empire under an arrangement designated a league of nations or association of nations. . . . This alliance is an unholy one and will be dashed to pieces shortly."

Speaking in Tongues —Is It From God?

"DIRECTLY, there came into my hands a strange feeling, and it . . . began to surge! It was like a thousand—like ten thousand—then a million volts of electricity . . . I spoke in a language I could not understand for about two hours."

This experience typifies one of the most debated practices that many associate with Christian worship today: speaking in tongues. This matter has been of particular concern to Pentecostal groups and charismatic movements in other churches.

Dr. Vinson Synan of the Pentecostal Holiness Church stressed the dilemma sincere worshipers face concerning the role of speaking in tongues. He said: "Speaking in tongues is an embarrassment to us." Why? Dr. Synan noted that tongues today may not seem to make sense to us. "Embarrassing as it may be," he continued, "glossolalia [speaking in tongues] is the gift that God has chosen *at strategic points in history* to expand and renew the Church." —Italics ours.

One such 'strategic point' was a most unusual occurrence some 1,900 years ago.

Why Tongues?

It was Pentecost of the year 33 C.E. A change was due. A new covenant was to replace the ancient Jewish Law covenant. For what reason? To open up a better way to worship Jehovah God. How could people see that God's blessing was upon this shift in worship? He would use an outburst of miraculous events, including the speaking in tongues, to move the hearts of righteously disposed people. These would see that the almighty God of their forefathers was indeed now conferring his approval upon Jesus' disciples.

The gift of tongues served another purpose at Pentecost. In Jesus' day, printing and broadcasting did not exist, and written records were not common among the ordinary people. Hence, the good news of God's will and purpose would have to be carried forth on the tongues of believers. Worshipers of Jehovah had come to the Festival of Pentecost in Jerusalem from over a dozen lands in Africa, Asia, and Europe, and they spoke several different languages. About 120 of Jesus' disciples also assembled in Jerusalem. Empowered with God's holy spirit, the disciples started to speak with different tongues. What a banquet of good news was served to a multitude of worshipers! These were able to "hear them speaking in [their own] tongues about the magnificent things of God."—Acts 2:5-11.

How effective was this miracle? Three thousand listeners became believers that same day! (Acts 2:41) Returning to their far-off homes, these new converts then bore witness about true worship "to the most distant part of the earth."—Acts 1:8.

Only a little more than two decades after Pentecost, Paul served notice that the gift of tongues would eventually cease. (1 Corinthians 13:8) Why would this be reasonable? Because the miracles at Pentecost, as a confirmation of

early Christianity, had served their purpose well and were no longer needed.

We can similarly view the case at Mount Sinai over 1,500 years earlier. Here God caused spectacular supernatural signs in order to impress upon the assembled people that the Law covenant was of divine origin. Once this new arrangement had been accepted by the people, these particular miraculous signs ceased to be seen.—Exodus 19:16-19.

Tongues Today?

Today many feel that they are assisted by God's holy spirit to speak in tongues. How can we reconcile this with Scriptural evidence that the gift of tongues has passed away?

Speaking in tongues usually amounts to highly emotional outbursts of sounds that no one understands. So it cannot be from God. Jesus said that religious hypocrites would try to attach his name to such "powerful works," but he rejected these "workers of lawlessness." (Matthew 7:21-23) And Paul prophetically warned of a future time when there would be fraudulent miracles, or "lying signs and portents." Thus, "every unrighteous deception" is a specialty of the archdeceiver, Satan the Devil. —2 Thessalonians 2:8-10.

Did you know that speaking in tongues was a part of certain pagan religions of Greece in Paul's day? Their rites mixed speaking in tongues with practices such as the cutting of the flesh and frenzied nude dancing. Such historical examples clearly show that speaking in tongues can occur under influences that are most unholy.

Reason Speaks Out

If you are still uncertain about the origin of the ecstatic speaking in tongues today, ponder over 1 John 4:1, which says: "Beloved ones . . . test the inspired expressions to see whether they originate with God." Yes, test by a sober study of God's Word, with prayerful petition for help. (Acts 17:11) See if those religions that speak in tongues today are really guided into "all the truth."—John 16:13.

When Christians spoke in tongues in the first century, it edified the listeners. The inspired message was to be clear and intelligible.—1 Corinthians 14:26-28.

Those who now honor Bible truth are uttering expressions that surpass the speech that came forth from inspired tongues on that day of Pentecost long ago. Why so? Because they are announcing God's Kingdom rule by Christ for all obedient mankind to a larger audience and in a permanent form. Their message is part of the Bible's written record, and unlike the first-century Christians' speaking in tongues, the Bible, in whole or in part, is available in some 1,800 languages.

First-century Christians were given the gift to witness in foreign tongues

crossword puzzle

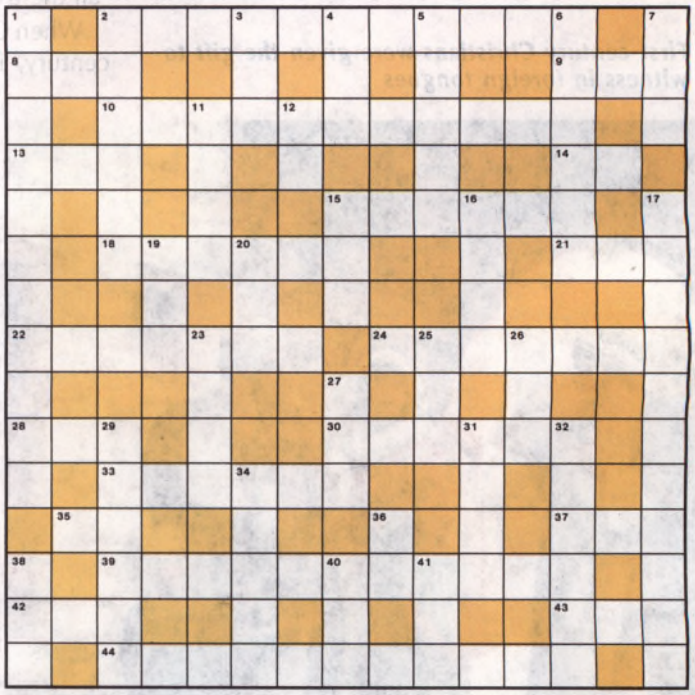
Clues Across

2. Christ's position in the spiritual temple (Ephesians 2:19-22)
8. This Jairite was "a priest of David" (2 Samuel 20:26)
9. Application (Hebrews 5:14)
10. Given in recompense for evil (Hebrews 2:2)
13. Likening bodily health and vigor to this (Job 8:16)
14. Job's homeland (Job 1:1)
15. Inlaid surface decoration (1 Chronicles 29:2)
18. The age at which Jesus amazed the teachers at the temple with his understanding (Luke 2:42-47)
21. Implement used in weeding plants (Isaiah 7:25)
22. Nameless (Acts 17:23)
24. City where believers burned their magical books (Acts 19: 17-19)
28. Substance used to make Noah's ark watertight (Genesis 6:14)
30. Landed property (Genesis 47:26)
33. Elijah's successor (2 Kings 2: 11-15)
35. Out of bed (Luke 11:7)
37. Satisfied a demand (Luke 23:24)
39. Father of Ahiezer, chieftain of the tribe of Dan (Numbers 2:25)
42. This son of Gad was among the offspring of Jacob that came to Egypt (Genesis 46:6, 7, 16)
43. With this number of fishes and five loaves, Jesus fed over 5,000 (Matthew 14:16-21)
44. Jesus quoted this book three times when answering Satan's temptations (See Matthew 4: 1-11.)

Clues Down

1. This part of the harvest offered to Jehovah (Leviticus 23: 10, 11)
2. Floor covering (See Judges 5:10.)
3. King Saul's grandfather (1 Chronicles 8:33)
4. To move along the surface of the body with pressure (Ruth 3:3)
5. This Greek Christian worked along with the apostle Paul (Galatians 2:1)
6. A court official, such as the Ethiopian man to whom Philip preached (Acts 8:27)
7. Freshly made (Mark 2:22)
11. Real (1 Kings 18:39)
12. Father of the Shuppim and the Huppim (1 Chronicles 7:12)
15. Except for Lot, all of them in Sodom were wicked (Genesis 19:4, 5)
16. Her son Jabal became the founder of nomadic herdsmen (Genesis 4:20)
17. It scattered the Jerusalem congregation, except for the apostles (Acts 8:1)
19. "--- without a word" (1 Peter 3:1)
20. It was transmitted by angels (Acts 7:53)
23. A son of Gad (Numbers 26: 15, 16)
25. When one blind person guides another, both fall into this (Matthew 15:14)
26. What Adam and Eve were forbidden to do from "the tree of the knowledge of good and bad" (Genesis 2:17)
27. Jesus miraculously walked on it (John 6:19)
29. Compensated (Romans 11:35)
31. City assigned to the tribe of Asher (Joshua 19:24, 26)
32. Mutual hatred (Genesis 3:15)
34. To change direction (Exodus 10:19)
36. Interjection of scorn (Isaiah 17:12)
38. Babylonian god (Jeremiah 50:2)
40. He and Aaron supported Moses' hands so as to attain victory over the Amalekites (Exodus 17:8-13)
41. The 5th of Jacob's 12 sons (Genesis 30:6)

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS PAGE 26



Young People Ask...

Can I Beat Stress?

HAVE you ever kicked a chair that you stumbled over? Or have you been so sick of your homework that you just threw all your books down? Then you have experienced how stress can trigger foolish actions that you later regret. Are there better ways to beat stress than by kicking and smashing? Yes, but first you need to know something about stress.

"Broadly defined, stress is what happens to the body when it is exposed to anything —nervous tension, disease, cold, heat, injury, and so on," say the authors of *Teenage Stress*. In "anything" they include even good things. "Some of your happiest moments can also be your most stressful," they say.

How does stress affect you? You know what happens when you get nervous and frightened: heart pounds, palms sweat, hands shake, face blushes, stomach gets knotted up, and mouth dries up. A lot of things take place in your body to cause these effects.

Glands begin dumping powerful hormones, such as cortisone and adrenaline, into your bloodstream. Your liver adds more sugar to your blood. All of this stimulates heart contractions, constricts blood vessels, increases blood pressure, and causes muscle tension.

Teenagers Are Stress Targets

Teenagers are naturally exposed to much stress. Puberty causes your body to undergo a number of changes. And we live in an ever-changing world. (Compare 1 Corinthians 7:31.) Adults, though, may gloss over this, saying, 'You are young, you are free from care, you should be happy.' But perhaps they have forgotten what it is like to be young. After all, you do have worries —about your appearance, sex, health, parents, friends, teachers, grades, money, the world situation, death. Why, being young is probably the most stressful time of your life! But do not panic. There is hope.

For one thing, a little bit of stress can be good for you. How? Consider the matter of taking a test. "According to experts, a little

stress keeps your mind alert and your juices flowing," writes Judith Kelman in the youth magazine *Seventeen*. Concert pianist André-Michel Schub, a winner of the prestigious Van Cliburn Competition, was once quoted as saying: "Every performer feels some degree of stage fright. . . . It's a way of having extra energy and extra intensity, of focusing so you communicate better." So stress should not be avoided at all costs.

The Young Take Stress Best!

Moreover, youths are usually equipped with a good supply of energy and a hopeful attitude to counteract pressures. The Bible says: "The beauty of young men is their power." (Proverbs 20:29) "Young people . . . are able . . . to recover from the ill effects of excessive stress more rapidly than older people," say the authors of *Teenage Stress*. Twenty-three year old Vincenza from New York is an example of this. She tells:

"When I was in my teens, my mom died of cancer. Eighteen months later, my dad suddenly died of a heart attack. I was left alone with my two younger brothers. Then I met this guy and became his girlfriend. But after a couple of months we broke up. Sometimes I wondered, 'Should I kill myself, or go crazy, or end up in a madhouse?'" Could Vincenza survive this most stressful situation? Says she: "Now when I think of it, I can't believe I lived through it. But I did! And I learned a lot."

Additionally, Vincenza learned from her aunt, one of Jehovah's Witnesses, about the Bible hope that the dead will be resurrected in a future paradise on earth. (John 5: 28, 29) "Although a Catholic at the time, I put all my trust in this newfound Bible hope. It helped immensely," she says. —Compare 2 Corinthians 1:9.

You Cannot Beat All of It

Nevertheless, one can never really get rid of all stress. "We are always in stress," writes the author of *Childstress!* "When there is no more, we are dead." Way back in Bible times people were also under stress. We read about Hannah, who for years often wept and refused to eat because she desperately wanted a child but was barren. (1 Samuel 1:7) Similarly, young Jeremiah was hesitant when God wanted him to preach to the nations. (Jeremiah 1:6) Job, after losing his property, his family, his health, wished he had never been born. (Job 3:10) On one occasion, Jesus was in such agony that his sweat became as drops of blood.—Luke 22:44.

So no one can escape stress. What will you do, then? Learn to handle it. You need to do that because excessive stress can make you physically ill and emotionally depressed. It can create mental confusion and spur you to say and do things that you will regret. It can cause wear and tear on your

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS

F		C	O	R	N	E	R	S	T	O	N	E		N
I	R	A			E		U		I			U	S	E
R		R	E	T	R	I	B	U	T	I	O	N		W
S	A	P		R		R			U			U	Z	
T		E		U			M	O	S	A	I	C		P
F		T	W	E	L	V	E			D		H	O	E
R			O		A		N			A				R
U	N	K	N	O	W	N		E	P	H	E	S	U	S
I				Z			S		I		A			E
T	A	R		N			E	S	T	A	T	E		C
S		E	L	I	S	H	A			M		N		U
	U	P			H			H		A		M	E	T
B		A	M	M	I	S	H	A	D	D	A	I		I
E	R	I			F		U		A			T	W	O
L		D	E	U	T	E	R	O	N	O	M	Y		N

mind and body. Here, then, are some ways to handle stress:

1. Reduce irritants. A dripping tap, a creaking door, a wobbling table can cause irritation. Small irritants add to your total load of stress. Do something about them. Get things tightened, oiled, and repaired. Have within reach things that are often needed. Organize. Experts say we spend 20 to 30 percent of our time just looking for things. Rearrange, tidy up, and decorate. Make it comfortable. Do not become a perfectionist, though. Perfectionism is a stressful burden for anyone to bear.

2. Organize and limit your activities. There's a saying that if you try to catch two hares at the same time, you will miss both of them. List what you have to do each day, and do one thing at a time. Work out a schedule with your parents about when and how to care for duties at home. Then do these willingly and cheerfully. Do not join in reckless, stressful activities that bring you into situations that cause you anguish and fright. It might be exciting for the moment but destructive in the end.

3. Lessen fear of failure. School tests can really put stress on anybody. You can lessen fear of failure, though, if you prepare well, get everything in order the day before, go to bed early, and sleep well. Do not take stimulants. They might put you on edge—not give you one. Relax, but do your best. Remember, one test seldom makes or breaks a person for life. If you fail, there will be other chances. Do not give up. At Proverbs 24:16 the Bible encourages a positive attitude: "The righteous one may fall even seven times, and he will certainly get up."

4. Talk to somebody. Steam boilers need escape valves. We humans even more so. When you feel anxiety and concern all bottled up in you, you should talk to somebody—a friend, a parent, a brother, or a sister. Sometimes you need to talk with somebody who can help you apply God's righteous principles, such as an elder in the Christian congregation. Feel free to do that.—Proverbs 12:15.

5. Use prayer. Think of the four Bible characters mentioned earlier, Hannah, Jeremiah, Job, and Jesus. What helped them most to handle heavy stress? All of them talked with Jehovah God about their problems. Hannah did, and Jehovah blessed her with a son. (1 Samuel 1:11, 20) Jeremiah did, and God made him a strong and fearless prophet to the nations. (Jeremiah 1: 6-10) Job did, and Jehovah compensated him abundantly for his loss. (Job 42:10-17) Jesus did, and Jehovah strengthened him so that he could rise and continue his sacrificial course.—Luke 22:44-46.

What happened to Vincenza after having lost her mother, father, and boyfriend? She tells: "I had to find someone that I could not lose. I had to love someone that I knew was never going to leave me. Then I thought: 'God, of course! He is always there. He must become my Father. He is the Creator of the Universe.' So I prayed: 'If you, Jehovah, are the real God, the Creator of the Universe, I am one that wants to serve you. Please, come and tell me that.' Later, one of Jehovah's Witnesses came to my door and she said: 'I'm here because somebody loves you.'" Vincenza accepted a Bible study. She learned to do what is said at 1 Peter 5:7: "Throw all your anxiety upon him [God], because he cares for you." She is now teaching others to do this.

So let us repeat: You cannot eliminate stress. But you can learn to lessen it, control it, and throw your anxiety on God. Then stress will never beat you.—Psalm 55:22.

From Our Readers

Young People Ask . . .

Your articles on "Young People Ask . . ." are fantastic. Not only do they help young people face up to life in the best way possible but they help many parents, including my sister who has a daughter, to find the right words when talking to children about the problems they have to face, such as drugs, sex, religion, finding a job, violence, school, communication with parents, teenage parents. Unfortunately there are many young people who have difficulty in communicating with their parents on these subjects, and others lack the courage to do so. But I believe that with the help of these articles many are doing so now.

S. F., Italy

Getting Along With Teachers

A week ago our Afrikaans teacher told the class to write an essay on the subject of our choice. I immediately knew what I wanted to write about. An article that had struck me was "Young People Ask . . . How Can I Get Along With My Teacher?" (October 22, 1985) There are 31 pupils in my class, and many, especially the boys, are rebellious and don't get along with some of the teachers. When we got our essays back, the teacher said to the class, "I want to read a good essay to you." Then she read my essay to the class, all listening attentively. Some shook their heads, some looked guilty, and others even turned pale. To me *Awake!* is of great value. I use it constantly at school to help me with my essays, oral parts, and projects.

I. B., South Africa

Recovering From Drug Abuse

Thank you for your article "Young People Ask . . . How Can I Recover From Drug Abuse?" (July 8, 1986) My husband is a recovering drug abuser, and the article helped tremendously in my understanding of what he is going through. We soon realized how true it is that negative attitudes are easily formed if he becomes too hungry, angry, tired, or lonely. I am better equipped to care for him now because I understand more than I thought possible.

A. S., United States

Bodybuilding?

Thank you for the fine material on bodybuilding. (December 22, 1986) You see, I had been thinking about spending an hour a day on muscle development, but the material you published was a great help to me. I now appreciate that body image is not the all-important thing; rather, people should like me for what I am. Also, God doesn't look at the body but searches the heart. So I have decided to give attention to developing my mind.

D. M., Brazil

Getting a reasonable amount of exercise that contributes to a healthier body is likely a good thing, as the article showed, but striving for improving the mind and cultivating godly devotion should be our first goal. See the article "Good Health Is Good for Business." (February 22, 1987)—ED.

The Stutterer's Challenge

I read with interest your article "Understanding the Stutterer's Challenge." (November 8, 1986) Being a stutterer myself, I found it interesting to read what other sufferers of this disposition experienced in their daily lives. I thank you for bringing this somewhat neglected subject into the open.

G. E., Wales

Watching the World

Religious Confidence Declines

According to a 1986 Gallup poll, Americans have more confidence in the military than they do in organized religion, reports *The New York Times.* Confidence in the military was indicated by 63 percent of those interviewed, but only 57 percent had confidence in religion. The latter figure marks a 9-percent drop from the 66 percent polled in 1985 who had confidence in religion. Why the sharp change in the public's trust? *The Times* reports that Andrew Kohut, president of the Gallup organization, "attributed the decline to the increased involvement of churches in controversial issues." He said: "Increasingly, religious figures and institutions have become controversial and more political."

Eat Your Oatmeal!

Mother said it was good for you, so, like it or not, you ate it. Was she right? New research shows that evidently she was. Scientists have found that by adding small amounts of oatmeal to low-fat diets, people who must regulate their fat intake can experience an even greater reduction of cholesterol levels. Reporting on the results of a study involving 208 patients, the *Journal of the American Dietetic Association* noted that after six weeks on a low-fat diet, cholesterol was reduced by 5.2 percent. However, adding oats to the same six-week diet brought an added 2.7-percent reduction for those using oat bran and a 3.3-percent reduction for oatmeal eaters.

More Blood Risks

Stored blood carries the risk of being contaminated by fungus that has developed in plastic containers. This came to light recently in Brazil when the National Secretariat of Sanitary Vigilance took

steps to halt the production of the plastic containers because of lack of hygiene, asepsis, and quality control on the part of certain manufacturers. The governmental action was considered appropriate and long overdue. The Secretariat's president, Mr. Luiz Felipe Moreira Lima, raised the question: "How can it be that for all these years nobody saw this?" How many thousands of people have been transfused with fungus-contaminated blood is anybody's guess.

Unusual Measures

Fear of AIDS has led to some new and unusual measures for preventing the spread of the deadly disease in Italy. *La Tribuna,* an Italian newspaper, reports that prostitutes in Pordenone and Treviso have been given printed tracts that explain in clear terms how AIDS from sex can be avoided. The tract, however, which is published by the Committee for Civil Rights of Prostitutes, is not intended for their use but for the use of prospective clients who may be potential carriers of the disease. The tract explains that it is the prostitute who fears contracting the disease and who will refuse a client if appropriate protective measures are not taken. AIDS cases in Italy have been doubling every eight months.

Pollution Kills

About 30 tons of chemicals from a Swiss chemical plant were accidentally washed into the Rhine River last November. The *International Herald Tribune* reported that an estimated 500,000 fish of 34 different species were killed. But the disaster was not limited to fish. According to the French daily *Le Figaro,* many water birds died as a direct result of the river's chemical pollutants. "Dozens of dead herons and grebes were picked up. Diving ducks that feed on shellfish have been

poisoned, as well as herbivorous swans. All of this proves that pollution affects nature at all levels." It has been estimated that it will take ten years for the Rhine to recover its ecological balance.

Mimicking TV Violence

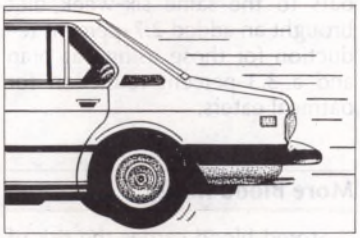
Shaka Zulu, a controversial television series, has caused the days of the spear and shield to be relived by South Africa's youths, notes an article that appeared in a supplement to the *Natal Witness,* a South African newspaper. "Both black and white boys—and girls—are crazy with the new game" of acting out the TV series *Shaka Zulu.* "Before it hit the screens, kids were already playing . . . violent games," explains Khaba Mkhize, author of the article, but now "groups of young boys and girls 'attack' each other with make-do spears and cardboard shields the same way the actors do." The result is a growing list of injured people. Regarding the effects of TV violence on today's youths, one official noted: "As they grow to adulthood they will have been trained to be society's Shakas and Rambos."

Drinkers' Health Costs

"Almost 10% of Ontario's health care budget" of about $10 billion (Canadian) is related to alcohol, reports the Canadian periodical *The Journal,* published by the Addiction Research Foundation. Other reported statistics are: 84 percent of Ontarians drink occasionally, and 49 percent of all drinkers imbibe "five or more drinks at a sitting," which is an amount "detrimental to physical, social, or mental well-being, or all three." A sobering statistic is that in a two-year period "6,300 deaths in Ontario—close to 10% of all deaths—were alcohol-related," concludes the article.

Too Fast

In the Federal Republic of Germany, some 23,000 road-maintenance workers have complained about irresponsible drivers. "Drivers shoot past road-work sites at 170 km (105 mi) per hour without a care in the world," said



Josef Hilgers, chairman of their association, in Cologne. Ten workers were killed last year and several dozen injured, reports *Süddeutsche Zeitung.* This, together with other hazards, such as high noise levels and air pollution, prevents almost all workers from staying on until retirement age.

Other European countries also agree that fast driving is a serious problem. A new law in Italy stipulates fines of about $575 (U.S.) for motorists and approximately $1,150 for truck drivers who exceed speed limits by more than 10 km (6 mi) per hour!

Ledger of Crime

The ethics of a 46-year-old homeless man arrested for riding a stolen bicycle baffled the Tokyo police. His seemingly minor offense mushroomed when police discovered two notebooks the man was carrying. *Asahi Evening News* says the notebooks were "meticulously detailed and neatly handwritten" by the thief himself and listed some 100 thefts that netted over 1.5 million yen ($9,400, U.S.). Explaining the reason for logging his crimes, he said: "When I was arrested once before, I couldn't remember all the details of what I'd done and caused inconvenience to the police officers in charge. I vowed, there and then, not to let that happen again."

Germany's Aged

Are there many people still living who were born before 1914? Although their numbers are dwindling, consider figures from just one European country. West Germany has 1.8 million people over 80 years of age and 146,000 over 90, according to a 1986 study by Professor Ursula Lehr and published in the German magazine *Aktiver Lebensabend.*

Infection Fighter

Why is cranberry juice effective in fighting urinary-tract infections? Dr. Kathryn Schrotenboer, writing in *Family Circle,* explains that it was formerly thought that the chief effect was to inhibit the growth of bacteria by acidifying the urine. However, studies at the Youngstown State University in Ohio have shown that, in addition, it actually prevents bacteria from affixing itself to urinary-tract tissue. While its healing properties may not be as effective as antibiotics in cases of acute infection, microbiologist A. E. Sobota claims that drinking 12 to 15 ounces (0.3 to 0.4 L) of juice daily will help to "wash out" bacteria in the urine. In support of Sobota's findings, Dr. Schrotenboer suggests that drinking two or three glasses of cranberry juice a day "may ward off recurrent attacks of cystitis."

Where Did It Start?

IMAGINE my surprise when I heard the strange sound of tinkling bells, a violin, and people dancing outside an ancient inn in the Cotswold village of Broadway, England. As I drew closer, I saw groups of dancing men dressed in white, wearing straw hats bedecked with flowers and ribbons, with little bells tinkling harmoniously from their shins. They were Morris dancers. I was watching a custom that goes back hundreds of years. Intrigued, I decided to find out more about this strange all-male dancing.

One source says the name Morris comes from the Spanish *morisco,* meaning "Moorish." Some believe it was developed from the *morisco* dance, or Spanish fandango. Although in England it goes back at least to the time of Henry VII (1457-1509), it became popular in village festivities during the reign of Henry VIII (1509-47). Similar dances are common in other parts of Europe, the Middle East, India, and areas of Central and South America. But what do the Morris dances represent?

The New Encyclopædia Britannica explains that a common feature of many of them is a group of dancing men "attendant on a pagan god who celebrates his revival after death. Often the dancers wear white clothes and dance with bells fastened to the legs or body. A feeling that the dances have magic power or bring luck persists wherever they are traditionally performed."

A variation of the Morris dance is the horn dance held annually at Abbots Bromley in Staffordshire, England. The same encyclopedia explains: "This dance-procession includes six animal-men bearing deer antlers . . . a man-woman, or Maid Marian, and a fool, both carrying phallic symbols."

Although for many Morris dancing may seem to be an innocent pastime, it is wise for conscientious Christians to be aware of its origin.—*Awake!* staff writer.

Awake!

April 22, 1987

RELIGION IN POLITICS
Is This God's Will?

When on trial before the Roman governor Pontius Pilate, Jesus Christ said: "My kingdom is no part of this world."—John 18:36.

Do clergymen have this viewpoint today? Is it possible in our time to be in the world and still be no part of it? What is religion's role in modern politics?

"The words 'religion' and 'politics' were yoked in news stories throughout 1984 in all parts of the world. . . . Anglican bishop Desmond Tutu [was] a symbol of the clash between church and state over apartheid . . . In a benediction at [a political] convention, Jerry Falwell, fundamentalist leader of Moral Majority, referred to Reagan and Vice-Pres. George Bush as 'God's instruments in rebuilding America.'"—***1985 Britannica Book of the Year.*

"From Poland to the Philippines . . . there are bishops and priests speaking out against the State in which they live. The Church is not just the place where God is worshipped, but where dissent is fomented."—***Glasgow Herald,* **January 3, 1985.**

It Is All Around Us!

HAVE you read such news reports? Likely so, for most of us have noted that religion and politics are often linked in the news. Do you feel that it is right for religion and politics to mix?

Some may say, 'Religion and politics are subjects that I don't talk about.' Even if you feel that way, it is in your best interest that you be informed about what is happening regarding religion and politics and how this may come to affect your own life. Further, by referring to the Bible on this matter, you will find that God has things to say about religion's mixing in politics and about where it is leading.

A Worldwide Mix

First it will be helpful to see just how widespread this mixing is. Note some recent reports.

"Political involvement is implicit in the Christian Gospel, says [Peter-Hans Kolvenbach,] leader of the Society of Jesus, . . . which has in the past come under fire from the Vatican for mixing too much in political affairs."
—***The Toronto Star,* May 31, 1986.**

■ April 21, 1986: "In the Philippines the Catholic Church enjoys high prestige for helping topple ex-President Ferdinand Marcos. Anglican, Methodist and Catholic churches in South Africa have railed for years against the government's apartheid policies. Catholic clergy in Latin America, under the banner of 'liberation theology,' are deeply involved in trying to oust regimes deemed oppressive to the poor."

■ Seoul, Republic of Korea, March 9, 1986: "The Roman Catholic primate of South Korea, Stephen Cardinal Kim Sou Hwan, gave his support today to opposition party demands for swift constitutional changes."

■ August 18, 1986: 'The candidate is an ordained and militant Protestant minister, crusading to wrench his party from the clutches of the moderates he scorns. Who is this galvanizing and polarizing force in U.S. presidential politics? Ironically, the description applies equally well to two clergymen: Pat Robertson on the Republican right and Jesse Jackson on the Democratic left.' 'A fund-raising letter referring to the success [Robertson's] delegate candidates

Awake!® April 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 8

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

It Is All Around Us! 3
Why Do the Clergy Mix in Politics? 5
Religion in Politics —Is This God's Will? 8

Also in This Issue

Finding the Right Army 11
The World Since 1914 Nations in Anguish, Driven by Fear 15
Japan's Magazine Production Gets 'In-Line' ... 20
Young People Ask... Why Do I Lose My Temper? 22
Almonds—The Nutty Fruit 25
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Eyes in the Sky 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

were having began "The Christians have won! . . . What a breakthrough for the Kingdom!"'

■ Brasília, Brazil, July 3, 1986: "The church has already emerged as the strongest critic of the new civilian Government . . . As a result, church-state relations are again in turmoil, with officials charging priests with radicalizing the situation in the countryside and some bishops accusing the Government of resorting to tactics of 'persecution and defamation.'"

■ September 25, 1984: "Iran's Khomeini represents the forces of Shia Muslim fundamentalism and teaches that Islam should dictate politics, economics and military strategy."

■ April 7, 1985: "A majority of Anglicans think that the Church of England should keep out of politics, according to a Gallup Poll conducted exclusively for *The Sunday Telegraph.*"

■ October 4, 1986: "Mexico's Roman Catholic church is lining up behind the growing opposition to the country's ruling [party]. The church made its boldest venture into politics in July . . . The bishops proposed to cancel Sunday masses in protest at the vote-rigging; but the Pope intervened."

■ Washington, D.C., U.S.A., July 6, 1986: "Christian evangelical leaders are using their money, spiritual convictions and millions of members to do battle in the secular arena—and are playing an increasingly influential role in American politics."

Why Is It Thus?

Yes, there is no denying that religion is very involved in politics. But what moves religious leaders to mix in political matters? Has God offered any judgment on this intermingling? Where is all of this heading, and how will you be affected?

Why Do the Clergy Mix in Politics?

SINCE you are affected, you have good reason to ask, "Why?"

Understandably, no single motive applies to all the priests, ministers, and other religious leaders who have mixed in politics. Some have motivations that most people would condemn. Others may have admirable reasons, such as concern for the poor.

Your having insight into their motives will put you in a better position to consider God's view of the matter and to appreciate what he says the future holds.

Position, Profit, and Politics

To understand one reason why clergymen mix in politics, let us consider some first-century religious leaders. These men, the high priest and members of the Pharisees and the Sadducees, made up the Jewish high court. Being upset over Jesus' having resurrected Lazarus, they reasoned: "If we let [Jesus] alone this way, they will all put faith in him, and the Romans will come and take away both our place and our nation." —John 11:48.

"Our *place* and our nation." Yes, they worried about their position, influence, and authority, with any nationalistic interests being secondary. (Matthew 23:2-8) By currying favor with politicians, some clergymen have gained a standing of importance. For many, this also has been the road to a life of luxury. In fact, the last book of the Bible depicts "a woman" called "Babylon the Great," who was noted for "the power of her shameless luxury." The Bible and history show that she symbolizes false religion earth wide.—Revelation 17:1-5; 18:3.

Consider now evidence that this is why some clergymen mix in politics. The book *Religion and Revolution* tells us: "Between 1774 and 1790, 173 of the 192 French bishops belonged to the nobility. About one-half of the episcopate lived in Paris and enjoyed the splendor of the French capital. Cardinal Polignac died in 1741 without ever having visited the archdiocese to which he had been nominated fifteen years earlier. A growing spirit of laxness also afflicted the monasteries many of which were very rich." The upper clergy lived in luxury, while many parish priests were in poverty.

Mexico provides another example. In 1810 village priest Miguel Hidalgo led a fight for independence from Spain. Professor Guenter Lewy explains: "The pope in Rome and practically the entire episcopate condemned [those Mexican] patriots. The hypocritical ease with which the upper clergy [later] turned into ardent supporters of independence . . . was all too apparent and helped create the image of the church as a special interest group that could not be trusted. . . . The church was rich in lands and buildings, estimated by some to include more than one-half the real property of the nation."

Protestant, Catholic, Jewish, or of any other faith—would not all of us agree that

clergymen should not mix in politics to secure an exalted place? Yet, that is exactly what often happens.

From Nazi Germany to Today

The Nazi period offers more insight into religion's mixing in politics. Many thinking people have wondered, 'How did Catholic and Lutheran clergymen deal with Hitler and his brutal Nazis?'

Basically, it was by support or at least coexistence. Few religious voices rose in protest. Professor T. A. Gill writes about one exception. "[The theologian Dietrich] Bonhoeffer found out at last what his father and brothers had been telling him since he was fifteen: the church was not important enough anymore in the things that matter most to justify giving his life to it." Wearied by the church's support of Hitler or its passivity, Bonhoeffer joined a plot to kill Hitler. But Bonhoeffer was an exception.

Paul Johnson's *History of Christianity* describes the norm: "Both churches, in the main, gave massive support to the regime. . . . Of 17,000 Evangelical pastors, there were never more than fifty serving long terms [for not supporting the Nazi regime] at any one time. Of the Catholics, one bishop was expelled from his diocese, and another got a short term for currency offences." As to those who stuck to their principles, Johnson continues: "The bravest were the Jehovah's Witnesses, who proclaimed their outright doctrinal opposition from the beginning and suffered accordingly. They refused any cooperation with the Nazi state."

Since then, other clergymen have cooperated with brutal regimes so as to maintain their place of prominence, power, and wealth. An editorial in the *National Catholic Reporter* said: "The story of the Catholic church's failings in Argentina is one of silence and complicity with a ruthless military regime, one of the worst in recent history. . . . Church prelates were thus in positions to speak out and make a difference, perhaps even strip the regime of its religious justification. Yet, almost to the last man, they said nothing. Some, including clerics in military uniform, endorsed the torture and killings."—April 12, 1985.

Civil Rights, Social Justice

As mentioned earlier, however, some religious leaders are highly admired for their active role in politics for other reasons.

An example from the United States is the Baptist minister Martin Luther King, Jr., a civil-rights leader in a long crusade against racial discrimination. Other clergymen have been in the forefront of struggles for the rights of women and certain minorities. Priests and ministers have turned politically active in support of causes such as voting rights, equal pay for equal work, and fair employment opportunities. Most recently, a "theology of liberation" has been promoted to ease the suffering of the poor, such as by distributing land to the impoverished.

How do you feel about religious leaders'

"The Catholic church in Germany was German to the core, and like the Protestant church upheld the state and its authority."—*The German Churches Under Hitler.*

"The Russian Orthodox Church yesterday threw its weight fully behind Mr Gorbachev's disarmament proposals . . . It described [them] as 'perfectly consistent with the Christian approach.'"—*The Guardian* (London), April 9, 1986.

UPI/Bettmann Newsphotos

Martin Luther King, Jr., was prominent among religious leaders crusading against racial discrimination

involving themselves in politics in order to promote social action or "secular humanism," as such issues are sometimes labeled? Even some clerics are uncomfortable with what they see happening. Keith Gephart, a fundamentalist clergyman, commented: "When I was growing up, I always heard that churches should stay out of politics. Now it seems almost a sin *not* to get involved." A newspaper writer on religious issues noted: "Beginning in the early 1970s, fundamentalist Christians have gradually come to believe that political activism is a duty."

Even if the causes seem meritorious, consider how far such steps are taking the clergy, and see if you approve.

What Is Liberation Theology Doing?

Gustavo Gutiérrez, a Catholic priest in Peru, is widely credited with developing "liberation theology" in response to the plight of the poor. This trend is widespread among the clergy in Latin America and elsewhere. England's *Manchester Guardian Weekly* reported that the Bishop of Durham attacked the government's political philosophy and thus urged "advancing the cause of a 'liberation theology.'"

Is such a theology just an emphasis on concern for the poor, as urged in the Bible? Hardly. According to the *Guardian,* the bishop admits that "British liberation theology will take some of the diagnoses of Marxism very seriously." This involves interpreting the class struggle of the poor by using Marxist reasoning. With what consequences?

The *National Catholic Reporter* (July 4, 1986) carried the headline "Brazil's Land Fight Pits Church Against State." A fact underlying this conflict is that just a small number of "large landowners control 83 percent of the land." Clergy-led rallies and marches are part of the "land fight." And "fight" is a fitting word. The article said that "218 people were killed in more than 700 land conflicts last year, including Father Josimo Tavares, a Brazilian priest and land-reform leader, who was assassinated June 11."

Liberation theology is gaining popularity. A *New York Times* editorial acknowledged that the official Vátican position is that clerics should not be involved in partisan politics, but it further said that the Vatican "also embraces liberation theology's fundamental principle: that the Christian Gospel

J. Viscarrs/WHO

Poverty and injustice have given rise to liberation theology

justifies the struggles of the poor for political freedom and control over their lives."

In a similar vein is the charge that Maryknoll, a Catholic missionary order, has been "spreading the gospel of liberation theology and socialist politics." A 1985 study, *The Revolution Lobby,* charged: "Maryknoll has successfully brought the Marxist-Leninist message of violent revolution into public acceptance precisely because it has been allowed to operate as an arm of the Catholic Church. Its message has reached not only the average churchgoer, but leading American policymakers, as well."

Does God Approve?

Clearly, all around the globe today religion is mixing in politics, and there are various reasons for this. How, though, does God feel about it? The Bible shows that soon he is going to manifest his position plainly. How will you and your loved ones be affected? And what bearing should that have on your present attitude and actions?

Religion in Politics —*Is This God's Will?*

"JUDAS the Galilean rose in the days of the registration, and he drew off people after him. And yet that man perished, and all those who were obeying him were scattered abroad." (Acts 5:37) Here we have another Bible example of religion's mixing in politics.

Shortly before Jesus' birth, this Judas 'enlisted the aid of Saddok, a Pharisee, and threw himself into the cause of rebellion.' Though Judas was "a rabbi with a sect of his own," he "tried to stir the natives to revolt, saying that they would be cowards if they submitted to paying taxes to the Romans."—Josephus' *The Jewish War.*

Would Jesus Do It?

Soon after Jesus' baptism, the Devil attempted to involve him politically. Satan

offered him "all the kingdoms of the world and their glory." Christ did not deny that the Devil had authority over the governments. Rather, Jesus rejected this political opportunity, though he could have reasoned that with political power he would be able to do good for the people.—Matthew 4:8-10.

Later the people saw Jesus' ability to provide food. They evidently reasoned, 'If Jesus was in the government, he would be able to solve our economic problems.' Note what developed. "Jesus, knowing they were about to come and seize him to make him king, withdrew." (John 6:10-15) Yes, Jesus refused to become embroiled in politics, despite his qualifications.

Still later, some politically attuned Jews tried to trap Jesus over a political issue: taxes. Were Roman taxes too high? If a Jew paid the tax, would he thus endorse using taxes to support Rome's wars? We can learn something from how Jesus responded: "Pay back Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God." (Mark 12: 13-17) In contrast, 225 Roman Catholic bishops in the United States voted last November to adopt a 115-page economic statement that said, in part: "The tax system should be reformed to reduce the burden on the poor. . . . Those with relatively greater financial resources should pay a higher rate of taxation."

Think what we may about our taxes, Jesus remained neutral as to the politics of taxes. His disciples, such as the apostle Paul, did likewise. (Romans 13:1-7) Even on a hot social issue such as slavery, they were neutral. You can imagine how easy it would have been for a Christian, moved by kindness, to rail against slavery, even as clergymen now take sides on legalized abortion, apartheid, women's rights, and so on. But true Christians remained neutral!

Oxford professor E. P. Sanders writes: "It is now virtually universally recognized that there is not a shred of evidence which would allow us to think that Jesus had military/political ambitions, and the same applies to the disciples."

Executing God's Judgment

As we saw earlier, many Jewish leaders felt that it was in their best interests to be involved with the Roman rulers, doing so even over the trial and execution of Jesus the Messiah. (Matthew 27:1, 2, 15-31) Revelation portrays religion's influencing and using the political element as being like a 'woman sitting upon a wild beast.' Does that not suggest to you how God views this mixing by the clergy?—Revelation 17:1-5.

Here is how even some human observers are judging the matter:

Malachi Martin, a Vatican scholar, saw that clerics "who take up political and social causes are failing in their No. 1 role: to be representatives of Jesus Christ." He said: "Bishops, for example, do not have a mandate to write about economics or tell the president to not send missiles to Europe."

But what will happen when politicians and the people tire of the clergy's meddling? Last year the journal *Liberty* discussed how Emperor Constantine in the fourth century 'mixed politics and religion, creating a "church-state" beast.' It said about the situation today: "Just as in Constantine's day, *the church is using the state to achieve its own ends.*"—Italics ours.

God's Word makes clear what the outcome will be. The time is coming when the political element will turn on and devastate the world empire of false religion,

"It's time to get politics out of the pulpit and the pulpit out of politics. Religious officials have every right to whatever secular views they hold. [But] the pulpit is misused when it is used for secular causes."
—U.S. Assistant Secretary of State Langhorne Motley, June 1985.

which has long used politics to its own ends. Revelation 19:2 says that this will be an expression of God's judgment.

Can You Be Neutral?

You personally cannot stop religious leaders from meddling in politics. But individually you can strive to match the Bible's description of a true worshiper. Jesus said about his disciples: "They are no part of the world, just as I am no part of the world." Thereafter he told governor Pilate: "My kingdom is no part of this world. If my kingdom were part of this world, my attendants would have fought that I should not be delivered up to the Jews."—John 17:16; 18:36.

Is it possible in our time to be in the world, living on the globe as a legal citizen of some nation, and still be "no part of the world," to be neutral? The modern history of Jehovah's Witnesses answers yes. They have complied with the Biblical obligation to be law-abiding citizens, yet neutral as to political and military activities of the many nations in which they live.

The book *The Shaping of American Religion* said: "While refusing to salute the flag or to participate in the pointless wars between doomed nations, they are in other respects law-abiding citizens. Few other groups have so neatly solved the problem of remaining 'in' secular society without also being 'of' it." This has been true earth wide and in many political climates. Even in the face of intense pressure to abandon their neutrality, the Witnesses have given their allegiance first to God's Kingdom.

Historian Brian Dunn writes: "The Jehovah's Witnesses were incompatible with Nazism . . . Most important of the Nazi objections to the sect was the Witnesses' attitude toward the state and their political neutrality. . . . This meant that no believer could bear arms, vote, hold office, take part in public festivals, or make any sign of allegiance."—*The Churches' Response to the Holocaust* (1986).

Such neutrality continues. We read in *The Modern Encyclopedia of Russian and Soviet History,* volume 15: "Hitler passionately loathed the Jehovists and imprisoned perhaps 10,000 of them . . . The psychologically impervious Witnesses withstood German concentration camps better than most . . . The Soviet government has never permitted the Jehovah's Witnesses a legal existence, because it sees in the movement, even more than in other religious persuasions, an ideology that radically undermines its adherents' loyalty to the state. . . . They take no part in elections; they refuse to serve in the armed forces; they limit their exposure to official media to the absolute minimum."

The book *Christian Religion in the Soviet Union* (1978) adds: "Soviet Witnesses resist demands for participation in military service, elections, and all other political" activities, which are expected of citizens.

So it is possible to imitate Jesus' neutrality as to the political and military activities of the Roman and Jewish governments. Doing this today will be a protection when God executes his adverse judgment against religion's mixing in politics.

Finding the Right Army

When I served in the French Foreign Legion

IT WAS 1944, during the second world war. As a German held prisoner by the Allies, my desire to escape grew until it became an obsession. Nothing else mattered. That is why 13 fellow prisoners and I leapt from a speeding train near the border of Spanish Morocco.

Amazingly, apart from severe bruising, we all survived. However, our freedom was short lived. Four days later we were captured by mounted Arabian desert police. But the desire for freedom still burned strong. It would take more than a bruised body, the humiliation of recapture, and harsh punishment to quench it.

Months passed, and we were prisoners in Casablanca. Another escape plan. This time we painstakingly dug a 65-foot (20 m) tunnel. It took three months of backbreaking toil, but finally the night for escape arrived. Again, we all made it!

There was another tantalizingly brief period of freedom, but we were captured a few days later. This time our punishment was isolation in a special prison with increased hard labor for one month. Afterward we were released to the regular prison camp.

I was only 19, and those experiences left a lasting impression. At the time I was sure I was in the right army, which made all the efforts seem worth while.

Early Training

I was born in September 1925, near Bremen, northern Germany. My father was an expert soccer player, swimmer, and ice skater, so I grew up with a keen interest in sports. But I also loved reading. My parents went to church only at Christmas, to attend a funeral, or on some other special occasion. When I did go to church, I was surprised to see how many people slept through much of the pastor's sermon.

As I grew older, I read adventure stories and was fascinated to learn about other countries. I remember reading a book about the Torres Strait—a large stretch of sea between Papua New Guinea and

I was suddenly awakened when a firebomb crashed through our roof

Australia. This distant, intriguing part of the earth fascinated me, and I had vague hopes that one day I might visit this remote area.

We had an encyclopedia, and in this I read about the world's many religions and all their different gods. I wondered at times whether among all of these there was really a true God. Through the mail, Father regularly received a paper called *Der Stürmer*. I was intrigued by the unusual name Jehovah used frequently in its quotations from the Bible. Father explained that this was the name of the God of the Jews. I had read of many ancient gods, like Odin, Thor, and Frigga, as well as the Hindu gods Siva, Vishnu, and Brahma, but I had not come across the name Jehovah before.

First Taste of Army Life

Growing up under Nazi rule, I became a part of the Hitler Youth movement. By 1939 World War II had begun, and although I was only 14, I was trained for warfare. In time, air raids became a way of life. Once, I was suddenly awakened when a firebomb crashed through our roof, landing next to my bed. I extinguished it with sandbags and that way saved our house.

In 1943 I joined the paratroopers and was sent to France for training. After basic training I was sent to the front lines at Nettuno and Anzio in Italy. My leg was pierced by a bullet, and I was hospitalized for six weeks at Bologna. I returned to active service and not long afterward was taken prisoner near Siena, Italy.

It was while being taken by train to French Morocco that my 13 companions and I made our first escape bid. After recapture we were taken to a prisoner-of-war camp in the High Atlas mountains near the Sahara Desert. There I learned how to make bricks from clay and straw mixed with water. Later we were transferred to a Casablanca prison. It was from there that we made our second escape bid by digging the tunnel.

The French Foreign Legion

Although the war ended in 1945, we were kept as prisoners in Morocco. In 1947 we were taken to France, where I remained a prisoner until 1948. My first work after release was to cut timber in the Pyrenees. But then, in 1950, I joined the French Foreign Legion to fight against communism. First I was sent to Sidi-bel-Abbès in Algeria and later to Philippeville to be a paratrooper in the French army.

Next I was sent to fight in Indochina. There I was wounded in an ambush from which only two of us escaped alive. This time I was hospitalized in Hanoi for six weeks. After recovering, I was again sent back to fight in the jungle and the rice fields. Altogether, I notched 20 jumps as a paratrooper.

Eventually I became so sick with jaundice that the army medicos despaired of my life. I recovered but was pronounced unfit for active duty. Yet I could not get an honorable discharge. Fortunately, I was due for a lengthy furlough, so I requested a return to North Africa.

While there, I planned for another escape but this time alone. I realized that for about every 100 who escaped, 99 were caught again. So my planning was meticulous. I managed to get to Port Lyautey and board a German passenger liner. Once on the high seas and headed for Germany, I was safe.

Back in Germany, I was happily united with my family after being away for ten years. An old school friend arranged for me to join the German unit of the British army, making it the third army I had been in. I earned good money but was growing increasingly tired of army life.

A New Life in a New Land

The opportunity to migrate to Canada or Australia came my way. I chose Australia, and in June 1955 I arrived in Sydney, the capital city of New South Wales. I learned that employment was available on a large hydroelectric irrigation scheme in the Snowy Mountains, about 300 miles (480 km) southwest of Sydney. I knew this would be rugged work, but the pay was good, and I heard there were many Germans and other European migrants working on the project.

Since the war I had not thought much about religion. From what I had seen during the war, I was disillusioned with it. I had never heard of Jehovah's Witnesses, but a workmate who said he was a Witness often spoke to me about a remedy for world conditions, and what he said made a lot of sense. However, soon afterward he returned to Sydney, and I lost contact with him.

About this time I met and married Christa. I told my wife about things the Witness had told me, and she, too, liked what she heard. So on a visit to Sydney, I contacted him again. Although he also was German, he could read and speak English fluently and gave us a book in English, *From Paradise Lost to Paradise Regained.* As both Christa and I were still learning English, we could not understand all that the book said, though we understood a lot from the pictures.

When the Witness told us that the book was also available in German, one rainy weekend we hurried out to the Watch Tower Society's Australia branch office at Strathfield. There we obtained the book in German, and I read it through in one night. We went back to attend a meeting at the Strathfield Kingdom Hall. Everybody was so friendly, and it seemed to us a true friendliness, not a made-up one. We left that meeting loaded down with a stack of *Watchtower* and *Awake!* magazines as well as some other books in the German language.

I Proceed With Caution

Although what we were learning sounded wonderful, I was cautious about committing myself in any way. This was partly because of my mother's experience with organized religion. In 1936 she resigned from the Lutheran Church because she was disappointed with things she had heard and seen being practiced. Yet she did not lose her faith in God and would sometimes talk to me about it.

Then when I joined the army in 1943, we all had to go to church and listen to a priest give a talk. He assured us that if we were killed in battle, we would go to heaven immediately to be united with all the heroes of times past. Later, in the trenches and foxholes, I noted that many soldiers wore crosses for protection. My companion was wearing one when he was hit and killed right next to me. After recovering from horror, my first thought was: 'What did the cross do for him?'

I was astonished when I saw English

Men professing to be Christians were on both sides —killing one another!

prisoners of war also wearing crosses. I thought: 'If this is Christianity, then no Christian religion for me.' Why, men professing to be Christians were on both sides —killing one another!

The next time I saw the priest, I asked him about this. He said that when a war is on, you must fight for your country, but when the war is over, all should go back to their own churches. This was enough for me! 'There is something terribly wrong,' I reasoned. I could now understand why Mother resigned from the church.

So I was understandably cautious. Yet I soon became convinced that the Bible's message of truth was different. The hypocrisy of organized religion was not what the Bible taught. Now I could see why there was such confusion and turmoil on the earth. And I was delighted to learn at last who Jehovah is. He is the true God of all, not of the Jews only as my father had said.

Also, I learned where Christ Jesus fitted in. He is Jehovah's dear Son, and Jehovah sent him to earth to show us what to do and to provide a ransom so that we can gain everlasting life. I found out that God's Kingdom will make the earth a paradise and, what is more, that it will last forever.

The Right Army at Last!

We soon realized that to attend Christian meetings regularly, our weekend camping trips would have to stop, or at least be curtailed. Another problem I had was heavy smoking. For 16 years I had smoked 40 to 60 cigarettes a day, as well as an occasional cigar and a pipe. When it was pointed out to me that such defilement of the human body displeases God, I gave up the filthy habit in one day.

In February 1963 Christa and I symbolized by water baptism our dedication to Jehovah. Soon afterward we began the full-time ministry as pioneers, and in January 1965 we were appointed special pioneers. Now I was a soldier in Jehovah's Christian "army."

In 1967 we went to Papua New Guinea, serving first in Port Moresby and later at Poppendetta. We returned to Australia for a short time and then in 1970 went back to Papua New Guinea, where we served until September 1981. In one of our assignments, we helped build two Kingdom Halls and assisted many to learn Bible truths. We traveled by canoe to most places—using outboard motors. In three and a half years, 29 persons that we helped were baptized.

Both of us contracted cerebral malaria. I was unconscious for 48 hours and was not expected to live. Finally, in 1981, we decided to return to Australia, where we continued as special pioneers in Brisbane and later in Cairns, northern Queensland. Our present assignment is on Thursday Island, in the Torres Strait, just off the northernmost tip of mainland Australia. It is that faraway place I had read about when just a lad, not really believing that I would ever get there.

Looking back over our 23 years of pioneering, we have no regrets about enlisting in this "army." Our hearts rejoice that we have been able to help about 60 people dedicate their lives to Jehovah God. We find much happiness in our full-time preaching service and always encourage others to take up this blessed work.

I constantly thank Jehovah that, after serving in three national armies, with plenty of disappointments and several near-deaths, I was able to enlist in his victorious army as a soldier of Christ Jesus. (2 Timothy 2:3) Yes, I finally found the right army and pray that I may continue serving as a faithful warrior forever.—*As told by Siegmar Soostmeyer.*

Part 4: 1940-1943

Nations in Anguish, Driven by Fear

HIS words were enough to evoke fear in the bravest of persons. "I have nothing to offer but blood, toil, tears and sweat," newly appointed prime minister Winston Churchill told members of the British House of Commons. Stressing the seriousness of the situation, he declared: "Victory at all costs, victory in spite of all terror, victory however long and hard the road may be; for without victory there is no survival."

Yes, on that day, May 13, 1940, the British had every reason to be fearful. During the next six months, the German *Luftwaffe,* in preparation for an invasion, would send hundreds of its planes to rain down tons of bombs upon both military and nonmilitary targets. This later became known as the Battle of Britain, and it was designed to break Britain's air power and to destroy the morale of its people. But for the *Luftwaffe* the battle went badly. Hitler hesitated, and in October—at least for the moment—invasion plans were canceled.

Freedom From Fear?

In the United States, sympathy for the British continued to grow, eroding the official American policy of neutrality. Making his intentions clear, President Roosevelt said in 1940: "We have furnished the British great material support and we will furnish far more in the future."

On January 6, 1941, he went one step further. In an address to Congress, he spoke of what he called Four Freedoms. To help achieve one of them—freedom from fear—he proposed a global "reduction of armaments to such a point and in such a thorough fashion that no nation will be in a position to commit an act of physical aggression against any neighbor—anywhere in the world." This, in reality, was an indirect declaration of war on the policies and goals of the Axis powers.

Two months later the U.S. Congress authorized a program known as lend-lease. This allowed the president to supply war materials, such as tanks and

airplanes, as well as food and services, to any nation the defense of which he felt vital to U.S. interests.* Despite lingering domestic opposition, it was obvious that the United States was getting more and more involved in Europe's war.

Meanwhile, encouraged by the success of its European allies, Japan felt it could now move into Southeast Asia without excessive fear of British or Dutch interference. When it invaded Indochina in September 1940, Washington protested sharply. And when Japan moved into the southern part of the country, action followed. Japanese assets under United States control were frozen, and an embargo was placed upon oil shipments to Japan. With their vital interests threatened, the Japanese now felt compelled to eliminate the danger of any further United States intervention.

Military leaders argued that U.S. retaliatory capabilities could be measurably reduced by winning a decisive victory over U.S. naval forces, which exceeded those of Japan in strength by some 30 percent. Then by capturing American, British, and Dutch territories, Japan would have land bases from which to defend itself should it later be counterattacked. The start, it was decided, was to be made at Wai Momi.

This means "pearl waters," and it is what Hawaiians once called the Pearl River estuary because of the pearl oysters that once grew there. It is located a few miles west of downtown Honolulu. But on Sunday morning, December 7, 1941, the waters of Wai Momi were not filled with pearls but with the sunken carcasses of wrecked ships and the mangled bodies of their crews. Japanese warplanes attacking the main Pacific U.S. naval base located there inflicted severe losses.

The Pearl Harbor attack practically neutralized American naval forces in the Pacific, except for the aircraft carriers. Within hours, other U.S. air bases were bombed, and this left over 50 percent of the Far East U.S. Army aircraft in shambles. Three days later, Japan invaded the Philippines, captured Manila less than a month later, and took control of all the Philippine Islands by the middle of May. Quickly, one after the other, Hong Kong, Burma, Java, Singapore, Thailand, Indochina, British Malaya, Sumatra, Borneo, parts of New Guinea, Netherlands East Indies, as well as scores of Pacific islands, fell into Japanese hands. The Asiatic blitzkrieg was not one whit behind its European counterpart.

As 1942 drew to a close, freedom from fear was hardly descriptive of the world situation. More accurate were Jesus' prophetic words: "On the earth anguish of nations, . . . while men become faint out of fear and expectation of the things coming upon the inhabited earth."—Luke 21: 25, 26.

German Lightning Fizzles

Meanwhile, Germany and Italy were expanding their control over the Balkans. Hitler sent his troops goose-stepping into Yugoslavia and Greece on April 6, 1941. In less than two weeks, Yugoslavia fell, followed before the middle of May by Greece.

Hitler's next move was motivated by several desires. He was possibly still intent upon influencing England into suing for peace. He also wanted to take pressure off the Japanese, who were fighting the Soviets in China, so that they in turn could keep the Americans at bay. Thus Hitler readied his troops for a thrust against the

* Chiefly meant were Great Britain and Commonwealth nations, although in April of that year, help was also extended to China and in September to the Soviets. By war's end, some 50 billion dollars in aid had been given to 38 different nations.

Soviet Union, his ally in the Polish campaign.

Encouraged by previous successes, Hitler's generals felt that if they invaded in June, European Russia and the Ukraine could be theirs before the onset of winter. So on June 22, 1941, they struck. They moved with lightning speed from victory to victory. On two occasions they encircled large groups of Soviet troops and took over half a million prisoners each time. Leningrad seemed ready to fall, and by early December, German troops were pushing into the outskirts of Moscow.

U.S. Army photos

Winter, however, was near, and for once Hitler's troops were behind schedule. Leningrad and Moscow held firm. Soviet troops, now recovered from their initial shock and better equipped for winter warfare than their German counterparts, brought the German juggernaut to a halt. In fact, they even forced it into retreat.

The next summer the Germans rebounded. Their all-out attack on Stalingrad (now Volgograd), however, led to their undoing. Early in 1943 the Soviets surrounded tens of thousands of troops poised to take the city and forced them into surrendering. John Pimlott, senior lecturer at the Royal Military Academy Sandhurst, comments: "It was a stunning blow to German morale and the turning point in the war on the Eastern Front. Before Stalingrad the Russians had enjoyed no unqualified victories; after it they were to suffer few defeats."

By the end of 1943, nearly two thirds of the vast territory seized by the Germans in the preceding two years had been recaptured. German lightning had fizzled.

"Monty" Chases the "Desert Fox"

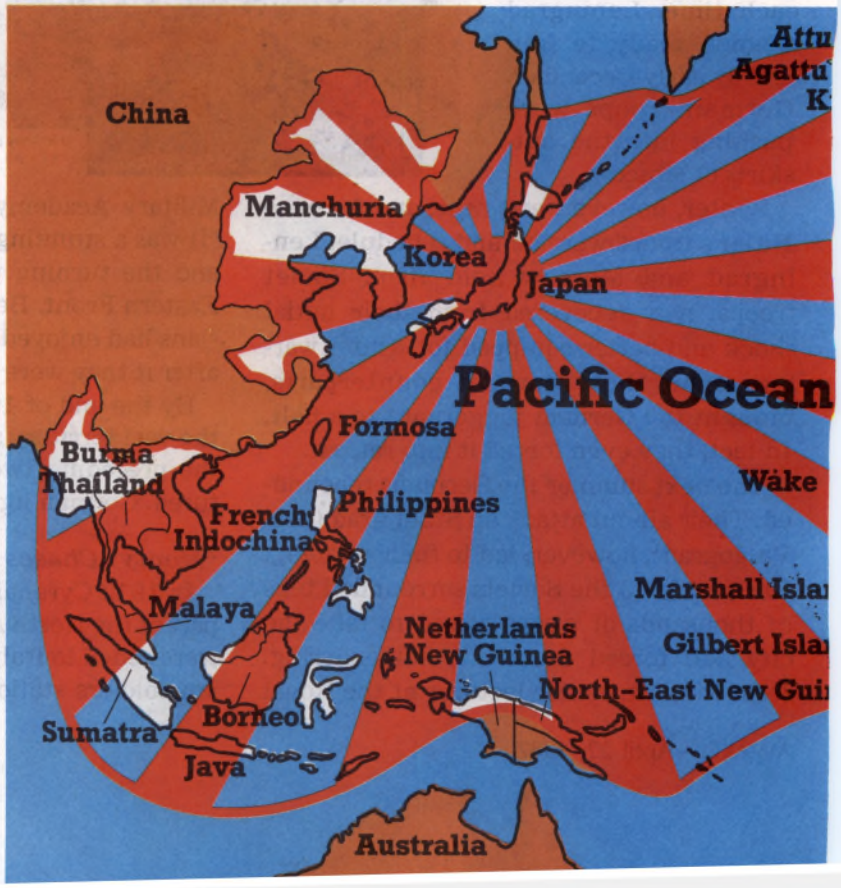
In 1912 Cyrenaica and Tripolitania (now part of the North African country of Libya) were ceded to Italy. The some 300,000 Italian soldiers stationed there at the end of

1940 posed a severe threat to the much smaller garrison of British troops in Egypt guarding the approaches to the strategic Suez Canal. To ward off this danger, the British decided to strike first. They achieved one of the first decisive Allied victories, taking tens of thousands of prisoners and sending the Italians into full-scale retreat. The victory might have been even greater had not Greece just at that time accepted the offer of British help in its unsuccessful struggle against the invading Axis powers. For the moment, the North African campaign was put on hold. This allowed the Axis powers time to reorganize.

German troops under the command of Erwin Rommel, who later became known as the Desert Fox, succeeded in turning the tide of battle and in making substantial gains. His greatest success came in 1942, when at the beginning of July his troops advanced to Alamein, within 60 miles (100 km) of Alexandria. Africa's blitzkrieg was now poised to capture Egypt and to gain control of the Suez Canal. But after British troops, under the leadership of General Sir Bernard Law Montgomery, launched an infantry attack on October 23, Rommel was forced into a gradual withdrawal that soon turned into a rout. Then in November 1942 the Allies successfully landed in Morocco and Algeria. By the following May, Axis troops, now caught between enemy forces advancing from east and west, had lost their bid to control North Africa.

Hopscotching Across the South Pacific

In the spring of 1942 Japan could boast of an empire grown to its greatest extent. But the Allied plan was to recover this territory from the Japanese, to hopscotch its troops across the Pacific from island to island until they finally reached the Japanese mainland. A long series of ferocious naval battles followed. Little-known Pacific islands like Saipan, Guadalcanal, Iwo Jima, and Okinawa were invaded at horrendous cost to both sides. Childhood daydreams of island paradises gave way to the



The extent of Japan's conquests by 1942

stark reality and nightmare of mutilated corpses on bloody beaches. Defeat was bitter, but even victory was tinged with fear, the fear of what was yet to come.

Plans for the Future

Even in the midst of war, plans were already being made for peace. By mid-1942, for example, over 30 U.S. government agencies were said to be engaged in postwar planning—not entirely without fear or apprehension, however. As Churchill so pertinently remarked: "The problems of victory are more agreeable than those of defeat, but they are no less difficult."

No doubt one of the most difficult of these problems of victory would be the finding of a replacement for the defunct League of Nations. Even though some people may have been doubtful, Jehovah's Witnesses were certain that such a replacement would be found. In a discourse delivered at their 1942 convention in Cleveland, Ohio, the speaker said: "Before Armageddon comes, the Scriptures show, a peace must come. . . . Those of a democratic mind hope for a United States of the world, a 'family of nations,' a 'world association' based on the United Nations." Referring to the prophecy of Revelation 17:8, he stated unequivocally: "The association of worldly nations will rise again."

But would it bring a lasting peace? "God's definite answer is, No!" replied the speaker. Even so, despite its temporary nature, the coming period of peace would be most welcome. With no fear of the future, Jehovah's Witnesses began making plans to expand their preaching work once the war was over. In 1942 they established a missionary school to train Christian ministers for service in other lands. The following year a program for training public speakers was introduced to make possible an expanded public-meeting campaign.

As 1943 closed, the nations were still in anguish, still driven by fear. But people on both sides of the conflict, weary of war, were beginning to look forward to the promised relief that the postwar world offered. Would it bring the "freedom from fear" about which Roosevelt spoke? On the contrary, global fear would shortly spiral to new levels! And the main culprit, ironically enough, would be the very instrument hailed by some as a godsend in finally bringing to an end the agonizing years of war. Read "World War II—Its Fierce and Fiery End" in our next issue.

Other Items That Made the News

1941—The German Catholic bishops' conference announces its support for war against the Soviet Union

First mass gassings in Auschwitz concentration camp

1942—Bombay, India, hit by cyclone and flood; 40,000 deaths

First nuclear chain-reaction produced at University of Chicago

Conference at Wannsee adopts liquidation as Nazi "final solution" to Jewish problem

1943—Turkish earthquake kills 1,800 persons

Over one million die in famine in Bengal

U.S. Supreme Court, in reversal of 1940 decision, rules that compulsory flag salute in public schools is unconstitutional

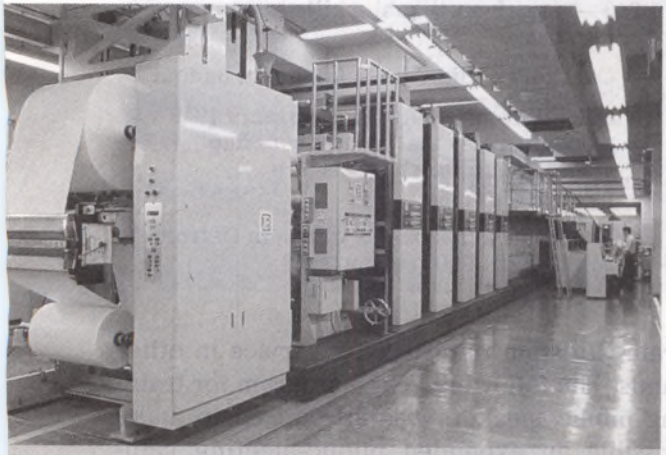
Race riots in major U.S. cities; in Detroit 35 die and 1,000 are injured

Japan's Magazine Production Gets 'In-Line'

PRINT, package, and ship 3.5 million copies of the *Watchtower* and *Awake!* magazines each month: That is one of the jobs the Japan branch of the Watch Tower Society must perform in order to meet the needs of Jehovah's Witnesses in doing their preaching work in Japan and a number of other countries in the Far East. Obviously, efficiency is the key.

To meet this need, the Witnesses in Japan designed and, for the most part, built a conveyor system that eliminates most of the time-consuming and labor-intensive tasks, such as having to stack and unstack the magazines at various stages of the production process.

To start with, the only equipment available commercially was the rotary press, with its stacking attachment, and the three-knife trimmer that cuts the magazines to size. The Witnesses went to work and came up with a system linking these two units and other custom-made devices, so that it is possible to print, stack, trim, and package the magazines in one operation.

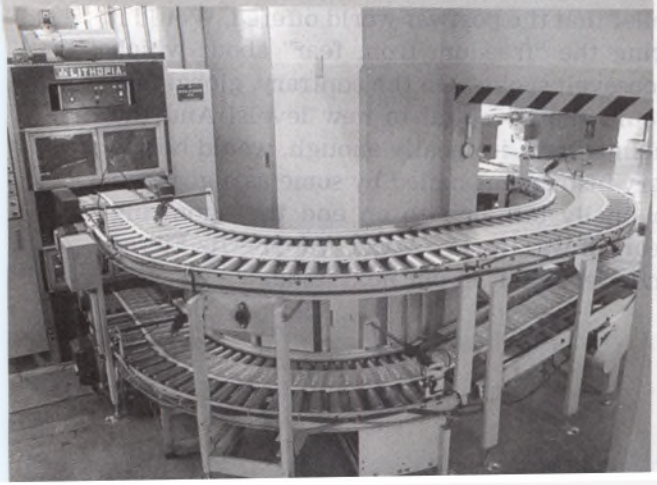


A. Rotary press

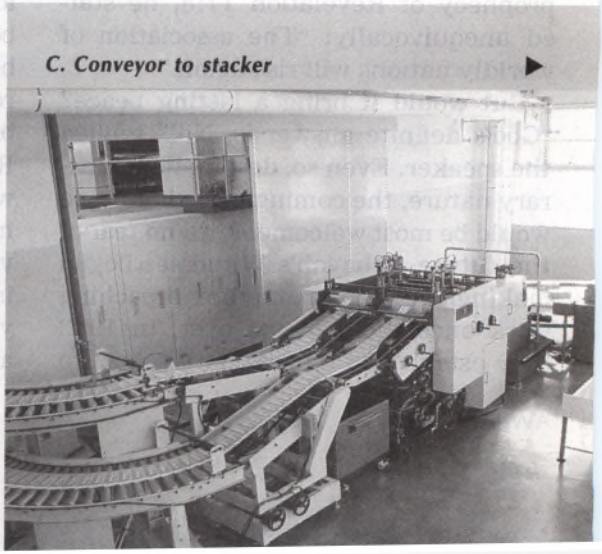
A Run-Through of the System

Looking at the pictures in the proper sequence will give you a good idea of how the 'in-line' system works. To begin with, pa-

B. Magazines from press



C. Conveyor to stacker



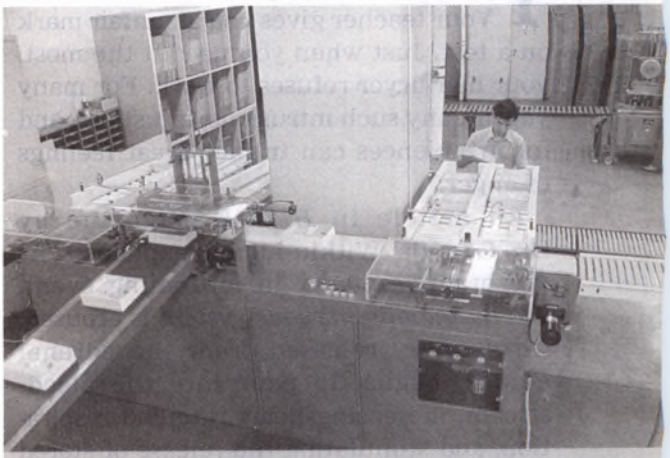
per from two rolls enters the rotary press (picture A) at speeds of up to 25 feet (8 m) per second. Out of the other end of the press (B) come two continuous streams of beautiful four-color magazines, about a thousand copies a minute. The roller conveyors send the magazines to the stacking machine (C), which sorts them into fluffy piles of 50 magazines each.

The stacks of magazines are then sent to the hydraulic pressing unit (D), which applies up to 50 tons of pressure for two seconds to each stack to squeeze out the air between the pages. This step alone eliminates all the work involved in having to take the magazines off the conveyors, stack them on pallets under pressure overnight, and then reload or feed them to the trimmer in bundles of 50, one bundle at a time by hand.

After being pressed, the two streams of magazines are merged into one and then sent on to the trimmer (E), which cuts the magazines to size. The conveyor belt takes the magazines, now nicely trimmed and compacted, to the custom-made packing station (F), where they are put into cartons, which are sealed and then labeled by computer, ready to be wheeled right onto trucks waiting in the truck docks.

Efficient Use of Resources

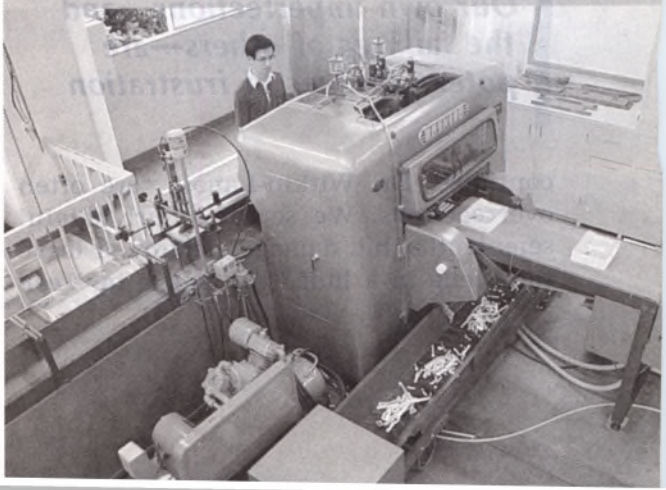
Is all this elaborate equipment really necessary? "If we were to handle the present work load under the former arrangement," said Yasuyuki, the overseer of the entire operation, "we would need to add at least ten workers to the crew. And that is if we could find the space to store all those magazines in the process." With this 'in-line' system, 11 operators working as a team can process 54,000 magazines an hour. It is easy to see why Witnesses at the branch are overjoyed that Japan's magazine production got 'in-line.'



F. Packing station

D. Hydraulic pressing unit ▶

▲ *E. Trimmer*



Young People Ask...

Why Do I Lose My Temper?

"When I'm angry, I'm furious, and you wouldn't want to get near me. . . . I turn red in the face . . . Sometimes I just yell."—11-year-old Evan.

YOUR sister ruins your favorite blouse. Your teacher gives you an unfair mark on a test. Just when you need it the most, your hair dryer refuses to work. For many youths, any such intrusions, injustices, and inconveniences can trigger great feelings of anger.

An article in *Health* magazine by Dr. Georgia Witkin-Lanoil explains: "As the brain reacts to an infuriating event, the *autonomic nervous system* is aroused. *Adrenaline,* released from the adrenal glands, begins to pour into the bloodstream, increasing heart rate and respiration, and stimulating the release of stored sugars for energy."

With what results? "Actions we take under the influence of our own adrenaline," continues Dr. Witkin-Lanoil, "are often overreactions. We scream, hurl hateful semi-truths, hit, damage, destroy or leave the scene in a huff." An article in *'Teen* magazine similarly observed that anger "can make you say things you didn't mean, lose your friends—and even physically ache inside."

Our own imperfections—and the failings of others—are potent sources of frustration

Did you ever lose your temper? If so, you are not alone. Like most of us, you no doubt felt quite foolish afterward and wondered, *'Why* did I do that?' Yes, why is it so *difficult* for some to control their temper? Is it worth the effort to try to do so?

Why We Get Angry

Part of the reason we are capable of feeling angry from time to time is that we are made "in God's image." (Genesis 1:27) God himself can get angry! For example, the apostle Paul said: "For God's wrath is being revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men who are suppressing the truth in an unrighteous way."—Romans 1:18.

Note, though, that Jehovah God's wrath results from a love for righteousness and justice. God's wrath is not a matter of his simply 'losing his temper.' He *controls* his anger and expresses it in a righteous way. Thus, when he brought destruction on a wicked world by a global flood, he did not lose control of the situation. Rather, he kept "Noah . . . safe with seven others." (2 Peter 2:5) Jehovah can therefore be described as "a God merciful and gracious, slow to anger and abundant in loving-kindness and truth."—Exodus 34:6.

Because God created humans in his image, we have a built-in sense of justice. So when faced with unfair treatment or injustice, we may quite naturally feel anger rise within us. This happened to a number of godly people in Bible times.

For example, Moses, leader of the Israelite nation, became angry when several men led a rebellion against him. (Numbers 16:1, 15) And even Jesus Christ expressed anger! When he observed that men were carrying on commercial business in God's temple of worship, he indignantly commanded: "Take these things away from here! Stop making the house of my Father a house of merchandise!" (John 2:13-16) Righteous anger is thus quite appropriate for a Christian.

Unfortunately, most of our anger is not righteously motivated. This is because, as the Bible says, we "are all under sin." Therefore it continues: "There is not a righteous man, not even one." (Romans 3:9, 10) So, then, our own imperfections —and the failings of others—are potent sources of frustration. "Sometimes people get on your nerves too much," says young Stephanie.

But we are often angry without just cause! Unlike Jehovah who sees everything, we have a limited view of any matter. (Hebrews 4:12, 13) For example, the wise man Solomon observed that "a word causing pain makes anger to come up." (Proverbs 15:1) Sometimes, though, "a word" is spoken in innocence, or is just a poorly timed joke or a playful bit of teasing. Not realizing this, we bristle.

Finally, there is the fact that temperaments vary, and some of us appear to be more prone to anger than others. And as a youth, you are just beginning to learn to control all the new desires and urges that puberty brings. You may feel unsure of yourself, overly sensitive to criticism. Until you gain some mastery over your feelings, you are vulnerable to provocation—especially from within the family circle. "I lose my temper with my sister," confesses 15-year-old Lorie. "She knows how to provoke me by saying something stupid or by correcting everything I say." Tensions can similarly flare up between you and your parents.

Really, though, just about anything can make you angry if you let it. The question is, How do you handle those feelings of anger?

Is it worth losing your temper over?

Anger Let Loose

The book *Reaching Your Teenager* observed that "many people don't know how to express anger sensibly." Some throw childish tantrums. Some become violent, either verbally or physically. Others are outwardly calm but inwardly seething. As one young woman said: "When I get angry I don't yell, I become cold and untalkative." Still others get behind the wheel of their car and take out their anger in the way they drive.

Anger let on the loose, however, is rarely constructive. Professor Gary Schwartz of Yale University claims that rage 'produces effects on the heart more severe and long lasting than any other feeling, even fear.' Dr. Redford B. Williams, Jr., of Duke University said: "Several studies now suggest that an awful lot of premature mortality may be associated with hostility." Surely it cannot be healthy to establish a pattern of 'blowing your stack' at every provocation. "A calm heart is the life of the fleshly organism," said an ancient proverb.—Proverbs 14:30.

Further, unbridled anger usually makes a bad situation worse. Recall the Bible's account of two brothers named Simeon and Levi whose sister was sexually violated. Understandably, they were quite angered when they heard about it! But how did they express their anger? The Bible says that they maneuvered events so that they could mercilessly murder the young man responsible for the rape—along with the males of his family and his fellow townsmen!—Genesis, chapter 34.

Years later on his deathbed, their father Jacob would recall this violent incident. Did he commend them for their wrathful vengeance? On the contrary, he cursed their anger because "it is cruel, and their fury, because it acts harshly." (Genesis 49:7) Yes, what they had done in losing their temper was worse than the provocation that stirred them up in the first place! They had accomplished nothing constructive and had ruined their reputation.

No wonder, then, that the proverb says: "He that is quick to anger will commit foolishness." (Proverbs 14:17) Rarely can one in a provoked state think or act rationally. Rarely will an infuriated one seek to find a Christian means of righting a wrong. The words of the Bible writer James thus ring true: "Man's wrath does not work out God's righteousness." (James 1:20) Temper tantrums, hurling insults, and sulking are counterproductive.

True, letting loose with a volley of words at someone who has wronged you may feel good at the time. But you usually come to regret the outburst—especially when that someone is an employer, teacher, or parent! (Compare Ecclesiastes 10:4.) Proverbs 29:11 therefore says: "All his spirit is what a stupid one lets out [by losing his temper], but he that is wise keeps it calm to the last."

But *how* can you do that? A future article will discuss this.

In Our Next Issue

- *Health for All Mankind—When?*
- *Are Superstitions Harmless?*
- *How Can I Control My Temper?*

Almonds —The Nutty Fruit

FROM my vantage point high on a hill, I see a series of white islands scattered throughout the blue-green valley below. A closer look reveals that what seems from a distance to be fields of white popcorn balls are, in reality, thousands of individual trees, each full of white blooms with delicate pink centers that fill the air with their heady fragrance. These delights that thrill my senses best describe an almond orchard in full bloom during early spring.

I have enjoyed this breathtaking sight since childhood because I was raised on an almond orchard in a small California town. My family earned its livelihood from growing and harvesting these delicious fruits.

"Fruits?" you ask. "Isn't an almond a nut?" Well, yes and no. Although commonly considered a nut, the almond is, curiously enough, a fruit. It is part of the family from which other stone-fruit trees derive their origin, namely the rose family. Stone fruits include peaches, apricots, and plums. Next time you have a peach pit in your hand, notice how closely in size and shape it resembles an almond shell. Crack both open and you will find that the kernels are similar too. However, only almonds should be eaten, since eating the kernels of fruits like peaches can make you sick.

Almonds in History

The roots of almond history extend far back to Asia Minor and the Mediterranean region. In fact, long before the time of Christ, Middle Easterners were using almonds as a regular feature of their diet, and for good reason.

A handful of plain almonds provides not only a tasty snack but a healthful one. Almonds contain important nutrients, as well as significant amounts of essential vitamins and minerals. This could explain why almonds were so highly valued as a regular feature in the Middle Easterner's diet, and why as Islam expanded its boundaries during the Middle Ages, the cultivation of almonds followed.

Muslim plantings flourished in Spain and then later in the New World through the colonial expansion of California's Spanish missions. Now, 200 years later, almonds are California's largest tree crop, and the state itself is one of the world's leading almond producers.

Almonds—Tiny Bundles of Concentrated Energy

Almonds pack a lot of nutrition in a small, portable bundle. They consist of important nutrients found in all four of the basic four food groups—protein, fruits and vegetables, dairy products, and grains. Let's take a closer look at their nutritional makeup.*

□ **CARBOHYDRATE:** Almonds are a useful source of complex carbohydrates. Carbohydrates are your body's main source of energy. One ounce of almonds, about 20-25 kernels, equals 170 calories.#

□ **FAT:** Among plants used for food, almonds are one of the richest sources of fats. And almonds contain no cholesterol. Fat is an important energy source; it is your body's most efficient form of stored fuel. About half an almond's weight is vegetable oil—a highly unsaturated fat.

□ **FIBER:** One ounce of almonds provides your body with about 10 percent of its daily fiber need. That's more fiber than is contained in two slices of whole-wheat bread.

□ **MINERALS:** Almonds supply a high amount of the essential minerals phosphorus, copper, and magnesium. Minerals are needed by your body for growth and proper maintenance. One ounce of almonds has the same amount of calcium as 2.3 ounces of milk and has the same amount of iron as 1.3 ounces of beefsteak or lean pork.

□ **PROTEIN:** Almonds are a good source of vegetable protein. Proteins are necessary for your body's growth and maintenance. One ounce of almonds supplies 10 percent of the U.S. RDA (Recommended Daily Allowance) of protein.

□ **VITAMINS:** Almonds are a fine source of riboflavin (vitamin B_2) and vitamin E. Vitamins are essential for your good health. One ounce of almonds contains the amount of vitamin E (35 percent of the U.S. RDA) found in 7 ounces of wheat germ or from 18 to 20 ounces of liver.

---

* Information is based on the brochure *Almonds—A Health Nut,* published by the Almond Board of California.
# 1 oz = 28 g.

Use of the Smudge Pots

During the bloom period, the almond-flower buds are in danger of injury if exposed to subfreezing temperatures too long. In the past, to prevent injury to these delicate buds, smudge pots were used to provide protection against frost. These oil-burning pots were placed along the tree rows at regular intervals. Although the tiny almond buds benefited greatly from the blanket of grimy, black smoke that was produced, the local inhabitants did not!

Imagine going to bed clean and waking up in the morning with your face covered with a sooty film that penetrated your nostrils and even found its way under your fingernails! No closed windows and doors or abundance of soap and water could keep us clean during the battle of the smudge pots versus the frost.

Happily, however, things have changed. Some orchards still use smudge pots, but other methods are now used successfully, to the delight of residents within the almond-growing community.

The Clattering Almond Hail

The method of harvesting almonds has also changed over the years. Hired laborers, toting large rubber mallets, used to climb agilely into trees and hit the branches, causing the almonds to tumble in a clattering hail onto canvas sheets stretched below. The sheets were then dragged by horse or tractor to the next tree and the process repeated. When the sheets were too heavy to pull, the almonds were bagged in gun-

nysacks and hauled off to the huller to be cleaned.

Today, in contrast, machines are used to shake the trees, gather up the almonds, and even separate the debris of dirt and hulls from the fruit. My father was one of the earliest designers of a machine that utilized a blast of air to separate much of the debris from the almond fruit itself.

Later, the almonds literally flow through the processing plant automatically. There they are cracked, cleaned, graded by size, sorted by an electric eye, and given a final inspection.

What next happens to some almonds is most exciting and appetizing. Imagine, a plain almond suddenly becoming flavored with hickory smoke, garlic or onion, or sugarcoated, salted, roasted, or creamed into almond butter—to name just a few of the many tasty changes designed to tantalize our taste buds. And let's not forget all the delicious candy bars, bakery goods, and ice creams flavored with whole or crushed almonds!

Growing up around almond orchards proved extremely pleasant and memorable for me. You might think that I would come to know all there is to know about that nutty fruit. Not quite. My appreciation for the almond increased dramatically after I began studying the Bible. "The Bible?" you ask. Yes, through my studies, I have discovered that the almond tree played a significant role in God's dealings with his people.

Almonds in the Bible?

Did you know that the Hebrew word for almond tree literally means "the waker," or "awakening one"? This is fitting when we remember that in the Palestine area the almond tree is among the first of all fruit-bearing trees to bloom, as early as January or the beginning of February. It also helps explain what God meant when he referred to the "offshoot of an almond tree." (Jeremiah 1:11, 12) In other words, Jehovah God is "keeping awake" concerning his promises in order to carry them out.

Another example of the use of the almond tree in the Bible is the stirring account of the Israelites' challenge of Aaron's authority as God's anointed high priest. To settle the issue, God directed the chieftain of each of the 12 tribes of Israel to bring his commander's rod forward and deposit it before the sacred ark of the testimony. Aaron's rod, made from an almond branch, was put alongside the other 12. The next day brought the results—God's stamp of approval upon Aaron. His rod budded overnight; it was "bringing forth buds and blossoming flowers and was bearing ripe almonds." Instead of the natural sequence of bud, bloom, and then fruit, all three stages happened at once. Quite a miracle!—Numbers 17:1-11.

The almond was also an esteemed delicacy to the Israelites. To illustrate, when the ancient patriarch Jacob wanted to win favor with the king of Egypt, he sent gifts including a quantity of almonds as one of "the finest products of the land." (Genesis 43:11) In addition, the dainty almond blossom was used as a pattern for the cups on the branches of the sacred tabernacle lampstand.—Exodus 25:33, 34.

Without a doubt, these Biblical references to almonds have enabled me to appreciate more fully one more of the many marvelous creations that God has made for man's unending pleasure.

Often, when I gaze across the valley at the beautiful panorama of almond orchards in full bloom, I think of these words written so many centuries ago: "Praise Jehovah from the earth, . . . you mountains and all you hills, you *fruit trees* and all you cedars." (Psalm 148:7-9)—*Contributed.*

From Our Readers

Hope for the Mentally Ill

I am writing to express my gratitude for your articles on "Hope for the Mentally Ill." (September 8, 1986) I am now being treated for mental illness. I have had problems for many years, but not knowing what to do, I just kept putting up with it. Then this past September my mind got particularly bad. I went to the hospital for an examination and was given medicine. My condition has improved considerably. I am happy you made the point that the medicines are not addictive and that those who take medication are not weak. I wish that the shame associated with accepting treatment could be done away with.

T. K., Japan

Nationalism

I cannot understand your constant criticism of nationalism when you try to maintain a nonpolitical stance. Religion, history, and a sense of nationality are the guiding tenets of human destiny. Many people maintain that Christ in his time on earth was a Jewish nationalist opposed to Roman rule.

J. M., Scotland

Regarding nationalism, British historian Arnold Toynbee said: "It is a state of mind in which we give our paramount political loyalty to one fraction of the human race . . . whatever consequences this may entail for the foreign majority of the human race." Author Ivo Duchacek observed: "Nationalism divides humanity into mutually intolerant units." Former UN Secretary-General U Thant observed: "So many of the problems that we face today are due to, or the result of, false attitudes . . . Among these is the concept of narrow nationalism—'my country, right or wrong.'" The renowned Argentinean writer Jorge Luis Borges stated that nationalism "is the arch-villain of all the evils. It divides people, it destroys the good side of human nature, it leads to inequality in the distribution of wealth." As for Jesus Christ, his position was clearly expressed at John 18:33, 36 in his answer to Pilate's question: "Are you the king of the Jews?" Jesus stated: "My kingdom is no part of this world."—ED.

Water Shortage

Please forward 200 copies of your issue "Are We Running Out of Water?" (November 22, 1986) How timely this material on water is, and how vital! Thank you for being Awake! to this most dangerous situation.

W. J. K., United States

Simple Ulcer Remedy?

I used the water treatment remedy from page 31 of your September 22, 1983, issue. I had been on Tagamet for months without being able to clear up a stomach problem or sufficiently reduce pain. I stopped the medication and drank a full 16 ounces of water at the times mentioned in your item and also any other time I had pain. When I drank the water, the pain was gone in ten minutes. In a short time I no longer needed antacids, and in a couple of months I no longer needed to follow this treatment. I could hardly believe that such a simple remedy that didn't cost a penny worked!

C. G., United States

The item referred to was a report on a guest editorial by Dr. F. Batmanghelidj appearing in the June 1983 issue of the "Journal of Clinical Gastroenterology." "Awake!" does not recommend one form of treatment above another but publishes items like this only as information for our readers. We are not encouraging all ulcer patients to abandon their prescribed medicine for this simple ulcer remedy, but we are happy to observe that some have benefited from the information.—ED.

Watching the World

1986—Year of Peace?

Last year was proclaimed by the United Nations as an International Year of Peace. Yet, in 1986 there were more armed conflicts worldwide than at any time since World War II. This conclusion was reached by a university team in Hamburg that has registered post-1945 wars and their causes. According to the German newspaper *Schwäbische Zeitung,* the researchers counted 37 wars during 1986—some of which have been raging for 20 years.

Cold News

You only "catch" a cold virus once. After that you are immune to it. But there are some 200 viruses that can cause the common cold. That is why, by age 60, most people get only one cold a year, if any, while children have from six to eight a year. How are cold viruses spread? Rarely through the air by a cough or a sneeze, doctors say. Touching is now thought to be the principal means of transmission. The sufferer touches his nose and spreads the germs with his hands to any object he touches. "They can survive for several hours on the hands, on hard surfaces and in cloth handkerchiefs," says Dr. Sheldon L. Spector, a clinical professor of medicine at U.C.L.A. "Healthy people pick up a virus with their hands and infect themselves by touching their noses and eyes." Frequent hand washing and use of disinfectants is seen as the best way to prevent spreading or catching a cold.

Programmed for Siestas?

Man is said to possess a kind of internal clock that keeps track of his sleeping capacity, reports *El Universal,* a Mexico newspaper. The researchers, Juergen Zullev

and Scot Campbell of the Max Planck Psychiatric Institute in Munich, Germany, claim that the human is physiologically programmed for three daily siestas in addition to his normal nighttime sleep period. However, according to the study, man has suppressed his need for siestas through work and coffee drinking.

New Marian Year

A special year dedicated to the Virgin Mary has been declared by Pope John Paul II. It will begin in June and is the first Marian year to be celebrated by Catholics since 1953-54. That year was declared to celebrate the 100th anniversary of the Immaculate Conception dogma, which asserts that Mary was born free of inherited sin. The new Marian year, the pope said, will be celebrated in preparation "for the third millennium of the Christian age." He concluded his homily by saying: "May 1987 be a year in which humanity finally puts aside the divisions of the past, a year in which, in development and solidarity, each heart seeks peace."

Religious Reawakening

Is religion making a comeback in the United States? Yes, says *U.S.News & World Report.* "The God-is-dead philosophy is itself dead," the magazine notes. "Science hasn't provided all of life's answers." Religiously inclined individuals are now said to feel confident about expressing their beliefs. Parents, looking for stable values they feel the church supplies, are giving their children religious education. Even many prominent political figures have openly pronounced religion to be a significant force in their lives. Polls show that religion is gaining in importance in society. "The practice of religion is respectable once more," states theologian Martin Marty. But he adds: "There are also good reasons to fear

religion: People kill in the name of God, or by passage of laws they coerce minority disbelievers or 'other-believers.'"

Twisted Values

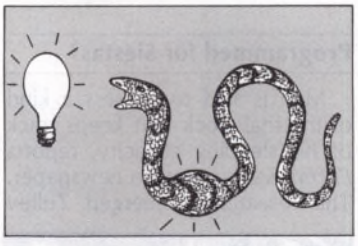
While 800 million people in the developing world "live in absolute poverty and deprivation," says *The Courier*, "more than $1.5 million per minute" is being used worldwide on military expenditures. The UNESCO publication further states: "For every soldier the average world military expenditure is $20,000. For every school-age child the average public education expenditure is $380. For every 100,000 people in the world there are 556 soldiers, but only 85 doctors. Just one fifth of annual arms expenditures could abolish world hunger by the year 2000."

Sleepy Pilots

In spite of safety rules, "commercial airline pilots . . . sometimes . . . fall asleep while flying planes on long overnight trips," reports *The Mexico City News*. "Occasionally, everyone in the cockpit nods off at the same time while the plane flies on automatic pilot," claims one researcher. Dr. Martin C. Moore-Ede, an expert on work scheduling and sleep, blames the problem on "boredom and erratic schedules that force pilots to work odd hours without time for their bodies to adjust." Moore-Ede based his conclusions on a study conducted for one airline as well as interviews with cockpit crews. In one transcontinental flight to Los Angeles, the plane flew 100 miles (160 km) out over the Pacific Ocean before ground crews roused the sleeping crew by triggering chimes in the cockpit. "When you are in the cabin and your head is rolling over and you can't stay awake," says Dr. Moore-Ede, "just remember that the guy up front is human, too."

"Light" Snack

A three-foot-long (1 m) snake was brought to the University of Florida's veterinary hospital for diagnosis. An X ray of the serpent revealed that it had swallowed two 15-watt light bulbs. An unusual diet for a snake, you say? Not if they had been hen's eggs, claim the vets, who believe that this is what the snake may have thought the bulbs were. Whatever the reason for its change of diet, the bulbs have been surgically removed, reports *New Scientist*. Elliot Jacobson, the veterinarian who performed the operation, hoped that the snake would recover fully to be returned to the wild.



Disposable Telephones

Telephones can ease your stay in a hospital or make it worse. The reason is that telephones can harbor many types of bacteria and are difficult to disinfect. In the United States some two million patients a year become infected while they are in the hospital—many through use of the telephone. A study by the CDC (Centers for Disease Control) in Atlanta shows that from 20,000 to 30,000 of them will die. Now, as a preventive measure, some hospitals give their patients sanitized, prepackaged, plastic phones that they can either dispose of or take home after the hospital stay. The disposable phones cost from $5 to $15 each and are guaranteed for a year. Use of them has also helped the hospitals to cut down on stolen or damaged phones.

Witnesses Exempted

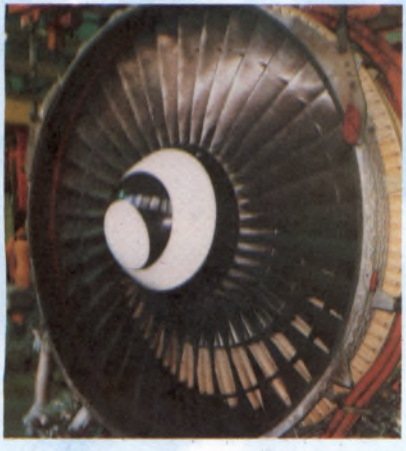
Any who can prove "a serious and credible membership to the religious association of Jehovah's Witnesses" will be exempted from military service. This is the decision rendered by the Federal Administration Tribunal of Berlin, says the German newspaper *Tagesspiegel*. According to the opinion of the judges, confession of the Witnesses' religious doctrine will now be accepted as valid proof of conscientious objection to military service.

Hotel Rooms for Nonsmokers

Restaurants and airlines are no longer alone in offering customers accommodations for nonsmokers. "Belatedly, hotels too are capitalizing on the anti-smoking fervor sweeping the U.S.," says *The Wall Street Journal*. Starting with just a few rooms sanitized and set aside for customers who hated the lingering cigar and cigarette odors, some chains now allocate up to 15 percent of their rooms as no-smoking rooms and are beginning to promote the service. Not only has it proved to be extremely popular with customers but it also benefits the hotels, as it takes 26 percent less time to clean the smoke-free rooms.

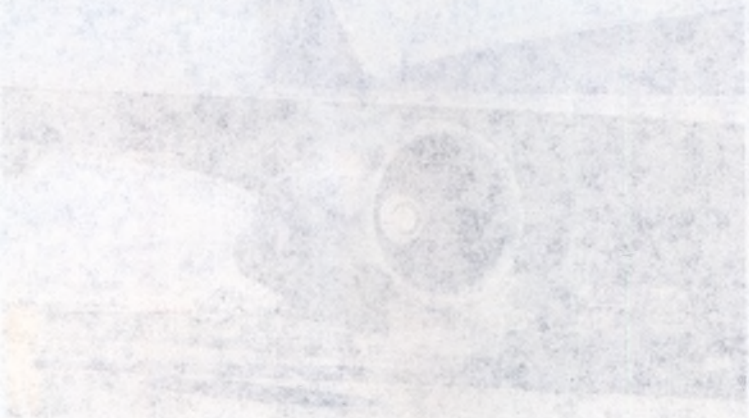
Eyes in the Sky

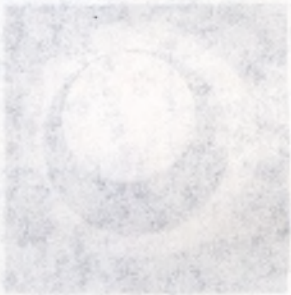
THE collision of birds with commercial airliners has been not only costly to airlines but dangerous as well. In an effort to reduce the number of such midair collisions, Japan's All-Nippon Airways has discovered a novel way to frighten away birds flying perilously close to their planes. How?

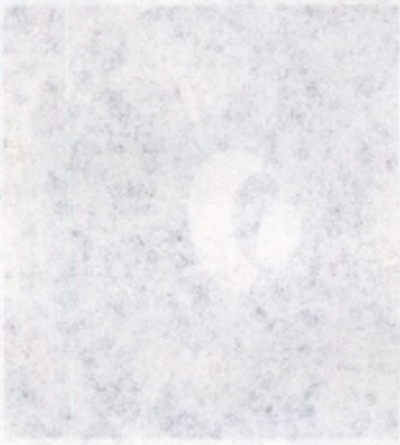


By painting menacing-looking eyes on the engine intakes of its jet aircraft, notes *International Wildlife* magazine. The article explains that the airline painted eyes on 26 of its large-body aircraft and left the remaining aircraft unpainted. At the conclusion of the one-year experiment, an average of only one bird had hit each of the engines painted with the menacing-looking eyes. In contrast, an average of *nine* birds had struck the unpainted jet engines.

The damage during the one-year test period was estimated to be $720,000, down from $910,000. Because of the success of the experiment, All-Nippon Airways plans to have the eyes painted on all its large-body aircraft.







Awake!

May 8, 1987

Health for ALL Mankind When?

There is great disparity in health services available worldwide. In some places these are very extensive and highly scientific. In other parts of the world, they hardly meet basic needs, or they do not exist. Yet, even when health services are highly developed, they still fall behind in prevention as well as curing of diseases.

Will basic health services be available for all in the foreseeable future? What hope is there for a complete cure and total prevention of all diseases?

Washington, D.C., General Hospital

WHO/UNICEF photo

Health for All Mankind—When?

"The public health services of the 67 poorest developing countries, excluding China, spend less on all health care than the rich countries spend on tranquillizers alone."
—Health Crisis 2000.

"HEALTH for all by the year 2000"—that slogan has been repeated especially since the International Conference on Primary Health Care, sponsored back in 1978 by WHO (World Health Organization) and UNICEF (United Nations Children's Fund). Attended by delegates from some 134 nations, that conference called international attention to how much really is lacking in the world health field.

The then executive director of UNICEF, Henry R. Labouisse, said: "One of the reasons why we meet here today is our deep conviction that the scandalous disparities between health opportunities in different parts of the world, and also within countries, can no longer be tolerated."

Prior to the conference, a report spoke of the tremendous global gap between the health haves in the richer nations and the have-nots elsewhere. A UNICEF report that year said that in some poorer countries "only 10% of these people have access to decent health care" and "twenty per cent —may be—drink clean water."

The conference called for the "promotion of food supply and proper nutrition, an adequate supply of safe water and basic sanitation; maternal and child health care, . . . provision of essential drugs."

These are all very expensive items, especially for people in the poor nations. Where could the money for such needs be found? The conference said that "peace, detente and disarmament" could release huge sums of money for such purposes. Thus, *World Health* magazine, published by WHO, was prompted to comment: "Imagine an ideal world in which all the ingenuity, expense and human and material resources which are at present poured into military weaponry were instead devoted to improving the health of the world!"

But in the years that have passed since 1978, have you seen such peace, détente, and disarmament occur? Are not the nations going in exactly the opposite direction, while the problem of health continues to grow?

P. Almasy/WHO

Colombian schoolchildren being vaccinated

Health for All —A Basic Need

MODERN medicine has made outstanding progress. The reasons for the great plagues of the past no longer remain a mystery. Amazing advances have led to modern medical miracles.

Still, health problems remain staggering. At the time of the 1978 International Conference on Primary Health Care, 80 percent of the world's rural and poor urban population still lacked access to *any* health services, and 30 of every 31 children under the age of five who would die that year lived in the poorer lands. In the "developed" countries environmental decay, pollution, and harmful wastes still provide a growing threat to life.

WHO's regional office for Europe has foreseen not health by the year 2000 but a possible crisis by then. In 1983 it sponsored a book, *Health Crisis 2000,* by Peter O'Neill, that speaks of the "chilling realization" that a host of "new diseases" has crept up on the civilized world. What are these? Environmentally caused cancer, heart disease, drug addiction, mental illness, sexually transmitted diseases, "the self-destructive urge of the smoker and the drinker," and "the 'road accident epidemic', which plunders lives and drains our financial resources." These "diseases of affluent societies" are also spreading through the poorer nations.

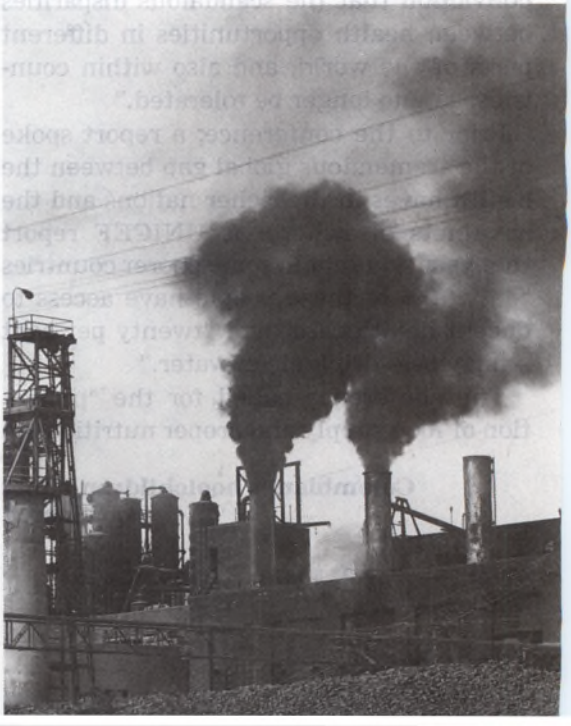
Modern Problems

Let us consider some of these modern problems:

CANCER is the second leading cause of death in the United States. It strikes one out of every four Americans. Worldwide, 40 million people may suffer from this disease. Cancer-causing substances abound.

POLLUTION. Dangerous products and harmful wastes contaminate the environment. Pesticides are found in foods. Rivers and seas have been contaminated. In some places even groundwater drawn from wells is polluted.

P. Almasy/WHO



DRUG ADDICTION. "The slow slide down to hell" is what *Health Crisis 2000* calls drug addiction. It says the "process of destruction of the young mind and body . . . is so fearful, and the rehabilitation process so long and difficult for the patient and for those helping, that it deserves special examination."

SEXUALLY TRANSMITTED DISEASES. With the collapse of morals, the spread of venereal diseases has reached the point where it has been called a pandemic—a widespread epidemic. *World Health* magazine says "the spread of disease in the population is today so generalised that any sexually active person [one who has multiple partners] is at potential risk of infection."

ALCOHOL ABUSE. In many places women, adolescents, and even young children are swelling the ranks of alcoholics. Alcohol is said to be a factor in 40 percent of all road accidents. Even the social drinker can destroy a family while proving his ability at the wheel of a car.

MODERN TRAVEL. The convenience of modern travel has made possible the rapid spread of epidemics worldwide. AIDS and penicillin-resistant strains of gonorrhea have been spread throughout the world by travelers, and these diseases are said to have "taken advantage of the dramatic movement of populations characteristic of the twentieth century."

POPULATION. The population explosion and the rapid movement of rural populations into already overcrowded cities further complicate the world's health problems. In 1983, 26 cities had a population of at least five million. By the year 2000 there may be 60 such cities. *World Health* magazine says there may then be more than a billion people "living in urban areas at a

Awake!® May 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 9

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Health for All Mankind—When? 3
Health for All—A Basic Need 4
What About Your Own Health? 6
Permanent Healing Near 8

Also in This Issue

Thankful for What I Have 10
Tobacco's Toll in Greece 13
The Bible's Viewpoint
Are Superstitions Harmless? 14
The World Since 1914
World War II—Its Fierce and Fiery End 16
Young People Ask . . .
How Can I Control My Temper? 21
Hawaii's Fountains of Fire 24
Meet the World's Smallest Deer 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
"Reluctant Hero" 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

level of extreme poverty." Robert McNamara, former president of the World Bank, warned: "If cities do not begin to deal more constructively with poverty, poverty may begin to deal more destructively with cities."

Thus, despite the efforts of many hard-working and dedicated people, the goal of "health for all" seems far out of reach. Actually, this slogan is not to be taken literally. It was not intended to mean that everyone would be healthy but that at least *primary health care* would be available for all. The goal, a WHO booklet says, is that "resources for health will be evenly distributed . . . that essential health care will be accessible to everyone . . . and that people will use better approaches than they do now" for preventing and alleviating disease and disability.

What About Your Own Health?

MEDICINE tries to cure disease. Often it succeeds in doing so, but a *healthful course of life* might have prevented the illness in the first place.

Dr. Halfdan Mahler, director-general of WHO, said we must rise to our own health responsibilities, "eating wisely, drinking moderately, smoking not at all, driving carefully, taking enough exercise, learning to live under the stress of city life, and helping one another to do so."

The Bible with its wise counsel and sound advice can help us a great deal in this matter. Its principles lead to a more tranquil life and thus to better health in our stressful world. Its teachings are "healthful words" not just in a spiritual sense but also in a physical sense. Its good sayings "are life to those finding them and health to all their flesh."—2 Timothy 1:13; Proverbs 4:22.

But even more, Bible principles can reduce serious, death-dealing problems. How is that possible? Here are some examples:

The U.S. government calls *cigarette smoking* "clearly the largest single preventable cause of illness and premature death in the United States." Cancer deaths are six times higher among men who smoke than among those who do not. The Bible says: "Let us cleanse ourselves of every defilement of flesh and spirit." (2 Corinthians 7:1) Jehovah's Witnesses have long applied this also to tobacco smoking. Thus, for themselves they have greatly reduced a major cause of one of the world's most dreadful diseases.

Alcohol abuse and drunkenness cause

not only cirrhosis of the liver but also fights, arguments, violence, and a modern plague of death-dealing automobile accidents. Would the Bible help here?

It counsels moderation in the use of alcohol, saying: "Neither . . . drunkards, nor revilers . . . will inherit God's kingdom. And yet that is what some of you were." Again: "Wine is a ridiculer, intoxicating liquor is boisterous, and everyone going astray by it is not wise." (1 Corinthians 6:9-11; Proverbs 20:1) Does that healthful Biblical counsel make good sense?

The abuse of *narcotic drugs* has become a serious health problem among today's youth. *Health Crisis 2000* says: "A great deal of money is spent on law enforcement against drug trafficking while only a little is spent on preventing our vulnerable youth from becoming addicted in the first place." Jehovah's Witnesses apply to mind-bending drugs the same Bible-based principle that applies to tobacco. (2 Corinthians 7:1) The parents set the example in this regard, teaching it to their children, and this goes a long way toward preventing addiction in the first place.

Sexually transmitted diseases, such as gonorrhea and AIDS, are an increasing threat to people who have multiple sex partners. What does the Bible say about this? It soundly condemns sexual immorality. It teaches marriage to one partner for life and being morally faithful to that person. It says: "Let marriage be honorable among all, and the marriage bed be without defilement, for God will judge fornicators and adulterers." (Hebrews 13:4) Further, it states: "Now the works of the flesh are manifest, and they are fornication, uncleanness, loose conduct . . . Those who practice such things will not inherit God's kingdom." —Galatians 5:19-21; Matthew 5:32.

"We have inflicted wounds on ourselves, in the belief that science, doctors and hospitals would find a cure, instead of preventing the very causes of illness in the first place."—*Health Crisis 2000*

Such sound Biblical principles lead to better health even in today's trouble-filled world, but they cannot offer permanent healing. Permanent healing is the subject of the following article.

Permanent Healing Near

MEDICAL science, with its astounding modern advances, may win the battle—but still it loses the war. Almost as soon as we feel we have developed some skills and experience, infirmities begin to cut us down, and death comes all too soon. Yet God promises that it will not always be that way. Through his prophet Isaiah, God said he will 'actually swallow up death forever, and will certainly wipe the tears from all faces.'—Isaiah 25:8.

Does that sound hard to believe? Do you think a life of 80 years is a long time? There are trees that live for thousands of years—why shouldn't you? God gave starfish the ability to grow a whole new arm if one is broken off. Couldn't he restore your body to perfect health and completeness?

Nearly 2,000 years ago Jesus Christ performed astounding miracles on earth. He cured not only leprosy but "every sort of disease and every sort of infirmity among the people." The inspired record says he cured "people that were lame, maimed, blind, dumb . . . The crowd felt amazement as they saw the dumb speaking and the lame walking and the blind seeing." Jesus needed no animal donors or organ transplants—he healed the very organs or body parts that were afflicted. And he healed instantly, sometimes even from a distance.*

Not only did Jesus have the power to

* You can read the reliable accounts of these events in the following Bible passages: Matthew 4:23; 15:21-31; Mark 5:25-34; 7:31-37; Luke 7:1-10; 13:11-13; John 9:1-32.

cure but he had the *will* to do so. On one occasion, a leper said to him: "If you just want to, you can make me clean." Jesus, moved with pity, touchingly replied: "I *want* to. Be made clean." He even raised the dead—in at least one instance after bodily decomposition had set in.—Mark 1: 40-42; John 11:38-44.

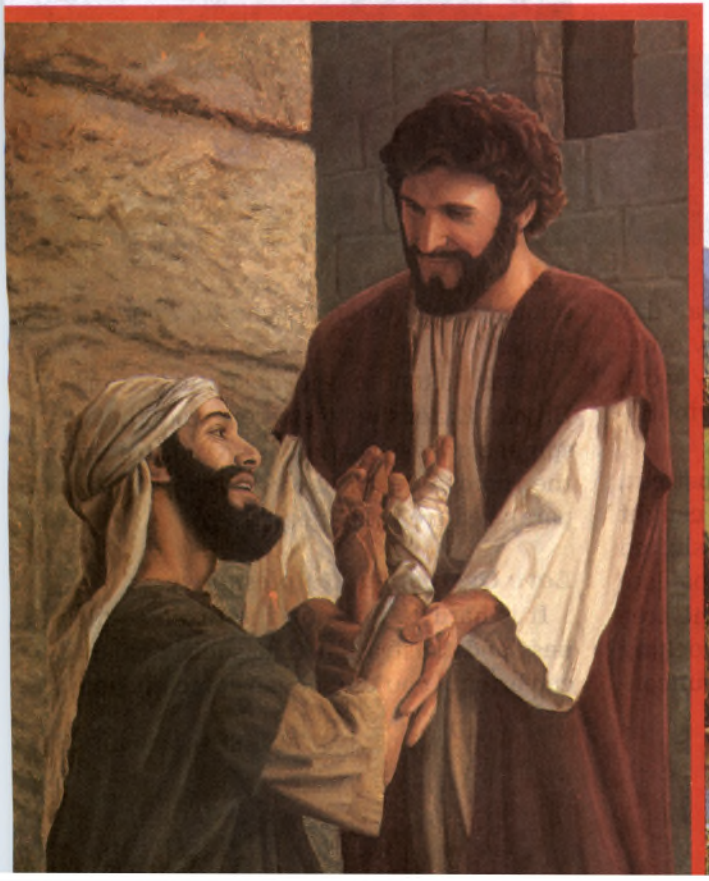
What do these amazing examples show? That Jesus, now enthroned as heavenly King, not only has the power but also has the *will* to bring about real and permanent healing. He will do as the Bible promises.

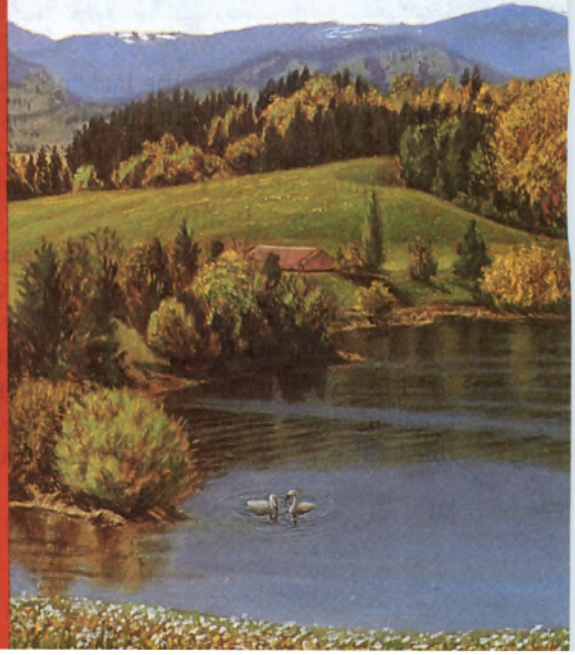
That book, the Bible, describes an amazing change soon to come in human events —the intervention of God himself in world affairs and the reestablishment of a paradise earth free of pollution, sickness, crime, hatred, and wars. It tells of real and lasting healing, both spiritual and physical. And Bible prophecy indicates that there are people who were living back during World War I who will still be alive when this worldwide change takes place.—Matthew 24:3, 14, 34.

True Health

The Bible's closing chapters tell of a righteous rulership coming "down out of heaven from God"—to mankind right here on earth. Then God "will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be anymore. The former things have passed away." (Revelation 21:2-4) In a literal sense as well as in a spiritual one, "the eyes of the blind ones will be opened, and the very ears of the deaf ones will be unstopped. At that time the lame one will climb up just as a stag does, and the tongue of the speechless one will cry out in gladness." "And no resident will say: 'I am sick.'"—Isaiah 35:5, 6; 33:24.

Thus, not just medical aid and healing for a short time, but *true health for all* is the promise to those who will live under God's Kingdom on this earth. Certainly that is a worthwhile goal for which to strive!





Thankful for What I Have

How does a person cope when tragedy strikes and leaves him incapacitated? Does a strong faith in God and his promises make a difference? How will the family react? Is it possible for all to maintain a positive outlook? The following is the story of one family's struggle to cope.

JUNE 1, 1957, was the last "normal" day of my life. It had begun like any other day: I arose early and went to my work as a lumberjack in Deer Lake, Newfoundland. All seemed well.

Suddenly, the large tree I had just cut, and which was on its way down, was caught by a crosswind that unexpectedly shifted the direction of its fall! It was too late for me to move out of the way. The tree crashed down on my shoulders, knocking me to the ground and leaving me unconscious. Later, when I came to, *I could not move!*

I was taken to the hospital in Corner Brook. Extensive tests revealed that my spinal cord was partially severed, requiring the removal of three vertebrae. I was left paralyzed from the neck down!

Love Overcomes Helplessness

It is hard to imagine the utter helplessness and frustration that such a calamity can bring. I could not even comb my hair or

feed myself. In fact, *I could not even tell when I was hungry!*

I had been a large man, strong and energetic. Now I was reduced to a helpless cripple. So many adjustments were needed to be able to cope with life. How much could a person take? I was to find out in the many years to follow.

Never would I have made it without the loving care of my wife Hilda. The Bible, at Proverbs 18:22, asks: "Has one found a good wife?" If so, it says that "one has found a good thing." Truly my wife was a blessing to me and our family of seven children.

The youngest of our children was 18 months old at the time of my accident, so until then most of Hilda's time had been spent taking care of them. Then I became as one of them, and even more so, since I could not be put down to run around and play after I was bathed and dressed. No, I had to be tucked into bed.

Still, there were times when we found things to chuckle over. For example, my wife would often take me out in my wheelchair. One time I kept falling over to one side of the wheelchair. She would set me up straight, but it seemed that I was not to be straightened that day. Hilda finally said: "Lindsay, what's the matter?" We found out when we got home. When she took me out of my chair, there on the seat where I had been sitting was a large can of powder! Since feeling was gone from me, I was totally unaware of it. So with my weight unbalanced, I kept tilting to one side.

Loving Help

In spite of my difficult situation, Jehovah God's love has sustained me. Proverbs 3:5, 6 advises us to 'trust in Jehovah with all our heart, and he will make our paths straight.' What a blessing that is, for if it were not for Jehovah's love and the truth of the Bible, I would not have been able to endure. But I had not always trusted in Jehovah. In fact, there was a time when I did not even know him.

I was born in 1911 in a place called Little Catalina, Trinity Bay, Newfoundland. Brought up by religious parents, I had respect for the Bible and read it occasionally. As I did so, questions came to my mind, such as: Would man actually live on earth forever, as Psalm 37:29 says? To find out, I went to my clergyman and asked him. His reply was: "You'll have to wait until you 'cross the Jordan' to find out." More questions from me seemed to disturb him. So he said to me: "Your problem, Lindsay, is that you ask too many questions."

I was not to get answers until 1948 when we moved to the community of Cormack. There I met Gus Barnes and Jack Keats, who were Jehovah's Witnesses. How glad I

The death of my dear wife called for even greater endurance

was when these men showed me answers from the Bible! So satisfied was I that the next year I was baptized in symbol of my dedication to Jehovah.

That same year we moved once again, this time up north to Goose Bay, Labrador, where I was to work with heavy equipment. It wasn't long before my employer found out that I was one of Jehovah's Witnesses. Within two months I was fired and told to move out of town. This I refused to

do. In those days people were afraid to give ear to something new, even though this message was much older than they were.

My children did not go unnoticed either. They were given a rough time at school until the police went to the school authorities and reminded them that Jehovah's Witnesses had fought and won the most outstanding court cases in Canada over freedom of religion. The result was that my children, and the children of other religions, were assured of their religious freedom.

Things are different in that area today. In 1985 a quickly built Kingdom Hall was erected for a thriving congregation of Jehovah's people that includes one of my daughters.

Help in Overcoming Loss

In 1951 we moved to the town where we still live, Deer Lake. Endurance was necessary over those difficult years. But things were to happen that would call for even greater endurance.

My dear lifelong companion, Hilda, who had a heart problem, died from a seizure in 1963. On a cold winter day, as I watched from my wheelchair, she was lowered into the ground. The loneliness I felt seemed unbearable! What was I to do now? I was absolutely unable to care for myself, let alone care for my family.

But Jehovah is faithful, and he always makes a way out for us if we rely on him. (1 Corinthians 10:13) His servants, my Christian brothers and sisters, gave me much comfort, which strengthened me to carry on. My daughter Yvonne took on the task of caring for me. What a blessing she has proved to be!

Although Yvonne has a family of her own to care for, she still has seen to my needs. The nearest hospital is 30 miles (50 km) away. Many times my daughter has had to take me there for treatment. When my health problems become serious, I make a trip by plane to the hospital in St. John's, about 400 miles (640 km) away. Yvonne always accompanies me.

Because of the inability of my body to function as it should, serious illnesses have sometimes overtaken me. I have had kidney stones removed; infections often required surgery; pressure sores have kept me in the hospital for months and in bed at home months more, some of these sores requiring skin grafts; bowel problems led to a colostomy; and diabetes also came into the picture.

Loving children surely are a blessing from Jehovah

Issues over blood transfusions arose often. But finally the doctors agreed to operate on me without blood. Because of their skill and concern, I came along fine without blood transfusions.—Acts 15:29.

My daughter and her husband and family have seen me through all my difficulties, getting up at night to look after me, feeding me, bathing me, changing my dressings, taking me to Christian meetings and assemblies, where I am further strengthened spiritually. At times I even have a part on an assembly program. Loving children surely are a rich blessing from Jehovah!—Psalm 127:3.

So Much to Be Thankful For

Yes, I have much to be thankful for. While my physical body is inactive, my

brain is alert, and I *can* talk. I have used this ability to make known Jehovah's name and purposes to those in the hospitals who would listen—doctors, nurses, patients, clergy visiting the hospitals, and friends who came to see me.

In addition, I have graduated to a wheelchair run by two 12-volt batteries, which I operate from a switch on the armrest. At times while out in my chair, I meet friends and neighbors and have further opportunity to talk to them about God's purposes. I am thankful that I am able to do this.

Several of my children have dedicated their lives to Jehovah, and they in turn are training their children to serve God. That brings me much joy. My wife was a baptized worshiper of Jehovah, and my mother, who was baptized at the age of 75, served Jehovah until her death.

I now look forward to the day when 'God himself will be with his people and will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and when death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be anymore,' and when "the lame one will climb up just as a stag does."—Revelation 21:3, 4; Isaiah 35:5, 6.

At that time total peace will cover the earth, and those who submit to God's rule will reap the benefits. The Bible promises: "The meek ones themselves will possess the earth, and they will indeed find their exquisite delight in the abundance of peace." For how long? "The righteous themselves will possess the earth, and they will reside forever upon it."—Psalm 37: 11, 29; 72:7.

Those are marvelous things to look forward to. And my joy will be complete when, in Jehovah's new system, even 'those dead in the memorial tombs will come out.'—John 5:28, 29.

As I lie here day by day, I have opportunity to review my life and see if I have benefited in any way. I can say without any hesitation that I have benefited a lot. My spirituality has greatly increased. I have learned to depend on Jehovah so much. Instead of complaining about my lot in life or what I might lack, I have learned to appreciate what I have. And my appreciation for my loving family has really grown.

So I am truly thankful for what I have now, and I look forward to the fulfillment of the marvelous hope ahead—life in God's new system. Then I will have perfect health. What a happy day that will be! —*As told by Lindsay Stead.*

Tobacco's Toll in Greece

CAPITALIZING on the title of a popular Greek song, a reporter wrote with a touch of irony: "Yes, 'Greece Never Dies,' but the Greeks die."

"Ten thousand people die every year from smoking, just in our own country," reports an article in the Athenian newspaper *Eleftheros Typos*. Some believe the true death toll from tobacco may be twice as high. Greece is a tobacco-producing country, and smoking is an expanding habit among the Greeks in spite of the many reports recently written about the dangers resulting from smoking.

Are Superstitions Harmless?

WHEN a group of psychology students placed a ladder against a wall on a busy London street, passersby faced a dilemma: stay on the curb and walk under the ladder, or step off the curb and dodge the traffic. Seven out of every ten pedestrians avoided the ladder.

Indeed, many people, if pressed, admit to harboring one or two pet superstitions. What about you? Do you sometimes feel the urge to knock on wood, cross your fingers, or toss some salt over your left shoulder? And if so, did you ever stop to think *why?*

Superstitions are not viewed as all that serious by some. As author Robertson Davies explains: "Parapsychology, UFO's, miracle cures, transcendental meditation . . . are condemned, but superstition is merely deplored."

Others view superstitions as insignificant, not serious at all. "Let's view them with tolerance and amusement," says one book on superstitions. Many people do that. They reason, 'If they do no good, they are at least harmless.' But are they?

Harmless or Harmful?

"Behavior doesn't exist without meaning," says Dr. Alan Dundes, a university teacher of folklore. "People would not practice customs unless they meant something to the psyche." These superstitious beliefs, say researchers, are no less than "a window into the psyche." So why don't we open that "window" and see what reasons lie behind?

Psychologist Edward Hornick says that "superstitions are one of life's better props." But do you not agree that the value of a prop, or support, depends on what sort of *foundation* it has? For example, the chair on your solid kitchen floor makes a fine, harmless prop. But would you sit on that chair if it was placed on quicksand? Of course not.

The same determining factor applies to superstitions, "life's better props." What is *their* foundation? Are they based on solid Bible teachings or, perhaps, quicksandlike false religious ideas?

'That sounds farfetched,' you may think. 'I can't see how avoiding a ladder, knocking on wood, or customs like that have anything to do with religious beliefs.' Yet, there is a connection. Take the ladder superstition as an example.

Sometimes it is prudent to walk around a ladder to avoid a falling tool, yet is it not true that even when a ladder poses no danger, some people still avoid it to avert "bad luck"? But on what is the custom based? Well, a ladder against a wall forms a triangle. "And a triangle," explains the *Encyclopædia of Superstitions,* "has always been symbolical of the Trinity." Thus, walking under a ladder became tantamount to defying the Trinity, an intrusion into holy space, and that, notes the same reference, would "play into the hands of the Evil One." However, is the Trinity a solid Bible teaching?

On the contrary, the Trinity teaching orig-

inated in ancient pagan religions. God's Word, though, refutes the Trinity idea. It says that Jehovah is superior to Christ. (John 14:28; 1 Corinthians 11:3) Thus, the ladder superstition is based on a false religious idea. So is the superstition of tossing salt over your left shoulder.

Salt, a preservative, came to symbolize life and good fortune. If you spill some, so goes the superstition, you must *appease* the Devil and the demons. And since they are always on your left, the sinister side (*sinister* is Latin for "on the left side"), you have to toss some over your left shoulder. Does not appeasing imply making concessions? Yes, and that flies in the face of Scriptural warnings: "Oppose the Devil," "neither allow place for the Devil," and "stand firm against . . . the Devil." (James 4:7; Ephesians 4:27; 6:11) Therefore, this superstition is also based on beliefs contrary to the Bible.

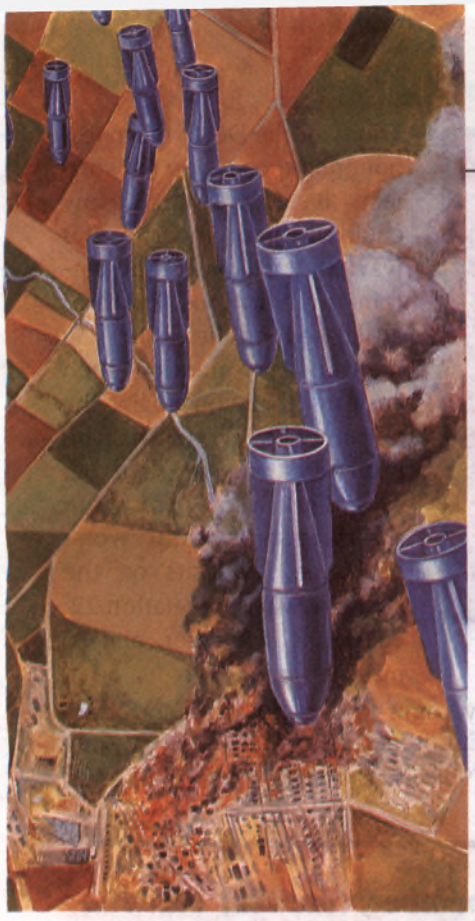
Harmful—In What Manner?

'That may be true, but when I avoid a ladder or toss salt I'm not even *thinking* about the Trinity or the Devil, much less honoring those,' you may object. 'It's just a habit. How could it harm me?' In this way: If you *know* that certain superstitious customs are based on lies, but you continue to practice such customs, then you are like the person who *knows* that his chair rests on quicksand but says: 'I just won't *think* about the quicksand, so it won't harm me,' and sits on the chair anyway. (Revelation 22: 15) He is in danger, and so may you be. Why?

You may begin to depend more and more on superstitions, and before you know it, they may rule your life. And since superstitions are based on lies, you could become, in effect, a slave of "the father of the lie," Satan. (John 8:44) That, in turn, may lead to enslavement to another practice based on lies—spiritism.

"Remember, too, that superstitions offer an immature individual an excuse for blaming some power beyond himself for his bad fortune."
—Superstitious? Here's Why!

True, at first glance superstitions seem harmless enough, but give them another good look and you will discern what they really are—at the least useless and at the most harmful.



THE WORLD SINCE 1914

Part 5: 1943-1945

World War II —Its Fierce and Fiery End

RAY remembers how as a young schoolboy in the early 1940's he and his brother used to settle down in front of the radio in their California home every night to listen to the ten o'clock news. The time difference between there and Europe enabled them to hear reports of that night's bombing raids over Germany. For these two youngsters it became a nightly ritual to try to locate Essen, Berlin, Stuttgart, Hamburg, and other German cities on the large European map spread out on the floor before them.

Meanwhile, German youngsters were learning about the war in a more immediate way. Their nightly ritual was that of trying to sleep in the dreary confines of air-raid shelters. For the second time in less than 30 years, Germany was being systematically forced to its knees. A German newspaper later wrote: "What had been feared until then was now apparent —at the latest during the winter of 42/43: Germany could no longer win a war already long lost."

Fire From Heaven

The Allied bombs falling like fire from heaven helped convince the Germans that defeat was inevitable. Estimates are that during the war almost one out of every five housing units in the country was either destroyed or so severely damaged as to be uninhabitable. Over a million civilians were killed or seriously wounded, and between seven and eight million were made homeless.

As long as news from the war fronts was good and as long as people were not being forced to spend their nights in air-raid shelters, most of them were willing to go along with Hitler and his policies. But, as *Süddeutsche Zeitung* explains, "when the bad news began piling up, there came a turning point." A German secret service report dated August 9, 1943, admitted that the air war was having consequences. People "faced with the seemingly insoluble problem of personal existence," it said, were now raising the hitherto unasked "question of why?" Underground move-

ments designed either to overthrow Hitler or to force him to sue for peace got fresh support. Several unsuccessful attempts were made to assassinate him, including the well-known one on July 20, 1944.

Behind closed doors expressions of dissatisfaction became more frequent, often revealed in the form of humor. For example, as the story went, a man from Berlin and one from Essen were discussing the extent of bomb damage done to their respective cities. The Berliner said that the bombardment of Berlin had been so severe that windowpanes were falling out of the houses for five hours after the raid was over. To this the Essener replied: "That's nothing. After the raid on Essen, pictures of the Führer were flying out the windows for two weeks!"

As the expected Allied invasion of Europe drew nearer, the Allied bombing offensive, termed "Pointblank," was intensified. In fact, it continued to the very end of the war, one of the war's most controversial bombing raids not taking place until February 1945. The German newspaper *Stuttgarter Zeitung* reports: "At first Berlin was considered as target. Then it was decided to choose a city that until then had remained practically untouched . . . , the city of Dresden. . . . The extent of destruction, in anticipation of Hiroshima, made this raid different from all the others." The *Illustrierte Wochenzeitung* adds: "Dresden, one of the most beautiful cities in Europe, became a dead city. No other city in Germany was so systematically bombed to pieces."

Compare the two eyewitness descriptions of this bombing raid in the accompanying box. Then ask yourself: Could anything more graphically point up the cruelty and madness of war?

Thus, long before the days of "star wars," it was already apparent that the heavens held dangers other than simply those of

One Massive Sea of Flames

"The whole city of Dresden was trembling. Incendiary bombs were spewing gasoline and phosphorus like rain. Flames leaped from the buildings onto the streets, setting the asphalt on fire and making the streetcar tracks red hot. It was one massive sea of flames four kilometers [2.5 mi] wide and seven kilometers [4.5 mi] long. Seventy thousand persons were burned alive, torn apart by bombs, crushed by falling walls, suffocated by smoke. The tremendous fire storm that ensued tossed everything into the air—furniture, yes, even people were swirling around in spirals of fire. At the old marketplace, there was a water tank three meters square [10 ft]. Half-crazed people were springing into the water for protection, where they drowned or suffocated; few came out alive. Only charred corpses were recovered. It was impossible to keep up with burying the dead; they were simply stacked in piles, covered with gasoline, and set on fire; the piles burned days on end. Our house was thoroughly gutted. We also lost our beloved Josie and her little five-year-old boy."—Dresden residents H. and S. M.

"From the air the city looked very beautiful, lighted . . . in the center by fires of different colors. . . . It really did not strike me as being all that horrible, because of its gruesome beauty."—Unidentified Royal Air Force bomber pilot

inclement weather. How reminiscent of what Christ Jesus prophesied about the last days: "And there will be fearful sights and from heaven great signs. Also, there will be signs in sun and moon and stars."—Luke 21:11, 25; compare Revelation 13:13.

A Secret Weapon Fails to Bring Peace

After driving the Axis powers out of North Africa, the Allies invaded Sicily in July 1943. In September they moved onto mainland Italy itself. The Italian government, which in the meantime had deposed Mussolini, capitulated. In October it even declared war on Germany, its former partner.

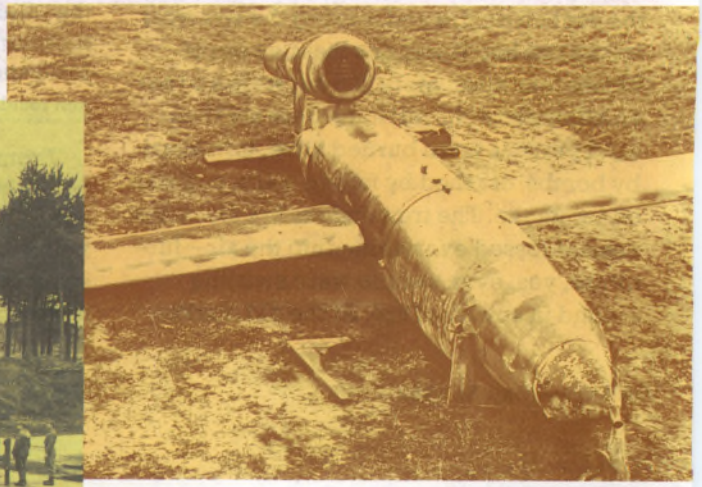
Toward the end of that same year, Hitler, foreseeing an invasion from the west, pulled back some of his troops in the east. It was imperative that he maintain control of the northern French and Belgian coasts. From there he intended to launch what he hoped would turn the tide of battle once again in his favor—a secret weapon!

What could it be? Supposedly it was capable of wiping out a city the size of London within a remarkably short time. The rumor making the rounds in December 1943 was that people living in western sections of Germany had been told to make preparations for a stay of 60 hours in their air-raid shelters. Then after the secret weapon of reprisal had accomplished its purpose, they could exit into a world of Nazi-dictated peace.

But early on the morning of June 6, 1944, before Hitler's secret weapon was operational, Allied landing troops stormed onto the French beaches of Normandy. Hitler's armies were now confronted from the east, the west, and the south. A week later, on June 13, Hitler struck with his promised secret weapon. In reality it was composed of two weapons. One was a flying bomb called the V-1 missile, and the other, called the V-2 rocket, was a forerunner of modern long-range ballistic missiles. The "V" stood for the German word *Vergeltungswaffen,* meaning "weapons of reprisal." From then until the following March, they were sent crashing into Britain and Belgium, causing over 23,000 serious casualties, including several thousand deaths. But it was soon apparent that Hitler's secret weapon offered too little too late.

It was also obvious that Hitler would blame his defeat on others. Among the last words he wrote were the following: "My trust has been misused by many people. Disloyalty and betrayal have undermined resistance throughout the war." He underlined this conviction by expelling from the

Imperial War Museum, London



German V-1 missile (right) and V-2 rocket (below) as used in World War II

U.S. Air Force photo

party and from office his former comrades Hermann Göring and Heinrich Himmler, whom he now considered traitors. Actually, it was Hitler himself, according to German journalist and prize-winning author Sebastian Haffner, who was the "deliberate traitor." The extent and seriousness of Hitler's atrocities against other nations or groups dare not be minimized, but "when viewed objectively," says Haffner, "it was Germany that Hitler damaged by far the most."

Hitler, now in his Berlin bunker, committed suicide on April 30, 1945, in the midst of the fierce fighting going on for control of Berlin. In accordance with his instructions, he was cremated in the garden of the chancellery. Up in smoke went both Hitler and his grandiose delusions.

Something Worse Than Dresden

Meanwhile, in the war against Japan, the Allies were making substantial gains. Their plan of island-jumping their way to the Japanese mainland was simple. But carrying it out was difficult and, besides, extremely costly. Moreover, it was estimated that invading the home islands themselves would mean at least half a million Allied dead and probably even more Japanese. If there was just some way to end the war more quickly! Would the secret weapon being developed by the United States succeed in doing so?

Just prior to the outbreak of World War II, Albert Einstein had informed the U.S. president that German scientists were experimenting with the possibility of harnessing atomic energy for weapons. Should they succeed in accomplishing this, he warned, they would wield tremendous power that could be used militarily in achieving their goals. To offset this danger, the U.S. War Department activated a plan in 1942, later known as the Manhattan Project, with the goal of developing an atom bomb.

On July 16, 1945, for the first time, such a bomb was successfully exploded in New Mexico. It was too late to use this secret weapon in Europe but not so in Asia.* So, on August 6 an atom bomb was dropped on Hiroshima, Japan, and three days later one on Nagasaki. If the Dresden attack had been controversial, how much more so these two attacks! Some argue they were justified, probably in the long run saving hundreds of thousands of lives. Others have suggested, however, that a test explosion over an unpopulated area might have been sufficient to force Japan into surrendering. At any rate, realizing the situation to be hopeless, Japan capitulated. The war was over—really over!

Answering the Question "Why?"

Those considered by the Allies to be

* Had Hitler held out for another three months, Germany might have had the dubious distinction of being the first country to be hit by an atom bomb.

principally responsible for the outbreak of the war and its continuation were tried for war crimes. Those convicted were punished.* Truly, Nazism had perpetrated some of the most horrible atrocities in all history. But what factors may have led up to all of this? Speaking about the rise of Nazism, Professor Walther Hofer, Swiss historian, contends that "the all too simple answers to historical questions are generally distorted; they are especially so in this case." He goes on to explain: "Without the intense after-effects caused by the total war and military milieu experienced from 1914 to 1918, National Socialism's ideology and rule would have been inconceivable."

This supports the contention that the catastrophic world conditions that have existed for most of this century can be traced back to what happened between 1914 and 1918. According to Bible chronology, this was the time when "the one called Devil and Satan, who is misleading the entire inhabited earth," was ousted from his heavenly position of unopposed rulership over the nations. "He was hurled down to the earth," says the Bible writer, who then warns: "Woe for the earth . . . , because the Devil has come down to you, having great anger, knowing he has a short period of time."—Revelation 12:9, 12; compare 11:18.

World War I was an expression of the Devil's anger, as was World War II. Thus he is the *root cause* of both wars and of all the misery they produced. It is understandable that some people find it difficult to suppress feelings of anger toward the Germans because of Auschwitz, or toward the Japanese because of Pearl Harbor. On the other hand, some feel anger toward the British because of Dresden, or toward the Americans because of Hiroshima. National as well as personal hatreds die a hard death. But they must not control the thinking of Christians, who, more appropriately, will direct their feelings of anger toward Satan the Devil.

Soon God's Kingdom will destroy the Devil and solve all mankind's problems. This is the good news that Jehovah's Witnesses, whose ranks grew from 71,509 in 1939 to 141,606 in 1945, wanted to preach in an expanded way now that World War II was over. "Deceptive Prosperity Amid a Peace That Was Not" would not prevent them from doing so. Read about it in our next issue.

* Of the 22 top Nazis tried at the Nuremberg trials, 12 were sentenced to death; only 3 were acquitted; the others were given prison terms ranging from ten years to life.

Other Items That Made the News

1944—Pope asks warring nations to spare Rome from bombardment

1945—United Nations organization established to maintain international peace and security

CARE (Cooperative for American Relief to Everywhere) founded to send food, clothing, and medicines to Europe as black market flourishes

During the last months of World War II, 13 additional countries, 7 of them in South America, declare war on Germany

Woman suffrage becomes law in France

Bloodless revolution overthrows 15-year rule of Getúlio Vargas, president of Brazil

How Can I Control My Temper?

"I have a terrible temper. I get angry, and before I know it, I'm saying horrible things to people I really like. I try to ignore little resentments, but they build up anyway. After I blow up, I feel guilty."—A teenage girl.

NO DOUBT about it, controlling your temper can be a real struggle. Little wonder, then, that some in the mental health field have claimed it is *good* to let your temper loose once in a while. This supposedly 'increases your self-esteem' and 'clears the air' in your relationships with others. Why, some even say that holding anger in is bad for your health!

The Bible, however, says: "Let all malicious bitterness and anger and wrath and screaming and abusive speech be taken away from you." (Ephesians 4:31) Which advice, then, is best? Is it even *possible* to control one's temper when there is strong provocation?

Your Temper—A Caveman Instinct?

At the heart of many anger theories is belief in the theory of evolution. Some believe that anger is a holdover from our caveman ancestors, an uncontrollable instinct. Says Carol Tavris in her book *Anger: The Misunderstood Emotion:* "Darwin's theories represent a crucial pivot point in Western thought: for once the belief that we can control anger—indeed, must control it—bowed to the belief that we *cannot* control it, it was then only a short jump to the current conviction that we *should* not control it."

'Express your anger,' some thus advise. 'Go ahead and blow off steam.' But has such advice proved worth while? For one thing, evidence against the theory of evolution continues to mount. And Tavris and others challenge the 'let it all out' view of anger. "I notice that the people who are most prone to give vent to their rage get angrier, not less angry," observes Tavris. "I observe a lot of hurt feelings among the recipients of rage."

The book *Behind Closed Doors: Violence in the American Family* reports similarly on a study of over a thousand married couples. The authors discovered that letting out anger was far from calming. On the contrary, verbal aggression often led to physical aggression! The reason? Anger feeds on itself. Such research thus confirms what the Bible writer said centuries ago: "An enraged man stirs up contention, but one that is slow to anger quiets down quarreling."—Proverbs 15:18; compare 29:22.

'Be Wrathful, Yet Do Not Sin'

Anger is thus not some uncontrollable animal instinct. It can and *must* be controlled. Does this mean, though, that we can somehow be immune to provocation —devoid of feelings and emotions? No, for

at Ephesians 4:26 the Bible acknowledges that at times we will rightfully feel angry: "Be wrathful, and yet do not sin."

Notice, however, that the Bible condemns, not anger, but letting anger take control of one's actions! "Anyone disposed to rage has many a transgression," says Proverbs 29:22. So rather than nurturing rage, "get the mastery over it." (Compare Genesis 4:7.) For example, imagine yourself in a situation that just makes your blood boil. How can you 'keep calm to the last'? (Proverbs 29:11) You might first try the age-old advice to 'count to ten'—or to whatever number it takes for you to settle down.

An article in *'Teen* magazine further recommends: "Use up some of that anger energy by taking a long walk . . . You may want to do the activity you find most relaxing, whether that be listening to music, taking a hot bath or watching a movie." Better yet, call on Jehovah God in prayer, asking for his help in remaining calm. "And the peace of God that excels all thought will guard your hearts and your mental powers." (Philippians 4:7) In addition, try reading the Bible or Bible-based publications, such as this journal and its companion *The Watchtower*.

'Slowing Down Anger'

Proverbs 19:11 says: "The insight of a man certainly slows down his anger." (Compare Proverbs 14:29.) Insight is the act or power of seeing into a situation, having all the facts of a matter before taking action. By exercising insight, you may find that there is little reason for you to take offense in the first place.

For example, imagine that your friends are late picking you up for a movie. You begin thinking about all the other times this has happened to you. The more you think, the more irritated you become! When they finally arrive, what will you do? Give them a piece of your mind—or find out what happened that made them so late? Likely there is a good reason. Having insight may thus prevent a temper explosion.

Insight could also include taking the time to weigh the consequences of angry retaliation. Consider a Bible account involving King David. When a man named Nabal snubbed David's kindness, David impulsively planned retaliation—murder! Nabal's wife, Abigail, however, implored David to consider the *consequences* of shedding innocent blood. David halted in his tracks. "Blessed be your sensibleness," said David to Abigail, "and blessed be you who have restrained me this day from entering into bloodguilt."—1 Samuel 25:2-33.

Considering the consequences of an angry outburst could similarly protect you from needlessly escalating a disagreement with someone in authority, such as a teacher or an employer. "If the spirit of a ruler should mount up against you, do not leave your own place, for calmness itself allays great sins," said Solomon. (Ecclesiastes

In Our Next Issue

- *Those Awesome Baby Brains!*
- *Talking and Seeing Through Glass*
- *How Can I Find Happiness as an Only Child?*

Do you leave the company of those given to anger?

10:4) And even where retaliation is aimed at a peer, remember that the Bible says: "Do not say: 'Just as he did to me, so I am going to do to him.'"—Proverbs 24:29.

Another way to slow down anger is to watch what you feed your mind. Many television shows are violence packed. True, many think that TV and movie violence affects only those already inclined that way. One research team, however, claims that "all viewers tend to be affected." —*How to Live With—And Without—Anger,* by Albert Ellis.

The Bible further counsels at Proverbs 22:24, 25: "Do not have companionship with anyone given to anger; and with a man having fits of rage you must not enter in, that you may not get familiar with his paths and certainly take a snare for your soul." Do you enjoy the company of those "given to anger"? Then do not be surprised if you have trouble controlling your temper. The book *How to Live With—And Without—Anger* thus encourages finding "good models in your own life . . . people who feel determined to overcome life's unniceties and who actively keep working at doing so. Talk to these people. Try to learn from them how they manage to keep reasonably cool in the face of life's annoyances."

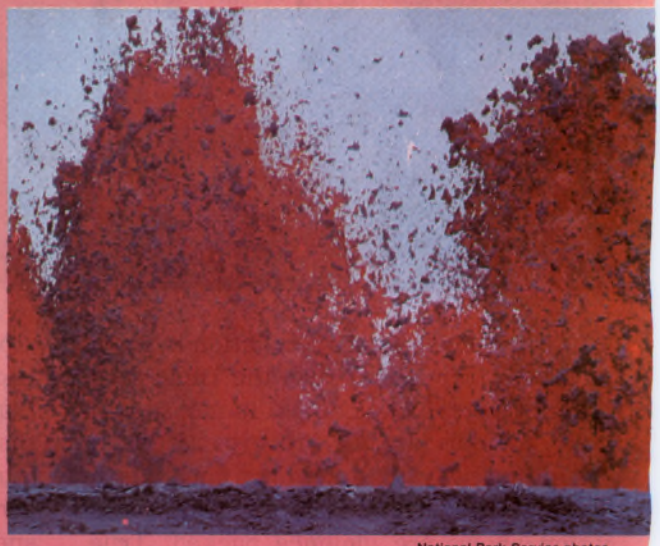
Anger From Within

Simply calming oneself down, however, may not keep the anger at bay for long. Professor of psychology Richard Lazarus writes: "An emotion does not have to be aroused by something in the outside world. It can be created by a person's thoughts." For example, one young woman admits that her anger many times is due to *dwelling on things* that get her upset about a person. "My mind races with every detail, and I find myself getting angrier and angrier. Inside I become nervous and tense. It messes up my whole day. I feel depressed."

Discussing an anger-producing event later with a friend can likewise have the effect of making rage rise up again. At times the best thing to do is get to the very source of the irritation and try to correct matters. Has someone offended you? If you cannot simply forget the matter, approach that person and try to straighten out the matter. (Compare Matthew 5:23-26.) Often it turns out that a simple misunderstanding has occurred.

Provocations may abound. Yet, with insight you can keep such matters in perspective. You can learn to turn destructive feelings into productive actions. Yes, you can control your temper!

Hawaii's Fountains of Fire



National Park Service photos

THERE is a red glow in the night sky, an acrid smell in the air, and one's eyes smart from the pollution in the atmosphere. What is happening? Why are people preparing for possible evacuation from their homes? Is it a forest fire? No, the disturbance is caused by the volcano, active again and once more putting on a spectacular, fiery show.

Eruptions of the volcanoes on the "Big Island" of Hawaii are a relatively common occurrence. Kilauea volcano, for example, has had 48 phases of activity since it began erupting on January 3, 1983. Usually these phases last 24 hours or less and consist of lava fountains that are from several hundred to about a thousand feet high, with some lava flows extending a few miles from the vent area.*

A Spectacular Eruption

The eruption in the spring of 1984, however, was different. This time, Mauna Loa—the world's largest active volcano, measuring 33,000 feet from ocean floor to peak—came to life. Quiet since a brief one-day eruption in July 1975, Mauna Loa was to be active 22 days during March and April. It spewed forth an average of more than 1.3 million cubic yards of lava per hour for much of that time.* That is enough volcanic material hurled out in just one hour to lay a four-inch-thick, four-foot-wide sidewalk all the way from Honolulu to New York, a distance of 4,873 miles!#

The large volume of lava resulted in several major flows. Some of them headed in the direction of Hilo, the largest city on the island, with a population of over 35,000. Authorities kept a sharp eye on conditions, and anxiety reached a peak when a mainstream of lava flowed to within four miles of the city. But as matters turned out, there was no serious threat to life or property despite all the lava produced.

While Mauna Loa was erupting, Kilauea also brief-

* 1 ft = 0.3 m; 1 mi = 1.6 km.

* 1 cu yd = 0.76 cu m.

1 in. = 2.5 cm.

ly roared back to life, with lava fountaining to heights of almost 700 feet. This created the unusual situation of two active volcanoes erupting simultaneously on the island—the first time since 1868 that this had happened.

Hawaiian Lore

As might be expected, such awesome displays of nature evoke traditional and sometimes superstitious responses from individuals. Hawaiian lore has it that the volcano is the home of the fire goddess Pele and that when the volcano is threatening life or property, she is expressing her anger. At such times, ancient Hawaiians offered food and liquor as sacrifices to appease Pele.

Some modern-day Hawaiians still hold to some of these traditions. During the 1984 eruption of Mauna Loa, at least one kahuna, or Hawaiian religious leader, was reported to have ascended the mountain to the vent area to make offerings of red fish and taro roots to the fire goddess, Madame Pele.

Hawaiian legend also surfaced during the time of the dual eruptions of Mauna Loa and Kilauea. During the night, many individuals, including National Park Service personnel, reported seeing a white streak in the sky, accompanied by a large bright flash. According to Hawaiian lore, this was explained as Pele traveling in her fireball, or *popoahi,* form from one volcano to the other in order to assert her domain.

Another phenomenon also occurred during the volcanic activity. Snow, caused by natural conditions over Mauna Loa, momentarily fell on the mountain during its fountaining of lava. While scientists were explaining how the smoke and ash cast into the atmosphere could help cause the snow, those familiar with Hawaiian legend had another explanation.

According to lore, the snow falling on the volcano would be evidence of the two goddesses—Pele and her sister Lilinoe, the snow goddess—fighting over their domain, Mauna Loa. The fact that the snow melted as soon as it touched the lava would mean that Pele had won the fight in the struggle for domination.

Recent Volcanic Activity

Mauna Loa has been quiet since 1984, but Kilauea, which has had 48 periodic eruptions since

National Park Service photo

January 1983, changed to a continuous outpouring of lava on July 18, 1986. A daily flow of over half a million cubic yards of molten rock reached the sea last November. The eight-mile-long river of lava, which severed the Kalapana Highway, added new land to the coastline but had destroyed 26 homes by December, with another 80 still being threatened.

While Hawaii's volcanoes have generally been relatively harmless, there has been considerable property damage recently. There is little danger to life, as the volcanoes and their lava flows are in isolated areas. If a lava flow starts to approach an inhabited area, authorities have been able to give sufficient advance warning to allow for a safe and orderly evacuation.

Volcanoes have played a major role in preparing the earth for human habitation, and they have done much to enrich the soil and moderate the climates. The awesome spectacle of Hawaii's fountains of fire can be viewed without superstitious fear. Rather, we are moved to give glory to Jehovah, the God of all creation.

Meet the World's Smallest Deer

New York Zoological Society photos

THE year was 1935. A Chilean farmer was tilling his soil in the beautiful mountainous region of Curicó. Suddenly, he heard dogs chasing what he assumed to be a rabbit. Imagine his surprise when a beagle-sized animal, looking somewhat like a goat, ran out of the woods and took refuge between his legs. Looking down at the trembling creature, the farmer recognized it as a pudu, the smallest deer in the world.

This harmless little deer is seldom seen, since it lives in isolated areas of the highlands. It ventures out only to eat fruits, leaves, and other vegetation but runs quickly for cover when its keen senses of hearing and smell warn it of danger. The pudu prefers thickly forested regions, since exposure to direct sunlight for as little as three hours can cause its death.

So little is known of this timid creature that only about the turn of the century did zoologists realize that it is not a goat or a sheep. They identified it as a deer, since the male loses its 2.5- to 3.5-inch (6 to 9 cm) spikes, or antlers, once a year. There are, in fact, two types of pudus. The variety once abundant in southern Chile and Argentina has fur of a reddish color. A northern cousin in the jungles of Colombia, Peru, and

Ecuador is a bit darker in color. About 16 inches (40 cm) high and from 28 to 31 inches (70 to 80 cm) long, the pudu weighs about 22 pounds (10 kg) when fully grown. The animal has a distinct wedge shape, since its front legs are a bit shorter than its hind legs.

Threatened Little Survivor

Although the pudu is extremely shy, it apparently likes humans and can come to trust them. Many pudus have followed sheep or cattle in from grazing, only to be chased away by the farmer's dogs. Often, researchers who win the confidence of a pudu will be rewarded by having their hands or face licked by their new friend. One veterinary investigator made friends with a female pudu that jumped up onto his lap, licked his face, and then pushed him with her head toward her nest, apparently to show him her newborn offspring.

While the pudu has such natural enemies as the fox, the puma, wildcats, and owls, its greatest foe is man. In the past, the little deer roamed more freely, using its speed and intelligence to elude predators. The pudu has been known to double back on its own tracks or to swim upriver to deceive a fox or a puma. But now, with the destruction of forests by man, the pudu's domain is steadily shrinking. So the pudu has taken to living in tunnels made in the thick underbrush. Being a tidy animal, it has distinct places in its tunnels for eating, for sleeping, and for excreting, and it does not vary these throughout life. Familiarity with the tunnels is its key to survival. Although the pudu is a fast runner and a fairly rapid swimmer, it is easy prey in the open field. But this is not so within its tunnels where, one researcher says, "it flies like a bullet," leaving behind the pursuer.

Although hunting the pudu is prohibited, some unscrupulous men have learned to catch or kill this peaceful little creature. These hunters are motivated by a desire for the animal's rich fur, tasty meat, or the price foreign zoos are willing to pay for a healthy specimen. They have trained small dogs to flush the pudu out of the tunnels and into the open. But since pudus can outswim a dog, they head for the nearest river where men wait in boats to catch them. The animals are often injured, and according to one investigator, as many as 80 percent simply die of fright.

You see, shyness is the pudu's weakness. When scared, its eyes seem to fill with tears, it shivers, its hair stands on end, and often the animal dies of a heart attack. For this reason, even though pudus have been domesticated by rural families and universities, these deer do not seem to live long in captivity. They often die without any apparent cause, victims of the stress of captivity. The pudu loves freedom.

It was feared that the pudu would soon join the list of 68 species of mammals that have become extinct in this century. However, recent studies by one researcher working with the World Wildlife Foundation suggest that the pudu may be surviving after all. How? By learning to adapt to new circumstances with its tunnel system. This is not the case with the Chilean mountain lion, or puma, which is clearly in danger of extinction. How often it is true that in stressful or changing circumstances it is better to be adaptable and friendly than fierce and aggressive!

Let's hope that the pudu can survive until the peaceful new system, when such creatures can leave their protective tunnels and come out into the open to enjoy freedom without fear. Will you be there to meet the world's smallest deer?

From Our Readers

Dentistry Developments

I had a ceramic screw implanted in my jaw, the process described in the article "Dramatic Developments in Dentistry," known as osseointegration. (November 22, 1986) I say, Don't do it. An expert who examined me in 1985 said that this process is far from perfected, and to avoid severe complications, it should only be used on persons physically and mentally healthy. Medical journals should also allow patients who have had bad experiences to express themselves.

C. L., Federal Republic of Germany

There is always a need for caution when introducing any foreign substance into the body, and there will be a certain percentage of failures. Our item dealt with the use of titanium. According to some 20 years of studies, this procedure has had about a 90-percent success rate. Not only has titanium been used but so have vitreous carbon (glass), sapphire, and ceramic. While not recommending any particular treatment, we published the information for the benefit of our readers. It is good to give careful consideration to possible side effects before agreeing to any treatment.—ED.

Just a Crush?

I enjoyed your article "Young People Ask . . . Who Says It's Just a Crush?" (January 8, 1987) It sympathized with young people yet warned that thinking immoral thoughts is wrong. I had a crush on someone in a television series. The sleepless nights and far-out fantasies were all there. But the worst was when I wrote to her and received an autographed photo! I thought I was in love. I can't wait for the follow-up article.

W. H., England

See our issue of January 22, 1987.—ED.

Late Night Snacks

I really appreciated the comment in "Watching the World" under the title "Harmful Habit." (January 8, 1987) It stated that late night snacks can be harmful, especially if a person repeatedly goes to sleep an hour or so after eating. My problem was in having a very disturbed night's sleep because of indigestion. I had often thought, 'Could my erratic sleep pattern be due to snacking at night?' Well, after reading your item, I made up my mind not to do any more snacking after my evening meal. Since then, I have had a good sleep every night, and there is an added bonus: I have lost a few unnecessary pounds.

M. G., United States

Harpy Eagle?

In your issue of November 22, 1986, you featured a story entitled "'The Snatcher' Lives Up to Its Name." The picture on page 20 of the article, which the Zoological Society of San Diego provided, is not a Harpy Eagle. It is a Guiana Crested Eagle. The Harpy Eagle is the world's largest eagle, and you have disgraced it by showing a picture of a spindly-legged, snake-eating bird.

N. R., United States

We have received from the Zoological Society of San Diego the following: "I'm sorry to report that the photo you ran as a Harpy Eagle is indeed a Crested Eagle, Morphnus guianensis. Apparently, the two birds are very much alike in appearance . . . It would take a very sharp eye to tell the difference . . . [We] apologize for the misidentification. We make the utmost effort to properly identify our photos and we appreciate it being called to our attention if there is a question."—ED.

Watching the World

Bible Reading on Decline in Sweden

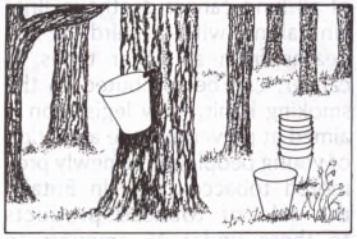
Bible reading has decreased greatly in Sweden, according to a report entitled *The Swedish People and the Bible.* The author, Thorleif Pettersson, assistant professor of the Swedish Bible Society, notes that only 36 percent of the population claim to be Bible readers, 3 percent of whom say they read it daily. The remaining 64 percent never read it. By contrast, in 1949, there were 66 percent who read the Bible and 34 percent who did not. In his report, Pettersson notes that 11 percent of the population *do not* own a Bible and indicates that to be true of 25 percent of those under 30 years of age. When asked if young people will "read the Bible when they get older," he replied, "No, they will never read the Bible. Bible reading will slowly decrease if the present process continues and if the spiritual winds do not begin to blow."

Tit for Tat

An Egyptian historian, Ahmed Behgat, has published a book charging that "during the Exodus ancient Israelites smuggled gold out of Egypt and used it to make the golden calf." Mr. Behgat's research into ancient Egyptian archives has led him to conclude that Israel should pay Egypt $40 billion (U.S.) but without interest, according to Islamic law. However, when his findings were published, according to an item in *World Press Review,* "the Voice of Israel radio demanded reparations for the slave labor the Pharaohs pressed on the Israelites."

Syrupy Memories

Canada's world-famous maple syrup is in grave danger of becoming just a memory if the effect of air pollution is not in some way



terminated soon, says a story in the national newspaper *The Globe and Mail.* "Since 1978, Quebec maple-syrup producers have been reporting that trees of all ages were dying for no apparent reason. The only explanation that scientists have been able to come up with is air pollution, including acid rain and related chemicals," it said. Inspections in the damaged areas show a startling rise since 1983: from 29 percent of trees adversely affected to 80 percent. In an effort to save the trees and the maple-syrup industry, researchers are calling for a halt in air pollution caused by the use of such chemicals as sulfur and nitrogen oxides.

UN Debate

Drinking-water jugs was the subject of a spirited three-hour debate at the United Nations, and as with many other issues they discuss, there was little harmony. The issue arose when the drinking-water jugs and glasses supplied to each delegate in the 13 committee rooms were removed as a $100,000-a-year cost-saving measure. Brought into question was why the committee chairman and those seated at the podium still had water pitchers. (It was because they cannot leave to go to the water fountain.) Another question was how the UN managed to run up such a large bill just supplying water to delegates. (It was because five people were needed to supply water twice a day and sterilize glasses after each use.) As the debate stretched on, the chairman suggested that the overtime pay for guards and translators that evening might equal the amount saved by discontinuing the water service.

Live Donors?

An increasing number of doctors are questioning whether accident victims "who have organs

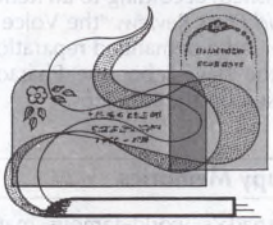
removed by transplant surgeons after being pronounced dead but whose hearts are still beating" are truly dead, reports *The Sunday Times* of London. Medical critics of "beating heart" organ donation say that the tests employed to determine death in such cases are "fundamentally flawed." Why? Because, according to the report, the corpse from which organs are to be removed often reacts to the surgeon's knife as the first incision is made. "Legs will come up in a protective response, and the muscles in the abdomen will clamp tightly, impeding the operation. . . . The donor's blood pressure and heart rate may both shoot up when the operation begins . . . , signs which in a normal operation would indicate . . . that the patient was feeling pain," notes the *Times*. Expressing concern over the issue, one judge noted: "There seems to me to be a very sharp distinction between so-called brain death and death of the body. . . . The truth of the matter is that when they want your organs . . . they remove some of the spare parts when you are not dead in the sense that you and I would understand it."

Birth Control in China

For a decade China has taken drastic action to reduce the country's birthrate. According to French daily *Le Figaro*, the one-child policy "is efficient but has a certain fearsome aspect. . . . Traditionally, Chinese families must have a boy. So baby girls often receive a poor welcome, as couples find it hard to accept a sole female heir." In many countries, a study of 1,000 births will show more or less the same number of male and female children. In China, however, "of 1,000 registered births [the registration takes place four weeks after the birth], there are 660 boys for 340 girls." What accounts for the radical difference between the two figures? *Le Figaro* notes: "It seems certain that millions of baby girls are done away with each year."

Smoking Kills

Cigarettes kill at least a hundred thousand people annually in the United Kingdom, claims the Faculty of Community Medicine in their report *Charter for Action*. Statistics also reveal that 90 percent of all lung-cancer deaths in Britain, along with a third of the deaths from all other types of cancer, can be attributed to the smoking habit. New legislation is aimed at preventing the addiction of young people to the newly promoted tobacco bags. In Britain, the sale of tobacco products to those under 16 amounts to £90 million ($130 million, U.S.) a year.



Just for Being There

All Alaskans—men, women, and children—received a check for $556.26 at the end of last year. That was their share of the $296 million that was divided among Alaska's 531,911 permanent residents. The money originates in oil revenues from developments on state lands. A percentage is placed in a fund, now holding $7 billion, so that Alaska will be solvent when the oil runs out. Half of the fund's earnings have been distributed to Alaskans each year since its start in 1982.

Largest Barge Elevator

The Belgian waterways department is now building the world's largest barge elevator. On the Canal du Centre between Mons and La Louvière (two Belgian cities), there is a 223-foot (68 m) difference in water level. Until now, four old hydraulic elevators, each 56 feet (17 m) in height, have been able to handle 300-ton barges. But the new elevator under construction will be 380 feet (116 m) high, 427 feet (130 m) long, and it will be able to take 2,000-ton convoys. It will consist of two tanks 368 feet (112 m) long and 40 feet (12 m) wide. As the French daily *Le Monde* explained, "the Strepy-Thieu elevator is proof that the Belgians still believe in water transportation."

Controversial Signs

What started as a serious safety measure has now turned into a novelty fad. Originally, the five-inch (13 cm), diamond-shaped signs, attached to a car's rear windshield by a small suction cup, were intended to caution other drivers that a youngster was inside so that they would be more careful. And in the last two years, millions of signs saying "Baby on Board!" or "Child on Board!" have been sold to concerned parents in the United States. Today, however, millions of parodies are being displayed, saying things like "Baby Driving!" "Nobody on Board!" and "Mother-in-Law in Trunk." Safety officials want all the signs removed, stating that they block the driver's view and are responsible for accidents.

"Reluctant Hero"

Leprosy is a dreadful disease that affects perhaps as many as 15 million persons, particularly in Africa, India, Burma, Thailand, and parts of South America. Now the nine-banded armadillo is hailed as "the reluctant hero" in man's fight against the disease.

But how does this small mammal of about two feet in length (61 cm), weighing up to 15 pounds (6.8 kg) and having a shell made of hard, bony plates, figure in this fight?

Well, it has been found that the only animals susceptible to human leprosy are mice and armadillos. So scientists are using the armadillo to make the first vaccine against leprosy, since mice produce too small a quantity to be usable. One infected armadillo yields 750 doses of vaccine. Now, special farms have been set up in the United States and Britain to raise the armored mammal.

Awake!

May 22, 1987

Train Your Child From Infancy!

"We know how to find pearls in the shells of oysters, gold in the mountains and coal in the bowels of the earth, but we are unaware of the spiritual germs, the creative nebulae, that the child hides in himself when he enters this world."

—Dr. Maria Montessori

Those Awesome Baby Brains!

THEY are awesome from their beginning. Three weeks after conception, they start out with 125,000 cells and thereafter increase in spurts of 250,000 cells a minute. Each little brain continues its explosive growth until at birth its cells number some 100,000,000,000—as many as there are stars in the Milky Way!

But months before that, while still in the womb, baby's brain has gone into operation. It is registering perceptions from its watery environment. It hears, tastes, senses light, reacts to touch, learns, and remembers. The mother's emotions can affect it. Gentle words or soft music calms it. Angry speech or rock music agitates it. The mother's rhythmic heartbeat soothes it. But if fear sets her heart racing, soon baby's heart beats twice as fast. A distressed mother transmits anxiety to the babe in her womb. A tranquil mother carries a peaceful baby. A joyful mother may make the babe in her womb jump for joy. All of this and more keeps baby's brain busy. Even in the womb it is awesome.

Do additional neurons form after birth? The latest research says no. Unquestionably, however, the neurons do continue to grow dramatically in size, while making trillions of new connections with one another. Baby's brain at birth is only one quarter as big as an adult's, but it triples in size during its first year. It reaches its adult weight of three pounds (1.4 kg) years before it's a teenager. That doesn't mean it contains the knowledge of an adult. Knowledge is not determined by the brain's weight or the number of its cells. Rather, it seems to be related to the number of connections, called synapses, that are made between the neurons of the brain.

And that number is awesome! A staggering one quadrillion connections may eventually be made —that is one followed by 15 zeros! But only if the brain has been richly stimulated by input from the five or more senses. The environment must stimulate both mental and emotional activity, for that is what makes the fine network of dendrites grow. Dendrites are the tiny rootlike hairs that reach out from the neurons to connect with other neurons.

There is also a time factor involved in making these connections: They are formed much faster in the young than in the old. The saying, "You can't teach an old dog new tricks," is not true. But it is *harder* to teach an old dog new tricks. In the aged, connections between the neurons are slower to form and quicker to fade. The price of their forming is the same as it is in the child—exposure to an enriched, stimulating environment. The mind must continue active! No sinking resignedly into a mental rut! No retirement for the mind!

But the growth that is awesome is in the infant brains. They are sponges soaking up their

Awake!®

May 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 10

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Those Awesome Baby Brains! 3
The Push for Genius 5
Train Your Child in the Right Way —And Do It From Infancy! 7

Also in This Issue

The World Since 1914 Deceptive Prosperity Amid a Peace That Was Not 12
Winter Showers Bring Desert Flowers —And Also Refill Plant Reservoirs 16
Talking and Seeing Through Glass 19
Young People Ask ... How Can I Find Happiness as an Only Child? 23
Allan Kardec—Pioneer of Spiritism 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
"Eat Me if You Dare!" 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

surroundings! In two years a baby learns a complex language, just by being exposed to it. If it hears two languages, it learns them both. If three are spoken, it learns all three. One man taught his small children five languages all at once—Japanese, Italian, German, French, and English. A woman exposed her daughter to several languages, and by the time the child was five, she could speak eight languages fluently. Learning languages usually comes hard for adults, but with babies it just comes naturally.

Language is only one example of abilities genetically programmed into baby brains. Musical and artistic abilities, muscular coordination, the need for meaning and purpose, conscience and moral values, altruism and love, faith and the urge to worship—all depend on specialized systems in the brain. (See Acts 17:27.) In other words, genetically established networks of neurons are specially preprogrammed to be receptive to the development of these and other abilities and potentials.

Understand, however, that at birth these are only potentials, capacities, predispositions. There must be input to make them flower. They must be exposed to the appropriate experiences or environments or studies to become realities. And there is also a correct timetable for such exposures to be most effective, especially in the case of infants.

But when the surroundings are right and the timing is correct, amazing things happen. Not only are languages learned but musical instruments are played, athletic abilities are fostered, consciences are trained, love is absorbed, and a foundation for true worship is laid down. All of this and much, much more, as baby brains are sown with good seed and watered with parental love.

The Push for Genius

"The world could be full of intellectual giants like Einstein, Shakespeare, Beethoven and Leonardo da Vinci if we taught babies instead of children."—Dr. Glenn Doman, director of The Institutes for the Achievement of Human Potential.

"No child is thus born a genius, and none is born a fool. All depends on the stimulation of the brain cells during the crucial years. These years are the years from birth to three. Kindergarten is too late."
—Masaru Ibuka, author of the book *Kindergarten Is Too Late!*

THE awesome potential of baby brains presents a decision for parents. When do you start special training? What do you teach them? How much? How fast? Some results have been spectacular: small children two to five years of age reading, writing, speaking two or more languages, playing classical music on violin and piano, riding horses, swimming, doing gymnastics.

In most instances the target is the mental rather than the physical. One two-year-old counts to 100, adds accurately, has a vocabulary of 2,000 words, reads 5-word sentences, and has developed perfect pitch. A three-year-old names parts of the cell as they are pointed out to him on a chart: mitochondria, endoplasmic reticulum, Golgi bodies, centrioles, vacuoles, chromosomes, and so on. Another three-year-old plays the violin. A four-year-old translates Japanese and French into English.

Don't push. Suzuki's formula: "Two minutes with joy five times a day"

One instructor who teaches mathematics to small children claims: "If I dropped 59 pennies on the floor, our kids could tell you right away that there were 59 and not 58."

While some are enthusiastic about such intensive training, others have reservations about it. A cross section of the reactions of professionals in the field follows:

"On the whole the evidence is not very favorable to starting children on academic skills at an early age. There is ample evidence that it can be done. The issue, however, is not whether it can be done but rather what are the effects, immediate as well as long-term."

"It is a theory that turns children into little computers, it gives them no breathing room."

"Children learn by taking the initiative and exploring their environment on their own. We might be interfering [by pushing mental development] with some other development that's going on [such as emotional development and social skills]."

"My message is, beware of equating brightness with good development. Intellectual superiority is very frequently obtained at the expense of progress in other areas of equal or even greater importance."

"This is not a healthy parent-child relationship. It's giving children the message 'I love you because you're smart.'"

Undoubtedly there are some parents pushing their children, trying to turn them into prodigies or geniuses. In such cases parental ego and pride have taken over. Children are used as showpieces and the parents are basking in the reflected glory. This does not seem to be the motive, however, of some of the leaders in this field of early learning.

Glen Doman, quoted at the beginning of this article, is against the thought of producing superbabies. His aim: "To give all parents the knowledge to make their babies highly intelligent, extremely capable, and delightful children." Learning should be varied and fun for babies. They should be rounded out, mentally, physically, emotionally. Doman is against testing. "Testing is the opposite of learning. It is full of stress. To teach a child is to give him a delightful gift. To test him is to demand payment—in advance."

Masaru Ibuka, also quoted at the outset, said when asked if early training produces geniuses: "The only purpose of early development is to educate a child to attain a flexible mind and a healthy body and to be bright and gentle."

Shinichi Suzuki, famous for his success with training children in the violin, says: "This phrase 'Talent Education' applies not only to knowledge or technical skill but also to morality, building of character, and appreciating beauty. We know that these are human attributes acquired by education and environment. Thus our movement is not concerned with raising so-called prodigies, nor does it intend to emphasize just 'early development.' We must express it as a 'total human education.'"

Suzuki sees forcing practice as both ineffective and undesirable. When asked how long children should practice, he never sets down a rigid schedule. "It's better to practice five times a day for two minutes with preparation and good attention," he says, "than it is to stick with them for half an hour when they are balking." His formula is: "Two minutes with joy five times a day."

What, then, is a proper balance in the use of early learning for your small child? The following article offers some guidelines for consideration.

"The period of infancy is undoubtedly the richest. It should be utilized by education in every possible and conceivable way. The waste of this period of life can never be compensated. Instead of ignoring the early years, it is our duty to cultivate them with the utmost care."—Dr. Alexis Carrel.

Train Your Child in the Right Way

—*And Do It From Infancy!*

THERE is a need to program both mind and heart. Men may be awed by the dazzling achievements of the mind, but God looks at the heart. Knowledge in the head tends to puff up; it is love in the heart that builds up. Bright minds need loving hearts, "for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks." Out of this figurative heart also come acts good and bad. (Matthew 12:34, 35; 15:19; 1 Samuel 16:7; 1 Corinthians 8:1) So while it is important to stimulate children's minds, it is even more important to instill love into their hearts.

There is a built-in starter for this at birth. It is called bonding. The mother holds, cuddles, strokes, and talks cooingly to her baby. Baby, in turn, looks intently at its mother. Bonding takes place, maternal instincts are stirred, and baby feels secure. Some authorities believe that "there is a sensitive period in the first few minutes and hours after the infant's birth which is optimal for infant-parent attachment."

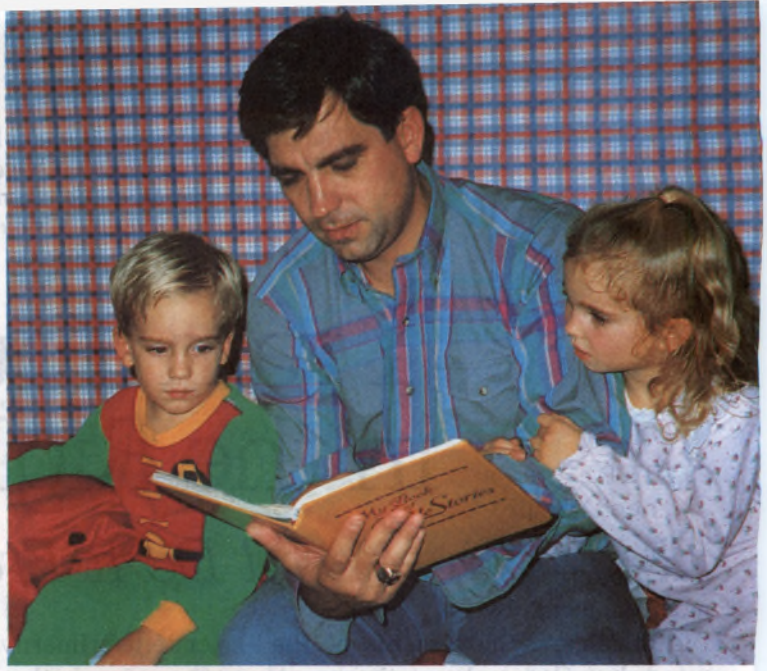
A good beginning, but only a beginning. The infant is helpless, dependent primarily on its mother for its immediate needs—both physical and emotional. Without food the baby starves; it can also starve emotionally. Cuddling, hugging, rocking, playing, loving —all stimulate the development of the brain. This stimulation has been likened to a nutrient for the brain. Without it the brain is impoverished and stunted for life. And because of this neglect it can also become hostile, delinquent, and violent. Mothering is a priority for the child and for society —more important than any worldly career!

The Father's Role

The father is not to be excluded. If he is present at birth, the father-infant bond will begin. As the weeks and months pass, the influence of his role expands rapidly, as is shown by Dr. T. Berry Brazelton, a professional in the field of child development.

"Every child needs a mother and a father," he says, "and every father can make a difference. For a baby, having an active, involved father is not the same as simply having more mothering." He cites a report that showed the difference in the ways mothers and fathers handle children. "The mothers tended to be gentle and low-keyed with their babies. Fathers, on the other hand, were more playful, tickling and poking their babies more than the mothers did."

But fathers give children more than just fun. "Where there is an active father," he says, "the child grows up to be more successful at school, to have a better sense of humor and to get along better with other kids. He believes more in himself and is better motivated to learn. By the time he is six or seven, the child's IQ will be higher."



Jehovah God orders a close teaching relationship between father and son: "These words that I am commanding you today must prove to be on your heart; and you must inculcate them in your son and speak of them when you sit in your house and when you walk on the road and when you lie down and when you get up." (Deuteronomy 6:6, 7) No beginning generation gap here!

Training From Infancy

There are stages or phases in the development of infants through the years from birth to six years: muscular coordination, speech skills, emotional qualities, memory faculties, thinking abilities, conscience, and others. When the infant brain is growing rapidly and these stages arrive

in their turn, that is the opportune time for training in these different abilities.

That is when the infant brain absorbs these abilities or qualities as a sponge soaks up water. Loved, it learns to love. Talked to and read to, it learns both to talk and to read. Put on skis, it becomes an expert skier. Exposed to uprightness, it absorbs right principles. If these favorable learning stages pass without proper input, these qualities and abilities will be more difficult to acquire later on.

The Bible recognizes this, so it admonishes parents: "Train up a boy according to the way for him; even when he grows old he will not turn aside from it." (Proverbs 22:6) The Keil-Delitzsch commentary renders it: "Give to the child instruction conformably to His way." The Hebrew word translated "train" also means "initiate" and here indicates the initiating of the first instruction of the infant. Give it according to the child's way, conformable to his way, according to the stages of his development that he is passing through. That is the appropriate time for him to absorb it easily, and what he learns during these formative years is likely to remain with him.

This is also the opinion of most students of human development: "Nowhere in child-development research have we demonstrated a strong capacity to alter early personality patterns, or early social attitudes." They admit it can happen, but "more often than not, remediation will not be achieved." Many exceptions occur, however, through the power of God's truth to effect change.—Ephesians 4:22, 24; Colossians 3:9, 10.

Language is a good example of training given at the right time. Babies are genetically programmed for speech, but for such built-in brain circuitry to function at top efficiency, the infant must be exposed to speech sounds at the right stage of development. Growth in the speech centers explodes between 6 and 12 months *if* adults talk to the infant often. Between 12 and 18 months this growth accelerates as the infant grasps that words have meanings.

He is learning words before he can speak them. During the second year of life, this receptive, or passive, vocabulary may go from a few words to several hundred. The apostle Paul reminded Timothy that "from infancy you have known the holy writings." (2 Timothy 3:15) The literal meaning of the word "infancy" is "nonspeaker." Very likely Timothy had the Holy Scriptures read to him while he was still an infant, and thus he knew many Bible words before he could speak them.

The point is, there are specific times in the development of the child at which certain things can be learned easily, almost by absorption. If those times pass without the needed stimulation, however, abilities will not be fully developed. If, for example, children do not hear any speech at all until years later, they will then learn it very slowly and very laboriously, and usually never well.

Read to Your Child From Babyhood

When do you begin? From the beginning. Read to your newborn. 'But he won't understand!' When did you start talking to him? 'Why, right away, of course.' Did he understand what you were saying? 'Well, no, but . . . ' Then why not read to him?

With the infant in your lap, your arm around him, holding him close, he feels secure, loved. Your reading to him is a pleasant experience. It makes an impression. He associates a feeling of joy with reading. Babies are imitative, and parents are role models. He wants to copy you. He

wants to read. He plays that he is reading. Later he experiences the joys of reading.

Because of this comes another big benefit —he usually becomes no television addict. He does not sit glassy-eyed watching thousands of stabbings, shootings, murders, rapes, fornications, and adulteries. He can turn the TV off; he can open a book and read. Quite an accomplishment in these days of illiteracy and TV addiction!

It Takes Time to Love a Child

Of course, it takes time to read to children. And it takes time to play with your baby, to play pat-a-cake and peekaboo, to watch it as it explores, initiates actions, seeks out novelty, satisfies curiosity, stimulates creativity. Parenting takes time. And you had better start while your children are babies. That's often when generation gaps start; they seldom wait till the teens. Robert J. Keeshan, broadcaster to children as Captain Kangaroo, tells how it can happen:

"A small child waits, thumb in mouth, doll in hand, with some impatience, the arrival home of a parent. She wishes to relate some small sandbox experience. She is excited to share the thrill she has known that day. The time comes, the parent arrives. Beaten down by the stresses of the workplace the parent so often says to the child, 'Not now, honey. I'm busy, go watch television.' The most often spoken words in many American households, 'I'm busy, go watch television.' If not now, when? 'Later.' But later rarely comes . . .

"Years go by and the child grows. We give her toys and clothes. We give her *designer clothes* and a stereo but we do not give her what she wants most, our time. She's fourteen, her eyes are glassy, she's into something. 'Honey, what's happening? Talk to me, talk to me.' Too late. Too late. Love has passed us by. . . .

"When we say to a child, 'Not now, later.' When we say, 'Go watch TV.' When we say, 'Don't ask so many questions.' When we fail to give our young people the one thing they require of us, our time. When we fail to love a child. We are not uncaring. We are simply too busy to love a child."

It's true, loving your child takes time. Not just time to feed its body with food and put clothes on its back but time to fill its heart with love. Not love weighed, measured, and rationed out but an overflowing and "irrational love," as Burton L. White, author of *The First Three Years of Life,* calls it. He said: "It is very unwise for working parents to transfer the primary child-

rearing function to somebody else, especially to center-based care. Now, I've had a lot of tomatoes thrown at me because of that statement, but my concern is what is best for babies." He is viewing this as *"what is best for babies,"* yet realizing this ideal is not always possible economically where one or even both parents must work.

Discipline—A Touchy Subject!

A lot of tomatoes are also thrown at the Bible because of its counsel on discipline. "The one holding back his rod is hating his son, but the one loving him is he that does look for him with discipline." (Proverbs 13:24) On this verse the *New International Version Study Bible* footnote says: *"rod.* Probably a figure of speech for discipline of any kind." *Vine's Expository Dictionary of Old and New Testament Words* defines "rod" as a "sceptre, as an emblem of rule."

Parental rule may involve spanking, but more often it need not. According to 2 Timothy 2:24, 25, Christians are to be "gentle toward all, . . . instructing with mildness." The word "instructing" here is translated from the Greek word for discipline. Discipline is to be given with regard for children's feelings: "And you, fathers, do not be irritating your children, but go on bringing them up in the discipline and mental-regulating of Jehovah."—Ephesians 6:4.

Psychologists championing permissiveness say if you spank your child you hate him. Not true. Permissiveness is hateful. It has loosed a flood of juvenile delinquency and criminality throughout the earth and caused anguish to millions of parents. It is as Proverbs 29:15 says: "A boy let on the loose will be causing his mother shame." Under the heading "Strict vs. permissive parents," Dr. Joyce Brothers says:

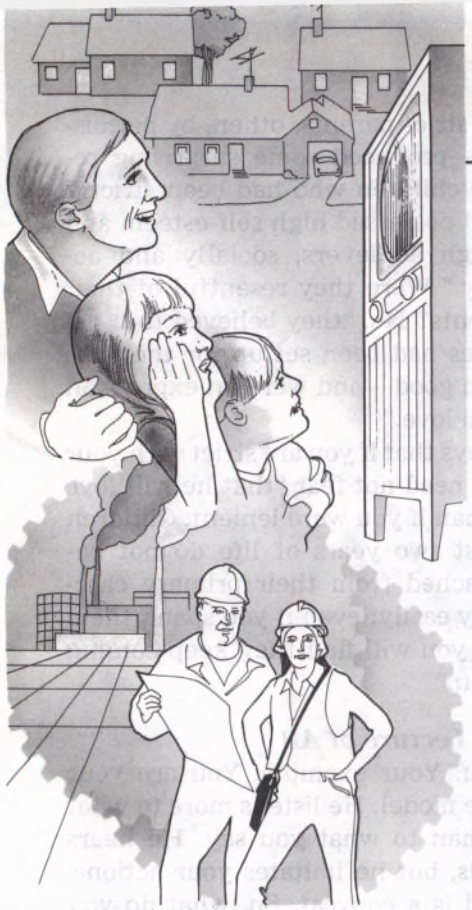
"A recent study of almost 2,000 fifth and sixth graders—some of whom had been reared by strict parents, others by permissive ones—produced some surprising results. The children who had been strictly disciplined possessed high self-esteem and [were] high achievers, socially and academically." Were they resentful of their strict parents? No, "they believed that parental rules had been set up for the children's own good—and were an expression of parental love."

White says that if you are strict with your child, you need not fear "that he will love you less than if you were lenient. Children in the first two years of life do not become detached from their primary caretakers very easily; even if you spank them regularly, you will find they keep coming back to you."

The Best Lecture of All

It is you. Your example. You are your child's role model. He listens more to what you are than to what you say. He hears your words, but he imitates your actions. Your child is a copycat. So, what do you want him to be? Loving, kind, generous, studious, intelligent, industrious, a disciple of Jesus, a worshiper of Jehovah? Whatever it is, be that yourself.

Hence, train your child from infancy, when its brain is growing fast, soaking up information and feelings for mind and heart. But if those crucial formative years are past and the godly personality has not been instilled in your child, then what? Do not despair. Change can still happen and is happening for millions, both young *and old,* by God's power. "Strip off the old personality with its practices," God's Word says, "and clothe yourselves with the new personality, which through accurate knowledge is being made new according to the image of the One who created it."—Colossians 3:9, 10.



THE WORLD SINCE 1914

Part 6: 1946–1959

Deceptive Prosperity Amid a Peace That Was Not

"TODAY'S world, whether we like it or not, is a product of Hitler," claims literary prizewinner and journalist Sebastian Haffner. He explains: "Without Hitler no division of Germany and Europe; without Hitler no Americans and Russians in Berlin; without Hitler no Israel; without Hitler no decolonization, at least not at such a swift pace, no Asiatic, Arabic and Black African emancipation and no European decline."

Of course, other world leaders of the day also did things of great consequence. For example, "most modern historians trace the current East-West division of Europe to decisions reached among the Big Three at [the] Tehran [Conference at the end of 1943]," says the Canadian magazine *Maclean's*. It goes on to point out, however, that the "Yalta [Conference held in February 1945] became best-known among many historians . . . as the meeting at which Stalin outwitted his Western counterparts and stole an empire. . . . Within weeks Stalin's troops had consolidated and extended their grip on Eastern Europe. . . . The hot war was ending, but the Cold War had just begun."

Cold War? Yes. This is the term Bernard Baruch, U.S. presidential adviser, used in 1947 to describe the rivalry between the United States and the Soviet Union. It was a Cold War being fought on political, economic, and propaganda fronts.

At war's end the Allies divided Germany into four occupational zones. The French, the British, and the Americans took over the southern and western parts of the country, the Soviets the eastern part. Thus two national blocs came into being, the one democratic, the other communistic. Ever since, they have been trading icy stares across an invisible iron curtain.

Berlin was also divided into four sectors. Since the former German capital was embedded within the Soviet occupation zone, supplies destined for its British, French, and American sectors had to pass through the Soviet zone. This caused problems, and in mid-1948 the Soviets blockaded all ground accesses

from Berlin to the West. The Western powers responded by flying in all their needed food and fuel supplies. Until ended some 11 months later, the Berlin blockade and the airlift kept Cold War tensions high.

"Almost overnight," writes Professor Alfred Grosser of the University of Paris, "Berlin transformed its image from a symbol of Prussian militarism and Hitler dictatorship into a symbol of freedom." Today, Berlin is still a popular symbol, and politicians of both East and West periodically use it as a pretext for fanning Cold War flames.

Five days before the end of World War II, the Soviet Union declared war on Japan and invaded Japanese-occupied Korea at its northern tip. When Japan capitulated, the Allies agreed that Japanese troops north of the 38th parallel should surrender to the Soviets and those south of this line to the Americans. In 1950 this unnatural division of the country led to war. Before it was over, almost 20 nations were militarily involved, and over 40 more provided military equipment or supplies. On July 27, 1953, a cease-fire was finally put into effect after hundreds of thousands of people had died. For what? Today, over 30 years later, no final solution to the Korean problem has been found. They call this separation the Bamboo Curtain.

The prophet Daniel foresaw that such a confrontation would take place between two symbolic kings. The Cold War has given the two superpower-kings of our day ample opportunity to confer with each other, in continuing their longtime policy of speaking "at one table a lie." Thus they have pursued national interests, while at the same time actively engaging "in a pushing" against each other for personal advantage.—Daniel 11:27-45.

Unruly "Babies Satisfactorily Born"

When the atom bomb was first successfully exploded in New Mexico, U.S. president Truman was sent a secret message reading: "Babies satisfactorily born." But how unruly and demanding these "babies" have turned out to be! They have thrust nations, large and small, into an unprecedented worldwide military buildup, forcing them to spend money that they might better have used to feed and educate their needy. They have fostered the dangerous policy of preserving peace by a balance of terror. They have given the United Nations organization due cause to consider every national or international skirmish, however minor, a potential nuclear holocaust. They have necessitated the setting up of new peace-keeping organizations like NATO (North Atlantic Treaty Organization) in 1949 and the Warsaw Pact in 1955.

As the number of atomic "babies" and their parent nations has grown, so also has the danger of a global nuclear war, caused either by accident or by design. They have kept the world trembling in "fear and expectation of the things coming upon the inhabited earth."—Luke 21:26.

So if the shot that began the U.S. War of Independence in 1775 was "the shot heard round the world," as poet Ralph Waldo Emerson called it, then the atom-bomb blast that ended World War II in 1945 was most surely 'the blast heard round the world.'

The World Book Encyclopedia tells us about some other unruly "babies" that were "satisfactorily born" during the postwar era. Referring to "The Rise of New Nations," it explains: "One by one, the vast European empires collapsed after World War II. Great Britain, France, Belgium, The Netherlands, and the other large

Other Items That Made the News

1946—Ho Chi Minh declares war of liberation in Vietnam

1947—Dead Sea Scrolls, including oldest extant Bible manuscripts, discovered

1948—Mohandas Gandhi assassinated

1949—Peoples Liberation Army completes conquest of mainland China; non-Communist Nationalist government withdraws to island of Taiwan

1950—Riots against apartheid in South Africa

1952—United States explodes first hydrogen bomb

1954—U.S. Supreme Court declares racial segregation in schools unconstitutional

1957—Soviets send first earth satellite, Sputnik I, into orbit

1958—European Economic Community (Common Market) begins operations

1959—Soviet rocket transmits pictures of the moon back to earth

colonial powers had been weakened by their losses during the war. They no longer could hold their colonies by force." Among the first colonies to gain independence were Indonesia, the Philippines, Pakistan, India, Ceylon (now Sri Lanka), Israel, Libya, Tunisia, and Ghana.

The trend toward political independence has continued to this very day and has resulted in the birth of at least a hundred new nations since 1945.

Colonialism had its drawbacks, but what has replaced it is not necessarily better. Syndicated columnist Georgie Anne Geyer notes: "As the colonial empires dissolved, many of the new nations began what was to be one long period of slow-motion collapse, often marked by internal warfare." Thus has the evidence grown that man cannot rule himself successfully.—Ecclesiastes 8:9; Jeremiah 10:23.

Prosperity—But Costly and Deceptive

In 1945 the inhabitants of war-ravaged Europe and Asia were in difficulties. For humanitarian reasons, but also driven by self-interest, the Allies devised the European Recovery Program. It was an agency that offered financial help in rebuilding Europe's bombed-out industries. Popularly known as the Marshall Plan, named after the U.S. secretary of state who originated the idea, this do-it-yourself program, while costly, was effective.

Economic and industrial recovery was remarkable. Modern plants full of up-to-date machinery enabled the defeated nations to catch up to, and in some cases to overtake, their victorious neighbors, who were often forced to make do with antiquated plants and equipment. During the 1950's the so-called German economic miracle was in full swing, and by the end of the decade, Japan had embarked upon a building program that would enable it to conquer much of the world commercially.

The victors, meanwhile, were also trying to get their domestic and economic policies back to normal. Construction of homes and production of domestic goods were severely curtailed during the war, when everything was geared to war production. There was now a tremendous market for items people had long done without. This meant work for all; at least for the moment, unemployment was no problem. The world was now headed toward a period of prosperity not seen since

H. Armstrong Roberts

Postwar prosperity brought fine homes and new cars to many families

before the Great Depression.

But prosperity had its price. More and more mothers took up secular work outside the home, sometimes neglecting children in doing so. Rising living standards allowed for more recreation, but it was not always wholesome. TV watching began replacing family conversation. A breakdown in family life led to an increase in divorce. This trend was later partially offset by the growing tendency of single people to live together without being married. Both trends implied a growing tendency to stress personal interests at the expense of others. Spiritual and moral values, already sorely disrupted by the war, were now being further eroded.

Genuine Peace and Prosperity

As a whole, the world's religious organizations had seen nothing wrong in sending their members out to slaughter fellow humans during World War II. So now they saw nothing wrong in lending moral and physical support to the Cold War and to political uprisings and so-called wars of liberation. But there was one notable exception.

Jehovah's Witnesses preserved Christian neutrality during World War II and thereafter. Rebounding from Hitler's attempts to destroy them, the number of active Witnesses in Germany increased from fewer than 9,000 in 1946 to over 52,000 within five years. Between 1945 and 1959, they increased throughout the world from 141,606 Witnesses in 68 countries to 871,737 in 175 countries. While members of many other religions were increasingly at war with one another over political and social issues, as well as unsettled by a drop in church membership, Jehovah's Witnesses, in a spiritual way, were enjoying real peace and prosperity.

This was apparent at their 1958 Divine Will International Assembly in New York City, where the peak attendance at one session was over 250,000. A featured speaker said: "It is the flourishing of the spiritual paradise that explains the overflowing happiness of Jehovah's witnesses . . . This spiritual paradise reflects the glory of God and testifies to the establishment of his kingdom."

The peace that followed World War II, actually a peace that was not, as well as the purely materialistic prosperity it promoted, pointed up this indisputable fact: Genuine peace and prosperity can come only through God's established Kingdom. During "The 1960's—A Period of Turbulent Protest," this would become even more obvious. Read about it in our next issue.

Winter Showers Bring Desert Flowers

—And Also Refill Plant Reservoirs

Golden poppies, blue lupines, and giant saguaros in Arizona

SOME desert seeds seem to measure rainfall. They will not sprout until a half inch (1.3 cm) or more falls. They can be thoroughly soaked with less, but they will not germinate. They also seem to know the direction from which the water comes. If enough comes from above, they will sprout; if it soaks up from below, they refuse to do so. They're not just being fussy; they're very wise. These wise seeds belong to the flowering annuals that in springtime may carpet the desert with dazzling colors.

But how do they measure rainfall? At times certain salts are in the desert soil, and the seeds refuse to sprout in their presence. The salts are soluble in water. Light showers may soak the seeds but won't leach out the salts. It takes frequent and heavy showers to dissolve the salts and carry them deeper into the soil, away from the seeds. And the rain must soak into the soil from above; water soaking up from below may dissolve the salts but won't carry them away.

Sometimes the problem is not with the soil but with the seeds. In the covering of some desert seeds, there are water-soluble chemicals that inhibit germination. A light rain may soak the seeds, but it takes several heavy rainfalls to remove all the troublesome chemicals. Some inhibiting substances in the seed coverings are not removed even by heavy rain; it takes the action of certain bacteria. But these bacteria only do their job when there is prolonged moisture in the seed. So again it is lots of rain that is required.

Why are the seeds of desert flowers so persnickety

Cow's tongue cactus

Hedgehog cactus

Barrel cactus

about all of this? If they sprout and start to grow at the first light shower, their roots will find no water deeper down. The hot desert sun will scorch the plants before they flower and bear seed. But if the seeds are made to wait until the ground is soaked deep down, their roots will find moisture even when the surface soil is dry.

So it is for survival that the salts in the soil make the seeds wait until heavy rainfall has leached them out. The germination inhibitors in the seed coverings perform the same service. Other substances in the seed coatings prevent sprouting, but they are removed by bacteria that don't do their work until rain has soaked the seeds. By these various means, seeds wait for repeated heavy rainfalls before germinating.

When copious winter showers do not come, neither do the deserts blossom like the rose. But when they do, springtime in the desert bursts forth with pageants of color that bring oohs and ahs from the flocks of visitors that come from miles around. And should not these admiring throngs show gratitude to the Creator, who built this wisdom into these seeds and who sends the winter showers that bring forth the desert flowers?

In all of this, there is a moral for us. When the seedlings of these desert annuals come

up, there may be thousands per square yard. They do not kill one another off—none of this ruthless evolutionary "survival of the fittest" business! They adapt. Each one grows smaller, demanding less, sharing space and water. In one small area, 3,000 plants were found, belonging to 10 different species. Each one had at least one flower and produced at least one seed. If people are so much wiser than flowers, why can't the different races live together and share?

Plants That Maintain Reservoirs

Then there are the succulent cacti that survive the desert's long dry spells by storing up water on the rare rainy days. Some use underground containers, while others hoard it in thick stems. For these green stems to absorb carbon dioxide and perform photosynthesis, the stomata, or breathing holes, must be kept open. Yet this invites disaster, as precious water then escapes in the form of water vapor. The loss is minimized by the stomata's remaining closed during the daytime heat, opening up only during the cool nights. Moreover, in the desert cacti, the stomata are sunk beneath the stem surface in depressions, which further limits water loss.

The sparse desert rainfall seldom penetrates very far below the surface, so cacti roots are usually shallow and spread out over a big area to suck up as much water as possible. As their internal reservoirs fill up, the plants swell, and as the water is used up during dry spells, they shrivel. In many such plants, leaves have been reduced to spines, which also ward off predators that come to eat or drink.

The most striking of this desert community is the giant saguaro. It reaches an age of 200 years, a height of 50 feet (15 m), a weight of 10 tons, and is four fifths water. Its bulk presents relatively little evaporating surface and is fluted like an accordion—allowing it to expand or shrink as water is added or used up. This pleated surface also eliminates large flat areas exposed to the direct rays of the sun and actually shades itself.

Finally, a glorious gift these desert cacti bring to their surroundings each year is a profusion of brilliantly colored flowers. So just as do the poppies and other springtime annuals lured into glorious displays by heavy winter rains, every year these water-hoarding perennials contribute to the desert's blossoming like the rose.

Cactus wren on blooming saguaro

Blossoms, usually on the tip, cover this saguaro

Talking and Seeing Through Glass

LIGHT—that ancient, mysterious symbol of wisdom and intelligence—is now no longer just a symbol. In recent years it has swiftly and quietly assumed its rightful role and become the actual carrier of all kinds of information. For light to achieve its real potential for transmitting intelligence over very long distances, two developments were needed: (1) a special kind of light and (2) a special kind of light guide.

Recently, by means of a series of exciting new developments, we are now sending incredibly large masses of intelligence of all kinds over great distances and at tremendous speeds using beams of light. Yes, it is now possible to talk, see, and hear with remarkable speed and efficiency, by means of tiny beams of light traveling down hairlike threads of glass. Like gossamer spiderwebs, these threads of glass protected in cables, already run between cities in the United States, in Europe, and in Japan. They are now in process of spanning the oceans, going from continent to continent.

How is this possible, since all of us know that light tends to travel in straight lines? What makes it possible for the tiny rays of light to stay in the glass threads as they bend around corners? How do these rays go so far and carry so much information? A special kind of light that makes it all possible—coherent light.

Efficient Coherent Light

The advantage of a ray of coherent light over a ray of ordinary light for the transmission of intelligence can be illustrated by photons of light traveling down a glass fiber compared to men walking down a road. Let us think of a ray of ordinary light as though it were a crowd of men of all sizes, all walking out of step and interfering with one another as they walk. On the other hand, a ray of coherent light might be compared to soldiers all of the same size, all in even rows, and all walking in step. Walking in step without interference would obviously move more men greater distances with greater efficiency and less loss of energy. So it is with coherent light.

At this point some might say: 'Why has this use of light been so slow in coming? Why has no one thought of it before?' Actually, it is not completely new. At least one person, Alexander Graham Bell, saw the advantage of talking by means of light and published a paper in 1880 entitled "Selenium and the Photophones."

This idea showed great foresight, but without coherent light his invention could have had only limited success. It was not, however, until the 1960's with the development of the LASER (Light Amplification

by Stimulated Emission of Radiation) that the necessary first requirement was met. Bell also lacked the other principal requirement, a highly efficient light guide to transmit the information.

Those Ingenious Glass Light Guides —How Do They Work?

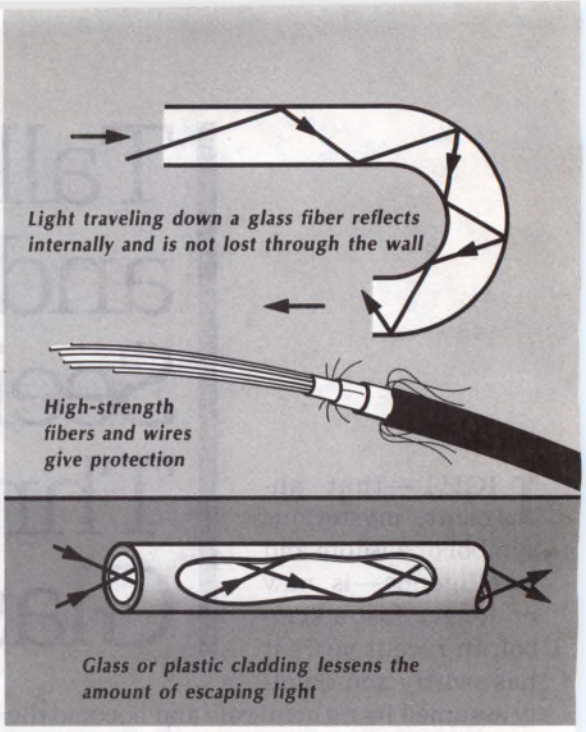
While work was continuing with the development of lasers, others were inventing and developing glass materials of great clarity and ingenious composition that allowed the coherent laser light to travel very long distances. These materials were then drawn down to hairlike fibers.

Many of us may recall seeing illuminated glass fibers used in eye-catching, artistic table decorations. To make these decorations, bunches of glass or plastic fibers are fanned out like flower arrangements and illuminated from the bottom ends. In these displays just ordinary light is usually used for illumination of the fibers. This illustrates, at least, how light can be made to travel down the threads of glass and around bends instead of just going in straight lines as it usually does. In these displays the light travels over very short distances.

To enable the light to travel much greater distances than is required in artistic displays, special coatings of glass or plastic have been devised. These special coatings cause any rays of light that may be tending to escape to bend back into the glass and thus prevent further light loss. There are a number of ingenious variations in composition and construction of these coatings. Nevertheless, these many variations, each in its own way and under its own special conditions, help to increase the distance the light travels.

Although these glass threads, or fibers, have greatly improved our ability to transmit and guide the light, it is still necessary to inject the light into the threads at the critical angle or less. We can understand the principle of how this works when we recall that the smooth surface of a lake can act like a mirror. In fact, the trees along the lake can sometimes be seen mirrored on the surface. This mirror effect is possible because the light coming into our eyes is coming from a very low angle. At just this particular angle, called the critical angle, the surface of the water reflects the light like a mirror. In like manner, when the light is injected into the glass threads at the critical angle or less, it is internally reflected inside the fiber, mirrorlike, with very little light escaping.

It is expected that these rays will be able to travel up to 25 miles (40 km) or more down those tiny threads without need to regenerate the light. Future prospects are even more encouraging. According to a recent report, ultralow-loss fibers have been developed "that can transmit data thou-



sands of miles without the need for repeaters."

In order to protect these marvelous conductors of light, it is necessary to place around them layers and wrappings of protective materials. In addition, high-strength fibers and wires, as well as electrical conductors, are often added to form small cables. When they are protected inside cables, these glass fibers provide an efficiency of transmission of information so great that electrical currents traveling through ordinary copper wires can no longer begin to compete. This is especially true for long distances. But how are data, pictures, and human voices carried by this special kind of light over those tiny glass fibers?

How the Tiny Fibers Carry Their Big Loads

Although the special kinds of light rays and the ingenious glass fibers impress us, the way the rays actually carry their enormous loads of intelligence is equally impressive. One basic secret lies in the tremendous speed of light, approximately 186,000 miles per second (300,000 km/sec). The other is the extremely high frequencies of light waves, amounting to billions of cycles per second. Because of these high frequencies, and by coding the light pulses, tremendous amounts of intelligence can be crowded into the rays of light traveling down the tiny fibers. Let us consider one example, talking and hearing with light.

Talking and Hearing With Light

Talking and hearing, as well as seeing, by light involve some of the most complex technology of our day. Let us, however, go through just a few of the steps that take place in talking and hearing with light to get a little appreciation of the process.

Even though light is used in the transmission, the actual procedure starts just as before, by talking into the telephone. The sound waves from our voices are still converted into corresponding electrical signals in the telephone. Then samples of these electrical signals are "sliced" out at very high speed. This process is similar to a movie camera, which actually takes a series of still pictures, or slices, of the motion. These pictures are then projected, frame by frame, in rapid succession to give the viewer the impression of movement. Similarly, these electrical slices are removed and coded in a multistep process and then converted into light pulses. The coded light pulses then travel down the thread of glass to the receiving end. When they arrive at the receiving end, they are converted back by the reverse process into sound waves in the earpiece of the telephone. What are the present benefits to us? What are the prospects for the future?

Some of the Present Benefits

Just as we have begun to accept and appreciate our present worldwide communications network, a whole new system has appeared. Fiber optics promises to replace multiconductor telephone cables, microwave networks, and even some satellite stations, yet with a host of benefits added.

■ **Communication Without Interference.** One of the most important advantages of fiber-optics transmission for the telephone customer is that it practically eliminates many of the kinds of interference to which we have become accustomed. Lightning, power lines, generators—all have annoyed us with static and noise. Even heavily shielded copper conductors cannot prevent some of these disturbances from coming through.

This small fiber-optic cable carries as many or more telephone conversations than this large conventional cable

If your telephone conversation was transmitted part way by satellite, you may have noticed a fraction of a second communication delay or observed atmospheric effects. In the past, echoes may even have been present. Fiber optics tends to eliminate noticeable delays and provides clear, undisturbed reception.

■ **Communication With Security.** Complete security is one of the outstanding advantages of fiber optics. Thus, cross talk is eliminated, and any illegal wire tapping is essentially impossible. No means has yet been devised to tap in on the light rays, at least not without greatly reducing the signal and thus providing a warning.

■ **Great Efficiency.** The fantastic efficiency of information transmission by light can be understood when we consider that thousands of telephone conversations can be carried with just one pair of light fibers. The estimate is that the entire contents of Webster's unabridged dictionary can be sent thousands of miles in six seconds over one single thread of glass.

■ **Minimum Space—Withstands Hostile Environment.** Many places are already benefiting from this new development. Metropolitan regions gain from new, high-volume communications with greatly reduced equipment requirements. Whole rooms full of outdated switching equipment can now be replaced with fiber-optic equipment requiring only a small area. Also, remote areas such as the Florida Keys now enjoy noise-free service. The hostile saltwater environment in the Keys and like areas tends to cause electrical shorting and chemical deterioration. However, with fiber optics, there is minimum effect.

Looking Into the Future

The future for the new development appears to be most promising. Already the changeover is proceeding much more rapidly than was predicted by some. It is reported that one of the biggest problems is to select a system that will not be obsolete by the time it is installed.

■ **Voice, Video, and Computers From One Terminal.** *High Technology* magazine in its February 1986 issue reports under "Business Outlook" that "Fiber Optics has quickly become the preferred medium for transmitting voice, data, and video in the U.S.—especially over long distances." The article continues with the statement: "We are starting to deploy a fiber network that will extend into the home. Using one terminal that can handle voice, video, and . . . query a database for information." This is opening up opportunities for at least some people to do shopping, banking, and buying of airline tickets, and have certain library privileges from their home. They should even be able to see their friends when they talk on the phone—all with light through those marvelous glass fibers.

How Can I Find Happiness as an Only Child?

"I HATE it. I hate it," cried 16-year-old Sue Ann. But Al, two years younger, said: "I love being an only child."

Both, of course, had their reasons. But could it be that Sue Ann was overemphasizing the disadvantages, whereas Al was mainly seeing the advantages? How do you —especially if you are an only child—view the matter? Do you feel like Sue Ann or like Al? Or maybe a little bit like both?

Try to Understand Why

A one-child family is by no means the world standard. But the birthrate in some countries, particularly in North America and Europe, has dropped so low that being an only child will be the lot of millions of children now being born. And in China, which since 1979 has carried on a drastic program of birth control, there are an estimated 35 million families with just one child. While some children may find this situation difficult to accept, Elke, a young woman who grew up as an only child, says that knowing why helped her. "I understood my parents' reasons," she explains, "and I think this is important if an only child is to be happy and satisfied."

The reasons may be social, health related, or of some other personal nature. Or it could simply be a matter of economics. Did you know, for example, that in Great Britain or the United States the cost of rearing a child to adulthood can run well beyond $100,000? Multiply this by two, three, or four, and you may understand why some parents say 'one is enough.'

Whatever the reason, an only child need not be unduly upset about his future. A study published in 1954 by educators Cutts and Moseley revealed that an only child apparently does not turn out too differently from others. And more recently, Dr. Alice Loomer, writing in *Parents' Magazine,* said that although being an only child will affect him, "what matters more than the single fact of 'onliness' is how all the conditions of a youngster's life combine to make him the unique person he is."

Obviously you cannot change your situation, so the secret for happiness lies in enjoying the advantages of being an only child, while playing down its disadvantages. Even better, try to benefit from those disadvantages. How?

Turn Negatives Into Positives

LACK OF COMPANIONSHIP: Association with brothers and sisters teaches you that every individual is different and that one must learn to respect the thinking of others. It can also help you at school,

I often miss not having a sister; yet I do have certain advantages

making it easier to relate to other children. But if homegrown association is lacking, then be willing to look for it elsewhere. Otherwise you will be lonely. You could tend to be withdrawn and perhaps end up being a loner. This must be avoided, for as a wise king of old warned: "One isolating himself will seek his own selfish longing; against all practical wisdom he will break forth."—Proverbs 18:1.

Actually, then, you can pick your own "brothers" and "sisters," subject to parental approval, of course. Al sees in this a real advantage, saying: "I look at all my friends who have such bratty brothers and sisters and they all hate each other and fight all the time. What a hassle." Of course, this is not the situation in all families, but it probably is the case often enough to make a valid point.

Because of having less in-house association, you will have more time for study, meditation, or the development of certain skills. Many an only child has overcome feelings of loneliness or lack of companionship by becoming an avid reader. Thus it is perhaps not without reason that the only child is often viewed as the precocious child, the one more likely to develop a larger vocabulary, the one who will excel academically.

TOO MUCH ATTENTION: "As an only child I had the total attention of my parents," says Thomas, and he considers it an advantage. Of course, excessive parental attention can be a disadvantage, spoiling a child, making him self-centered. Or it can become oppressive. But on the positive side, if you feel your parents have too little time for you—as many children do—think how much worse it would be if you had to share them with several brothers and sisters. In fact, your parents' undivided attention can help you to mature more quickly, to feel at ease around adults, and to be able to converse with grown-ups on their level.

SOCIAL CONNECTIONS: One reason for Sue Ann's lament at being an only child is this: "When you're alone, you got no connections. . . . It's tough to get dates. You have to go out with your girlfriend's best friend's boyfriend, or whatever. . . . Brothers is what I wish I had. Older brothers." However, you are wise to wait until you are old enough to marry before dating. And if friendship is what you want, remember that social connections can also be made through

friends. On the other hand, a lack of social contacts with members of the opposite sex during the impressionable teenage years is not necessarily a bad thing. In today's pleasure-mad, oversexed world, it can even be a protection.

Think of Others

As an only child, you may agree with Jay, who said: "It's nice 'cause I don't have to share clothes, the car or anything." It may be nice, but in the long run it will make for greater happiness if you learn to share, even when you do not have to. True, you have no brothers and sisters with whom to share, but you probably have cousins or other relatives. For sure, you have friends. And what is wrong with sharing with your parents?

Peter appreciates the time his parents spent teaching him to work with his hands: "I made many gifts, all sorts of things, anything I could think of," he says, "and this taught me that you can make others happy and thereby make yourself the happiest of all." Yes, the axiom "there is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving" has yet to be disproved.—Acts 20:35.

In Our Next Issue

- *Prayers for Peace —Who Listens to Them?*
- *"I'm a Truffle Hunter!"*
- *Who Can Silence the 'Cry of Hunger'?*

Develop an eye for the needs of others. Can you offer someone an encouraging word? Can you assist someone in material need? Can you run errands for shut-ins or the elderly? If you are one of Jehovah's Witnesses, can you share Bible knowledge with others or help fellow Christians to attend meetings or to engage in Christian preaching?

Follow Positive Examples

The Bible mentions a young person who "was absolutely the only child." Do you know who this was? Turn to Judges chapter 11, verses 29 to 40, and read about Jephthah's daughter.

Jephthah's daughter was apparently not a lonely child, since the Bible says she had "girl companions." And obviously, she was not a spoiled or self-centered child. When called upon to conform to the requirements of her father's vow, she was willing to put God's interests ahead of natural desires like marriage and motherhood. Many young people today are following her lead.

Take Thorsten, for example, now serving as a full-time minister in a European branch office of the Watch Tower Society. He says: "Had I had brothers and sisters, I probably would not have encountered certain problems. On the other hand, I might never have experienced the many happy hours I was able to spend with my books, and perhaps I would not have developed the deep appreciation for the truth, for the brotherhood, and for the ministry that I now have. I still like to be alone at times. But I am not lonely because I have learned to keep myself busy. I am no longer an only child—at least not entirely so."

You, too, like Jephthah's daughter and like Thorsten, can find happiness as an only child.

Allan Kardec
Pioneer of Spiritism

By "Awake!" correspondent in Brazil

"I AM a Kardecist." Time and again Jehovah's Witnesses in Brazil hear these words as they make their house-to-house visits. Many will tell the Witnesses in a friendly way: "I read the gospel according to spiritism. You know—Allan Kardec!" Almost always a cordial and lively discussion ensues.

But who is Allan Kardec? Most English-language encyclopedias have no entry under that name, yet to countless hundreds of thousands he is a pioneer and codifier of spiritism in its modern form. His writings are accepted as expressions of supernatural powers—particularly in Brazil, where his books enjoy a wide distribution.

The *Grande Enciclopédia Delta Larousse* and the *Enciclopédia Mirador Internacional,* two well-known encyclopedias in the Portuguese language, tell us that Allan Kardec is the pseudonym of the French writer Hippolyte Léon Denizard Rivail, who lived from 1804 to 1869. Born in Lyons, at the age of ten he was sent to be educated in Switzerland where he became a pupil of the educational reformer Pestalozzi. The year 1824 found him in Paris, where he dedicated himself to teaching activities and, in time, became a member of France's Royal Academy of Natural Science.

In the year 1854, Rivail was introduced to a popular mid-19th century pastime: attempts to communicate with disembodied spirits. The next year, he witnessed the phenomena of revolving tables and mediumistic writing. He became convinced of the existence of a spirit realm inhabited by the immortal souls of the human dead and of the possibility of communicating with them. Unseen spirit forces wasted no time in making use of him as their instrument.

His "familiar spirit" informed him that in a previous existence, in the time of the Druids, he had lived in Gaul and that his name had then been Allan Kardec. Furthermore, the spirits announced through mediums that "the times fixed by Providence for a universal manifestation had arrived and that, as ministers of God and agents of his will, it [was] their responsibility to instruct and enlighten men, opening up a new era for the regeneration of Humanity."

Deeply impressed by all of this, Rivail set to work to put in order a vast array of mediumistic writings supplied to him by his spiritist friends. He began to attend séances regularly, always prepared with a series of questions that were answered through mediums in a "precise, profound and logical manner." All this material, duly "proofread" by the "Spirit of truth" acting through a medium, was published

Allan Kardec, used by unseen spirit forces

in 1857 in his first book *O Livro dos Espíritos* (The Book of Spirits), under the name Allan Kardec.

From the beginning, Rivail made it clear "that the Spirits, being merely the souls of men, have neither supreme knowledge nor supreme wisdom; that their intelligence depends upon the progress they have made and that their opinion is nothing more than personal opinion." Throughout his mediumistic writings, he makes mention of superior and inferior spirits, good and bad spirits, lesser spirits, evil and rebellious spirits, wandering spirits, vulgar spirits, and mendacious spirits. These present themselves to mediums with well-known names such as Socrates, Julius Caesar, Augustine, Charlemagne, George Washington, Mozart, and Napoleon. In his book *What Spiritism Is,* Rivail also admits that some spirits are "liars, fraudulent, hypocrites, evil and vindictive," and capable of uncouth language.

Why, then, should humans bother to study spiritism? Rivail answered: "To prove, materially, the existence of the spiritual world." But this was hardly necessary. Thousands of years before Rivail, believers in the Bible have been aware of the existence of such a spiritual realm.

Some spirits are "liars, fraudulent, hypocrites, evil and vindictive," and capable of uncouth language

The God that Christians worship is the Supreme Spirit. Jesus himself said: "God is a Spirit, and those worshiping him must worship with spirit and truth." (John 4:24) Christians who serve this God wholeheartedly experience his influence in their lives and have no doubt at all of his existence. Christians are also aware of the existence of other spirits —Jesus Christ and his holy angels, angels who do the will of God.

According to the publishers of a Portuguese edition of Rivail's book, "the part played by *The Book of Spirits* is that of helping all other religions to consolidate the belief in the immortality of the soul."

But it is impossible for this claim to be correct. The Bible states that the human soul is not immortal. "The living are conscious that they will die; but as for the dead, they are conscious of nothing at all." (Ecclesiastes 9:5) The Bible also contains the stern warning: "The soul that is sinning—it itself will die."—Ezekiel 18:4.

Who, then, were the spirits that Rivail contacted? There is only one possible answer: These spirits must belong to another part of the spirit realm—the demons. This is how the disciple Jude describes the demons: "The angels that did not keep their original position but forsook their own proper dwelling place." (Jude 6) Yes, they are angels who rebelled against God.

Consequently, in the Law God gave to Israel, he strictly forbade the Israelites to have any contacts with mediums such as those that Rivail had. (Leviticus 19:31) The fact that their language may sometimes have been beautiful, expressing noble ideas, changes nothing. The apostle Paul warns: "Satan himself keeps transforming himself into an angel of light." —2 Corinthians 11:14.

From Our Readers

A Scholarly Magazine

The chairman of a literary committee of the Holy Trinity Anglican Church and principal of the college in which I teach described *Awake!* as scholarly and beautiful. He said: "*Awake!* is investigative, it X-rays, it diagnoses, it analyses, and it mirrors world events as they are." Keep on producing this scholarly and beautiful magazine.

V. N. E., Nigeria

Premarital Sex

As a 19-year-old youth living in La Paz, I happened to obtain a copy of your magazine on "Aids." (April 22, 1986) I was impressed with all the articles, but especially the one "Young People Ask . . . How Can I Say No to Premarital Sex?" As I read that article, I thought about many mistakes that have been made not only by me but by many Bolivian youths, since we live in a society corrupted by violence and sex. I felt compelled to read it to some of my friends. At first they made fun of me, but afterward I know that it made some stop and think, as it had done to me. Keep up your good work of helping young people who are on the wrong road.

R. U. A., Bolivia

Phobias

My heartfelt thanks for the feature articles on "Phobias." (February 8, 1987) I am a 26-year-old single man who has been having attacks of anthropophobia [fear of people] and anxiety neurosis for two years. Although I kept on seeing psychiatrists, I knew very little about my illness, and I suffered every day with anxieties that my trouble may be due to some personal failure in my life as a Christian. Thanks to your article I have been able to find hope for my life from now on. I now know that I am not alone in suffering this way.

Y. O., Japan

I enjoyed the article "Fenced In by Phobias." How it has helped me to know that someone understands! When I was 13 years old, I suffered from agoraphobia [fear of open places]. For over a year I stayed at home, being terrified to go outside of our house. How I hated my life! It took over three years to get back on my feet. Recently I had to stay in the hospital for tests. The very same fear came over me. I could not stop crying, and I was very depressed. On returning home, I sat down and read the article on phobias. I cannot tell you how wonderful it was. I feel the article has truly helped me.

J. B., England

Hope for the Mentally Ill

I sent copies of your issue "Hope for the Mentally Ill" to a hospital with a number of mentally ill patients. (September 8, 1986) One doctor replied that he was "pleasantly surprised at the article's grasp of the subject and its objectivity, particularly as regards schizophrenia." He also said: "We discussed the matter this morning at our doctors' conference, and we will pass the magazines on to our staff and to our patients." Another doctor expressed appreciation, saying that "magazine articles about mental illnesses and their treatment seldom deal with the matter in such a factual, correct, and, above all, encouraging way."

D. N., Federal Republic of Germany

Watching the World

Sick Videos

Open-heart surgery in which the patient dies of cardiac arrest, executions of revolutionaries by firing squads, a convict dying in the electric chair, and a park ranger mauled to death by an alligator are but some of the actual death scenes now available for viewing on rental videotapes. A three-volume series entitled *Faces of Death* gruesomely shows explicit motion-picture footage of people dying. How is the public reacting to this video series? "We can't keep it on the shelf," one video-store clerk in Virginia Beach, Virginia, told *The Virginian-Pilot and the Ledger-Star*, a Virginia newspaper. "As soon as it comes in, someone checks it out." One angry viewer objecting to the film's contents has mounted a campaign to have local shops remove the videos. Commenting on the film, she said: "It's violently pornographic."

Costly Protection

With shoplifting costing retailers in the United States about $30 billion a year, it is no wonder that there is a growing industry producing antishoplifting devices. Among these are EAS (Electronic Article Surveillance) products called targets. They are either plastic disks that are attached to items like clothing, a magnetic fiber as "fine as a human hair," or "an electronic circuit that is built into a disposable price tag." The "targets" can be removed or deactivated by employees at the time you pay for your purchases. The customers of the stores that use these devices have to exit through or past a unit that gives off a signal if the "target" has not been properly deactivated. Sales of these devices have already reached $150 million.

New Cold Cure?

Why is it said that Norwegian lumberjacks rarely catch a cold? According to Dr. Olav Braenden,

the answer lies in the woodsmoke they inhale, reports *The Times* of London. A cold virus needs a good supply of oxygen to reproduce. However, it can be inhibited by vitamins B and C and also, it is believed, by polyphenols. These substances, found in Norwegian woodsmoke, restrict the supply of oxygen to the mucous membrane of the nose. It is reported that nose drops containing these three ingredients have been tested on 300 Norwegian air force personnel with a claimed cold-cure success rate of 82 percent. "The important thing is to take the drops at the first signs of a cold," stresses research director Dr. Anton Rodahl, "before the virus has done any damage to the mucous epithelium [lining] in the nose." Commercial sale of the medication started in Norway this year.

Facsimile Worship

Japanese schoolchildren, anxious to get into good schools, use technology to approach their gods. How so? According to *Asahi Shimbun*, a Tokyo newspaper, a pupil enters his name, address, school year, and the name of the hoped-for school into a facsimile unit attached to a telephone. This information is then relayed to a Shinto shrine where a priest reads it out and makes supplication at a cost of 3,000 yen ($20, U.S.). Shrine authorities say, "Worshiping before the altar yourself is of course preferred." However, a priest of Dazaifu Tenmangu in Kyushu, Japan's most popular shrine dedicated to education, explained that shrewd people living near

the shrine have been charging up to 20,000 yen ($140, U.S.) to represent worshipers. The priests objected to having worship made into a business by people not connected with the shrine. They decided: "Facsimile also conveys the feelings of the heart. The effect is the same," and they offered a service at a cheaper rate.

Survival Cards

Finding avalanche victims has long been the concern of skiers and mountaineers alike. Although various types of transmitter-receivers exist, few people use them because of their cost and the relative weight and bulkiness of some battery-powered models. However, a team of French researchers are working on a new idea—survival cards. Carried on the chest and back of each skier or mountaineer, they would cost just a few dollars, require no batteries, and would be about the size of a credit card. How do they work? The French daily *Le Figaro* reports that they would act like mirrors, reflecting part of a radio signal back to the rescue team equipped with a fairly powerful transmitter. In tests made with prototypes, researchers have already succeeded in detecting people buried under as much as 30 feet (9 m) of snow.

Stealing From the Government

A recent audit of Canadian government assets revealed losses of from $3 million to $4 million in government property annually. Although the goods are officially described as missing, it was admitted that they were "probably stolen." *The Toronto Star* reported that among the things missing are liquor, color TV sets, typewriters, desk lamps, dictaphones, 35-mm cameras, overhead projectors, calculators, an outboard motor, and a freezer. Another form of theft from the government showed up in almost $60 million taken from Canada's unemployment insurance by persons who tried to beat the system. "There were 180,458 incidents of fraud," according to the newspaper *The Globe and Mail*. Happily, of that loss, "$32.3-million was recovered."

Distinctive Cries

Can a mother identify her own baby's cries from those of other infants? Yes, reports *The Sunday*

Times of London. But motherly intuition goes even further, according to the findings of Dr. Alain Lazartigues, a child psychiatrist at La Pitié Salpetrière Hospital in Paris. From the pitch of the cry, she can also determine the reason for it, whether the child is hungry, wet, angry, or sick. Hunger, the most common cause for a baby's cry, has a high-pitched tone between 270 and 450 hertz and ranges between 80 and 85 decibels. Cries of pain, rage, frustration, and pleasure, the doctor claims, likewise have their own unique acoustic characteristics. He noted that for certain illnesses, the cries of the child can prove helpful in diagnosis.

Veterans and TV War

Violence and war are regularly featured on television and news programs. Movies, especially, tend to present warfare in a glorified way. War veterans, however, who have experienced its bitter horrors often fail to find such televised events entertaining. Stan Knorth, a World War I veteran, now 90 years old, told the *St. Louis Magazine:* "When I see all that shooting and stuff on TV, I turn it off." The reason? "I can't take it. I don't want to remember it," Knorth explained.

Chronic Insomnia

A man suffering from chronic insomnia went nine months without sleep and then he died, reports the *Evening Press* of Dublin, Ireland. Describing the cause of death, Professor Elio Lugaresi, neurologist with the University of Bologna Medical School in Italy, explained that the rare disease affects the thalamus, a cerebral nerve circuit that passes messages between the brain and the body. When communications were interrupted, "the brain centre acted like a motor that could not be switched off." Though the victim endeavored to resist the disease, he became the 14th member of his family to die, since 1822, from lack of sleep. Lugaresi's report on the case has alerted other scientists to the apparent role genetics and the thalamus play in severe insomnia cases. Lugaresi explains: "We know the mechanics of the disease, but we have no way to stop it."

"Eat Me if You Dare!"

Even if a predator dared, it wouldn't be easy. When irritated, pufferfish blow up their bodies into a round ball. It doesn't make swallowing them easy. Moreover, when they inflate themselves, thousands of sharp hollow spines pop up out of the pores of their skin. To swallow such a pincushion makes a very scratchy throat.

If all of this is not enough to deter the predator and it succeeds in swallowing the puffer, its troubles really begin. Pufferfish are full of tetrodotoxin. Tetrodotoxin is one of the best-known marine poisons.

Notwithstanding this, its flesh is highly prized by Oriental gourmets. Called fugu by the Japanese, it is even eaten raw as sashimi. It kills many people each year. The book *Undersea Life* states:

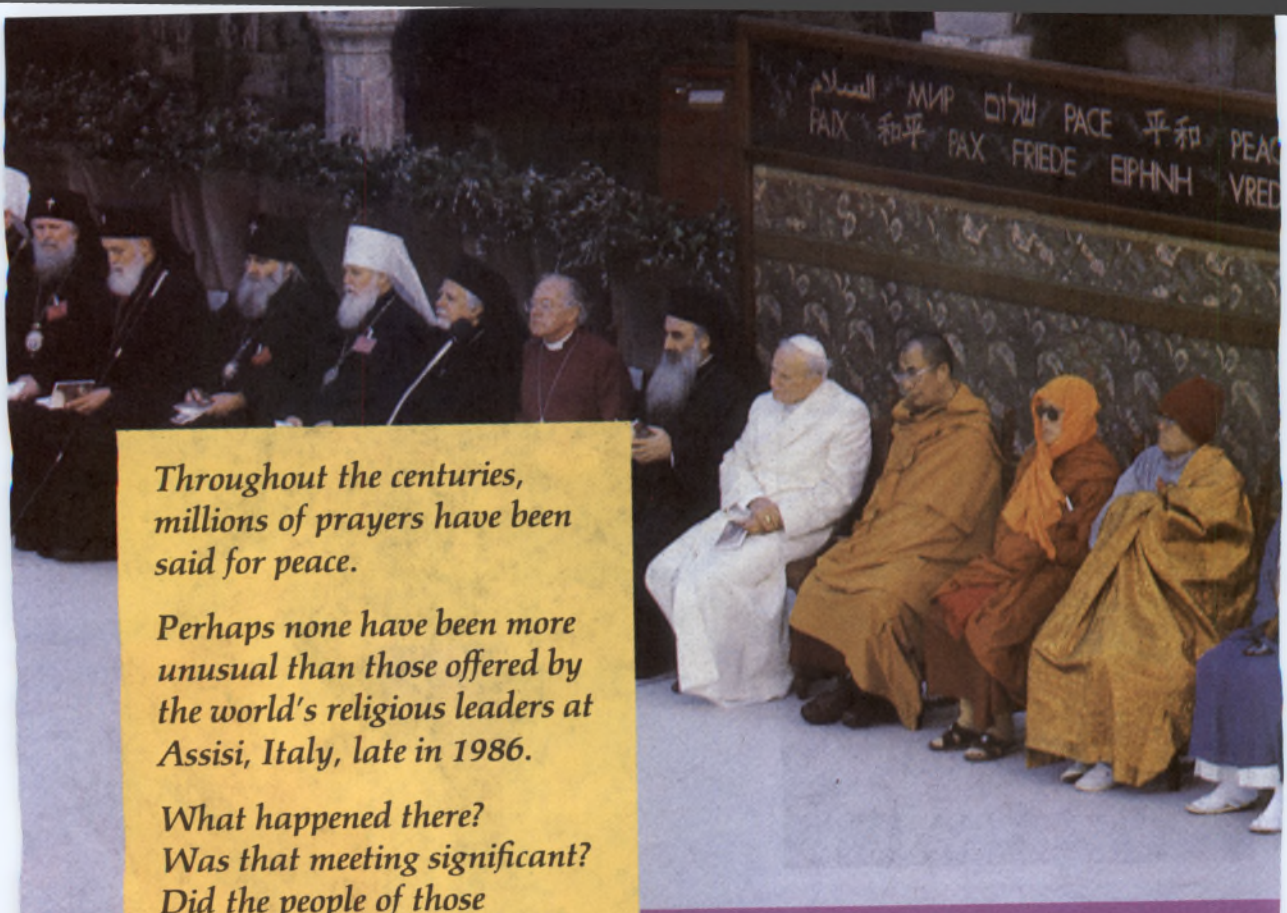
"Despite the danger, fugu fanatics still relish the mild euphoria, hot and cold flushes, and tingling sensations afforded by 'controlled' doses of the poison, as well as the unusual taste of the meat. As even sublethal symptoms of severe tetrodotoxin poisoning include sweating, headache, nausea, respiratory paralysis, skin rashes, hemorrhaging, deep apparent coma without loss of consciousness, and sometimes total muscular paralysis, it is surprising that sashimi fanciers do not stick to tuna and sea bass."—Page 180.

Awake!

June 8, 1987

Prayers for Peace

WHO LISTENS?



Throughout the centuries, millions of prayers have been said for peace.

Perhaps none have been more unusual than those offered by the world's religious leaders at Assisi, Italy, late in 1986.

What happened there? Was that meeting significant? Did the people of those religions listen and act in harmony with the prayers? Did God listen?

An Awake! *correspondent in Italy analyzes these questions in the following articles.*

Prayers for Peace —Who Listens to Them?

WHAT was an American Indian, in fully feathered headdress, doing on the same platform as a Greek Orthodox priest? Why was the Buddhist Dalai Lama seated along with the Archbishop of Canterbury? What could a Jewish rabbi have in common with a metropolitan of the Russian Orthodox Church? And why would Pope John Paul II of the Catholic Church be presiding at such a gathering?

Not long ago it would have been unthinkable for the pope to share a prayer platform with leaders of the other major religions. Yet, in late 1986, in the Italian city of Assisi, he joined with all these other religions in celebrating the "World Day of Prayer for Peace." The gathering was promoted by the pope in harmony with the United Nations' designation of 1986 as the International Year of Peace.

At Assisi, there were varied prayers for peace. But who listened to them? The Trinitarian God of Christendom? Or the God of the Jews? Allah of the Muslims? The Great Thumb and Roaring Thunder of the animists? Did any of these gods listen to these prayers? Now that some time has passed since Assisi, the answers are evident.

What Took Place

The prayers of those religious leaders were the culmination of the international day of prayer held at Assisi in central Italy on October 27. A large platform had been erected, with the word "PEACE" in 14 languages on the backdrop. Arranged in a wide semicircle, with the pope at the center, more than 60 leaders of the major religions took turns praying from a rostrum. Television cameras covered the ceremony that is said to have been watched by 500 million people throughout the world.

The first ones to pray were the Buddhists, who asked for "an ocean of happiness and joy." Then the Hindus invoked "peace unto all beings." The Muslims prayed: "Praise be to God, Lord of the Universe."

"Grant us peace," was the supplication of the African animists as they invoked their divinities. "We offer the Pipe to the Great Spirit, to Mother Earth," said the American Indians as they smoked the peace pipe. "Give peace to the earth," asked the Jews.

"In peace and unity let us beseech our Lord God," was the prayer of the Catholic, Anglican, Lutheran, and Greek Orthodox representatives. The Sikhs, Zoroastrians, Shintoists, and Jains also prayed for universal peace.

Occasion Given Prominence

It was the first time, the press commented, that such high-ranking clergy of the world's religions had assembled in the same place to pray. For this reason the meeting has been termed a "historic occasion."

Some believed that Bible prophecy was

Awake!® June 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 11

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Prayers for Peace
—Who Listens to Them? 3
A Modern Tower of Babel? 5
'Your Hands Are Full of Blood' 7
World Peace—How and When? 11

Also in This Issue

Crossword Puzzle 13
"I'm a Truffle Hunter!" 14
Young People Ask...
"Is the Bible Really True?" 17
The World Since 1914
The 1960's—A Period of Turbulent Protest 21
The Bible's Viewpoint
Who Can Silence the 'Cry of Hunger'? 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Elephant Long-Distance Calls 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

fulfilled there. Since Assisi is situated on a hill, they considered it the symbolic mount of Micah chapter 4, verse 2. A report said that the Assisi gathering was "a meeting that the prophet Micah had predicted 2,700 years ago: 'In the [time of the] end the mount where the temple of the Lord stands will be the highest one . . . All peoples will gather at its foot and will say: Let us go up to the mountain of the Lord. He will teach us what we must do.'"—*Voce delle Contrade.*

The journal *Il Sabato* enthusiastically said: "It is the first time anything of its kind has occurred since the Tower of Babel. Then, because of their desire to reach the heavens, men were divided. Today, in the name of religious sentiments that open them up to the gift of God, peace, men are united."

Serious Questions Raised

The event was no doubt spectacular. However, it raised legitimate questions. The daily *La Nazione* asked: "Did that message serve its purpose? Will it have reached the hearts of the half a billion viewers? Will it have made a breach in the rocky positions of those who, directly or indirectly, determine and direct the events and the destiny of the world?"

Thinking people ask other penetrating questions: Does God accept all prayers regardless of the type of worship practiced? Is it enough to pray for something without making sure of God's view on the matter? Have people been induced by this meeting to work for peace? What does the past teach us? And above all, what do the Scriptures say about how world peace will be achieved?

We must also ask: Was the gathering of this world's religions at Assisi in reality a modern-day Tower of Babel?

A Modern Tower of Babel?

THE ancient Tower of Babel has become a symbol of confusion and division. It was there, some 4,000 years ago, that God confused the language of the people. Why? Because of their rebellion against him. They rejected obedience to God and instead centered their lives on the schemes of imperfect men. So God scattered them. —Genesis 11:1-9.

Was what happened at Assisi so different? Were men properly reunited there? Did the religious leaders of over two billion people really promote world peace?

Was There Unity?

In an address given only a few days before, the pope had emphasized: "What will take place at Assisi will certainly not be religious syncretism [uniting]." He added: "We cannot pray together, that is, join together in common prayer, but we can be present while others pray."

Thus the pope indicated that the criterion observed in praying for peace was that of coming together to pray, not that of *praying* together. Some observed that he wanted to avoid participating in a common prayer. In this way he would not be accused by Catholics of mixing the various religious beliefs.

This is borne out by the pope's welcoming address to the religious leaders that morning. He emphatically pointed out: "The fact that we have come here does not imply any intention of seeking a religious consensus among ourselves or of negotiating our faith. Neither does it mean that religions can be reconciled at the level of a common commitment in an earthly project that would surpass all of them."

Certainly, then, there would be no effort to reconcile the many differences in religious teachings represented by those gathered at Assisi. Religious unity would therefore be impossible. The confusion of 'religious tongues' would continue. Hence, there is indeed a striking similarity to the ancient Tower of Babel.

This religious disunity is evident in a sampling of beliefs. For example, Buddhism does not accept the existence of a personal God, teaching that the final goal of man is Nirvana, a state of absolute blessedness achieved through the extinction of the self. The Hindus believe in millions of gods and in a continuous cycle of reincarnations that can lead to Nirvana. Catholic, Orthodox, and Protestant religions believe in a Trinity. But Muslims believe that there is one God, Allah, and that Muhammad is his prophet; however, they do not believe that God has a son. The Jews worship one God but do not accept Jesus as the Messiah. African religions believe that plants, animals, and inanimate objects have a spirit. The American Indians worship the forces of nature.

However, true peace implies at least a basic coming together, or uniting, of different peoples. But the religions that met at Assisi were so pitifully divided that they could not even agree on a common prayer!

Surely, God cannot approve of all these conflicting ideas because, wrote the apostle Paul, "God is a God, not of disorder, but of peace."—1 Corinthians 14:33.

Is God Listening?

How can the only true God, the Creator of heaven and earth, listen favorably to the prayers of religious leaders who have no intention of working for true unity? God's own inspired Word states clearly that those who practice true worship "should all speak in agreement, and that there should not be divisions among [them], but that [they] may be fitly united in the same mind and in the same line of thought."—1 Corinthians 1:10.

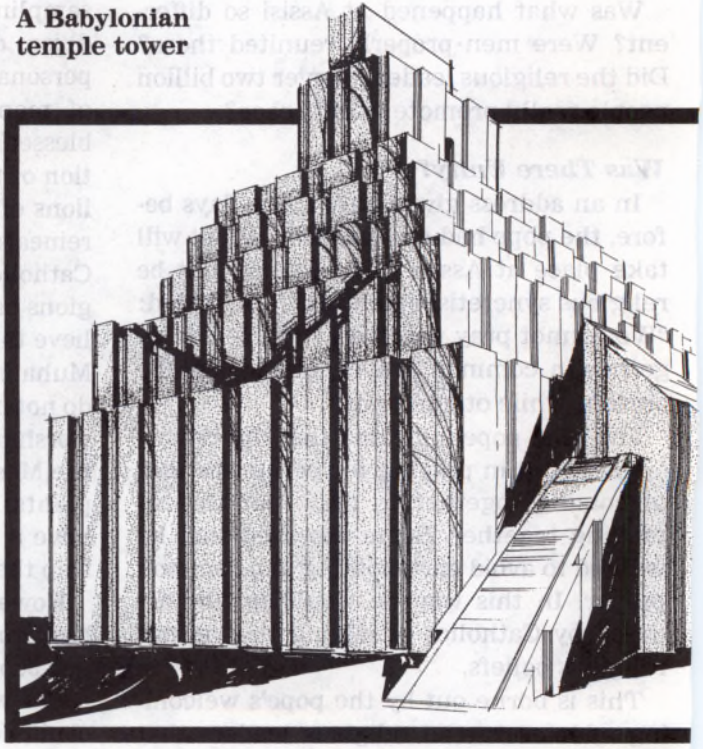
If God listened to these divided religions, he would be contradicting himself. It would indicate his approval of what he condemns—division. But the God of truth cannot be guilty of a double standard. He will not contradict his own Word, for "God . . . cannot lie." (Titus 1:2) Hence, he does not listen favorably to the prayers of such divided worship.

The Bible clearly shows that God approves only worship that is in harmony with his will. Jesus said: "Not everyone saying to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter into the kingdom of the heavens, *but the one doing the will of my Father* who is in the heavens will." He also said that God is "looking for," that is, he approves of and only listens to those who worship him "with spirit and truth." That is done by observing his Word and obeying his commandments. So God disapproves of religions that do not do his will, just as he disapproved of the builders of the Tower of Babel, who also were not doing his will. He rejects such ones. As Jesus said to those who do their own will instead of God's will: "Get away from me, you workers of lawlessness."—Matthew 7:21-23; John 4:23, 24.

Thus, the spiritual condition of the religions that met at Assisi is the opposite of what God requires of true worshipers. Instead of being united in the same mind and thought, they are shredded by disunity, just as prevailed at the Tower of Babel.

The fact that God does not listen favorably to the prayers of this world's Babel-like religions becomes more obvious when we examine the testimony of history. What kind of picture does that testimony present?

A Babylonian temple tower



'Your Hands Are Full of Blood'

"EVEN though you make many prayers, I am not listening; with bloodshed your very hands have become filled." Thus said almighty God to those who professed to serve him but who were involved in shedding innocent blood.—Isaiah 1:15.

Are this world's religions guilty of shedding innocent blood? Yes, they certainly are. In every war of our 20th century, the religions of this world and their clergy have supported the bloodshed. This has even led to members of the same religion killing one another on a mass scale.

Yet, Jesus taught his followers to 'return their sword to its place.' (Matthew 26:52) The apostle Paul stated: "The weapons of our warfare are not fleshly." (2 Corinthians 10:4) The powerful message of God's Word is that those who practice true religion must love one another and not shed blood: "The children of God and the children of the Devil are evident by this fact: Everyone who does not carry on righteousness does not originate with God, *neither does he who does not love his brother*. For this is the message which you have heard from the beginning, that we should have love for one another; not like Cain, who originated with the wicked one and slaughtered his brother."—1 John 3:10-12.

If a religion does not practice this kind of love, its prayers will not be heard by God. The Bible says: "Whatever we ask we receive from him, because we are observing his commandments and are doing the things that are pleasing in his eyes." (1 John 3:22) But this world's religions have not observed God's commandments. Instead, they have weakly gone along with the slaughtering of some one hundred million people in the wars of this century alone!

Will Leaders and People Listen?

In his concluding speech at Assisi, John Paul II said: "We invite the world leaders to take notice of our humble imploration to God for peace." Will the political leaders and their people in general listen to this appeal? To find out let us look to history.

History reveals that treaties and prayers for peace are nothing new. In the Middle Ages, treaties for peace were often called God's truces or holy truces. They were proclaimed at Christendom's religious festivals, during which all conflicts were to cease. But not even the threat of excommunication for those who violated the truces was enough to make men respect them.

In the year 1915, Pope Benedict XV launched an appeal to the nations to put an end to the "horrendous slaughter" of the first world war. He prayed to God for "the cessation of the wicked scourge." But

Prayers were offered by people from all over the world

neither the national leaders nor their people listened. And, logically, God did not listen because the combatants on both sides were made up of members of the same religion. Thus, Catholic killed Catholic, and Protestant killed Protestant, completely contrary to God's commandments.

In the spring of 1939, when the storm clouds of the second world war were gathering, Pius XII organized "a crusade of public prayers for peace." The following August, just before the war broke out, he launched an appeal to national leaders and their people to desist from "the accusations, the threats, the causes for mutual distrust" so as to avoid the worst.

But all those prayers and appeals did not halt the war machine of Catholic and Protestant Germany; nor did they indicate the way to peace for Catholic Italy or for Shintoist Japan. And no excommunication was threatened against members of any religion for killing others of the same religion. So the slaughter of brother by brother went on for six years, backed by the clergy of every nation.

In response to the pope's appeal at Assisi, in some places fighting halted on October 27, 1986. But in other countries it continued. In many instances this was in lands the religion of which was represented at Assisi. For example, the Catholic guerrilla fighters of the IRA launched a bomb attack in Ireland. The Sikhs fought in India. In Afghanistan, Ethiopia, Lebanon, Iran, and Iraq, as well as other areas, the bloodshed also continued. And even where the truce was observed for that one day, death and terror were sown again the very next day. A strange peace indeed!

Could "the God of peace" bless such initiatives that indirectly approve of those who today stop killing only to begin again tomorrow? Did God approve of Cain after he killed Abel? Surely not!—Hebrews 13:20.

Not a Force for Peace

Recent surveys carried out in various nations indicate that a large number of peo-

Many young people are interested in world peace

ple consider the religions of the world to be fomenters of war rather than promoters of peace. That is how 47 percent of the French people and 48 percent of Israelis feel.

John Taylor, secretary-general of the World Conference of Religions for Peace, said in the French Catholic monthly *L'Actualité Religieuse dans le Monde:* "We deceived ourselves into thinking that religion could and would bring light and charity to conflicts, and that we would greatly benefit from the uniting of forces *against* war, against armaments. But when examining these problems, we gradually realized that wars are not caused by armaments, but by hatreds and divisions among men . . . And here also religion has played its part."

Historian Ernesto Galli Della Loggia, in the Catholic daily *Avvenire,* said even more pointedly: "Religion does not seem to have constructed a unifying framework among men and among peoples, rather the exact opposite. It has been that way for centuries. Not only have the greatest monotheistic religions fought against one another in a war without quarter but some of them—chiefly Christianity and Islam—have dedicated all their strength to exterminating the animist religions of the so-called primitive peoples. This has occurred because religion and political power are two sides of the same coin."

For this and other reasons, governments either ignore religious leaders or tolerate them as if they were a necessary nuisance. And worldly religion itself is simply a veneer that has little or no beneficial effect on man or on world conditions.

At the conclusion of the day of prayer, the pope himself admitted Catholicism's responsibility in all this bloodshed. He said: "I am ready to acknowledge that Catholics have not always been faithful to this affirmation of faith." And then he added: "We have not always been 'peacemakers.' For us, therefore, but also perhaps, in a sense, for all, this encounter at Assisi is an act of penance."

But has modern-day religion demonstrated by its actions that it has a changed

attitude toward war? Is it really repentant of its dishonorable past? Speaking of present wars, Ernesto Galli Della Loggia pointed out: "Nine times out of ten these conflicts are also, if not above all, religious conflicts."

The prayers for peace have thus been useless. Neither the political leaders nor the people are listening to them and acting in harmony with them; and neither is God, for he has said: "Even though you make many prayers, I am not listening; with bloodshed your very hands have become filled." (Isaiah 1:15) That is why the 1986 International Year of Peace promoted by the United Nations and backed by the prayers of this world's religions was such a failure.

A Survey in Italy

Awake! magazine carried out a survey in various Italian cities, during which hundreds of people were interviewed, the majority Catholic. When asked whether initiatives such as the Assisi day of prayer for peace and cease-fires will help to eliminate wars and armaments, 70 percent said no, 17 percent said that it was just the first step, and only 10 percent thought it was a positive thing to do.

A priest from the northern Italian city of Bergamo said: "I think the initiative will be very useful as long as its message is carried forward. It's a good start that must not be isolated."

But a young Catholic woman from the same area said: "One cannot help being profoundly struck by the hypocrisy of people who have been fighting for years, also for religious reasons, and who then lay down their arms and pray for world peace, knowing full well that the next day they will carry on fighting." And a youth from Brescia said: "Meetings like these do not help in combating religious indifference. The churches should be less interested in politics if they want God to listen to them."

In answer to the question, "What should religion do to contribute more effectively to peace?" a Catholic from Turin said that "they should dissociate themselves from all temporal complicity and teach men to live without weapons." A young Catholic woman from Cremona stated: "The church should have set a good example by not getting involved in wars and politics. But now it's too late."

On being asked, "What do you think of the pope's peace initiative?" a lawyer from the province of Pesaro replied: "The church is using the problem of peace to its own advantage to propagandize Catholicism in the world." An 84-year-old Catholic lady said: "It's no use. If they want a war, they're going to start one anyway."

Speaking of religion's "political designs," the Milan publication Il Corriere della Sera *made this significant comment: "The Church takes advantage of pacifism and promotes initiatives that allow her to control, rather than be subjected to, the debates of public opinion on the major political questions of the hour."*

World Peace —How and When?

WORLD peace is one of mankind's fondest dreams. But to think that human governments can achieve it is an illusion. The lessons of history agree with what the Bible realistically affirms: "It does not belong to man who is walking even to direct his step."—Jeremiah 10:23.

Only the almighty Creator of the universe, Jehovah God, can bring lasting peace. And he has given his promise that he will do so. How? Not by human endeavors but by means of what Jesus Christ made the theme of all his teaching—the heavenly Kingdom of God. (Matthew 6:9, 10) The Ruler of that Kingdom, Christ Jesus, is called in prophecy the true "Prince of Peace." (Isaiah 9:6) And God's promise is that under the rule of the Kingdom, there will be an "abundance of peace" in all the earth.—Psalm 72:7.

However, the Bible clearly shows that before this can come about, this present warring system of things must be put out of the way. (1 John 2:15-17) And Bible prophecy indicates that its destruction is imminent.—Matthew 24:3-14, 22, 34; Luke 21:25-28; 2 Timothy 3:1-5.

This, therefore, is the unchangeable purpose of the God "who cannot lie." (Titus 1:2) Thus, should not the religious leaders, especially those of Christendom, have offered up prayers in harmony with this purpose? Should they not also have been acting in harmony with that purpose? Yet,

none of those religious representatives at Assisi made any mention of this system's near end and the incoming rule of God's Kingdom, the fundamental message of Jesus and God's Word.

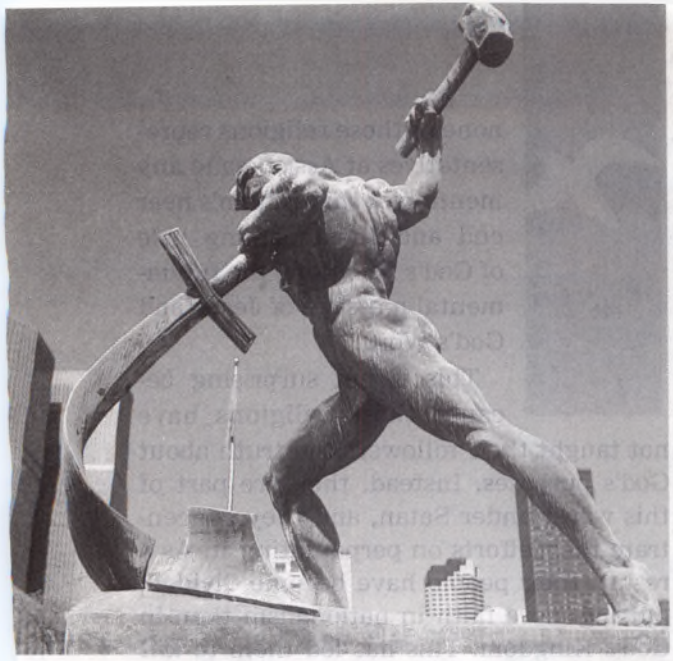
This is not surprising because those religions have not taught their followers the truth about God's purposes. Instead, they are part of this world under Satan, and they concentrate their efforts on perpetuating it. As a result, their people have become divided, putting more faith in nationalism than in God's Kingdom. This has led them to kill one another in this world's conflicts. Thus, these words apply to such religions: "Adulteresses, do you not know that the friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever, therefore, wants to be a friend of the world is constituting himself an enemy of God."—James 4:4.

Hence, the appeals for peace by these religions fall on deaf ears. They bring to mind the situation in the prophet Jeremiah's time. Back then the false religious prophets declared: "There is peace! There is peace!" But, in reality, 'there was no peace' for them.—Jeremiah 6:14.

Worldwide Educational Work

Yet, God's purpose will be fulfilled. (Isaiah 55:11) So today a worldwide work of Bible instruction is underway. This is in harmony with the prophecy at Matthew 24:14, which states: "And this good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come."

Since those who are part of this earth-wide movement of true worship submit to God's requirements, they have eliminated



Who have really beaten their swords into plowshares?

the divisive influence of nationalism among themselves. They have become a peaceful society of people who love one another and who live for God's Kingdom. As a result, they are fulfilling the thrilling prophecy at Micah 4, which says:

"And it must occur in the final part of the days that the mountain of the house of Jehovah [his true worship] will become firmly established above the top of the mountains [all other types of worship], . . . and to it peoples must stream. And many nations will certainly go and say: 'Come, you people, and let us go up to the mountain of Jehovah and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will instruct us about his ways, and we will walk in his paths.' . . . And they will have to beat their swords into plowshares and their spears into pruning shears. They will not lift up sword, nation against nation, neither will they learn war anymore."—Micah 4:1-3.

It is abundantly clear that this prophecy cannot have been fulfilled by the meeting at Assisi. The ones who are streaming to the symbolic mountain of pure worship are persons who are being instructed in Jehovah's peace-loving ways and who walk according to his purpose and requirements. They are not people who remain in their previous religions, divided by conflicting doctrines and practices. Instead, they are gathered together as Micah 2:12 foretold: "In unity I shall set them, like a flock in the pen."

The result of this educational work is that over three million people in all the earth have become proclaimers of the "good news of the kingdom." They have become peaceful persons, and under no circumstance will they take the life of their fellowman. Just as Micah foretold, they have already beaten "their swords into plowshares . . . ; neither will they learn war anymore." And many millions of other interested people throughout the earth are being taught by them.

Jehovah's Witnesses look forward to the harmonious new world in which Micah 4:4 will be fulfilled toward all mankind: "They will actually sit, each one under his vine and under his fig tree, and there will be no one making them tremble; for the very mouth of Jehovah of [heavenly] armies has spoken it." Next, in verse 5, Micah draws a contrast between those who worship the multiplicity of false gods and those who worship the one true God, saying: "All the peoples, for their part, will walk each one in the name of its god; but we, for our part, shall walk in the name of Jehovah our God to time indefinite, even forever." Apparently, God's name was never even mentioned at Assisi. However, would you not like to learn about this God of the Bible? Jehovah's Witnesses will be happy to help you in this.

crossword puzzle

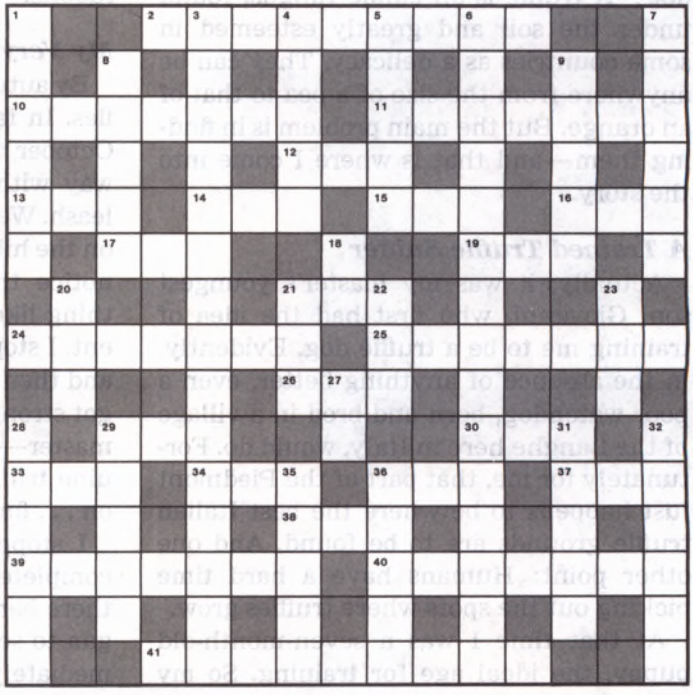
Clues Across

2. Melchizedek's is not disclosed in the Scriptures (Hebrews 7:3)
10. Designation of Jehovah as "the Most High" (Daniel 7:25)
11. A city of Judah rebuilt by King Rehoboam (2 Chronicles 11:9)
12. "With --- it is impossible, but not so with God" (Mark 10:27)
13. Substance used to color fabrics (Compare Exodus 35:6.)
14. To place (Acts 8:19)
15. Perceive (Luke 21:27)
16. It originated with Satan (John 8:44)
17. Turbulent masses of mankind alienated from God (Revelation 21:1)
19. Any advanced stage of life (Genesis 21:7)
21. Ruinous trouble (Revelation 12:12)
24. Device used in weaving (Job 7:6)
25. King Sennacherib was murdered in the temple of this deity (2 Kings 19:36, 37)
26. What God caused Aaron's rod to do, proving that the tribe of Levi was designated for the priesthood (Numbers 17:5-8)
29. Imposed restriction (Deuteronomy 13:17)
30. Qualified (1 Thessalonians 2:4)
33. She was seduced by Satan's cunning (2 Corinthians 11:3)
34. Both he and Nathan were used by Jehovah to censure David (2 Samuel 24:11-14)
36. No father would give his son a scorpion instead of this (Luke 11:11, 12)
37. Those in this condition need a physician (Mark 2:17)
38. What will happen to the name of the wicked (Proverbs 10:7)
39. She and her brother, Herod Agrippa II, heard Paul's defense (Acts 25:23)
40. Jesus did this by Jehovah's power (Luke 5:17)
41. Enduring (Genesis 49:24)

Clues Down

1. Dwell (Psalm 37:29)
3. This results from taking in knowledge of God and Christ [2 words] (John 17:3)
4. As the last one, death will be destroyed (1 Corinthians 15:26)
5. Securing them may imperil your own finances (Proverbs 22:26)
6. The seven of them stood for seven years of plenty in Egypt [4 words] (Genesis 41: 26-29)
7. Jael used this in putting Sisera to death (Judges 4:21)
8. Joshua sent two of them to Jericho (Joshua 2:1)
9. In Jesus' day, people reclined at this (Luke 22:14)
18. "Whom shall we -- away to?" (John 6:68)
20. For what reason? (Acts 9:4)
21. An apostate's hope will perish, as if trusting in this (Job 8:14, King James Version)
22. He that endures to it will be saved (Matthew 24:13)
23. Behave (Genesis 19:7)
27. Job's homeland (Job 1:1)
28. The tongue is a little one (James 3:5)
29. The Israelites were groaning like these animals, in expectation of justice and salvation (Isaiah 59:11)
31. Lacking courage (Deuteronomy 20:3)
32. Escape (Matthew 24:20)
35. Used by God to warn, guide, assure, or prophesy (Numbers 12:6)
36. One of four wise men whom Solomon exceeded in wisdom (1 Kings 4:31)

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS PAGE 15



"I'm a Truffle Hunter!"

"IT'S a dog's life!" Mine really was a dog's life—chained up all day in the dirtiest corner of the yard. I'd bark at strangers just because it was the accepted thing to do, being a dog. But much as I tried, I didn't even manage to scare the chickens.

When my master didn't forget, some food was brought out to me once a day, with one or two meager bones thrown in some days. It would be impossible to imagine more of a dog's life than mine.

Then came the big change. It was when I discovered that hidden treasure—truffles!

'But what are truffles?' you might ask. 'And how could they change the life of a dog?' A truffle is an edible fungus, found under the soil and greatly esteemed in some countries as a delicacy. They can be anywhere from the size of a pea to that of an orange. But the main problem is in finding them—and that is where I come into the story.

A Trained Truffle Sniffer

Actually, it was my master's youngest son, Giovanni, who first had the idea of training me to be a truffle dog. Evidently, in the absence of anything better, even a poor watchdog, born and bred in a village of the Langhe here in Italy, would do. Fortunately for me, that part of the Piedmont just happens to be where the best Italian truffle grounds are to be found. And one other point: Humans have a hard time picking out the spots where truffles grow.

At that time I was a seven-month-old puppy, the ideal age for training. So my master began by teaching me to dig up anything hidden below the surface of the ground. I easily unearthed the bones he hid for me. Perhaps my former days of hunger helped there. Then he switched from bones to pieces of Gorgonzola cheese. The pungent odor of the cheese was to prepare me to find the black truffles by smell.

Apparently I did well. Every time I made a find, I got an extra tidbit and a *friendly* pat. So I threw myself into the job, heart and soul. In the meantime, my status as a dog had undergone a radical improvement. Now I had a kennel of my own in the vegetable garden. I was no longer tied up by the manure heap to be mocked by hens and rabbits.

My Very First Truffle

By autumn I was ready to search for truffles. In fact the best ones are found from October to January. I set off along a pathway with my master hanging on to the leash. We headed for the nearby oak woods on the hillside. As we drew near, I began to notice that unmistakable aroma—something like garlic and yet pleasantly different. I stopped in my tracks, sniffed the air, and then strained at the leash as the smell got stronger. I was excited, and so was my master—this was going to be my first genuine truffle discovery! "Find it Flik, come on . . . find it!" urged my master.

I stopped at the foot of a young oak, completely sure of myself. The truffle was there beneath my feet—it had to be! I began to scratch the ground, but almost immediately my master pulled me off to one

Agnelli photo, Alba, Italy

side and began to dig with his short-handled spade. He did not want to tire me. I had my eyes glued to that hole as my master dug deeper and deeper. But there was no truffle in sight.

After a while he stood up and looked reprovingly at me, as if to say, "Flik, you've been deceiving me!" But I knew that my nose had not deceived me. I dived into the hole and dug down a little farther. A gray-ish object came to light. After a few blows of the spade, there was my first beautiful truffle! It weighed about a pound (0.5 kg) and was rounded and flat in shape, something like a potato. Although it had been several inches underground, I had managed to sniff it out.

That was the beginning of a brilliant career as a truffle hunter. After four years, I now consider myself an expert on this delicious, potato-shaped fungus. And thanks to that, I am better fed and cared for than ever. Anybody for a dog's life?

Agnelli photo, Alba, Italy

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS

R			G	E	N	E	A	L	O	G	Y			H
E		S		V		N		O		O		T		A
S	U	P	R	E	M	E		A	D	O	R	A	I	M
I		I		R		M	E	N		D		B		M
D	Y	E		L	A	Y		S	E	E		L	I	E
E		S	E	A			G			A	G	E		R
	W			S		W	O	E		R			A	
S	H	U	T	T	L	E		N	I	S	R	O	C	H
	Y			I		B	U	D		O			T	
M		B	A	N			Z			F	I	T		F
E	V	E		G	A	D		E	G	G		I	L	L
M		A		L		R	O	T		R		M		I
B	E	R	N	I	C	E		H	E	A	L	I	N	G
E		S		F		A		A		I		D		H
R			P	E	R	M	A	N	E	N	T			T

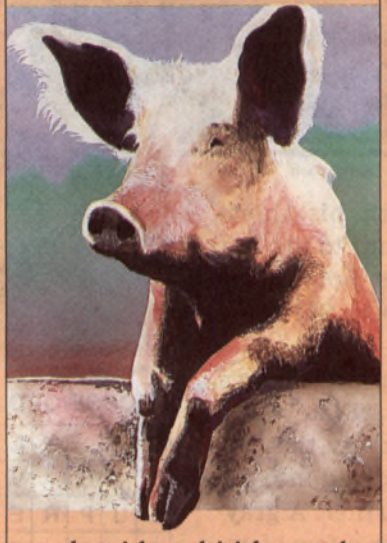
Truffles—Choose and Serve

TRUFFLES are a type of fungus that grows underground in symbiosis with the roots of certain trees, such as beeches, poplars, willows, oaks, and nut trees. But soil is the determining factor, and that is why truffles are not found everywhere. Their ideal setting is calcareous, or limestone, soil.

The most well-known and highly regarded truffle in Italy is the white, or Alba, truffle (*Tuber magnatum*). Italians like it because of its pleasing aroma. Another variety, but of inferior quality, is the truffle *Tuber Borchii*. It is irregular in shape, with a whitish, hairy appearance and not more than two to three inches (5 to 8 cm) in diameter. It is a winter specialty that grows over a wider area of Italy, and even in Sicily.

A third type is the prized black truffle (*Tuber melanosporum*) or, as the French call it, *Truffe du Périgord*. Although inferior to the white truffle, it is more suitable for canning and is in high demand.

Even with a good search dog or pig (yes, pigs are good at sniffing out truffles), you will not always find them. You may finish up with a mildly poisonous truffle, sometimes called the pig truffle. It is easily recognized. When mature, it has a smooth, pale-brown surface covered with whitish marks and a rather unpleasant piquant odor that makes it stand out from the edible varieties. Should you happen to eat one by mistake, the consequences are not fatal. You will have an upset stomach or, at most, you will vomit. But far better to keep a keen eye and a keen nose!



An Expensive Delicacy

Although truffles have a very lowly origin, they fetch a high price in the market. But how do you prepare them? They are usually used raw, cut into thin slices, or grated over dishes such as macaroni, risotto, and roast meats.

If you can afford them, they make a welcome addition to various recipes. For example, would you like to try *Truffes à la Provençal?* Then put a few slices of bacon into a pan together with some white wine and a clove of garlic. Add the sliced truffles and cook it. Then take the pan off the flame and pour a little top-quality olive oil over the truffles. Add a few drops of lemon juice, serve warm, and as we say in Italy . . . *buon appetito!*

Young People Ask. . .

"Is the Bible Really True?"

MICHELLE was brought up as a Christian by parents who had a firm faith in the Bible. For Michelle, accepting that the Bible was true was like accepting that day followed night.

One day, though, it dawned on her—she did not know *why* she believed the Bible. "I guess I believed it up till then because my mother and father believed it," she said, "but I felt that I needed more than that to be sure that the Bible was true. I had never really proved to myself that the Bible is the inspired Word of God."

What Difference Does It Make?

You might wonder, however, 'Is it really so important to be sure that the Bible is true?' Indeed it is!

For one thing, the Bible claims to be God's book. (1 Thessalonians 2:13) If this is right, your life must depend on doing what it says. "My sayings . . . are life to those finding them," says God's Word.—Proverbs 4:20-22.

Now if your life depended on a surgeon's skill, would you not want to be sure he was no quack? You likewise need to be sure that the Bible is true.

Just Possessing a Bible Not Enough

This means more than just possessing a Bible. In big-city apartments, people often live right next to one another and remain strangers even though only a wall separates them. Thus, they never build confidence and trust in their neighbors. To do so, they must take the time to get to know one another. Similarly, the Bible can be within arm's reach without your getting to know it. If you are ever going to trust the Bible, you need to test it out.

The apostle Paul's advice to Christians was to "make sure of all things." Or, as the paraphrase in *The Living Bible* expresses it, "Test everything that is said to be sure it is true." (1 Thessalonians 5:21) This

Before buying a gold ornament, you make sure it is genuine

expression means to examine and scrutinize something to see if it is genuine. It was done in ancient times in connection with precious metals. If you had the chance to purchase a gold ring or necklace, would you not first make sure it was real gold?

Pamela, for example, was one who had passively accepted the Bible since she was ten years old. As she grew older, though, she saw the need for a deeper study of it. "Being told that the Bible is true wasn't enough for me," she says. "I needed logical reasons to convince me." (1 Peter 3:15) Her attitude was thus like that of some people who lived in the ancient city of Beroea.

About 50 C.E., the apostle Paul visited this Greek city. What Paul told those Beroean Jews made sense to them. But they wanted to make sure. (Proverbs 14:15) What did they do? After they listened to Paul, they 'examined the Scriptures daily as to whether these things were so.' (Acts 17:11) Thus they carefully tested Paul's words against what they could find in the Scriptures. You can do the same!

How Can You Test the Bible?

How do you begin? One of the most powerful evidences that the Bible is inspired is its unerring ability to foretell the future. "Who is there among [the nations] that can tell this?" it asks. Only almighty God can without fail 'tell from the beginning the finale.' (Isaiah 43:9; 46:10) And he does so repeatedly in the Bible. "After examining

Bible Prophecy and Fulfillment

Read the prophecies recorded in Luke 19: 41-44; 21:20, 21. Shortly before his death in 33 C.E., Jesus wept over Jerusalem because he knew what was going to happen to it. He foretold how the Romans would come and build a "fortification with pointed stakes" around Jerusalem and how they would devastate the city, causing great distress. Then he warned his disciples to 'flee to the mountains' when they saw the Romans coming against the city and thus save their lives.

If you examine history, you will find that this all came true. In 66 C.E., 33 years later, the Roman armies attacked Jerusalem. Then, according to Jewish historian Josephus, the Roman commander "suddenly called off his men, abandoned hope though he had suffered no reverse, and flying in the face of all reason retired from the City." This allowed the Christians who remembered Jesus' prophecy to escape. In 70 C.E the Romans returned, built an encircling fence 4.5 miles (7.2 km) long and trapped everyone inside the city. "Jerusalem itself was systematically destroyed and the Temple left in ruins," says *The Bible and Archaeology*.

The Bible's Historical Authenticity

The book *A Lawyer Examines the Bible* highlights the historical accuracy of the Bible this

some of its prophecies," 14-year-old Janine says, "I was just amazed to see how it was able to foretell all that it did."

Another field of study might be the Bible's historical accuracy. Says Pamela: "It really helped me to see how historically authentic the Bible is. I began to realize that these were real events and real people, not just stories."

Other rewarding fields of study and examination are the Bible's internal harmony, its honesty and candor, and its scientific accuracy. Pages 18 and 19 give examples of information that builds confidence in the Bible.

Yet another approach to examining the Bible is pointed to by a young man named Philip. He says: "My confidence in the Bible was built up when I saw its effect on people's lives. I saw that those who lived by the Bible were not burdened but, in fact, very much benefited."

Would you not expect a book from God to produce good effects? And the facts show that when people follow its directions, they become better people. (See Ephesians 4:20-32.) "Seeing how applying Bible principles makes people happy," adds 13-year-old Sarah, "really builds your confidence that the Bible is true." (Psalm 119:1, 2; compare 1 Kings 10:6-8.) How right she is!

"Two Are Better Than One"

Of course, you may need some assistance in looking into the Bible. And the Watch Tower Society has produced publications

way: "While romances, legends and false testimony are careful to place the events related in some distant place and some indefinite time, thereby violating the first rules we lawyers learn of good pleading, that 'the declaration must give time and place,' the Bible narratives give us the date and place of the things related with the utmost precision."

The New Bible Dictionary comments: "[The writer of Acts] sets his narrative in the framework of contemporary history; his pages are full of references to city magistrates, provincial governors, client kings, and the like, and these references time after time prove to be just right for the place and time in question."

The Bible's Internal Harmony and Candor

Imagine if a book began to be written during the time of the Roman Empire, continued down through the Middle Ages, and was completed in this 20th century. What would you expect if the writers' occupations were as different as soldiers, kings, priests, fishermen, herdsmen, and doctors? Would you expect it to be harmonious or coherent? 'Impossible!' you say. The Bible was written under these circumstances—yet it is harmonious throughout! The Bible is a collection of 66 books written over a period of 1,600 years by some 40 different writers.

While most ancient writers reported only their successes and virtues, the Bible writers openly admitted their mistakes as well as the failings of their kings and leaders. Read some examples of this in Numbers 20:1-13 and Deuteronomy 32:50-52 regarding Moses, who wrote those books; Jonah 1:1-3 and 4:1 regarding Jonah's own failings; Matthew 17:18-20, 18:1-6, 20:20-28, and 26:56 regarding the poor qualities shown by Jesus' disciples. The honesty and candor of the Bible writers give support to their claim of being inspired by God.

to help.* In addition, Ecclesiastes 4:9 reminds us that "two are better than one." Why not go to someone you trust, someone who will not minimize the problem, and ask for help?

For example, 15-year-old Walter discovered that few of his schoolmates or teachers believed the Bible. This disturbed and confused him. However, he explained his feelings to his father. They then spent many hours together in careful study of the Bible to build confidence in its truthfulness. "I was able to find good reasons for believing the Bible rather than just blindly accepting it," he says.—Romans 12:1, 2.

"Be honest with your parents if you have any problems in this regard," suggests Janel, a young woman. "Ask questions if there is something you find difficult to believe." (Proverbs 15:22) Dennis learned the hard way. He went through a painful period of being rebellious before proving to himself that the Bible is true. His experience taught him the need for deep personal interest and effort to build trust in the Bible. "It can lead to real problems later," he says, "if you just passively accept what your parents tell you without thinking about it yourself."—1 Timothy 4:15.

Another great source of help in this matter is association with others whose faith in the Bible is strong. (Proverbs 27:17) "Ask others what convinced them," says Dennis. And when you are meeting with fellow believers, make it your practice to be a good listener. (Hebrews 10:24, 25) "I just used to sit there and not take much in at the meetings," says 21-year-old Kimberley. "Then I realized that if I was ever going to have real faith in the Bible, I had to do much more." She followed the advice of Proverbs 1:5. She 'listened better and took in more instruction.'

Finally, there is the need to have the right attitude. (Psalm 25:4, 5, 9) If you are to have trust in the Bible, "it is really important to pray to God for help," emphasizes Sarah. After all, it is his book. We need to follow a principle Jesus stated: "Keep on asking, and it will be given you; keep on seeking, and you will find." (Matthew 7:7) In this way you can build confidence in the Bible.

The apostle Paul said to Timothy: "You, however, continue in the things that you learned and *were persuaded to believe,*" or, as *The New Testament in Modern English* puts it, "those things that you have learned and which you know are true." (2 Timothy 3:14) Timothy was persuaded to believe the things he learned because he was given adequate proof. So was Michelle, mentioned at the beginning of this article. She examined the evidence carefully and is now able to say, "I am sure that the Bible is true."

In Our Next Issue

- *What Is Happening to Our Forests?*
- *Tobacco's Menace to Smokers and Nonsmokers*
- *Phones on Wheels —How Do They Work?*

* On the fulfillment of prophecy, you might read *Our Incoming World Government—God's Kingdom* or chapter 7 of *"Let Your Kingdom Come,"* which deals with prophecies concerning the coming of Jesus Christ. Other helpful information can be found in *Is the Bible Really the Word of God?, "All Scripture Is Inspired of God and Beneficial,"* and chapters 17 and 18 of *Life—How Did It Get Here? By Evolution or by Creation?*

Part 7: 1960-1969

The 1960's —A Period of Turbulent Protest

THE plane crashed into the ground, taking with it any hopes that Cold War tensions could soon be relaxed. It was a United States U-2 spy plane, and it was shot down over the Soviet Union on May 1, 1960.

Soviet leader Nikita Khrushchev demanded an apology and a promise from the United States that such flights cease. Dissatisfied with President Eisenhower's answer, he protested by refusing to attend the East-West summit meetings scheduled to begin in Paris on May 16.

It was not an auspicious beginning to the 1960's. But it was typical of a period that would be characterized by a spirit of protest and an inability of people to agree—to agree about almost anything.

Despite Peace, Three Kinds of War

The Cold War was still very much alive. Subsequent events would keep it so. In August 1961 the Soviets cut off their occupation zone in Berlin from the Western sectors by erecting the Berlin Wall. A year later they attempted to install Soviet missiles in Cuba. This failed in the face of a U.S. naval "quarantine," or blockade. Student unrest in Czechoslovakia helped lead to the formation of a new government. But in 1968 the Soviets intervened, lest government reforms turn the so-called Prague Spring into a full-blown summer.

Besides suffering the chill of a Cold War, the world also experienced the heat of the more "normal" kind of war. At least 54 conflicts had started between 1945 and 1959. Now during the 1960's another 52 would be added, including the Congolese and Nigerian civil wars, the Six Day War of the Middle East, and the war in Vietnam.*

The 1960's, however, saw the beginning of a third kind of war. Up until then the world had been

* United Nations sources list the outbreak of 160 wars between 1945 and 1985.

relatively calm on the social or civilian level. But now youngsters of the postwar generation were coming of age. Not liking the world they saw, and feeling its problems were being dealt with ineffectively, they embarked upon a war of their own—a war of protest.

Students on the March

Many a mile was walked in "ban the bomb" marches. In fact, almost anything that was deemed worthy of a protest warranted a march, a student strike, a sit-in, or an act of civil disobedience. A majority of young people apparently supported this new kind of warfare, at least in principle. A poll of German youths taken in 1968 showed 67 percent in favor, leading the German newsmagazine *Der Spiegel* to comment: "When it comes to marching, most of them are willing to lend not only their hearts but also their feet and, if need be, their fists."

This was demonstrated in over 20 German cities during the 1968 Easter weekend, when thousands pounded the pavement in protest. Two persons died; hundreds were injured. This was an outgrowth of protests a year earlier that were directed against the Shah of Iran and his regime. At that time, on June 2 in Berlin, clashes between protesters and police resulted in one death and many injuries.

With good reason author William Burroughs said in 1968: "The youth rebellion is a worldwide phenomenon that has not been seen before in history." In that year student unrest led to a general strike in France that almost brought down de Gaulle's government. At the beginning of the decade, student protest actually had brought down a government, South Korea's, although at the cost of over 200 lives. And as regards protesting students in Japan, the book *1968 Weltpanorama* says: "Japan scarcely differs from America and Europe. At the most, Japanese students are only somewhat more imaginative than their fellow students in Berkeley, Paris, or Frankfurt."

"Make Love, Not War"

Much of this protest was directed against war—war in general and the war in Vietnam in particular. In 1946 a war of independence against the French colonial power had broken out in Indochina, of which Vietnam was a part. Eight years later a cease-fire agreement divided the country, a temporary arrangement until elections could be held to reunite it. One part came under communist, the other under noncommunist control. As in Germany and Korea, the superpowers found themselves involved in a Cold War being fought across a politically expedient border.*

Cold War tension finally erupted into open warfare in Vietnam. At first the United States supplied the south with only military aid. But during the 1960's, it started sending troops, reaching a peak of over half a million before the decade was over. The war became like a festering sore that refused to heal. "In May [1965] a teach-in attended by twelve thousand students [in the United States] turned into an antiwar rally, and set the pattern for the massive campus antiwar demonstrations that marked the rest of the decade," says Charles R. Morris in his book *A Time of Passion—America 1960-1980*. To emphasize their stand, thousands of young men burned their draft cards. Some went even further, says Morris, giving two ex-

* At Daniel 11 the Bible symbolically designates the communist bloc of nations "the king of the north" and the opposing bloc, "the king of the south." See the book *"Your Will Be Done on Earth,"* published in 1958 by the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., pages 264-307.

Hippie movement in the 1960's

UPI/Bettmann Newsphotos

amples of men who "publicly burnt themselves to death to protest the war."

"I Have a Dream"

In the war of protest, students may have taken the lead, but they were not alone. For example, the U.S. civil-rights movement was supported by blacks and whites of all ages under its leader, Southern Baptist preacher Martin Luther King, Jr. In 1963 over 200,000 people marched on Washington, where King inspired them with his "I have a dream" speech.

A measure of success was achieved when the U.S. congress responded with what has been called "the greatest outpouring of human rights legislation in this century." And personal success came when King was awarded the 1964 Nobel Peace Prize.

Everyone Doing His Own Thing

Young people also showed their rejection of the system by rejecting its conventional dress and grooming standards. "The fashion revolution that began on London's Carnaby Street in 1957," explains *The New Encyclopædia Britannica,* "led to the permissive, youth-oriented, and anti-establishment fashions of the 1960s." For many women it was the day of miniskirts and hot pants; for men, of beards and long hair; and for both, of unisex fashions and of the generally disheveled appearance that later became known as the hippie look.

Some of the music of the day also promoted the spirit of protest by encouraging the use of drugs and by condoning permissive sex and homosexuality. Rock stars and pop singers became idols, dictating both fashions and conduct. Communal living became popular. This and other life-styles formerly considered unacceptable were now viewed as being acceptable alternatives. All of this was to reap a sad fruitage in the 1970's and 1980's.

Aggiornamento and the "Jesus People"

A dictionary defines aggiornamento as "the policy of updating or modernizing Roman Catholic doctrines and institutions, adopted as one of the goals of the Second Vatican Council 1962-1965." Pope John XXIII embarked on this policy partially to blunt charges that the church was old-fashioned and partially to neutralize the effects of the growing tendency of some to protest openly against church teachings and practices. This even included noted Catholic clergymen. German

UPI/Bettmann Newsphotos

Antiwar rally in New York

theologian Hans Küng, for example, was invited to Rome to clarify his unorthodox views but refused to go.

The spirit of religious protest was not limited to attempts to revamp conventional religions. Many young Europeans and Americans simply scorned these groups altogether, turning to new sects or to Asian philosophies. Groups like the Divine Light Mission, Hare Krishna, and the Children of God got their start during the 1960's and grew in popularity.

From Protest to Violence and Terrorism

The spirit of protest revealed a worldwide breakdown in respect for authority —parental, educational, governmental, and religious. It fostered a spirit that frequently led to violence, of which there has been no lack since 1914, either on or off the battlefield.

Recall some of the events that characterized the violent 1960's: Patrice Lumumba, Congolese symbol of African nationalism, and South African Prime Minister Hendrik F. Verwoerd both brutally murdered; President Ngo Dinh Diem of the Republic of Vietnam slain during a coup; the United States lost by assassins' bullets three leaders within less than five years: President John F. Kennedy, civil-rights leader Martin Luther King, Jr., and Senator Robert F. Kennedy.

This defiance of authority, which did not shrink back from employing violence to achieve the goals of its protest, helped lay the basis for terrorism. In fact, author and political analyst Claire Sterling says that modern terrorism began in 1968, "clearly the year when a generation born after the last world war declared its own war on society."

Looking to the Heavens for Help

Might conquering the heavens help conquer the problems on earth? Some evidently thought so. Space exploration proceeded unabated, caught up in the Cold War, with leadership in the race seesawing between East and West. From 1961, when the Soviets placed the first man in earth orbit, until 1969, when the United States landed the first man on the moon, the world was dazzled by one space accomplishment after another.

As the decade drew to a close, *Collier's 1970 Year Book* commented: "It seems

quite appropriate that 1969, the year in which man first walked on the moon, is also the year to see the biggest boom in astrology . . . that this planet has ever known. The Age of Aquarius . . . [when] brotherhood will reign on earth, may or may not be upon us."*

Apparently more and more people were looking to the heavens for help. And to the extent that putting earth satellites into orbit made possible almost instantaneous communication between continents, to that extent the physical heavens brought nations closer together. But they did not bring them closer together in solving world problems. The nations were as far apart as ever, still "not open to any agreement." —2 Timothy 3:1-3.

Why? Because by its very nature, the spirit of protest—the spirit of the 1960's—cannot unite. It divides. To solve world problems, men must be at unity. To achieve this unity, they must look for help, not from the physical or astrological heavens, but from the heavens of God's government.

Jehovah's Witnesses—who by 1969 had increased by 48 percent over their average number in 1960—were doing just that. How grateful they were that a timely explanation of Romans chapter 13, dealing with Christian subjection, had enabled them to avoid getting caught up in the spirit of turbulent protest that characterized the 1960's!—See *The Watchtower,* November 1, November 15, and December 1, 1962.

As the 1960's drew to a close, Jehovah's Witnesses were busy talking, not about an Age of Aquarius, but about an age under God's Kingdom when "brotherhood will reign on earth." Would they live to experience it personally? Will you? Do not miss the concluding article of the series "The World Since 1914" in our next issue: "As the World Disintegrates, Let Your Hope Grow Brighter!"

* The Age of Aquarius is defined as "an epoch of the world described by astrologers as marking the advent of freedom in all areas of life, the rule of brotherhood on earth, and the conquest of outer space."

Other Items That Made the News

1960—Severe earthquakes strike Morocco and Chile

Adolf Eichmann apprehended in Argentina and returned to Israel, where he is later convicted of World War II crimes and executed

1961—United Nations Secretary-General Dag Hammarskjöld killed in an airplane crash in Africa

1962—Deployment of Telstar, first active communications satellite

1963—Cyclone and flood kills 30,000 in East Pakistan

1964—The XVIII Olympic Games staged in Tokyo, Japan. The big winners are the USSR (96 medals) and the U.S.A. (90 medals)

1965—Pope Paul VI closes Second Vatican Council and urges peace in talk to UN General Assembly

1966—Cultural Revolution begins in China

1967—Dr. Christiaan Barnard of South Africa performs first successful heart transplant

1968—Thalidomide court case begins after drug causes birth of many malformed children

1969—So-called Soccer War breaks out between El Salvador and Honduras after soccer game; over a thousand deaths

Blood-spilling riots in Belfast, Ireland, between Catholics and Protestants

Who Can Silence the 'Cry of Hunger'?

"THE government cannot feed us because we are too many," a black farmer in a fertile country of southern Africa told *Awake!* "For two years," he explained, "our land has been dry. It has not been raining. The cattle are all dead because of hunger and thirst. Everyone is crying of hunger."

A few days later, soaking rains brought relief to that region. But recovery will take a long time, and the 'cry of hunger' continues for other vast regions of Africa; nor is hunger limited to that continent. According to *The Hunger Primer,* published by Food for the Hungry, 43 countries of Asia and Latin America have "widespread undernutrition."

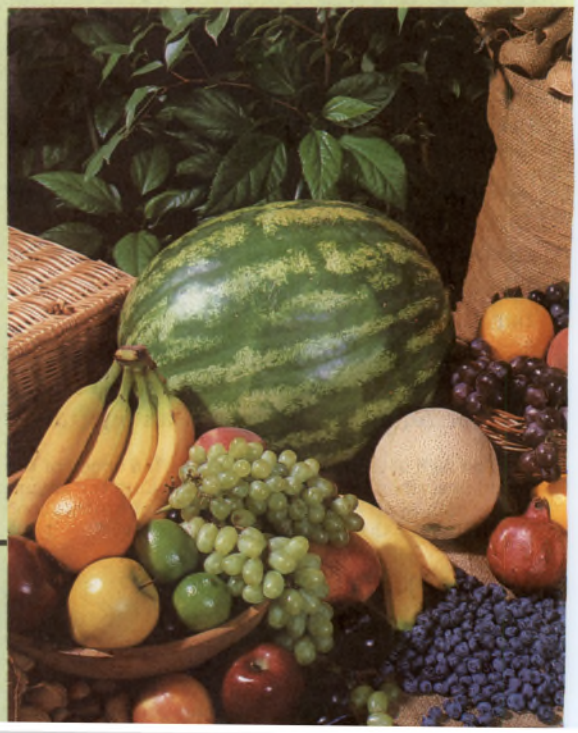
But in recent times, the world's attention has been focused on Africa's famine, with "150 Million at Risk" according to a headline in *The Times* of London. Musicians in Britain and the United States have raised millions of pounds and dollars to aid hungry Africans. Horrified at seeing so many starving humans on TV screens, perhaps you have wondered, 'Why hunger?'

Should We Blame the Weather?

"The public is not wholly satisfied by being told that the famine in Africa is caused by drought," writes the director of the environment news service Earthscan, in the British magazine *People.* Why? For one thing, in past centuries drought has not always resulted in disaster.

Africa has enough good soil to grow food for more than its present population. But the world's economic system does not encourage this. By governments' yielding to economic pressure, farming peasants are driven away from good land—land now used to supply *overseas* markets with food and goods. Concern is thus being voiced for Africa's rural poor majority, as many wonder whether they will ever get enough to eat.

Another factor is the way governments distribute wealth. "The cities where the governments live," explains Lloyd Timberlake in his book *Africa in Crisis,* "have been torn from the countryside, and development budgets have gone to filling those cities with hotels, factories, universities and cars. This has been



The earth produces food in abundance

paid for by milking the seven out of every ten Africans who live on the land."

Can Foreign Aid Stop the 'Cry of Hunger'?

"At the same time that the outside world gives with one hand, it takes with the other," states *Famine: A Man-Made Disaster?,* a report for the Independent Commission on International Humanitarian Issues. "Donor governments," it continues, "should harbour no illusions. Far from aid being charity, donor countries are getting a bargain." Why? Because donor countries often get much in return for such aid. Africa, explains the British journal *The Ecologist,* "remains a major source of supply of crops that we consume daily in the UK. . . . [It] is also a major producer of rubber, cotton, tropical hardwoods, and is increasingly developed as a source of cattle, vegetables and fresh flowers."

True, Africa gets money for all these exports, but the money is seldom used to help the hungry. Instead, it is used to develop cities, to promote exports, to purchase arms, and to repay foreign-aid debts. "Because the poor are feeding the rich," states the U.S. magazine *The Nation,* "famine in many parts of the world will increase. . . . Increased exports will profit international agribusiness, . . . but it won't feed hungry Africans."

A Government to Silence the 'Cry'

Africa's famine highlights an age-old adage: "Man has dominated man to his injury." Explaining why such oppression continues, the Bible says: "That which is made crooked cannot be made straight." (Ecclesiastes 1:15; 8:9) Yes, human governments are made up of imperfect people who are prone to selfishness. How can such institutions ever become "straight" and genuinely care for the needs of earth's poor?

For an answer, consider how one of the worst droughts in Africa's history was overcome. It started about 1730 B.C.E. and lasted for seven years. But Egypt's ruler accepted divine direction by storing plenty of grain during the previous good years. Because of this, none of his subjects is reported to have died from hunger. In fact, people from other lands came to buy grain from Egypt because "the famine had a strong grip on all the earth." —Genesis 41:1-57; 47:13-26.

To whom is divine direction pointing today? To the one shining exception to man's sad record of oppression and crookedness —Jesus Christ. "He went through the land doing good," the Bible reports. "He committed no sin." (Acts 10:38; 1 Peter 2:22) 'But,' you may ask, 'what does that have to do with a government that can silence the "cry of hunger"?' A great deal because Jesus is the one appointed by God to be Ruler over all mankind. All the good that Jesus did, including the miraculous feeding of hungry crowds, showed the superiority of God's heavenly Kingdom over any human government. He also pointed forward to the time when God's Kingdom will take over the rule of the entire earth.—Mark 8:1-9; Revelation 11:15.

Soon, God's appointed Ruler will see to the fair distribution of food. He can silence the 'cry of hunger.' (Luke 21:10, 11, 31) The Bible contains this heartwarming promise respecting Christ's rule: "He will have subjects from sea to sea and . . . to the ends of the earth. He will feel sorry for the lowly one and the poor one, and the souls of the poor ones he will save. *There will come to be plenty of grain on the earth."* During that time no one will ever need to say, "The government cannot feed us," for hunger, along with suffering and death, will be no more.—Psalm 72:8, 13, 16; Revelation 21:3-5.

From Our Readers

Images as Aids in Worship?

I am very disappointed that you should underestimate the intelligence of millions of Catholics in believing that they would adore pieces of wood, carvings, etc., as mentioned in your article "Now I Play a Different Tune." (January 22, 1987) These items only represent those whom Catholics love and pray to, just as you would have photographs of those you love in your own home. You would never burn these up or regard them as objects to be destroyed in any way. Otherwise your publications are very interesting, advocating following the Ten Commandments as Catholics are taught.

M. F., Scotland

The "New Catholic Encyclopedia" (1967, Volume VII, page 372) says: "Since the worship given to an image reaches and terminates in the person represented, the same type of worship due the person can be rendered to the image as representing the person." However, the second commandment (part of the first according to Catholic tradition) states: "You shall not make yourself a carved image or any likeness of anything in heaven or on earth beneath or in the waters under the earth; you shall not bow down to them or serve them. For I, Yahweh your God, am a jealous God."—Exodus 20:4, 5, "The Jerusalem Bible."—ED.

Multiple Sclerosis

It is my habit to read all *Awake!* magazines, even old issues. I came across the article "Multiple Sclerosis—A Baffling Disease." (February 22, 1972) It really saved the life of my beloved wife. She had been suffering for the last seven years. Then I read that article on multiple sclerosis. We tried all the suggested vitamins as treatment, and I tell you, she came back to life. I took her to a specialist, and it was confirmed that she had multiple sclerosis. He prescribed the vitamins that *Awake!* had already suggested. Though my wife is not cured, her days that were numbered now are multiplying. We would like more information about this baffling disease.

D. K., Uganda

Cancer

We want to thank you for the articles on cancer that you published. (October 8 and October 22, 1986) Last year our daughter, who had never had a day's illness in 16 years, was suddenly diagnosed as having tuberculosis and was hospitalized for six months. Then, as no tubercle bacilli were present, she was discharged from the hospital. But the following month we learned that she had cancer of the thyroid and that the cancer had metastasized to her lungs. She immediately underwent surgery to remove her thyroid and surrounding lymph glands, and she had part of her lungs removed. She is now taking cobalt treatments. Her operation was successful, and she is living a normal life. But as parents, we were constantly anxious and worrying as to what to do to help our daughter. Through your articles we felt reassured and regained peace of mind. The articles provided good direction as to how we can encourage our daughter in the future.

H. K., Japan

Watching the World

Crowded Cities

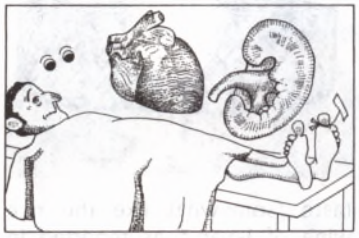
Population growth in a number of cities may cause severe economic and social strain and lead to political and environmental upheaval, warn experts who gathered at a United Nations conference last February. The UN estimates that by the year 2000, urban Cairo will grow from the present 9 million people to 13 million, urban Manila from 8.6 million to 11.1 million, and Mexico City from 19 million to 26 million. "These mega-cities are becoming social tinderboxes —the seedbeds for social revolution, civil strife and unrest," said Werner Fornos, president of Population Institute, in *The New York Times*. "With the numbers come the problems, so the problems will intensify." Not all experts, however, predict that urbanization will result in disaster. "It is a very complex issue —there are no generalizations that can be made about social stability," said Ellen Brennan, a UN population affairs officer.

Italians Condemn Hunting

Italy's estimated 1.5 million hunters are losing favor with the public, so finds a poll published in the Rome newspaper *La Repubblica*. According to the survey, 62.5 percent of the 1,200 people of all social levels who were interviewed do not consider hunting a sport and want to see it abolished. A true sport, in their eyes, is when opponents can confront each other *on equal footing*. "Italians no longer tolerate hunting, hunters, their organizations, their privileges," says the report.

The Body's Worth

It was once said that the human body, based on the value of its chemical components, was



worth only $1.98 (U.S.). That has drastically changed. The value of the human body is now said to exceed $200,000 (U.S.) and is still rising. What accounts for the difference? "Tissue is being harvested for transplantation, research and diagnostic and therapeutic products," states *The New York Times*. "In 1985, nearly 8,000 kidneys and 20,000 corneas were transplanted; heart transplants are being performed at the rate of 1,200 per year."

New Use for Kangaroo Tails

Each year thousands of people suffer serious knee injuries from car accidents, skiing spills, or other sports mishaps. Surgery is often required to replace torn ligaments when they fail to heal. Until recently, ox tendons have proved to be an effective replacement for these damaged ligaments. Now, however, researchers in Sydney, Australia, claim that kangaroo-tail tendons are "a lot more flexible than the ox tendons" and are "tough enough to withstand strains." According to *The Australian*, there are potentially "40 human knees in each kangaroo tail." Though kangaroo-tail soup is considered a delicacy by some, there may be fewer tails for culinary use and more for surgical needs should future knee operations prove successful.

Sound Diagnosis

Doctors at the Safdarjung hospital in New Delhi, India, can diagnose bone fractures by using only a stethoscope and a tuning fork, reports *The Times* of London. This quick, painless method relies on the transmission of sound waves within bones. For example, a fracture of the femur (thighbone) interferes with the transmission of sound from a

tuning fork that has been struck and pressed on the kneecap. The doctor, listening through his stethoscope placed over the pelvis, hears only a dull sound or sometimes no sound at all. In trials on patients suffering from thighbone or shinbone fractures, this "osteophonic" technique was correct in 94 percent of the cases, compared with 88 percent where the usual clinical diagnostic methods were used.

Fatal Traffic Tempers

Leaning out his car window, a California driver fired a 9mm semiautomatic at five youths, shooting one youth in the leg and mortally wounding another. The reason? Frayed tempers, claim the police, sparked by heavy traffic. Southern California authorities are increasingly concerned over the breakdown of driver behavior, notes *The Herald,* a California newspaper. In an argument over one fender bender on a street in Hollywood, a man pulled a gun from the trunk of his car and shot the passengers of the other vehicle. One man was killed and another wounded. Police cite minor rather than major accidents as the cause of many traffic-related fights. Officials are warning motorists to "avoid confrontations, particularly on clogged streets where tempers flare hottest."

Pi World Record

The elusive value of pi, the ratio of the circumference of a circle to its diameter, has now been tracked down to 133,554,000 decimal places! This is an increase of 100,000,000 places over the previous record, which was set last September. Though mathematicians know that it is impossible to represent the exact value of pi in decimals, researchers have sought a more precise value with the help of computers. Already holding the world's record himself, Yasumasa Kaneda of Tokyo University in Japan used a supercomputer and took 37 hours to extend the record. To print out the figure, 19,000 sheets of paper were used. Why did he undertake this project? "It is not unlike climbing a mountain," says Kaneda, "just because it's there."

Rubber Wine

Making wine from rubber waste may seem to the connoisseur of fine wines to be stretching things a bit, but it has been done, and the wine is said to

taste "somewhat like the rice wine of Japan." As reported in the Canadian newspaper *The Globe and Mail,* an agreement was signed between the Malaysian Rubber Research and Development Board and the Yokohama Rubber Co., Ltd., of Japan "to study ways of using waste from its rubber factories to make everything from wine to fertilizer." Some commercial production is expected within two years. They hope that this will be a way of dealing with the pollution problems and bad smell generated when the wastes are disposed of in the river.

Hyperactivity and Sugar

For years it has been the belief of many that excessive sugar consumption causes hyperactivity in children. But does it? According to a report published in the *Massachusetts General Hospital Newsletter,* medical professionals are now taking a second look. In one study involving children whose families identified them as having "adverse behavioral reactions to sugar," after a series of experiments had been conducted, no behavioral changes were observed. Similar tests by researchers studying other children offer comparable results. "What few changes in activity were found," notes the *Newsletter,* "suggested *decreased* activity —rather than increased—following sugar."

Toys for the Emotions

Adults in Tokyo are buying talking dolls for themselves, reports the *Asahi Evening News.* The reason? Loneliness, say toy dealers. Although most dolls were originally marketed for girls between the ages of three and ten, students, office workers, and even grandmothers are taking them home as companions. One popular doll says, "Don't worry over trivial things" and, "Have a mind like the Pacific Ocean." Another doll, with no arms or legs, says, "I will win by all means." Manufacturers and toy dealers explain the phenomenon as an apparent attempt to fill the communication gap felt by city dwellers. As one purchaser explained, her "grandchildren are too far away to visit often."

Elephant Long-Distance Calls

THE ability of elephants to find one another quickly when miles apart has puzzled scientists for years. Now, it seems, the secret of these largest living land animals has been revealed —they use infrasound! That is sound at frequencies too low for humans to hear.

Elephants are the first land mammals found that keep in touch with one another by infrasound, says *Focus*, the newsletter of World Wildlife Fund. Researcher Katharine Payne of Cornell University (U.S.) discovered the elephant's "secret" talk about three years ago when she observed Asian elephants in a zoo. She noticed vibrations around her similar to those caused by "the lowest pipe on an organ." Later, special recording equipment showed that Asian as well as the larger African elephants exchange an extensive array of infrasonic calls. Since low-frequency sounds travel longer distances than high-frequency sounds, the discovery may explain how elephants stay in touch with one another and are able to function as close-knit family groups.

In such a group, an old female elephant gives the orders. Her sisters and daughters listen respectfully to this matriarch. But baby elephants sometimes turn a deaf ear to any call, infrasonic or otherwise. "Even when the herd is on the move," says *Focus*, "if a baby elephant wants to take a nap, the whole family stops and waits until the infant wakes up before moving." This common concern for the 200-pound (90 kg) babies is not shared by the adult male elephants. They lead a life of their own. But "when ready to mate," adds the newsletter, infrasound seems to give the males "an uncanny ability to locate females very quickly over distances of several miles."

Yes, infrasonic communication is another example of the wisdom of the Creator as displayed in the animal kingdom.—Psalm 104:24.

Don't Miss It!

The "Trust in Jehovah" District Convention

It begins this month. All sessions are free.
Attend a convention near you at any location below.

Convention Locations United States

June 12-14: BIRMINGHAM, AL, Civic Center Coliseum. CICERO, IL, Hawthorne Race Course. DAYTONA BEACH, FL, The Ocean Center. FT. WORTH, TX, Will Rogers Memorial Coliseum. GREENVILLE, SC, Greenville Memorial Auditorium. MADISON, WI, Dane County Memorial Coliseum. SAN DIEGO, CA, Jack Murphy Stadium. WICHITA, KS, Kansas Coliseum.

June 19-21: DAYTONA BEACH, FL, The Ocean Center. DENVER, CO, McNichols Sports Arena. FT. WORTH, TX (Sign language also), Will Rogers Memorial Coliseum. GREENVILLE, SC, Greenville Memorial Auditorium. HIALEAH, FL, Hialeah Park Race Track. JACKSONVILLE, FL, Memorial Coliseum, Gator Bowl Sports Complex. LOS ANGELES, CA, Dodger Stadium. MACON, GA, Macon Coliseum. MADISON, WI, Dane County Memorial Coliseum. NEW HAVEN, CT, Veterans Memorial Coliseum. NEW YORK, NY, Yankee Stadium. OGDEN, UT, Dee Events Center. PHILADELPHIA, PA, Veterans Stadium. PINE BLUFF, AR, Convention Center Arena. PONTIAC, MI, Silverdome. PROVIDENCE, RI, Providence Civic Center. ST. PETERSBURG, FL, Bayfront Center. SAN FRANCISCO, CA, Cow Palace.

June 26-28: AMARILLO, TX, Civic Center Coliseum. CICERO, IL, Hawthorne Race Course. COLUMBIA, SC, Carolina Coliseum. CORVALLIS, OR, Gill Coliseum. DENVER, CO (Sign language also), McNichols Sports Arena. FT. WORTH, TX, Will Rogers Memorial Coliseum. FRESNO, CA, Convention Center. GREENSBORO, NC, Greensboro Coliseum. HIALEAH, FL, Hialeah Park Race Track. KNOXVILLE, TN, Civic Center Coliseum. MACON, GA, Macon Coliseum. MADISON, WI, Dane County Memorial Coliseum. NEW HAVEN, CT, Veterans Memorial Coliseum. PHOENIX, AZ, Veterans Memorial Coliseum. PINE BLUFF, AR, Convention Center Arena. PROVIDENCE, RI, Providence Civic Center. ROCHESTER, NY, Memorial Auditorium. ST. PETERSBURG, FL (Sign language also), Bayfront Center. SAN FRANCISCO, CA (Sign language also), Cow Palace. SOUTH BEND, IN, N.D.U. Athletic Center. WILLOUGHBY, OH (Greek only), Jehovah's Witnesses Assembly Hall.

July 3-5: CICERO, IL (Sign language also), Hawthorne Race Course. COLUMBIA, SC, Carolina Coliseum. CORVALLIS, OR, Gill Coliseum. FRESNO, CA, Convention Center. GREENSBORO, NC, Greensboro Coliseum. HIALEAH, FL (Spanish only), Hialeah Park Race Track. HOUSTON, TX, Astrodome. LINCOLN, NE, Devaney Sports Center. LOS ANGELES, CA (Japanese and sign language also), Dodger Stadium. LOUISVILLE, KY, Coliseum, Kentucky Fair & Exposition Center. MACON, GA, Macon Coliseum. NASHVILLE, TN, Municipal Auditorium. NEW ORLEANS, LA (Sign language also), Superdome. OKLAHOMA CITY, OK, Myriad. PINE BLUFF, AR, Convention Center Arena. PROVIDENCE, RI, Providence Civic Center. ROCHESTER, MN, Mayo Civic Center Arena. ROCHESTER, NY, Memorial Auditorium. ST. LOUIS, MO, The Arena. ST. PETERSBURG, FL, Bayfront Center. SAN ANTONIO, TX (Spanish only), Convention Center Arena. SAN FRANCISCO, CA, Cow Palace. SOUTH BEND, IN, N.D.U. Athletic Center. TACOMA, WA, Tacoma Dome.

July 10-12: ALBANY, GA, Albany Civic Center. ANCHORAGE, AK, Sullivan Arena. BILLINGS, MT, Yellowstone Metra. BISMARCK, ND, Bismarck Civic Center Arena. CICERO, IL, Hawthorne Race Course. CORVALLIS, OR, Gill Coliseum. FT. LAUDERDALE, FL (French only), Jehovah's Witnesses Assembly Hall. FRESNO, CA (Spanish only), Convention Center. HAMPTON, VA, Hampton Coliseum. HIALEAH, FL (Spanish only), Hialeah Park Race Track. LANDOVER, MD, Capital Centre. LINCOLN, NE (Sign language also), Devaney Sports Center. LOS ANGELES, CA (Korean only), Jehovah's Witnesses Assembly Hall. LOS ANGELES, CA (Spanish only), Dodger Stadium. LOUISVILLE, KY (Sign language also), Coliseum, Kentucky Fair & Exposition Center. NASHVILLE, TN, Municipal Auditorium. ROANOKE, VA, Civic Center. ROCHESTER, MN, Mayo Civic Center Arena. SACRAMENTO, CA, ARCO Arena. ST. LOUIS, MO, The Arena. SAN ANTONIO, TX (Spanish only), Convention Center Arena. TACOMA, WA (Spanish and sign language also), Tacoma Dome.

July 17-19: ALBANY, GA (Sign language also), Albany Civic Center. CHARLESTON, WV, Charleston Civic Center Coliseum. CICERO, IL (Spanish only), Hawthorne Race Course. CROWNSVILLE, MD (Korean only), Jehovah's Witnesses Assembly Hall. EL PASO, TX (Spanish only), Special Events Center. FRESNO, CA (Spanish only), Convention Center. HAMPTON, VA, Hampton Coliseum. HIALEAH, FL (Spanish only), Hialeah Park Race Track. LANDOVER, MD (Sign language also), Capital Centre. LITTLE ROCK, AR, Barton Coliseum. MIDLAND, TX, Chaparral Center, Midland College. PITTSBURGH, PA (Sign language also), Three Rivers Stadium. ROCHESTER, MN, Mayo Civic Center Arena. SACRAMENTO, CA, ARCO Arena. SPRINGFIELD, MA, Civic Center. TUCSON, AZ (Sign language also), Community Center.

July 24-26: BROOKLYN, NY (Italian only), Jehovah's Witnesses Assembly Hall. JERSEY CITY, NJ (French only), Jehovah's Witnesses Assembly Hall. LANDOVER, MD, Capital Centre. LITTLE ROCK, AR, Barton Coliseum. MIDLAND, TX, Chaparral Center, Midland College. NATICK, MA (Portuguese only), Jehovah's Witnesses Assembly Hall. NEW YORK, NY (Sign language also), Yankee Stadium. NIAGARA FALLS, NY, International Convention Center. RENO, NV, Centennial Coliseum. ROCHESTER, MN, Mayo Civic Center Arena. SACRAMENTO, CA, ARCO Arena. SPRINGFIELD, MA (Sign language also), Civic Center.

July 31–August 2: ABILENE, TX (Spanish only), Taylor County Coliseum.

August 7-9: NEW YORK, NY (Spanish only), Yankee Stadium.

Britain

June 12-14: GUERNSEY, C.I., Beau Sejour Centre.

June 26-28: NOTTINGHAM, Nottingham Forest Football Club. SOUTHAMPTON, Southampton Football Club.

July 3-5: EDINBURGH, Rugby Union Ground. MANCHESTER, Manchester City Football Club. PLYMOUTH, Plymouth Argyle Football Club. LONDON (Italian only), North London Assembly Hall.

July 10-12: LEEDS, Leeds United Football Club. NORWICH, Norwich City Football Club. BIRMINGHAM, Aston Villa Football Club.

July 17-19: CARDIFF, Welsh National Rugby Ground.

July 24-26: LONDON (Greek and Spanish sessions also), Rugby Union Ground. CRYSTAL PALACE, National Sports Centre.

Ireland

July 3-5: NAVAN, Navan Exhibition Centre.

July 10-12: NAVAN, Navan Exhibition Centre.

Canada

July 3-5: BRAMPTON, ONT. (Spanish only), Assembly Hall of Jehovah's Witnesses. EDMONTON, ALTA. (Ukrainian sessions also), Edmonton Northlands Coliseum. KAMLOOPS, B.C., Kamloops Exhibition Association. LETHBRIDGE, ALTA. (French and Spanish sessions also), The Sportsplex. OTTAWA, ONT., Civic Centre Arena. PRINCE GEORGE, B.C., Kin Centre. REGINA, SASK., The Agridome. WINNIPEG, MAN. (Ukrainian sessions also), Winnipeg Convention Centre.

July 10-12: BRAMPTON, ONT. (Portuguese only), Assembly Hall of Jehovah's Witnesses. CASTLEGAR, B.C., Castlegar & District Community Complex. MONTREAL, QUE. (French and Italian only; Arabic sessions also), Olympic Stadium. PRINCE GEORGE, B.C., Kin Centre. SAULT STE. MARIE, ONT., Sault Memorial Gardens. SASKATOON, SASK. (Ukrainian sessions also), Saskatoon Arena. SYDNEY, N.S., Sydney Centre. VANCOUVER, B.C. (Portuguese also), B.C. Place Stadium.

July 17-19: BRAMPTON, ONT. (Italian only), Assembly Hall of Jehovah's Witnesses. CORNER BROOK, NFLD., Humber Gardens. HAMILTON, ONT. (Chinese and Hungarian sessions also), Copps Coliseum. LONDON, ONT., Grandstand Western Fairgrounds. QUEBEC CITY, QUE. (French only), Colisée, Parc de l'Exposition. SAINT JOHN, N.B., Lord Beaverbrook Rink. SUMMERLAND, B.C., Summerland Recreation Centre.

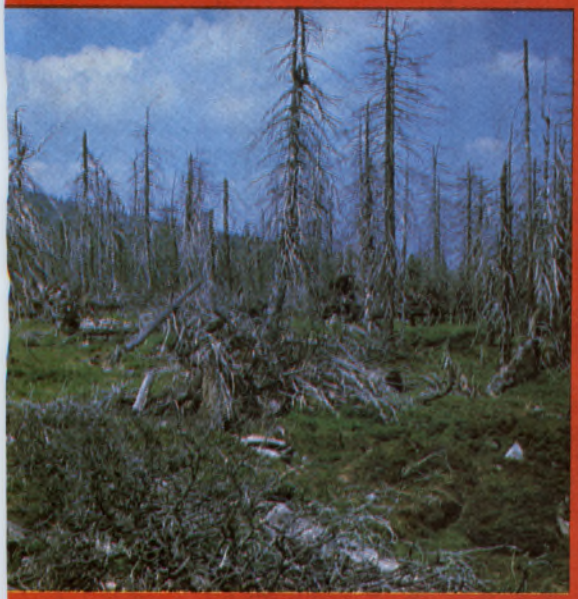
July 24-26: BRAMPTON, ONT. (Italian only), Assembly Hall of Jehovah's Witnesses. HAMILTON, ONT. (Korean and Ukrainian sessions also), Copps Coliseum.

July 31–August 2: BRAMPTON, ONT. (Greek only), Assembly Hall of Jehovah's Witnesses.

Awake!

June 22, 1987

What Is Happening to Our Forests?



Whose heart is not warmed by the beauty of a forest? Yet, in many places forests are no longer lush and green.

In the Federal Republic of Germany, where 29 percent of the land area is covered by forests, 34 percent of all forest trees had been damaged to some extent by 1983. The number of damaged trees increased to 53 percent by 1985!

What is killing the forests, and what is being done to save them? Why is this a problem that affects you?

Waldsterben —It's Your Problem Too!

ARE you good at riddles? Try this one. I am centuries older than you but am now in danger of dying prematurely. Although one, I am composed of many that, sorry to say, are getting fewer. And despite being green, I am called black. What am I?

If your answer is the Black Forest of Germany, you are right. How sad that the dark fir and spruce trees that once covered its mountainsides so thickly and that gave it its name are being struck down by a silent killer. But wait! That's not all.

"From Italy to Denmark, yes, all over Europe, the forests are dying," said University of Munich forest expert Professor Peter Schütt in 1983. Since then, in the light of unmistakable evidence that this problem has moved farther north into Scandinavia, his words have taken on greater urgency.

North America, particularly Canada, has the problem too, but nowhere has it taken on such alarming proportions as in Europe. And since forests have played such a prominent role in the history and mythology of Germany, covering 29 percent of its land area, it seems appropriate that a German word—*Waldsterben*—has been widely

More Than a German Problem

Switzerland: A recently completed study estimates that the number of diseased trees there has risen to 46 percent, a 10-percent increase within the last year.

Austria: The director of the Institute for Forestry at the University of Soil Cultivation in Vienna says that half the trees in the country show visible signs of disease. He claims: "There is not a single tree left in all of Austria that has not suffered latent damage."

Yugoslavia: Visible symptoms of disease can be seen in spruce and fir trees.

France: The existence of dying forests was denied up until 1983, but signs that trees are diseased are now becoming evident.

Luxembourg: In 1984 damaged forests were reported for the first time.

Czechoslovakia: In the Ore Mountains on the border of the German Democratic Republic and Czechoslovakia, over 120,000 acres (50,000 ha) of forest are reported to be dead already.

Belgium: Some 70 percent of the forest cover in the eastern part of the country is said to be diseased.

England and Scotland: The United Kingdom Forestry Commission reported in 1984 that tree damage in south and west Scotland and in northwest England is "new and quite widespread on a number of species."

Awake!® June 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 12

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Waldsterben—It's Your Problem Too! 3
Can the Forests Be Saved? 5
Live to See the Forests Rejoice! 9

Also in This Issue

The World Since 1914 As the World Disintegrates, Let Your Hope Grow Brighter! 11
Tobacco's Menace to Smokers and Nonsmokers .. 16
Young People Ask ... What Makes Me Feel So Lonely? 18
My Life With Hemophilia 21
Reading Aloud Makes Learning Enjoyable 25
Phones on Wheels—How Do They Work? 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Homosexuality and the Clergy 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

adopted to describe this problem of the "dying forest."

How Dying Forests Affect You

Do you enjoy an occasional walk through the woods? Does it warm your heart to see children thrill at the sight of deer and other wildlife in their natural habitat? Remember, without forests, no more walks, no more wildlife, no more refreshing forest air.

And should the forests continue to die, think of the adverse effect upon the economies of lumber-producing countries like Canada and Sweden. Actually, the economy of the entire world would suffer. Estimate, if you can, how expensive wood and wood products, including paper, might then become.

Besides, the lack of tree coverage in mountainous regions invites disaster. A study recently published in Munich says that half the villages in the Alpine foothills of Bavaria are endangered by "falling rocks, avalanches, and floods" that could make "roads between villages impassable." The situation is said to be similar in other Alpine regions.

But the greatest threat of all is the fact that unless something is done soon, as Professor Schütt warns, "our forest ecosystems will break down within the next ten or twenty years." Such a breakdown would lead to a reduction in the number of plant and animal species. It would influence the climate, altering temperatures globally. It would also change rainfall patterns, endangering water reserves and crops.

And what about health? Can we expect humans to maintain good health while breathing the same polluted air that is

evidently killing our trees? One German study claims to have discovered a correlation between the spread and extent of *Waldsterben* and the degree and extent of diseases of the human respiratory system. A University of California doctor is quoted as saying 'that if no cure for cancer is found within the next 75 years, many people will suffer, but unless we find some means of preserving nature within the next 15 years, everyone will suffer.'

Dr. Albert Hofmann of Switzerland says that "if there is no basic difference in the way forest trees and fruit trees or other edible plants, grains, etc., assimilate carbon dioxide," which evidently there is not, "then it must be considered a real possibility that within the foreseeable future plants used by man as food will start dying also." In conclusion, he says: "With the dying of our forests the very foundation for all earthly life is becoming seriously endangered."

In view of the gravity of the situation, it is certainly not an exaggeration when the book *Unser Wald Muss Leben* (Our Forest Must Live) says that our dying forests present us with "the greatest challenge of our time."

Not without reason has it been said: "First the forests die, then the people." Can anything be done?

Can the Forests Be Saved?

"MANY strokes overthrow the tallest oaks." So wrote the 16th-century English author John Lyly. Words all too prophetic of the Federal Republic of Germany, where the number of ailing German oaks continues to grow. Of course, this is not the first time that trees have become diseased and have died. Still, forests have managed to survive for centuries. So why the excitement?

Characteristically, forest diseases attack only one particular species. But this time every major species of tree in Central Europe is involved. Never before has *Waldsterben* occurred in so many places at the same time or spread with such rapidity. Never before has the intensity of damage been so great, trees being struck indiscriminately, whether growing in poor soil or in rich, in alkali soil or in acid, at low elevation or at high.

Moreover, in former times the causes were easily determined—a drought, an insect plague, a fungus. Or if polluted air from a nearby industrial plant was to blame, the specific poisonous substance at fault was readily detectable. So when forestry officials saw the first evidence of disease at the end of the 1970's, these "normal" causes were obviously suspect. But then they saw the disease move out to embrace more and more species: silver firs; then spruce and pine; later beech, oak, maple, and ash. With alarm they took note of an increasing number of trees stunted in growth, trees with defective root systems, trees with leaves or

needles that tended to turn yellow and fall off. These and other heretofore unfamiliar symptoms proved that they were dealing with a new phenomenon. Who was the culprit killing their forests? They soon felt they had found it: acid rain.

The Role of Acid Rain

Sulfur dioxide and nitrogen oxides are produced by electrical generating plants, industrial boilers, and motor vehicles. Acid rain is formed when these gases interact with vapor to form dilute solutions of sulfuric and nitric acid. These noxious substances can be transported over long distances, even across international boundaries.

Canada, for example, claims that the high-sulfur emissions from power plants in the United States are largely responsible for the acid rain that is devastating its forests and waterways. In Europe a similar situation exists, wherein acid rain, perhaps originating in Central Europe, has played havoc with the lakes and rivers of Scandinavia, increasing their acidity and killing the fish.

When acid rain is absorbed into the ground, it breaks down natural minerals, such as calcium, potassium, and aluminum, and carries them into the substrata, thus robbing trees and plants of a vital source of nutrients. But further research has shown that this is not the sole reason for today's *Waldsterben*. Trying to pinpoint the exact cause, however, has been frustrating.

The Unsolved Riddle

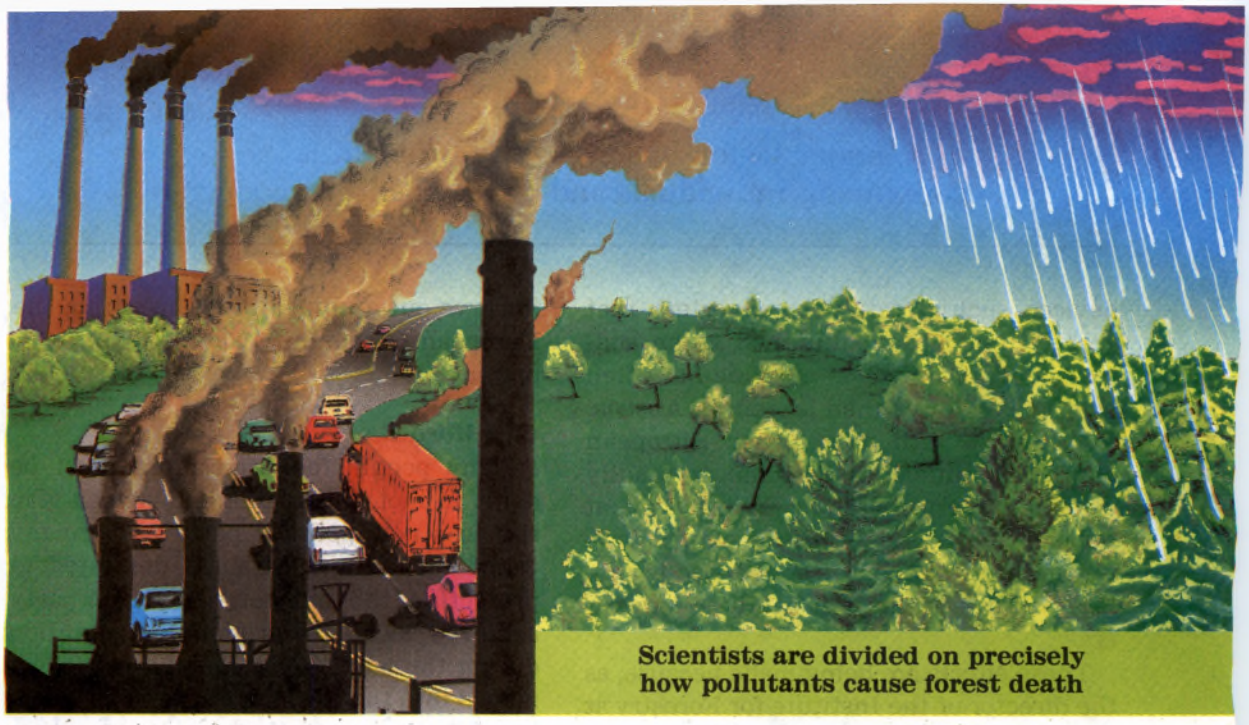
One meteorologist admitted: "We're like a lot of blind men grabbing at an elephant." Indeed, a Swedish forestry expert recently listed 167 theories that have been advanced to explain what is causing the problem.

Whatever the reason, "imported sulfur dioxide has partially been exonerated," explains the U.S. magazine *Smithsonian,* "at least in the Black Forest." This is because there is less sulfur dioxide in the atmosphere now than there was 15 years ago, and as *Smithsonian* notes, it "is lowest of all where trees are sickest."

Research now would seem to indicate that traces of toxic metals that are emitted into the atmosphere by fossil-fuel-burning plants and vehicle exhaust fumes combine with acid rain to destroy nutrients necessary to keep trees alive. Some authorities believe that because of continuing soil acidification, trace elements may be dissolved and absorbed by the roots and choke off a tree's water supply.

Hans Mohr, a Freiburg University teacher, claims that the difficulty seems to be created by nitrogen, the very substance plants often have a shortage of. He refers to research indicating that nitrogen compounds in the atmosphere have increased by 50 percent over the past 20 years. This increase is due mainly to vehicle exhaust; static emission; gas-, oil-, and coal-fired central heating; and ammonia emission by agriculture and refuse-disposal facilities. Bernhard Ulrich of the University of Göttingen argues that the trees are not being strangled by what is in the air but are being poisoned by what is in the soil. Other authorities point an accusing finger at ozone levels, at the sinking water level, or at ineffective forestry policies.

"A new avenue of research," observes *Smithsonian* magazine, "contends that the guilt falls on no single air pollutant, but rather on an as-yet unknown interaction among them, so that the whole impact is greater than the parts." This is very possible. Almost 3,000 chemical compounds ex-



Scientists are divided on precisely how pollutants cause forest death

ist that can be called air pollutants. For several decades they have been building up in concentration, subjecting the forests to continuous stress.

As long as the ecological system was intact and strong enough to reject the effects of pollution, all went well. But now when causes for sickness, such as frost, drought, and insects, make their appearance, the trees find themselves too weak to resist.

Obviously, many factors are involved in the overthrow of Germany's proud oaks. Determining just which particular pollutant is chiefly responsible for their demise is as difficult and as pointless as saying which of ten water faucets being used to fill a tank is *the* faucet that finally causes the tank to overflow.

What Is Being Done?

Realizing that something must be done fast if the worst is to be avoided, local, state, and federal governments are resorting to "short-term solutions to maintain the trees until a longtime answer can be found," as one magazine expressed it. Meanwhile, extensive studies are being made, including taking infrared pictures of the forests from the air to determine the extent of damage and what should be done.

'Why don't they just plant new trees to replace the diseased ones?' you may ask. But it is not that simple, for newly planted trees are already beginning to show the same symptoms of disease as older trees. Even the use of fertilizers that counteract soil deficiencies has met with only limited success.

Top priority is being given efforts to lessen air pollution. Laws regulating industry have been tightened, and in the Federal Republic of Germany it is hoped that by the mid-1990's these regulations will reduce the amount of sulfur dioxide by about two thirds and nitrogen oxide by about half.

Generous tax breaks have been given persons willing to buy cars equipped with

A major factor in solving the problem is convincing individuals and governments to cooperate

devices, such as catalytic converters, that greatly reduce air pollutants. As an added incentive, unleaded gasoline has often been priced lower than leaded. In Austria, in contrast with most other European countries, unleaded gasoline is readily available everywhere. In Switzerland, at the end of 1986, new emission-control laws were put into effect, designed also to promote the sale of cars with catalytic converters.

These efforts are being made because, as the director of the Institute for Forestry at the University of Soil Cultivation in Vienna claims, *Waldsterben* can only be stopped if air pollution can be reduced to the levels of 1950. But is this realistic when the number of motor vehicles in Germany alone, with more cars per square mile than any other nation in the world, is over 19 times what it was at that time?

Tests show that the imposing of speed limits would reduce polluting emissions considerably. Yet this suggestion has run into stiff opposition. Some drivers, however, even in the celebrated racetrack atmosphere of Germany, are beginning to realize that for the sake of their forests —not to speak of their lives—they must slow down. Others, of course, selfishly reject any such restrictions. Typical of these are the drivers who display the bumper sign "My car will run even without the forest."

Thus, a major factor in solving the problem is convincing individuals and governments to cooperate. Since air pollution ignores national borders, international policies are called for. Up to now attempts to carve out a unified program within the European Community have led to disappointment.

Can More Be Done?

Many people feel that more must be done. In fact, this feeling has helped give rise to a new political party in Germany called the Greens. Strongly dedicated to protecting the environment, this party achieved local and regional recognition during the late 1970's. Finally, in 1983 it moved into the German Parliament, electing 27 representatives and attracting 5.6 percent of the popular vote.

A German expression claims that green is the color of hope. But do the Greens offer hope for the forests? Despite good intentions and idealistic goals, the party has made little headway. Many citizens consider them politically naive, offering simplistic solutions to complex problems.

Yet, many are taking practical steps to cut down on air pollution to the extent reasonably possible. They are driving slower, traveling less, joining car pools, using unleaded gasoline, and obeying antipollution regulations laid down by the government. But apparently *this is still not* enough.

The alternative of drastically curtailing the use of motor vehicles, airplanes, and industrial plants, while helping to solve the problem of air pollution, would most assuredly create new problems. Actually, the solution to *Waldsterben*—in fact, to all environmental problems—is to be found elsewhere.

Live to See the Forests Rejoice!

"I think that I shall never see
A poem lovely as a tree. . . .
Poems are made by fools like me,
But only God can make a tree."

TO THE truth that "only God can make a tree," American poet Joyce Kilmer, whose talented life was cut short by World War I, might appropriately have added the thought, 'and only God can keep a tree alive.'

Despite the battle cry "Save Our Forests," human efforts at preserving the forests are meeting with only limited success. Even the "good news" offered by a September 1986 report is of little comfort. It speaks of "a high-level stabilization," which in plain words means that *Waldsterben* is still spreading but at a lower rate than in years past.

According to a leading German newspaper, a growing feeling of helplessness is to be found among scientists. It quotes Professor Peter Schütt of Munich's Institute of Forestry, who recently told a concerned audience: "Let's not fool ourselves. We long ago reached the limits of our possibilities." He warned that if present attempts to curb air pollution fail, "we will be left with absolutely nothing else to try."

And how can the prospects for solving the problem of air pollution be described? Gloomy, dreary, or bleak—take your pick. "The quality of air has not improved," declares the Swiss newspaper *Die Weltwoche*. While "plant physiologists are still involved in time-consuming, detailed work, trying to determine which pollutant is striking which tree to what extent, . . . once disconcerted drivers are regaining

their old self-confidence and driving faster than they should. The sale of cars with catalytic converters has stagnated . . . Not much of anything has changed, except that the flurry of excitement [about *Waldsterben*] is long past."

A Realistic Solution Is at Hand

To believe that *Waldsterben* can be successfully solved by humans is unrealistic. Why? Because they lack accurate knowledge both of its causes and of effective methods for combating it. Moreover, humans lack the power to control natural forces like weather patterns and ecosystems. Besides, inherited selfishness prevents them from renouncing personal interests in favor of the common good.

Yet, there are reasons for optimism. Bible chronology and physical facts indicate that God's long-prayed-for Kingdom is at hand. The establishment of this government was foretold almost 1,900 years ago in these words: "We thank you, Jehovah God, the Almighty, the One who is and who was, because you have taken your great power and begun ruling as king. But the nations became wrathful, and your own wrath came, and the appointed time . . . to bring to ruin those ruining the earth." (Revelation 11:17, 18) Soon, as promised, "the appointed time" will arrive for God "to bring to ruin those ruining the earth," including polluters who are ruining his forests.

Under divine rule, obedient mankind will be properly instructed in how to prevent air pollution and its by-product *Waldsterben*. Imagine how the earth will rejoice, symbolically speaking, when the balance of nature has been restored with positive effects on climate, agriculture, and health. "Let the earth be joyful, and let [it] say among the nations, 'Jehovah himself has become king!' . . . At the same time let the trees of the forest break out joyfully." (1 Chronicles 16:31-33) Restored to a condition of greater beauty and well-being than ever before, "the trees of the forest" will indeed have every reason to "break out joyfully."

But before that time arrives, *Waldsterben* may get worse. For example, in September 1986 the above-mentioned newspaper wrote: "Cultivated plants in the lowlands are beginning to waste away; cherry trees in northwest Switzerland have lost their zest, and farmers are seeking counsel from agriculture officials." A similar situation in Germany recently led the state of Baden-Württemberg to begin an investigation of the connection between air pollution and damaged fruit trees. Although no statistics are yet available, it is reported that scientists believe that stone fruits in particular are endangered.

Reports like these may remind Bible students of Habakkuk 3:17. Speaking of our day, it says: "Although the fig tree itself may not blossom, and there may be no yield on the vines; the work of the olive tree may actually turn out a failure, and the terraces themselves may actually produce no food."

If, however, you place your trust in God and support his Kingdom rule, you, like Habakkuk, will have no reason for fear. (Habakkuk 3:18) On the contrary, you have every reason to look to the future with optimism and to be joyful. The problem of *Waldsterben* is about to be solved —permanently and completely. You, too, can live to see the forests rejoice—and all mankind with them!

THE WORLD SINCE 1914

Part 8: 1970–1986

As the World Disintegrates, Let Your Hope Grow Brighter!

ARE you disturbed, upset, perhaps even frightened by world conditions? If so, take comfort from the words of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, one of the United States' most popular poets of the 19th century. He wrote: "The nearer the dawn the darker the night."

The publishers of *Awake!* think that these words are applicable to our world since 1914. Based on their study of the Bible, they believe that the increasing darkness of this world's night is simply an indication of the approaching dawn of a bright new day. What has happened since 1970 strengthens their conviction. Consider the evidence.

Taking Peace Away From the Earth

In 1970 guerrilla warfare broke out in the Philippines; in 1976 hostilities began between South Africa and Angola. Shortly thereafter Vietnam and Kampuchea (Cambodia) started the third war in Indo-China within less than 35 years. In 1980 the Islamic nations of Iran and Iraq embarked on a war of fratricide. A year later, guerrilla warfare was raging in Nicaragua. Great Britain and Argentina clashed in 1982 over the Falkland Islands. Altogether, more than 50 wars have broken out since 1970.

Another kind of war—terrorism—escalated during the 1970's. Recall some of the prominent individuals who were struck down by terrorist attack or by the assassin's bullet: Spanish Premier Luis Carrero Blanco in 1973; King Faisal of Saudi Arabia and President Mujibur Rahman of Bangladesh in 1975; Italian statesman Aldo Moro in 1978; South Korean President Park Chung Hee and the Queen of England's cousin, Lord Mountbatten, in 1979; in 1981 Egyptian President Anwar Sadat; and in 1984 Indian Prime Minister Indira Gandhi. During those same years, unsuccessful attempts were made on the lives of U.S. presidents Gerald Ford and Ronald Reagan, British Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher, and Pope John Paul II.

Or think of the groups that became victims of terrorism. At the 1972 Olympic Games in Munich, a hostage drama left 17 people dead, including 11 Israeli athletes. Eleven OPEC ministers meeting in Vienna, Austria, in 1975 were more fortunate; although taken hostage, they escaped with their lives. An American nightmare began in 1979 when 52 U.S. citizens were held hostage in Iran for over a year. An exploding bomb in a Burmese mausoleum killed 19 persons in 1983, including 16 visiting South Korean officials. In 1985 an Air India jet plummeted into the Atlantic off the coast of Ireland; 329 persons perished.

These listings are only partial. In Northern Ireland and Lebanon, for example, terrorism is almost a way of life. A popular encyclopedia stated that "the use of airplane hijacking as an act of political terrorism became an international problem in the 1970s and continued in the early 1980s." So although terrorism may not yet have touched you personally, the chances that it will—simply because of your nationality or because of your being in the wrong place at the wrong time—are growing.

In view of these facts, who can deny that 'peace has been taken away from the earth,' as Revelation 6:4 foretold it would be? Still, this in no way rescinds the earlier Bible promise: "He is making wars to cease to the extremity of the earth." (Psalm 46:9) Has progress been made in this direction since 1970?

Reaching for Peace While Grasping the Sword

In 1970 U.S. President Nixon announced his government's intentions to replace an "era of confrontation" with an "era of negotiation." Peaceful coexistence was to give way to détente, an easing of tensions. The superpowers agreed to hold Strategic Arms Limitation Talks (SALT), leading in 1972 and 1979 to partial success. The powderkeg atmosphere of Berlin diminished as the relationship between the two Germanys improved. In 1973 a 35-nation Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe opened in Helsinki. Expectations soared.

Progress, however, was not limited to Europe. After two decades of no contact, the United States and the People's Republic of China began normalizing relations. Ping-Pong diplomacy their negotiations were called. Meanwhile, in the volatile Middle East, shuttle diplomacy seemed to be working. Finally, in March 1979, after the Camp David agreements, an Israeli-Egyptian peace treaty was signed.

These developments, as well as others, clearly show that since 1970 the world has been reaching for peace. The UN announcement in 1982 that 1986 was to be an International Year of Peace served to confirm this. Of course, the one who "is making wars to cease," to whom the Bible refers, is not any human but is God. Yet, Bible prophecy foretells that prior to God's doing so, humans will be saying, "Peace and security!"—1 Thessalonians 5:3.

But while reaching out for peace with one hand, the world is grasping, as it were, a great sword in the other. (Compare Revelation 6:4.) In paranoid fashion, it has been arming at an unprecedented rate. Mary Kaldor of the Science Policy Research Unit, University of Sussex, tells us that "from 1971 to 1980, the international arms trade doubled in real terms"—and not just because of the superpowers. "The increase in arms sold to less developed countries was even greater," she says.

In the last decade and a half, defense has become so important that in one recent year 77 nations allocated over 10 percent

Other Items That Made the News

1970—The People's Republic of China becomes world's third space power by deploying satellite

1973—Military coup overthrows Chile's socialist government and results in President Allende's death

1974—Watergate scandal, which began in 1972, reaches climax as U.S. President Nixon resigns in disgrace

1976—Series of major earthquakes, including one in China called possibly the most devastating in human history, kills hundreds of thousands

1978—First test-tube baby; born in Britain

1979—Serious accident at U.S. nuclear reactor at Three Mile Island, Pennsylvania

1980—U.S. volcano Mount St. Helens erupts

1981—First flight of U.S. space shuttle *Columbia*

1983—Computer chosen as *Time's* "Man of the Year"

1984—Soviets set record of 237 days in space

1985—Colombian volcano Nevado del Ruiz erupts, killing 25,000

Earthquake in Mexico City kills thousands

1986—The U.S. *Challenger* space shuttle explodes, with the loss of seven astronauts

Soviet Chernobyl nuclear-power-station disaster spreads contamination across Europe

of their total budget to military and defense expenditures. In fact, 20 nations, almost half of them located in the explosive Middle East, spent more than one fourth of their budget on defense. This in a world that since 1945 has allegedly been at peace!

No wonder a military official recently said that we are living in an "era of violent peace." That is why the United Nations with its 159 members at the end of 1985—up from 127 in 1970—has been so hard-pressed to maintain international peace and security. The high expectations placed in it at its founding have gone unfulfilled. Journalist Richard Ivor says that one reason for its failure is that "it has not yet succeeded in changing the hearts and minds either of the people who lead countries or of the people who make them up." Hugh Caradon, former British ambassador to the UN, expressed it more succinctly: "There is nothing fundamentally wrong with the United Nations—except its members."

Like it or not, now more than ever before, economic, religious, or political developments in one country can immediately trigger reactions throughout the world.

Economic Problems

For example, do you remember when back in the early 1970's OPEC began pushing the price of oil from about $4 a barrel to its 1981 high of $35? The result? This "oil weapon," says the *The New Encyclopædia Britannica,* "intensified inflation in the advanced industrial nations and created severe balance-of-payments difficulties for some nations of Europe; it caused havoc in the economies of many less developed nations."

Economist R. N. Gardner warns that "the existing system of international economic institutions is not good enough and that none of the members of the United Nations can expect a safe passage into the 21st century without a fundamental restructuring of these

arrangements." Already, countries like Mexico, Brazil, and Nigeria are dangerously close to bankruptcy. The instability of the world's economic system will have serious consequences in the near future.

Religion and Politics

During the 1970's some new faces from the world of religion made their appearance on the political scene. From the United States came Jerry Falwell with his Moral Majority; from Iran, a theocracy-proclaiming ayatollah; from Europe, Catholic and Protestant clergymen joining hands in peace and antinuclear marches; from South Africa, antiapartheid, Nobel prize winner, Anglican Bishop Desmond Tutu. But no one has turned heads like Polish Pope John Paul II, about whom a Vatican official reportedly once said: "Even when he says Mass it seems to have political implications."

At the beginning of the 1970's, a journalist predicted that "the link between politics and religion may gain a new importance in the [United States'] changing social climate." This has proved to be true, but the trend has not been limited to any one country. "The words 'religion' and 'politics' were yoked in news stories throughout 1984 in all parts of the world," says the *1985 Britannica Book of the Year*. But there is growing friction between the two, as it admits: "Skirmishing between governmental and religious authorities was a worldwide phenomenon." This spiritually immoral love affair between religion and politics will soon end in disaster.—Revelation, chapter 18.

Growing Problems, Yet Hope

"What has happened . . . in the 1970s and 1980s," writes syndicated columnist Georgie Anne Geyer, "is that the world is quietly but relentlessly being rent by a slow-motion disintegration." Besides the causes for this disintegration already mentioned, can you think of more? Pollution? Drug abuse? Misconduct by public officials? The refugee problem? Famine? Newly discovered diseases like Legionnaires' disease, toxic shock syndrome, and the most frightening of all of them, AIDS?

Jehovah's Witnesses see in all these events evidence that the darkness of this world's night is deepening, even as the Bible foretold. Still, the more than 3,000,000 of them throughout the world—up from 1,483,430 in 1970—are full of optimism. This is because someone far greater than Longfellow comforts us with the hope that "the nearer the dawn the darker the night." It is the Son of God himself who, after speaking of worsening conditions in the foretold last days, said: "As these things start to occur, raise yourselves erect and lift your heads up, because your deliverance is getting near."—Luke 21:28.

None of us can change the past or undo the misery and suffering that humans have experienced in THE WORLD SINCE 1914. But we can act with divine wisdom and prepare for a happy future. The first step in doing this is to recognize that worsening world conditions are irrefutable evidence that the dark night of satanic rule is drawing to a close and that the full day of God's established Kingdom will soon dawn.

"There is no morrow for the wicked man," warned wise King Solomon. And yet, as he said, "there will be a morrow" for those who find wisdom. (Proverbs 24: 14, 20, *The Jerusalem Bible*) It is also of interest to note the words of former U.S. President Lyndon B. Johnson: "Yesterday is not ours to recover, but tomorrow is ours to win or to lose." "Tomorrow"—an endless future on a paradise earth under God's Kingdom—is individually ours "to win or to lose." What will be your choice?

May the rapid disintegration of the world cause you to lift up your head and rejoice at the prospect of a better life in a new world

Tobacco's Menace to Smokers and Nonsmokers

Evidence of tobacco's harm to smokers and nonsmokers continues to mount. Consider the following:

■ Tobacco Instead of Food

"An epidemic of lung cancer can be predicted" for many developing countries within a decade, says the journal *World Health.* The United Nations Food and Agriculture Organization adds that tobacco consumption "continues to rise by 2.1 per cent a year in the Third World." Presently, 63 percent of the world's tobacco is grown there, up from 50 percent some 25 years ago. This trend endangers these developing countries. *The Times* of London explains how: "Tobacco production, adopted throughout the Third World as a cash crop, is raising cancer rates, causing deforestation and occupying land that could grow much needed food crops for home consumption."

■ Smoke and Cancer

In 1986, at the 14th International Cancer Congress in Hungary, experts estimated that 3,500,000 people would die of cancer that year. "According to WHO [World Health Organization] statistics," reports the German medical journal *Ärztliche Praxis,* "one million of these deaths will be caused by smoking."

Sir Richard Doll, emeritus professor of medicine at Oxford University, warned that of the 3,800 chemicals in tobacco smoke, 50 have been identified as causing cancer in animals. Some of these chemicals were found to be most concentrated in noninhaled smoke. Smokers thus expose others, who become passive smokers, to the more carcinogenic substances. A British study of nonsmokers living with smokers found that every second person killed by lung cancer was a passive smoker.

The surgeon general of the United States urged companies to provide a smoke-free workplace for nonsmokers. In his report for 1986 on the health effects of smoking, he said: "Involuntary smoking is a cause of disease, including cancer, in healthy nonsmokers," and "simple separation of smokers and nonsmokers within the same airspace may reduce, but does not eliminate, exposure of nonsmokers to environmental tobacco smoke."

■ Unborn Affected

A medical research team from the University of Sydney in Australia claims that smoking starves babies in the womb of needed nutrients. The researchers have been studying the effect smoking has on the flow of blood to the placenta—the organ that supplies the unborn baby with food and oxygen and carries away waste via the umbilical cord. When the researchers monitored the blood flow through the umbilical cord, they discovered that just two minutes after a mother smokes a cigarette, the blood flow is slowed, and such an effect lasts for up to an hour.

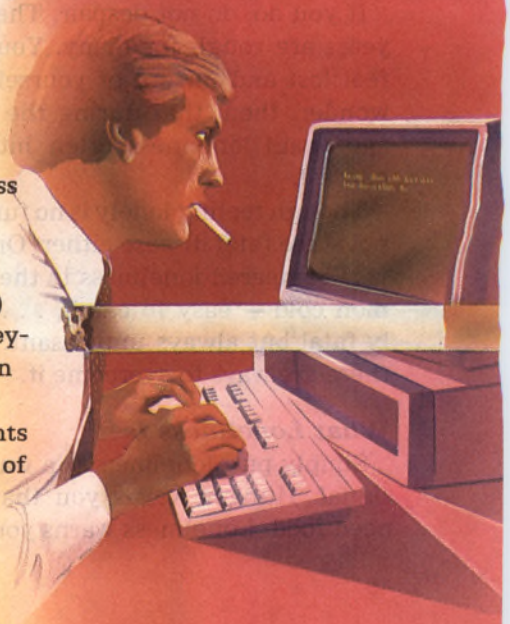
Dr. Brian Trudinger, senior lecturer in obstetrics and gynecology, said, as reported in *The University of Sydney News:* "On average, the babies of mothers who smoke ten cigarettes a day throughout pregnancy weigh about 300 grams [10 ounces] less at birth than those of nonsmokers. But until now it could be argued that this was due in some way to the smoker rather than the smoking—that the sort of woman who smoked in pregnancy may have had other problems which resulted in smaller babies. However, our research shows conclusively that smoking affects the foetus directly by reducing the blood flow from it to the placenta."

Also, the British medical magazine *The Lancet* recently published the results of a study of childhood cancer. The study found that the more cigarettes smoked per day by the mother during pregnancy the greater the cancer risk in her offspring. "When all tumour sites were considered," *The Lancet* reported, "the overall risk for cancer in children exposed to 10 or more cigarettes per day during pregnancy increased by 50%."

After they are born, children of smokers face additional health dangers. In another issue, *The Lancet* noted: "Studies have found a direct relation between passive smoking and childhood asthma, persistent wheezing, and respiratory illness in the first and second years of life."

■ Smoking Costs at Workplace

Smokers cost their employers an extra $4,000 ($2,650, U.S.) per person per year, states the New South Wales Health Surveyors' Association in Australia. The association bases its claim on evidence that smokers are away from work sick more than nonsmokers and have about twice as many accidents. Accidents are more likely among smokers, says the association, because of smoke in the workers' eyes or because smokers are using one hand to perform tasks while the other is holding a cigarette.



What Makes Me Feel So Lonely?

It is Saturday night. The boy sits in his room thinking about the kids in school who have gone bowling at the mall. He had mustered up the courage to ask if he could join them. But even now he can hear the taunting laughter as they walked away.

"I hate weekends!" he shouts. But there is no one in the room to answer. He picks up a magazine and sees a picture of a group of young people at the beach. He hurls the magazine against the wall. Tears well up. He clamps his teeth on his underlip, but the tears keep pushing. Unable to fight it any longer, he falls on his bed, sobbing, "Why am I always left out?"

DO YOU sometimes feel like that—cut off from the world, useless and empty? Do you ever wonder, 'What makes me feel so lonely, and why does it hurt so much?'

If you do, do not despair. The teen years are rough for many. You may feel lost and unsure of yourself. No wonder, then, that during the teenage years loneliness often hits the hardest.

Though feeling lonely is no fun, it is not some fatal disease either. One expert compared loneliness to the common cold—"easy to catch, . . . rarely fatal but always unpleasant." Yet, there are ways to overcome it.

What Loneliness Is

Simply put, loneliness is a warning signal. Hunger warns you that you need food. Loneliness warns you that

you need companionship, closeness, intimacy. We need food to function well. Likewise, we need companionship to feel well.

Have you ever watched a bed of glowing coals? What happens when you take one coal away from the heap? The glow of that single coal will die away. But after you put the coal back into the heap, it glows again. Similarly, we humans cannot "glow," or function well, in isolation for long. It is natural to desire company.

This was even the case with Adam, the first man. The Bible book of Genesis says that Adam was placed in an environment that met his basic needs. There was plenty of food to eat, fresh air to breathe, a sparkling river to bathe in, interesting work to do, and, above all, the enjoyment of a close relationship with his Creator. Yet, Jehovah God said: "It is not good for the man to continue by himself." Adam needed someone like himself to communicate with and share his feelings. God fulfilled that need by giving him Eve. (Genesis 2:18-23) Yes, the need for companionship is built into our makeup. But does that mean that being alone always leads to feeling lonely?

Alone But Not Lonely

Essayist Henry David Thoreau wrote: "I never found the companion that was so companionable as solitude." Do you agree? "Yes," says Bill, age 20. "I like nature. Sometimes I get in my little boat and go out on a lake. I sit there for hours all alone. It gives me time to reflect on what I'm doing with my life. It's really great." Adds 16-year-old Rafael: "There are three other kids in my family. There is always commotion in the house. I have a four-year-old brother; he acts crazy. Sometimes all I want is to be by myself."

An English poet further remarked: "Solitude is the audience-chamber of God." Twenty-one-year-old Steven agrees. "I live in a big apartment building," he says, "and sometimes I go to the roof of the building just to be alone. I get some thinking done and pray. It's refreshing." Yes, if used well, moments of solitude can give us deep satisfaction. Jesus, too, enjoyed such moments: "Early in the morning, while it was still dark, [Jesus] rose up and went outside and left for a lonely place, and there he began praying." (Mark 1:35) Yet, why were individuals such as Thoreau or Jesus not lonely even though they were alone?

First, because they were alone by choice. And second, they were alone for only a short period of time. Jehovah did not say, 'It is not good for man to be momentarily by himself.' Rather, God said that it was not good for man "to continue by himself." Prolonged periods of isolation may lead to loneliness. Thus, the Bible warns: "One isolating himself will seek his own selfish longing; against all practical wisdom he will break forth."—Proverbs 18:1.

Temporary Loneliness

At times, though, being alone is not by choice. Then it can really hurt. Such loneliness is often imposed on us by circumstances beyond our control, like moving to a new location, away from close friends.

Recalls Steven: "Back home James and I were friends, closer than brothers. When I moved away, I knew I was going to miss him." Steven pauses, as if reliving the moment of departure. "When I had to board the plane, I got choked up. We hugged, and I left. I felt that something precious was gone."

How did Steven make out in his new environment? "It was rough," he says. "I had a difficult time learning a new job. Back home my friends liked me, but here some of the folks I worked with made me feel as if I were no good. I remember looking at the clock

and counting back four hours (that was the time difference) and thinking what James and I could be doing right now. I felt lonely."

When things are not going well, we often dwell on better times that we had in the past. However, the Bible says: "Do not say: 'Why has it happened that the former days proved to be better than these?'" (Ecclesiastes 7:10) Why this advice?

For one thing, circumstances can change for the better. That is why researchers often speak of "temporary loneliness." Steven could thus overcome his loneliness. How? "Talking about my feelings with someone who cares helped. You cannot live on in the past. I forced myself to meet other people, show interest in them. It worked; I found new friends." And what about James? "I was wrong. Moving away did not end our friendship. The other day I called him. We talked and talked for one hour and 15 minutes —long distance!"

Thirteen-year-old Peter is in another situation that may cause loneliness. He lives in a one-parent family. Says Peter: 'I come home from school and stay all alone. I've got nobody to talk to. When my mother comes home from work, it's just as bad. She's tired and she goes to sleep.'

Eighteen-year-old Nancy also lives in a one-parent home. In addition, she has to cope with attending a new school. But Nancy is not lonely. She set out to meet new friends. "It helped me get myself together," she says. Loneliness disappeared. It was temporary.

Sometimes, though, loneliness is the result of tragedy. "Derek had been my buddy in Florida ever since we were 11 years old," relates Bill. "We used to go to the mall, eat pizza, and play football together." What happened? "I got a call one Sunday night," Bill continues. "Derek had drowned. It was too hard to accept. After that, there were moments I felt so lonely that I dialed Derek's phone number. The phone kept ringing, and then I thought, 'Wait a minute, Derek is not there anymore.' I could not grasp it. When you're 17, you're just too young to die."

The Bible tells of a woman named Naomi who similarly experienced tragedy. Her husband and her two sons died one after another. When she returned to her homeland as a widow, she said: "I was full when I went, and it is empty-handed that Jehovah has made me return."—Ruth 1:21.

Although the sorrow of losing a loved one may never fully disappear, loneliness can fade with the passing of time and the developing of new relationships. In the case of Naomi, changed circumstances and the forming of new relationships helped to 'restore her soul.' (Ruth 4:13-15) One can also immerse oneself in doing things for other people. Jesus said: "There is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving."—Acts 20:35.

But what if your loneliness persists? Then you may suffer chronic loneliness. What is that, and how can you overcome it? A future issue of *Awake!* will answer.

In Our Next Issue

- *Will You Heed Warnings of Imminent Disaster?*
- *The Pope's Visit to Australia —Just a Pilgrimage?*
- *Do Women Belong in the Pulpit?*

My Life With Hemophilia

I WAS born in St. Petersburg, Florida, in 1949. About six months later my parents became concerned after my uncle had picked me up, tossed me into the air, and caught me. To everyone's surprise, I got little bruises along my rib cage where his fingers and hands grabbed me as I came down.

My parents took me to the doctor to find out what was wrong. Tests revealed that I had hemophilia, which is a deficiency in the blood-clotting cycle. The most severe deficiency is the one I have, the classical A-type. I lack what is called Factor 8, which is the clotting factor that binds all the other factors together to make a good strong clot. In my case, my blood makes a good clot, but it is fragile. It breaks apart easily; often the mere pressure of blood flowing through the wound destroys the clot that starts to build up. Prolonged bleeding is the result.

At times I was confined to a wheelchair

Constant Bruising

As a child, the simplest things would cause a bruise. Once I sat down on my alphabet blocks, and the corresponding bruise carried the letter from the block! I can remember waking up in the middle of the night with severe pains caused by bleeding in my joints or abdominal organs. Finally, at the age of six, my doctor felt that it was necessary for me to have a transfusion of whole blood to stop a bleeding incident. That was the first of over 900 transfusions I received in my life.

Most of my problems have been from internal bleeding. I really haven't had that many external cuts that caused a problem. However, there was a crisis one day when my mother left me alone in the car for a few minutes while she stepped into a store. She had earlier purchased a package of double-edged razor blades and some groceries. Well, sitting in the car, I decided to find out why they are called *double-edged*. There was quite a stir when I ran into the store with both forefingers dripping blood!

My Second Home—The Hospital

For many years I spent much time in my home away from home—the hospital—receiving transfusions to stop bleeding episodes. Progress has been slow in changing this procedure. Yet, the medical community has learned to separate blood down to its different components. So now

instead of whole blood, one small factor of blood may be utilized to treat hemophilia.* This enables the doctors to reduce the volume of transfused material, thereby not giving the individual a lot of material that he really doesn't need.

While in grade school, I was not allowed to participate in recess activities. Since I couldn't play with the other kids, I often played with just the teacher. When I was in third grade, a teacher rolled a ball to me, and when I kicked it back to her, my ankle began to hemorrhage. I spent the next six weeks in a wheelchair.

On another occasion a hemorrhage in my knee put me in a wheelchair for almost three years with full hip-to-heel braces. It was a very traumatic time in my life. When I was able to walk, I had to wear full leg braces. But after a while the braces actually put more strain on my knees than when I didn't wear them. After three years I had had enough. I took the braces off and proceeded to go without them—in typical teenage fashion!

I still continued to have hemorrhages in various joints of my body—elbows, fingers, knees, ankles, and wrists. Treatment for these problems meant going to the hospital, where I gradually got to know the entire hospital staff on a first-name basis. Most were very kind and understanding. The especially trying hours were late at night, after everyone else went to sleep and there was nothing left to watch on television. I was left alone with my pain.

College and Marriage

After high school my parents made arrangements for me to go to college, which was difficult for them because of the financial burden of caring for a hemophiliac. However, my grades were good enough for me to qualify for a few small scholarships. So off I went to the University of Miami to study marine biology. I started spending more and more time in the campus infirmary and a local Miami hospital.

The third day at college I met a girl named Leslie. I regretted having to tell her about my hemophilia, for I felt she wouldn't be interested in me because of my problems. Obviously, I didn't know her very well because she felt there was more to me than my problems. Leslie helped me with my studies when I missed class, and in 1968 we were married. We moved off campus, and while Leslie worked, I attended my sophomore year. But things became more and more difficult physically, until I had to drop out of school because of the pain in my knees and shoulders.

After I left school, we moved to Winter Haven, Florida, where our first child, John, was born in 1969. Shortly thereafter we returned to St. Petersburg, where our second son, Kenneth, was born in October 1977. Happily, neither of the boys could inherit hemophilia from me.

A Life-or-Death Decision

After arriving back in St. Petersburg, Leslie and I worked selling cookware. One evening, to demonstrate the cookware, I prepared a dinner for my mother's neighbor who, unknown to me, had just been baptized as one of Jehovah's Witnesses. All her guests for the cookware demonstration were also Witnesses. Thereafter, as I called on her guests to sell them cookware, each of them would talk to me about the Bible. As a result of these conversations, I learned that the Witnesses do not accept blood

* For a discussion of the Scriptural view of accepting this blood factor, please see our companion magazine, *The Watchtower*, the issues of June 15, 1978, pages 30 and 31, and June 1, 1974, pages 351 and 352.

transfusions. I told them that I thought that would be a most difficult course for a hemophiliac.

About a year later a Witness couple called at our home, and I agreed to have them study the Bible with me. As I looked into the Scriptures more closely, I became convinced that I really was learning the truth. But I would have to face an important decision: what to do about the blood issue.

I was still receiving blood transfusions. But how could I possibly give them up, since they were purportedly keeping me alive? If anything happened to me, what would become of my wife and my little son, our first, who was then just one and a half years old? Where would they go? Who would take care of them? In my heart I knew the right thing to do. But all these questions perplexed me for a while.

After my Bible study one evening, I asked the Witness who conducted the study with me: "Do you realize that I will probably die if I stop receiving transfusions?"

"Yes, John, I realize that," he quietly responded.

"Will you take care of my family if I die?"

He promised that he would see to it that they were taken care of if because of keeping integrity to Jehovah on the blood issue I were to die. However, he stressed that I should know exactly what I was doing and make sure that when I made a dedication to Jehovah I meant it and would stick to it.

One night I was on my way to get a transfusion when I realized that I still had not yet proved my integrity to Jehovah. I drove back home. Thus, November 6, 1970, was the last time I accepted a transfusion, and to this date in 1987 I have gone without any transfusions! I was baptized as one of Jehovah's Witnesses in July 1971, and my wife Leslie was baptized in March 1972.

Ready for a day in the field ministry

Six Months to Live?

The original estimate was that I would only live about six months, since I would surely have a serious problem and the doctors would not be able to stop the bleeding. How happy I am that they were wrong!

Within six months of taking my stand, though, my faith was put to the test. I had a particularly painful experience with a shoulder hemorrhage. My old hospital refused to treat me unless I agreed to let them give me a transfusion if necessary. I refused. With the help of local Witnesses, I found a hospital and staff willing to respect my wishes.

When I stopped getting transfusions, my wife and I started a treatment plan of our own: elastic bandages; ice packs; immobilization; bed rest when necessary; pain medication; and when the pain was too

With my wife and two sons

severe to handle, temporary hospitalization. This has worked reasonably well over the years. Oh, there has been continued deterioration of the joints that are subject to frequent hemorrhages, my knees and shoulders in particular.

"Someone Up There Must Like You!"

About the middle of 1978, I had what proved to be one of the most trying experiences of my life. I developed a hemorrhage in a kidney. Of course, the older I get, the more severe these things can be and, without transfusions, even more serious. Naturally, you can't wrap a kidney in an elastic bandage or immobilize it from performing its normal functions. The prognosis was not good.

Normal red blood cell (hemoglobin) count is between 14 and 16, and usually I am about 16. But during the next two weeks my count dropped below five! As the next few days passed, the doctors urged me to consider the possible consequences of not taking blood. If I waited too long, they were sure I would die.

For obvious reasons, I have been very close to the medical profession all my life. I have grown to appreciate that most of them are well-meaning. They don't want to lose a life if they think they can save it. It was hard for them to understand my position on the blood issue.

While I was in the hospital, I received a letter informing me that I had been assigned my first part on the next circuit assembly of Jehovah's Witnesses. How my spirits soared! Within 24 hours my hemoglobin count leveled off. This was the first indication that the bleeding had stopped. Then the doctor came back and told me: "In about a week or ten days, when your hemoglobin count gets up to ten, we will send you home." Well, within three or four days it was high enough for me to go home.

Over the next few weeks, on follow-up visits, the doctor mentioned that he had learned a new way to treat hemophiliacs —"to wait." He added: "Someone up there must like you!"

Since that time—except for the occasion in 1981 when I was laid up for six weeks with a hemorrhage in my right knee—my health has remained fairly constant. I do continue to have bleeding episodes that confine me to bed for several days or even weeks, but these pass, and I am able to resume most activities.

With my beloved wife and two sons, I look forward to many more years to come. But whatever happens, I feel certain that I have done what any Christian must do —obey Jehovah whether it seems to be the easy thing to do or not. Some day medical science may develop an artificial clotting factor. But my real hope is in Jehovah's righteous new system wherein all will enjoy perfect health. (Isaiah 33:24; Revelation 21:3, 4)—*As told by John A. Wortendyke.*

Reading Aloud Makes Learning Enjoyable

"NEXT to hugging your child," says Jim Trelease, author of *The Read-Aloud Handbook,* give your child "a piece of your mind and a piece of your time."

How? By reading aloud to him early in his life and often, recommends Trelease. The experience and benefits you and your child will receive are long lasting. In what ways? Not only will such reading bring back memories of treasured moments long after the child has grown up but it will help your child to become a better reader and learner too. Your child will also develop his visual skills because he will be learning to focus his attention on a picture. For example, at 18 months a child can already identify a picture of a puppy, and he can understand the word long before he can read it. In addition, not only will the reading, writing, speaking, listening, and imagining skills of your child improve but his attitude toward becoming a good reader will also improve—he will enjoy reading.

"Where will I find the time or the energy to read aloud to my children?" is the often heard cry of harried parents.

Jim Trelease observes: "The father who says he is too tired to read to his kids uses the same two eyes to watch a lot of television."

To make an about-face in this attitude, author Trelease shares these hints with future parent-readers:

1. *Read the right books.* Most children do not like books that preach to them. But they do enjoy stories with conflict or problems to overcome. Make sure, however, that the child is emotionally ready for the book by previewing it yourself.

2. *Pick the best time.* Reading to your child early in the morning, when he is all wound up, is probably not the best time. Some read to their child while he is confined in a high chair or eating a snack. A natural favorite is bedtime. The child then has a longer attention span.

3. *Meet the challenge.* There is no harm in reading a book with a vocabulary beyond the child's understanding. A parent can give a simple definition of a word, paraphrase, or even skip the difficult parts.

4. *Use your reading skills.* Reading aloud calls for good breathing and pacing. If you have doubts about your performance, tape-record a story, play it back, and then rate your own reading skills.

5. *Watch the attention span.* True, a good story will capture your child's interest, but realize that he may not give his full attention to the story. Still, he will learn something from it.

6. *Be patient.* Like some adults who enjoy seeing the same movie over and over, children want to hear their favorite story read again and again because they discover new meanings each time. So instead of taking away a favorite book, simply add a new story.

Phones on Wheels —How Do They Work?

IMAGINE being able to place a telephone call to anywhere in the world—Hong Kong, Paris, Melbourne—not while you are at home but while you are traveling down the road in your car! The telecommunications business wants to make a telephone in the car as much an everyday item as the telephone is in many homes today.

Although mobile telephones are not new, three factors have suddenly increased their popularity. For one, competition in the telecommunications industry has driven down the cost of mobile telephone service to a point where more people can afford it.

Also, breakup of the telecommunications monopolies, such as in the United States, and government deregulation have freed local telephone companies to seek new ways for their customers to use phone services more often. One of these ways is to encourage telephones in cars so that calls can be made from previously impractical locations. Telephone companies reason, 'If a call is easy and convenient to make, more will be made, and so more income for us.'

A third factor is technology itself, which advances at breakneck speed today. One of technology's key products is the computer, and computers have become the heart of cellular, or mobile, telephone service.

What Is It?

A mobile telephone is simply a two-way radio in the shape of a telephone. In the early days, mobile phones did not even have dials, and if you wanted to telephone someone, you had to wait for a mobile operator to place the call for you. In addition, the limited number of two-way radio channels restricted how many callers could be using their mobile telephones at the same time. Further, the telephone company providing mobile service usually had only one antenna for sending and receiving calls to vehicles all over the city. Therefore, if you were too far away from the central antenna, you could not use your car telephone.

Why are the modern mobile phones called cellular? They are still two-way radios—now with dials or push buttons—but what makes these mobile phones different from past ones is that there are many more antenna sites. Since each area covered by an antenna is called a cell, the name cellular is used.

Besides, there are more antenna sites for cellular mobile phones, so each antenna can operate on many channels, or frequencies, and can cover a hundred square miles (260 sq km). What does all of this mean to you if you have a mobile phone? Usually, you will not have to wait to place your call because each cell can accommodate as many as 40 or 50 simultaneous mobile telephone calls over a much greater area.

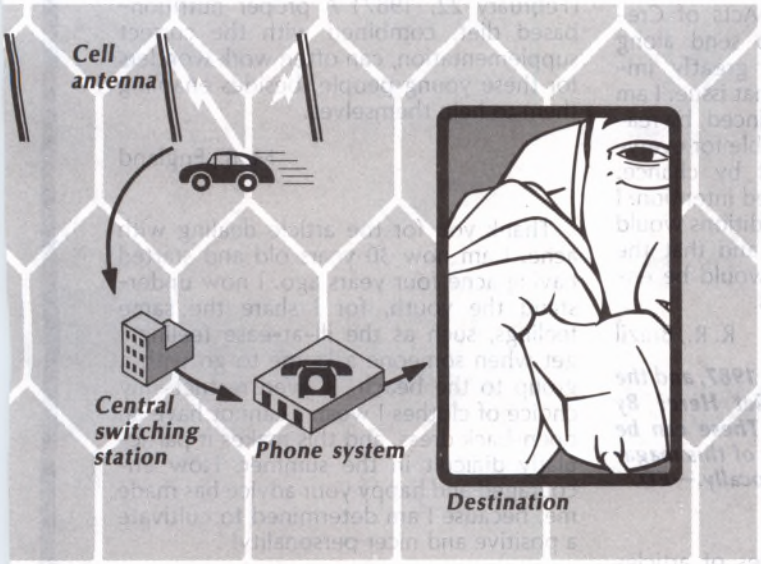
How Does It Work?

When you pick up your cellular telephone to make a call, a signal is sent out and picked up by the nearest cell-site antenna, which relays your request to the cellular-telephone switching office. A computer at the office recognizes your approximate location and assigns your telephone call to a two-way radio channel in that cell site, which will receive your voice and transmit the voice of the called party to you. Switching between transmitting and receiving is automatic, so the effect is much like talking from your home telephone.

What happens if you drive out of the range of your cell antenna while on call? Well, the computer in the central switching office keeps track of your radio signal while you are on the telephone. If your signal gets weak because of your location, the computer will automatically assign your telephone to another channel in a new cell site closer to your present location. It is all done automatically—in about a quarter of a second—so you can keep talking, almost without noticing the change, or handoff, as it is called.

Cellular telephones are not limited to cars. Some country clubs have cellular telephones in their golf carts, so that busy executives are never very far from work. Phones are also showing up in city buses, taxicabs, and ferryboats. Companies are already marketing portable phones that can be carried in briefcases, so that calls can be made and received while you are walking down the street.

Cellular telephones are popular now throughout Europe, North America, and in industrialized nations around the globe. The more mobile a society becomes, the more people on the move are going to want to keep in touch with friends and business contacts. Hence, we are likely to see even more uses for phones on wheels.



The area covered by one antenna is a cell. Your call is received by the cell antenna and routed by the central switching station through the local phone system

From Our Readers

Just a Crush?

I wish to express my gratitude for what you wrote in the articles under "Young People Ask . . . ": "Who Says It's Just a Crush?" and "How Can I Get Over a Crush?" (January 8 and January 22, 1987) I have had this problem for several years, being "in love" with a girl who is older than I am. Many had tried to persuade me to forget her but without results. After reading the two articles and realizing that somebody really did understand me and could offer me good suggestions, I have finally decided to leave things as they are and go back to leading a normal life.

G. T., Italy

Evolution or Creation?

I have served for 20 years as a university professor in physics and chemistry. After reading your September 22, 1981, issue on "Accidents of Evolution or Acts of Creation?" I feel compelled to send along some observations. I was greatly impressed and enthused with that issue. I am getting more and more convinced, by reason, that it would be impossible for everything to have come about by chance. There has to be a well-defined intention. I wish that *Awake!* in future editions would consider this subject again and that the introduction of this aspect would be encouraged in Brazilian schools.

R. R., Brazil

See our issue of January 22, 1987, and the book "Life—How Did It Get Here? By Evolution or by Creation?" These can be obtained from the publishers of this magazine or Jehovah's Witnesses locally.—ED.

The World Since 1914

I particularly like the series of articles entitled "The World Since 1914." (March 8 through June 22, 1987) There is so much history and detail showing the rapid change that has taken place on the world's scene leading up to the "great tribulation." (Matthew 24:21) Without this kind of information, we would be truly lost. The secular mode of this world is indeed anti-God and can only end in destruction. I really do appreciate the fine material that helps all thinking people to come to realize that man has to look to Jehovah for salvation and accept his provisions for everlasting life.

P. H., England

About Acne

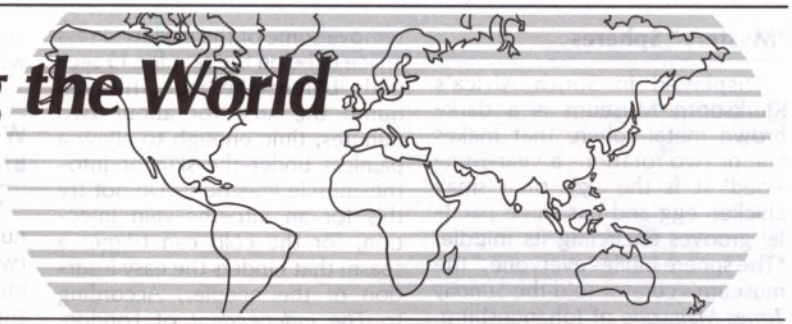
I am writing to you regarding your very negative article "Young People Ask . . . Can't I Do Something About My Acne?" (February 22, 1987) A proper nutrition-based diet, combined with the correct supplementation, can often work wonders for these young people, besides enabling them to help themselves.

M. B., England

Thank you for the article dealing with acne. I am now 30 years old and started having acne four years ago. I now understand the youth, for I share the same feelings, such as the ill-at-ease feeling I get when someone asks me to go with a group to the beach. It even restricts my choice of clothes I wear. I cannot have an open-back dress, and this makes it particularly difficult in the summer. How encouraged and happy your advice has made me, because I am determined to cultivate a positive and nicer personality!

L. L., Canada

Watching the World



AIDS Prediction

By the end of this century, the United States will have more than a million victims of the usually fatal disease AIDS, say scientists interviewed by Louis Harris and Associates. The survey was conducted among scientists specializing in biotechnology, cancer, and infectious diseases. Only 28 percent of them believed that "an effective cure for AIDS" would be available before the year 2000. Thus far, AIDS has infected about 32,000 people in the United States, more than half of whom have already died.

Alarming Odds

The U.S. Justice Department has calculated for the first time an individual's chance of becoming a victim of violent crime in his or her lifetime. The ten-year survey of over a hundred thousand people 12 years and older, according to *The New York Times,* showed that 83 percent "will be victims or intended victims of violent crimes at least once in their lifetimes" and that 52 percent will be victims more than once.

Imitation Intimidation

A Melbourne, Australia, man has invented and built a robot dog, complete with the intimidating bark of an Alsatian. According to the *West Australian* newspaper, the inventor believes that his device will appeal to people living alone. The electronic watchdog has a radar system that can pick up movement within a range of 16 feet (5 m) and has recorded barks that become progressively more frequent and fierce as an intruder gets closer. The annual cost of keeping the 12-volt-battery-operated mechanical "poodle"? About $84 (Australian)—roughly the cost of a year's supply of dog food.

Endangered Soup

For centuries a delicacy throughout the Chinese world,

bird's-nest soup is now endangered, claim some fanciers. The treasured nests are becoming increasingly scarce, and the price for top-quality nests has risen to $1,000 a pound, reports *The New York Times.* Why the scarcity? The birds' habitat has been developed into towns or farmland, causing a reduction in the number of birds, notes one authority. Pollution has also been eroding their cliff dwellings, and aggressive nest harvesters have been "snatching nests as soon as they are built, or grabbing nests that have eggs in them." Youths as well as monkeys have been trained to scale the rocky cliffs to retrieve the nests. The nests come mostly from Indonesia, Thailand, Vietnam, China, or Malaysia. They are made from bird's saliva that hardens into cementlike threads. The soup ranges in price from $14 to $38 a bowl.

"Fountain of Youth"

Moderate exercise—even for those in their 80's—reverses many of the effects of aging, claim leading researchers at the University of Toronto. "You'd have to go a long way to find something as good as exercise as a fountain of youth," said Dr. Roy J. Shephard, a member of the research team, reports *The New York Times.* "And you don't have to run marathons to reap the benefits. For the average older person who does little more than rapid walking for 30 minutes at a time three or four times a week, it can provide 10 years of rejuvenation." Benefits include improved heart and respiratory function, lower blood pressure, increased muscle strength, denser bones, and clearer thinking.

"Mystery" Spheres

Displayed in South Africa's Klerksdorp Museum is a dark-brown metal sphere that makes one or two rotations a year—unaided! It is the size of a small chicken egg and has three parallel grooves encircling its middle. "The sphere baffles everyone," the museum's curator told the *Sunday Times Magazine* of Johannesburg. "It looks man-made, like a casting." The sphere, along with hundreds of similar ones, was found at South Africa's Wonderstone Mine. One examiner's opinion is that it gives evidence of a higher civilization, "which existed pre-flood." According to the curator, however, how these spheres were formed remains "a complete mystery."

Sensitive Penguins

Smog alarm was sounded several times in West Berlin during the month of January. The local zoo, however, claims to have a better early warning system than the 31 smog gauges used by the city—its penguins. Whenever these Antarctic birds start to breathe heavily, the zookeepers know that the smog level is high and that it is time to put the birds into their air-conditioned vivarium. The penguin's sensitivity to air pollution is not surprising, says the German newspaper *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, since in the bird's homeland, the South Pole region, the "air is almost germfree and absolutely clean" by comparison.

Painless Injections

Do you dread the pain of an injection? Neurophysiologist Harold Hillman of Surrey University, England, offers a practical tip to remove some of the anxiety. Press an ice cube on the skin for 15 seconds before the jab. This will numb the area for about two minutes, time enough to allow a painless under-the-skin or into-the-muscle injection. (Do not try this for an into-the-vein injection, for the cold can trigger a spasm that hinders the easy insertion of the needle.) According to *The Independent* of London, Dr. Hillman first discovered the icy painkiller when helping an eight-year-old diabetic girl face the anguish of repeated injections.

Fat Babies—Fat Adults?

Parents who overfeed their infant children make certain that they will become fat adults,

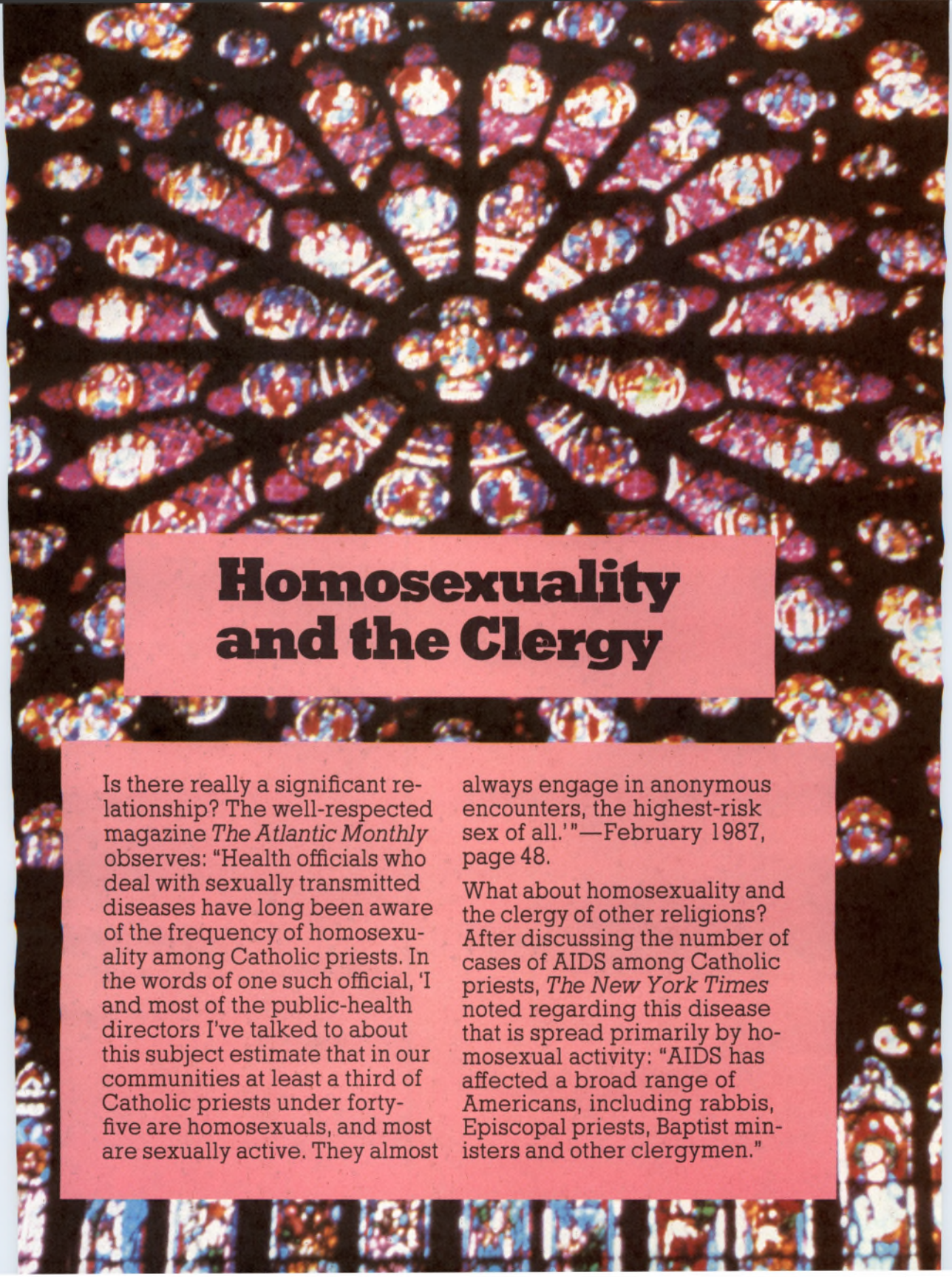
claims Douglas S. Lewis, a scientist of the Southwest Foundation for Biomedical Research in San Antonio, Texas. In his report to the American Heart Association, he showed that such obesity does not, however, manifest itself immediately. He based his remarks on the results of a five-year experiment with baboons that were overfed the first four months of their lives—the equivalent of one year for humans. Compared with the ones fed normally, as well as those underfed, these baboons began gaining weight in their third and fourth years. By the time they reached the end of puberty, namely at five years of age, the baboons were 39 percent overweight!

Working Mothers Who Breast-Feed

Working mothers who can nurse their babies only once or twice a day need not worry about risking loss of their milk supply, reports the *Journal of Obstetric, Gynecologic, and Neonatal Nursing*. Frequent feedings are not needed to maintain milk production. In fact, since working mothers tend to wean their infants early, minimal breast-feeding has a positive effect on the mother-baby relationship. The report did admit, though, that it is not known if the breast-milk composition changes because of infrequent feeding or if the baby gets the same amount of disease-protection as do those who are nursed more often.

More Births—Fewer Marriages

On January 1, 1987, France registered a population of 55,506,000. The French Catholic daily *La Croix* mentions a slight upturn in the birthrate. It adds: "The number of legitimate births, however, is still on the decline, and the overall rise is entirely due to the increase in births out of wedlock. These represented nearly 20 percent of all births in 1985." According to the latest figures published by INSEE (French National Institute of Statistics and Demographic Studies), there has been a drop in the number of marriages (266,000 marriages in 1986) and a rise in the divorce rate. The number of divorces has tripled in 20 years.



Homosexuality and the Clergy

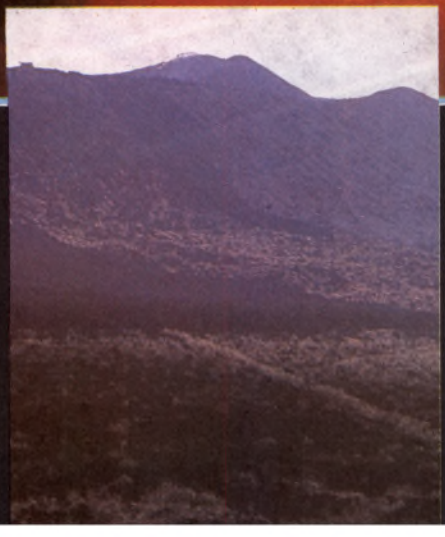
Is there really a significant relationship? The well-respected magazine *The Atlantic Monthly* observes: "Health officials who deal with sexually transmitted diseases have long been aware of the frequency of homosexuality among Catholic priests. In the words of one such official, 'I and most of the public-health directors I've talked to about this subject estimate that in our communities at least a third of Catholic priests under forty-five are homosexuals, and most are sexually active. They almost always engage in anonymous encounters, the highest-risk sex of all.'"—February 1987, page 48.

What about homosexuality and the clergy of other religions? After discussing the number of cases of AIDS among Catholic priests, *The New York Times* noted regarding this disease that is spread primarily by homosexual activity: "AIDS has affected a broad range of Americans, including rabbis, Episcopal priests, Baptist ministers and other clergymen."

Awake!

July 8, 1987

DO YOU HEED WARNINGS?



In November 1986, Mount Mihara on the island of Izu-Oshima, Japan, suddenly erupted, threatening the whole island along with its population of ten thousand islanders and tourists. When the announcement, "Evacuate now!" came, how did they react?

Read the following articles, and think about how you might have reacted under the various circumstances discussed.

Heeding a Warning May Save Your Life

A WARNING might be a traffic sign stating "Slow," "Caution," or "Yield"; or it might be a flashing yellow light. It might be found on a container of medicine or poison. Heeding such warnings is no great inconvenience, and it may save your life.

However, in some cases it may mean a disrupting of plans or a loss of material possessions. Storm and hurricane warnings may require fishermen to return to shore or to stay in port and not work that day. Warnings may mean not only a disrupting of plans but an abandoning of home and possessions, or the putting up with the inconvenience of temporary shelters. Sometimes such warnings go unheeded, with resultant loss of life.

For example, in the spring of the year 1902, all things were going well on the beautiful Caribbean island of Martinique. Then warnings of disaster began to appear as Mount Pelée, a volcanic mountain located about five miles (8 km) from St. Pierre, the island's principal city, became active. Eventually, as smoke, ash, and bits of rock belched forth along with acrid fumes, townspeople became apprehensive. Conditions continued to worsen, and it should have been evident that real danger was imminent.

Unheeded Warnings

Because the sugarcane harvest was approaching, St. Pierre's businessmen assured the people that there was no danger. The politicians, concerned with the upcoming election, did not want the people to be fleeing, so they spoke in a similar vein. The religious leaders cooperated by telling their parishioners that all was well. Then, on May 8, Mount Pelée exploded with a tremendous roar. Superheated black clouds raced toward St. Pierre, and some 30,000 people died.

For many generations Mount St. Helens, located in the state of Washington, U.S.A., was a picture of peace and serenity. The area was filled with a great variety of wildlife and was ideal for hiking and fishing. But then in March 1980, danger signals came in the form of numerous earthquakes and minor eruptions of steam. By early May the mountain was acting up with greater intensity. Local and state officials began to issue warnings of danger to those in the area of the volcano.

Still, a number of people remained in the area, while others ignored signs warning against crossing into the danger area. Suddenly, early Sunday morning, May 18, there was a tremendous explosion that blew off some 1,300 feet (400 m) of the mountaintop and rained down destruction on plants and animals, as well as on some 60 humans who had failed to heed the warnings given.

In contrast, in November 1986, Mount Mihara on the island of Izu-Oshima, Japan, suddenly erupted, threatening the whole island along with its population of ten thousand islanders and tourists. When the announcement, "Evacuate now!" came, they heeded the warning. The following articles from *Awake!* correspondent in Japan tell the story.

"Evacuate Now!"

Exodus of Ten Thousand People Overnight

By "Awake!" correspondent in Japan

"EVACUATE now! Right away!" Elderly men and women in the Oshima Home for Senior Citizens were told to take refuge in an elementary school because of the eruption of Mount Mihara on November 21, 1986. Though the staff of the home had been prepared to evacuate since the volcano became active a few days earlier, the suddenness of the violent eruption that afternoon did not make it easy for them to flee.

"We could not even think about the stretchers we had prepared," explains Kazuko, a member of the home staff. "We took the elderly in our arms or carried them on our backs to the two buses that the town office had dispatched to the home. These were soon filled, and some people had to be taken by truck to a shelter."

In time the elderly arrived at the port and were put aboard a Maritime Safety Agency's boat in order to evacuate the island. They were among the first ones to leave. The evacuation of more than ten thousand islanders and tourists followed.

Earthquakes and Eruptions

Mount Mihara on the island of Izu-Oshima, usually called Oshima, is one of four active volcanoes under strict surveillance in Japan. It has been known for its mild activities. On November 15, 1986, however, the mountain erupted only two weeks after the Volcano Eruption Predicting Liaison Conference declared the mountain safe. The eruptions from crater number one kept increasing. (See map on page 6.) Lava flowed out of the inner rim of this crater into the volcano's caldera. Then, on the 21st, an unexpected eruption shocked the islanders. A new crater formed. This was followed by eruptions from cracks in the ground shooting up

"Firemen took me by force and made me leave"

fountains of fire more than 330 feet (100 m). New fire fountains shot up as cracks continued to open up on the side of the mountain.

Earthquakes shook people already terrified by the eruptions. Within an hour, altogether 80 earthquakes rocked the island. Overflowing lava from the outer rim of the crater snaked down the mountain and headed for the most populated area of Oshima, Motomachi. The flow toward Motomachi prompted Hidemasa Uemura, the mayor, to order the evacuation of the islanders from Motomachi. At this time, the southern part of the island, the Habu area, was considered safe.

'A Mushroom Cloud Like That of an Atom Bomb Explosion'

"We were having tea," recalls Jiro Nishimura, the only elder in the Izu-Oshima Congregation of Jehovah's Witnesses. "Then, a great explosion shook the air. When I went outside, there was a mushroom cloud above Mount Mihara just like that of an atom bomb explosion. I realized that this was no trivial eruption. I could hear something over the town office's loudspeaker, but since I couldn't hear the announcement clearly, I called the town office. They said that the inhabitants of the Motomachi area were not yet being advised to evacuate. I knew we had to have something to eat, so I asked my wife to cook rice and make rice balls. But even before I finished eating my first rice ball, the evacuation order was issued.

"Five of us, including my wife's mother, who is 90 years old, fled to the Motomachi Port parking lot. People were lined up to board the boat to evacuate the island. The line was long, but since my wife's mother was old and could not walk alone, we were allowed to board an earlier boat bound for Atami."

Awake!® July 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 13

Average Printing: 10,610,000

Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Heeding a Warning May Save Your Life ... 3
"Evacuate Now!" ... 4
Homeless—But Alive! ... 7
Will You Heed Warnings of Imminent Disaster? ... 9

Also in This Issue

The Pope's Visit to Australia—Just a Pilgrimage? ... 12
Singapore's World of Birds ... 16
Young People Ask ... How Can I Serve God if My Parents Oppose Me? ... 18
1987—Year of the Homeless ... 21
The Bible's Viewpoint Do Women Belong in the Pulpit? ... 22
A Little Light on Your Subject ... 24
Disasters—A Time for Acts of Love ... 26
From Our Readers ... 28
Watching the World ... 29
"One Thing Technology Can't Improve" ... 31

Page 2 photo: K. Abe, Earthquake Research Institute, Tokyo. All rights reserved

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

For some, it was not easy to leave the island to which they have strong attachment. Kichijiro Okamura, 84 years old, an acupuncturist at the Oshima Home for Senior Citizens, has lived on Oshima for 40 years. Okamura relates his feelings: "The earthquakes were very bad, but I thought it was all right and wanted to see how things would go for a few days. I am used to eruptions and earthquakes. I did not worry too much because I knew it would eventually subside. But firemen took me by force and made me leave. I had to give in." He left with his wife Yoshie, their two daughters, and four grandchildren.

Evacuation Order for the Whole Island

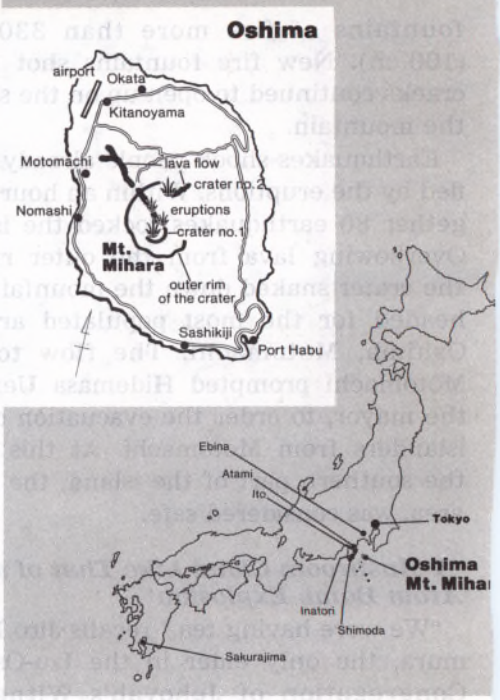
At first, the lava flow threatened only the northern part of the island. Some who lived in the Motomachi area were transported to the Habu area. The inhabitants of the southern part of the island were merely advised to gather at gymnasiums or schools.

"I had but two blankets and this bag," says Kaoko Hirakawa, who took refuge in the Nomashi gymnasium at 5:00 p.m. "I thought it would only be overnight." Her husband Rinzo thought about his sick parents, who lived near the new crater. Worried, they got into a car to pick up his parents. "The earthquakes were tremendous," relates Rinzo. "It was just like being in a boat. As soon as we got my parents into the car, the ground only a few kilometers away from my parents' home erupted." They managed to reach the Nomashi gymnasium, but later they were told to move to Habu.

At 10:50 p.m. the town mayor ordered the whole island to be evacuated. "We took refuge at the Third Junior High School in Habu," Mrs. Tamaoki relates. "Then we were told to walk to the port. But Port Habu is too shallow for larger boats, so finally we had to take a bus to Motomachi, where we boarded a boat to Tokyo."

The exodus of more than ten thousand islanders and tourists was completed by 5:55 a.m., November 22, with the mayor and officials boarding the last boat for evacuees. The evacuation of Izu-Oshima was completed within five hours after the major eruption. It took place smoothly and orderly for the most part, to the credit of town officials, the shipping company that sent vessels to Oshima for the evacuation, and the willing cooperation of the islanders. With only rare exceptions, they obeyed the evacuation order promptly. Just a few hundred policemen, firemen, and other personnel stayed on the island, as well as a small number who refused to evacuate.

But where did the evacuees settle? Who would take care of them? How did Jehovah's Witnesses on the island fare?



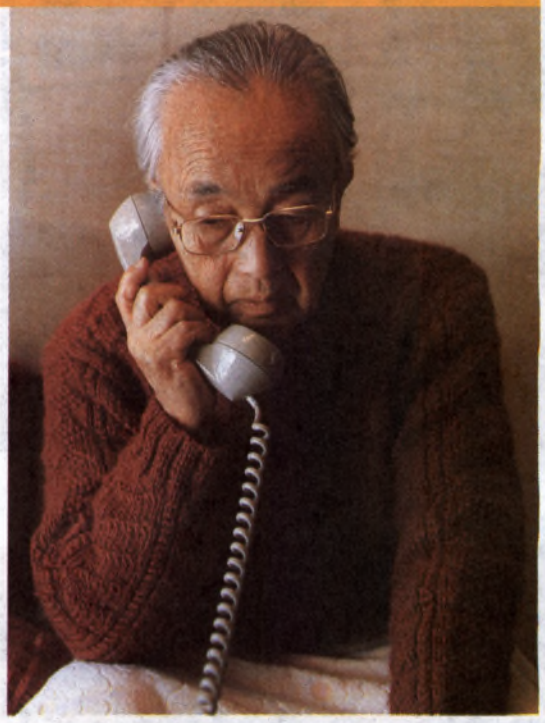
Homeless —But Alive!

By "Awake!" correspondent in Japan

THE first boats carrying evacuees arrived in ports along the Izu Peninsula during the night of November 21. Later it was decided that these people should be sent to Tokyo, since Oshima is under the jurisdiction of the Tokyo metropolitan government. The metropolitan government together with the national government took the initiative in organizing the relief work. Jehovah's Witnesses in both the Izu and the Tokyo areas as well as at the branch headquarters, located in Ebina City only about 50 miles (80 km) from Mount Mihara, also organized relief work.

As news reports of the event interrupted regular television programs, Jehovah's Witnesses living nearby became especially concerned about their spiritual brothers and sisters on the island. Nobumasa Obata of the Ito Congregation and others got in touch with Witnesses in the Izu area and organized activity for the receiving of evacuees. By 6:30 p.m. that day, the Witnesses were at each port on the Izu Peninsula and at Atami, ready to receive their brothers from Oshima.

When Jiro Nishimura and four others arrived at Atami about ten o'clock that evening, the Witnesses in Atami, with *Watchtower* and *Awake!* magazines in their hands, met them. Since the government authorities had not yet decided what to do, the evacuees were allowed to stay with anyone they wished. They headed for



Jiro Nishimura checking the whereabouts of fellow believers*

Yugawara, where Nishimura's son serves as an elder in the local congregation. The apartment in which they settled became a liaison center for the evacuees of the Oshima Congregation.

At 8:00 the next morning, the Branch Committee at the branch headquarters of the Watch Tower Society in Ebina decided to send immediately two branch representatives to the Izu area and two to the Tokyo area to organize relief work.

As the branch representatives discussed relief work with Nishimura, Mitsuo Shiozaki arrived with relief supplies from his congregation in Numazu. Evacuees especially appreciated the clothes he distributed among them, for quite a number of

* This much-loved witness of Jehovah died in February 1987.

Mitsuo Shiozaki distributes relief supplies

Many evacuees slept on cold gymnasium floors

them did not have any clothing other than what they wore when they left their island. They also gratefully accepted the food he had brought along.

Relief committees were designated in Izu and Tokyo to distribute needed funds to members of the Oshima Congregation. Such committees were also to look after the spiritual needs of the evacuees.

Relief Work in Tokyo

At 9:55 p.m. on November 21, after some ships had left with evacuees for cities on the Izu Peninsula, the governor of Tokyo ordered that all evacuees be sent to Tokyo. Yoshio Nakamura, an elder in the Mita Congregation of Jehovah's Witnesses in Tokyo, was asked to organize the relief work there. Nakamura's apartment became the headquarters for relief work in Tokyo.

He asked some from his congregation and some from the Shinagawa Congregation to come with him. Ten of these left Nakamura's at about two o'clock Saturday morning and headed for the piers where the boats from Oshima were scheduled to arrive. The brothers were equipped with signs saying: "Members of the Oshima Congregation of Jehovah's Witnesses, please get in touch with us."

Until the last ship came, they went back and forth between the two piers where the boats arrived. It was then after ten o'clock Saturday morning. Jehovah's Witnesses in the Chuo Congregation also went to another pier where the ships from Oshima arrived. Not knowing which ships would have their fellow believers aboard, the Witnesses in Tokyo tried to meet all the ships that came in to Tokyo.

"Jehovah's Witnesses," recalls Kazuyuki Kawashima, "were the only representatives of a religious group who came to meet their fellow believers at the pier. The only other group that met the evacuees was from the teachers' union."

By Saturday evening, members of the Mita and Shinagawa Congregations had voluntarily assembled clothing and other relief supplies for immediate distribution among their spiritual brothers from Oshi-

ma. The Witnesses loaded these supplies into a van and visited the shelters where the Witness evacuees were accommodated. The Witnesses from Oshima as well as non-Witnesses who were there benefited from the relief supplies.

Encouraged by the Concern of Others

One Witness evacuee related: "When we left Oshima, we ourselves did not know where we were going. As we got off the ship, however, we spotted a sign saying, 'Jehovah's Witnesses.' Imagine how surprised and impressed we were! Tears welled up in my wife's eyes as she was overcome by relief at finding our brothers there to meet us at the pier.

"No sooner had we settled down in the Sports Hall in Koto Ward and telephoned Brother Nakamura than the branch representatives arrived to encourage us. This really impressed us, and we could find no words to express our appreciation."

During the week, the relief-committee members visited all shelters accommodating the Witnesses and checked the needs of their fellow believers. They found that evacuated Witnesses were well taken care of by local congregations. Some Bible students were invited to the homes of local Witnesses for meals every day, and they appreciated such acts of kindness shown to them by Witnesses whom they did not know before this disaster.

This evacuation was successful because appropriate warnings were given and the people heeded them. But all mankind is facing a far greater danger that is coming with great speed. Warning is now being given, showing people how to escape this danger and preserve their lives. Will you heed this warning?

Will You Heed Warnings of Imminent Disaster?

SOME natural disasters cause a disruption in the lives of people; others, great destruction of life and property. Usually, though, such affect only a small part of the earth and its population at any one time. Our present generation, however, is facing a disaster of earth-wide dimensions that will affect all humankind.

No, it is not a nuclear war between the superpowers, although that would be a terrible disaster. Rather, we are speaking of God's expressed purpose to remove all badness from the face of the earth.

The scope of this disaster was expressed by Jesus in his prophecy pertaining to the conclusion of the system of things: "Then there will be great tribulation such as has not occurred since the world's beginning until now, no, nor will occur again. In fact, unless those days were cut short, no flesh would be saved."—Matthew 24:3, 21, 22.

They Saved Their Lives

Jesus compared this worldwide disaster with an earlier world calamity, the Flood of Noah's day, stating: "For just as the days of

By heeding warnings, Lot and his daughters escaped destruction

Noah were, so the presence of the Son of man will be." (Matthew 24:37) The Bible states that in the days before the Flood "the badness of man was abundant in the earth and every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only bad all the time." Jehovah said: "I am going to wipe men whom I have created off the surface of the ground."—Genesis 6:5-8.

As for Noah, we read at Hebrews 11:7: "By faith Noah, after being given divine warning of things not yet beheld, showed godly fear and constructed an ark for the saving of his household." Noah, his wife, and his sons and their wives were all preserved alive through the Flood.

The rest of mankind at that time, however, ignored the warning given. According to Jesus' words, people in those days before the Flood were "eating and drinking, men marrying and women being given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark; and *they took no note* until the flood came and swept them all away."—Matthew 24:38, 39.

In the days of Lot, God determined to bring the inhabitants of Sodom and Gomorrah to ruin because of their gross immorality. Yet, they continued 'eating and drinking, buying and selling, planting and building' as though nothing was about to happen. Though Lot warned his prospective sons-in-law of the danger, 'in their eyes he seemed like a man who was joking.' But God directed fire and sulfur to rain from the skies, destroying all of them. Lot and his daughters obeyed the warning and saved their lives.—Luke 17:28, 29; Genesis 19:12-17, 24.

Warning in Jesus' Day

In Jesus' day the Jewish people had rejected God's Word in favor of their own traditions, and they also rejected God's Son as the Christ, or Messiah. God determined to execute his judgment upon them and their glorious city, Jerusalem, by means of the Roman armies. Jesus gave warning about this and told his disciples how to escape that judgment. He said:

"When you catch sight of the disgusting thing that causes desolation, as spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in a holy place, . . . then let those in Judea begin fleeing to the mountains." And: "When you see Jerusalem surrounded by encamped armies, then know that the desolating of her has drawn near. Then let those in Judea begin fleeing to the mountains, and let those in the midst of her withdraw, and let those in the country places not enter into her; because these are days for meting out justice, that all the things written may be fulfilled." (Matthew 24:15, 16; Luke 21:

20-22) It would be a time for urgent action, a person not even taking time to secure his material possessions. Jesus said: "Let the man on the housetop not come down to take the goods out of his house; and let the man in the field not return to the house to pick up his outer garment."—Matthew 24: 17, 18.

In the year 66 C.E., Jerusalem was surrounded by Roman troops under Cestius Gallus, in fulfillment of Jesus' prophecy. The Romans, who were actually undermining the temple wall and thus standing in the holy place of the Jews, were something disgusting to the Jews. The warning sign was there but no opportunity to flee. Then Cestius Gallus unexpectedly withdrew his troops. Christians began fleeing to the mountains. The majority of the people, however, remained in the city, and other Jews continued to come into it for their religious festivals.

In 70 C.E., when the city was crowded with Passover celebrants, the Roman forces under General Titus returned with a vengeance and laid siege to Jerusalem. In time the walls were breached, the temple and the entire city destroyed, and according to the historian Josephus, 1,100,000 people died, and 97,000 survivors were sold into slavery to Egypt and other lands. This was the lot of those who failed to heed Jesus' warning. Those who fled from the city, as Jesus had commanded, preserved their lives.

Heed the Warning Now

Jesus' prophecy, as recorded in Matthew 24, Mark 13, and Luke 21, was to have a greater fulfillment. Remember, Jesus was also answering the question of his apostles about the sign of his presence, which the Bible associates with the end of a whole world system of things. (Daniel 2:44; Matthew 24:3, 21) Jesus outlined that his return, or presence, which would be invisible, would be marked by a sign that would include wars, food shortages, earthquakes, pestilences, increase of lawlessness, persecution of his disciples, anguish of nations, and men becoming faint out of fear and expectation of the things coming upon the inhabited earth.—Matthew 24:7, 8, 12; Luke 21:10, 11, 25, 26.

Who can deny that the generation since World War I has experienced an increase in all these pangs of distress? So that people would understand the significance of these things, Jesus prophesied: "And this good news of the kingdom will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations; and then the end will come." (Matthew 24:14) Jehovah's Witnesses have zealously preached this good news of the Kingdom in more than 200 lands in some 200 different languages, warning people of the imminent execution of God's judgment. With reference to those who would see the beginning of pangs of distress, which began with World War I, Jesus stated: "This generation will by no means pass away until all these things occur."—Matthew 24:34.

The way to heed Jesus' warning is, not by fleeing to literal mountains or by escaping to some other area of the earth, but by turning to the true God, Jehovah, and learning of his provision for preservation of life. You can do this by contacting those who are giving this warning, Jehovah's Witnesses, letting them study the Bible with you, and associating with them.

If heeding warnings was critical for some ten thousand Japanese who escaped destruction from a volcano, how much more vital it is for us to act now to receive Jehovah's protection from worldwide destruction in this time of the end!

The Pope's Visit to Australia —*Just a Pilgrimage?*

By "Awake!" correspondent in Australia

ON MONDAY, November 24, 1986, an Air New Zealand Boeing 767 aircraft touched down at Canberra, Australia's capital. On board was Pope John Paul II, visiting the world's smallest continent as part of his longest-ever overseas tour.

To greet him were the governor-general and the prime minister of Australia, along with their wives, and, of course, many dignitaries of the Roman Catholic Church, for this was a visit by one who is not just a religious leader but also a head of state.

Formalities over, John Paul directed his opening address to all Australians, not just to Roman Catholics. He began: "To all Australians, people of undoubted goodwill, I come as a friend. . . . I am embracing the entire country: the young and the old, the weak and the strong, those who believe and those whose hearts are weighed down by doubt."

If "those who believe" meant Roman Catholics, the number in Australia is almost 4 million—25 percent of the population. And though Australia has long been considered a secular society, the ratio of practicing Catholics in this land is quite high. In fact, 35 to 38 percent of Australian Catholics regularly attend Mass.

Despite this, however, the Catholic Church in Australia does have its problems. In the 1950's the church was split by a labor dispute, resulting in the development of factions that have become increasingly critical of one another. Also, attendances at Mass are falling, and the ranks of priests are thinning. Additionally, more and more of the Catholic laity are ignoring the church's teachings on contraception, abortion, and divorce.

"Look, Listen, and Then Judge"

The theme chosen for the papal visit was "Christ the way, the truth and the life." This was a fine Scriptural theme, and many looked forward to the pope's shedding some guidance and truth on problems today facing Catholics and Australians in general. Some expected that he might condemn nuclear testing in the Pacific—a problem literally on Australia's doorstep. Others were keen to hear him support Aboriginal land rights or speak on labor disputes and perhaps discuss women's rights.

The tour organizer, Australian Monsignor Brian Walsh, a priest of 30 years' standing, was hopeful that important things would be covered in some of the papal addresses. So he encouraged all, even skeptics, to "look, listen, and then judge."

"Wiping Their Hands on the Papal Face"

Pope John Paul had made more than 30 overseas tours before coming to Australia, and the 60 and more countries he visited saw memorabilia of all descriptions produced to commemorate the occasion and, hopefully, to earn profits for promoters. Australia was no exception. The church

tried to keep a degree of control over such sales in the hope that "nothing in absolute bad taste [would] emerge." But this is always a touchy area. For example, a well-known Catholic nun complained about commemorative tea towels and people "wiping their hands on the papal face." The same nun also said: "Imagine the Sermon on the Mount being delivered, surrounded by souvenir-sellers, hot dog salesmen, TV cameras and Portaloos [portable toilets]."

However, it was not the multitude of medallions, spoons, T-shirts, and posters that drew most comment. It was the overall sponsorship. One sponsor was a brewery that issued cans of beer bearing the papal miter. As Australians are among the heaviest beer drinkers in the world, this venture proved profitable. But it also caused controversy and outspoken criticism.

Another sponsor was an Australian mining company that is well known for rigidly opposing Aboriginal land rights, an issue that the pope was known to support strongly. So it was not surprising that approval for this sponsorship was noted as being unusual. Indeed, some were quite vocal as to why there was need for sponsorship at all. Another nun voiced her objection by saying: "If Jesus came, no one would sponsor Him. He may well attack the whole concept of corporate sponsorship."

Who Footed the Bill?

Although many invitations came from the Catholic Church, it seems the pontiff only visits countries where an invitation is received from the government or the head of state. This meant that for the Australian visit, both federal and state governments shared part of the cost.

Some non-Catholics felt a sense of injustice at being asked to share in footing the bill, especially as some believed that a recent visit by the Archbishop of Canterbury had passed almost unnoticed. More disturbing to others was the fact that the cost was being estimated at 12 times the amount spent on an earlier visit by Queen Elizabeth II.

"If Jesus came, no one would sponsor Him"

Unity—On Whose Terms?

In an effort to bring an ecumenical flavor to the visit, however, the pope spoke to a gathering of representatives of 14 other religious groups in Melbourne and held an interdenominational service there, urging all to put aside their differences and to pray for peace. He visited St. Paul's Anglican Cathedral in Melbourne, said a prayer for peace, and lit a candle symbolizing hoped-for reunification of the Christian churches.

Generally speaking, Australian Protestants were polite and well mannered during the time the pontiff was in the country. But some denominations, such as the Anglicans, Presbyterians, and Baptists, made it clear that they did not accept the pope as the head of all Christians nor the claim that the apostle Peter had been bishop of Rome. They stressed that such claims found no support in Scripture or in church history. On the other hand, the Uniting Church, which has quite a large following in Australia, welcomed the visit, saying that to many people in their church, the pope was in a sense their pope too.

"Perhaps He Needs a New Speech Writer"

Apparently, all the pope's speeches were written in Australia and sent to Rome,

where the pope himself wrote them out in Polish, adding whatever touches he found necessary. Someone else translated them back into English, and an Australian bishop cast an eye on the final product. The pope then practiced the speeches before the current master of pontifical ceremonies, who is an Irishman.

Veteran Vatican correspondents have several times heard much of what the pope has to say in his prepared speeches. Nevertheless, the language nicknamed papalese can be a hard nut to crack, even for experienced reporters. One spokesman from an Italian news agency felt that the pope's speeches were often obscure and too long. An Australian reporter expressed disappointment that the homilies were so bland and full of self-evident truisms. Another journalist, writing in the *Sunday Telegraph* newspaper, said: "His speeches have been conservative, often stating the obvious, and at times obscure. . . . Perhaps he needs a new speech writer . . . If his speeches confuse experienced correspondents they must bewilder the average person seeking enlightenment."

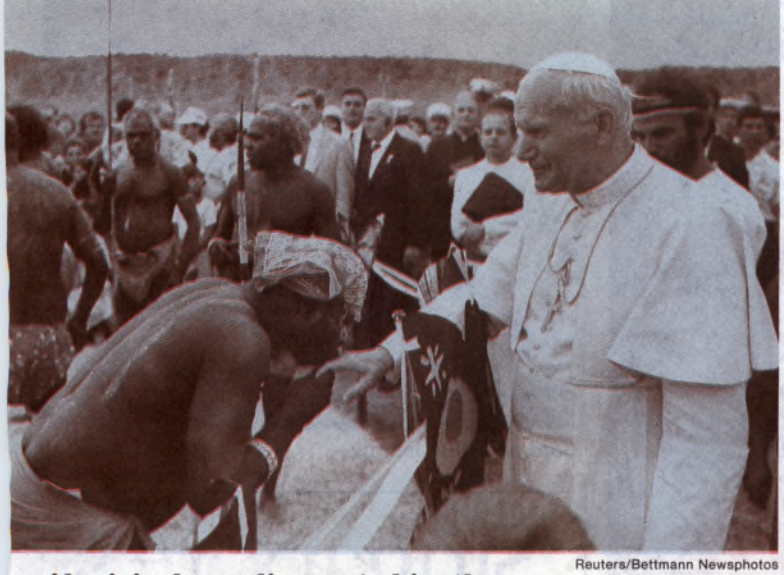
"The Church Opens Her Arms to You"

Despite the confusion claimed by some correspondents, however, the church hoped that the speeches would not bewilder the average person seeking enlightenment. The population had been encouraged 'to come, look, and listen,' and come they did by the thousands. The highest attendance at any one location was an estimated quarter of a million at the Sydney Randwick Racecourse. In his sermon there, John Paul concentrated primarily on those he regarded as lapsed Catholics. With arms opened in a wide gesture, he pleaded: "To all those who have wandered from their spiritual home I wish to say, Come back! The Church opens her arms to you, the Church loves you."

Physically, it was certainly an arduous trip for a person 66 years of age. Altogether, the pope traveled some 6,800 miles (11,000 km) in almost a week and attended more than 50 separate events, including celebration of the Eucharist (Mass) in state capitals, as well as in Darwin and Alice Springs. For many of the faithful, it was an emotional experience. One man in Western Australia commented: "When the Pope arrived [in Perth] it was like Christ's entry into Jerusalem." Another in Melbourne commented about his presence: "He has the body language seen in some Indian mystics." Many cried openly.

Tour organizers were generally satisfied with the large attendances at the gatherings. Most of those who did attend enjoyed the spectacle of a 14-piece rock band, well-trained choirs, the 21-gun salute of welcome, the papal guards, the processions, and the flags. There were even clowns, said to have been arranged "to put smiles on people's faces."

A Catholic priest, who is also a columnist for the Sydney *Sunday Telegraph,* wrote: "So, this is the way the pilgrim Pope is coming to meet the people of Australia: non-Catholics and Catholics in a fast, razzle dazzle, multi-million dollar road show." "The Pope came as a pilgrim with all the extravaganza and razzamatazz of a mega-



Reuters/Bettmann Newsphotos

Aboriginal men line up to kiss the hand of Pope John Paul II

star." A *Sydney Morning Herald* editorial commented on what seemed to be emphasis on the "spectacle" angle: "And here is the gamble that the pilgrim Pope is taking. The spectacle, it seems, is to be the message. . . . The haunting question is: how lasting will the impact be?"

Message for the Australian People

For the thousands who came to listen, what message did the speeches (prepared in Australia) contain?

To the Disabled: Physical limitations can be transformed by Christ's love into something good and beautiful and can make one worthy of the destiny for which one was created.

On Unemployment: The need is for the social order to recognize that humans are more important than things. People must always remember that the worker is more important than profits or machines.

To the Media: They must realize the responsibility they have not only to report on evil but to help eliminate it, the challenge not only to report good deeds but to encourage them.

To Aboriginals: What has been done cannot be undone. Aboriginal reserves still exist today and require a just and proper settlement that still lies unachieved.

John Paul also spoke on the need for peace as the 1986 International Year of Peace drew toward its close. Addressing a crowd of over 30,000 composed predominantly of young people at a Youth Celebration in Sydney, the pontiff said: "If you want peace, work for justice, . . . defend life, . . . proclaim truth, . . . treat others as you would like them to treat you."

In his farewell speech, he urged Australian people to remember who they were and where they were going, telling them that as a nation they were called to greatness. Then, to the background music of the songs "God Bless Australia" and "On the Road to Gundagai," John Paul II climbed the steps to the gleaming white Qantas jet that headed back for Rome via the Seychelles Islands.

Any Lasting Results?

What were the results of the papal visit? The Brisbane *Courier Mail* came to the following thought-provoking conclusion: "It has been a tour with high points and low points, surprises and disappointments. . . . The Australian Catholic Church will need to do some hard thinking. If Pope John Paul II, a man of remarkable charisma, cannot lure Catholics back inside the walls of the church it seems unlikely anything offered by his local bishops will succeed."

Black-crowned night heron

Gold and blue macaw

Singapore's World of Birds

"FIRE the cannon!" At his keeper's command, Sudden Shot, a beautiful blue-fronted Amazon parrot, bends his head. His powerful beak presses the trigger. Instantly a table-tennis-type plastic ball shoots from the metal tube. But it does not have the chance to travel far. Mr. Horn, a well-groomed toucan, is waiting for it. With a deft flick of the head, his extraordinary orange-colored bill opens to pluck the ball from the air with the greatest of ease.

The keeper rewards our feathered duo with seeds readily at hand as the audience in the small amphitheater breaks into spontaneous applause.

Every year, close to three quarters of a million people visit Singapore's Jurong Bird Park, a 50-acre (20 ha) site that has become home to more than 3,000 birds, over 300 species gathered from around the world. What a fascinating, delightful place it is!

Five acres (2 ha) of the park are now "the world's largest enclosed walk-in aviary," as the official guidebook describes it. As we stroll through under the fine mesh draped high above the trees, birds are everywhere. Brilliantly colored parrots chatter noisily as a fairy bluebird quietly flits from tree to tree. A purple gallinule deftly walks across the water lily leaves, its enormous feet giving it perfect balance. Numerous waterfowl splash in a stream fed from a one-hundred-foot high (30 m) artificial waterfall. At the end of the path, we join a group of tourists to admire a proud peacock with tail open in full display.

In complete contrast, all is quiet in the nocturnal house. Rare owls perch motionless as we whisper to each other in the darkened corridors. Black-crowned and nankeen night herons wait patiently in their mangrove-swamp setting. But the rarest birds we had hoped to see, the kiwis, New Zealand's national symbol, remain elusive to us. Then we see the unusual Australian tawny frogmouth unexpectedly staring down at us.

Brown kiwi ▲

Greater flamingo ▼

Out in the open once again, we pass the lake, resplendent with its flock of flamingos, and go on to quieter pathways. We marvel at the birds of prey and move on to watch breathlessly as the hummingbirds so delicately sip nectar from the hibiscus. How is it possible that this, the smallest of birds—some weigh less than an ounce (28 gm)—can beat its wings up to 70 times a *second?* Truly, it is a magnificent marvel of design.

To care for the inhabitants of this Jurong Bird Park is a prodigious task. Correct foods and habitats have to be maintained carefully. Yet, despite Singapore's tropical heat, Humboldt penguins from the cold waters off South America's west coast breed contentedly here, just as the native songbirds do.

Now we are just in time to see Mac the macaw astride his high-wire bicycle. As he pedals across the thatch-roofed stage, the young children shriek with delight. "It took three months to teach Mac to do it," explains Jerry Tan, the park's public-relations man, "and we train between 50 and 60 birds a year." Trainers have to be kind and patient. Birds are rewarded, never punished. "We are still looking for two more bird trainers."

But it is not for us. Soon we must return to our northern clime, to our friendly robin, whose red breast will bring a little color into our garden. Then, how pleasant it will be to recall memories of this glorious pageant.—*Contributed.*

How Can I Serve God if My Parents Oppose Me?

THEY were beaten, subjected to threats and privations, and finally forced to move away from home. The source of this mistreatment? Members of their own family. Such was the experience of Kamal, Chani, and Jaswinder, three young sisters from India living in England. They wanted to become Christians, but their parents —indeed their whole family—bitterly opposed their abandoning traditional religious beliefs.

Perhaps you are in a similar position. Through a study of the Bible, you have cultivated a desire to be one who 'worships the Father with spirit and truth.' (John 4:23) It may be, though, that your parents have become disillusioned with religion or that your newfound faith conflicts with their long-held religious beliefs. Whatever the case, it should not surprise you that family opposition exists. Jesus himself prophesied that true Christianity would often divide families. (Matthew 10:34-37) The question is, Just how should you handle the situation?

Kamal, Chani, and Jaswinder stood firm for the Scriptural principles they were learning. They were able to worship freely only after they moved out on their own from the industrial Midlands to the southern part of England. Likely, however, you are still legally subject to your parents. What, then, can you do, while living at home, to overcome opposition from those

These three young women stayed firm in their Christian faith in spite of family opposition

whom you love? The Bible gives some guiding principles.

Maintain a Respectful Attitude

At 1 Peter 3:15 the Bible encourages us to share our faith "with a mild temper and deep respect." Yet, you may be so enthused about newly learned Bible truths that you tend to be overbearing or pushy about your beliefs, perhaps even making your parents look foolish. No one likes to appear ignorant. So if you are constantly correcting your parents as a result of things you have learned, expect a negative reaction on their part.

Rita, a teenager living in Germany at the time, confesses: "Everything I learned I told my parents right away, in effect telling them that what *they* were believing was not right." But parents have a right to hold personal opinions and beliefs without being criticized—especially by their own children. Admits Rita: "I should have been more respectful toward them and should have acknowledged their own belief in God."

Paul told the young man Timothy that he should "not severely criticize an older man." Would that not also apply at home, with your parents who love you?—1 Timothy 5:1.

Obey Your Parents

"Children, be obedient to your parents," commands the Bible. (Ephesians 6:1) Kay followed this principle. She came in contact with Jehovah's Witnesses when she was just eight years old. "My parents raised us to be tolerant of others," Kay says, "so they permitted me to study the Bible and go to meetings." Even so, Kay had to work hard to make sure that all she said and did reflected well on her faith.

"As I started to associate with Jehovah's people," Kay explains, "I realized that if I was disobedient, not only would my parents not like it but they would not see the truth as a good influence on me. So if I was asked to take out the trash, be home at a certain time, practice the piano, or whatever, I would try to obey as best I could. I would never talk back."

Kay's parents never did come to share her beliefs. Because of her obedience, however, she was able to practice her faith without opposition, becoming a baptized Christian at the age of 19.

Communicate With Your Parents

Said wise King Solomon: "I proved to be a real son to my father, tender and the only one before my mother." (Proverbs 4:3) Yes, the fact that your parents do not share your faith does not make them your enemies. You should still endeavor to be "a real son" or daughter. Try to understand their deep hurt over your pursuing a faith that seems strange to them. At the same time, freely share your feelings and concerns with them. True, because your thoughts are now guided by Bible principles, you may differ with your parents on certain issues.—1 Corinthians 2:14.

A young man named Alan, for example, wanted to spend more time in the Christian ministry. His parents, though, wanted him to continue his college education. Alan recalls: "I guess I was a little bit fearful about confronting my father on such a major decision. So I decided to leave school secretly—and that caused many more problems. I had to work hard afterward to build up our mutual trust, whereas had I explained my plans, even though it may have been tough initially, I think he would have respected me more, and I would have saved both of us a lot of heartache."

But what caused Alan to be so hesitant

about talking with his parents? He confesses: "It is possible to develop a persecution complex when parents block something we might want to do. We may think: 'This is what I learned about! A man against his father; his enemies, persons of his own household!'" (Matthew 10:35, 36) Alan learned the hard way that parents need not be treated as enemies. He now advises: "Communicate! Let them know your feelings. I think most parents will give a listening ear—if they see that sincerity is really there."

Unbelieving parents may at times have difficulty relating to a Christian youth's concerns

While you must be firm for godly principles, "if possible, as far as it depends upon you, be peaceable with all men." (Romans 12:18) By letting your parents know how you really feel about certain matters, confrontations can often be avoided or minimized. Of course, if your parents insist upon your taking a certain course of action, by all means obey them as long as such a course does not conflict with Bible principles. Rather than being inflexible, "let your reasonableness become known."—Philippians 4:5.

Gain the Support of Fellow Christians

"Listen to your father who caused your birth, and do not despise your mother," says Proverbs 23:22. At times, though, your unbelieving parents may have difficulty understanding some of your concerns. A preteenager named John, for example, tried discussing a Bible principle with his father. His father's response? *"I* do not want to be dependent upon a Bible or an organization, so you're on your own!"

But you are not really on your own. Jesus promised the support of spiritual "brothers and sisters" within the Christian congregation. (Mark 10:30) Kay, mentioned earlier, found this to be true in her case. "My Christian brothers and sisters," she recalls, "became like my family." Not that any other person, however beloved, can replace in all respects a natural parent. Yet, within the congregation we can find those who will be dear to us—like fathers and mothers—and who can give us invaluable counsel and advice.—Compare 1 Corinthians 4:15.

Keep a Positive View!

Admittedly, even with the help of the foregoing counsel, you will no doubt find your situation quite difficult. But remember: Both people and circumstances can change! The three Indian sisters mentioned at the outset report: "Because of our steadfastness and respectful attitude, we now enjoy a happy relationship with the entire family." An English girl named Jane similarly writes: "I have had to struggle many times and fight for the truth, but now my parents accept more readily my beliefs as a true Christian, and I look forward to being baptized soon."

In some cases parents, moved by the sterling examples of their own children, have themselves become dedicated servants of Jehovah! So it is possible for you to earn respect for your godly course of action and become an example not just to "the faithful ones" but also to those you dearly love at home. (1 Timothy 4:12) Do not give up in your determination to serve God. Prayerfully follow through on the suggestions made here, and rely upon Jehovah. Assured the psalmist: "Roll upon Jehovah your way, and rely upon him, and he himself will act."—Psalm 37:5.

1987— *Year of the Homeless*

WHEN night falls, thousands of people in Bombay, São Paulo, Mexico City, New York City, and scores of other cities bed down in ducts, under bridges, and on sidewalks. They huddle in cardboard boxes, stretch out on crumpled newspapers, or doze off on bare concrete. The world's one hundred million homeless are "home."

Yet, millions more are homeless in still another sense. They live as squatters in illegal and unsightly shantytowns, slums where oozy streets are the bathrooms and ever-present vultures are the garbage collectors. Their makeshift "homes" are leaky sheds made from gunnysacks, reed mats, hammered-out oil drums, mud, and stones. More than half of all Third World city dwellers live in such abominable conditions.

To focus world attention on the plight of the urban homeless and to improve their living conditions, the United Nations organization has declared 1987 to be the International Year of the Homeless.

"Throughout the world, we have to realize that we cannot get around this problem any longer," says Max van der Stoel, chairman of the Dutch National Committee of the Year of the Homeless. "It is one of the world's most serious problems." And the problem is growing. *NieuwsBrief voor het International Jaar van de Daklozen* (Newsletter for the International Year of the Homeless) estimates that in the coming decade or so, one *billion* more people will add their shacks to the already bulging urban slums—doubling the population of many Third World cities!

What can be done about the problem? Clearing away the shantytowns would only increase the number of homeless people. The UN thus opts, instead, for slum improvement, providing slum areas with basic provisions, such as sanitary facilities. And rather than sending in bulldozers—leaving a trail of pulverized sheds and desperate people—governments could give squatters housing security, perhaps in the form of leasing. The UN further recommends that urban-development funds be drastically increased because, as the newsletter put it, "housing, together with food and clothing, belongs to the most basic human need."

"Sustenance and covering" are indeed basic needs. (1 Timothy 6:8) And God encourages us to perform acts of human kindness to provide relief for those who are lacking, especially for our fellow believers. (1 John 3:17; Galatians 6:10) Nevertheless, God's Word helps us to have a realistic view of mankind's problems. Observed King Solomon: "That which is made crooked cannot be made straight." (Ecclesiastes 1:15) Consequently, projects such as the International Year of the Homeless, though doubtless well intentioned, cannot fully solve man's problems.

Does this leave no hope for the homeless? On the contrary! During the sixth century B.C.E., Jehovah God foretold a "housing project" that would be built in Judah —a land that first would be "a desolate waste, without an inhabitant" for 70 years. (Jeremiah 9:11; 29:4, 5, 10; 32:43) Likewise, today's homeless can be sure that Jehovah will rehabilitate mankind on a worldwide scale. (Isaiah 65:21) How comforting to know, then, that the Year of the Homeless will soon be followed by a millennium that will bring real peace, security, and ample housing!—Revelation 20:4; 21: 3, 4.

Do Women Belong in the Pulpit?

"MOST Christian laymen cannot understand why, if women can be monarchs, prime ministers, judges, surgeons, scientists, they must be prevented from celebrating Holy Communion and marriages," writes Church of England clergyman Nicholas Stacey in *The Times* of London.

Although the Church of England trains women for special service, up till now it has not permitted women to serve as priests to administer its sacraments. Do you agree with the stand of the church, or do you believe that women should be in the pulpit?

Could Split Churches

The issue of women as clergy has become a wedge between members of the same religion. The Church of England could easily split into two separate institutions over the issue, warns Dr. Graham Leonard, Bishop of London, the leading cleric opposing ordination of women.

The issue of women as clergy has become a wedge between members of the same religion

Some people blame prejudice for keeping women out of the pulpit, but more is involved.

For decades, the Church of England has been trying to reconcile its differences with Rome. But in a recent letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury, the pope said that any admission of women to the priesthood would constitute "in the eyes of the Catholic Church, an increasingly serious obstacle to that progress."

One important element, though, has been left out of this debate—the Bible. How did women serve in the early Christian congregation, and what should be their role today?

Equal but Different

At the birth of the Christian congregation in the year 33 C.E., women along with men were recipients of holy spirit. This is exactly as the prophet Joel had foretold centuries earlier, the apostle Peter explained.—Acts 1:13-15; 2:1-4, 13-18.

Later, Peter came to full realization of another important fact: "God is not partial." (Acts 10:34) Literally, that scripture means that God is not a "taker of faces." A "taker of faces" shows recognition and preference for another person. In ancient times, many a judge would favor the wealthy over the poor. Or verdicts would be handed down based on nationality, social rank, family, or friendship rather than on the facts. But Jehovah does the opposite. He favors only those who fear him and work righteousness. When it comes to salvation, God does not esteem a man's 'face' over a woman's 'face.' Both are on an equal footing with him.—Acts 10:35.

Therefore, the Scriptures afford Christian men and women an equal measure of honor as members of the congregation. The apostle Paul

writes to Christians in Galatia that "there is neither slave nor freeman, there is *neither male nor female;* for you are all one person in union with Christ Jesus." All have an independent spiritual standing before God; yet all are united as a body of his servants. All are alike in God's household.—Galatians 3:26-28.

Nevertheless, there are differences between men and women in the congregation. But just as natural differences between a man and a woman are no obstacle to their complementing each other, so the different privileges that men and women enjoy within the Christian congregation should not be an obstacle to the congregation's harmony. What are those differences?

Teachers—When and to Whom?

The differences center on teaching and authority. Women are barred from serving in an official teaching capacity in the congregation and from exercising spiritual authority over fellow congregation members. In his pastoral letter to Timothy, Paul plainly states: "I do not permit a woman to teach, or to exercise authority over a man, but to be in silence." —1 Timothy 2:12.

Paul next points to the basis for not allowing women to be teachers—a divinely appointed relationship between man and woman. "For Adam was formed first, then Eve," he writes. (1 Timothy 2:13) God could have created Adam and Eve at the same moment, but he did not. Adam existed for some time before Eve. Does this not reveal God's purpose for Adam to direct, to be the head, rather than Eve? (1 Corinthians 11:3) And to teach is, in effect, to act as a master, or head, over those taught. Those taught listen and quietly learn. Thus, in the congregation only men are to be teachers and overseers.

Need the fact that women do not teach in the congregation cause frustration and resentment? No. Women are free to teach Christian doctrine and are invited to do so. In what context and under what circumstances? Older women can be "teachers of what is good" to the younger women. And just as Eunice and her mother Lois instructed Timothy, so Christian women still follow their example in training children in "The Way" of the truth.—Titus 2:3-5; Acts 9:2; 2 Timothy 1:5.

Today, Christian women also follow the examples of Euodia and Syntyche by preaching the good news publicly. (Philippians 4: 2, 3) They can be teachers by conducting Bible studies with interested people. (Matthew 28:20) Hundreds of thousands of women find spiritual fulfillment in this urgent work of preaching and teaching. They point others to the establishment of a world of righteousness and peace under the reign of Jesus Christ—a hope they share equally with their Christian brothers.—Psalm 37: 10, 11; 68:11.

A Little Light on Your Subject

DO SOME of your photographs give your friends luminous red eyes or make the men appear to be wearing long hair when they are not? Do your outdoor photos disappointingly show hollow, dark eyes and other problems with shadows? Again, has someone in a large hall ever laughed when seeing you at the back of the hall taking a flash photograph of people on the stage? These camera disappointments have one thing in common—a problem involving light on your subject.

If so, you may appreciate some hints about how to overcome them. These tips are not intended for the professional but for those of you who are trying your hand at flash photography.

Those Red Eyes

The annoying red-eye effect (or white-eye if you are using black and white film) is the bright reflection of the flash from the subject's eyes. This happens when the flash unit is positioned very close to the camera lens and both are pointed at the subject. Similarly, light reflected from a shiny surface on or near the subject may cause a glare, or flare, to show up in the picture.

When taking pictures indoors, why not try tilting your flash unit toward the ceiling if your equipment allows for it? (Illustration A) The reflected light will usually be sufficient for your photograph. Another alternative is to use a cable attachment for the unit, unless you are using a camera that has a built-in flash unit. This will enable you to position the flash away from the camera at any angle that will reduce undesired reflection and shadows. If it is not possible to use either of these methods, then try having your subjects look slightly away from the lens of the camera.

Something else to bear in mind for color photographs: Reflected light will be tinted by the color of the surface from which it is bounced. So make sure that the ceiling, wall, or other surface that you are using as a reflector is white or has a neutral color. You can also further cut down glare by using a lens shade or by covering or masking shiny surfaces where possible.

More About Shadows

When your photograph of Uncle John shows plenty of hair at the back of his head, you are shocked. He has no hair! Actually, you are having a problem with the momentary shadows produced by the flash. Uncle John was too near the background. Next time try moving him forward, away from it. (Illustration B)

You can also reduce such a problem by pointing the flash away from the subject toward a neutrally colored surface. The reflected light will give you the effect of indirect lighting, helping to eliminate unwanted shadows. You may find it interesting to locate dark areas where you want them by holding the flash unit high or low or off to either side. Be creative with your indoor shadows! Now take a look at the outdoor ones.

You have photographed your sister while she was wearing a wide-brimmed hat in bright sunlight. The settings on your camera were accurately adjusted, yet she showed up without a face—too much shadow under the hat. What can you do next time? Use a flash; but reduce its brightness by using a smaller lens aperture or by masking the transparent screen of the flash unit with a white handkerchief. (Illustration C) Remember, too, to guard against red or white eyes as we have already explained. Use of the flash will also eliminate or soften shadows around the eyes and under the nose and chin in photographs taken under the midday sun.

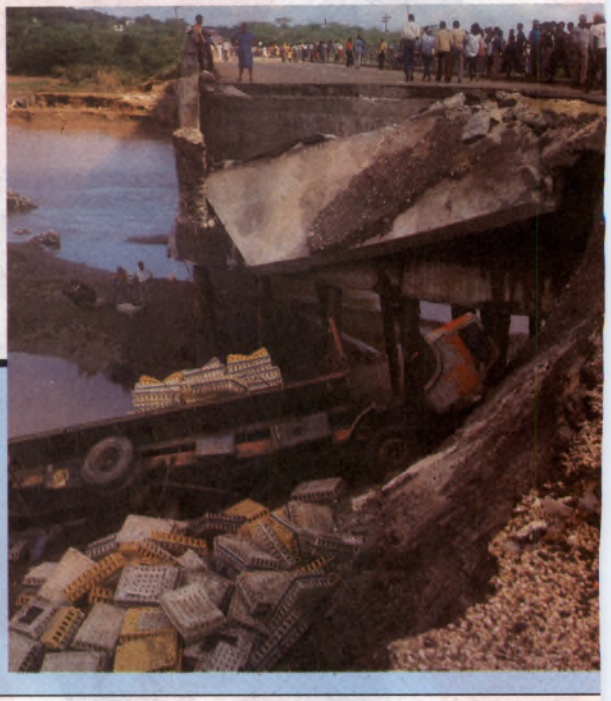
Range of Light

If you do not wish to advertise your inexperience, you will avoid attempting flash photographs of subjects that are too far from you. Every flash unit has limited range, and its light is useless beyond that range. Indeed, it may even obscure your subject by brightening only the foreground within its range. So save your flash for subjects that are near enough. Using a flash in any darkened auditorium is also very inconsiderate of others in the audience.

Finally, since the intensity or brightness of light on the subject decreases greatly with distance, make sure that there is not too much depth in your group pictures. Arrange your groups in only one or two rows. You can compensate for light falloff to some extent by putting those of the group who have darker clothing or skin in front.

Well, now, is flash photography difficult? Not really. And it will be more fun as you use better methods to throw a little light on your subject.

Disasters —*A Time for Acts of Love*



On the average, the world is hit with 26 major disasters per year, with floods taking the lead. They are the most frequent, disrupting the lives of millions of people each year. How would you react if a disaster—large or small—struck your area? Would you show loving concern for others? Would you know how? Perhaps the following story may help.

By "Awake!" correspondent in Jamaica

"WATER, water, the Rio Minho River is flooding! Everybody wake up and run. The river is overflowing!" Frantic voices shouting in the early morning hours of June 6, 1986, snapped Tony Burgher and his wife to attention. This was no false alarm. They hopped out of bed, grabbed their 3-year-old son, and scrambled to the roof. Tony and his wife were not alone in their exodus.

Many inhabitants of the southern section of the island of Jamaica woke up to find muddy water swirling under their beds. What had happened? The hills that rose above the Plain of Vere had heavy, continuous rains for many days. The runoff had raised the level of the Rio Minho River to the point where the river broke its banks and spilled tons of muddy water onto the plains.

The dawn revealed scenes of desolation as the rampaging floodwaters swept through homes, washing away furniture and sometimes entire houses; drowned farm animals; destroyed agricultural crops; and deposited thick mud in the homes not destroyed. Some villages were isolated because of the destruction of roads and bridges. Victims had to be rescued by fishing boats and military helicopters.

Arranging Relief

The Witnesses at the Watch Tower branch office in Kingston were concerned about their fellow Witnesses in the affected areas. So on the following morning, three members of the Branch Committee traveled by car to the worst-hit area. After many detours to avoid floodwaters, they contacted an elder of one of the congregations in the flooded region. He led them to

the home of Tony Burgher, a special pioneer minister. Tony and his family had by then left the rooftop and were sheltered in a nearby public-school building that was being used as a relief center. Tony reported to the committee about the rest of the affected brothers. After a quick assessment of their immediate needs, arrangements were made with elders from a nearby congregation to supply the flood sufferers with food. By five o'clock that afternoon, a supply reached them.

On Sunday, the second day following the flood, an appeal was sent to all the congregations in Kingston to help with food, clothing, and drinking water. The response was prompt, and needed supplies arrived in generous quantities at the branch. By that afternoon a truckload of donated supplies was dispatched to the flood victims.

Acts of Loving Concern

The contributions sent to the branch exceeded by far the needs of those who suffered loss. A 13-year-old handicapped son of a Witness, upon hearing of the disaster, donated his entire savings of $160, U.S., to the branch office of the Society to be used for relief. Another thought of their spiritual needs and donated a Bible wrapped in plastic. "Many eyes filled with tears as we saw the gifts of mercy from our brothers," said Tony.

One week after the flood, a group of Witnesses returned to the flood area to clean up the homes that were filled with mud and to bury dead animals. In the volunteer group was a sister with one leg. Though she was handicapped, love moved her to travel 60 miles (97 km) to help her spiritual brothers.

The floor of one Kingdom Hall was covered with mud three feet (0.9 m) deep. The brothers, though, knowing they must 'not forsake gathering together,' worked late into Saturday night—the day after the flood—to have the hall ready for Sunday. (Hebrews 10:25) How happy they were to see that 16 were present for the meeting on Sunday morning!

Reaction to Acts of Brotherly Love

The government of Jamaica organized relief for those affected island-wide and also organized a national clean-up campaign, but the speed with which Jehovah's Witnesses moved in to help their spiritual brothers and interested persons clean up their homes caused one observer to remark that "the Witnesses worked faster than the government."

"Imagine," one woman confided to her Witness neighbor, "they brought you drinking water all the way from Montego Bay [more than 100 miles (160 km) away]; they are really loving!" The unbelieving relative of another Witness, on seeing the concern and love displayed, remarked: "I don't believe in their way of worship, but one thing I have to say, They are very loving."

In Our Next Issue

- *Our Beautiful Earth—How Much of It Will We Leave Our Children?*
- *When a Fact Is Not a Fact*
- *From Black Militants to Jehovah's Witnesses*

From Our Readers

Beating Stress

Thank you for the article "Young People Ask . . . Can I Beat Stress?" (April 8, 1987) I am one of your subscribers and want to tell you how good it is to find one's own feelings put in writing. We always believe we're the only ones who feel a certain way. The sympathetic spirit that guides you has touched my heart, and I hope that of many others.

S. S., Italy

Many thanks for the article on beating stress. I am almost 12 years old, and some of my schoolwork makes me nervous, especially English. Sometimes I just don't feel like continuing. But the article contained five points that I will now try to apply.

M. N., Federal Republic of Germany

As a reminder, the five points are: (1) Reduce irritants. (2) Organize and limit your activities. (3) Lessen fear of failure. (4) Talk to somebody. (5) Pray to God.—ED.

What Do Clothes Mean?

I enjoyed reading the article "What Do Clothes Mean to You?" (February 8, 1987) It gave tips and very useful ideas of how to get the most out of one's wardrobe and the maintaining of proper balance regarding clothes. It is important to bear these factors in mind so that our grooming reflects favorably on our Creator.

P. T., England

The article "What Do Clothes Mean to You?" helped me very much. I used to like clothes that were the very latest style, but the article showed me the need for caution in this regard and that a good guide is that each person always dress according to his or her age. Thank you for the suggestions for a quality wardrobe.

R. R., Brazil

Phobias

I was absolutely amazed when your articles on "Phobias" discussed my personal problem. (February 8, 1987) For about 20 years I have experienced a very real problem with writing in the presence of other people, especially when it comes to a signature. I honestly believed I was totally alone with this problem. You can, no doubt, understand my amazement when this very problem was mentioned in *Awake!* At last I realized I was not alone, that someone else knew what it is like to experience this fear and was probably trying to avoid situations in which it arose. I felt this article was meant by God to be read by me, and I thank God for the man and the girl who brought it to my door.

J. M., England

I am 13 years old and wish to thank you for the articles on "Phobias." I very much enjoyed reading the articles, especially since I suffer from claustrophobia. It really is obsessive! Sometimes I feel I am going mad. I felt it was no use going to a doctor and that I had to solve the problem on my own. Now, thanks to your article, I realize that I should talk to my doctor about it and try to calm down, since I'm quite easily agitated.

T. Z., Italy

Watching the World

Vatican Losing Influence

For centuries the names Spain and France have been synonymous with tasty wines and staunch Catholicism. Today, the wines are still flowing, but support for the Roman Catholic Church in these two South European countries is rapidly declining. *Kruispunt,* a Dutch Roman Catholic magazine, reports that only 46 percent of all Spaniards still want to be registered as practicing Catholics, and a mere 18 percent of all people in Spain are attending church each week. Similarly, the Sofres Institute in Paris, France, announced that 55 percent of all Roman Catholics in that country feel that they can disregard official statements of the pope and yet be good Catholics. They believe that abortion and premarital sex are permissible and that "it is absolutely unnecessary to belong to a parish or a Catholic organization." The studies indicate that in both Spain and France 15 percent of the population has now turned away from religion.

Life-Shortening Combination

"The combination of poor nutrition and too frequent pregnancies can reduce a woman's life span by five years for each baby she has," states *Asiaweek.* "International specialists recommend two to three years between pregnancies." The longer intervals will protect the mother from "maternal depletion" due to pregnancy and breast-feeding and improve the health of the child as well. The report also cites the benefits of breast-feeding "in preventing malnutrition and reducing infant mortality."

Music for Surgery

Can music help patients during surgery? The results of research conducted at the Jefferson General Hospital in Port Townsend, Washington, suggest it can. The effects of music in the operating room on 25 different patients were studied by music therapist Helen Lindquist Bonny and nurse anesthetist Noreen McCarron. Music instead of sedation was used to quash the sounds within the operating room that often create anxiety before an operation. Melodious music reduced blood pressure and heart rates, notes *American Health,* and also cut by half the sedatives needed to calm patients. A comparable study in the Federal Republic of Germany showed a similar reduction. Classical music, as well as popular music from the '40's and '50's, with even tempos and rhythms was used. Wild, raucous sounds were shunned. McCarron claims that the soothing effect of music is equivalent to 2.5 mg of Valium. Patients listening to it generally felt better after their operation and could go home sooner.

Advancing Deserts

"Every year, an area twice the size of Belgium, 60 000 square kilometres [23,000 sq mi], becomes a desert," states *New Scientist* magazine. "This is despite promises made 10 years ago by 94 nations to turn back the tide of sand." Most of the $6 billion (U.S.) allotted so far by the richer nations to halt desertification of land has been used for sanitation and road building. While some regional successes have been noted, not a single nation has been able to halt the deserts' growth.

Exceeding Earth's Limits

The earth's systems that support life are being pushed over

"thresholds" beyond which there will be permanent change and damage, warns Worldwatch Institute. Its new report, *State of the World 1987,* said that "efforts to improve living standards are themselves beginning to threaten the health of the global economy." The results of contamination, extinction of plant and animal species, and declining food and fuel production "are making the earth less habitable for future generations," the report stated. It added: "No generation has ever faced such a complex set of issues requiring immediate attention. Preceding generations have always been concerned about the future, but we are the first to be faced with decisions that will determine whether the earth our children inherit will be inhabitable."

Poison's Price

Many poisons are worth far more than either gems or gold, says the Soviet magazine *Sputnik.* "For example, an ounce of the poison of the cobra costs 9,000 dollars [U.S.], that of Bungarus caeruleus 14,000 dollars, one of the sea snake 43,000 dollars, the North-American coral cylinder-snake 56,000 dollars, the African boomslang snake 283,000 dollars, that of the bumblebee (Bombus muscorum) 1,134,000 dollars, and that of the female American black widow spider 2,360,000 dollars." Why so high priced? Because of difficulty in obtaining them, as some species are very rare. Besides, insects yield only milligrams of poison and snakes about ten droplets, and a month may be needed to develop another dose. Despite the cost, such poisons are in demand for use in serums to save those bitten and as disease cures.

Pollution's Heavy Toll

"In Switzerland, where half the land area is forest or mountain country, the average acid rain toll is 50 percent," reports the *International Herald Tribune,*

while "in some areas . . . the rate of dead or dying trees has hit 65 percent." Such statistics are alarming to ecologists who view acid rain as a serious problem affecting much of northern Europe. In the Federal Republic of Germany, for example, over 50 percent of the trees are dead or dying, and in France, the same is true in the Vosges region. In Poland the acid-rain toll could be as high as 40 percent. According to a document from the Polish Academy of Social Sciences, quoted in the French weekly *L'Express,* air and water pollution are also spreading disaster in Poland. Despite Europe's serious problem with pollution, Dr. Claude Martin, an acid-rain specialist, confessed: "There is a certain reluctance to act on it and act strongly enough."

"Crash Effort"

Exactly how many species of plants and animals exist is unknown. Estimates range from 5 to 30 million, while only some 1.6 million of them have been identified thus far. Since so relatively few have been studied for scientific lessons or economic utility, explains *The New York Times,* biologists are "calling for a new age of natural exploration, a crash effort to find and study millions of species before they are wiped out." Most of these species live in tropical rain forests, which are being destroyed by logging operations or converted to farms and ranches. Although small creatures and plants do not engender public sympathies as do whales or pandas, they "are the foundation of intricate webs that ultimately support all life, including humans," reports the *Times.*

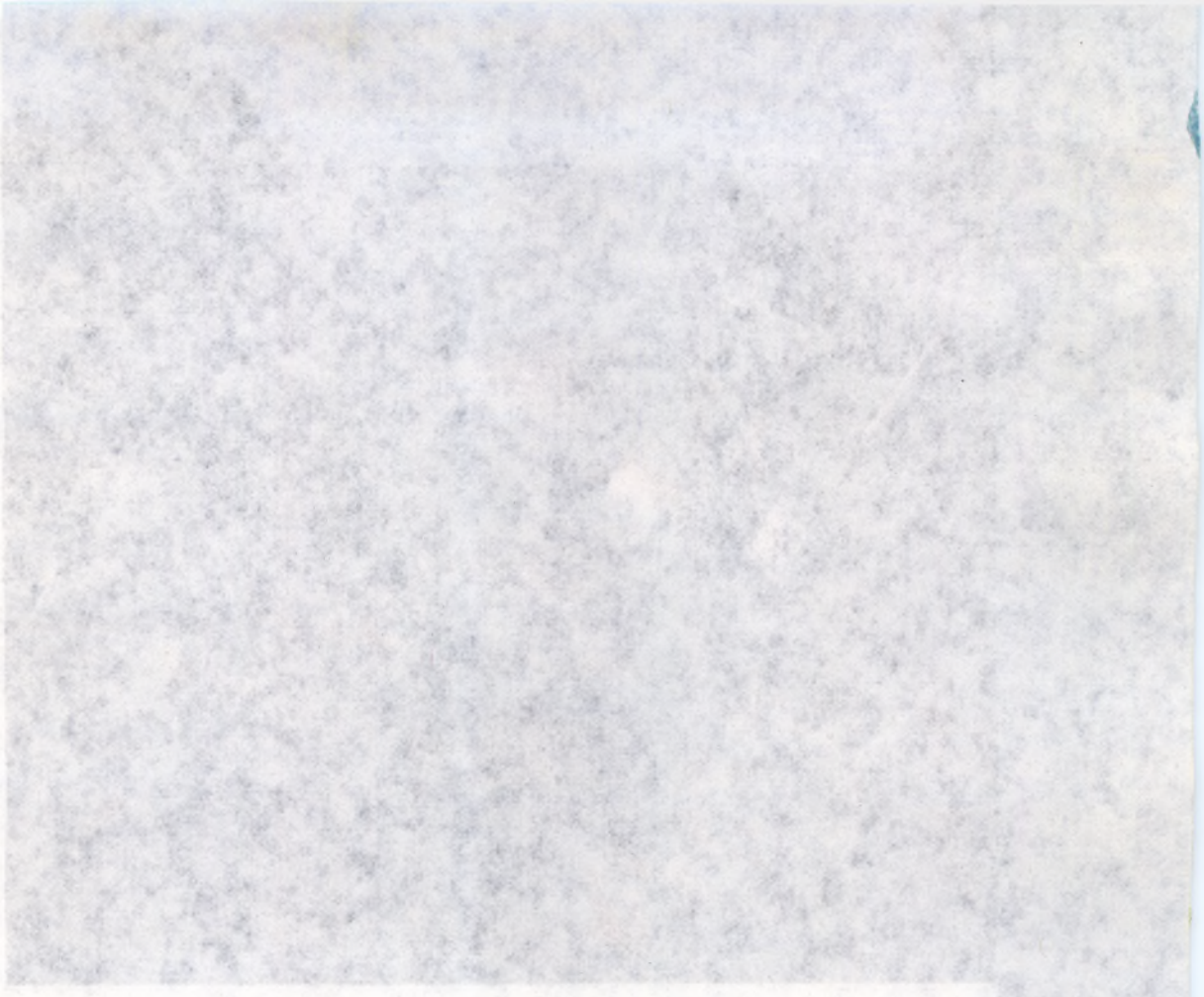
New Blood Threat

United States health officials are concerned that a rare cancer-causing virus may be spreading in a fashion similar to the one that causes AIDS. "We have evidence now that a virus spread by blood and associated with a very serious disease has been detected in the U.S.," says S. Gerald Sandler, medical director of the Red Cross. The virus, called human T-cell leukemia virus one, or HTLV-I, is the first virus known to cause cancer in humans. In addition to causing a form of adult leukemia, the virus has also been linked to a nerve disease—tropical spastic paraparesis, or TSP—that is similar to multiple sclerosis. "The virus poses an unusual threat because of its long latency period," says *The Wall Street Journal.* "People infected with the virus may not develop leukemia for several years." But once the disease is developed, the infected person usually survives only three months.

"One Thing Technology Can't Improve"

THE man who maintains Grand Canyon's emergency telephone line for hikers in distress says "there's nothing better than a mule" for getting his equipment to inaccessible places. "It is one thing technology can't improve. The helicopter is ingenious, but this [animal] was designed to work on my line."

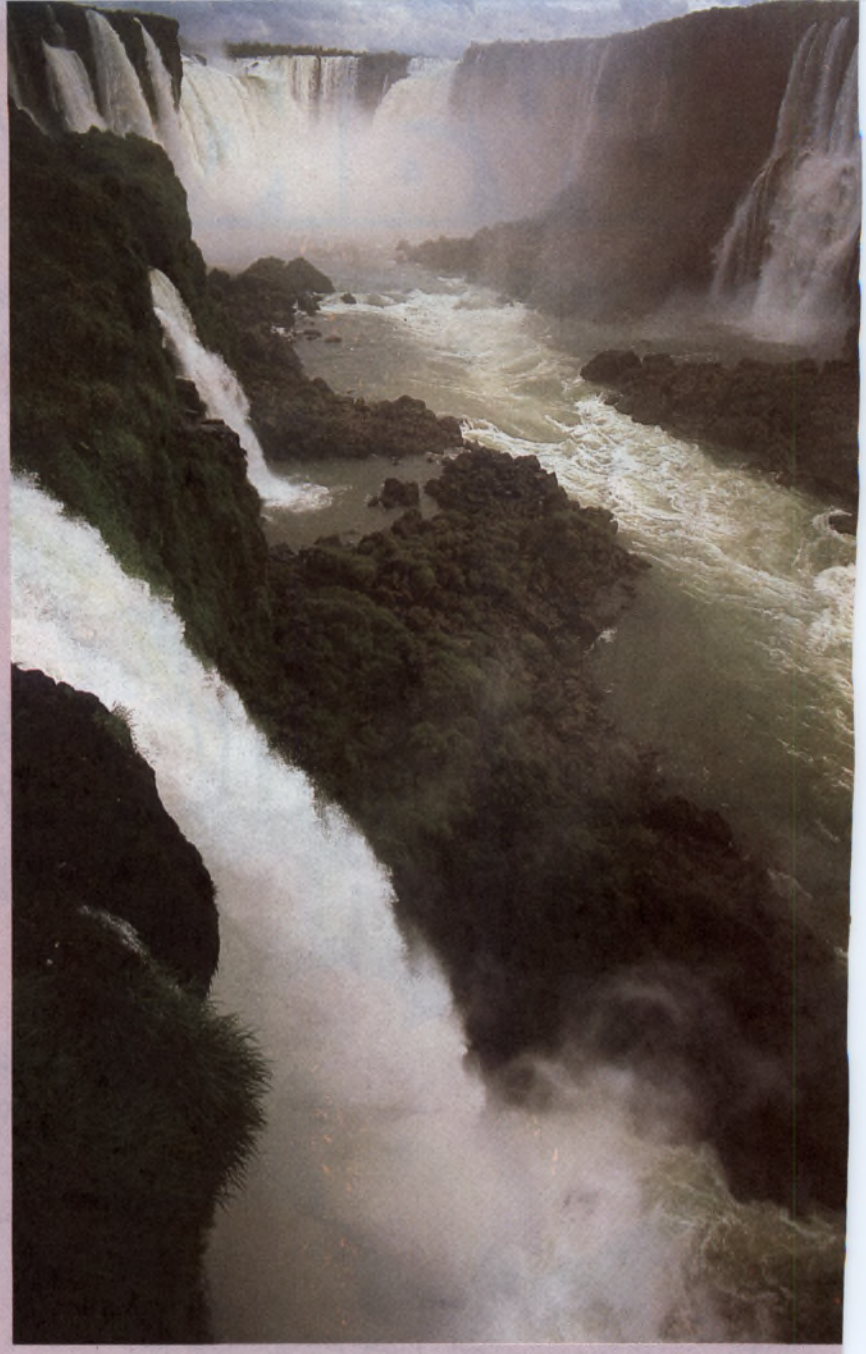
Explaining the hazards that his mule takes in stride, the telephone man states that "the terrain gets so steep in places you'll be clinging on with your fingernails, your nose touching the same ground you're walking on." The report in *The New York Times* notes that this rugged installation "connects 11 emergency telephones and four ranger stations, providing service to an estimated 100,000 distressed hikers each year."



Awake!
July 22, 1987

Our Beautiful Earth

How Much of It Will We Leave Our Children?



Iguaçú Falls, one of the natural wonders of the world. Varying between 200 and 270 feet high, 2 1/2 miles wide, with 450,000 cubic feet of water per second plunging over some 275 separate waterfalls or cataracts, Iguaçú (ē-gwä-sōō′) lives up to the meaning of its name, "great water."

The Falls forms a boundary between Brazil and Argentina. Both countries have created national parks to preserve its beauty. Exotic plants grow lush in the mists. Jaguars, ocelots, tapir, and deer roam the surrounding forest. Birds of many varieties delight the eye. Clouds of butterflies flutter about and often settle to rest on visitors. Rainbows glisten in the mists that billow upward from the crashing waters.

How long will Iguaçú's breathtaking beauty be allowed to enthrall its 3,000,000 yearly visitors? Already there has been talk of harnessing the Falls to provide electric power. Will man destroy Iguaçú's beauty, as he has done to so much of planet Earth? Or will he preserve this "great water" spectacular to thrill and awe his children and their children?

Our Beautiful Earth—

How Much of It Will We Leave Our Children?

ACCORDING to published reports, 1.7 billion children have been born into the world since the year 1970. If they constituted a nation, it would be the world's largest. Is it not fair to ask, What kind of world are we leaving them?

Over 25 years ago a prominent doctor of the U.S. Public Health Service observed: "We all live under the haunting fear that something may corrupt the environment to the point where man joins the dinosaurs as an obsolete form of life."

In the intervening years, that fear has intensified. Last year a national forum, addressed by nearly a hundred biologists, warned that coming was a wave of mass extinctions such as wiped out the dinosaurs, only this time it would not be by a natural development but "by human activities."

This year Worldwatch Institute released its report *State of the World 1987*. It said: "A sustainable society satisfies its needs without diminishing the prospects of the next generation. By many measures, contemporary society fails to meet this criterion. Questions of ecological sustainability are arising on every continent. The scale of human activities has begun to threaten the habitability of the earth itself."

The Institute's report said that the demands of over 5 billion people—and their numbers are increasing by 83 million a year—are overwhelming the regenerative capacities of earth's biological systems.

Chemical pollution is thinning the atmospheric ozone and may lead to "causing more skin cancers, impairing human immune systems, and retarding crop growth."

If acid rain continues, not only will more lakes and forests die but soils will acidify further and "may take decades, if not centuries, to recover."

Intensified farming practices "have pushed the rate of topsoil loss beyond that of new soil formation."

Deforestation reduces the amount of carbon dioxide used from the atmosphere, and the burning of fossil fuels releases more carbon dioxide than the remaining plants and the oceans can take in. The result is an increase in the warming greenhouse effect that may ultimately melt glaciers and flood coastal cities.

The loss of tropical forests means less recycling of water for rainfall and may lead to the creation of deserts.

Toxic chemicals, raw sewage, crude oil, nuclear accidents, radon, microwaves,

Awake!® July 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 14

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Our Beautiful Earth—How Much of It Will We Leave Our Children? 3
The Ugly Side of Industrial Chemicals 5
An Earth Without Forests —Is That What the Future Holds? 6
What Future for Us and Our Children? 8

Also in This Issue

When a Fact Is Not a Fact 10
The Price of Progress 14
Hot Showers May Be Health Hazards 14
Family Life on the Serengeti 15
From Black Militants to Jehovah's Witnesses .. 18
Young People Ask ... Why Is It So Hard to Get Along With My Brother and Sister? 23
When Memorizing Comes Easy 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
The Clownfish and the Anemone 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

asbestos—on and on could go the listing of man's sins against the environment.

State of the World 1987 warns: "Never have so many systems vital to the earth's habitability been out of equilibrium simultaneously. New environmental problems also span time periods and geographic areas that stretch beyond the authority of existing political and social institutions. No single nation can stabilize the earth's climate, protect the ozone layer, preserve the planet's mantle of forests and soils, or reverse the acidification of lakes and streams. Only a sustained international commitment will suffice."

This commitment is dragging its feet, and time is running out. Hundreds of billions are spent in the arms race; a mere pittance is spent on preserving the environment that sustains us and the neglect of which can kill us. Since 1983 the United States alone has committed $9 billion to the Strategic Defense Initiative research and wants $33 billion more for it from 1986 to 1991—but turns stingy on the environment. The other industrialized nations do likewise. The *State of the World 1987* puts the crisis in a nutshell: "The time has come to make peace with each other so that we can make peace with the earth."

"A sustainable future," this report states, "calls upon us simultaneously to arrest the carbon dioxide buildup, protect the ozone layer, restore forests and soils, stop population growth, boost energy efficiency, and develop renewable energy sources. No generation has ever faced such a complex set of issues requiring immediate attention. Preceding generations have always been concerned about the future, but we are the first to be faced with decisions that will determine whether the earth our children inherit will be habitable."

The following article shows the crisis developing over toxic chemicals.

The Ugly Side of Industrial Chemicals

IT WAS just after midnight on a cool December evening in 1984 that the worst industrial accident in history happened. A world away from the Republic of India, few people were familiar with the name Bhopal, an industrial city with a population of more than 800,000, located almost at the center of the country. Its sleeping residents were unaware of the death-dealing events developing a stone's throw away.

At the U.S. Union Carbide plant in Bhopal, a storage tank holding 45 tons of methyl isocyanate (MIC), a deadly chemical used in making pesticides, began building up dangerously high pressure. Suddenly, from a malfunctioning valve, a cloud of poisonous gas began spreading death and agony over the quiet city. It snuffed out the lives of more than 2,500 men, women, and children. It maimed more than a hundred thousand others.

The death of thousands of animals—water buffalo, cattle, and dogs—caused the countryside to be littered with dead bodies that clogged the roads and city streets. Bhopal became a giant makeshift crematory, burning the dead around the clock. Seventy funeral pyres, with bodies stacked 25 high, consumed the dead in their flames. Others were buried in hurriedly dug mass graves—scores of bodies at a time.

Later another catastrophe hit Europe and was called "Bhopal on the Rhine." A chemical spill from an industrial plant above Basel, Switzerland, dumped 40 tons of poisonous waste into the Rhine. It killed hundreds of thousands of fish and eels as it "drifted downstream along the German-French border, into the Rhineland and then through the Netherlands to the North Sea." One newspaper editorialized: "The Swiss used to be considered clean, their industry safe, and that included the chemical industry. That is all past now."

The residents of Bhopal and communities along the Rhine River had become the victims of a technological age that boasts the compounding of more than 66,000 chemical concoctions. Many are formulated to make life easier for man, yet, ironically, a vast number are highly toxic and can cause fatal and devastating side effects, both to humans and to the entire biological system. One expert classified these chemicals as "biocides."

Many are the chemicals with long names that few people can pronounce and that for convenience bear letters such as PCB, DDT, PCDD, PCDF, TCDD. This alphabet soup of toxic chemicals is a deadly hazard both to humans and to earth's resources on which man must rely to live. "Thousands upon thousands of releases of toxic substances into the environment" occur each year, said a spokesman for the U.S. Environmental Protection Agency. Such releases pose a threat to the quality of air, surface water, and underground drinking supplies, and poison the soil for decades to come.

The U.S. Environmental Protection Agency estimates that in the United States

alone, 1.5 trillion gallons of hazardous chemical wastes find their way into the underground water systems each year.* Knowing that just one gallon of solvent will contaminate 20 million gallons of groundwater to exceed safe levels, it is staggering to compute what catastrophic damage 1.5 trillion gallons of poisonous chemicals are doing.

Because of hazardous chemicals and wastes and the careless dumping of them, rivers and streams are being polluted. Fish are dying. As the rivers and streams enter the oceans, the death-dealing chemicals pour with them, and in some places where ocean life was once plentiful, today, according to famed oceanographer Jacques Cousteau, fish can no longer be found.

Bird and animal life is also threatened by the contamination. Even wildlife sanctuaries prove to be no haven. "Ten national wildlife refuges are contaminated by toxic chemicals and another 74 may be in danger. . . . Agricultural runoff containing selenium and other chemicals has killed large numbers of waterfowl in the refuge," reported *The New York Times* of February 4, 1986.

World experts do not paint a promising picture for the future. The rapid diminishment of earth's resources does not end with the loss of soil and the pollution of air and water. What about earth's great tropical rain forests that for millenniums have raised their leafy arms hundreds of feet into the air? Are these too in danger of going the way of other resources that are diminishing before our eyes? Whether we realize it or not, our lives are affected by these luxuriant handiworks of Jehovah, as the next article will show.

* 1 gal = 3.8 L.

An Earth Without Forests—

Is That What the Future Holds?

VAST areas that for millenniums were covered with luxuriant tropical rain forests are today becoming barren. Once the habitat of exotic birds and animal life that took refuge under the prolific umbrella of millions of species of plants and trees, some towering 200 feet into the sky, these beautiful, green, pulsating places of the earth are rapidly becoming wastelands.*

With destructive efficiency man is ravaging the mountains with the ax, the saw, the

* 1 ft = 0.3 m.

Nations are changing dense jungles into barren wastelands

bulldozer, and the match. He is reducing them to denuded, scarred, scorched lands of abandoned wildernesses. This inexorable destruction of earth's tropical forests is being waged at the shocking rate of 50 acres per minute, or over 100,000 square kilometers a year—an area equal the size of Austria.*

By the year 2000, according to some experts, about 12 percent of the tropical rain forest that remained in 1980 will be gone —no small accomplishment for man, even with his reputation for destruction. Gone, too, will be the exotic birds, the animal wildlife, and the varieties of plant life that cannot be found in any other climatic areas of the earth. Man is destroying a part of the very intricate ecosystem so vital to his life and which provides him with incalculable benefits.

More than half the medicines man uses come from plants, a great many from tropical plants. What would industry do without the source of rubber, turpentine, rattan, bamboo—all indigenous to the tropical forest—plus a galaxy of fibers, resins, dyes, and spices? Blindly and indiscriminately, man is destroying a treasure of immense value.

From these great forests, vast amounts of life-giving oxygen are produced. Some scientists warn that this massive reduction of oxygen-producing forests may well intensify the feared greenhouse effect, causing sea levels to rise to catastrophic heights.

* 1 a. = 0.4 ha.

Deforestation has already had a severe and immediate impact on much of the world. Nations such as Brazil, Indonesia, and the Philippines have seen the rapid conversion of their lands from dense jungle to virtually barren wastelands. "In Southeast Asia as many as 25 million acres of once-forested land now bear only tenacious and useless sawgrasses that provide neither food, fuel, nor forage," reports the World Resources Institute.

The felling and selling of tremendous

In 63 countries 1.5 billion people are cutting wood faster than it can grow back

tracts of trees guarantees the deforestation of Fiji within 20 years, of Thailand by the turn of the century, and of the lowland rain forest of the Philippines by 1990, *Science Digest* reports. In Australia the devastation of its forests is widespread—two thirds of its rain forests entirely gone! India is losing 3.2 million acres of forests yearly to the ax.

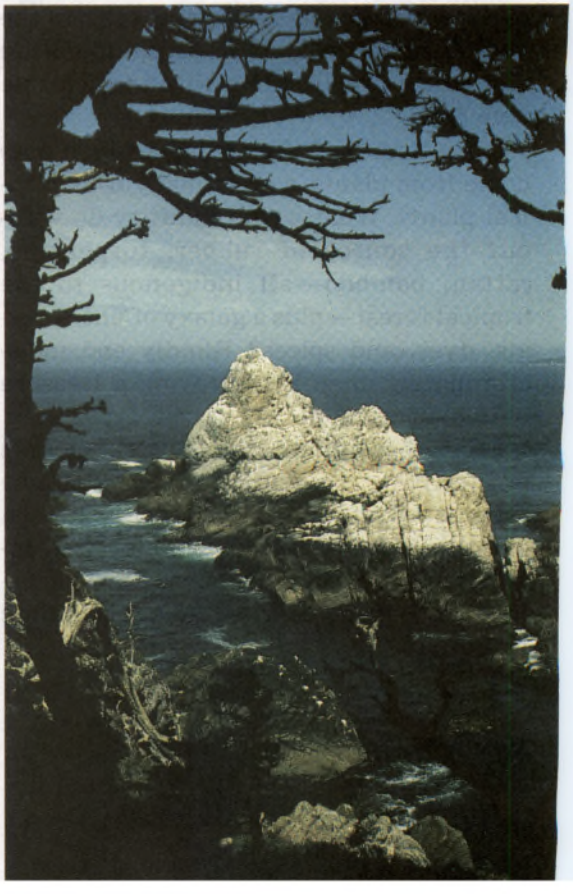
"As of the mid-1980s," reports the magazine *Natural History* of April 1986, "every country in Africa is losing tree cover. Indeed, forest deficits are now the rule throughout the Third World." In 63 countries 1.5 billion people are cutting wood faster than it can grow back, creating a deficit that can only lead to forest and fuelwood bankruptcy. Experts expect the deficit to double by the year 2000.

Forest destruction touches at the very heart of man's ability to exist—agriculture. To begin with, when man fells the trees on mountains and hills to plant his seed, without vegetation to hold the soil in place, the soil is quickly washed away. Also, in countries where fuelwood is scarce, "an estimated 400 million tons of dung are burned annually . . . This burning of a potential fertilizer is estimated to depress grain harvests by over 14 million tons."

Are the great forests of the earth really doomed by irreversible forces? Or will this generation leave much of earth's resources and beauty for its children? It talks lots, writes reams, but does little. So, what future will it leave its children? Time will tell, and little time is left.

What Future for Us and Our Children?

A FAMILY cannot spend more than it makes and remain solvent. A nation cannot pay out more than it takes in and still prosper; nor can we continue our deficit spending of the environment. We cannot squander more soil than is formed, create more carbon dioxide than plants can use, cut down more trees than we replace, pollute more air and water than earth can recycle. Environmental deficits, like national deficits, will demand an account-



ing. They will be paid, either in money and international cooperation or in lives—ours and our children's.

Modern technology has made the ruining of the earth possible. It could be used to prevent it. Why isn't it? Love of money. It would cost billions. This world cannot see—or in its selfishness will not see—beyond its own shortsighted materialistic desires. Since it refuses to pay in money, it will pay in loss of topsoil, loss of forests, loss of aquifers, hothouse atmosphere, poisoned water, mounting sickness, human lives. And to hold onto its money, this world is selling off its children's future.

Will it wake up in time? History's answer is not reassuring, but God's answer is. Jehovah God himself says that he will step in and "bring to ruin those ruining the earth." (Revelation 11:18) He will remove from earth those ruining its environment and destroying its beauty, for he created it to be life-sustaining and beautiful. "The heavens are my throne, and the earth is my footstool," he says, and: "I shall glorify the very place of my feet."—Isaiah 66:1; 60:13.

He created it to be inhabited by people who love righteousness—and it will be, by millions who once lived in the past, by millions who are living now, and by millions of children yet to be born. This he has recorded in his Word, the Bible, and you can read it for yourself at Isaiah 45:18 and John 5: 28, 29.

Then, cared for by those who love it, the earth will regenerate itself into the beauty with which our Creator originally endowed it. Then righteously disposed persons and their children will have a future, a glorious one: "Just a little while longer, and the wicked one will be no more; and you will certainly give attention to his place, and he will not be. But the meek ones themselves will possess the earth, and they will indeed find their exquisite delight in the abundance of peace. The righteous themselves will possess the earth, and they will reside forever upon it."—Psalm 37:10, 11, 29.

And never die? And never die! "God himself will be with them. And he will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be anymore. The former things have passed away." (Revelation 21: 3, 4) Too good to be true? No, this present wicked world is too bad to remain.—Daniel 2:44.

But you and your children can remain. Jehovah God makes it possible through the sacrifice of his Son. To learn of Jehovah and of his Son will mean everlasting life for you and your children—life in a new world wherein righteousness is to dwell. (John 3:16; 17:3; 2 Peter 3:13) This can be the happy future for you and your children. Whether it is or not is up to you.

When a Fact Is Not a Fact

A fact is something that exists beyond question. It is an actuality, an objective reality. It is established by solid evidence.

A theory is something unproved but at times assumed true for the sake of argument. It has yet to be proved as factual. Nonetheless, sometimes something is declared to be a fact that is only a theory.

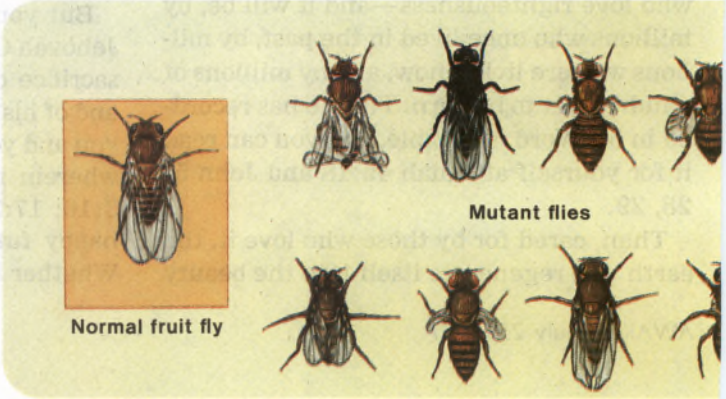
The theory of organic evolution falls into this category.

ON September 30, 1986, *The New York Times* published an article by a New York University professor, Irving Kristol. His contention is that if evolution were taught in the public schools as the theory it is rather than as the fact it isn't, there would not be the controversy that now rages between evolution and creationism. Kristol stated: "There is also little doubt that it is this pseudoscientific dogmatism that has provoked the current religious reaction."

"Though this theory is usually taught as an established scientific truth," Kristol said, "it is nothing of the sort. It has too many lacunae [gaps]. Geological evidence does not provide us with the spectrum of intermediate species we would expect. Moreover, laboratory experiments reveal how close to impossible it is for one species to evolve into another, even allowing for selective breeding and some genetic mutation. . . . The gradual transformation of the population of one species into another is a biological hypothesis, not a biological fact."

The article touched a raw nerve in Harvard professor Stephen Jay Gould, a fervent defender of evolution as a fact, not just a theory. His rebuttal of Kristol's article was published in a popularized science magazine, *Discover,* January 1987 issue. It revealed the very dogmatism Kristol deplored.

In his protesting essay, Gould repeated a dozen times his assertion that evolution is a fact. A few examples: Darwin established "the fact of evolution." "The fact of evolution is as well established as anything in science (as secure as the revolution of the earth around the sun)." By the time Darwin died, "nearly all thinking people came



Mutant fruit flies, while malformed, are still fruit flies

to accept the fact of evolution." "Evolution is as well established as any scientific fact (I shall give the reasons in a moment)." "The fact of evolution rests upon copious data that fall, roughly, into three great classes."

For the first of these "three great classes" of "copious data," Gould cites as "direct evidence" for evolution the small-scale changes within species of moths, fruit flies, and bacteria. But such variations within species are irrelevant to evolution. Evolution's problem is to change one species into another species. Gould extols Theodosius Dobzhansky as "the greatest evolutionist of our century," but it is Dobzhansky himself who dismisses Gould's argument above as irrelevant.

Concerning the fruit flies of Gould's argument, Dobzhansky says mutations "usually show deterioration, breakdown, or disappearance of some organs. . . . Many mutations are, in fact, lethal to their possessors. Mutants which equal the normal fly in vigor are a minority, and mutants that would make a major improvement of the normal organization in the normal environments are unknown."

Science, the official magazine for the American Association for the Advancement of Science, also spiked Gould's argument: "Species do indeed have a capacity to undergo minor modifications in the physical and other characteristics, but this is limited and with a longer perspective it is reflected in an oscillation about a mean [a position about midway between extremes]." In both plants and animals, variations within a species will oscillate or move about like pellets shaken in a glass jar —the variations are held within the boundaries of the species just as the pellets are confined within the jar. Just as the Bible's account of creation says, a plant or an animal may vary, yet it is restricted to reproduce "according to its kind."—Genesis 1: 12, 21, 24, 25.

For the second of his three classes, Gould offers big mutations: "We have direct evidence for large-scale changes, based upon sequences in the fossil record." By saying the changes were large scale, one species changing into another in a few big jumps, he escapes the need for the nonexistent intermediate fossils. But in going from small changes to big jumps, he goes from the frying pan into the fire.

"We just don't know of any such 'quantum jumps'"

Kristol comments on this: "We just don't know of any such 'quantum jumps' that create new species, since most genetic mutations work against the survival of the individual." And Gould's "greatest evolutionist of our century," Theodosius Dobzhansky, agrees with Kristol. His statement about many mutations being lethal is especially true of large-scale, quantum-jump mutations; also significant are his words that 'mutations that make big improvements are unknown.' Lacking evidence for his large-scale changes, Gould falls back on the old timeworn dodge of evolutionists: "Our fossil record is so imperfect."

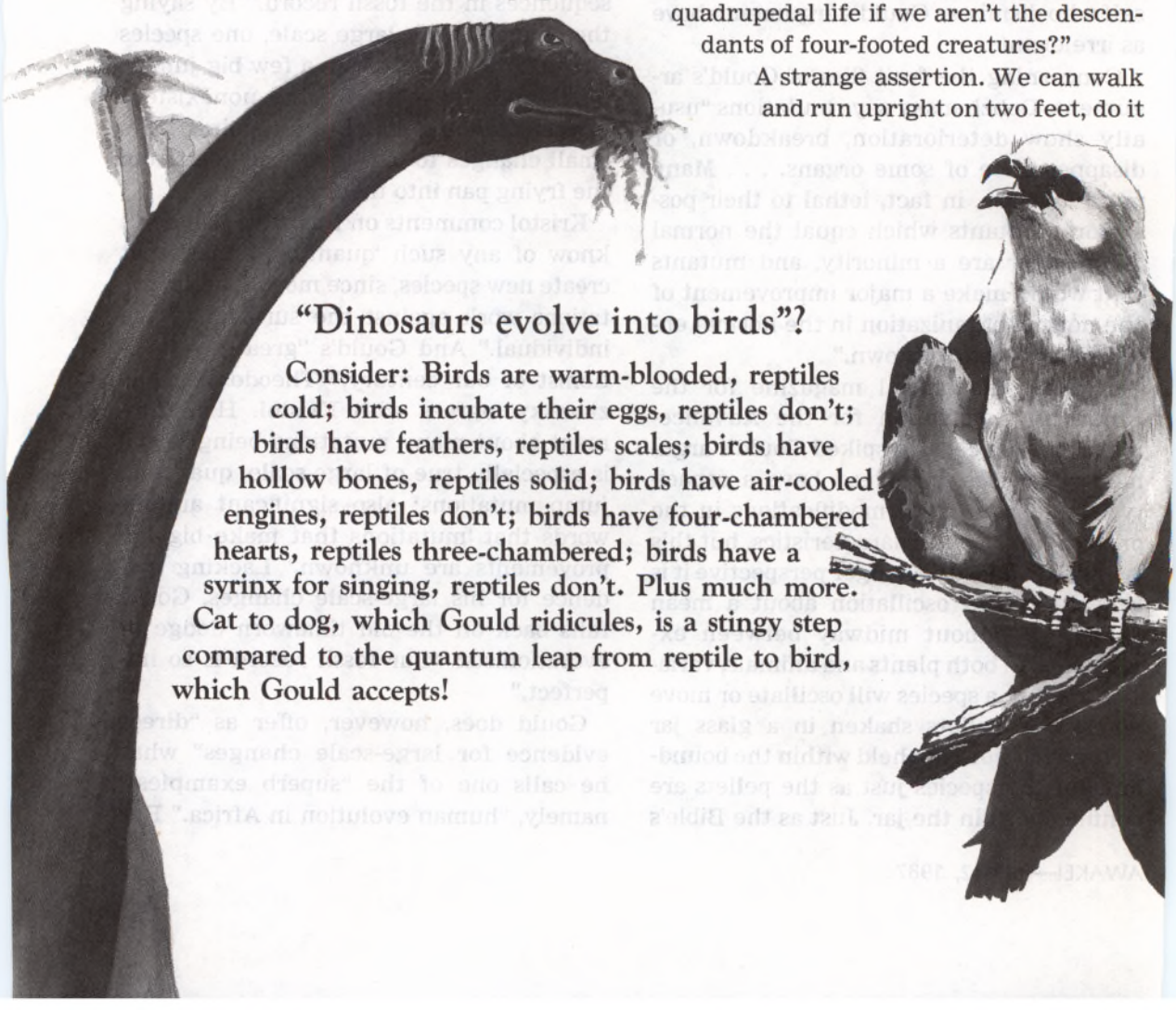
Gould does, however, offer as "direct evidence for large-scale changes" what he calls one of the "superb examples," namely, "human evolution in Africa." But

evolutionists generally acknowledge that this field is far from superb. It is a hotbed of controversy, a battleground over teeth and bits of bone that evolutionists with vivid imaginations turn into hairy, stooped-over, beetle-browed ape-men. Once again, Dobzhansky is not supportive of Gould: "Even this relatively recent history [from ape to man] is shot through with uncertainties; authorities are often at odds, both about fundamentals and about details."

The last of Gould's "three great classes" that he says proves evolution to be a fact is resemblance between species. (The current trend, however, is to discount physical similarities as proof of relationship; genetic similarities are the new vogue for proving relationship, even in cases where physical characteristics differ greatly.) Gould offers two examples of relationship proved by resemblance. First: "Why does our body, from the bones of our back to the musculature of our belly, display the vestiges of an arrangement better suited for quadrupedal life if we aren't the descendants of four-footed creatures?"

"This relatively recent history is shot through with uncertainties"

A strange assertion. We can walk and run upright on two feet, do it



"Dinosaurs evolve into birds"?

Consider: Birds are warm-blooded, reptiles cold; birds incubate their eggs, reptiles don't; birds have feathers, reptiles scales; birds have hollow bones, reptiles solid; birds have air-cooled engines, reptiles don't; birds have four-chambered hearts, reptiles three-chambered; birds have a syrinx for singing, reptiles don't. Plus much more. Cat to dog, which Gould ridicules, is a stingy step compared to the quantum leap from reptile to bird, which Gould accepts!

continuously for many miles, with backbone and belly muscles very comfortable. Unless, of course, we spend most of our waking hours slumped inert in a chair, never exercising muscles of back and belly. But those trained for it can run down four-footed wild animals, exhausting them, and in the vast majority of cases, outliving them. We thrive on two feet; quadrupeds seem comfortable on four.

Gould's second example: "Why do the plants and animals of the Galapagos so closely resemble, but differ slightly from, the creatures of Ecuador, the nearest bit of land 600 miles to the east? . . . The similarities can only mean that Ecuadorian creatures colonized the Galapagos and then diverged by a natural process of evolution." What the similarities can and only do mean is variation within the species. The finches, for example, are still finches.

Gould ridicules believers in creation who argue that "God permits limited modification within created types, but that you can never change a cat into a dog." He then asks: "Who ever said that you could, or that nature did?" Nevertheless, he believes in a much harder change. Cat to dog would at least be mammal to mammal, whereas Gould says "dinosaurs evolve into birds."

Irving Kristol in his article in *The New York Times* concludes: "The current teaching of evolution in our public schools does indeed have an ideological bias against religious belief—teaching as 'fact' what is only hypothesis. . . . If believing Christians are persuaded that their children are not exposed to anti-religious instruction, one may reasonably hope that they will feel comfortable once again with this American tradition [separation of Church and State]."

Kristol shows the wisdom of this doctrine of separation when he says: "Theological issues can so easily become a focus of conflict." That is exactly what the "scientific creationism" advanced by some creationists would become if it was taught in the classroom. Several of its contentions are not Scriptural. To name only one, that the creative days of Genesis are 24-hour days. The Hebrew word translated "day" can be and is used in the Bible to be 12 hours, 24 hours, a season, a year, a thousand years, or several thousand years, depending on its particular setting and usage.

The classroom is not the place to air religious differences. Neither is it the place, as Kristol says, for teaching hypothetical evolution as a fact, when in actuality it has itself become a modern-day religion supported only by dogmatism.

Evolution—a modern-day religion supported only by dogmatism

Gould appropriately says that "myths become beliefs through adulterated repetition without proper documentation." True. That is how religious creeds were formed that say the Bible teaches that the soul is immortal, that wicked people are tormented in hellfire forever, that God is a Trinity of three persons in one, that the days of creation in Genesis chapter 1 are 24-hour days—and all of this without proper documentation from the Bible.

And that is also how the evolutionary litany that 'evolution is a fact' becomes a belief: through "repetition without proper documentation" from scientific evidence.

The Price of Progress

"WITH the monstrous weapons man already has, humanity is in danger of being trapped in this world by its moral adolescents. Our knowledge of science has already outstripped our capacity to control it. We have many men of science, too few men of God," stated General Omar N. Bradley in 1948. He continued: "Man is stumbling blindly through a spiritual darkness while toying with the precarious secrets of life and death. The world has achieved brilliance without wisdom, power without conscience."

Today, almost 40 years later, his words have even greater meaning. Consider this: If 20th-century progress were measured in dollars spent on arms, 1986 would be a record year. An estimated $900 *billion* was spent by the nations worldwide on military weapons. That equates to a "historic high of $1.7 million a minute . . . and represents about 6 percent of the world's gross national product," reports *The Washington Post* on an independent study compiled by Ruth Leger Sivard. The Worldwatch Institute noted that arms spending has put "guns ahead of bread in world commerce" and added that the estimated 500,000 scientists throughout the world committed to weapons research exceeded "the combined spending on developing new energy technologies, improving human health, raising agricultural productivity and controlling pollution." Interestingly, military spending by the superpowers has produced sufficient weapons to kill their populations off perhaps ten times over.

Clearly, the stockpiling of arms has not removed the host of ills plaguing mankind, nor has it brought man any closer to peace. Instead, as General Bradley explained years ago: "We know more about war than we know about peace, more about killing than we know about living. This is our 20th century's claim to distinction and to progress."

Hot Showers May Be Health Hazards

"TAKING a hot shower, doing the family laundry or washing the dinner dishes may be hazardous to your health, according to a study showing that significant levels of cancer-causing chemicals escape from household water during everyday use. Exposure to trichloroethylene (TCE), a common groundwater pollutant, and chloroform, a byproduct of chlorination, may be up to 50 times higher from inhaling water vapors than from drinking water, says chemist Julian Andelman of the University of Pittsburgh Graduate School of Public Health. His studies show that hot showers, for example, liberate about 50 percent of dissolved chloroform and 80 percent of dissolved TCE into the air. For people who spend a lot of time at home, vapors from washing machines and dishwashers may be even greater sources of exposure, Andelman says. Some precautions: take shorter showers and baths, use cooler water and use exhaust fans where possible to draw vapors outside."—*International Wildlife*, January/February 1987.

Family Life on the *Serengeti*

THE African lion is often called the king of beasts. It is understandable. His great mane is impressive. Big amber eyes gaze about with a serene aloofness. A majestic air surrounds him. And when he suddenly rises up and lets go with a deafening roar that can be heard five miles away, your spine tingles.* Surely this is the king of beasts!

But when you see him at home, well, his kingly image fades a bit. He sleeps a lot. He sits around a lot. He sometimes drapes himself over the limbs of a tree, away from the cubs that specialize in clambering over the adults. And he really loves to lie on his back a lot, with tummy turned up to bask in the warmth of the sun. This occupies about 20 hours of his day.

The other four hours? Well, when the females—who do the hunting—put meat on the table, he's first in line. After all, he's the king, isn't he? He also fathers the children and fights other lions that trespass on his territory. So he's a father, a fighter, a loafer, and a sleepyhead. And a king, for a while.

Actually, he's not alone in performing these duties. Lions are the only species of cat that is social. The social unit of lions is the pride, usually consisting of two or three big males, five or ten females of breeding age, and numerous young cubs and subadults. Prides may be much larger, however—40 or even more. Each pride has its territory, several miles in diameter, and the big males keep intruders out.

The females do most of the hunting—usually at

* 1 mi = 1.6 km.

night. They are lighter (250-300 pounds) and therefore faster than the heavier males (400-500 pounds).* Even so, the females are after prey that runs faster than they can. Hence, it is advantageous for them to hunt cooperatively. Some hide while others circle the prey and chase it toward those lying in wait.

Lionesses are generally good mothers. A cub will live on milk for the first two or three months, then the mother leads it to an animal she has killed and introduces it to meat. But the cub will also continue to nurse until it is about eight months old, when the mother has no more milk. She hunts with her young for two years or more—they learn by watching her.

* 1 lb = 0.5 kg.

The family atmosphere is usually gentle. Lionesses may group together and baby-sit one another's cubs. Hungry cubs nurse on any lioness that has milk. Cubs spend much time chasing and wrestling with one another. Sometimes a lioness will join in the play, twitching her tail as the cub tries to catch it and chew on it. Even the big males will tolerate, up to a point, the youngsters that climb over them and tug on their hair. The pride stays in its territory but not always together. But when they come together again, they greet one another by rubbing cheeks.

The pride is a long-lasting unit. Most of its females were born and reared in the pride and hence are related. After a few decades, there will be sisters, mothers, grandmothers, half sisters, cousins, and so on. The young males, however, when they reach three years of age, are driven out by the big males.

But they stay together as a group. There may be two or three, or five or six, and after a couple of years when mature and powerful, they may come across another pride, oust the resident males, and take over the females. When this happens, the new males kill the cubs. This means the progeny thereafter will be from the new males. It also means that the females will come into heat soon thereafter. The larger the group of males in a pride, the less like-

ly another group of males will be able to oust them and take over.

Thus, it is an advantage for a male to have other males with him in the pride. While females are usually in a pride for life—about 18 years—males are usually replaced by a younger, stronger group of males in two or three years. Such ousted males have a harsh existence. No longer being in their prime, they are often unable to catch enough food. That is why it was said at the end of paragraph 3 that he is king "for a while."

Fights over females by the related males of the pride are rare. The females in a pride often come into heat at the same time. The first male that comes upon a receptive female possesses her. The other males stay away. But since all the females become receptive at about the same time, all the males usually have females available for mating activities.

All of which leads to more cubs, which leads to more family squabbles, which are very exhausting, as every mother and father knows. So we leave our visit to the family circle of the Serengeti lions, and let Mom and Pop recuperate after the hassle of getting the kids to take their nap. Of course, there's always one that can't sleep and has to have an afternoon snack.

On this delightful note, we bid you good-bye from the Serengeti.

While animals such as the lion today prey on others for their food, apparently it was not that way in the beginning. (Genesis 1:30) The prophet Isaiah indicates that in the coming new world, "the wolf and the lamb themselves will feed as one, and the lion will eat straw just like the bull." Yes, even "a mere little boy will be leader over them."—Isaiah 11:6-9; 65:25.

AWAKE!—July 22, 1987

From Black Militants to Jehovah's Witnesses

An Odyssey From Black Power to Disillusionment and On to Enlightenment

WHITE students in their orientation week at Tufts University in greater Boston were learning about classes and getting around the campus. Black students were meeting with people like Angela Davis, Dick Gregory, Black Muslims. And unbeknownst to the school authorities, criminals from the militant movement. They came with their bodyguards to tell us what was going on and what to do to foster the revolution. They opened our eyes to dark deeds and roused us to the urgent need for black power. At 17 you're quickly stirred by injustices, and I saw the need to get blacker.

It was 1969 and my first year at Tufts. A cause to test my blackness was soon at hand. A dormitory was being constructed with too few black workers. At sunrise we were at the construction site. We had people from outside the community who came in with guns and other weapons. We designated captains. I was captain at one of the stations. Three women were with me. We had our walkie-talkies and barricaded ourselves inside.

But when those construction workers got to work, boy, were they mad! To them this was a matter of eating. It had nothing to do with color. This was affecting their family. They wanted to tear us to pieces! The police showed up just in time, in riot gear and with riot sticks a foot longer than normal. They became a wall between us and the workers, and the confrontation ended.

I was going to two campuses that year. I was registered at Tufts but participated in an exchange program Tufts had with the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. At MIT a black physicist in graduate school approached me. In the library at MIT, there are tons of information on bombs and military exploits. Well, this black physicist said to me: "Look, brother, if you want to take it down [the dormitory being constructed], why—you're an engineer, right?" I said, "Yeah." He said, "I could

make some nitro, and let's just take it all the way down." But I wasn't ready for that.

My name is Larry Whitehead. I was born in Washington, D.C., and raised in Arlington, Virginia. I experienced the many indignities, small and large, heaped on blacks. I went through the first year of integration in high school—the process was not helped by the presence of the Ku Klux Klan and the Nazi party in Virginia. I always had strong feelings about whites, but it was Tufts that taught me to be militant.

Madeline Joins Me at Tufts

The next year Madeline arrived at Tufts —big Afro hairdo, posters displaying the black fists, all the other Black Power trappings. She explains how it came about with her:

"It was different for me. When I came to Tufts, I was already militant. I grew up in a white neighborhood; the high school was predominately white; many of my friends were white. But in my 11th year, a riot started in the cafeteria—Martin Luther King had been assassinated, and tempers were boiling over in many places. So in the cafeteria blacks and whites fought. They had to close the school down. I was appalled when my white friends that I had grown up with showed such hate and animosity. It turned me bitter. I went through a drastic change. I cut off all my hair, grew it into an Afro, and got hot for Black Power. When I arrived at Tufts, my hatred for whites was full-blown."

Both Madeline and I became active in the black movement at Tufts. It was a period of great change. Major movements on the campuses were taking place. The Vietnam war was a hot issue. The Students for Democratic Society was active. The drug culture was just getting off to a strong run. Neither Madeline nor I was into drugs, but those we associated with not only used drugs but also sold them.

Tufts was a predominantly white school, but they allowed black students to segregate, and we also had an Afro Society Black Orientation. I became president of the Afro-American Society and a citywide fraternity. Martin Luther King's assassination triggered much of this black activity, the death of Malcolm X added its impetus, and when both Jack and Bob Kennedy were assassinated (they were the outstanding "good white people"), it left blacks feeling hopeless.

We wanted an identity of our own. We started reading Marcus Garvey, *Back to Africa,* James Baldwin. Our movies showed terrorist methods, blacks in poverty and discriminated against. They showed Arab women and children who could get into places that other people couldn't, so they went in with bombs strapped to their persons and blew up the place—they gave their lives for the cause. So we were indoctrinated to do the same.

We Teach "Black Religion"

I had always believed in God, groping for him. (Acts 17:27) But I almost lost him completely in 1970. We taught a course at Tufts called Black Religion. It was actually an attack on the Bible. The Black Muslims were influential in it, and they said that white men that came to you with the Bible were devils. Especially those with blue eyes and blonde hair. Jesus, on the other hand, was a black man with hair like lamb's wool.

We were just at this point in the course when I met Tim Sieradski. He was big, blond, blue-eyed, and came with a Bible in

his hand—a white, blue-eyed devil if I ever saw one! Or so I thought. He was one of Jehovah's Witnesses. When he showed up at my door, I thought to myself: 'Look at this big, blue-eyed devil trying to teach me the Bible.' But I soon discovered that he did know the Bible, and I did want him to show me in the Bible where it said Jesus' hair was like lamb's wool.

Instead he talked about this world ending, with scriptures to prove it. Being an engineer, I had proved scientifically to myself that God existed. I wasn't sure about the Bible—never had studied it. Tim did read a scripture that intrigued me: "He made out of one man every nation of men, to dwell upon the entire surface of the earth." (Acts 17:26) So I listened to Tim.

But not Madeline! Let her tell why: "I had been totally turned off by church," she explained. "By the time I was 16, I saw it was very hypocritical. I knew I wasn't living right—by this time Larry and I were living together—but I wasn't going to go the church route and be a hypocrite about it. So whenever Tim would come, with his blond hair and blue eyes and Bible in hand, I wouldn't speak to him. When he came I left."

We lost track of Tim. We were not ready to abandon the Black Power movement. The Afro-American Society arranged to go and see a group called The Last Poets. These were blacks that did poetry to music. All they talked about was revolution: 'Black people get together, get strong, overthrow white society, and make life better.' 'Work together, pull together' ran their refrain. So Madeline and I decided to deal only with blacks.

Misgivings Sprout and Grow

We put a deposit on an apartment belonging to blacks. After waiting three months and listening to many excuses, they told us they had rented it to someone else. Before that, I had an apartment in a black neighborhood, and blacks broke in and stole everything I had. One night I was in an ice-cream shop talking on the phone long distance to my mother. Three black men came in and robbed the place. I didn't notice until I heard this black man behind me say, "Be cool, brother." I looked around, and he had a .45 automatic jammed in my back. My black brother indeed!

We saw that blacks preyed on blacks just as whites did. It's not color, not race; it's just people. It's sad and it's disillusioning. We looked again at the blacks we were associating with at Tufts. In the fraternities and sororities, there was no true brotherhood; neither did we find it in the Afro-American Society. Some of my associates found no problem with demolishing black women. Black girls would come to school. Their parents had sacrificed for years to get money to send them there. Then black men would introduce them to drugs. Some ended up trying to commit suicide.

Then we looked at all these young people around us, black and white. Some were junkies, some were alcoholics, and so many of them were just very much into themselves. And this was the generation in whose hands the world's future lay? Wherever we looked, we saw no answers, from blacks or whites.

Disillusionment Sets In

Misgivings were becoming disillusionment. Madeline defined her growing problem: "We had all these meetings, and in them they kept saying you didn't have to have any rules. Anything you wanted to do was okay. That's anarchy. You can't accomplish anything that way."

The Whiteheads with Tim, their onetime "blond, blue-eyed devil"

I agreed. My search had always been for guidelines by which mankind could live. Initially I had felt that if we were all black, all coming from the same place, united in a common cause, then it would work out. Then we saw that the blacks were no different from the whites—no better, no worse, just the same mixture of good and bad. Unity must have a basis other than race.

Obviously, we had to make some changes. Things were turning sour for us. One evening I recalled: "There was a film at Tufts that showed the size of the universe, the order of it. It amazed me, and I remember thinking at the time that that couldn't happen by accident. If there is that kind of order throughout the universe, there have to be guidelines that God set out for mankind."

We left Tufts, got married, and started our search for the God that made this orderly universe, planet Earth, and mankind on it.

During our search, we attended a Bible study meeting at the African Methodist Episcopal church. We took with us the book *Aid to Bible Understanding* that Tim had left with me months earlier. The discussion was on the cities of refuge. No one knew what they were until I read about them from the *Aid* book. Everyone was delighted until they learned that the book was published by Jehovah's Witnesses. The room became very quiet. And this was supposed to be a Bible study class?

Enlightenment Transforms Our Lives

We left and never went back. It made us see that apparently the only ones who knew what they were talking about were Tim and Jehovah's Witnesses. I remembered Tim's last name, looked up his telephone number, and called him. He started a regular home Bible study with us. And now even Madeline was delighted to speak to Tim—no more was he that "blond, blue-eyed devil."

Interesting things began to happen. I was working at a large engineering firm in Boston. They called me into the office and told me that if I would give up being a Witness and go back to college and get my master's degree, they would make me corporate vice president. I declined. Madeline and I were baptized as Jehovah's Witnesses in 1975, and Madeline started as a regular full-time pioneer.

I had one very gratifying experience at the engineering firm. I worked with Mike, a black engineer, there. He was quite a debater, and one of his pet subjects was evolution. On this particular day, with about five other engineers present, he was coming on strong about how you could prove evolution. Then he turned to me and said: "Isn't that right, Larry?"

So I was forced to make a stand. I hadn't really witnessed to a group before. I should have, but because I'm an engineer, I hid it. But Mike pulled me right out of the closet. So I told Mike: "Mike, I can't agree with

The Whiteheads find being active in the Christian ministry fulfilling

that." He nearly went into orbit! Later I gave him the Watch Tower publication *Did Man Get Here by Evolution or by Creation?* Mike devoured that book! Today he is an elder in a congregation of Jehovah's Witnesses in Richmond, Virginia.

Materialism Not Enough

When I quit the engineering firm in Boston in 1977, they called me in and told me that I was being foolish. They knew I was quitting because I wanted to do more as a Witness. I'll never forget this man standing at the window looking out over the city, saying: "Whitehead, you can be rich, you can make money, you can buy cars." He kept on and on. But I was 21 and had already bought two new cars and a home. I had achieved what at that time most people figured you would get by the time you were 40. There was nothing else for us to achieve here. The system had nothing else to offer materially.

It wasn't enough. It didn't satisfy, as the Bible warned many centuries ago: "A mere lover of silver will not be satisfied with silver, neither any lover of wealth with income. This too is vanity."—Ecclesiastes 5:10.

Later the Watchtower Society sent us to where the need for Witnesses was greater, Las Vegas. We stayed there for five and a half years. Both of us served as full-time ministers from time to time. There were periods when food was scarce, but we never neglected the basics: study, service, prayer. Like the apostle Paul, we knew how to be full and how to be empty.—Philippians 4:12.

In Las Vegas I started out working as a carpenter, then as draftsman for the phone company, and finally was made the state coordinator for the computerized project of Central Telephone Company. I later returned to Alexandria, Virginia. I worked for Xerox as a computer systems analyst, being sent into large corporations. I now have my own consulting business as a computer systems analyst.

Madeline and I are now serving in a congregation of Witnesses in Alexandria. I'm an elder there and the congregation secretary. Both Madeline and I are grateful to Jehovah for enlightening us to understand that no human power, black or white, is the answer to mankind's problems. (Psalm 146:2, 3) We are happy now to 'let the light of His kingdom shine' for the enlightenment of others who have eyes willing to see. (Matthew 5:14-16) *—As told by Larry Whitehead.*

Why Is It So Hard to Get Along With My Brother and Sister?

SIBLING rivalry—it's as old as Cain and Abel and as common among young people as the cold. Not that you really hate your brother or sister. Why, you might even begrudgingly admit having some affection for your sibling, as the following youths did:

"At times my sisters and brothers have arguments and I say I hate their guts, but I don't mean it. We really love each other."

"I guess I do love my brother even though I don't really show it."

"Deep down in my heart, where I cannot feel it now, I guess I love my brother. Sort of, I do."

Nevertheless, animosity obviously lurks beneath the surface of these sibling relationships. What may result? A 15-year-old girl confessed: "My sister and brother and I; we would get into so many fights—about nothing usually! Those fights were distressing to everyone in the family, and we were all unhappy." Some brothers and sisters are even openly hostile. (One teenage girl drew a picture of her brothers and sisters being lowered into a vat of hot tar.)

Why does sibling discord often exist?

In an article in *Seventeen* magazine, family therapist Claudia Schweitzer gives a basic reason why brothers and sisters are so often in conflict: "Each family has a certain amount of resources, some emotional and some material." The article continued: "When sibs fight, they're usually competing for these resources, which includes everything from parental love to money and clothes."

Yes, having a brother or a sister usually means sharing. Eighteen-year-old Camille and her five brothers and sisters, for example, must share three bedrooms. "I want to be by myself sometimes," Camille says, "and I'll want to shut them out, but they're always there." Of course, even Jesus Christ had an occasional need for privacy. (Mark 6:31) So you may resent it when a brother or a sister barges into your room without knocking, or when you do not have the room to yourself.

This can be a particularly thorny problem in stepfamilies when youngsters must share with strangers. "No one asked my brother or me if we wanted to have two stepsisters and a stepbrother move into our house," said one girl bitterly. "They just moved in one day and started acting as though they owned everything. . . . I wish they'd go back to where they came from."

Then there is the sharing of privileges and household responsibilities. Older youngsters may resent being expected to do the lion's share of the chores. Younger children may balk at being bossed by an older sibling or become jealous when older

siblings receive coveted privileges. 'My sister takes driving lessons and I can't,' laments a teenage girl from England. 'I feel resentful and try to make things difficult for her.'

How can this cycle of resentment be broken? Begin by trying to overcome any tendencies toward selfishness. That means 'seeking not your own advantage, but that of the other person.' (1 Corinthians 10:24) Rather than quibbling over personal "rights," be "ready to share." (1 Timothy 6:18) This may be very difficult. But one researcher reminds us: "The advantages of having siblings [including stepbrothers and stepsisters!] outweigh the disadvantages. The presence of siblings affords a situation in which the child can learn to get along well with other children. He learns the lessons of give-and-take, to share his possessions."

Sharing a room with a brother or a sister can create real frictions

Too Close for Comfort

Seventeen-year-old Diane grew up with four brothers and three sisters. She says: "If you see one another every single day, day in and day out . . . And if you watch the same person every day do the same thing that annoys you—that can get to you." At times, though, our own flaws add fuel to the fire. Young Andre says of himself: "The way you act at home is how you really are. When you go outside and associate with other people, sometimes you put on a whole different attitude. But when you're at home in an environment you're used to, you act the way you really are." Unfortunately, 'acting the way you really are' often means dispensing with politeness, kindness, and tact.

The book *The Private Life of the American Teenager* further observes: "It is often more difficult to get along with people who share some of our characteristics and who know all our shortcomings and pressure points." True, if you share a good quality with a brother or a sister, you may be drawn to that one. But what if you share negative qualities? Proverbs 27:19 says: "As in water face corresponds with face, so the heart of a man with that of a man." When we see our bad qualities reflected in a sibling, we often resent the reminder and become hostile.

How can you maintain peace? By following the Bible's counsel to 'put up with one another in love.' (Ephesians 4:2) Rather

than magnifying a sibling's faults and flaws, apply Christian love, which "covers a multitude of sins." (1 Peter 4:8) Instead of taking family members for granted and being abrasive or unkind, put away "wrath, anger, badness, abusive speech," and "let your utterance be always with graciousness."—Colossians 3:8; 4:6.

'Mom Likes You Best!'

Probably the greatest battle between siblings, though, is for the affection of their parents. Admits professor of psychology Lee Salk: "There's no way a parent can love all her children exactly the same because they are different human beings and inevitably elicit different reactions from us [parents]."

This proved true in Bible times. The patriarch Jacob (Israel) "loved Joseph more than all his other sons." His brothers became particularly resentful of this fact when Jacob "had a long, striped shirtlike garment made for" Joseph, evidently the type of garment worn by a person of rank. (Genesis 37:3) In time their jealousy erupted into murderous hatred. It may likewise hurt if your parents seem to favor one of your brothers or sisters. But some take out hurt feelings on their siblings!

Overcoming Jealousy

Sibling jealousy is often a result of the fact that "the inclination of the heart of man is bad from his youth up." (Genesis 8:21) And "out of the heart come wicked reasonings." (Matthew 15:19) A young woman named Lynn recalls how she became so jealous of a younger sister that when she broke her arm, Lynn accused her of doing so on purpose! The supposed reason? So that she could get out of helping Lynn fold sheets. Obviously, Lynn's hostile feelings were more a result of the deceptive reasonings of her heart than actual circumstances.

The same can be true when one is jealous because a sibling is favored by a parent. "Jealousy is rottenness to the bones." (Proverbs 14:30) And often there is no real reason for resentment to begin with. In the case of Jacob, remember that Joseph was the son of his beloved dead wife Rachel. Of course he felt especially close to this son! Yet Jacob's love for Joseph obviously did not exclude his other sons, for he expressed real concern for their welfare. (Genesis 37:13, 14) Your parents may similarly be drawn to one of your siblings, perhaps because of shared interests. This does not mean, though, that they do not love you. So if you feel resentment or jealousy, realize that your imperfect heart has simply got the better of you. Work to overcome such feelings.

Having a sibling does not necessarily mean sibling rivalry—especially if you make a real effort to apply Bible principles.* True, having siblings has its problems. But 'the advantages outweigh the disadvantages.'

* This will be discussed more fully in a future article.

In Our Next Issue

- *Facing the Loss of a Child*
- *Liberation Theology—A Solution for the Third World?*
- *Using Your Head —The African Way!*

When Memorizing Comes Easy

Mothers, Do You Realize How Easy It Is for Your Young Child to Memorize Scriptures?

"HUMPTY DUMPTY sat on a wall . . ." Then what happened? You know—everybody knows. We all learned about Humpty Dumpty when we were just little folk. The remarkable thing is that we still carry that nursery rhyme around with us to this day. Maybe now we are even teaching our own children who it was that "all the king's horses and all the king's men" could not put back together.

You have remembered that nursery rhyme—or others that may be used in your country—down till today for two very simple reasons: They were easy to memorize and they were fun. But memorizing is more than that to children. It is also

Highly Recommended by Schoolteachers

One sixth-grade teacher of gifted children feels very strongly about memorizing. He insists: "Let's face it, kids are memorizing a lot. Even very young ones pick up the words to dozens of songs, endless sports statistics, or the like. Such memorizing is often useless and sometimes harmful. Memorizing wholesome, ennobling things provides a sound pattern of thinking for youngsters. It is a wonderful discipline. It generates ideas, stimulates creativity. It makes a platform to build on later."

Another high school English teacher adds: "I have noticed that students who are not stimulated and challenged when very young tend to be one-dimensional and physically oriented by the time they reach junior high school. They often do not communicate well and can become dullards."

Your children, like you, will probably as long as they live retain some of the things they memorize. So why not teach them something they can use and that will help them as long as they live? Why not select a few Bible verses for them to memorize? Some Christian families are doing this with great joy and benefit.

They Can Do It and You Can Do It

Andrew's mother had helped him to memorize over 80 Bible verses word for word by the time he was six years of age.

"It wasn't a race," she says. "Our pace was very relaxed and natural. In fact, when someone finally asked, 'How many verses does he know?' I had to stop and add them up. Andrew enjoyed mastering new verses very much, and the list grew quickly."

But how did she do it? What books did she read first? Is there a trick to it?

"Oh, no, no," she objects. "Nothing could be easier. I just read him a verse a couple of times, then he repeats the verse after me a couple of times—like a wedding vow. Then we repeat this session a couple or three

times a week until he has it down. I was amazed at how much he liked to learn them and how quickly he picked them up!"

"That's all?"

"Yes, really, that's all there is to it. When people try to give me credit for being such a good teacher, I have to admit that I have not done anything special. I just keep putting new verses in front of my son, and he scoops them up like cookies."

"You mean your son really *likes* to memorize individual scriptures?"

"No, I do not mean he likes to—he *loves* to! My husband and I are positive, enthusiastic, and encouraging to Andrew, and he is very proud of his achievements. Other children may learn quicker or slower than our boy, but I am certain that all children would enjoy spending this sort of time with Mom or Dad."

Think About the Benefits to Your Child

As you teach your child what the Bible says, you will be "bringing [him] up in the discipline and mental-regulating of Jehovah." (Ephesians 6:4) You are planting God's thoughts in his young mind so that in time God's pattern of thinking will become your child's pattern of thinking. Let's see how that might work:

Perhaps you will choose to help your child memorize Matthew 24:14 first. This passage has worked well for others because it is one that children may often have heard. The first few times, you can just read the verse and then help your child to recite it. Then you can begin to add to his fund of understanding about it.

For instance, after he recites Matthew 24:14, you may mention what the "good news" is in a sentence or two. At a later sitting you could briefly define God's Kingdom. Another time you can describe a different area of the world where true Christians are also preaching and what the work is like there. Sessions can be brief, informal, and fun. There is no need to be a drill sergeant. Keep the atmosphere light and spontaneous. You may well invent a few family games along the way.

Patiently go over your child's verses a few times a week until he is really comfortable with them. In time he may not want to repeat any of his earliest verses any more because he knows them so well. That's fine —add a couple of fresh ones to keep his interest. About this time he may feel so confident about a favorite verse that he will be eager to share it at a congregation meeting. He may even delight in speaking up to someone whom his parents have met in their house-to-house preaching.

But do not rush him or force him. Young folk all grow at different rates. Some may know their verses very well but be more shy about expressing themselves outside the home. The important thing is, after all, not that your child impresses others but that you and he have a warm, loving time learning what God's Word says.

On other occasions, you may direct him to learn a verse that gives needed correction or discipline, perhaps one that highlights respect for parents or getting along peaceably with others. Scriptures on key Bible doctrines, such as Genesis 1:1 or Revelation 21:3, 4, also have their place.

In truth, of course, there are no verses you and your child will not enjoy and gain from because "all Scripture is inspired of God and beneficial for teaching, for reproving, for setting things straight, for disciplining in righteousness." (2 Timothy 3:16) Since it will help your child so much, be so easy for you, and so enjoyable for both of you, *why not start right away?*

From Our Readers

The World Since 1914

I really must thank you for the series of articles entitled "The World Since 1914." (March 8 through June 22, 1987) At school I had to write an essay on the way human relations have deteriorated because of modern civilization. In the first part, before describing modern civilization, I reviewed the situation after World War I. I took inspiration from these well-written articles. I obtained my best grade yet. I am 16 and in the 12th grade.

C.P.S., France

The World of Artificial Eyes

I always read my magazines from cover to cover. When I reached the article "Peering Into the World of Artificial Eyes" (August 8, 1986), I actually thought, 'What a strange thing to talk about.' Nevertheless, I read it. In January of this year I visited my optician for a routine eye check and found that I had a large, fast-growing malignant tumour in my right eye, and within a week I was in the hospital in Scotland for an operation. There were complications, and the eye had to be removed. I was so grateful for your article, which I immediately remembered. Although I received much loving care from the medical staff, I was not told a lot in detail about the nature of the operation. So your article has been of much help to me.

M. G., England

Salty Drink That Saves Lives

Thank you for all the marvelous articles you print on the many facets of everyday life. Recently, shortly after surgery and thinking I had a bladder infection, I drank so much water I caused a sodium depletion in my body. I didn't even know this was possible. I became violently ill. About the same time a friend who is a registered nurse called me and told me to drink "the salty drink that saves lives." (September 22, 1985) I began to get immediate relief. This kept me from having to be hospitalized again. I had remembered the article and had thought I would be using it on my grandchildren, not on myself.

G. S., United States

How Did Life on Earth Begin?

I am very grateful to you for the article "How Did Life on Earth Begin?" (January 22, 1987) This article strengthened my faith in Jehovah because it explained in simple terms how the universe came into existence by means of a Creator, and it clearly showed why evolution is not possible. This material will help me explain creation to others.

R. L., Italy

Just a Crush?

Your article "Who Says It's Just a Crush?" was very helpful. (January 8, 1987) When I was in school, I thought I loved one of my teachers for three years. I was one of his outstanding students, so he gave me extra attention, especially since I was shy. He was very special, and I still like him as a person, but I never knew how wrong it was to think I loved him till now. He is married, and it was very easy to start imagining what would happen if his wife died. I really appreciated that article and the following one on "How Can I Get Over a Crush?" (January 22, 1987) I used to cry because I missed him, and I even wrote poetry about him, which I've destroyed.

I. L., United States

Watching the World

Electronic Church Scandal

Former television evangelist Jim Bakker and his wife Tammy received $4.8 million in salary, bonuses and other payments from their TV ministry between January 1984 and March 1987, reported *The Charlotte Observer,* a North Carolina newspaper in the United States. Bakker resigned as head of the PTL (Praise the Lord) television ministry in March after admitting to "a sexual encounter" in 1980 with a young church secretary. Just before his confession, his wife revealed that she had become addicted to prescription drugs. Another TV evangelist, Jimmy Swaggart, commenting on the scandal surrounding the Bakkers said: "The Gospel of Jesus Christ has never sunk to such a low level as it has today." What really though has sunk—the gospel or the TV gospelers?

Aluminum Alert

"A leading group of British scientists is warning against using aluminium saucepans and aluminium-rich foods," says *The Sunday Times* of London. 'Scientists from the Medical Research Council's neuroendocrinology unit in Newcastle upon Tyne believe aluminium contamination of food and water is a possible cause of Alzheimer's disease, the most common form of senile dementia.' Although it was previously thought that the amount of aluminum absorbed from cooking pots was negligible, recent research showed a dramatic increase in aluminum release due to a chemical reaction when fluoride was present in cooking water or when cooking acidic foods such as tomatoes or cabbage. The discovery has raised questions over the policy in many areas of adding fluoride to water supplies to strengthen children's teeth.

Midday Naps

The need to nap is normal, researchers say. Somewhere between 1:00 and 4:00 p.m., most people experience a lull in their alertness, and productivity decreases. The phenomenon is due, not to eating or culture, as had formerly been thought, but to a shift in the human biological clock. At that time, people can fall asleep within a few minutes. While alertness and work performance did not increase for those who stopped for a midday nap, it did put them in a better mood. Children also were better behaved after a rest period, even though they might not have actually slept.

Baby-Food Risk

Infants with kidney problems and babies born prematurely are particularly at risk from traces of aluminum found in some baby foods, concludes a survey by the Trading Standards Department, Warwickshire, England. But it is stressed that the levels found are not a risk to healthy infants. Recent research in England and the United States suggests that aluminum could be dangerous for infants with defective kidneys, or for premature babies with underdeveloped organs. This is because the child is unable to excrete the aluminum, allowing the metal to build up in excessive quantities in the brain.

Death-Dealing Blood

Actor Danny Kaye died this past March. Yet, "the most significant aspect of his death escaped general notice," writes columnist Ray Kerrison. "The comedian died at the age of 74 in part because he once received transfusions of contaminated blood." His doctor disclosed that Kaye contracted non-A and non-B hepatitis from

transfusions he received four years previously when undergoing quadruple bypass surgery. "Thus the operation designed to save Danny Kaye's life became instead a sentence of death," says Kerrison. "Indeed, it is estimated that some 12 people (many of them hemophiliacs) die every day in the U.S. of diseases transmitted by tainted blood." Why? Because although blood can harbor many ailments, it is tested for only two —hepatitis B and the AIDS antibody—as it is not cost effective to test for more.

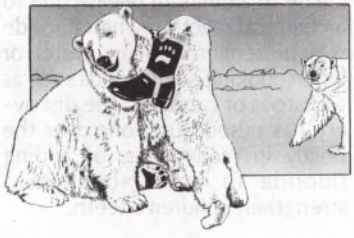
At the same time, former porn star Linda Lovelace underwent a liver transplant operation. What damaged her liver? Doctors believe it was also hepatitis, contracted through a blood transfusion given her after an auto accident in 1970.

"Better Off Fat"?

An increasing number of obesity experts are concluding that "many, if not most, people with serious weight problems can be hardly blamed for their rotund shape," reports *The New York Times*. "At least half of obese people—those who are more than 30 percent overweight—who try to diet down to 'desirable' weights listed in the height-weight tables suffer medically, physically and psychologically as a result, and would be better off fat," said Dr. George Blackburn, an obesity specialist at Harvard Medical School, according to the article. Still, Dr. Theodore B. Van Itallie, of St. Luke's-Roosevelt Hospital Center in New York City, said: "Body fatness responds to environmental conditions. As members of a sedentary and food-laden society, obesity-prone persons who wish to control their weight must learn to maintain a high level of physical activity and to eat defensively."

Nonslip Footwear

Every year Britain's hospitals treat half a million injuries caused by slipping on ice. Medical researchers plan to reduce this by learning a lesson from the polar bear. Its paws have remarkable nonslip properties. What is its secret? According to *The Sunday Times* of London, microscopic examination reveals a "pitted and pimpled" hard surface covering a



"soft and springy inside." Whereas stiff-soled leather and plastic shoes become harder in cold weather, and thick-soled inflexible boots tend to collect ice on their treads, scientists believe that a two-layer copy of the polar bear's paws provides the best grip on a slippery surface. "I don't believe there is any substance that will give total safety on a surface such as ice," comments Ford Motor Company's chief medical officer Dr. Derek Manning, "but our shoes can be much safer than they are now."

Big Eaters

"Italians eat poorly," notes *La Repubblica,* a Rome daily, "but it's not their fault." Why not? This and other questions pertaining to Italy's big eaters were discussed at a convention held earlier this year in Rome by the National Institute of Nutrition. Tullio Seppilli, a director at the University of Perugia, claims that the notorious Italian big eater is an unhappy individual whose life is divided "by two hedonisms—one that drives to eating and another that demands a fine physical form." In support of this, recent statistics show that while 8 million Italian adults make an effort to resolve their weight problems, 22 million remain dissatisfied with their diet and hate themselves but continue to gorge on sausages and chocolates. Lamenting the Italians' poor choice of diet, *La Repubblica* says that TV commercials are largely responsible because "they have succeeded in convincing children to devour first-rate rubbish."

Japanese Labor Crisis

Japan is facing its most serious labor crisis since World War II. Among the causes are the increasing cost of Japanese products due to the rise of the yen, falling demand in the international market, and competition with countries such as South Korea. To cut labor costs and retain a competitive edge, there is a scramble by Japanese companies to shift production overseas—leaving workers at home unemployed. "Japan's jobless rate has been hovering at 2.8 to 2.9 percent in recent months," says *Mainichi Daily News,* "the highest level since the government began compiling statistics in 1953." While these figures are low compared to other nations, the Japanese method of calculating them is different. Layoffs and people who work more than one hour in any week, for instance, are not included. The rate "would double to over 5 percent if calculated under the U.S. formula," states the paper.

The *Clownfish* and the *Anemone*

Symbiosis means "living together." When both partners are benefited, the practice is also known as mutualism. That's the way it is between Mr. Clownfish and Mr. Carpet Anemone.

How does the relationship work?

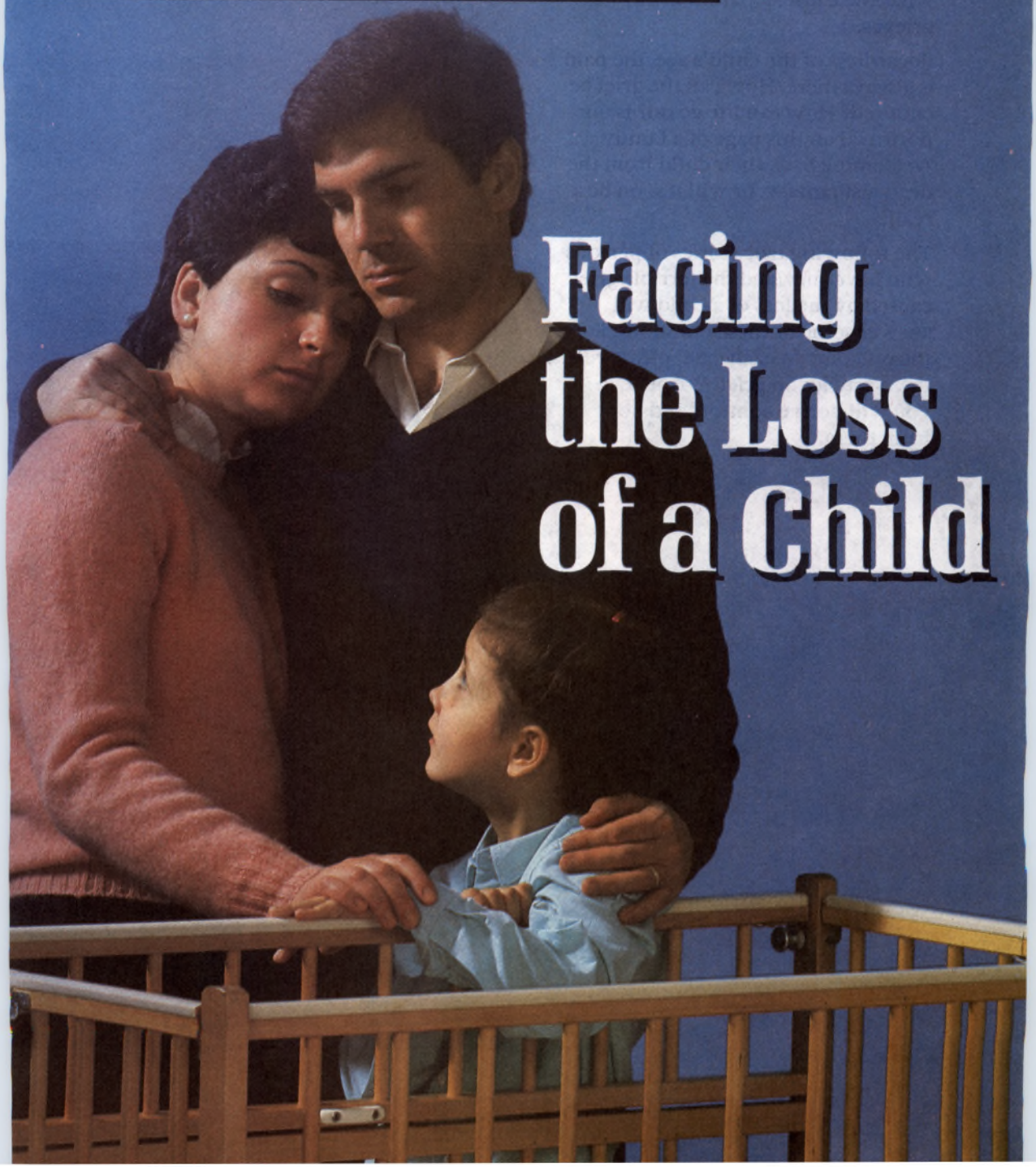
The tentacles of the anemone are covered with stinging cells. When predators are attracted to enter in pursuit of the fluttering clownfish, they are stung, killed, and eaten by the anemone. The clownfish, in turn, feeds on the scraps of food from the anemone —often even taking it from the anemone's mouth.

But why isn't the clownfish stung and eaten by its host, especially when the fish steals food from the mouth of its host?

Scientists have discovered that the clownfish's immunity is not because the carpet anemone recognizes the services rendered by its tenant. Rather, a change in the mucous covering of the fish inhibits the discharge of the anemone's venomous stinging cells. Mr. Anemone reaps benefits from the relationship, but Mr. Clownfish is the one that is in control of the operation.

Awake!

August 8, 1987



Facing the Loss of a Child

Millions of parents around the world have lost a child. Disease, famine, war, murder, suicide, accident, crib death, miscarriage, stillbirth—no matter what the cause, a parent always grieves.

Regardless of the child's age, the pain is always there. How can the grief be endured? How can life go on? Is our portrayal on this page of a family welcoming back their child from the dead just fantasy, or will it soon be a reality?

The following true stories of persons who have survived the terrible grief caused by the loss of a child will answer some of these questions. For the outcome in each case, please read these articles on grief. We believe you will derive comfort and hope from them.

"It Can't Be True!"

"MAY 31, 1982, was a beautiful day. The sun was shining, the sky was blue, and I thought this would be a perfect opportunity to clean up the yard. We had recently cut down the old Chinese elm, and there were still some sticks and branches left on the lawn. Then I remembered that our friend George had a mulcher that would make the work easier, so I gave him a call.

"George was an experienced pilot, and he loved to fly. So it was no surprise when he told me he was going to take some friends up and asked whether we would like to go for a ride. My wife Dianne and I decided that it would make a nice change after clearing up the yard. We took our three-year-old daughter with us. Maria, a lovely, bright child with dark-brown hair and eyes, was all excited.

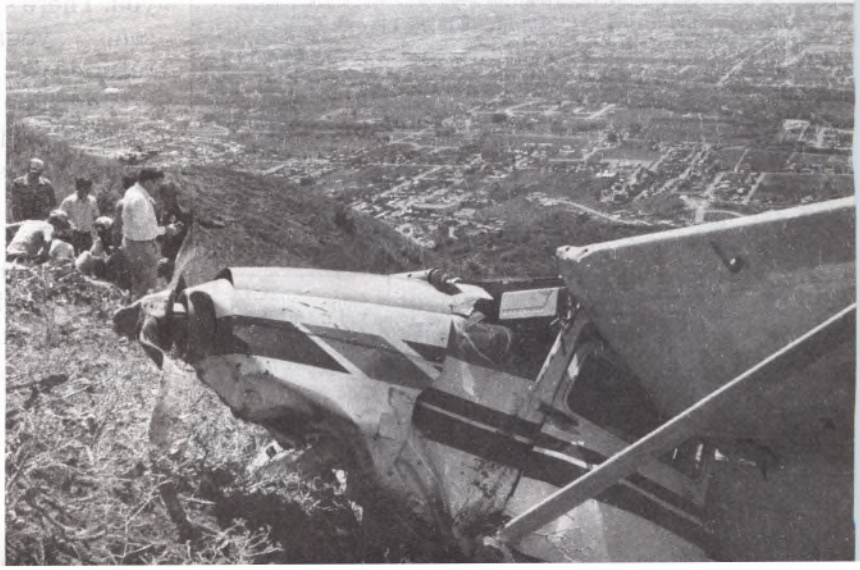
"When we got to the airport, another friend was waiting his turn for a ride, so we all piled into the four-seater plane. We flew over the lake and headed for the mountains. It was beautiful. We looked out and saw the familiar landmarks. Some people were having a picnic on a hill. Maria was thrilled. Then, as we were going over the crest of the hill, the plane was caught in a sudden strong downdraft of wind. The engine stalled and died, and the plane fell from the sky!

"All I could think of was trying to get between my wife, who had Maria on her lap, and the seat in front. I never made it —the plane hit the side of the mountain.

"I tried to get up but couldn't move. I could hear Dianne crying for help, but I couldn't do anything. All I could do was yell for help.

"Eventually, emergency medical teams came to get us off the mountain. Although we had made a textbook crash landing, George and the friend were dead. The rest of us were suffering from severe injuries.

The Daily Herald, Provo, Utah



Awake!® August 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 15

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

"It Can't Be True!" 3
"How Can I Live With My Grief?" 5
Expressions That Don't Always Comfort 11
Hope for the Dead, Consolation for the Grieving 13

Also in This Issue

Flowers—Wonders of Creation 16
Liberation Theology —A Solution for the Third World? 18
Crossword Puzzle 21
Young People Ask ... How Do I Make My Loneliness Go Away? 22
Using Your Head—The African Way! 25
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
"I Thought a Blood Transfusion Was Life, Not Death" 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

Maria had head and internal injuries. My father-in-law had the painful task of coming to my hospital bed to tell me that she had died—it was a stab to my heart. 'Why her? Why couldn't it have been me? It's not fair that a child like her has to die,' I thought. If only I had not accepted that ride . . .

"Dianne was in a very bad state with a broken back. Three weeks after the crash, she also died. I had lost my baby and my wife at one fell swoop. I thought I had lost everything. How was I going to survive?" —*As told by Jess Romero, New Mexico, U.S.A.*

"My son Jonathan was out on Long Island visiting friends. My wife, Valentina, didn't like for him to go out there. She was always nervous about the traffic. But he liked electronics, and his friends had a workshop where he could get practical experience. I was at home in West Manhattan. My wife was away visiting her family in Puerto Rico.

"I was dozing in front of the TV. 'Jonathan will be back soon,' I thought. Then the doorbell rang. 'That'll be him for sure.' It wasn't. It was the police and paramedics.

"'Do you recognize this driver's license?' the police officer asked. 'Yes, that's my son's, Jonathan's.' 'We've got bad news for you. There's been an accident, and . . . your son, . . . your son has been killed.' My first reaction was, *'No puede ser! No puede ser!'* —it can't be true!

"That bombshell opened a wound in our hearts that is still healing, nearly two years later."—*As told by Agustín Caraballoso, New York, U.S.A.*

"Back in the Spain of the 1960's, we were a happy family—in spite of religious persecution because of being Witnesses. There were María, my wife, and our three chil-

dren, David, Paquito, and Isabel, aged 13, 11, and 9 respectively.

"One day in March 1963, Paquito came home from school complaining of severe head pains. We were baffled as to what could be the cause—but not for long. Three hours later he was dead. A cerebral hemorrhage had snuffed out his life.

"Paquito's death took place 24 years ago. Even so, the deep pain of that loss stays with us to this day. There is no way that parents can lose a child and not feel that they have lost something of themselves —regardless of how much time passes or how many other children they may have."—*As told by Ramón Serrano, Barcelona, Spain.*

These are just a few of the millions of tragedies that strike families all over the world. As most grieving parents will testify, when death takes your child, it is truly an enemy.—1 Corinthians 15:25, 26.

But how did these bereaved persons manage in the cases just quoted? Can a normal life ever be possible after such a loss? Is there any hope that we might see our lost loved ones again? If so, where and how? These and other related questions will be considered in the following articles.

"How Can I Live With My Grief?"

TRAGEDY struck Bob and Diane Krych 18 years ago. Their six-year-old son, David, had a congenital heart problem. Diane tells the story:

"A doctor had advised that we have a test done within a year or so, to which we agreed. David was full of life, almost hyperactive. I remember that it was January 25, and David had been bothering his sister, upsetting her room. When he asked if he might go outside to play, I let him go.

"Some time later I heard an ambulance, and then a neighbor came running up the path, shouting, 'Diane, it's David, you had better come!' I went out, and there he was where they had laid him over the hood of a parked car. I could not move. I felt as if I were paralyzed. They took him away in the ambulance. But it was all in vain. His little heart gave out and he was gone."

Awake!: "How did this terrible loss affect you?"

Diane: "I went through a series of reactions—numbness, disbelief, guilt, and anger toward my husband and the doctor for not realizing how serious his condition was. I had been so upset with David that day. I had visitors coming to eat and a ten-week-old baby to care for. It was just

too much. And then the next thing I knew, they were taking my David to the hospital.

"I would not believe he was dead. I would not accept the words 'dead' and 'death.' As far as I was concerned, he had gone away on a journey. 'He's alive in God's memory and he's coming back,' I thought. So about seven weeks after he had died, I started to write letters to him. I wrote those letters for 13 years!"

How Long Does Grief Last?

Diane's long grief process supports what Dr. Arthur Freese states in his book *Help for Your Grief:* "Most experts feel the loss of a child produces a permanent bereavement in the parents, particularly the mother."

"Grief returns with the revolving year" was poet Shelley's sentiment. Yearly reminders of the lost loved one renew the pangs. Millions of people today can confirm that and ask, in effect, 'How can I live with my grief?' Yet grief is a healing process, though perhaps never completed. The acute grief does diminish, even though the sense of loss remains.

This opinion is confirmed by Harold and Marjorie Bird of Britain who lost their 19-year-old-son, Stephen, when he drowned ten years ago. To make matters worse, he was their only child, and his body was never found. Harold says about the grief process: "It is said that time heals, but in fact it only dulls the memory of the dear one. The only healing will come when we meet him again in the resurrection."

One scientific study of bereavement explained the grief process as follows: "The bereaved may swing dramatically and swiftly from one feeling state to another, and avoidance of reminders of the deceased may alternate with deliberate cultivation of memories for some period of time. People generally move from a state of disbelief to a gradual acceptance of the reality of the loss."

Dr. Freese introduces a ray of light into this somber subject. "One must always retain perspective—recognize that the vast majority of those who suffer grief and go through bereavement . . . come through the other side, recover and go on in pretty much the same physical state in which the pain and agony of the grief began."

In fact, in many cases the person may come out stronger. Why is that so? Because the grief experience has taught empathy—a better understanding of and identification with those who are bereaved. And since empathy goes far beyond sympathy, the grief survivor becomes an asset, a counselor, a consoler of others who suffer the loss of a loved one. As an example, Bob, whose son David died of heart failure, said: "We find that helping others bear their load of grief has also eased our own."

Why Guilt, Anger, and Recrimination?

Experts in the field of grief acknowledge that the reactions of guilt, anger, and recrimination that are often associated with bereavement are normal for this situation. Survivors try to find reasons when often there are none that are valid or logical. 'Why did it have to happen to me? What have I done to deserve it? If only I had . . . ' are some common reactions. Others turn against God with such thoughts as, 'How did God let this happen? Why would God do this to me?'

Here the Bible's answer comes to mind, "Time and unforeseen occurrence befall them all." Accidents can happen any-

The Process of Grief

This does not imply that grief has any fixed schedule or program. Grief reactions can overlap and take varying lengths of time, depending on the individual.

Early reactions:

Initial shock; disbelief, denial; numbness; guilt feelings; anger

Acute grief may include:

Memory loss and insomnia; extreme fatigue; abrupt changes of mood; flawed judgment and thinking; bouts of crying; appetite changes, with resultant weight loss or gain; a variety of symptoms of disturbed health; lethargy; reduced work capacity; hallucinations—feeling, hearing, seeing the deceased

Leveling-off period:

Sadness with nostalgia; more pleasant memories of the deceased, even tinged with humor

(Based on *Help for Your Grief,* by Dr. Arthur Freese, pages 23-6.)

where, at any time, and death is impartial. Certainly a God of love would not pick on anyone by taking away his child.—Ecclesiastes 9:11; 1 John 4:8.

Agustín and Valentina, mentioned in our opening article, still gave way to tears when they discussed the death of Jonathan with *Awake!* Did they have any recriminations? Valentina responded: "I was never in agreement that he should go to Long Island in someone else's car. I have to be honest. I laid the blame on Agustín. Now I realize that it was an irrational reaction, but at the time I kept thinking, 'If only Papa had not allowed him to go, he would still be alive.' I kept blaming him. I had to come out with it because it hurt me to keep it in."

Diane Krych's anger over David's premature death even expressed itself in resentment at animals. She told *Awake!:* "If I saw a dog or a cat walking in the street, I felt, 'That animal has a good heart beating in it. Why couldn't my son have had a good heart? Why should an animal be walking about and not my David?'"

The experts assure us that all these reactions, although often irrational, are natural. The questioning is a form of rationalizing, part of the process of reconciliation with the reality. Eventually, a stable outlook is attained, and common sense prevails. As Dr. Freese puts it: "The test of good grief—of adequately working through the emotional problems of mourning and grief, of accepting the death and looking honestly at all the feelings that go with it—is that the mourner finally tolerates these bad times with passing pain or only slight, faint, sorrowful thoughts."

This leads to a leveling off. Dr. Freese continues: "The ideal is for nostalgia and pleasant thoughts, an ability to talk about the deceased with honesty and affection, finally to take the place of the aching pain and the grief and the distress." At this point, the memories promote affection more than grief.

Facing the Loss of a Stillborn Child

Even though she already had other children, Monna was dearly looking forward to the birth of her next child. Even before the birth, it was a "baby I played with, talked to, and dreamed of."

The bonding process between mother and unborn child was powerful. She continues: "Rachel Anne was a baby who kicked books off my belly, kept me awake at night. I can still remember the first little kicks, like gentle, loving nudges. Every time she moved, I was filled with such a love. I knew her so well that I knew when she was in pain, when she was sick."

By openly sharing your grief, you help each other cope

Monna continues her account: "The doctor wouldn't believe me, until it was too late. He told me to stop worrying. I believe I felt her die. She just suddenly turned over violently. The next day she was dead."

Monna's experience is no isolated event. According to authors Friedman and Gradstein, in their book *Surviving Pregnancy Loss,* about one million women a year in the United States alone suffer an unsuccessful pregnancy. People often fail to realize that a miscarriage or a stillbirth is a tragedy for a woman, and she grieves —perhaps all her life. For example, Veronica, from New York City, now in her 50's, recalls her miscarriages and especially remembers the stillborn baby that was alive into the ninth month and was born weighing 13 pounds (6 kg). She carried it dead inside her for the last two weeks. As she said: "To give birth to a dead baby is a terrible thing for a mother."

The reactions of these frustrated mothers is not always understood, even by other women. A psychiatrist who lost her child by miscarriage wrote: "What I have learned in a most painful way was that before this happened to me, I really had no idea of what my friends had to bear. I had been as insensitive and ignorant toward them as I now feel people are to me."

Another problem for the grieving mother is the impression that her husband may not feel the loss as she does. One wife expressed it this way: "I was totally disappointed in my husband at the time. As

far as he was concerned, there really was no pregnancy. He could not experience the grief that I was going through. He was very sympathetic to my fears but not to my grief."

This reaction is perhaps natural for a husband—he does not undergo the same physical and emotional bonding that his pregnant wife does. Nevertheless, he suffers a loss. And it is vital that husband and wife realize that they are suffering together, although in different ways. They should share their grief. If the husband hides it, his wife may think he is insensitive. (See page 12.) So share your tears, thoughts, and embraces. Show you need each other as never before.

The Mystery and Grief of Crib Death

Millions of mothers live with a secret, daily fear. As one mother expressed it: "I pray every night that I will find my baby alive in the morning." What they fear is crib death, or SIDS (Sudden Infant Death Syndrome). Dr. Marie Valdes-Dapena, professor of pathology at the University of Miami, Florida, states that there are from 6,000 to 7,000 cases of SIDS annually in the United States alone. She adds: "There can be no question that this is a very real public health problem."

Crib death overtakes babies at night, often between the second and the fourth month of life. Science still has not come up with a satisfactory explanation, and even autopsies fail to supply a reason for the sudden death. It remains a mystery.*

The sequel to crib death is often a terrible feeling of guilt. So, what will help parents in cases of crib death? First of all, they must recognize that they could not have avoided the tragedy. SIDS is unpredictable and usually unavoidable. Therefore, there is no reason for any guilt feelings. Second, the parents' mutual support, trust, and understanding will help both of them cope with their grief. Talk about your baby with others. Share your feelings.

Grandparents Also Grieve

Grandparents suffer too, in a special

* A future issue of *Awake!* will examine SIDS in more detail.

Steps to Help You Overcome Your Grief

Each person has to work out the grief in his or her own way. The vital step is to avoid self-centered stagnation and self-pity. Some suggestions based on the experience of bereaved persons interviewed by *Awake!* are:

■ Keep busy and continue your routine of work and activity. Those who are Jehovah's Witnesses especially emphasized the value of attending Christian meetings and being involved in the ministry. Many expressed the great help they received from prayer.

■ Let your grief manifest itself; don't try to hold it in. The sooner you grieve and weep, the sooner you will pass the period of acute grief.

■ Don't isolate yourself; mix with people and allow them to mix with you. If it helps you, talk freely about your lost loved one.

■ As soon as possible, take an interest in other people and their problems. Try to help others, and you will help yourself.

What Can Others Do to Help?

Awake! correspondents had many interviews with bereaved parents in different countries. The following are some of the suggestions that were made for helping grieving families. Obviously, there has to be flexibility in their application, depending on the feelings of the bereaved.

1. Visit with the family from the very first day, and also invite them over to your place. Prepare meals for them. Keep this up for as long as is needed, not just the first few weeks.

2. Let the parents decide whether they want the clothes and other reminders of the dead child to be kept or stored elsewhere.

3. Talk about the dead child by name if the bereaved person indicates such a desire. Recall the happy and humorous aspects of the child's personality and life. Don't keep silent. The parents may want to talk about their loved one.

4. If too far away to offer personal help, write letters that encourage and console. Don't avoid the subject of the deceased person.

5. When appropriate, encourage the parents to keep active and maintain their former routine. Get them out of the house and doing things for others.

way. As one bereaved father expressed it: "They react not only to the death of a grandchild but to the grief of their own child."

Yet there are ways to make the grandparents' loss easier. First, take them into account. Their grandchild was an extension of them too. Therefore the grandparents should be accepted into the grieving process in their own way. Of course, that does not mean that they should take over without the consent of the parents. But if they want to be included, and usually they do, they should be welcomed.

In this brief coverage of grief, we have tried to understand the feelings of the bereaved. But there is still another aspect to consider. How can others help, especially with their remarks? And how can husbands express their grief? Please see the next article.

A Grandmother Writes:

"Having lost in death my dear parents, a brother, a sister, my devoted lifelong companion, friend-sweetheart-husband, my Jim, whom I met and loved at 13 years of age, and my precious little grandson Stuart Jamie—I can say there is no sorrow, no pain, no torturous grief, which comes flooding through me even as I write, as the death of a child."

—Edna Green, England, on the death of her grandson, aged two years nine months.

Expressions That Don't Always Comfort

IF YOU have ever felt deep grief, have you at times felt hurt by remarks made by others? While most people seem to know what to say to give comfort, many bereaved persons can recall remarks that did not help. Ursula Mommsen-Henneberger, writing in the German *Kieler Nachrichten,* stated that some parents "are deeply hurt when outsiders say: 'But you still have the other children, don't you?'" She answers: "The others may be a consolation but they aren't a substitute."

Bereavement counselor Kathleen Capitulo told *Awake!:* "Another expression to avoid is, 'I know what you are feeling.' The truth of the matter is that no one really knows what another person is going through. However, you can validate what they are feeling. You can assure them that their feelings are natural."

Abe Malawski, as reported in the book *Recovering From the Loss of a Child,* "strongly feels it takes someone who has lost a child to know what losing a child is." He stated: "You can have fifteen children, and it will make no difference. You can never replace a child."

In the case of a miscarriage or stillbirth, other expressions, though sincere, that do not upbuild are: "You'll soon get pregnant again and forget all about this." "It's better this way. The baby would have been deformed anyway." "It's a blessing in disguise." In the cruel moment of loss, these clichés, no matter how well intentioned, cannot ease the agony.

Religious platitudes offered by some clergymen are another irritant to the bereaved. Saying that 'God wanted another angel' paints God as cruel and selfish and amounts to blasphemy. Furthermore, it has no support in logic or in the Bible.

Should a Christian Mourn?

What about Christians who lose a child in death? At times some quote the words of Paul to the Thessalonians: "You should not grieve like the rest of men, who have no hope." (1 Thessalonians 4:13, *New English Bible*) Did Paul forbid grief and mourning? No, he merely said that the Christian who has a hope does not grieve *in the same manner* as those who have no hope.—John 5:28, 29.

To illustrate this point, how did Jesus react when Mary told him that Lazarus was dead? The account tells us: "Jesus, therefore, when he saw [Mary] weeping and the Jews that came with her weeping, groaned in the spirit and became troubled." Then, when he was taken to where the dead man lay, "Jesus gave way to tears." So is it wrong to grieve? Does it show a lack of faith in God's promise of a resurrection? No, rather it indicates a deep love for the dead person.—John 11:30-35; compare John 20:11-18.

Another approach that can be disturbing is the condescending one that assures the

bereaved, 'Time is the great healer.' Also, avoid the question, "Have you got over it yet?" As one British mother said: "Those who ask, 'Have you got over it yet?' do not really understand what it is to lose someone as close as a child. We will not get over it until we have him back in the resurrection." Perhaps Shakespeare's phrase is apt: "Everyone can master a grief but he that has it."

Sometimes the father becomes the victim of a thoughtless attitude. One bereaved father became angry when people asked: "How is your wife doing?" He stated: "They would never ask how the husband is. . . . It is so wrong, so unfair. A husband feels it just as much as the wife. He grieves, too."

'Keep a Stiff Upper Lip'?

In many cultures the idea is taught that men especially should not manifest their emotions and grief but should 'keep a stiff upper lip.' The 18th-century English author Oliver Goldsmith spoke of "the silent manliness of grief." But is that silent manliness necessarily the best way to work out one's grief?

In her book *The Bereaved Parent,* Harriet Sarnoff Schiff cites the case of her husband: "Here was a man, a father, who watched his child being buried and according to convention was asked by society to 'keep a stiff upper lip.'" She adds: "He paid dearly for maintaining a stiff upper lip. As time went on, instead of coming out of his state of grieving, he sank deeper and deeper into sorrow."

The husband described his feelings, and maybe others can identify with them. "I feel as if I am walking across the Arctic snowcap. I am very tired. I know if I lie down to rest I will fall asleep. I know if I fall asleep I will freeze to death. I just don't care. I can't fight my tiredness any more."

So, what is Harriet Schiff's advice? "To forget all about that good old Anglo-Saxon ethic of stoicism and to cry. Let the tears come. . . . They help wash away sorrow." The writers of *Surviving Pregnancy Loss* offer counsel that applies to both women and men: "Stoicism may be greatly admired by some, *but only by grappling with grief can one eventually be free of it.*" (Italics ours.) Otherwise, the danger exists of relapsing into what is termed "inadequate grieving," which may have disastrous consequences for years to come.

Inadequate grieving is incomplete grieving, when the person puts the mourning process on hold instead of allowing it to flow through to acceptance of the separation. It can manifest itself in at least three ways—as repressed, delayed, and chronic mourning. What can be done to help?

Professional counsel may be needed. A supportive family doctor or spiritual counselor may be the answer. Perceptive family members may also help. The person needs help to keep moving through the grieving process.

Thus, Jess Romero admits he wept openly at the loss of his daughter and his wife in the plane crash. He told *Awake!:* "After some weeks my sisters took me from the hospital to the house, and as I entered I saw my daughter's picture on the wall. My brother-in-law saw that I was affected by it and he said, 'You go right ahead and cry.' So I did. I was able to unburden myself of some of my pent-up grief."

While the grieving process can heal some of the hurt, there is only one lasting solution for most bereaved persons—to see their loved one again. So is there a hope for the dead? Will there be a resurrection? Please read the final article in this series.

Hope for the Dead, Consolation for the Grieving

JESS Romero, mentioned in our opening article, eventually remarried. As for Agustín and Valentina Caraballoso, Jonathan's death still hurts, but a calm has set in. Ramón and María Serrano from Spain still come to tears 24 years after Paquito's death. But in all these cases, what has kept them going? They answer: "The hope of the resurrection!"

But what exactly do we mean by "resurrection"? Who will be resurrected? When? And how can we be sure?

Hope for the Dead—As Jesus Taught

During his ministry on earth, Jesus resurrected several persons. (Mark 5:35-42) This served as a token of the great resurrection that will take place when the earth is once again totally under God's rule, as millions request when they pray: "Let your kingdom come. Let your will take place, as in heaven, also upon earth."—Matthew 6: 9, 10.

An example of God's power in this respect was when Jesus resurrected his friend Lazarus. At the same time, the account clarifies the state of the dead. Jesus said to his disciples: "Lazarus our friend has gone to rest, but I am journeying there to awaken him from sleep." Not getting the meaning, the disciples said: "Lord, if he has gone to rest, he will get well." They imagined he was saying that Lazarus was just asleep when, in fact, he was dead. Thus, Jesus left no room for doubt: "Lazarus has died."

Notice, please, that Jesus made no reference to any immortal soul passing on to another state or realm. He was not influenced by Greek philosophy but by clear Bible teaching in the Hebrew Scriptures. Lazarus was asleep in death and when Jesus arrived had already been four days in the memorial tomb. So, what hope was there for him?

When Jesus spoke to Lazarus' sister Martha, he told her: "Your brother will rise." How did she answer? Did she say that his soul was already in heaven or elsewhere? Her response was: "I know he will rise in the resurrection on the last day." She also held to the Biblical teaching of a resurrection to life on earth. Jesus gave her even greater reason for faith by saying: "I am the resurrection and the life. He that exercises faith in me, even though he dies, will come to life." Then, to prove his point, he went to Lazarus' tomb and cried out loudly: "Lazarus, come on out!" What happened?

The historical account states: "The man that had been dead came out with his feet and hands bound with wrappings, and his countenance was bound about with a cloth. Jesus said to them: 'Loose him and let him go.'"—John 11:1-44.

Therein lies the hope that has helped

many of the bereaved persons interviewed by *Awake!* That same hope sustains them to look forward to the near future when the earth will be a renewed paradise and Jesus' hope-inspiring words will be fulfilled: "Do not marvel at this, because the hour is coming in which all those in the memorial tombs will hear his voice and come out, those who did good things to a resurrection of life, those who practiced vile things to a resurrection of judgment." —John 5:28, 29.

Diane Krych, who relates the death of her son David in our second article, went through extreme grief and denial reactions. This was evidenced by the letters she wrote to David, and kept, for 13 years. She stopped writing when she faced the reality of the death of her own father, whom she had nursed. (*Awake!* is not recommending letter writing as a form of relief. However, we quote the first letter to illustrate how the resurrection hope was her anchor and has sustained her ever since.)

Dearest David,

You have been sleeping for 46 days now. It feels like years since I've seen you and held you. But the days for your sleep are limited. I wish I knew the number because I'd mark one off each day. For us, it's a long, hard, lonesome wait, but for you it will seem like a few minutes. I'm thankful for that. We're looking forward to the day when Jehovah will wake you from your sleep in the new order. We will have the biggest party you have ever seen. It will last three days at least. Everyone we know will be invited. It will be your party. I only hope we don't have to wait too long. I can't wait to hold you in my arms, David. We all miss you terribly. The house is empty without you. Nothing will be the same until you're back home with us.

So, my precious son, we'll try to be patient and wait on Jehovah for your return, and in the meantime, we will write you little notes to fill you in on what happens while you're asleep.

With all my love,

Mommy

"My Favorite Text Is . . . "

Awake! has interviewed parents and youngsters regarding the death of a child in the family.* Time and again, in explaining how they have coped with their grief, they have said: "Let me tell you my favorite text." If you are grieving, maybe these texts will also help you.

Fourteen-year-old Yunhee, from Seoul, Republic of Korea, died of leukemia in 1985. Her father, Chun Kwang-kook, explained to *Awake!* how he consoled Yunhee in her last weeks of life: "I told her about Lazarus. Jesus said Lazarus was sleeping, and as with him, when Jesus calls, 'Yunhee! Wake up!' she will arise from sleep also."

Janet Hercock, from England, was 13 when she died of cancer in 1966. She was survived by her parents and two brothers, David and Timothy. David told *Awake!* which text was most helpful to him: "It was Acts 17:31, which states: 'Because [God] has set a day in which he purposes to judge the inhabited earth in righteousness by a man whom he has appointed, ***and he has furnished a guarantee*** to all men in that he has resurrected him from the dead.' At

* A future issue of *Awake!* will consider a child's reaction to the loss of a brother or a sister.

The Bible promises that the dead, like Maria and David, will be resurrected

the funeral, the speaker stressed that Jesus' resurrection is our guarantee of a future resurrection. That has been a great source of strength for me."

In December 1975 young George, just 14 years old, took his father's rifle and shot himself. How did George's father, Russell, take this loss of his son by suicide?*

"Certain scriptures became an anchor for me. For example, the words in Proverbs 3:5: 'Trust in Jehovah with all your heart and do not lean upon your own understanding.' To some extent I was leaning on my own understanding in trying to reconcile myself with what had happened."

The Morgan family, from England, were in Sweden when their son Darrall suddenly became ill. An emergency operation was performed in Stockholm. Eventually he was flown back to England, where he died shortly before his 24th birthday. His mother Nell says: "One scripture that stands out in my mind is Matthew 22:32, where Jesus quoted God as saying: 'I am the God of Abraham and the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob.' Then he continued: 'He is the God, not of the dead, but of the living.' I know that those words mean that Darrall is retained in God's memory and will return in the resurrection."

Hope for the Dead—Soon a Reality

Bible prophecy indicates that we are near the time when God will take action to restore peace and everlasting life to obedient mankind. God promises: "I will change their mourning into exultation, and I will comfort them and make them rejoice away from their grief." "'Hold back your voice from weeping, and your eyes from tears, for there exists a reward for your activity,' is the utterance of Jehovah, 'and they will certainly return from the land of the enemy [death].'"—Jeremiah 31:13-17.

At that time Jehovah will progressively restore to life through the resurrection those who have died throughout man's history. Under the heavenly government of God's new system, they will have the opportunity of choosing everlasting life by obedience to God's commands for life at that time. Thus, if we turn to the Bible, we will find that there is a true hope for the dead and consolation for the living.—Acts 24:15; Revelation 20:12-14; 21:1-4.

* The subject of suicide and parental grief will be covered in a future issue of *Awake!*

Flowers
—*Wonders of Creation*

WHAT a wonder it is to plant seeds of different kinds in the same soil and then later see flowers of such variety and beauty! Their gorgeous displays of color, and their fragrance, are a delight!

True, some may say that the color and fragrance of flowers are necessary to attract insects that pollinate the plants. But if that were the only reason for such beauty, variety, and fragrance, why is it that flowers are such a source of delight for humans? Why are they also such a source of peace of mind and well-being for us?

Without a doubt, hearts are gladdened by the sight of flowers. A colorful bouquet can immediately brighten the day of a wife or a mother, cheer a sick friend, lift a depressed heart, even cause friendship to sprout and love to flourish. Walking through a field decorated with flowers surely is enriching. And what window has not been beautified or kitchen enhanced or living room transformed by the presence of lovely, delicate flowers? How much less pleasant the world would be without flowers!

The 250,000 varieties of flowers did not just happen. They are an expression of the love that our Creator, Jehovah God, has for the human family. And although the earth today is marred by man, the time is soon coming when it will be restored to the Paradise that God purposed for it. Then, as God's inspired Word foretells: "The wilderness and the dry land shall be glad, the desert shall rejoice and blossom; like the crocus it shall blossom abundantly, and rejoice with joy and singing."—Isaiah 35:1, 2, *Revised Standard Version.*

Clockwise from top left:

hibiscus, African daisy, hybrid tea rose, water lily

Liberation Theology

—A Solution for the Third World?

By "Awake!" correspondent in Mexico

TODAY, many Third World countries in Africa, Asia, and Latin America are impoverished and hindered in countless ways. People in many of these lands accuse their existing governments and local religious leaders of oppression. Others blame their current problems on foreign debt. However, there has arisen what some consider to be a solution for the Third World —*liberation theology*.

On December 8, 1986, more than 2,000 persons—mostly Catholics—met at Mexico City's National Autonomous University of Mexico (UNAM) to discuss "Liberation Theology in the Third World." The speakers—both Catholic and Protestant—were part of a group of religious scholars who were meeting in Oaxtepec, Mexico, for the Second Ecumenical Assembly of Third World Theologians. The first was held in Sri Lanka in 1981. What was the purpose of these meetings? To discuss the progress and future of liberation theology.

What impact is liberation theology having in the Third World? Is it accomplishing its goals? Does it have a future? The answers to these questions can better be understood by first examining what liberation theology is and what it intends to accomplish.

Liberation Theology

According to the Mexico City newspaper *La Jornada,* Brazilian Catholic theologian Frei Betto says that liberation theology is a "critical reflection on the practice of liber-

"It is impossible to live our faith in isolation from politics."—Frei Betto

"The most controversial liberation theologian," Leonardo Boff, was silenced by the pope for 11 months

ating the poor, having as basis the Bible, Christian tradition, and the teachings of the ecclesiastical magisterium." But what method is deemed necessary for this "practice" of liberation?

Liberation theologians agree that the use of force—physical violence—is the solution in some countries. So even revolutions against existing governments, such as those in Nicaragua and the Philippines, are not only approved by liberation-theology supporters but encouraged. This means active involvement in politics. Frei Betto claims: "It is impossible to live our faith in isolation from politics." But what is the basis for their belief?

The Bible is said to be a source of "inspiration" in support of liberation theology. Peruvian liberation theologian Gustavo Gutiérrez—considered to be the "father of liberation theology"—says that "the liberation of Israel is a political action, the breaking away from a situation of . . . misery and the beginning of the construction of a just and fraternal society."

Yet, much more important to liberation theologians is what they call "base communities." These are groups where "pastoral care" of the poor is combined with education and calls for political action. In Brazil alone more than four million Catholics are members of some 70,000 base communities. Yes, action *is* being taken on the part of Third World theologians to achieve their goals.

Liberation Theology and the Vatican

The development of liberation theology, however, has not slipped by without controversy. On August 6, 1984, the Vatican issued its *Instrucción Sobre Algunos Aspectos de la Teología de la Liberación* (Instruction on Some Aspects of Liberation Theology), condemning it as "a perversion of the Christian message." It states that "systematically or deliberately resorting to blind violence, from wherever it may come, should be condemned."

Then in 1985 the Vatican took sharp action against "the most controversial liberation theologian," Brazilian Franciscan priest Leonardo Boff, sentencing him to one year of "penitential silence." But 11 months later a change occurred.

According to *Newsweek* magazine, 'Rome had taken a new stand on liberation theology.' Boff was granted "amnesty" by the pope, and on March 22, 1986, a toned-down *Instrucción Sobre Libertad Cristiana y Liberación* (Instruction on Christian Freedom and Liberation) was sent out from the church's headquarters. It said that it is "fully legitimate that those who suffer oppression from the holders of wealth or of political power should act with morally licit means, in order to obtain the structures and institutions in which their rights may be truly respected." "Armed struggle" was now deemed permissible. Pope John Paul II followed up this instruction with a letter to the Brazilian bishops stating that "Liberation Theology is not only opportune but also useful and necessary for Latin America." But why the change in attitude?

According to the Catholic Church, the release of the second instruction was in order "to respond to the anxiety of contemporary man as he endures oppression and yearns for freedom."

There are those who feel, however, that the church miscalculated the momentum

"Liberation Theology is . . . useful and necessary for Latin America."

—Pope John Paul II

Jesus Christ was not interested in mixing religion and politics

of liberation theology and was taken by surprise. After Boff was penalized, two cardinals and four bishops traveled to Rome to defend him. Ten bishops signed a letter calling his punishment a blow to human rights. And Catholic priests all over the Third World seemed to be immersed in "liberation work."

Who Is Right—The Church or Its Theologians?

It is apparent that the church, confronted with divisive elements within its ranks, is trying hard to uphold its authority. Boff and others are fighting hard to remold the church into what they think it should be.

But both have failed. In what respect? When asked what basis is used to measure the truthfulness of tradition and church dogma, Gustavo Gutiérrez explained to *Awake!* that truth "is a discernment of acceptance of a Christian community." Yes, among other things, popular opinion and human wisdom are a basis for their argumentation, while the Bible is left in the shadows. This should never be. Why not?

Liberation Theology and the Bible

The Bible, and the Bible alone, is "inspired by God" and should "be used for teaching, for refuting error, for guiding people's lives and teaching them to be holy." (2 Timothy 3:16, *The Jerusalem Bible*) The Bible also warns that 'the wisdom of this world is foolishness in God's sight.' (1 Corinthians 3:19) So, what does God's Word have to say about liberation theology?

Although the Bible does not use the term "liberation theology," it does speak of liberation. In fact, one of the Bible's strongest messages to mankind is that of liberation. (Romans 8:12-21) Yet, it must be remembered that the liberation of Israel from Egypt was through divine intervention. But when the Israelites acted independently of God, they were condemned by him and suffered.

Today, active religious participation in social movements often results in violence. But Jesus Christ was not interested in mixing religion and politics. When the apostle Peter resorted to "the sword" to defend God's Son, Jesus rebuked him by saying: "Return your sword to its place, for all those who take the sword will perish by the sword." (Matthew 26:51, 52) This does not mean, however, that there is no hope that righteousness will be restored to earth.

True Liberation

According to the Bible's promise, at God's appointed time he will intervene in human affairs. "The wicked . . . will be cut off from the very earth; and as for the treacherous, they will be torn away from it." (Proverbs 2:22) What will become of those who desire freedom from poverty and injustice? "The meek ones themselves will possess the earth, and they will indeed find their exquisite delight in the abundance of peace. The righteous themselves will possess the earth, and they will reside forever upon it." —Psalm 37:11, 29.

Would you not enjoy living on earth under those marvelous conditions? Picture in your mind a world without poverty, international strife, racial discrimination, or oppression. But do not stop there. God's Word guarantees that he will also remove sickness, pain, and sorrow. Even death will be a thing of the past! Will this not be the greatest possible expression of liberation?—Revelation 21:4.

crossword puzzle

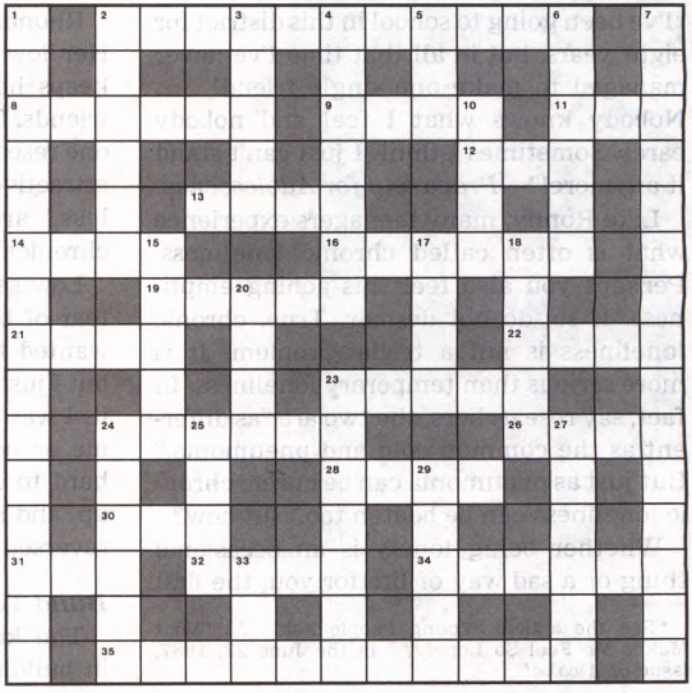
Clues Across

2. What Jehovah exercises over all the universe
8. A male descendant of Manasseh (Joshua 17:2)
9. First musical wind instrument mentioned in the Bible (Genesis 4:21)
11. The family head of certain returning Babylonian exiles (Ezra 2:57)
12. Used for keeping a door shut (Jeremiah 49:31)
13. This Canaanite confederate of Abraham helped him rescue Lot (Genesis 14:13-24)
14. Unclothed (Ezekiel 16:39)
16. Grown-ups
19. He tricked Jacob into marrying Leah before Rachel (Genesis 29:22-28)
21. An adherent of a Hindu philosophy
22. Upon returning home, the prodigal son was given one by his father (Luke 15:22)
23. Dionysius, who became a Christian after hearing Paul's defense, held this position in the Athenian Areopagus (Acts 17:34)
24. The outermost garment worn by most Israelites (Deuteronomy 8:4)
26. Month in which festival was held in remembrance of the release from Egypt (Exodus 34:18)
28. One who entertains guests (Romans 16:23)
30. This son of Bani was among those who put away their foreign wives (Ezra 10:10, 11, 34)
31. Where travelers and their animals could find accommodations (Luke 10:34)
32. A Horite sheikh in Seir (Genesis 36:30)
34. One of seven sons of Saul killed by the Gibeonites to expiate Saul's bloodguilt (2 Samuel 21:5-9)
35. Site of Solomon's temple [2 words] (2 Chronicles 3:1)

Clues Down

1. The invitation given to spirit-anointed sons of God [2 words] (Hebrews 3:1)
2. Made widely known (Acts 4:17)
3. Very fat Moabite king killed by Ehud (Judges 3:17-21)
4. Southernmost point reached by Chedorlaomer when invading Canaan (Genesis 14:5, 6)
5. Open space (Nehemiah 6:1)
6. Longs (Psalm 17:12)
7. It can safeguard one from following a wrong course [2 words] (Proverbs 2:11-19)
10. The mountain from which the curses were pronounced for breakers of God's Law (Deuteronomy 11:29)
15. One of David's mighty men (2 Samuel 23:25)
17. Peter and John's abilities caused people to recognize "that they ---- to be with Jesus" (Acts 4:13)
18. A descendant of Saul through Jonathan (1 Chronicles 8:33-35)
20. Jesus taught the illustration of the sower from this vessel (Mark 4:1-9)
23. The northern and the southern kingdom of Israel had rulers by this name at the same time (2 Kings 1:17)
24. A people defeated by Uzziah with Jehovah's help (2 Chronicles 26:1, 7)
25. Where Moses was saved and other newborn sons perished (Exodus 1:22–2:10)
27. A place where Israel camped on the way to Canaan (Numbers 21:19)
29. A series of steps
33. The wilderness where Moses and Aaron sinned and lost the privilege of entering the Promised Land (Numbers 27:12-14)

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS PAGE 27



How Do I Make My Loneliness Go Away?

ARE you worried when you come down with a cold? Probably not. You know that you will get over it. But what if your cold symptoms persist? Then you may have something more severe than a passing cold, and you do well to be concerned.

The same holds true when you feel lonely. Most bouts of loneliness are temporary.* But sometimes the gnawing pain of loneliness persists. There seems to be no way out.

Ronny, a high school student, relates: "I've been going to school in this district for eight years, but in all that time I've never managed to make one single friend! . . . Nobody knows what I feel and nobody cares. Sometimes I think I just can't stand it anymore!"—*Preparing for Adolescence.*

Like Ronny, many teenagers experience what is often called chronic loneliness. Perhaps you also feel this aching emptiness. If so, do not despair. True, chronic loneliness is not a trivial problem. It is more serious than temporary loneliness. In fact, say researchers, the two are "as different as the common cold and pneumonia." But just as pneumonia can be cured, chronic loneliness can be beaten too. But how?

Whether being lonely is an occasional thing or a sad way of life for you, the first step in finding a cure is understanding its cause. Ancient King Solomon observed: "A man of understanding is the one who acquires skillful direction."—Proverbs 1:5.

Sixteen-year-old Rhonda pinpoints the most common cause of chronic loneliness in saying: "I think the reason why I feel very lonely is because—well you can't have friends if you feel badly about yourself. And I guess I don't like myself very much."—*Lonely in America.*

Rhonda's loneliness comes from within. Her low self-esteem forms a barrier that keeps her from opening up and making friends. Do you share her sentiments? Says one researcher: "Thoughts such as 'I'm unattractive,' 'I'm uninteresting,' 'I'm worthless,' are common themes among the chronically lonely."

Low self-esteem, in turn, may result in fear of being rejected. Recalls Steven: "I wanted to talk about my lonely feelings, but I just did not know the words to express it. I was afraid that people would laugh at me or not take me seriously. It was just hard to open up." Thus, some teens close up, and suffer in silence. How can this be reversed?

Build Your Self-Respect

The key to overcoming loneliness lies in building self-respect. The apostle Paul

* See the article "Young People Ask . . . 'What Makes Me Feel So Lonely?'" in the June 22, 1987, issue of *Awake!*

wrote: "For through the undeserved kindness given to me I tell everyone there among you not to think more of himself than it is necessary to think." (Romans 12:3; compare Matthew 19:19.) This indicates that a measure of self-respect is necessary. The Bible, therefore, warns against not only thinking *too much* but also thinking *too little* of yourself.

After all, Jehovah endowed man with godlike qualities. (Genesis 1:26) So to some extent you have those attractive qualities within you. Are you humble, modest, teachable? Or generous, compassionate, kind? Do not blind yourself to those assets. Perhaps you can also develop other useful skills and assets. True, there may be things about you that you do not like, your looks for example. But why put yourself down for something that you cannot change? Work, instead, on unfavorable qualities that you *can* change, such as impatience, a bad temper, or selfishness. Take the time to develop what the Bible calls "the new personality," characterized by kindness, lowliness of mind, and mildness. (Colossians 3:9-12) Your self-respect will grow!

Furthermore, as you learn to like yourself, others will be drawn to your appealing qualities. But just as you can only see the full colors of a flower after it unfolds, so others can only fully appreciate your qualities if you open up to them. 'But how can I do that?' you may ask.

"Widen Out" to Others

'The best advice for a lonely person,' says a recent publication from the U.S. National Institute of Mental Health, is 'get involved with other people.' This advice harmonizes with the Bible's counsel to "widen out" and show "fellow feeling," or empathy. (2 Corinthians 6:11-13; 1 Peter 3:8) It works. One study, published in the journal *Adolescence,* reveals that 'teens who show concern in the welfare of others are not as lonely as teens who do not.' Why? Caring for others not only gets your mind off your own loneliness but motivates others to take

Your appearance can affect how others feel about you

an interest in *you*. People will often respond by giving you kindness in return. (Proverbs 11:25) How, then, can you start?

Breaking the Ice

Nineteen-year-old Natalie decided that she would do more than sit back and wait for people to say hi. 'I have to be friendly too,' she says. 'Otherwise people will think I'm stuck-up.' So start with a smile. The other person might smile back.

The next step, striking up a conversation, is harder. Lillian, age 15, admits: "Going up to strangers for the first time was really scary. I was afraid that they wouldn't accept me." How does Lillian start conversations? "I ask simple questions," she says, "like, 'Where are you from?' 'Do you know so and so?' We both may know a person, and before long we're talking." Shared experiences can also serve as icebreakers. Eighteen-year-old Anne adds: "I don't start off with talking about something intimate because the other person gets embarrassed or scared and will avoid me." Yes, it is not wise to plunge into a deep conversation right away.

What, though, if at times you simply do not know what to say? Well, there are always things you can *do*. The Bible tells of a woman named Dorcas who "abounded in good deeds and gifts of mercy" for needy widows. When she died, the widows wept out of sorrow. (Acts 9:36-39) Dorcas' acts of kindness had endeared her to them. Kind acts and a generous spirit will likewise help you to build precious friendships.

But be realistic. Learn to accept that some people will not respond to your smile and friendly hello. In that case, they have a problem—not you.

Getting Over the Rough Spots

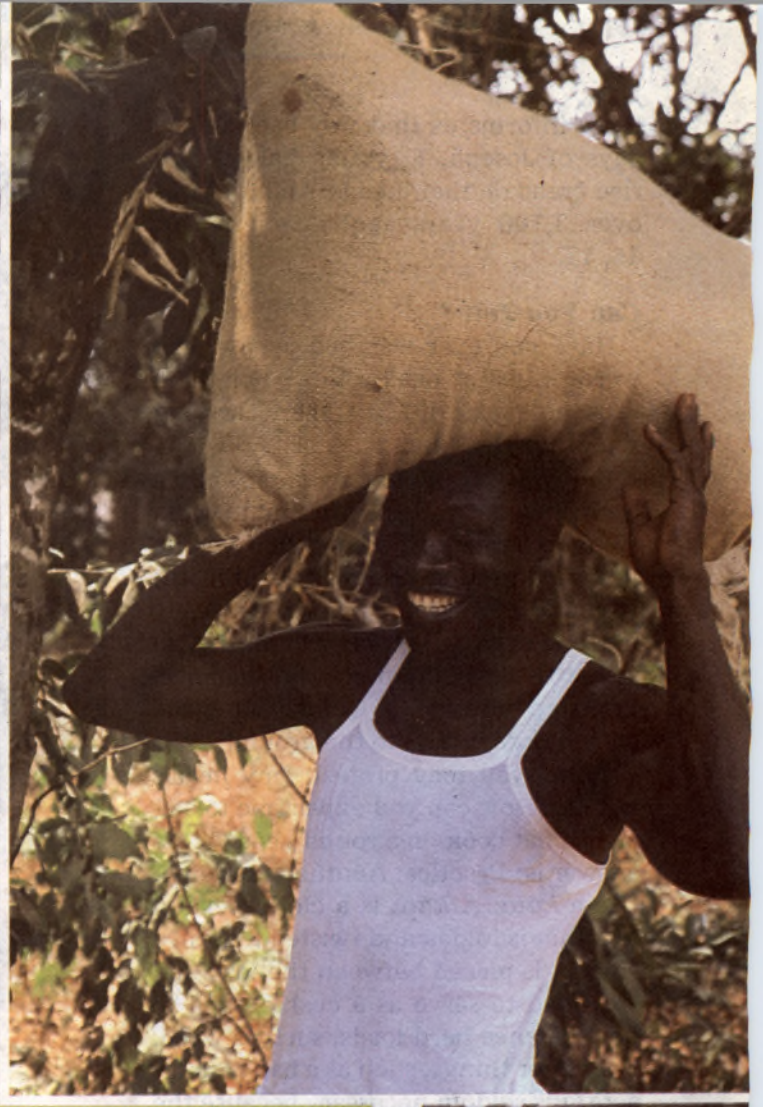
Still, most teens suffer from loneliness at times. Remember that it may be temporary and caused by circumstances beyond your control. The passing of time will often help you to get over the rough spots. Loneliness will fade.

Chronic loneliness, however, comes from within and can be caused by low self-esteem. In that case, take action! 'Make your mind over' and 'put on the new personality,' says God's Word. (Romans 12:2; Ephesians 4:23, 24) Yes, build your self-respect by amplifying the appealing qualities that you have within you. Do things for other people, and they will usually respond to you.

However, no matter how people react, you can have a friend who never turns you down. Who is that? Jesus Christ told his disciples: "You will leave me alone; and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me." (John 16:32) This close relationship with Jehovah strengthened Jesus during moments of isolation. Jehovah can become your closest friend too. Get to know his personality by reading the Bible and observing his creation. Strengthen your friendship with him by prayer. Soon you will discover that friendship with Jehovah God is the finest answer to your loneliness.

In Our Next Issue

- *Trade War—How It Affects You*
- *Satellite Television—Is It for You?*
- *New Shipping Facilities of Jehovah's Witnesses*



Using Your Head —*The African Way!*

By "Awake!" correspondent in Sierra Leone

WHAT do people carry on their heads? If you asked some schoolchildren that question, in many parts of the world they might answer: "Their hats." And that would likely be the end of the list.

However, when we actually put that question to some African youngsters, they replied: "People tote buckets of water, bananas, books, salt bags, firewood, television sets, fish, bags of cement, sacks of rice, refrigerators, baskets of vegetables, stones, crates of soft drinks . . . " Their list went on and on.

Throughout the continent of Africa, toting loads on the head is commonplace. It has been for a very long time. The

Bible informs us that way back in the days of Joseph, Egyptian bakers carried bread on their heads. And that was over 3,700 years ago!—Genesis 40: 16, 17.

Can You Tote?

Have you ever watched people who were skilled at head-toting? For them it is no more difficult than carrying something by hand.

But you try it. For example, put a book on your head and attempt to walk. (We might suggest a book that you do not mind getting knocked about a bit.) If you're a beginner, you will probably move slowly, stiffly, very carefully, so as not to upset the precarious balance. One step . . . two . . . Quick! Catch the book before it falls to the ground!

"But," you may protest, "my head's not flat. How can you expect me to balance a flat book on a round head?" One answer is: Practice! Another answer is: Use a *kata*. A *kata* is a cloth or palm leaf that is folded and twisted to form a ring. It is placed between the load and the head to serve as a cushion and to help balance hard loads, such as wood. For softer things, such as a bag of flour, a *kata* is seldom necessary because the bag will settle on the head.

Whether you use a *kata* or not, it is important to carry things centrally on your head. Edward, a Sierra Leonean, recalls his early days: "When I first started to tote, I carried wood with my head cocked to one side. As the loads got heavier, my neck would ache with the strain. But the real trouble came when I began to tote buckets of water. Since you can't balance water properly unless your head is straight, the water would spill out, and my clothes would

get soaked. I hated that. It was the soakings, more than anything else, that made me straighten up."

Yet, there's more to the art than comfortably and centrally situating the item to be carried. An experienced head-toter will keep things in place on his head by numerous, slight corrective movements of his neck. It's like trying to balance an upright stick on your finger. You don't just put it there and hope it doesn't fall. Rather, you must constantly adjust the position of your finger to suit the movement of the stick. And just as a heavier stick is easier to balance than a light one, so a weighty load is often easier to balance on the head.

Most Africans learn the skill early in life by imitating older children and grown-ups. Emmanual is one-and-a-half years old and still a little unsteady on his feet. When he was given a small can of water to tote, he held it on his head with both hands. It slid about, and some of the water sloshed out, but it was clear that he had grasped the idea. By the time he is five, the water will not spill. At seven he will be an expert.

A Practical, Beneficial Skill

Far from being merely a novel way to carry things, head-toting is a practical skill for African life. *The Cambridge Encyclopedia of Africa* states: "Human porterage . . . is undoubtedly still one of Africa's principal means of moving goods at the local level." And for those who are used to it, loads are carried most easily on the head.

One traveling overseer of Jehovah's Witnesses relates: "Most of the towns and villages that I visit can be reached by vehicle, but some cannot. These can only be reached by trekking. Usually, fellow Witnesses there meet me and help carry my bags, and the most comfortable way to carry them is on the head. On other occasions, while traveling on my own, I carry a bag in one hand and hang another by its strap on the shoulder of the other arm, but the biggest bag goes on my head."

Apart from carrying things more comfortably, putting things on the head leaves your hands free. You can even be shaded from the sun or sheltered from the rain.

Add to this the physical benefits: grace, balance, and strength. The book *Tropical Surgery* states: "The country people [in the tropics], who are often accustomed to walking with head loads, have well-developed back muscles and good posture. They seldom suffer from *back strain.*"

Clearly, head-toting is not a skill to belittle. A young man in Freetown boasted: "I can put a bottle on my head and run with it without touching it with my hands." A demonstration of his running with such a load on his head proved the truthfulness of his words. But unless you're an expert, don't try it!

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS

H	■	S	O	V	E	R	E	I	G	N	T	Y	■	T
E	■	P	■	■	G	■	L	■	A	■	■	E	■	H
A	S	R	I	E	L	■	P	I	P	E	■	A	M	I
V	■	E	■	■	O	■	A	■	■	B	A	R	■	N
E	■	A	■	A	N	E	R	■	■	A	■	N	■	K
N	U	D	E	■	■	■	A	D	U	L	T	S	■	I
L	■	■	L	A	B	A	N	■	S	■	A	■	■	N
Y	O	G	I	■	O	■	■	■	E	■	R	I	N	G
C	■	■	K	■	A	■	J	U	D	G	E	■	■	A
A	■	M	A	N	T	L	E	■	■	■	A	B	I	B
L	■	E	■	I	■	■	H	O	S	T	■	A	■	I
L	■	U	E	L	■	■	O	■	T	■	■	M	■	L
I	N	N	■	E	Z	E	R	■	A	R	M	O	N	I
N	■	I	■	■	I	■	A	■	I	■	■	T	■	T
G	■	M	O	U	N	T	M	O	R	I	A	H	■	Y

From Our Readers

The World Since 1914

Thank you for the series of articles on "The World Since 1914." (March 8 to June 22, 1987) At school we were always taught history from around William the Conqueror's time but never up-to-date world affairs. I've never really understood the reasons and events behind World War II, which occurred in my early childhood. The "fear" you wrote of was very real and was felt even by young children.

C. L., England

Your series of articles "The World Since 1914" was simply fantastic! On leafing through the magazine that contained Part I, it was the article that least attracted my attention, but when I decided to read it, I just could not stop and went on to read Part II, which was on hand, lamenting that the subsequent numbers were still not available. Never before had I taken such interest in happenings of bygone years.

J. E. S. J., Brazil

The Catholic Church and Hitler

On behalf of the more than 50 million Catholics of the United States, the Catholic League for Religious and Civil Rights would like to express its astonishment and disappointment at the gross calumny against the Church in your issue "Religion in Politics—Is This God's Will?" (April 22, 1987) The cover bears a photograph of a member of the Catholic hierarchy shaking hands with Hitler. The crude implication is that the Nazi movement, and its attempted genocide against the Jews and others, had the full cooperation and blessing of the Catholic Church. This false and irresponsible accusation appears explicitly on page 6, where it is alleged that Catholic clergymen offered the Nazi regime "support or at least coexistence." As a matter of fact, the Vatican did attempt to negotiate peace with Hitler in the early days of Nazi Germany when it was still reasonable to hope that its excesses could be moderated. As the Nazi tyranny unfolded, the resistance of the Catholic Church increased. Not only do the editors of *Awake!* owe Catholics an apology for asserting otherwise; they owe it to their readership to set the record straight.

K. G. L., Director of Public Affairs, United States

During his recent visit to Germany, Pope John Paul II tried to emphasize the opposition of the Catholic Church to Nazism. According to accounts, he listed many clerical and lay Catholics who opposed the Nazis. But according to "The New York Times" (May 4, 1987), this "effort has drawn criticism from some Catholics, however, who accuse the Pope of distorting the fact that few Catholic leaders actually resisted Nazi tyranny, beyond struggling to save church prerogatives." Even Jesuit priest Rupert Mayer, whom the pope beatified for speaking out against the Nazis, was interned in the Benedictine abbey of Ettal under an agreement between Nazi leaders and the church hierarchy, for whom the Jesuit's outspokenness had become an embarrassment, according to the "Times." One Jesuit priest! Why did not the pope honor scores of Catholic bishops, archbishops, and cardinals, plus thousands of Catholic priests, for their opposition to the Nazis? Because the vast majority did not resist Nazism! —ED.

Watching the World

Catholics Ignore Vatican

A new document published this year by the Vatican has stirred up heated controversy in Catholic and medical circles. It is entitled "Respect for Human Life in Its Origin and on the Dignity of Procreation." The document condemns all forms of fertilization in vitro, that is, outside the living body, including artificial insemination when ovum and sperm are taken from couples who are legally married. The church's position on this issue has been upsetting to many Catholics who, until now, have favored such procedures in behalf of childless couples. Yet, despite the embarrassment wrought by the new Vatican document, Michel Falise, a spokesman for one Catholic hospital in Lille, France, indicated that in vitro fertilizations that are presently under way would not be interrupted in favor of the church's new stance. Similar opinions have been voiced in Belgium, Spain, Holland, and Italy, where, according to *La Repubblica,* a Rome newspaper, "over 75 percent of artificial inseminations now being practiced are of the type the church condemns," and "70 percent of the women who receive this form of insemination are Catholics."

More Than They're Worth

You can now buy U.S. currency at the following rates: $1 bills at 4 for $7.50, 16 for $21.50, and 32 for $40.50; $2 bills at 4 for $12 and 16 for $38.50. Why are people willing to pay such prices? Because of the novelty of having bills off the press in an uncut form. Last year the Bureau of Engraving and Printing took in $1,852,509 from the sale of uncut bills.

Pigeon Rescue

For someone lost at sea, a rescue aided by a pigeon may soon be a reality. Training is now being given to pigeons for a search-and-rescue operation called Project Sea Hunt,

reports *The Sydney Morning Herald* of Australia. Because of their superior eyesight and concentration, compared to that of humans, pigeons have proved very effective as spotters. Three pigeons will be placed in a dome underneath a helicopter, each facing in a different direction. Already trained to distinguish the colors of life jackets and rescue craft, the pigeons peck at an indicator when such colored objects are spotted, and the indicator directs the pilot to fly in that direction. To humans an object nearly two miles (3 km) away may appear as a speck in the ocean, but it can be spotted quite readily by the sharp-eyed pigeon. Preliminary tests have already proved successful. Compared to a human success rate of 40 percent in spotting objects in the ocean, pigeons scored a high 90 percent in their rescue work!

Smoking Banned

As of September 1, 1987, "smoking will be banned in most enclosed public places in Belgium." According to the *International Herald Tribune,* King Baudouin signed a law requiring that smoking "be banned in schools, hospitals and rest homes, railroad stations, waiting rooms, and publicly owned cultural and sports centers." Among the European Community countries, Belgium comes just after first-ranked Denmark in the proportion of smokers to nonsmokers, with about a 1 to 3 ratio. Offenders could be fined up to $480 (U.S.) by the Belgian authorities.

Lifesaving Vaccines

Addressing a WHO (World Health Organization) conference in Geneva, Switzerland, Dr. Ralph Henderson revealed that the expanded program of immunization he directs already prevents nearly a million deaths every year from

measles, whooping cough, and tetanus. However, he added that "millions of children continue to die needlessly each year" from diseases that immunization would otherwise prevent. With the goal of protecting all the world's children from these illnesses by the end of the decade, medical workers press ahead with research into vaccines against malaria, leprosy, and even tooth decay. Though it is claimed that vaccines could make antibiotics "virtually obsolete by the year 2000," WHO coordinator on AIDS, Dr. Jonathan Mann, reported that an effective vaccine for AIDS could take years to produce.

World Speed Record

The world speed record for the fastest manned train is now 249 miles per hour (400 km/hr), set by an experimental "linear car" of Japanese National Railways. The old record was held by the Federal Republic of Germany. The "linear car" floats a few inches above the track on a magnetic cushion and moves by magnetic power. Without need for rails and overhead power lines, construction costs may well be cheaper than that of the famous bullet trains. Noise pollution and vibration pollution are said to be eliminated too. According to *Yomiuri Shimbun,* the "linear car" outsped the press helicopters flying over it to take pictures. Japanese National Railways already holds the world record for the fastest unmanned train at 321 miles per hour (517 km/hr).

Prenatal Care

Caring for a pregnant woman's emotional needs is just as important to the healthy development of her unborn baby as looking after her physical welfare, claims obstetric neurophysiologist Dr. Michele Clement of Middlesex Hospital, England. Using monitoring devices to detect the baby's responses in its mother's womb, reports *The Times* of London, the researcher finds that drugs, cigarettes, and alcohol all interfere with fetal activity, whereas soft music played early in its development can help produce a contented baby. Professor Michel Odent, a French obstetrician, concurs and recommends a reawakening to the importance of a mother's lullabies sung even to the unborn.

Monster Toys

According to current buying trends, the world of toys has been invaded by monsters. Toy manufacturers are competing to produce the most terrifying plastic

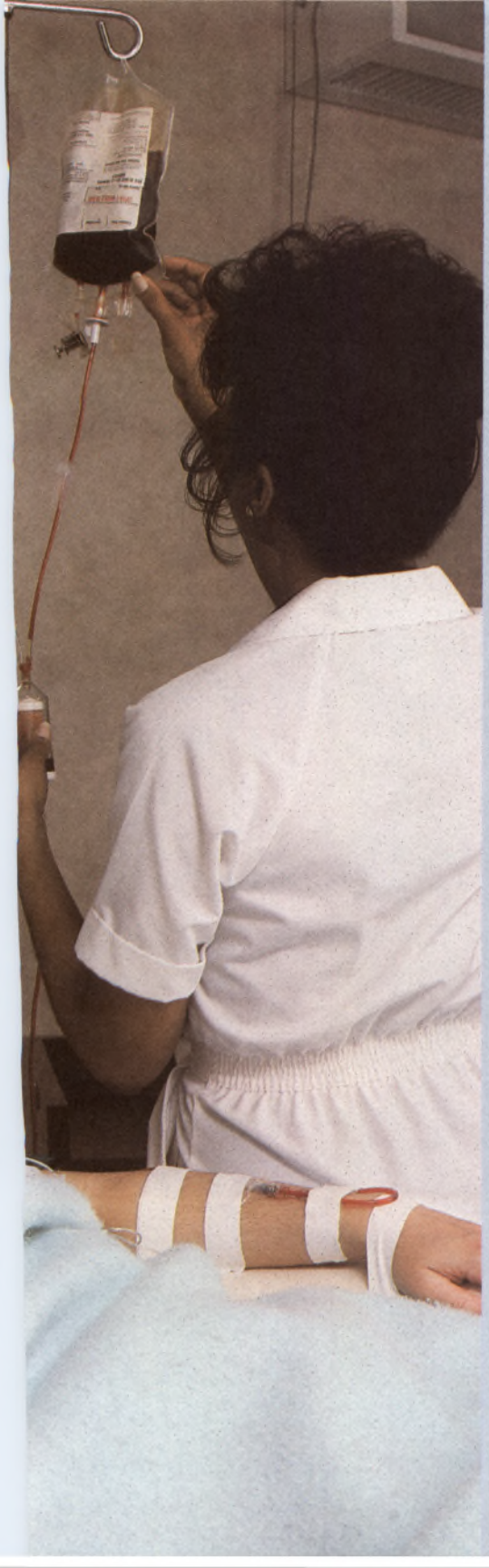
characters, notes *Le Figaro,* a French daily. "The more horrible they look," claim sales personnel, "the better the children like them." Last winter, the leading toys were in the "bad, wicked family [category], made up of demon vampires, human leeches that cling to walls, or hairy warriors that are some sort of cross between a gorilla and a boar." Exceptions? None, according to the sales. Last year, one French firm alone sold over a million of these horrible toys. *Le Figaro* commented: "This Christmas, monsters top the bill. More and more deformed and increasingly hideous, [these toys] delight the children, intrigue psychologists, and grieve the parents."

Blood Ban

Last April 21 the Mexican government banned all commercial sale of blood and blood by-products due to fear of spreading the deadly disease AIDS among its population, reports *The New York Times.* The AIDS virus spreads through sexual intercourse or blood. Although the number of reported cases of AIDS in Mexico is small compared to that in other countries, Health Minister Guillermo Soberón said that "the character of the disease obliges us to take measures of a preventive nature" before conditions worsen. Government studies had found that blood donated for money runs a much higher risk of carrying the AIDS virus. Blood banks may still operate but only if the blood is voluntarily donated instead of sold.

Getting Tough on Smokers

With funds and accommodations in short supply at most Australian hospitals, persons suffering from a smoke-related disease who continue to smoke may one day be denied hospital access. In an article that appeared in *The Medical Journal of Australia,* Dr. Peter Gianoutsos, a senior thoracic physician with the Royal Prince Alfred Hospital, explained that "it is possible to envisage in the not-too-distant future, circumstances in which hospital beds may no longer be available for those who continue to smoke." He claims that to allow persistent smokers into hospitals would be a serious misuse of resources and quite often means that intensive-care facilities are not available for newborn children. A study of patients with smoking-related diseases found that 22 percent persisted in smoking even after diagnosis showed that it was the cause of their illness.



"I Thought a Blood Transfusion Was Life, Not Death"

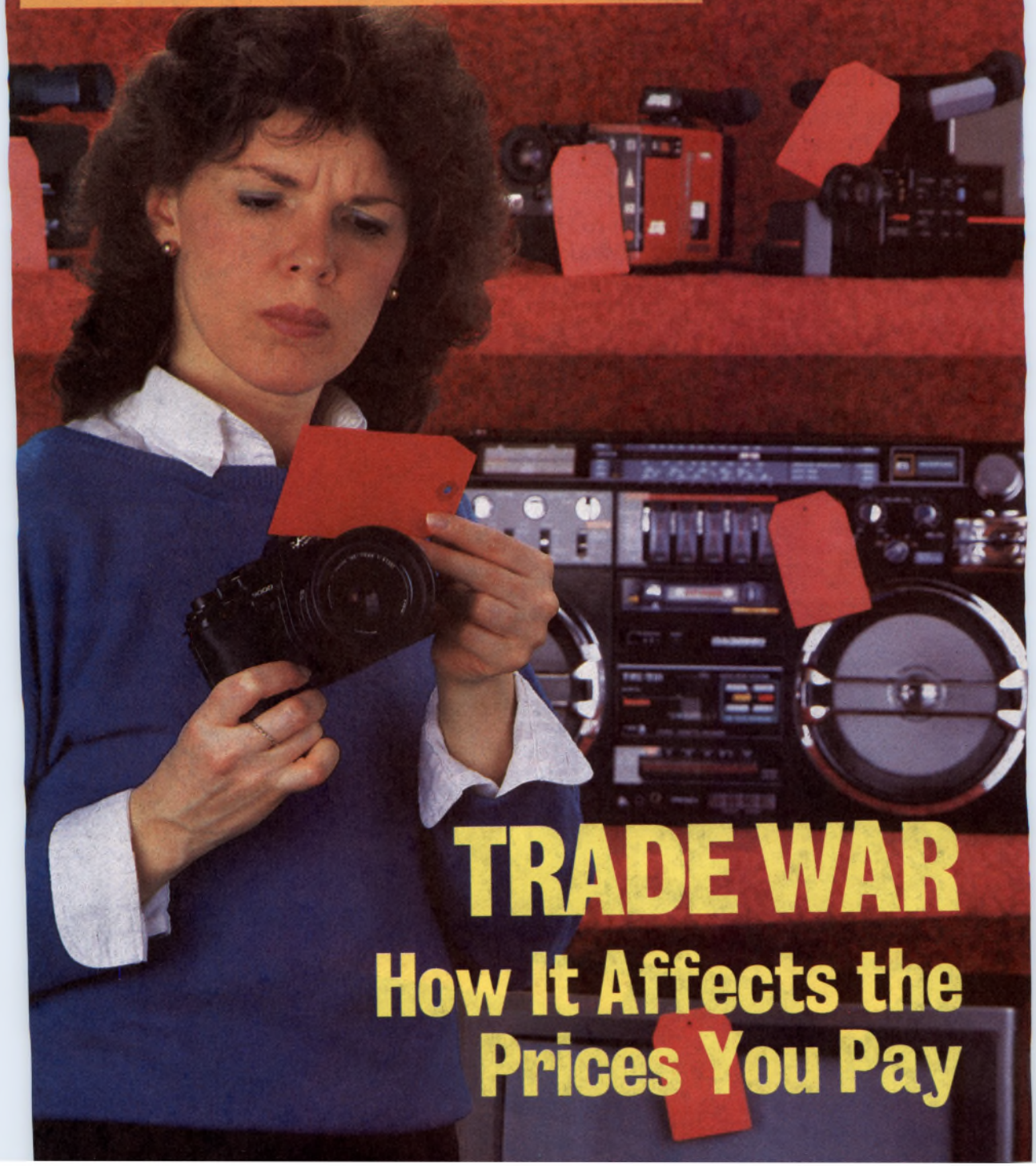
THOSE words were uttered by Sal Cirella, father of a hepatitis victim, on the U.S. television program 20/20 on December 11, 1986. His daughter Tracy was given a transfusion as "hospital policy," even though it was against the parents' wishes. (Incidentally, they were not Jehovah's Witnesses, who refuse transfusions for religious reasons.) She contracted hepatitis, and her life was saved only by a liver transplant.

Tracy was attacked by a form of hepatitis known as non-A/non-B hepatitis. This same TV program reported: "Over 190,000 Americans contract it in transfusions every year. It causes permanent liver damage or kills close to 10,000 people a year. It almost killed Tracy."

A surgeon who has operated without blood in 14,000 cases also stated: "I see people notoriously transfusing people that don't need it at all, and basically covering their own mistakes of sloppiness, if nothing else, by using blood transfusions. And I think that's totally unacceptable." Another doctor, a former U.S. Food and Drug Administration official, stated: "I believe all blood products are overused. I think there's adequate evidence to substantiate that. The behavior that has to be changed is physicians' behavior, what they order for a patient. And they order too much blood."

Awake!

August 22, 1987



TRADE WAR

How It Affects the Prices You Pay

In 1985 the United States imported from Japan products worth $40 billion more than the products it exported to Japan. Despite international efforts to equalize trade between the countries, in 1986 the U.S. trade deficit with Japan grew to $58 billion!

Why is there such a growing trade imbalance? How does it affect you? Why can the consequences be dangerous? What is the lasting solution to the problem? The following "Awake!" articles consider such questions.

Trade War —How It Affects You

AN AMERICAN missionary in Japan received $2,000 from his mother in November 1985 for a vacation trip back home the next summer. Had he exchanged the money right away, he would have received 400,000 yen, at the rate of 200 yen to a dollar. Instead, he decided to wait until he was ready to purchase his plane ticket in July 1986. By then the exchange rate was down to 160 yen to a dollar, making his money worth only 320,000 yen. He lost 80,000 yen (about $500, U.S.) just by holding his money for seven months. What would have been enough for airfare for him and his wife turned out to be far short.

International travelers are not the only ones affected by the shrinking of the U.S. dollar. If you have purchased any goods imported from Japan or Western Europe lately, you have probably felt the pinch too. Surveys show that imported cars, cameras, watches, even wines and cheeses, have gone up anywhere from 10 to 20 percent in price in the last year. A quality Japanese camera selling for $400 in October 1985, for example, sold for $450 in June 1986, a jump of 12.5 percent. "Additional exchange rate fluctuations will probably result in more price increases than we've seen from what's happened so far," says a U.S. financial analyst.

Higher consumer prices constitute but one side of the picture. Industries in Japan and West Germany are hard pressed by this economic turnabout. Even though the price of that same camera jumped from $400 to $450 in U.S. currency in a few months, it actually fell from 98,000 yen to 78,000 yen in Japanese currency. Thus, it was reported that one of the biggest electrical manufacturers in Japan loses $30 million each time the value of the dollar goes down one yen. The effect is similar in the auto, steel, textile, and other export-dependent trades.

To remain competitive the industrial giants resorted to heavy cost-cutting and reduced-profit margins. Smaller companies unable to bear the loss went bankrupt. The *Mainichi Shimbun,* Tokyo's leading newspaper, reported that 292 firms went under between October 1985 and

Why did the cost of a quality Japanese camera increase from $400 to $450 in U.S. currency within a few months?

Awake!® August 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 16

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Trade War—How It Affects You 3
What Is Causing the Problem? 5
Is There a Lasting Solution? 8

Also in This Issue

Plants Under Stress 10
Sacrifices Bring Rich Rewards 11
New Shipping Facilities of Jehovah's Witnesses 16
Other Activities in Furman Street Building 18
Satellite Television —Is It for You? 19
Young People Ask ... Why Do My Things Have to Be So Neat? 23
Rio's Sugarloaf and Hunchback 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Alligators Make a Comeback 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

20 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$4.00	$2.00
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, "New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures" used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $4.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

August 1986. As a result, Japanese workers last year received the smallest wage increase in 31 years—an average of 4.5 percent. And unemployment reached 2.9 percent of the work force, the highest since 1953. It is feared that the rate "may worsen to 7%-8%," according to the chairman of the Japan Federation of Employers' Associations.

Result of Trade Imbalance

But why did the dollar shrink? Simply put, it was due to trade war in the very competitive world of international business. Some nations manage to export more goods than they import, resulting in a trade surplus. Canada, for example, has an annual trade surplus of $18.6 billion, and Japan exported goods worth $82.7 billion more than the goods it imported in 1986.

On the other hand, countries like the United States now import far more goods than they export. It is easy to see what this situation does to a country's economy. The resulting trade deficit creates serious unemployment problems and deals a blow to its economic stability.

Realizing that the economy of the world depends largely on the soundness of the U.S. economy, finance ministers and banking magnates of the five leading industrial nations met in September 1985 and agreed to depreciate the U.S. dollar against the major currencies of the world. The idea was that with the value of the dollar lower, goods from the United States would be cheaper and more competitive in other countries. This would boost U.S. exports. At home, demand for imported goods would decline, as these would now carry higher price tags. The net result, theoretically, would be to reduce the U.S. trade deficit.

Since the launching of the plan, the val-

ue of the U.S. dollar has fallen about 20 percent against the mark, the yen, the franc, and other major currencies. But has this turned the tide as far as the trade imbalance is concerned? "Despite the adjustments in exchange rates, the bilateral trade deficit will not be reduced this year," said Malcolm Baldridge, U.S. secretary of commerce, in a speech to Japan's business and government leaders last year.

Indeed, imported goods continue to be as attractive to U.S. consumers as ever. Reports show that about as many Japanese autos, for example, were imported by the United States in 1986 as in 1985. Since the price per auto went up, but the total number imported remained about the same, the net effect was that the dollar value of imports continued to go up rather than come down. The U.S. trade deficit jumped from a total of $118 billion in 1985 to a record $175 billion in 1986, about a third of this huge deficit being in trade with Japan!

What is happening in Japan and the United States is also happening in other places. The trade war affects all of us. What is its cause? What can be done about it? And is there a lasting solution?

What Is Causing the Problem?

"THE countries are embroiled in a geopolitical game of chicken," reported *The New York Times* early this year. The United States had allowed its dollar to slip further against the Japanese yen and the German mark on account of the still-rising trade deficit. Thus the *Times* report continued: "Each is trying to force the others to make changes in domestic policies . . . [to] help bring trade into better balance."

Why has the shrinking of the dollar not brought about the hoped-for improvement in international trade relations? What causes the United States to continue tallying up such a large trade deficit? And why have countries like Japan and West Germany continued to enjoy rising trade surpluses against the United States in spite of the rising value of their currencies?

These are questions to which leading economists around the world are trying hard to find answers. In any case, it is clear that there is more to solving the world's trade woes than tinkering with the value of the dollar. Meanwhile, charges and countercharges between the trading partners have reached a politically and economically explosive pitch.

Mounting Trade Friction

Many people in the United States, for example, feel that while the United States has opened its markets to foreign trade, other countries—Japan and, to a lesser degree, West Germany and others—have not reciprocated. Instead, they say, these countries use unfair trade practices to promote exports and protect their own markets from imports. As a result, they feel,

U.S. jobs are lost and livelihoods ruined. This has caused considerable friction, even animosity, between the United States and her trading partners.

Then there is the complaint that Japanese companies pay their workers such low wages, compared with their U.S. counterparts, that they can afford to undersell their competitors overseas. On the other hand, to break into the Japanese market, foreign companies must deal with the traditional and private trade customs, the complicated distribution and tax systems, the quality standards, the language barrier, the Japanese sense of likes and dislikes, and the reluctance to accept foreign goods. All of this, say the foreign businessmen, leaves them at a great disadvantage.

Such grievances were epitomized by the U.S. secretary of commerce, Malcolm Baldridge, when he declared in a speech to a body of leading Japanese businessmen in Tokyo: "Japan cannot continue to live with its trading partners on the basis of ever-increasing exports and slow or static imports. By almost any measure, Japan has great power in the world economy but has not taken the responsibility that comes with that power."

The Countercharges

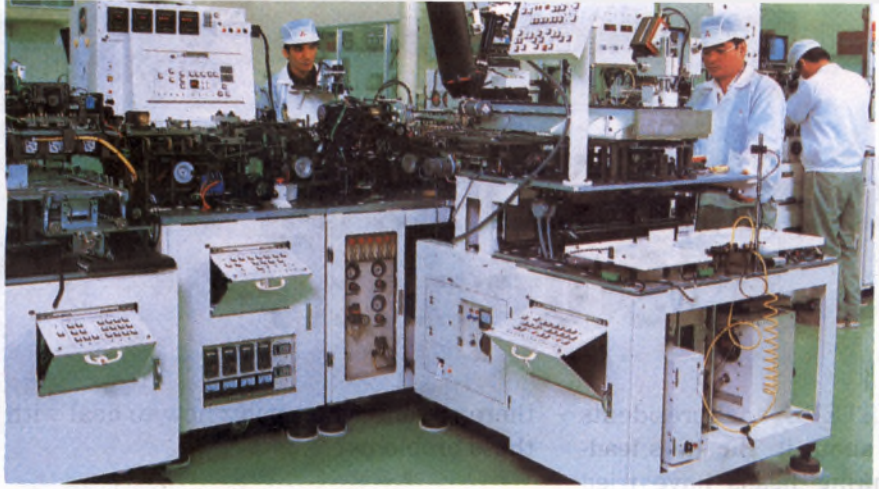
The Japanese businessman, on the other hand, points to the quick-return mentality of his U.S. counterpart. Whereas a Japanese is willing to follow a long-term view, the U.S. businessman has to make immediate profit to satisfy his stockholders. For example, in 1970 both U.S. and Japanese companies embarked on expensive research on how to put into production the idea of using a laser to play recordings of music and to reproduce pictures. Soon, the U.S. companies dropped out for lack of results. A Japanese company, however, pushed on and became a major force in the billion-dollar digital compact disc business.

An important factor in the trade imbalance, according to the Japanese, is that their society is savings oriented, whereas the U.S. society is consumption oriented. On the average, the Japanese save four times as much as the Americans, and their total savings surpass 30 percent of their gross national product.

Typically, the Japanese feel that their competitive edge lies, not in lower production cost, but in higher productivity and better management. An American observer notes that "worker productivity at the five biggest American steel companies, for example, is almost a third lower than at their Japanese counterparts. That means that even if the wages in the two countries were equal, American steelmakers still could not compete with the Japanese in a truly free market. And neither, for that matter, could American auto-makers."

As for the charge that they resist the importing of foreign goods, many Japanese feel that this is simply not true. They claim that they have always welcomed imported goods provided the foreign manufacturers have adapted their products to the Japanese taste. For example, one U.S. toy maker redesigned a doll, giving it a more modest figure, shorter legs, and dark-brown eyes. It sold by the millions. Similarly, a U.S. soft-drink company gained 60 percent of the soft-drink market in Japan by making its drink sweeter—just what the Japanese wanted. Foreign companies that employ such marketing strategies have been immensely successful.

Some in Japan even feel that the whole matter of trade deficit is blown out of proportion by the United States to take the blame off their own poor performance. Since Japan has only half the population of



Could higher productivity by Japanese workers be contributing to the trade deficit with Japan?

the United States, they point out, the Japanese will probably never consume as many U.S. goods as Americans consume Japanese goods. Furthermore, they feel that the figures often quoted are misleading because they do not include value of goods and services sold by U.S. owned or controlled companies in Japan. One consulting firm reports that there are 3,000 such businesses in Japan and that in 1984 the top 300 of them sold 44 billion dollars' worth of products in Japan.

This shifting of U.S. business overseas to take advantage of cheap labor aggravates the trade imbalance. More and more, TVs, computers, cars, and other products with U.S. brand names are being made in Japan, Mexico, Taiwan, and elsewhere, and they are being sold on the U.S. market. This translates not only into U.S. jobs lost, say the Japanese, but also into inflated "import" figures.

So it seems that each side has legitimate reasons to complain about the other or to justify its own actions. However, while such charges and countercharges continue to fly, there is little sign that the trade war, or the trade imbalance, is abating. Perhaps the nations are just looking at the symptoms. The real cause of the tense trade relations lies deeper.

The Real Cause?

Suppose more merchandise flowed from one state to another within the United States or from one prefecture to another in Japan. Would that cause a trade war or an economic crisis? No. This is because consumers do not care where the products come from as long as they get quality with low price. What, then, makes the difference when it comes to international trade?

"Economic nationalism" is the way *Asahi Shimbun,* a major Japanese newspaper, puts it. Rather than being concerned about the world economic health, each nation is primarily concerned with its own welfare. "The Japanese perception that only locally made products are quality . . . is deep and fundamental," observed the head of American Telephone and Telegraph International in Tokyo. The same can be said of the Americans, the Germans, the British, and just about any other people. The nations are divided in more ways than one.

Actually, the trade woes and the shrinking dollar are but symptoms of a system plagued with war, violence, nationalism, selfish ambition, and, above all, hopelessness. Is there anyone who can rid the world of these formidable barriers and restore health not only to the world's economy but also to every aspect of our lives?

Is There a Lasting Solution?

PRIME MINISTERS and presidents have talked about it. Business leaders and banking heads have tried their hand. Executives of giant corporations have done what they could. But what is the present state of international trade?

From **Washington, D.C.,** comes this report by the Secretary of the Treasury, James Baker: "While projections suggest some reductions in those [trade] imbalances in 1987, they may well increase again in 1988 and remain at politically and economically unacceptable levels."

From **Seoul, South Korea,** is this news item: "Anti-American sentiment has been rising among dissidents and students in South Korea, partly because of what they see as American protectionist moves against Korean products. . . . The United States was trying to sacrifice Korea to help to cut its trade deficit."

Concerning **Europe,** we have this report: "The 12-nation European Community [EC], the world's biggest trading bloc, . . . says Japanese companies are trying to make up for lost sales in the United States by exporting more to Europe . . . [Member nations of EC] are worried about more unemployment as a result of imports, and they are threatening fresh curbs against Japan."

Clearly, even though the political leaders and financial ministers of the world have tried hard, their ideas have not worked. Trade relations between the nations continue to worsen, and the rounds of accusations are reaching the point of ignition. Is there anyone who knows how to deal with these problems?

The One With the Solution

Whoever it is that can successfully solve the world's financial difficulties and other woes must be capable of cutting through the deep-rooted obstacles of nationalism, selfish ambition, uncertainty, and hopelessness. His ideas must be different from, yes, even opposite to, the law of the jungle on which the present-day economic system is based. Is there such a person?

Yes, there is, and his teachings are known internationally. He expounded what has come to be known as the Golden Rule: "All things, therefore, that you want men to do to you, you also must likewise do to them." And he also taught: "Practice giving, and people will give to you. They will pour into your laps a fine measure, pressed down, shaken together and overflowing. For with the measure that you are measuring out, they will measure out to you in return."—Matthew 7:12; Luke 6:38.

Do you know who this person is? He is none other than Jesus Christ, whose teachings are widely lauded but seldom followed. In fact, most people feel that these teachings are too idealistic, too impractical, and will never succeed. Do you, perhaps, also feel that way? Then, why not examine the practices among the followers of Jesus Christ in the first century and see

Only when people work together in love will mankind's problems be solved

how these principles, based on genuine love, worked?

The Lasting Solution

About the year 55 C.E., the apostle Paul wrote to the Christian congregation in Corinth and mentioned an offering, or contribution, made by the Christians in European Macedonia and Achaia to help their fellow Christians in Asiatic Palestine. This, of course, was a noble gesture on their part, but Paul explained: "By means of an equalizing your surplus just now might offset their deficiency, in order that their surplus might also come to offset your deficiency, that an equalizing might take place." —2 Corinthians 8:14.

Even though what we have here is not a case of commercial business, the principle involved is noteworthy. What it accomplished was an equalizing of surpluses and deficiencies. Yet is it realistic to expect principles based on love to work in today's dog-eat-dog world of international commerce? No, it is not. Thus, the only lasting solution involves a radical change, which God himself purposes to accomplish.

Pointing forward to these trouble-filled days, Bible prophecy foretold: "In the days of those kings the God of heaven will set up a kingdom that will . . . crush and put an end to all these kingdoms, and it itself will stand to times indefinite." (Daniel 2:44; Psalm 110:2) This Kingdom that "the God of heaven will set up" is the one for which Jesus Christ taught his followers to pray in these words: "Let your kingdom come. Let your will take place, as in heaven, also upon earth." (Matthew 6:10) World events and fulfilled Bible prophecies confirm that the time for that Kingdom to go into action is near at hand.

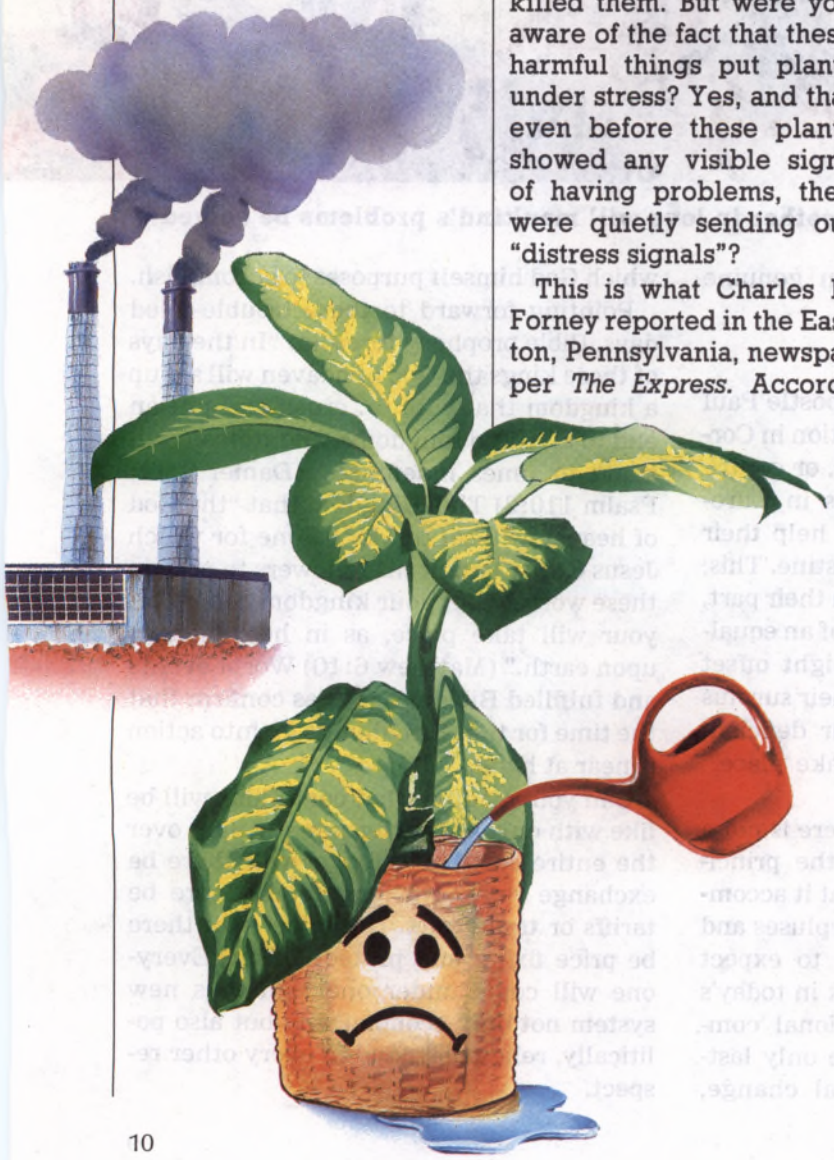
Can you imagine what conditions will be like with only one government ruling over the entire earth? No longer will there be exchange rates. No longer will there be tariffs or trade wars. No longer will there be price fixing and protectionism. Everyone will come under one righteous new system not only economically but also politically, religiously, and in every other respect.

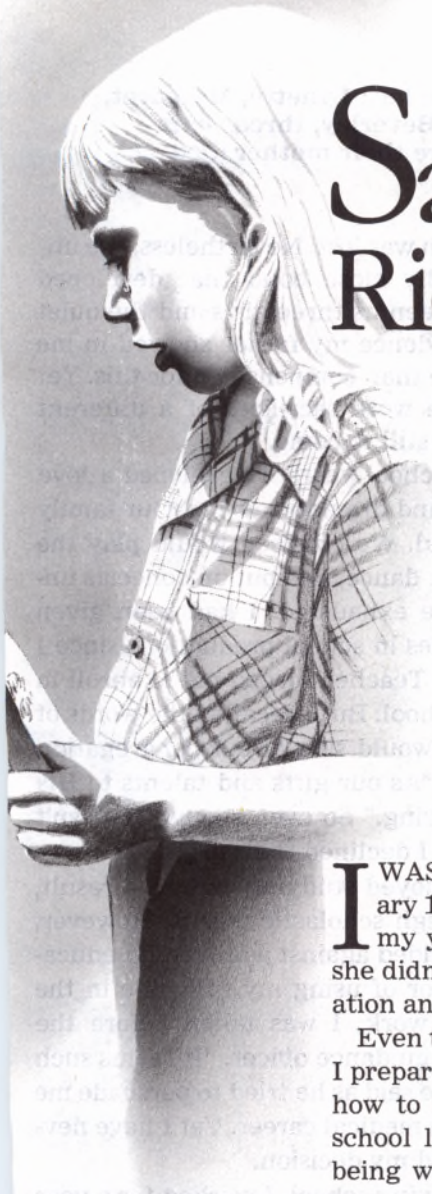
Plants Under Stress

HAVE you noticed that some plants suddenly become infested with insect pests or just sicken and die? No doubt you concluded that they were mishandled somehow, perhaps being overwatered, or that some disease or possibly air pollution killed them. But were you aware of the fact that these harmful things put plants under stress? Yes, and that even before these plants showed any visible signs of having problems, they were quietly sending out "distress signals"?

This is what Charles B. Forney reported in the Easton, Pennsylvania, newspaper *The Express.* According to his column, *Farm/garden,* "the United States Department of Agriculture reports some scientists claim plants tell us when they are under stress—a warning signal." These "scientists think they have found how a plant cries for help."

It appears that when plants come under stress, they give off ethylene gas. Insects seem to be aware of these gaseous emissions. Sick trees that give off ethylene soon become the targets of voracious bark beetles. These researchers hope that by using a gas chromatograph—a device that separates various gas emissions—they can measure how much ethylene plants give off. Thus they can determine when a plant is under stress and if it is holding up under it. Obviously, just like humans, plants need to be protected against undue stress!





Sacrifices Bring Rich Rewards

'Lynette, my darling,

'I wanted to leave you a note to thank you for being such a sweet, loving daughter to me. It will be hard on you without a mother, darling, but others will help, and your Daddy will take very good care of you. Help your little sisters—I know you will—as they will look more and more to you. I want to say thank you sweetheart for all you have done for me and for being such a lovely, obedient little girl, never giving me any worry. I pray that Jehovah will remember me and that we will all meet in the New World.

'Lots of love from your loving Mummy.'

I WAS only 13 years old when Mother died of cancer in January 1963. About three months before her death, she let me and my younger sisters know she was dying. I was grateful that she didn't keep matters hush-hush but kindly explained the situation and then took steps to prepare us for the changes to come.

Even though she was bedridden, Mother taught me to cook, and I prepared all the meals under her direction. She also showed me how to use the sewing machine, cut the family's hair, prepare school lunches, and do many other duties. She explained that being without her, I would have to make sacrifices to help my younger sisters.

I remember marveling at how composed Mother was. I know now that this was because of her deep confidence in the promised resurrection. A few days after her death, Father handed each of us girls a letter Mother wrote to us shortly before she died. The one to me appears, in part, above. You can imagine my tears as I read that letter, but it strengthened me spiritually despite my tender years. Just a few months after that, I made a dedication to Jehovah and was baptized in August 1963.

From left: Lynette, Margaret, and Beverley, three years before their mother died

Developing Faith

My parents had become Jehovah's Witnesses in 1956, a year after we moved from a small dairy farm into Sydney, Australia. Unfortunately, I developed a skeptical, almost atheistic attitude because of the way Bible stories were presented at Sunday school. I had mentally slotted Bible characters with fairy tales and other fables that I knew were not true. I had even come to regard God as just another mythical character. However, the sincerity of the Witnesses began to impress me, and I got to thinking that if they and my mother believed in God and the Bible, there must be something to it.

When I was 11 years old, the congregation began to study the book *"Your Will Be Done on Earth"*—with its verse-by-verse explanation of portions of the Bible book of Daniel. These prophecies and the way they were fulfilled in such detail really impressed me. Other congregation meetings dealt with the Bible's harmony with true science. Some of my doubts began to fade, and gradually I gained real faith in God.

Sacrifices of a Different Kind

As Mother had said, assuming family responsibilities and helping two younger sisters was not always easy. Some of my own youth was lost. Nevertheless, the unusually close bond that developed between us three girls and the quiet confidence my father showed in me more than compensated for this. Yet there were sacrifices of a different kind still to come.

During school years, I developed a love for music and dramatic acting. Our family was musical. We children would play the piano, sing, dance, and put on concerts until we were exhausted. I had been given leading roles in school productions since I was seven. Teachers urged me to enroll in a drama school. But I recalled the words of a song we would sing at our congregation meetings: "As our gifts and talents to *His* work we bring." So even though it wasn't easy to do, I declined their urgings.

I also enjoyed studying and, as a result, received high scholastic merits. However, when I decided against a university education in favor of using my full time in the preaching work, I was taken before the vocational guidance officer. "It seems such a waste," he said as he tried to persuade me to pursue a medical career. Yet I have never regretted my decision.

After leaving school, I worked for a year and a half in the new computer section of a government department. When I handed in my resignation, I was offered double salary and head position in that department. This was a tempting offer, especially for a 17-year-old! But I stuck to my goal and began the full-time ministry as a regular pioneer on June 1, 1966.

New Assignments

When I was appointed a special pioneer the following April, I was overjoyed to receive an assignment in my home congregation in Sydney. This permitted me to be with my sisters a little longer. I was grateful for this, as I hoped to stay with or near my family until both my sisters were married and settled.

In 1969 I was assigned to the nearby Peakhurst Congregation along with Enid Bennett, who was to be my special-pioneer partner for the next seven years. Two years later, my father moved to serve as an elder where there was a need in the small, picturesque town of Tumut, some distance southwest of Sydney. The Society kindly assigned Enid and me there also. At this time my youngest sister Beverley began pioneering, and she served along with us.

A Sorrow Worse Than Death

It was about this time that the saddest event of my life occurred. My sister Margaret and her fiancé were disfellowshipped from the Christian congregation. This was a heartrending time, for now the unusually close bond I had had with Margaret since our mother's death was severed. I knew that Mother was in Jehovah's memory, a very safe place to be. Yet my sister—at least for the present—had lost Jehovah's approval. I had to supplicate Jehovah earnestly to overcome my crushed feeling so that I could serve him with some joy, and he answered my prayer.

Cutting ourselves off completely from all association with Margaret tested our loyalty to Jehovah's arrangement. It gave our family opportunity to show that we really believe that Jehovah's way is best. To our joy, nearly two years later Margaret and her husband were reinstated in the congregation. Little did we realize the powerful effect our resolute stand had on them, as Margaret later told me:

"If you, Dad, or Bev had viewed our disfellowshipping lightly, I know for a certainty I would not have taken steps toward reinstatement as soon as I did. Being totally cut off from loved ones and from close contact with the congregation created a strong desire to repent. By being alone, I came to realize just how wrong my course was and how serious it was to turn my back on Jehovah."

Again we were blessed with having the whole family together serving Jehovah.

I knew that Mother was in Jehovah's memory, a very safe place to be

How grateful we were for the eventual happiness that resulted from sticking loyally to Bible principles!

Marriage and Traveling Work

Later I met Alan, a pioneer and Christian elder. We married in November 1975, six months after the marriage of my sister Beverley. After pioneering for two years, in January 1978 we were invited to share in the traveling work, visiting a different congregation each week to help strengthen them spiritually. Our assignments have taken us from the easygoing pace of the outback towns of Queensland to the bubbly cosmopolitan areas of Melbourne and Sydney.

For me, living out of suitcases and staying in a different home each week was quite a challenge. But then I reasoned: 'I should be happy that we have suitcases and possessions to fill them. Many people don't even have these.' Losing the company of

my husband many nights as he attended to congregational duties also has not been easy. Yet, many women, I pondered, don't always have the company of their husbands either, and in most cases it is not because of their involvement in the noble work of the Lord.

The hardest situation of all to cope with, however, has been my poor health. Ever since childhood, I had experienced continual sore throats, muscular and joint problems, bronchial troubles, and a general feeling of weakness. Doctors and naturopaths could not identify the problem.

As the years passed, the above symptoms worsened, accompanied by constant backache and neckache, coldness, extreme tiredness, rashes, swollen glands, continual nausea, and recurring cystitis. I began to think such ailments were a normal part of life that had to be endured, so I did not complain.

One such condition developed soon after we accepted our first circuit assignment. Every time I walked for more than an hour, I would experience a flow of blood, and this would continue until I sat down. As our schedule called for about three hours of walking each morning in house-to-house activity, I wondered how I could cope. I prayed about it. The result?

Every one of those mornings—for three months straight—I was asked inside and invited to sit down. When the physical problem stopped, so did the invitations! As it is not customary for Australian people to invite casual visitors inside, I feel that this had to be more than coincidence.

My Health Worsens

By the time I was in my early 30's and had been in the traveling work for a few years, my health deteriorated further. It would take two weeks or so to recover from a few days of concentration at assemblies. Just one late night would hinder me for weeks. A morning's witnessing became a mountainlike obstacle. By ten each morning, I was exhausted. By 11, I felt shaky inside, and a mental fog would descend. By noon I was frantic to lie down. Then there was the afternoon to face. Others seemed to cope with ease and have energy for extra activity. Why not me?

I went down to 93 pounds (42 kg), and if I was not in bed with the flu, I had a constant preflu feeling. I could not sleep through a night without 20 or more interruptions because of bladder trouble. I wanted to go to sleep and not wake up! Many times I pleaded in prayer: "Please, Jehovah, I know I deserve nothing, but I only want my health to serve you. Would you direct me to my problem? If not, please help me to endure."

I was determined not to give up the full-time ministry easily. So I made specific requests of Jehovah for help, first that we would obtain a caravan (trailer), since I felt desperately in need of private accommodations. I did not mention my re-

In Our Next Issue

- *Future Prospects for Protestantism—And for You!*
- *Gambling—Does Anyone Win?*
- *Is Civil Disobedience Ever Justified?*

Lynette and her husband, Alan, currently serving in Australia

quest to Alan, but *at the very next meeting* a brother approached us and offered us his caravan. My next request involved a change to a cooler assignment, and shortly this prayer was also answered when we were assigned to Sydney.

Would you believe that within two months of our arrival in Sydney, I was handed a book describing symptoms that appeared to fit mine exactly? Amazingly, this book was written by a doctor whose practice was in our circuit territory. After many tests, I learned that I had low blood sugar and that I was allergic to many things, including molds, yeasts, certain chemical odors, cats, dogs, and many foods.

It took eight tedious months under this doctor's care to trace my food allergies until I was symptom free. It is difficult to describe the effect this had on my physical health and on my whole outlook on life. The ministry and the congregation meetings became a real pleasure again. I felt I had been "resurrected" from near death! Soon I gained weight, and those who hadn't seen me for a while were amazed by the transformation.

Rich Rewards

How quickly 24 years have passed since Mother's death! And how grateful I am to have spent 21 of those years in full-time service! True, there have been difficulties, but without these I may not have developed the same degree of appreciation for Jehovah's love.

On reflection, any sacrifices I have made seem insignificant compared to the rewards already received. Among these is the treasured relationship with so many loving friends and especially my own family. To illustrate, my sister Margaret wrote me shortly after Alan and I began in the traveling work:

"Thank you very much for being the person you are. I don't think I have ever said this before, and I'm sorry if I haven't, but thank you for doing your best in bringing Bev and me up and for taking Mum's place. I realize now that it took a lot of love and effort and self-sacrifice on your part. I have often thought of those years and prayed that you may be blessed. I know that you have been."

Then there are the future rewards—especially the precious prospect of the resurrection of our sleeping loved ones. Yes, a few tears still flow when I reread Mother's farewell letter. My prayer is also as hers, "that Jehovah will remember [her] and that we will all meet in the New World." —*As told by Lynette Sigg.*

New Shipping Facilities of Jehovah's Witnesses

THIS huge building, just across the harbor from New York's famous Wall Street financial district, is a prominent feature of the Brooklyn waterfront. Located at 360 Furman Street, within a few blocks of the printing factories of Jehovah's Witnesses, it is well situated for shipping their Bible literature worldwide.

Originally constructed in 1928, the Furman Street building was purchased by Jehovah's Witnesses on March 15, 1983. Since then, it has undergone major refurbishing. In January of this year, the last of the building's former tenants left, so Jehovah's Witnesses now have use of the entire area.

The building has a million square feet (93,000 sq m) of floor space, or nearly 23 acres (9 ha), almost a third of which is allotted to the new Shipping Department. The huge second floor—373 feet by 345 feet (about the size of 1 1/2 soccer fields)—accommodates the offices and the modern conveyor system that makes it possible to fill literature orders quickly.

Before the Shipping Department was moved to Furman Street in the fall of 1985, it often took six weeks to fill literature orders at the cramped shipping quarters at 30 Columbia Heights. But now, with the computer system, a new conveyor system, and plenty of room in which to function, an order is usually shipped within seven days of receipt. Let's take a look at the department and its operation.

Here books and booklets in over a hundred different languages are stored. Monthly,

about a thousand tons of literature is shipped earth wide, either from this Furman Street location or directly from the nearby printery to the docks for export. Some 2,000 literature orders a week are filled at Furman Street and shipped to the more than 8,400 congregations of Jehovah's Witnesses in the United States.

The modern conveyor system was purchased to help gather, pack, and ship the literature efficiently. It was installed by Jehovah's Witnesses. This installation took nearly four months and was completed by the early part of October 1985. There is nearly three quarters of a mile (1 km) of conveyor apparatus that includes 54 motors driving various belts and cables and 30 photoelectric eyes to control the flow of literature.

The shipping operation has four sections. The first section, the shipping office, is where the orders are received and processed. A computer is used to prepare an invoice and a list of the literature that is to be gathered for each order. The second section is the gathering system for filling literature orders. The third is the packing area where the literature is checked and neatly packed into cardboard cartons. The fourth is the postage meter station, where each carton is weighed and the proper postage is affixed. These cartons are then sent to the truck docks for shipment.

The 360 Furman Street building, however, houses more than the Shipping Department. It accommodates a number of other departments.

In this large Carpenter Shop, occupying 56,000 square feet of floor space, furniture is made for the many offices and for the rooms of the headquarters staff

The Braille Department produces over 48 publications, as well as the entire issue of each "Watchtower" for more than 600 subscribers. Braille items are mailed to over 35 countries

Other Activities in Furman Street Building

Up to 35,000 pounds of ductwork and related sheet-metal items are manufactured here and installed each month in the Society's buildings in Brooklyn and at Watchtower Farms

In the past three years, the Tape Duplicating Department has produced over 11 million cassette recordings in English, Spanish, French, and Portuguese

The aluminum window frames and thermopane insulated glass units are manufactured here for the Watchtower Society's buildings at a considerable reduction in cost. Heating costs saved from new windows will pay for this project in a short time

Satellite Television

Is It for You?

Three out of every eight TV sets in the world are in the United States, so it is no surprise that satellite TV caught on there first. Americans love their 175 million TVs. Watching TV is their favorite leisure-time occupation. But TV addiction is not just an American problem.

Although France has only 19 million TV sets, watching TV is also the favorite leisure-time activity of the French, by an even wider margin than in the United States. In Canada, where 97.3 percent of all households own a TV, it is watched an average of 23.7 hours per week. In Japan virtually every household has a color TV. And in West Germany the favorite leisure-time activity is also watching TV.

Growing in popularity among TV viewers is satellite TV. But what is satellite TV, and what effect does it have on TV viewers?

THE scene of rural North America is changing. Winding dirt lanes still lead to aging white frame houses, but in the backyard now often stands a large dish-shaped antenna, gaping at the sky like some visitor from the 21st century. And where are the children who used to play in the country lane? Inside watching satellite TV.

The age of the dish is upon us. By early 1987 an estimated 1,600,000 satellite TV systems had been sold in the United States alone, and another 175,000 were operating in Canada. Most of these installations are in the countryside, away from regular TV signals or cable service. But satellite TV is spreading in urban areas as well.

Explosive Growth—Why?

Some 250,000 satellite TV systems were sold in the United States in 1986, at costs ranging from under $1,000 to over $5,000. In most industries that would be considered spectacular, but 1986 was actually an off year. The banner year for satellite dishes was 1985, when 625,000 systems were sold, about four out of every ten in the United States today. If you know someone with a dish, chances are it is less than two years old.

There are two basic reasons for the recent explosive growth in the home satellite TV industry—price and choice. The price of a complete system is now under $2,500, which, although not cheap, can often be financed by the dealer. But why would anybody want to spend five or ten times as much on a TV antenna as he spent on his TV? To get all those channels—over a hundred of them. The choice of programs offered via satellites far exceeds what is available on conventional TV or even on cable.

As of early 1987, there were on satellite TV 8 channels devoted to movies, 12 to sports, 10 to religion, 14 to arts and education, 6 to news and public affairs.

Additionally, there were 9 channels with shop-at-home services, one weather channel, and 12 channels broadcasting in foreign languages. The National Technological University even offers courses by satellite, more than 300 of them! Radio services carried by satellites include readings for the blind and just about every type of music imaginable.

On the other hand, there are four so-called adult channels devoted to pornographic material, and other channels carry movies that people with Bible-influenced consciences find objectionable. "Innocent viewers who may have thought that seeing motion pictures and concerts at home would simply open up a pleasant new vista are discovering that, in some cases, they're getting more than they bargained for—or want," notes the television editor of a Los Angeles newspaper.

Free Ride Ending

1986 will be remembered as a turning point in the history of satellite TV. On January 15, 1986, the first big movie channel scrambled its signals electronically. Cable companies who retransmitted the movie by arrangement were able to decode it, but home dish owners received only a screenful of wavy lines. The free ride was ending. By 1987, 36 more channels had followed suit—including the major movie channels and readings for the blind. Ironically, only one of the pornographic channels had scrambled.

After scrambling became a fact of life, home dish owners were given the opportunity to purchase or lease machines that would decode their signals from space. The most popular such device costs about as much as a color TV and will unscramble 15 of the 37 "dark" channels. The catch is that the device only works as long as a monthly subscription fee is paid for each channel. These fees can add up. In fact, if a dish owner wishes to unscramble all his channels, it could cost as much as $1,000 per year in fees! And this does not include the purchase or rental of the various descramblers needed. Dish owners are hoping that competition and multichannel descrambling packages will bring these costs down, but clearly, the good old days are over for them. The price of satellite TV is going up—and the choices are going down.

"I, like most dish owners, have no access to cable TV," wrote a Louisiana man. "I wish I did: then I would not have had to pay so much for my satellite receiver! Cable subscribers have only to pay a small security deposit for their converter to receive cable TV, and then pay extra for additional services. I had to buy a satellite receiver and soon will have to buy a descrambler that will most likely be outdated by the time I receive it. Then I'll have to junk it to get a new descrambler."

Indeed, scrambling is probably the main cause of the drop in sales of satellite systems in 1986. Why spend all that money on a dish without knowing what it will cost to use it a year from now or what you will be able to see? The satellite TV hardware producers are praising the new fee-based descramblers as a sort of peace treaty between dish owners and programmers or channel owners, but that praise has a hollow sound.

The fact is, black-box descramblers are in the works that can illegally bypass the monthly fee. Thus, the January 1987 issue of *STV* magazine, a U.S. journal earmarked for satellite TV watchers, notes: "We [dish owners] will be demoted to the status of thieves and pirates, terms we worked so hard to eliminate."

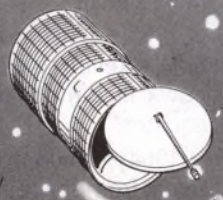
Is It Worth It?

Perhaps you live in a rural area and cannot get clear TV reception or cable service. Maybe you are offended by what you believe are mindless programs offered on network TV and yearn for a wider choice. But before you invest in a home satellite TV system, you might wish to consider its hidden costs and its uncertain future.

You may have considered these matters. And you may be prepared to spend well over a thousand dollars on a satellite dish and related equipment. You have braced yourself to pay monthly fees for unscrambled channels you wish to see. You are also willing to erect the dish—generally from eight to ten feet (2.4 to 3 m) in diameter—in your yard. You further understand that, no matter what satellite system you buy, it's eventually going to need service. In addition,

How Satellite TV Works

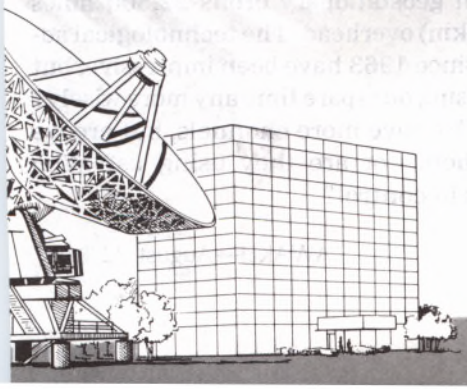
A satellite TV program begins like any other TV program—in a television studio. This studio is equipped with a large dish that can send the studio signal to a satellite overhead. This is the uplink.

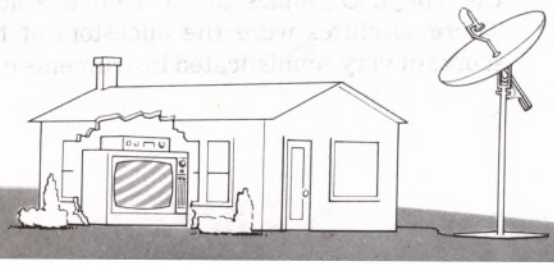


The satellite receiving the signal is located in a very special area of the sky called the Clarke belt, about 22,300 miles above the equator. You likely know that the farther a satellite is from the earth, the longer it takes to go around its orbit. Satellites only a few hundred miles up can orbit the earth in 90 minutes or so, but a satellite located 22,300 miles up takes 24 hours to go around the earth. Since the earth itself rotates every 24 hours, the satellite appears to hang motionless in space. Such an orbit is said to be geostationary, or synchronous. It is as if the satellite were at the top of a relay tower 22,300 miles high, except that there is no tower.

The satellite's job is to relay the TV signal back to earth. The relayed (downlink) signal is at a slightly lower frequency and is much less powerful than the uplink. In fact, most satellites transmit with only about 5 to 12 watts of power per channel—much less than an ordinary light bulb would use. Yet this weak signal is spread out—in most cases—over the entire continental United States.

How can such a faint signal ever be detected below? By means of a special dish called a parabolic antenna, designed to focus all the signals falling onto it, concentrating them at a single point much the same way a magnifying glass intensifies the sun's rays. Really, this device is a backyard adaptation of the sophisticated radio telescopes that scientists use to examine distant galaxies. The signal is gathered by a small device called a feed horn. From here the signal is further amplified, and the frequency is lowered so that it can be sent by wires to the TV.





you are prepared to deal with damage from wind, ice, and even lightning. You understand the dangers of immoral programming on satellites and have purchased a device to lock out the bad channels.

However, there is another vital consideration. Ask yourself, 'Do I *really* have the time to view additional programs, or will they steal time from wiser pursuits, such as reading upbuilding literature, acquiring useful skills, and helping people in need?'

Twenty-five years ago, Robert M. Hutchins, a well-known U.S. educator, observed: "In my lifetime, the working week has been cut by a third and the working life has been shortened at both ends by the prohibition of child labor, the prolongation of education, and the provisions for retirement. *But* the time thus set free has been transferred, with almost mathematical exactitude, to the television set. . . . We can't say that we are making intelligent use of the free time we have now."

In 1963 when Mr. Hutchins wrote those words, the very first synchronous communications satellite, Syncom 2, had just been launched. The following year, Syncom 3 would transmit for the first time from a geostationary orbit an international TV signal. This was from the opening ceremonies of the Tokyo Olympics to the United States. These satellites were the ancestors of the scores of very sophisticated instruments currently in geostationary orbits 22,300 miles (35,900 km) overhead. The technological advances since 1963 have been impressive, but are we using our spare time any more wisely?

Our TVs have more channels, but are we using them—or are they using us? Who really is in control?

A Satellite TV Chronology

1945—Science fiction author Arthur C. Clarke proposes that a satellite located 22,300 miles above the equator would from earth appear to hang motionless in the sky and could be used to relay signals broadcast from earth.

1954—U.S. Navy engineers experiment with bouncing radio signals off the moon. Voice signals are eventually transmitted between Washington, D.C., and Hawaii via the moon.

1955—U.S. engineer J. R. Pierce analyzes a number of satellite relay systems in an influential paper that showed that very small broadcast power would serve for transoceanic communications using satellites.

1960—Echo, an aluminum-coated balloon 100 feet (30 m) in diameter is put into orbit and used to relay radio signals.

1963—Syncom 2 becomes the first communications satellite to attain a synchronous orbit in what is now called the Clarke belt, 22,300 miles above the equator.

1964—Syncom 3 relays the first transpacific TV signal from space; 11 countries agree to form a global communications system—Intelsat.

1965—Intelsat 1 is launched, with only one transponder, capable of relaying one TV channel or 240 telephone conversations at once; the Soviet Union begins to launch its Molniya series of satellites, which are not geostationary but have orbits allowing them to transmit signals to regions in the northern U.S.S.R. that cannot receive signals from satellites in orbit over the equator.

1975—The first satellite-delivered cable TV service begins.

1982—Home satellite TV industry emerges.

Young People Ask. . .

Why Do My Things Have to Be So Neat?

"This is the last time I'm going to tell you. Clean up your room!"

DOES this sound familiar to you? It may, since few of us have a natural tendency toward neatness.

Yet, such a demand may seem unfair to you. You may *like* your room a bit untidy. Besides, since there may be so many rules for the rest of the house, do there also have to be rules about the way you keep your room? You may even feel that because you do not drink or use drugs like other youths, one small fault like untidiness is no big deal. And isn't it true that you have friends whose rooms are a lot worse? Why, then, do some parents make such a fuss about neatness? Do they have valid reasons for doing so?

Neatness Versus Untidiness

You may wish that your parents would follow the advice of one professor of psychiatry who said to parents: "Your best bet is to simply close the door to the offending room." Others, though, recognize that parents do have good reasons for demanding tidiness. Psychiatrist Paul Adams is quoted in the *Ladies' Home Journal* as saying: "It makes sense to tell a child that his room has to be somewhat tidy. Explain the restrictions. Say that if he can't keep the bedroom minimally neat then you're going to take away certain privileges."

When you think about it, your parents do have the right to lay down rules even for your room, do they not? They spent much time and money so you could have your own room, and they probably furnished it. So they can reasonably set rules as to its care. You will find it advantageous to abide by them.

Henry W. Longfellow, in his poem *The Builders,* coined the saying, "Each thing in its place is best." Evidently your parents feel that this is true, since there *are* advantages to having "each thing in its place." What are some of them?

Some Advantages of Neatness

One obvious advantage is that it is easier to find things. An untidy person may waste a lot of time looking for keys, a comb, or a handkerchief, to say nothing about that other shoe that somehow got kicked under the bed. Also, clothes stay cleaner and keep their press, and so last longer when properly hung up. Too, there is no danger of tripping over slacks or shoes that are put away in their place. This is particularly important when you are sharing a room with a brother or a sister.

Above all, when each member of the family does his share, keeping his room neat

and clean, it lessens the load for others and thus contributes to a happier family. In this regard 14-year-old Carolyn writes: "Mother has so much work to do here at home. . . . There are six kids besides me and none of them pick up after themselves very well and my mom has to and she has a bad back." If those seven children kept "each thing in its place," it would surely lessen their mother's load, would it not?

Another advantage is that if you keep your own room neat, you will probably do the same in other areas as well. This habit of neatness will also show up in the way you care for the family car and other property and will probably persist even into adulthood. Some day when you have to work secularly, a reputation for neatness may even enhance your possibilities of advancement—a worthwhile prospect, don't you think?

That it is practical to abide by your parents' rules is also borne out by the following: Most youths are anxious to drive a car. But when should they start? Not necessarily when they meet the legal age requirement. Drs. J. E. Schowalter and W. R. Anyan, Jr., state in *The Family Handbook of Adolescence:* "When the teenager can be *trusted to follow rules* and is generally *reliable,* it is likely that these same traits will control his or her behavior while driving." (Italics ours.) Do you not feel, then, that it is worth while to train yourself to be reliable and trustworthy and to follow rules even in the care of your room? The Bible says

Which do you prefer: this . . .

that it is: "The person faithful in what is least is faithful also in much."—Luke 16:10.

For the Christian youth, however, the main reason for being neat and tidy was given by the apostle Paul, who wrote: "God is a God, not of disorder, but of peace." He also wrote: "Become imitators of God, as beloved children."—1 Corinthians 14:33; Ephesians 5:1.

This orderliness on God's part was evident in the arrangement he made in the tabernacle, or tent, of worship of the nation of Israel. Only members of priestly families (Levites) were permitted inside the tabernacle. Moreover, Jehovah had Moses write down exactly where each item in the tabernacle was to be placed, and He gave detailed instructions as to what the priests and Levites were to do with them. (Exodus 40) In this way, non-Levite Israelites could at least visualize all that was being done in the tabernacle in connection with their worship of Jehovah. This would certainly make them feel a part of the proceedings and give them a sense of belonging. Do you not think that they must have been very grateful that Jehovah was a God of order?

What to Do About That Room?

How, then, can you create some order in your room? As mentioned previously, your parents

or this?

may already have some specific demands. But there is much you can do on your own initiative. Start with the obvious: Hang up any clothes lying around. Clothes hangers will keep shirts, blouses, and dresses neat. A shoe rack (or plastic shoe bag) will do wonders in keeping shoes in their place, improving the looks of the clothes closet. What about dirty clothes? Instead of just throwing them in a corner, why not have a hamper or at least a bag just for that purpose? Then, the bed. A few minutes a day makes the difference between a messy-looking bed and a neat one. Why not opt for a neat one?

Now for the things that are not so obvious. Choose one drawer in the room at a time and work on it, throwing away any useless items and putting the others in place. You may want to put in the drawer some small cardboard boxes or transparent plastic bags, using one for your underwear, another for socks or stockings, and so on. In a short time your room will have an entirely different look, and you will be developing a sense of pride in it.

Youths—Look to Your Future

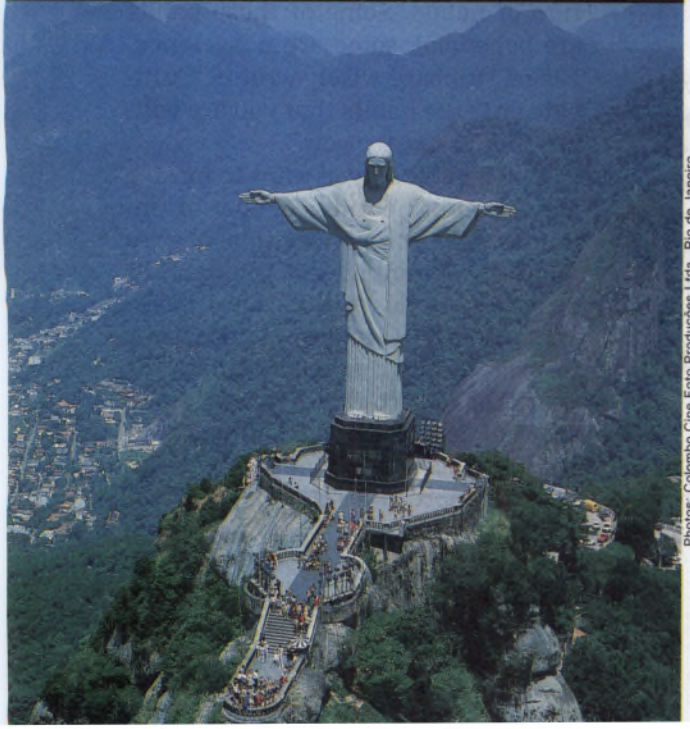
Is it worth so much time and effort to learn to be neat? Carol, now in her 20's, recalls the struggle she had. If her mother found Carol's room not up to standard (for example, if the socks and underwear were not neatly folded in the drawer), she would simply empty the drawers on the floor and have Carol put everything back neatly. Or, as punishment, Carol might be grounded for the weekend.

Looking back, does Carol feel that her mother was unfair? "No, I learned a lot from it. Now I know how to iron my clothes and how to keep things neat and clean. Maybe not up to Mother's standards, but at least I can leave my bedroom door open."

If Carol has children of her own in the future, what will she teach them about neatness? She explained: "I don't think I'll check their drawers, but if their room looks tidy, it'll be OK." When asked what counsel she had for youths, Carol answered: "Abide by your parents' standard of neatness. You'll eventually make it a habit."

It has been said that man is a creature of habits. Some of these habits are beneficial, some are not. Hence, Elbert Hubbard wisely wrote: "Cultivate only the habits that you are willing should master you."

Which habit do you want to master you—that of neatness or that of untidiness? As you ponder this, bear in mind the advantages of the habit of neatness: It has a Scriptural basis, saves time and money, builds self-respect, builds respect in others for you. And last but not least is the thought expressed by young Carolyn: "My mom really needs my help, and she appreciates it so much when I help her."



Photos: Colombo Cine Foto Produções Ltda., Rio de Janeiro

Rio's Sugarloaf and Hunchback

By *Awake!* correspondent in Brazil

"THERE is no lovelier city on this earth." That is how the Austrian romanticist Stefan Zweig described Rio de Janeiro. For sure, the view of Rio from atop the dizzying heights of Sugarloaf and Corcovado (Hunchback) mountains is truly breathtaking.

From atop these two famous peaks is seen a panorama of beauty that spreads out as far as your eye can see. There are bays, inlets, islands, beaches, bald rocks that jut hundreds of feet into the sky, as well as lush wooded mountain slopes, the sparkling sea with its ever-changing colors, and, of course, the city itself.

Rio presents a distinctive charm, with its residential quarters fitting snugly into every livable nook and cranny, extending up the sides of the mountains and over the lower spurs. And what a hodgepodge of architectural designs! Colonial structures side by side with ultramodern buildings, surrounded by shantytowns that cling precariously to the small hills.

Sugarloaf Mountain

The first description of Sugarloaf is found in a letter dated July 9, 1565. Writing to his superior, the Jesuit missionary José de Anchieta mentions "a very high peak, like a sugar loaf, which overlooks the virgin woodlands and dense forest." This conical granitic rock, rising about 1,300 feet (395 m), stands like a sentinel at the entrance to Guanabara Bay.

Until 1817 the top of Sugarloaf was inaccessible to humans. In that year an Englishwoman, with the toughness of a Marco Polo, scaled its steep incline and hoisted the British flag on its summit. This caused such a stir among the local residents—subjects of the Portuguese King John VI, then residing in Brazil—that the next day a soldier scrambled up the treacherous slope, uprooted the offending flag and substituted his country's banner for it! For his rash patriotic exploit, he was discharged from military service —Portugal and Britain were allies!

At the International Exposition held in Rio in 1909, the idea of making Sugarloaf Mountain a tourist attraction was discussed. The mayor authorized a project to construct a cable-car system, and work began that very same year. Starting at Vermelha Beach, the first stage of the aerial railway was completed by October 27, 1912. On inauguration day, 577 persons made the trip to the top of Urca Hill (about 720 feet [220 m]), a stepping-stone to Sugarloaf's peak. The second stage was ready by January 19, 1913, when 449 were transported by cable car across the 2,460 feet (750 m) of breathtaking space to the apex of the grand peak that had been a source of fascination for centuries.

The original cable cars carried millions of people during their 60 years of service. Then, on October 29, 1972, they were replaced with modern streamlined models, manufactured in Italy. These new cable cars are capable of handling 1,360 passengers per hour.

The Hunchback Mountain

As you stand on Sugarloaf's vantage point, another peak commands attention —Corcovado (Hunchback) Mountain! Standing farther back from the coastline, this sharp, rocky peak of 2,310 feet (704 m) offers a view of the entire city, its bay, and the surrounding districts.

More accessible than Sugarloaf Mountain, Hunchback Mountain was first scaled, it is claimed, by Brazil's emperor Dom Pedro I (1822-31) and his wife, Leopoldina, on horseback. Thereafter it became a favorite resort for both Rio's residents and foreign visitors.

Dom Pedro II issued a decree on January 7, 1882, authorizing the construction of a railway, which was inaugurated on October 9, 1884. The initial station, Cosme Velho, is about 120 feet (37 m) above sea level and the last stop is some 2,200 feet (670 m) above sea level. In 1912 the line was electrified, and the steam engines were dispensed with.

The winding and twisting ride up, whether by road or by rail, is as delightful as the view from the peak. The exhilarating aroma of the humid tropical forest, the birds and huge butterflies of every hue, the coolness of the deep shade, and the sudden breaking forth into brilliant sunshine in the many clearings all make the ascent an unforgettable experience.

The 'loveliest city on earth'? To some perhaps—visitors and natives alike. But one thing is sure, Rio de Janeiro has two magnificent peaks—the Sugarloaf and Corcovado (Hunchback) mountains—from which the 'lovely city' can be viewed and appreciated.

From Our Readers

Overcoming Acne

I would like to thank you for the article in the series "Young People Ask . . . " entitled "Can't I Do Something About My Acne?" (February 22, 1987) This article came along at a moment when I was starting to despair, and it helped me enormously in carrying out my treatment. I now realize that only perseverance can really bring an improvement.

S. C., France

A Birth or an Abortion?

At 20, already married and the mother of a three-year-old son, I almost had an abortion. I am so happy that I did not. I was spared so many sorrows I would otherwise have had. Today my two sons, nine and six years old, are both readers of your magazine. Keep on publishing good articles like this. (April 8, 1987) Maybe it will help other women not to have abortions.

E. B., Federal Republic of Germany

Beating Stress

Until recently I was terribly afflicted with stress, unable to cope with it. Last December I finished my schooling, took up employment as a technician in nutrition and diet, but within four weeks I gave it up. I judged myself to be incapable of assuming any responsibility, a coward, a failure. So great was my anxiety over this that everyone and everything made me cry or get angry, or even want to die. I tried several remedies but with little success. Then along came the article "Young People Ask . . . Can I Beat Stress?" (April 8, 1987) How relieved I was to know that we all have stress in some form or another and that it can be reduced and controlled. Now I know that I can cope with it.

N. V. O., Brazil

College Education?

When I first read your article "College Education—A Preparation for What?" I thought to myself: 'Another put-down for a college education.' (January 8, 1987) But after careful consideration, now that I have finished college, I can truly appreciate the advice given. Although it's too late for me, I hope young people who read the article realize that a college education prepares you for absolutely nothing. I look back and regret those years of my life.

S. B., United States

Benefits of Reading *Awake!*

I really appreciate reading your magazine. Its contents are truly food for thought. It deals with a variety of difficult subjects in a simple, precise way, making them easy for all to understand. Also, the advice given is practical and inexpensive. I personally have always found it worth following. I recommend your magazines to young people who are studying foreign languages. I suggest they subscribe to the magazine in French and in the language they are learning. In this way they have choice texts scrupulously translated.

R. M., France

Watching the World

Conventional War—Nuclear Threat?

Even a conventional war fought in Europe would "spread radioactivity over wide areas and lead to vast tracts of land remaining uninhabitable for generations," states *New Scientist* magazine. The reason, according to a report by Bradford University's School of Peace Studies, is that attacks would inevitably involve nuclear power plants. "Germany alone contains around 30 nuclear reactors, Britain 38 and Europe as a whole [more than] 120," says the report. "Many other reactors are planned. These stations are extremely vulnerable to attack." According to the study, an attack on the Federal Republic of Germany alone would result in a "dozen Chernobyls" as bombs hit and destroy nuclear reactors.

AIDS Complication

The existence of a new AIDS virus that can also cause the disease has been confirmed by researchers from the Pasteur Institute in Paris. In a report, published in *The New England Journal of Medicine,* they say: "It appears clear the HIV-2, a virus related to but distinct from HIV-1, is the cause of AIDS in some West Africans and that a new AIDS epidemic is possible." Localized at first in West Africa, the new virus has already been reported in Britain, France, Federal Republic of Germany, and Brazil. As the two viruses are genetically different, standard screening tests that check blood for AIDS are likely to miss the HIV-2 virus. It is feared that the differences between the two will further complicate efforts to find an effective vaccine against the disease.

Smart Birds

Noted for its freakish nests and its adaptability, the Brazilian

yellow-throated spinetail has a knack for foiling its predators —both human and animal. The bird customarily builds up to five nests in its tree habitat—one to live in and the rest as decoys. The unkempt-looking nests are usually built with several entrances —some false—on top, underneath, or on the sides. Pieces of discarded snakeskin may be incorporated as part of the building material in an apparent effort to discourage intruders. Brazilian ornithologist Flávio Crispi Araújo reports that as the bird's predators have increased, so have the number of decoy nests. The bird has recently been observed building as many as 12 nests in one tree!

Too Realistic

Critics claim that the Lazer Tag gun, with its ability to hit a target using a beam of infrared light, may have been designed too realistically. This high-tech toy gun proved deadly for one 19-year-old. While playing a game of combat late one evening with three young friends, Leonard Falcon fired his plastic pistol at a figure he apparently thought to be another youth. It turned out instead to be a police officer who had been called to the scene to investigate a report of prowlers carrying guns. In the darkness, he had mistaken the light from the boy's laser gun to be real gunfire and, in a split second, fired off two shotgun blasts, killing the youth. Concerned that others may reap similar consequences by using the all too realistic lazer toy, the boy's father stated: "Something has got to be done to warn people."

Good Communicators

In a letter that was published in a recent issue of *Life and Work,* a Church of Scotland publication, high marks were given to *The*

Watchtower and *Awake!* by Russel Moffat, one of the church's ministers. Commenting on the growth of Jehovah's Witnesses, Moffat said that the Witnesses' success was due, in part, to the "quality of their literature." He explained regarding *The Watchtower* and also *Awake!* that each "is attractively presented (colour photographs), includes articles of topical concern and interest, takes a strong stand on moral issues, giving clear unambiguous teaching and advice, (eg. a recent *Watch Tower* magazine has an article on 'Women in the Workplace' which deals with the problem of sexual harassment and gives practical advice for Christian women) and most important of all, presents the belief of the sect in a simple, easy to understand, biblically based way. In short," he added, "they communicate very well."

Preferred Item

For 15 years the Stanford Court Hotel in San Francisco, California, has had Bibles in each of its 402 rooms. Then it was suggested that they also put dictionaries in the rooms. Some $7,000 was spent on the venture. While no Bibles have ever been missing, in just the first month, 41 dictionaries were stolen.

Bricks From Garbage

For many cities in industrial countries, disposing of garbage is an increasing problem. Shanghai, China's most populous city, is no exception. Each day, refuse in the amount of 10,000 tons or more must be disposed of, much of which is absorbed by a treatment plant the city operates. Some of the treated garbage is used for fertilizer and landfill. Also, the magazine *China Reconstructs* reports the Chinese have found that by combining ash, stone, and brick fragments with the treated material, they can produce bricks of construction quality. Within the last few years, several million bricks are said to have been produced. The bricks are in great demand due to the current boom in local construction.

Living Up To Their Claims

Do vegetarians really live longer? Apparently so, claims the German Cancer Research Centre in Heidelberg. After studying a group of 1,904 vegetarians for five years, the agency noted that only 36 died from cardiovascular

problems—a mortality rate 80 percent lower than average in the Federal Republic of Germany. Deaths due to breast, prostate, and intestinal cancers were also rare. "Only the stomach cancer mortality rate was almost equal the national average," says *Asiaweek*, "though those who died of it in the group were in their eighties." The study will continue for another five years "to get more comprehensive results."

Mud Cooking Stoves

Efforts to save dwindling world forests have prompted researchers in Ethiopia to develop an energy-saving wood-burning stove. According to *The New York Times*, they have designed a state-of-the-art stove made of mud and straw. Since the stoves are more fuel efficient, much less wood is required to cook a meal. A standard two-pot stove is able to use 24 percent of the energy available in the wood fuel. By comparison, only 5 to 10 percent is used by an open fire. A new model mud stove currently being tested is showing an efficiency rating of 33 percent. It is hoped that use of this mud-and-straw "appliance" will help slow the deforestation experienced by African countries like Ethiopia. Forests there have been reduced from 40 percent of land area to less than 3 percent since the turn of the century.

Humans—Endangered Species?

Present environmental trends threaten to affect the earth so radically that human *life* is endangered, concludes the World Commission on Environment and Development. During the 900 days since the commission's first meeting, diseases related to malnutrition and contaminated drinking water killed 60 million children. Drought in Africa terminated the lives of another million people. Industrial accidents, such as those at Bhopal, India, and Chernobyl, U.S.S.R., claimed 3,000 lives and have affected millions more. What is forecast for the next 30 years? According to *The Times* of London, agricultural land equal in area to Saudi Arabia will become desert, and forest areas about the size of India will be destroyed. The UN established commission says that "decisive international action is urgently required" to ensure human survival.

Alligators Make a Comeback

Gatorama photos

Because of decades of intensive hunting, as recently as the mid-1960's the alligator was decreed to be rare and endangered. However, its comeback in the southeastern regions of the United States has been so remarkable that the reptiles now pose a threat to the growing human population.

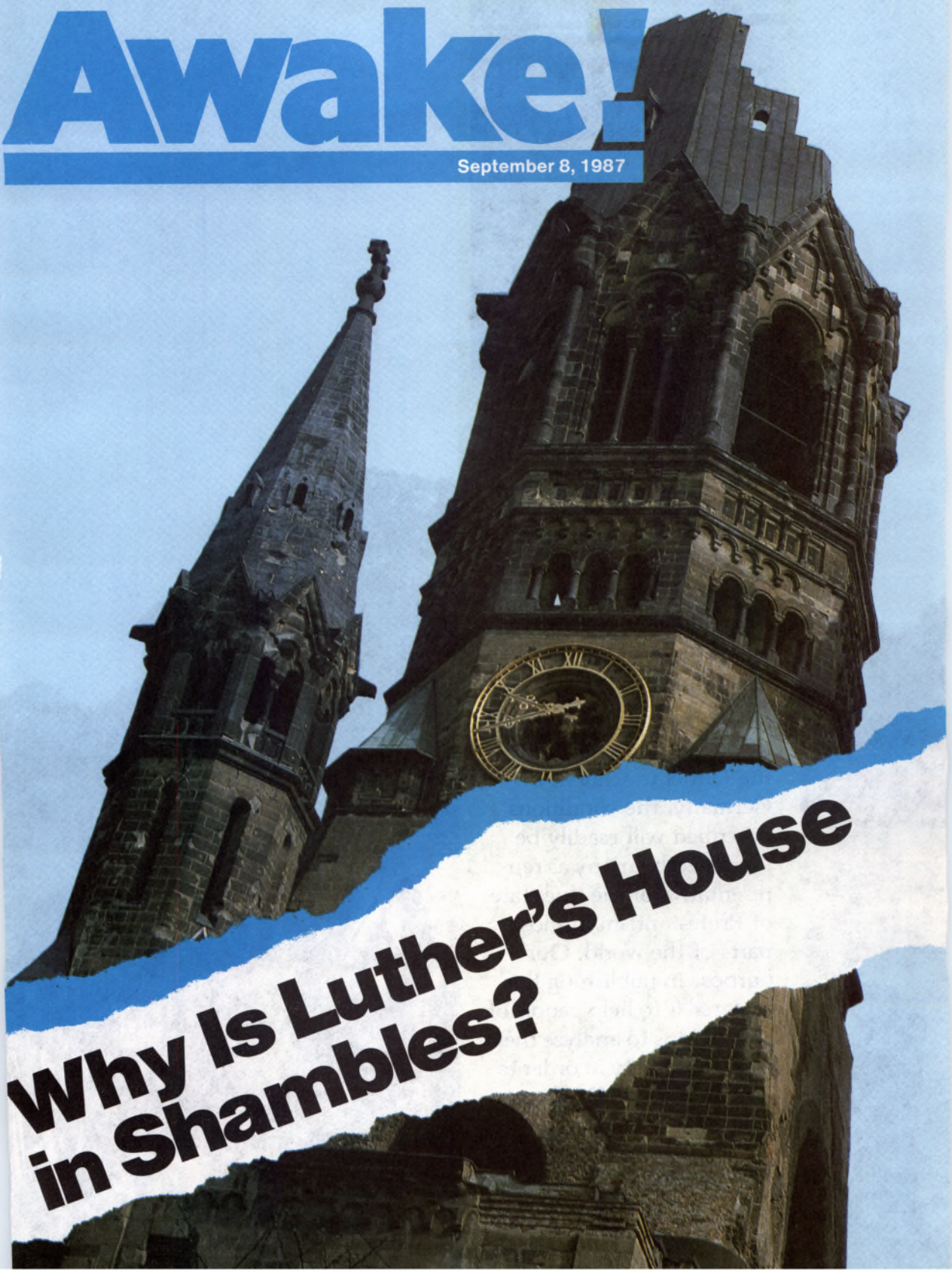
Florida game agents handle as many as 18 complaints daily involving alligators that are chomping on family pets, sunbathing on golf courses, napping on highways, or wandering into residential areas. The consequences may be serious. Last year at least nine alligator attacks on humans were reported in Florida alone. One of these involved an eight-year-old who was attacked while squatting by a duck pond at Walt Disney World.

Commenting on the problem of the alligator's indiscriminate eating habits, Captain Bob Poole of the Florida Game and Fresh Water Fish Commission explains: "An alligator really doesn't understand the difference between a human hand and a chicken wing."

Alligators Make a Comeback

Awake!

September 8, 1987



Why Is Luther's House in Shambles?

Some people, as these pictures indicate, have strong faith, motivating them to regular Christian worship and activity. They work together to build much-needed meeting places quickly. Yet, others admit to living in a spiritual vacuum.

While the following articles deal principally with the Lutheran Church in Germany, the conditions described will readily be identified by many as representative of the true state of Protestantism in most parts of the world. Our purpose in publishing this material is to help people of all religions to analyze their own spirituality in order to achieve a more significant relationship with God.

Are German Lutherans an Endangered Species?

By *Awake!* correspondent in the Federal Republic of Germany

SOME viewers may have been startled to hear the following words on German television: "The Lutheran Church will have no future at all." Even more startling was the fact that they originated near the very region that brought forth Martin Luther, founder of that church and father of the Reformation.*

True, the United Evangelical Lutheran Church of Germany has about 25 million members, which is, according to the last official census, some 45 times as many as belong to all the other Protestant groups in Germany combined. Still, the church is in shambles, aptly symbolized on our cover by the bombed-out ruins of the Kaiser Wilhelm Memorial Church in West Berlin.

In 1961, over 50 percent of all Germans were Lutheran. By 1970, the figure was 49 percent, by 1980, 46 percent. Then things seemed to improve. A German daily newspaper reported at the beginning of 1981: "The Lutheran Church in Germany has recovered from its setbacks of a decade ago. . . . Church membership withdrawals . . . have lost their ominous dimensions."

But membership figures for 1984 showed this optimism to be premature. Estimates now are that the church will lose another 4,500,000 members within ten years. Thus, by the year 2030, only a third or less of the population would be Lutheran.

Why Are They Leaving?

On the aforementioned 1986 television program, seven former church members gave their reasons for disgruntlement: church opposition to Sunday sports, its financing of communist guerrilla movements, its stand on governmental defense policies, its dismissal of two homosexual pastors, and its neglect in caring for animals. Another resented the arrangement whereby church taxes are deducted from

* To be exact, Luther was born and spent much of his life in what is now the German Democratic Republic, commonly known as East Germany.

Awake!® September 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 17

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Are German Lutherans an Endangered Species? 3
"If the Trumpet Sounds an Indistinct Call . . ." 5
Future Prospects for Protestantism—And for You! 8

Also in This Issue

Gambling—Does Anyone Win? 12
Namibia—Vast, Lonely, Inviting 16
Young People Ask . . . How Serious Is Masturbation? 19
The Bible's Viewpoint Is Civil Disobedience Ever Justified? 22
Assembly Halls—A Sign of What? 24
Computing Fraud and Sabotage 27
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Canaries as Gas Detectors 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

25 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$5.00	$2.50
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$5.50	$2.75
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures* used.
Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $5.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

members' earnings. Significantly, only two mentioned God. And yet, is that not what religion is all about?

Although serious, even more disturbing than the drop in numbers, says Johannes Hansen, a leading Lutheran theologian, is "the truly desolate religious state of church members." This accounts for the fact that on a normal Sunday less than 6 percent of them attend church services, in large cities still fewer. Only one in four considers attending church or reading the Bible to be Christian requirements. In fact, about eight out of ten say that to be a good Lutheran a person must simply be baptized and confirmed, live a decent life and be trustworthy. No wonder the *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* noted in an editorial: "The danger for the Lutheran Church does not stem from its numbers but comes from its lack of spiritual strength"!

Church members who lack spiritual strength view their church accordingly. They admire its rich history, boast of its beautiful buildings, and take advantage of the social benefits it offers. When it comes to "finding God," however, many prefer to look for him in nature rather than in the church. This led a church leader to ask with sarcasm why they do not just go ahead and have their funeral services conducted by the Department of Forestry instead of by the church.

"What seems to be lacking," commented a U.S. magazine several years ago, "is the passion for God and his truth that characterized the original Lutherans." Why do so many Lutherans view their church as nothing more than a convenient framework for infant baptism, adolescent confirmation, and adult marriage ceremony? Why do they seek God in nature and turn back to the church only at life's end for a "decent burial"? Why the lack of spiritual strength?

"If the Trumpet Sounds an Indistinct Call . . ."

"IF THE trumpet sounds an indistinct call, who will get ready for battle?" (1 Corinthians 14:8) Could the indifference shown by German Lutherans—soldiers of the church—be because the church is sounding an indistinct call? Consider the evidence.

An Identity Crisis

Over the past 200 years, claims Lutheran deacon Wolfram Lackner, Protestantism has progressively abandoned its original confessions of faith. So German Protestantism now "finds itself in a critical identity crisis."

This identity crisis became more apparent in the 1930's, as William L. Shirer's book *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich* explains: "The Protestants in Germany . . . were a divided faith. . . . With the rise of National Socialism there came further divisions . . . The more fanatical Nazis among them organized in 1932 'The German Christians' Faith Movement' . . . [and] ardently supported the Nazi doctrines of race and the leadership principle . . . Opposed to the 'German Christians' was another minority group which called itself the 'Confessional Church.' . . . In between lay the majority of Protestants, . . . who sat on the fence and eventually, for the most part, landed in the arms of Hitler."

Actually, some of Luther's teachings played right into Hitler's hands. Luther's "two kingdoms" doctrine, arguing that God rules the world through both secular and church authorities, encourages strict submission to civil officials. Thus, the Lutheran publication *Unsere Kirche* admits that "the greater part of German Protestantism . . . celebrated the end of the Weimar democracy with great enthusiasm and cheered the new dictator." In view of Luther's strong anti-Semitic sentiments, the church did not find it difficult to bar from the ministry persons not of Aryan descent.

But what about the "Confessional Church"? In 1934 it adopted the Barmen Declaration, which expressed opposition to National Socialist ideology. A Berlin exhibition about Protestantism during the Third Reich recently revealed, however, that only a third of the Protestant clergy supported the "Confessional Church." And not even all of that third actively opposed Hitler. The opposition of those who did was apparently misinterpreted by Hitler to mean opposition by the church as a whole. The book *Der deutsche Widerstand 1933-1945* (German Resistance 1933-1945) contends that thus was imputed to the Lutheran Church a position of political opposition that it itself did not choose.

After Hitler's downfall, the church was in shambles. Which of the opposing factions had mirrored its true identity? Why had its trumpet call been so indistinct?

To clear up these questions, 11 leading Protestant clergymen, including Gustav Heinemann, later to become president of the Federal Republic, met in October 1945

to draw up the so-called Stuttgart admission of guilt. Despite their opposition to the Nazi regime, they said: "We accuse ourselves for not having been more courageous in confessing our convictions, more faithful in saying our prayers, more joyful in expressing our faith, and more ardent in showing our love." These clergymen hoped that this declaration would be a distinct trumpet call to action, triggering a fresh start.

A Religious or a Political Trumpet —Which?

Possibly embarrassed that their church did so little in opposing Hitler, many German Lutherans today are quick to attack governmental policies. Lutheran clergy, for example, were among the early organizers of Europe's antinuclear movement. In 1984 a group of North German Lutheran pastors began urging men of draft age to refuse military service. The church condemned this action, however, saying it showed "considerable political intolerance for the feelings of Christians who think otherwise." At its 1986 general synod, the church defended its right to discuss political issues and then did so. It expressed disappointment at the results of the superpower summit in Iceland and debated at length government policy on refugees, unemployment, and nuclear power plants.

Of course, not everyone agrees with this political activism. Luther, were he alive today, would surely condemn it, according to Professor Heiko Oberman, an authority on the Reformation leader. And Rolf Scheffbuch, Lutheran deacon, complains that nowadays the genuineness of Christian faith is too quickly measured by one's attitude toward apartheid or missile deployment.

It is obvious that political differences are dividing the church. It is also obvious that the "longtime love affair" between Church and State is showing "signs of fatigue" and is getting "rusty," as Bishop Hans-Gernot Jung recently expressed it. This explains the reprimanding words uttered by a ranking German politician in 1986: "When dying forests are discussed at greater length than Jesus Christ, the church has lost sight of its real commission."

Protestantism, as its name indicates, arose from a desire to protest against what had gone before. Thus, from its founding, Protestantism has tended to be liberal, receptive to new ideas, open-minded in its approach, willing to adapt to the norms of the moment. Nothing illustrates this better than Protestant theology. With no final authority to rule on doctrine—such as the Vatican in the case of Catholics—every theologian has been permitted to blow his own trumpet of theological interpretation.

Discordant Theological Trumpeters

This has resulted in some very strange sounds. *Time* magazine reported an example in 1979: "Do you have to believe in God to be a Protestant minister? The answer, as in so many cases these days, is yes and no. Germany, in particular, has been a veritable font of Protestant doubt for decades. But last week, deciding it had to draw the line somewhere, West Germany's United Evangelical Lutheran Church . . . unfrocked the Rev. Paul Schulz for heresy.... Since 1971 he has preached that the existence of a personal God is 'a comforting invention of human beings.' . . . Prayer? Mere 'self-reflection.' . . . Jesus? A normal man with good things to say who was later glorified into the Son of God by early Christians." Indicating that "Schulz's notions

are not new, or even rare" was the fact that during the hearings he "played to a sometimes cheering gallery of theology students." And despite its action, "the commission insisted that it still favors 'a wide spectrum' of individual interpretation."

Pointing to this wide spectrum of individual interpretation, a newspaper editorial says that Protestant theology lacks "conceptual clarity and theoretical exactness" and calls it "elementary hodgepodge theology that comes across no less sterile than stale dogmatism." A Swiss Protestant newsletter adds: "The 'either-or' of Christian perception" has been "replaced by a 'this as well as that'." No wonder theologians disagree!*

Is Luther's House Heading for a Fall?

The crisis in the church is in reality a crisis of faith. But can faith be developed in persons nourished on "elementary hodgepodge theology" and guided in a wishy-washy, "this as well as that" direction? Can Protestantism expect to motivate its troops into Christian action with such an indistinct trumpet call?

As far back as 1932, theology teacher Dietrich Bonhoeffer complained: "It [the Lutheran Church] tries to be everywhere and thus ends up being nowhere." Is it too late for the church to find its identity? Most church officials agree that the usual methods of revitalization will not work. Something new and different is needed. But what? Retired Bishop Hans-Otto Wölber says: "The future of the church is not a question of methods, but of contents. . . . It is the message that matters. . . . In other words, we stand and fall with the Bible."

True.

* Karl Barth, one of this century's more prominent Protestant theologians, reportedly described some of fellow theologian Paul Tillich's theories as "abominable." He also violently disagreed with theologian Rudolf Bultmann, who questioned the literalness of some Bible accounts.

Who Sounded a Distinct Trumpet Call for Christian Neutrality?

"We still know very little about the fate of World War II conscientious objectors; until now only the following is known: Among Lutherans, Hermann Stöhr and Martin Gauger uncompromisingly refused military service . . . Seven names of Catholics can be mentioned . . . German Mennonites, traditionally pacifistic, did not choose to 'exercise the principle of nondefense' during the Third Reich, based on a decision made by a meeting of elders and ministers on January 10, 1938. Two Quakers in Germany are known to have refused military service. . . . Seven members of the Seventh-Day Adventists can be named who refused to swear the oath of allegiance . . . and were put to death. Jehovah's Witnesses (Bible Students) mourned the largest number of victims. In 1939 there were about 20,000 persons in the 'Greater German Reich' belonging to this . . . religious organization. It is estimated that in Germany alone some 6,000 to 7,000 of Jehovah's Witnesses refused to do military service during World War II. The Gestapo and the SS therefore gave this group special attention."
—"Sterben für den Frieden" (Dying for Peace), by Eberhard Röhm, published in 1985.

Future Prospects for Protestantism —*And for You!*

"I HAVE been studying Lutheran theology now for seven semesters and am therefore a prospective minister of the church," began a letter to the editor in a November 1986 German newspaper. It continued: "I would like to call attention to the fact that our training consists basically of tearing the Bible apart —only its covers are left. . . . While the student's faith or its foundation, the Scriptures, is being shattered, most of his lecturers are teaching him the 'new gospel' of socialism, thereby giving the church a totally new substance. God is dead—long live socialism! Jesus has rotted in his grave, we must save ourselves! This is the message that many a minister takes to his pulpit, Sunday after Sunday. We urgently need new facilities to teach us the Bible, but at the moment the church is suppressing them."

With God's Word being treated so shabbily, is there any hope that the church and its parishioners may yet recover from their spiritual disarray? An 18th-century Bible translator correctly observed: "The church's state of health is determined by the way it treats the Scriptures."

Can a New Reformer Help?

"Dietrich Bonhoeffer is honored and quoted nowadays more than any other theologian of our century," says theology Professor Georg Huntemann. Bonhoeffer, a leading member of the "Confessional Church," was imprisoned by the Nazis in 1943 and executed in 1945 for alleged involvement in an assassination plot against Hitler. Huntemann says Bonhoeffer might just be the new reformer the church needs. Note the following excerpts from some of his sermons. Ask yourself: What would heeding his words mean for the Lutheran Church? for *my* church?

"In religion only one thing is of essential importance, that it be true." This agrees with what Jesus said: "God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth."*—John 4:24; see also John 8:32; 14:6; 16:13.

Are you sure that everything your church teaches is really true? Does it teach that man has an immortal soul—one that cannot die—or does it agree with the Bible, which says: "The soul that sinneth, it shall die"? (Ezekiel 18:4, 20) Does your church teach you that God is nameless or that he is named Jesus, or does it agree with the Bible, which says: "Thou, whose name alone is JEHOVAH, art the most high over all the earth"? (Psalm 83:18) Does your church teach you that all good people will be taken to heaven when the

* All quotations are from the *King James Version.*

earth is destroyed by fire, or does it agree with the Bible, which says: "The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein for ever"?—Psalm 37:29; see also Psalm 104:5.

"It [the church] must strive for purity of teaching." This agrees with what Jesus said: "Beware of the leaven . . . , the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees."—Matthew 16:12; see also 1 Corinthians 5:8.

Does your church welcome "a wide spectrum of individual interpretation," or does it act in harmony with the divine counsel: "Brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them"?—Romans 16:17; see also 2 Timothy 2:16-18; 2 John 9, 10.

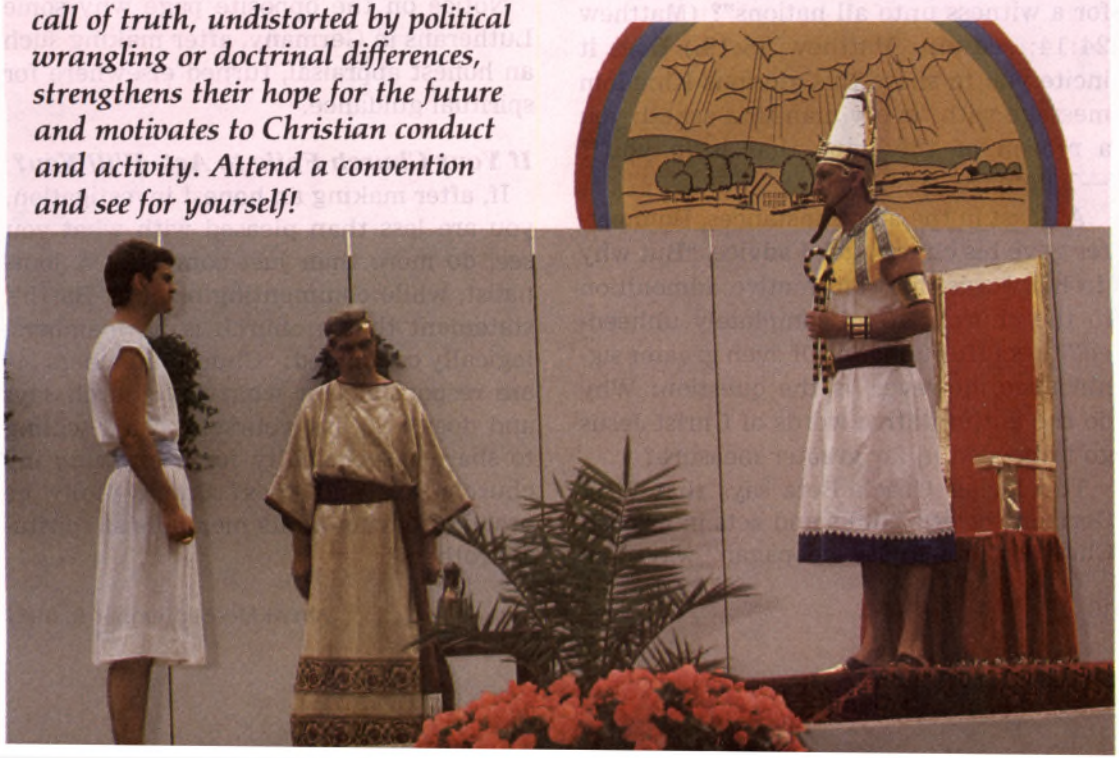
"On Judgment Day, God will certainly not ask us: Have you celebrated impressive Reformation festivals, but rather: Have you listened to my Word and kept it?" This agrees with what Jesus said: "My brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it."—Luke 8:21; see also Matthew 7:21; John 15:14.

Does your church place more emphasis on ritual, ceremonies, and buildings than it does upon gaining accurate knowledge of God's Word? Is occasional holiday attendance at church considered enough, in contrast with the counsel of "not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together . . . so much the more, as ye see the day [of judgment] approaching"?—Hebrews 10:25.

Does your church encourage you to read God's Word daily, offering you personal assistance in understanding it and providing motivation to do what it requires?

"Religion is work, perhaps the most difficult

At their conventions—for example, by means of dramas as seen here—Jehovah's Witnesses are offered practical instruction on applying Bible principles in daily life. This distinct trumpet call of truth, undistorted by political wrangling or doctrinal differences, strengthens their hope for the future and motivates to Christian conduct and activity. Attend a convention and see for yourself!



District conventions motivate Jehovah's Witnesses to do the work of preaching God's Kingdom

and most certainly the holiest work that a human can do." This agrees with what Jesus said: "My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work."—John 4:34.

Does your church tell you that God's work for Christians today is to preach "this gospel of the kingdom . . . in all the world for a witness unto all nations"? (Matthew 24:14; see also Matthew 28:19.) Does it incite you to share this glorious Kingdom message with "every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you"? —1 Peter 3:15.

At least in the above instances, Bonhoeffer gave his church good advice. "But why do his words, his reformative admonition to the church, go so completely unheeded?" asks Huntemann. Of even greater significance, however, is the question: Why do the authoritative words of Christ Jesus go unheeded in far greater measure?

Theologian Ulrich Betz says that West German society thinks and acts in a "post-Christian, not to say neopagan" way. The Lutheran Church must accept blame for at least the 25 million members of that society who are Lutheran. Even as a tree that bears rotten fruit is suspect, so is a church that brings forth pseudo-Christians. Jesus explained: "A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit."—Matthew 7:16-18.

Make this honest appraisal. What kind of fruit is your church producing? Is it improving the personalities of its members? Is it promoting peace and unity on the family, community, and global levels? Is it a bulwark against drug abuse, immorality, and crime? Could you, without hesitation, say that the world would be a better place in which to live if everyone belonged to *your* church?

Notice on the opposite page why some Lutherans in Germany, after making such an honest appraisal, turned elsewhere for spiritual guidance.

If Your Church Fails to Act, Will You?

If, after making an honest investigation, you are less than pleased with what you see, do more than just complain. A journalist, while commenting on Karl Barth's statement that a church is its members, logically concluded: "Church members . . . are responsible for what the church says and does." So ask yourself: Am I willing to share responsibility for *everything* my church says and does? Can I really be proud of having all its members as spiritual brothers?

Former Lutherans Explain Why They Are Now Jehovah's Witnesses

"What first impressed me about Jehovah's Witnesses was the cleanliness and honesty I saw at one of their conventions. I encourage others to attend one to experience for themselves the genuine love among the Witnesses." —W. R., former sexton.

"I attended church every Sunday. But the sermon, at most 20 minutes long, seldom answered my questions about the purpose of life or about life after death. Jehovah's Witnesses gave me the answers right from the Bible, and I could talk to them on a person-to-person basis. More must be included in divine services than just responding to church bells every Sunday morning, singing songs, and listening to a sermon. No sincere searcher for truth can be satisfied with that! He wants to do something."—E. B., former Sunday-school teacher.

"My activity as church elder never involved Biblical matters, only purely business matters. What helped me most was learning God's name, Jehovah, a name I never heard mentioned at church. I was impressed with the multitude of truths contained in the Bible." —E. M., former church elder.

"The first time Jehovah's Witnesses spoke to me, the difference [between them and us] was apparent. That they wanted to talk to me about the Bible was totally new and strange. My first question was whether they were being paid for their work. They said no. My second question was whether they had fought during the war. They explained that many Witnesses had been in concentration camps. Finally, I had found persons willing, if necessary, to die for their faith."—H. M., former sexton.

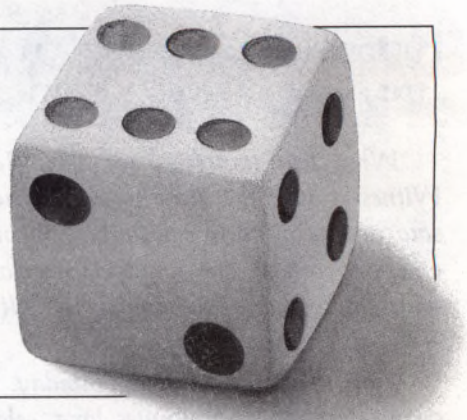
"When I asked my pastor to explain why every pastor had his own interpretation, he said: 'Every pastor has the right to visualize God in the way that will permit Him to be put to the best use in the congregation.' Later I took turns attending two different congregations of Jehovah's Witnesses. What struck me was the complete harmony between them. And the lectures contained such worthwhile material, always supported by Bible texts that you could immediately read from your own Bible! What a contrast to the many sermons I had heard!" —U. P., former church social worker and parish nurse.

While considering these questions, do not overlook the significance of Revelation 18:4, 8. Speaking of the world empire of false religion, displeasing to God, it says: "Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues . . . [for] her plagues [shall] come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her."

You may sincerely believe that your church is no part of false religion that God says he will soon destroy. But your life depends upon being 100 percent sure. Are you?

False religion has no future, nor do those who support it. True religion will last forever, along with those who practice it. Make your choice accordingly.

Gambling —Does Anyone Win?



By *Awake!* correspondent in Italy

'IN THESE times of serious economic recession, there is an industry untouched by the crisis.' The Italian magazine *Corriere della Sera Illustrato* referred to the gambling industry. Yes, in Italy, as in many other lands, gambling is big business.

"The U.S. is in the midst of an explosion of legalized gambling," says *Fortune* magazine. "Hugely profitable, the lotteries last year [1983] netted . . . almost $2.1 billion." Gambling also lures great numbers of Canadians. According to the newspaper *La Presse,* families living in Quebec spend more on gambling than on medicine and dental care!

While lotteries, roulette wheels, dice, and card games are used in gambling, the outcome of boxing matches, football games, and horse races are some of the more popular things gamblers bet on. But as *The Complete Illustrated Guide to Gambling* puts it: "Determined gamblers will bet on which of two raindrops will first reach the bottom of a window pane, or on the number of hairs growing on a hirsute mole." Thus, in Italy they bet on presidential elections, whether the government will fall or not, and even the election of the pope! The night before a football match is likewise a time of frenzy for gamblers, who spend fantastic sums of money on football pools. Newspapers call this 'Saturday night fever.'

Who, though, are the winners in the game of gambling? Does the fact that millions—yes, billions—of dollars are up for grabs indicate that gambling is somehow worth while?

Why They Gamble

Sharon and Steve were happily married. But when Sharon discovered that they were buried in debt, she begged Steve to abandon gambling. Countless promises to stop were broken. Sharon's health collapsed, and she began to have chest pains. That concerned Steve little. His only thought was that if she died, he could use the insurance money to pay off his gambling debts.

This real-life case, related in *Medical Aspects of Human Sexuality,* well illustrates how tenacious a hold gambling can have on people. For some, the lure of gambling is greed, pure and simple. However, the booklet *Compulsive Gambling* says: "People who gamble . . . do so for special satisfactions: relief from tension and stress, the excitement of taking a chance, the thrill of anticipating a winning, a 'glow' or 'high'

similar to that produced by alcohol, and sociability and companionship. When the result is a win, added to the other effects is a feeling of power, even of omnipotence."

Winning early in life, though, often sets a subtle trap. While most people may brush off such a win as "beginner's luck," some foolishly interpret it as an omen of sorts. Said an article in *Psychology Today:* "The cold, hard odds—the fact that 90 percent of those who gamble lose—do not impress them. They feel that they are immune to these odds, that they are, in fact, special." This almost pathological refusal to face facts is one of the first steps toward becoming a compulsive gambler.

The Italian newspaper *Stampa Sera* stated that for such ones, gambling is "a drug a person cannot do without." Or as Giovanni Arpino wrote in *Il Giornale nuovo:* "This vice becomes irremediably embedded in one's flesh." Gambling provides an escape from a way of life that might otherwise be boring.

Even when gambling only for light recreation, the participant can fall prey to pride and egotism, refusing to quit if he loses or continuing to play after he wins —only to lose again.

Beating the Odds

Though the gambler may feel he is 'destined to win,' the fact is that a gambler is almost *certain to be a loser!* The reason? Simple mathematics. Flip a coin ten times, and how often does it come up heads or tails? Intuition may say it should be five and five. Try it. It rarely comes out that way. You see, the so-called law of averages works only with *large numbers.* In other words, toss a coin an infinite number of times and, yes, it will come out heads and tails equally. But over the *short run,* any combination could appear. Thus, there's really no telling how any specific toss will come out.

The gambler refuses to accept this. If a coin has come out heads eight times in a row, he may believe with almost religious fervor that it just *has* to come out tails on the next toss. And he'll bet away a fortune on that conviction. In reality, the coin has no memory of its past performance. The odds on each toss are *still* fifty-fifty!

How futile it is, then, to attempt to predict with accuracy what will happen in a more complicated game such as blackjack or roulette! The odds against winning consistently are simply astronomical. This is true even in sports such as horse racing or football on which bets are based on the skill of the contestants. "Time and unforeseen occurrence" simply wreaks havoc with predictions. (Ecclesiastes 9:11) Nor is it usually possible to beat the odds with a "system." In Italy more than half of those participating in football pools try this by purchasing several coupons at the same time. However, the only sure system in this kind of game would be to send in every possible result for each game. Sure, you'd win. But the amount spent would not be recouped by the amount won.

The only ones who win in gambling are

"The cold, hard odds—the fact that 90 percent of those who gamble lose—do not impress them. They feel that they are immune to these odds, that they are, in fact, special."—*Psychology Today.*

I Was a Gambler

I got hooked on the game of poker at age 12. After I got married, I kept up my habit, beginning my gambling at nine o'clock in the evening, finishing at five or six in the morning. After this, numb with fatigue, I'd try to go to work. Often I did not make it.

Gambling began to ruin my family life and personality. Poker requires a lot of bluffing. But I'd find myself bluffing and lying my way around in real life. Then there was the problem of money. When I won, I had the urge to spend it right away, so it didn't stay in my pocket for long. Soon my marriage failed.

In 1972, two of Jehovah's Witnesses knocked on my door. As they spoke to me, I thought, 'Nobody does anything for nothing. They *have* to have some ulterior motive.' (A poker player trains himself to be suspicious of everything!) But as time went on, I realized this was not true. I went to one of their meetings, and though I didn't understand everything, I was impressed by their orderliness, harmony, and kindness.

I began to study the Bible. And gambling? I had to make a clean break from it. But when the Bible's truth enters your life, you lose the motivation to gamble. So with great effort, I stopped. I was baptized in 1975.

The benefits have been enormous. My health has improved—and so has my personality. My life is no longer dominated by gambling but by spiritual interests. Before, only fellow gamblers held me in esteem. Now I am loved by the congregation where I serve as an elder. I now realize that the gambler is a loser. And the Bible's truths have helped me to see this.—*Contributed.*

---

gambling promoters. Casino owners simply adjust the odds in any given game so that the casino almost *always* comes out ahead. In Italian football pools, reportedly a mere 35 percent of the total amount staked is paid out as prize money. The ones running the pools keep the rest.

Therefore, people who say, 'But I'm lucky' or, 'I've been unlucky so far, but I'm sure I'll start winning from now on' are simply fooling themselves. Gambling is an exercise in futility. And while the media give great publicity to the ever so few winners, you rarely hear about the millions of losers.

Gambling and the Bible

"Folly, vice, passion, frenzy, escape from reality, adventure, wild dreams, transgression, and a craving for risk that regenerates as fast as it can be satisfied—gambling is all of these, together with a hankering after riches, daydreams, and dominating emotions." So said the magazine *La Repubblica*. No wonder governments often make gambling illegal, although perhaps hypocritically condoning the practice in licensed casinos or running lotto and the like themselves!

Regardless of how men view this matter, the Bible indicates that gambling is incompatible with Christianity. Some, for example, may feel that gambling simply fills an economic need. But Jesus taught us to pray, "Give us today our bread for this day." How could a person greedily gamble for money and then pray this? Or how could he follow the exhortation: "Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness, and all these other things [material necessities] will be added to you"? —Matthew 6:11, 33.

The Bible further advises: "Let your manner of life be free of the love of money, while you are content with the present things." (Hebrews 13:5) The gambler often is anything but content. In fact, he is greedy, and the Bible says that greedy persons "will not inherit God's kingdom." —1 Corinthians 6:9, 10.

True, some argue that they gamble not for money but for excitement. The Bible roundly condemns, however, those who sidestep godly principles and become "lovers of pleasures rather than lovers of God." (2 Timothy 3:4, 5) Further, Jesus said: "You must love your neighbor as yourself." (Matthew 22:39) How can a person love his neighbor while trying to take away his neighbor's money? How can gambling be harmonized with the fundamental principle, "There is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving"? —Acts 20:35.

Not to be overlooked is the fact that gamblers often invoke "the god of Good Luck," something the Bible clearly condemns. —Isaiah 65:11.

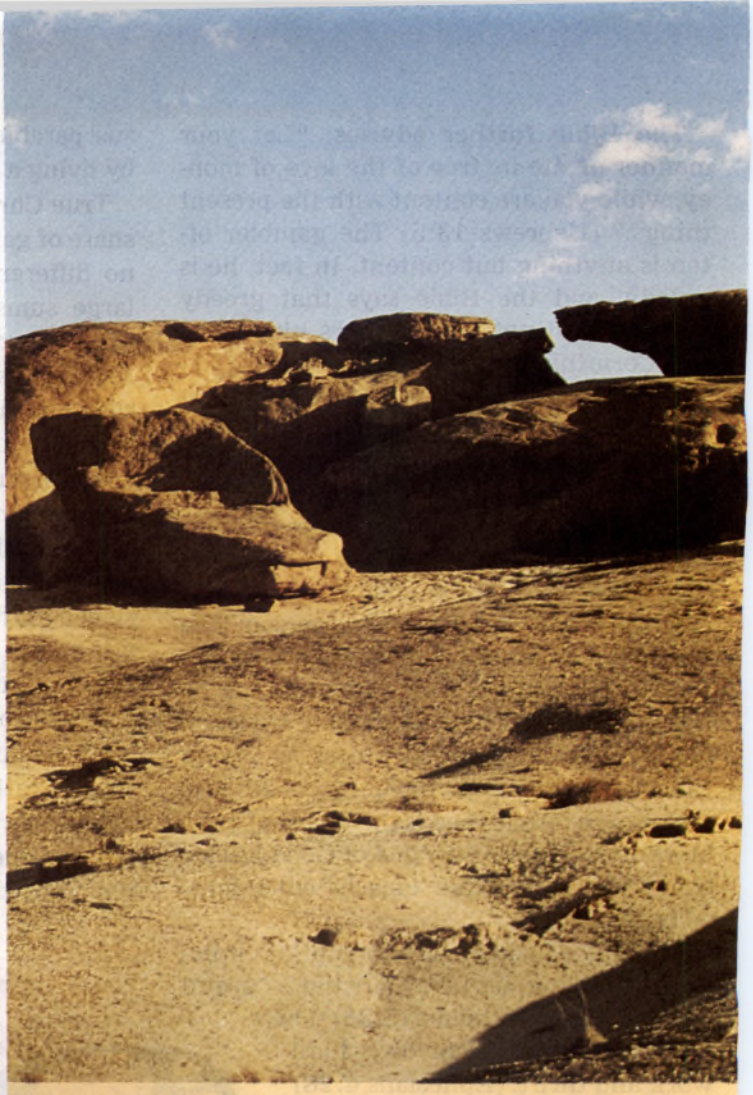
Finally, consider the corrupting influence gambling has on a Christian's "useful habits." (1 Corinthians 15:33) The Christian way of life involves hard work and thrift. (Ephesians 4:28) Jesus himself showed he was not wasteful when, after the miraculous multiplication of the loaves and the fishes, he gave orders that the leftovers were not to be wasted. (John 6:12, 13) But rather than following in Jesus' footsteps, the gambler is more akin to the prodigal son in Jesus' parable, who "squandered his property by living a debauched life." —Luke 15:13.

True Christians thus stay away from the snare of gambling in all its forms. It makes no difference to them whether small or large sums are involved. As Jesus said: "The person faithful in what is least is faithful also in much, and the person unrighteous in what is least is unrighteous also in much." —Luke 16:10.

Interestingly, Jehovah's Witnesses have helped many who were caught in the snare of compulsive gambling to break free. (See previous page.) Such ones no longer experience the rush of adrenaline that gambling brings, but now they have a real purpose in life. And rather than engaging in a practice that destroys health and family, they are "rich in fine works." They are "ready to share," rather than ready to scheme how to take away someone else's hard-earned money. They have "a firm hold on the real life," not the fantasy world of gambling. (1 Timothy 6:18, 19) They have thus become real winners!

Is it consistent for a Christian to gamble and yet pray, "Give us today our bread for this day"?

Namibia —*Vast, Lonely, Inviting*



By *Awake!* correspondent in South-West Africa

"LION! There's a lion in the camp!"

As the cry rings out, I look through the window of our mobile home and see workers scrambling in all directions. Excitedly, I call my family, and carefully—very carefully—we step outside. Yes, there he is. A large, black-maned lion pads alongside the security fence—but on the wrong side! However, game rangers soon come and corner him in a section where they have cut a hole in the fence. Off he goes, probably as relieved to get away as we are to see him go!

We are in the rest camp at Namutoni in the Etosha National Park, a large game park of Namibia (South-West Africa). But it is not a desire to feast our eyes on nature that has brought us to this at times unsettling place. Really, it is the people that have drawn us here.

Although Namibia is more than three times the size of the Federal Republic of Germany, it has one of the lowest population densities in the world—less than four persons per square mile. Yet, it is dotted here and there with little islands of habitation. As Jehovah's Witnesses, we had a burning desire to reach these isolated ones with the message of the "good news of the kingdom." (Matthew 24:14) For years my family and I had preached among the Hindu and Muslim people of Natal, South Africa. This was over a thousand miles away, on the other side of the continent. But when our youngest daughter finished high school, we seized the opportunity to serve in a land where there was a need for more Kingdom preachers.

Thus, we found ourselves in this vast and lonely land. We soon learned, though, that Namibia has a beauty of its own. Why, here in Etosha, for example, one can see an amazing variety of wildlife: prides of 12 or more lions, flocks of hundreds of thousands of flamingos, herds of 50 to 100 wildebeests (gnu), and innumerable zebras, springbok, and impalas. Why, at one water hole, we see 3 "families" of elephants—mothers and young ones—numbering all together 51!

Look! High above the camel-thorn tree appears the long, graceful neck of a giraffe. Over there a cheetah streaks over the plain, chasing its selected prey. A huge kudu bull with its handsome spiraled horns peers out of a thicket with large, limpid eyes. A gemsbok, or oryx, with its straight, needlelike horns, stands like a heraldic image. Here, too, dwells the magnificent eland, the largest antelope on earth. What a contrast he is to the nearby Damara dik-dik, which stands like a tiny toy just over 12 inches (30 cm) in height! Etosha even hosts the rare but beautiful black-faced impalas.

Natural Treasures

The name Namibia is taken from the Namib Desert, which runs some 800 miles (1,300 km) down the west coast of Africa. Here once-spacious company houses, now sand-filled shells, stand in ghost towns as relics of a short-lived diamond rush. Bleached bones and stranded ships adorn its rugged shores. Sand dunes—the highest in the world—shift into ever-changing patterns. They are a photographer's dream come true.

Namibia is full of natural treasures. Large quantities of diamonds are still gathered from beneath coastal sands. Inland, on a farm called Hoba, is the largest meteorite known to man, over 60 tons of iron and nickel. Tsumeb houses a mine where over 184 different minerals have been recorded—some of which are found nowhere else on earth!

In the south, a stony plain suddenly drops into the spectacular Fish River Canyon, second in size only to the Grand Canyon (U.S.A.). Huge pink rocks jut out from the canyon walls. These are outcrops of rose quartz, and one entire hilltop is composed of this beautiful crystal. South of the canyon lie other treasures, but the region is unbearably hot and dry. "Bushmen and prospectors," says the *Illustrated Guide to Southern Africa,* "are the only humans who, undaunted even by such hostile conditions, have found their way into this area."

Welwitschia mirabilis

These plants, exclusive to the Namib, can live 2,000 years.

Namibia has treasures of many different kinds, one of which is its "black diamonds," a nickname for Karakul sheep. The Atlantic Ocean also yields many treasures. Silvery pilchards and anchovies are netted and brought into the fishing harbor of Walvis Bay. Crayfish (rock lobster) is processed at Lüderitz, and thousands of pounds are exported annually to all parts of the world. Along the coast are "islands" (wooden platforms) where seabirds roost and valuable guano (manure) is collected for use as fertilizer.

There are many other natural wonders and treasures: towering rock formations and beautiful gemstones, such as amethysts, aquamarines, diamonds, tourmalines, jaspers, and tigereyes. Yes, these and other plentiful minerals, such as uranium and copper, make Namibia a vast storehouse of natural treasures.

Spiritual Treasures

Since serving here in Namibia, my family has neither prospected nor mined for minerals or gemstones. But we have found a real treasure in the people here. We now live in Tsumeb and form part of a small congregation made up of nine different nationalities of Jehovah's Witnesses. Eight languages are spoken among us. What a joy it is to serve with this group!

Of course, preaching in such a land presents problems. When working from house to house—or hut to hut—we must normally carry Bible literature in a variety of languages: English, Afrikaans, Kwanyama, Nama, Ndonga, German, Herero, Portuguese, and Kwangali. That is no light load, especially when the temperature is about 100 degrees Fahrenheit (38° C.)! And almost inevitably, someone will ask: "Don't you have anything in Chimbundu?"

This is but a minor inconvenience. Namibia is deeply divided politically, and like the rest of the world, its people are concerned about the future. Being able to bring such ones the Bible's message of hope and comfort is deeply satisfying. It has made us feel right at home in this vast, lonely, yet inviting, land.

Seals thrive on the Atlantic coast of Namibia

Young People Ask. . .

How Serious Is Masturbation?

"I'm wondering if masturbation is wrong in the eyes of God. Will it affect my physical and/or mental health in the future and if I ever get married?"—15-year-old Melissa.

THESE questions have plagued many youths. The reason? Masturbation, or deliberate self-stimulation to produce sexual arousal, is widespread. Reportedly, some 97 percent of males and more than 90 percent of females have masturbated by the age of 21. Furthermore, this practice has been blamed for all manner of ills—from warts and red eyelids to epilepsy and mental illness.

No physical illness, however, has been proved by modern medical research to have been caused by masturbation. Add researchers William Masters and Virginia Johnson: "There is no established medical evidence that masturbation, regardless of frequency, leads to mental illness."

Nevertheless, many Christian youths are concerned about the gravity of this habit. "When I gave in to it [masturbation], I'd feel as if I were failing Jehovah God," wrote one youth. "I got seriously depressed sometimes." Another youth asked: "Is masturbation an unforgivable sin?"

What Does the Bible Say?

Though sexual offenses such as premarital sex (fornication), homosexuality, adultery, and bestiality are plainly condemned as gross sins in the Bible, masturbation is not mentioned. (Genesis 39:7-9; Leviticus 18:20, 22, 23; 1 Corinthians 6:9, 10) Masturbation was common in the Greek-speaking world during Bible times, and several Greek words were used to describe the practice. Interestingly, not one of these words is used in the Bible.*

Since masturbation is not directly condemned in the Bible, does this mean it is harmless? *Absolutely not!* Even those not especially concerned with God's viewpoint feel uneasy about the practice. For instance, Dr. Aaron Hass in his survey of the sexual practices of 625 teenagers reported: "The majority of adolescents who masturbated reported feeling guilty, ashamed, dirty, stupid, embarrassed, or abnormal." Surely, masturbation is an unclean habit. But since "uncleanness," according to the Bible, is a term that allows for a wide range of degree of seriousness, masturbation is not to be classed with such serious sins as fornication or other types of gross sexual immorality.—Ephesians 4:19.

However, God realizes that observing the Bible's prohibitions against gross sexual immorality is not easy. He, therefore, gives

* God executed Onan for 'wasting his semen on the earth.' However, interrupted intercourse, not masturbation, was involved. Furthermore, the execution was because Onan selfishly failed to perform brother-in-law marriage in order to continue his deceased brother's family line. (Genesis 38:1-10) The "emission of semen" mentioned at Leviticus 15:16-18 apparently refers, not to masturbation, but to a nocturnal emission as well as to marital sex relations.

advice on how to avoid sexual immorality. He 'teaches you to benefit yourself.' (Isaiah 48:17) The principles of his Word indicate that you "benefit yourself" by strongly resisting this unclean habit, primarily because it . . .

Excites "Sexual Appetite"

"Deaden, therefore, your body members," urges the Bible, "as respects . . . sexual appetite." (Colossians 3:5) This "sexual appetite" is not the new sexual sensations that most youths feel during puberty, of which there is no need to be ashamed. "Sexual appetite" exists when these feelings are intensified so that one loses control. Such sexual appetite has led to gross sexual immorality, as described by Paul at Romans 1:26, 27.*

But does not masturbation "deaden" these desires? On the contrary, as one youth confessed: "When you masturbate, you dwell mentally on wrong desires, and all that does is increase your appetite for them." Often an immoral fantasy is used to increase the sexual pleasure. (Matthew 5: 27, 28) Given the right circumstances, you can easily fall into immorality. One youth bemoaned after committing fornication: "At one time, I felt that masturbation could relieve frustration without my getting involved with a female. Yet I developed an overpowering desire to do so." In fact, a nationwide study revealed that of those adolescents who masturbated, the greater number were also committing fornication. They outnumbered those who were virgins by 50 percent! The practice surely had not diminished their "sexual appetite"!

Even if you feel that you could control yourself in a morally dangerous situation, why take the chance by exciting yourself sexually by masturbating? If the opportunity to commit fornication arose, would you really be able to say no?

Mentally and Emotionally Defiling

Masturbation also instills certain attitudes that are mentally corrupting. (Compare 2 Corinthians 11:3.) This habit teaches one to treat his or her body as merely an object to be used for sexual pleasure. When masturbating, a person is immersed in his or her own bodily sensations—totally self-centered. Sex becomes separated from love and is relegated to a reflex that releases tension. But God intended sexual desires to be satisfied in sexual relations, an expression of love between a man and his wife. —Proverbs 5:15-19.

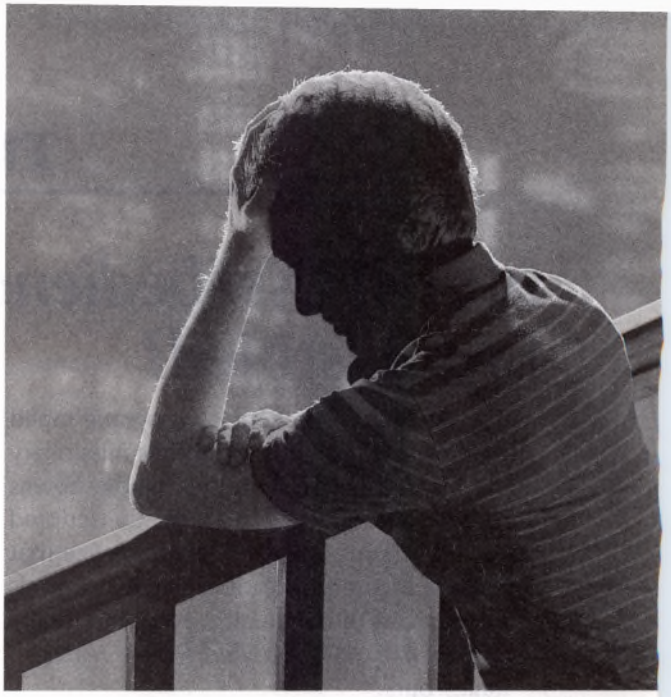
Losing this viewpoint can lead to problems in adjusting to a right relationship with those of the opposite sex. Such ones could be viewed as sex objects rather than as sensitive human beings. One may tend to

In Our Next Issue

- *Africa's Vanishing Wildlife —Will It Survive?*
- *I Gained My Freedom—In Prison!*
- *How Can I Get Along With My Brother and Sister?*

* The original Greek word for "sexual appetite" (*pa'thos*) was used by the first-century historian Josephus to describe the wife of Potiphar, who, because of an "excess of passion [*pa'thos*]," tried to seduce the youth Joseph; and the man Amnon, who, "burning with desire and goaded by the spur of passion [*pa'thos*], violated [raped] his sister." The passion both of Potiphar's wife and of Amnon was out of control. —Genesis 39:7-12; 2 Samuel 13:10-14.

Though masturbation may cause strong guilt feelings, sincere prayer for God's forgiveness and hard work to resist the practice can give one a good conscience



exploit another as a mere tool for sexual satisfaction. Such wrong attitudes taught by masturbation can defile one's "spirit," or dominant mental inclination. For good reason, God's Word urges: "Beloved ones, let us cleanse ourselves of every defilement of flesh and spirit." (2 Corinthians 7:1) True, after marriage most couples are able to work out the problems caused by masturbation. Yet, many examples document how difficult and persistent some of these problems can be, often affecting compatibility of a married couple.

But what if a person is striving to overcome this bad habit and, while generally successful, still has problems with it?

A Balanced View of Guilt

Though sin is sin, the Bible does show that God views our wrongdoing as having varying degrees of gravity, and he is very merciful. "For you, O Jehovah, are good and ready to forgive; and the loving-kindness to all those calling upon you is abundant." (Psalm 86:5) When a Christian succumbs to masturbation, his heart is often self-condemning. Yet, the Bible states that "God is greater than our hearts and knows all things." (1 John 3:20) God sees more than our sins. The greatness of his knowledge enables him to hear with sympathy our earnest pleas for forgiveness. As one young woman wrote: "I have felt guilty to an extent, but knowing what a loving God Jehovah is and that he can read my heart and know all my efforts and intentions keeps me from feeling too depressed when I fail on occasion." By fighting masturbation, it is not likely that you will commit the serious sin of fornication.

The February 15, 1954, issue of our companion magazine, *The Watchtower,* stated: "We [may] find ourselves stumbling and falling many times over some bad habit that has bitten more deeply into our former pattern of life than we had realized. Then we are inclined to feel very discouraged and quite unworthy . . . Do not despair. Do not conclude you have committed the unforgivable sin. That is just how Satan would like you to reason. The fact that you feel grieved and vexed with yourself is proof in itself that you have not gone too far. Never weary of turning humbly and earnestly to God, seeking his forgiveness and cleansing and help. Go to him as a child goes to his father when in trouble, no matter how often on the same weakness, and Jehovah will graciously give you the help because of his undeserved kindness and, if you are sincere, he will give you the realization of a cleansed conscience."

Is Civil Disobedience Ever Justified?

"WHEN you see your own people raped and killed," said a Catholic missionary of 30 years, "when you see whole towns uprooted by soldiers, and kids conscripted out of their homes, and when you realize that 2 percent of the population already controls three-quarters of the wealth, you cannot *bury your head in a Bible and ignore these realities.*" —Italics ours.

If you were in this missionary's shoes, what would you do? Join in a peaceful demonstration or in a strike? What if these do not bring the needed change? Would violence then be justified? A revolution or a coup? What do the "spiritual leaders" of today recommend? Note these reports:

☐ **A clergyman in Nicaragua said that he serves God by serving the people *and the revolution.***

☐ **In the Philippines a minister was expelled from the country for fomenting political unrest and portraying Jesus as a rebel.**

☐ **Priests and nuns have sided with guerrillas in an effort to bring down a government in Central America.**

Their actions trumpet a loud and clear message: Civil disobedience is justified or even deemed a Christian duty. But is this true, even when the motives and goals are sincere and humanitarian? What is the Bible's viewpoint?

'A Stand Against God'?

God has a clearly defined policy with regard to human governments or authorities. The Bible states: "There is no authority except by God; the existing authorities stand placed in their relative positions by God." Yes, Jehovah God has the necessary power either to interfere with or to terminate any existing authority at any given time. If they function, it is because he allows it.—Romans 13:1.

After establishing this fact, the scripture adds: "Therefore he who opposes the authority has taken *a stand against the arrangement of God;* those who have taken a stand against it will receive judgment to themselves." (Romans 13:2) In view of these words, can a Christian conscientiously say that he 'serves God by serving a revolution'? Is one taking 'a stand against God' by participating in, or even advocating, activities that directly challenge the existing governmental authority?

Let us look to Bible history for an answer. By the end of the seventh century B.C.E., Jehovah had allowed the Babylonian Empire to dominate Israel, making Zedekiah of Jerusalem a vassal king. After eight years of submission, however, Zedekiah felt compelled to resist such an arrangement. He called on Egypt for help. No longer was he going to allow a foreign power—pagan at that—to dominate God's people. His motives seemed pure. Yet, how did God view it? Was Zedekiah to become a divinely approved

"freedom fighter"? No! For in rebelling against Babylon, he was also rebelling against God. On account of this revolt, Jehovah decreed that Zedekiah would die as a captive in Babylon.—2 Kings 24:17-20; Ezekiel 17: 15, 16.

Zedekiah's case is not an isolated one. History has shown over and over that civil disobedience, even when well intentioned, cannot bring lasting solutions to man's problems. The fact is that uprisings and revolutions often tend to worsen the situation. In many cases, after the apparent success of a revolution, the "liberators" themselves eventually become guilty of tyranny and oppression. In time, a new generation of oppressed people seek to revolt. Such a vicious cycle has been experienced in many countries. For example, one country in South America recently experienced its 189th coup in 154 years!

Man's Failure—Why?

Why is it that sincere men cannot free mankind from exploitation and oppression? Simply because they lack two things—the wisdom and the power. No wonder the Bible warns us: "Do not put your trust in nobles, nor in the son of earthling man, to whom no salvation belongs."—Psalm 146:3.

To illustrate, picture yourself in a hospital awaiting surgery. You cry out in pain and discomfort. Suddenly, a janitor passing by hears you, grabs a scalpel, and offers his help to bring needed relief. Would you allow him to operate? Of course not! Why? Because his love and compassion alone simply do not qualify him for such a difficult job. His actions will only worsen your suffering, even placing you in mortal danger. Such behavior would be presumptuous and highly irresponsible and ignores the fact that a time has been set aside for a qualified surgeon to operate. It would, by far, be much better for him simply to reassure you that help is on the way.

Similarly, true Christians today do not engage in civil disobedience. They await the day and hour when qualified intervention by God will come. Only he has the wisdom and the power to bring lasting solutions to mankind. Through their preaching work, Jehovah's Witnesses reassure those who are suffering from injustices that such relief is soon to come. —Isaiah 9:6, 7; 11:3-5.

In the meantime, we can pursue any legal and peaceful means available to establish and defend our rights and seek relief from oppression. Should these fail, however, it would be wrong to resort to civil disobedience. Accordingly, the apostle Paul advises: "As far as it depends upon you, be peaceable with all men. Do not avenge yourselves, beloved, but yield place to the wrath; for it is written: 'Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says Jehovah.'" Genuine and obedient Christians take this wise admonition to heart.—Romans 12:18, 19.

Reuters/Bettmann Newsphotos

Meckenheim, Germany

Assembly Halls —*A Sign of What?*

HAVE you seen one in your area? Or heard about it through your local news media? 'Heard about what?' you may ask. About the local Assembly Hall of Jehovah's Witnesses. The fact is that these Assembly Halls are making an appearance all around the world. At present, worldwide there are 126 enclosed Assembly Halls plus another 96 open assembly facilities. Another 36 halls plus 59 open facilities are under construction. They are a sign that Jehovah's Witnesses are on the increase.

Recently, a large octagonally shaped hall was inaugurated in the north of England at Hellaby, near Maltby, South Yorkshire. Its unusual design merited an article in the *Journal of the Institution of Structural Engineers*. The writer was also impressed by the volunteer labor program used to complete the construction. The article stated: "Once the [steel] frame was completed the International Bible Students' Association's [Jehovah's Witnesses] ability to mobilise large numbers of voluntary workers meant that the building was completed rapidly and enthusiastically.... The East Pennine Assembly Hall is a notable example of what can be achieved by a combination of skilled professionals and dedicated voluntary workers." In fact, a

total of 11,000 volunteers worked at this site.

At Haysbridge in Surrey, south of London, a 50-year-old school complex was bought and converted into an Assembly Hall. It is nestled in 28 acres (11 ha) of beautiful English countryside, making an ideal setting for Bible conferences and education.

France now has its first two Assembly Halls, one located some 30 miles (50 km) north of Paris, at the city of Creil. It has seating for 1,870 people. The other is in the south of France at Marignane, a few miles northwest of Marseilles. These, too, were built by volunteer labor. In fact, the one near Marseilles took 350,000 volunteer man-hours to complete.

In the neighboring Federal Republic of Germany, they already have nine Assembly Halls across the country. A recent addition is located at Meckenheim on the edge of the Rhine River valley. It has seating for 1,700 persons.

But if the Witnesses have their local Kingdom Halls, why do they need these large auditoriums?

What Is the Motive?

Jehovah's Witnesses recognize that they live in a world that is corrupt in the extreme, hostile to the values taught in the Bible. Hatred and distrust displace love and unity. Permissiveness and promiscuity have replaced integrity and chastity. And with such changes has come an increase in sexually transmitted diseases and the AIDS plague. There is all the more reason, then, for the Witnesses to fortify their convictions and faith by gathering together in meetings on a larger scale in

Marignane, France

Haysbridge, England

Creil, France

order to share Bible education and the promise of a new system.—Hebrews 10: 23-25; 2 Peter 3:13.

In former years, the Witnesses used to rent theaters and auditoriums for these larger gatherings, called circuit assemblies. (A circuit is composed of some 20 congregations.) Now such facilities are no longer available in many areas. Therefore, a movement got under way in the United States some 20 years ago to acquire properties that could be converted into Assembly Halls. The fact that more and more are being inaugurated all over the world is a sign of the increase that Jehovah's Witnesses are experiencing.

How Is It Done?

There are not many wealthy people in the ranks of Jehovah's Witnesses, so how are they able to construct or remodel these large buildings? Each project is based on voluntary and anonymous contributions from the Witnesses themselves. Likewise, the major part of the labor is voluntary. This results in significant cost savings. As *The Structural Engineer* stated regarding the project in Yorkshire, England: "The cost savings were also impressive: under competitive tender the centre would have cost £2.5M[illion] in total, but the actual cost will be no more than half that figure."

Spain now has three Assembly Halls —one in Madrid and two in Barcelona (one in the city, the other a few miles outside the city). Two were formerly movie theaters, and the third was an unused factory building. Volunteer labor and voluntary contributions have turned them into Bible education centers for thousands of Witnesses from nearby congregations. In every nation a willing spirit motivates all —from adults to children—to participate in these Assembly Hall projects.

Computing Fraud and Sabotage

HOW could crooks crack a bank's computer code and so easily siphon off over $600,000 of its reserve funds? Britain's Fraud Squad at Scotland Yard is having a hard time finding out. "There is no evidence of staff involvement," says the bank's head office. Who, then, are the culprits? Thieves who illegally programmed the bank's computer system. "The extraction had been cleverly disguised," reports London's *Daily Mail* of August 22, 1986. There was a real panic at the bank.

Computer fraud is not new to Britain. Every year, tens of millions of pounds are stolen this way. Nor is it just a national problem. One investigation concerns some $20 million that disappeared in a transaction from a New York bank. In fact, computer crime may well be the world's biggest growth industry.

As serious as such illegal computer manipulation is, it obviously took a more sinister turn in the summer of 1986—that of sabotage. *The Times* of London, August 7, 1986, reported that disgruntled employees program illicit commands that "are triggered [to function] at a particular time or when a set of circumstances occur." The effects can be devastating, with losses that are incalculable. Of the 15 big sabotage incidents examined in Britain last year, one third put companies out of business. These crimes now have their own name—"logic time bombs." By means of them, valuable lists of clients, sales invoicing, and other fundamental information essential in running a modern business, are irretrievably lost.

Even more alarming is the so-called computer virus, reported to be active in the United States. Here the computer is programmed with illicit instructions that are also self-generating. As each set of directions is acted upon, further damage is perpetrated. Imagine the consequences of all this self-destructive action.

What, then, can a company do to prevent this fraud and sabotage? The answer lies initially in contracting with reliable and trustworthy firms in installing a computing system and then employing an honest, reliable staff to operate it. But this is not always easy. And who is to say that an employee may not later become disgruntled?

Yet another problem outlined by *The Times* of London relates to "cynical self-employed maintenance programmers and analysts, who ensure a computer system hiccups frequently and generates work for them in the process." Fraud, sabotage, and deceit—it seems as if companies seeking to keep up with modern technology cannot win. Laments the *Daily Mail:* "Computers, hailed as the miracle force of the twentieth century have as much potential for harm as good." Or is man's dishonesty really to blame?

From Our Readers

Phobias

I want to thank you for the article "Phobias—Those Mysterious Fears." (February 8, 1987) I was always ashamed to talk of this to others, but when I was a child, I had no fear of the dark until I heard a radio program on the supernatural. After that, I dreaded the dark so much that I would not go from one room to another if I had to pass a room where the lights were not on. Your article cleared up the matter for me, showing that my feeling is not necessarily cowardice.

H. M., Brazil

A Birth or an Abortion?

Your extensive coverage of abortion missed one point: the effect of pregnancy on the health and life of the mother. (April 8, 1987) A deliberately induced abortion simply to prevent the birth of an unwanted child is a willful taking of human life. But how do you view a deliberately induced abortion to prevent the death or ill health of the mother?

A. A., Nigeria

It cannot be right to take the life of an unborn child merely because allowing the pregnancy to go full term may possibly, or even probably, endanger the health of the mother. A potential danger is no justification for such drastic action. In many cases, doctors have warned a mother that to complete her pregnancy would endanger her health, but the outcome was a healthy baby and no lasting harm to the mother. Besides, what about the potential physical and emotional damage that may accrue to the mother because of an induced abortion? There might be a situation in which, at the time of childbirth, a choice has to be made between the life of the mother and that of the child. It would be up to the individuals concerned to make that choice. In many lands, however, advances in medical procedures have made this situation very rare.—ED.

Religion in Politics

I am writing because of your issue on "Religion in Politics—Is This God's Will?" (April 22, 1987) I personally do not mind your attacks on nationalism, but being of German background, I object to your constant use of Germany and the Third Reich as the essence of evil. You assert that it is wrong to mix politics and religion. But what are you doing? You do not try to create love as Christians should; you renew hate.

E. M., Canada

We did not criticize the German people, nor did our article stir up old hatreds. However, Nazism perpetrated some of the most heinous crimes recorded in human history. That historic fact should not be ignored or forgotten by the present generation. And it is an outstanding example of how wrong it is for the churches to get involved in politics. Nazism could not have attained power without the support, open or tacit, of the Lutheran and Catholic churches. This was only one of several examples of the bad that results when churches mix in politics, as discussed in our article mentioned above.—ED.

Watching the World

Lonely Hearts

Finding a bride in Japan is becoming more difficult. The reason? Young men outnumber young women. Additionally, Japan's "liberated" young women are in no haste to get married, nor are they anxious to fit into traditional molds when they do get married. Country boys are hardest hit. Unable to find Japanese girls willing to work alongside them, sons of farmers have recently discovered that girls from other Asian countries make delightful partners. City boys, however, are trying a different approach to win girls' hearts. According to *Asahi Evening News,* Tokyo's fashionable young men are spending an average of a hundred dollars (14,200 yen) a month on personal cosmetics to impress their girlfriends. Such efforts, however, may not always meet with success. A 22-year-old university student in Tokyo complained of the irritation she and her friends feel when they "have to wait . . . for the men, as they apply such things as facial scrubs, milky lotions and hair mousses."

Record Suicides

Twice as many people die each year in Finland by suicide as by traffic accidents. According to the latest available statistics, 1984 proved to be a record year for suicides, with a total of 1,231 persons taking their life. Of that number, some 80 percent were men. What is even more serious is the increase in the number of youngsters committing suicide. About 45 percent of all deaths of those between the ages of 20 and 24 are found to be suicides. A ten-year-old was reported as Finland's youngest suicide victim during 1984.

Fortune-Tellers Debunked

Astrologers who claim they can analyze a person's character and

predict that person's life course just by reading the stars are fooling the public and themselves, says Shawn Carlson, a researcher at University of California's Lawrence Berkeley Laboratory. In a carefully controlled study, designed specifically to test what astrologers say they can do, the scientist found that astrologers had no special ability to interpret personality purely from astrological readings. "It is more likely that when sitting face-to-face with a client, astrologers read clients' needs, hopes and doubts from their body language," said Carlson.

High-Tech Cheating

Cheating on examinations is nothing new, but high-tech cheating is now possible because of a new wristwatch capable of storing in its memory up to 500 words. According to the newspaper *The Australian,* one teacher said: "The watch could be very worrying. If teachers were not aware of its existence or if invigilators [examination supervisors] were lax it would definitely compromise an exam." The Japanese-made watches sell for $230 (Australian) and were designed to help busy people remember important engagements, and so forth. How do students feel about them? Said one 16-year-old: "It would be great if teachers didn't know about it."

Grim Statistics

Some 350,000 Americans will die this year because of cigarette smoking, says the American Lung Association—exceeding the combined death tolls from traffic accidents, suicide, homicide, alcohol, and illegal drugs. According to a writeup in the *New York Post,* cigarettes cause 17.2 percent of the deaths in the United States each year, "more than the combined American battle deaths in World

War II and Vietnam." The costs are also high: $23.3 billion a year for medical treatment and about $30.4 billion a year in lost work and productivity. The report shows 31 percent of the adult population to be cigarette smokers.

Magnet Stitching

Soviet surgeons have performed over a hundred operations using magnets instead of stitches, reports *Sputnik* magazine. Intestines have been joined by use of "two thin magnetic rings with a diameter matching that of the intestinal tube." One is inserted into each of the separated ends. "The magnets safely 'glue' the intestines together, forming an hermetic seal which heals much faster than a stitched one," says *Sputnik.* The new method was devised to reduce postsurgical complications caused by stitching that does not seal well and the additional tissue injuries inflicted by the needle. The magnetic rings are left in and are said to cause no obstruction or damage.

Cancer's Common Thread

After reviewing the findings presented in last year's 14th International Cancer Congress in Budapest, Hungary, *Voice* magazine's science writer Laszlo Dosa notes: "The single common thread in the global cancer picture is the undeniable fact that tobacco is the largest preventable cause of cancer everywhere." According to the World Health Organization, smoking causes 90 percent of all lung cancers. In addition, about half of all kidney-cancer sufferers are longtime heavy smokers. Some countries have already taken steps to control smoking. The Egyptian government, notes *Voice,* now urges religious leaders, doctors, teachers, and armed forces personnel to quit smoking and thus "set an example for the rest of the population." Similar efforts to control smoking are under way in other Middle Eastern countries. Are people responding? Reports indicate that cigarette consumption has increased!

Homeless Everywhere

Every fourth person in the world either is homeless or lives under "wretched and unhealthy conditions." An investigation by the United Nations revealed that at least 100 million people have to

sleep in the streets, under bridges, in gateways, or on deserted property. Twenty percent of such persons are adolescents in Latin America. In African cities, up to 80 percent of all citizens live in slums. The United States has 2.5 million homeless people, and in Great Britain the number is about 250,000.

Computer Vandals

"A new breed of vandals, working within a vast network of computer 'bulletin boards,' are devising sophisticated software programs that erase and scramble the computer files of unsuspecting users," says *The New York Times.* "I guess the people who devise these things take pleasure in destroying other people's work," says computer consultant Ross M. Greenberg. Some of the programs are so sophisticated that they can operate as legitimate programs for months, then suddenly do their destructive work.

Too Descriptive

Brandon Brooks, a TV anchorman, allowed police to use his home so viewers could see anti-burglary devices that could foil thieves. The following week, while he was anchoring his nighttime newscast, burglars entered his home and made off with a number of things, including furniture, TV, and video tape recorder. The investigators believe that the thieves used the telecast to map out his home and bypass the devices.

Not Gourmet

Is that gourmet Colombian coffee for which you paid about $10 a pound measuring up to your taste expectations? If not, you may be the victim of price gouging. In a Canadian survey, 85 gourmet coffee samples were randomly tested for quality in seven different cities. Many of the samples tested were selling at premium prices even though they were found to contain exclusively inferior-quality beans or were mixed with them. Some distributors have been quick to take advantage of the fact that the average customer is not able to distinguish between low-grade and truly gourmet coffees. Experts claim that "gourmet coffee should be uniform in size, shape, and color," notes *The Globe and Mail,* and "every bean should look the same." Retailers claim that last year's drought in Brazil is one reason for the dumping of substandard coffee in bins marked "Gourmet."

Canaries
as Gas Detectors

MANY coal miners have lost their lives through carbon monoxide poisoning during underground fires after explosions. A reliable detector for this lethal gas was needed. Small creatures such as birds and mice are more sensitive to carbon monoxide poisoning than are humans. If the atmosphere became contaminated by carbon monoxide, they collapsed more quickly than humans, thus giving ample warning of the danger.

In 1911 a law was passed in Britain obliging each coal mine to have two finches or mice that could be taken underground by rescuers if a fire occurred. But mice sometimes fell asleep on the floor of their cage, and the miner was unable to tell whether the animal was merely sleeping or had succumbed to the deadly gas. Finches, on the other hand, remained on their perches even when asleep. But when overcome by poisonous gas, they fell from their perch, giving the necessary warning to the miner. A small bottle of oxygen might be kept on hand to resuscitate the affected bird.

The accompanying background photo shows the birds used at Sengheydd, Wales, about 1913, after an explosion and fire had killed 440 men.

In many mines today, though, finches and canaries are being replaced by chemical and electronic devices, and some miners are permitted to provide new homes for the unemployed birds. Pairs of canaries or finches are still kept in some British mines for use as gas detectors.

Awake!
September 22, 1987

Africa's Wildlife

Still There—But for How Long?

"GENERALLY the only time an elephant takes this position [ears spread wide] is when it is alarmed and about to charge."
—Cynthia Moss, in "Portraits in the Wild."

It is also time for the object of its attention to be alarmed—seven tons of fury pounding toward you is imminent.

But man is a far greater threat to the elephant than the elephant is to man. The price of ivory has skyrocketed, the biggest bulls carry over 400 pounds (180 kg) of it, and laws don't stop the poachers. They take the tusks and leave the rest to rot. How cruel. How sad.

Africa's Vanishing Wildlife

Will It Survive?

IT IS morning, and all is calm on the African savanna. A bull elephant is browsing among the shrubs. Curling his outstretched trunk around small plants and shoots, he uproots them, shakes the dirt off, and places them in his mouth, chewing contentedly; he is well on his way to consuming his daily 300 pounds (136 kg) of vegetation. He doesn't know it, but he has seen 40 years pass on these grassy plains; his big tusks reflect his age. He may well continue to sire calves for another ten years and live for another decade beyond that.

A shot rings out, shattering the morning's quiet.

The bullet comes from a high-powered rifle; it penetrates deep into the old bull's side. He lets out an unearthly scream, staggers, and confusedly tries to lumber off, but more bullets come. He sinks at last to his knees and falls over. A small truck pulls up, and a band of men sets excitedly to work. They butcher the elephant's face to get at the tusks from their very roots in the skull and hack them out quickly. Within minutes the poachers are gone. Silence returns to the savanna. The once lordly old bull elephant is now a mere 14,000 pounds (6,300 kg) of meat, left there to rot.

Sadly, this is far from an isolated case. In fact, estimates on the number of elephants killed annually by poachers range from 45,000 to 400,000. Wildlife surveys indicate that the total number of African elephants has dwindled from its former millions to near 900,000 animals. If poaching continues at its current pace, that number will be cut in half within the next ten years. As old bulls, or tuskers, become increasingly rare, more and more younger males and even females are shot.

Why the carnage? Africa's $50 million-a-year ivory trade, coupled with the easy availability of automatic weapons, has made the elephant an irresistible target for poachers.

The African rhinoceros is in even greater danger. Heavily hunted throughout the past century, its number had already dropped to about a hundred thousand a generation ago. Today, they are a mere beleaguered 11,000. Between 1972 and 1978, 2,580 rhino were killed each year; many biologists fear that they will be extinct by the year 2000.

Why the slaughter? Again money figures prominently in the answer: The rhino's horn may bring over $5,000 per pound ($11,000 per kg) in retail sales. It is sold in powdered form all over the Far East as a medicine for headaches and fevers, even though tests indicate that it is quite useless in this regard. An even larger market for the horn is in North Yemen, where newly wealthy young men yearn to possess a ceremonial dagger with a prestigious

Awake!® September 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 18

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 53 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Africa's Vanishing Wildlife
—Will It Survive? 3

My African Safari
They Were There for Me—Will They Be There for My Children? 5

Also in This Issue

Foot Care for Children 12
Sunbathers Beware! 12
India's Catholic Church—Where Is It Heading? .. 13
Autumn Leaves Bow Out in a Blaze of Glory 16
I Gained My Freedom—In Prison! 19
Jade—And the Stories Behind It 23
Young People Ask... How Can I Get Along With My Brother and Sister? 25
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
When Your Head Aches 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

25 cents (U.S.) a copy ***Yearly subscription (see language lists above)***

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$5.00	$2.50
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$7.00	$3.50
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures* used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $5.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

rhino-horn handle—even though a cow's horn would serve the purpose just as well.

High in the volcanic mountains of Rwanda and Zaire, and in the nearby Bwindi forest of Uganda, live the last of the mountain gorillas. Their numbers have dwindled to the very brink of extinction. At present only about 400 of them remain in the wild. Why? They are killed by poachers for trophies. The gorilla's head may be sold on the black market for up to $1,200 to adorn a wall, his hand for $600 to be used as an ashtray!

The world's fastest land animal, the cheetah, is also thought to be nearing extinction. Only 20,000 of them remain in the wild. Scientists further warn that this small population is dangerously inbred, so the rate of infant mortality is high among the cheetahs. Thus, they are even more vulnerable to the pressures of a shrinking habitat.

In fact, the need of living space for Africa's wildlife poses complex problems. For instance, a wild elephant passing through and feeding on a small farm may easily threaten the farmer's very livelihood. And yet, if too many elephants are confined within the borders of a park or reserve where they won't threaten farmers' crops, they may swiftly turn the park's forests into grasslands with their voracious feeding habits. Since the elephants can't move on, the forests don't have a chance to grow back.

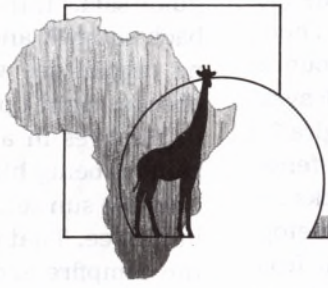
Conservationists, rangers, and scientists have all struggled commendably with these problems and have some successes to their credit. In South Africa, for example, the white rhino recently numbered only about a hundred. Effective steps were taken to protect them, so now they number about 3,000.

And yet the danger persists not only to the African rhino and to Africa's wildlife but, rather, to all wildlife the world over. Both the elephant and the rhinoceros in Asia are in greater danger of extinction than are the African species we have discussed here. Still more disturbing, some studies indicate that one entire species of life passes into extinction every day. Another report noted that between now and the end of the century, species will disappear at the rate of one an hour!

Can we afford this kind of loss? Can the market of human needs, whether real or imagined, possibly justify such insatiable destruction?

My African Safari

They Were There for Me— Will They Be There for My Children?



"JAMBO!" Startled, we rubbed the sleep from our eyes and called back, *"Jambo!"* It is our wake-up call, Swahili for "What's new?" After months of preparation and a few thousand miles of travel, we were in a tent in a Kenyan wildlife preserve —on safari in Africa!*

The adventure really started the day before. On our arrival our guide took us on a game run. "Gazelle!" one of us shouted as we bounced along in our two rough-terrain vehicles. Hands hurriedly fumbled for cameras, field guidebooks, and binoculars.

Our guide, a sprightly little Englishman, chuckled at our excitement. "Grant's gazelle, actually. Wonderful little fellows, aren't they?"

Petite, delicately painted, yet obviously durable and designed for speed, these lovely little creatures and the smaller Thomson's gazelle were to be seen everywhere we went. On this preliminary jaunt we also saw and photographed the big eland, the oryx, and the gerenuk, and we even spotted the rare greater kudu and the mountain reedbuck.

Rounding a bend, we startled a herd of impalas. From a standstill they leaped straight up six or eight feet, as if launched by hidden springs.* "As you can imagine, this jumping confuses predators no end," said our guide. Then the impalas ran off, covering 30 feet in one bound.

We saw zebras, looking very striking in their dramatic black and white stripes, and were reminded of the account in the Bible book of Job that indicates that zebras can't be tamed. (Job 39:5) I asked the guide about it. "Some Americans made a movie here a while back," he said. "They needed a tame zebra for an actress to ride but couldn't find one because there aren't any. They had to paint stripes on a horse."

* 1 mi = 1.6 km.

* 1 ft = 0.3 m.

As we returned to camp on that first day, we spotted an ostrich. When she saw us she ran off, her powerful legs propelling her over the crest of a hill. The ostrich can run at speeds of 40 miles per hour, 25 feet in a stride. Her speed made me think of another Bible text in Job: "She laughs at the horse and at its rider." (Job 39:18) She could laugh at our trucks too, I thought, as we bounced along.

But it was on this morning when we awakened to the cry of *"Jambo!"* that we felt our safari really got under way. Riding out on horseback across a broad meadowland dotted with acacia trees, we admired Mount Kenya off in the distance. Suddenly our guide motioned us into silence and pointed. There, rising above the treetops, was a group of heads—giraffes munching on acacia leaves!

The world's tallest animals, the giraffes struck us as gentle, easygoing, even defenseless creatures. Not so; their long necks are useful not only to let them feed on treetops but also to give them a vantage point from which they can focus their big, far-seeing eyes on their young, their herd, or approaching danger. They seemed to us to move in graceful slow motion, but a giraffe can run 35 miles an hour and deliver a kick to a lion that can break its ribs. He can also wield his head like a sledgehammer. A zoo giraffe once landed such a blow on a 1,000-pound eland and sent it flying with a broken shoulder!*

We rode right in among them. Had we been on foot, they would have scattered, but on horses we were viewed as just another herd of grazing animals. Some gazelles and elands were nearby, also zebras very different from the ones we had seen yesterday—taller, narrower stripes, and wonderful, big round ears.

"Grévy's zebra," our guide told us. "This variety is steadily decreasing in numbers, largely due to the beauty of their hides. Decorators pay a premium for them." How sad that man is destroying so many of these creatures and their habitats! But there was more sad news to come.

Riding a truck, we visited a rhino sanctuary, a 5,000 acre enclosure surrounded by a 10-foot-tall electrified fence and patrolled by armed wardens.* It is the home of 13 black rhino and one white. Idling cautiously next to one of these formidable creatures, our trucks seemed suddenly frail and puny.

"The rhino has very poor eyesight," the guide said. "If the oxpeckers who live on its back squawk and fly off in alarm, the rhino cannot see what disturbed them and charges right up to whatever it is, to smell it. He lives in a world of odors. Now the rhino is being hunted to extinction."

As the sun set, we rode back to our camp in silence. That evening, as we sat around the campfire and talked of the fate of the rhino, we were startled to hear a throaty, rhythmic roar. It was answered by others.

"Lions," said our guide, calmly poking the fire. "They, ah, seem pretty close, don't they?" I asked nervously. "Not at all. Miles away. The lion's roar can carry five miles or more." Reassured, we went to bed, hoping to see some of these great cats in the Masai Mara game reserve, our next stop. We were not to be disappointed.

The Big Cats of the Mara

As we drove across the open grasslands of this northern extension of the great Serengeti Plain, we thrilled to the driver's cry of *"Simba!"* We pulled up cautiously to see not just one lion but a whole pride—some 40 in all. A number of lionesses sprawled in

* 1 lb = 0.5 kg.

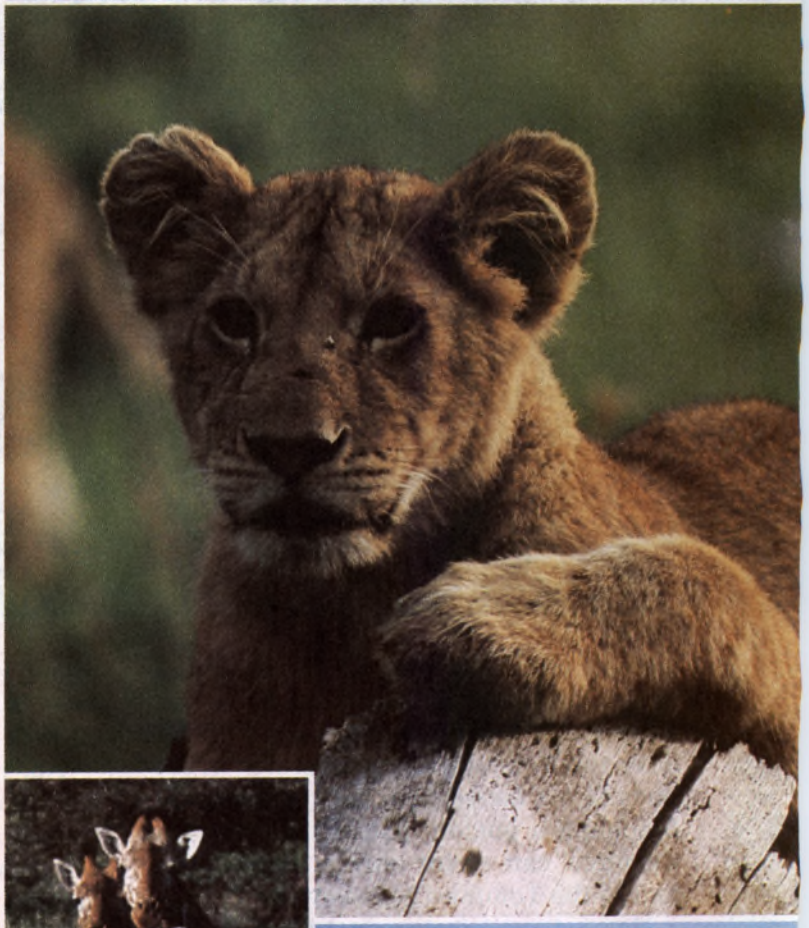
* 1 a. = 0.4 ha.

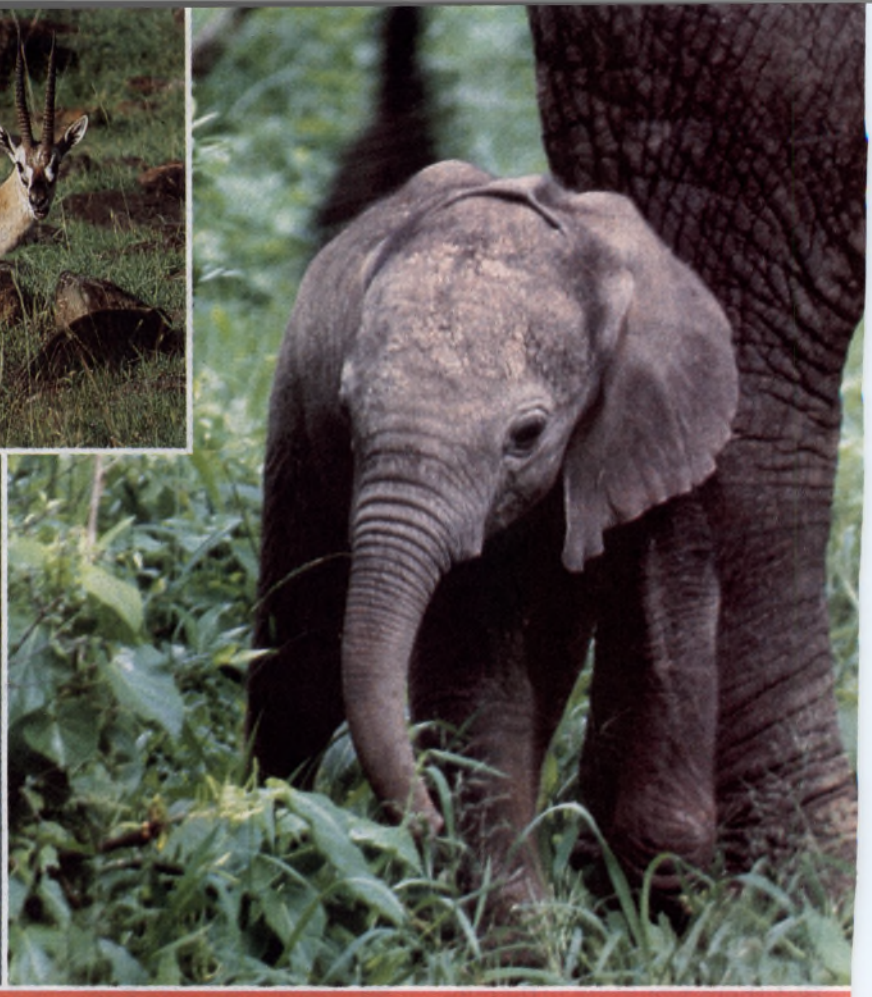
bunches. More with cubs came out from the brush. Several crowded around a small rain pool to drink. Cubs tussled and chased one another about.

We longed to get out and play with them but restrained ourselves as we looked at the muscles under the lionesses' skin and noted two big males with luxuriant manes stretched out in sphinx poses —great golden cats blinking their yellow eyes contentedly in the sun's last rays. The time for frolicking with lion cubs is yet ahead.—Isaiah 11:6-9.

"Lions rest about 20 hours out of 24," our guide said. "Even more for the males. The females do virtually all the cub-rearing and 90 percent of the hunting, yet the males always eat first." The females in our group seemed to find these facts amusingly significant! But there would be little cub-rearing and peaceful feeding with no protective males in the pride. If they are shot as pests by herdsmen or as trophies for hunters, the pride often breaks up, and cubs are abandoned.

While the lion is holding its own right now against the threat of extinction, the cheetah is not faring as well. The next morning we happened across two of these elegant and graceful creatures. It was a mother teaching her son how to hunt. The two of them





ambled toward a herd of Thomson's gazelles, but as the mother slowed to a cautious stalk, her brash son took right off after the Tommies. He accelerated in seconds to his famed 70-mile-an-hour sprint, becoming a golden-spotted blur. In vain! Cheetahs can sprint only in brief bursts, and so the Tommies got away, scattering.

He tried and failed again. At last frustrated and panting, he let his mother show him how it is done. She stalked the gazelle until quite close and then put her sprint to effective use. She shared the small catch with her son.

"Look!" the guide exclaimed, pointing. A hyena had materialized as if out of nowhere. He ran at the cheetahs, scared them away from their hard-won gazelle, and ran off with it.

"Ah, that villain!" our guide sputtered. He was all for chasing the hyena down to retrieve the cheetah's kill, but the thief was gone. Hyenas are very unpopular with humans. Yet the hyena has never threatened any species with extinction. If only humans could say the same!

Funny Families

Besides the great cats, we saw a wide variety of family life in the Mara reserve. An ostrich family strode by, the seven-foot-tall parents herding a gaggle of scruffy-

looking youngsters between them. Warthog families abounded, too, so ugly they're comical. Admirably quick and clever, they trot along with their shovel-shaped, tusked heads held high. Their thin tails point straight up, like car antennae.

Our Masai driver held up a forefinger and laughed, "That is Mr. Warthog's way of saying, 'I'm number one.'"

Monkey families, also, were a source of constant delight. Wiry black-faced vervets leaped and chattered in the trees while their babies learned to climb by playing rambunctiously below. Colobus monkeys, performing aerial acrobatics over our heads in their somber black and white coats, looked like priests gone mad. Baboon families were everywhere, too, the babies often riding their mothers like little jockeys. Baboons are raucous and intensely curious. In Tanzania, my wife and I even had to chase one out of our hotel room!

Africa's Biggest

In one of the Mara's forests, we spotted elephants, their huge gray shapes moving soundlessly between the trees. It was a herd of eight cows, with a tiny three-month-old calf belonging to the matriarch. The herd would shield this little fellow from our view as he moved unafraid among their pillarlike legs, finding mother and nursing occasionally. The herd, I learned, will match its pace to the calf's and stand together to protect it. In fact, the matriarch nearly charged our driver—he quickly scurried back inside the truck!

Bull elephants are often loners. In the Ngorongoro Crater in Tanzania, we saw one old male with long, gleaming white tusks. He can use them to dig holes for salt and minerals or even to dig water holes that other animals will share in the dry season. How ironic that these beautiful tools, clearly designed to help the elephant survive, have so fired human greed that they may cause his downfall!

Second only to the elephant in size is the massive hippopotamus. (Some say the white rhinoceros is the second largest land mammal.) We stopped near a small river to see a whole herd of them basking, snorting and yawning the day away.

"The hippo," our guide told us, "lounges about in the water all day to avoid sunburn, then comes out to graze at night. The oil on his skin protects him from too much sun and water. Surprisingly," he continued, "the hippo kills more humans than any other African animal. They're not carnivores,

but swim or paddle too close —and one bite ends the story!"

Looking at them, we could see why the book of Job says that even a flooding river bursting against the mouth of this behemoth will not panic him. His head alone may weigh up to a ton!—Job 40:23.

The Serengeti Plains

We journeyed south to Tanzania, stopping in the spectacular Ngorongoro Crater, a 12-mile-wide bowl teeming with wildlife. One of its shallow, alkaline lakes seemed from a distance to have a pink cloud on its surface. It was covered with lesser flamingos, the smaller and pinker variety. They murmured and honked as they strutted elegantly in throngs, their legs looking like a thicket of bright red straws bending and unbending.

The Serengeti plains northwest of the crater are great flat seas of grass dotted with islands called kopjes. Huge, sunbaked groups of boulders, kopjes swarm with small furry rock hyraxes and colorful lizards. In the nearby brush we spotted the dik-dik, a ten-pound, one-foot-tall antelope whose only defense is to know how to hide.

We rode into a herd of wildebeest that stretched to the horizon in every direction. They were massing together

for their migration, mooing and cavorting clownishly. I smiled at their overwhelming numbers and noise, and thought, 'Here at last is an animal that is not being wiped out by mankind!'

Our guide was thrilled. "There will be two million of them this year, I don't doubt. Right now they're heading for the nearest rainstorm—they can sense one from 30 miles away!"

Late one afternoon on the plains, we were doing some birdwatching, excited that we had seen nearly 200 varieties so far, all of them beautiful.

"It can't be!" my sister gasped, pointing. I turned to look, expecting quite a bird, and found instead a leopard, stretched out regally in the limbs of an acacia tree not 20 yards away.* He returned our stares calmly and yawned, looking completely at home. Lions also can climb trees, but at over twice the leopard's weight, they do it only rarely, to escape heat and flies. The lions we saw in a tree looked so clumsy and uncomfortable up there that we all laughed. But the leopard eats, sleeps, virtually lives in trees.

"Terrific, isn't he?" our guide enthused. Sad to say, he went on, "most tourists go home without seeing a leopard these days. They are heavily poached for their beautiful coats." All our cameras clicked and buzzed as the sun sank on the plains. I wonder if that leopard is alive today, just a few months later.

Will They Be There for Our Children?

As our plane took off toward home, I looked down at the Serengeti and felt sad. It was sad, for one thing, to leave this beautiful place. It had won me over completely. But several of the safari's recurring themes, too, had been sad ones.

For instance, the speed of the cheetah, the tusks of the elephant, the neck of the giraffe, and qualities of every creature we saw, all point to a Designer who combines beauty and usefulness, form and function, in all his work. Human designers are showered with praise when their work even approaches that kind of balance. Yet the Designer of these immeasurably greater works is rarely even recognized as a designer at all. Rather, the credit is given to a blind force of billions of accidents, called evolution. Sad.

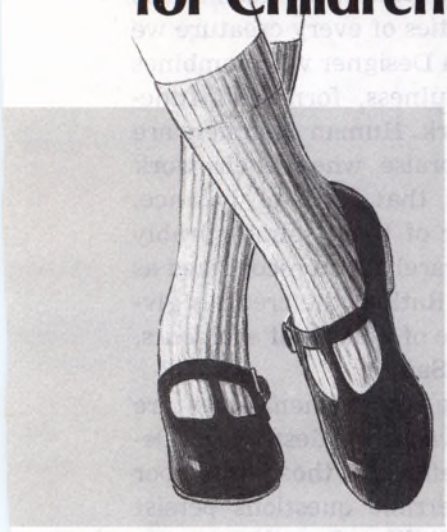
Worse still, the works themselves are being steadily, wantonly destroyed. Despite the valiant efforts of those who labor to preserve it, terrible questions persist about Africa's wildlife. Can these creatures survive continued poaching and the pressures of a steadily shrinking habitat? Will they be there for our children, our grandchildren?

Troubling questions, indeed. And yet, to thinking persons, such questions can't help but lead to another even more important one: Will the intelligent Designer of the earth and all its creatures stand by and watch it all be ruined? No; he promises "to bring to ruin those ruining the earth." Better still, he promises a time soon after when mankind will be at peace with the animals.—Revelation 11:18; Isaiah 11:1-9.

Yes, the Creator provides happy, reliable answers to our most disturbing questions. Thinking about his promises dispels my sadness over the plight of Africa's wild animals. Not only are they there now; they will remain there in the future. *—Contributed.*

* 1 yd = 0.9 m.

Foot Care for Children



"WE ARE breeding a nation of cripples," worries chiropodist Adrian Grier of the town of Luton, England. In his hospital clinic, he sees children as young as six years of age with disfigured feet. The cause: poorly fitting shoes. In just one year, out of more than 3,000 children examined by Grier, 600 of them had foot problems attributed to shoes that did not fit properly. "The earlier children start to wear a fashion shoe, the quicker deformities come and the worse they will be," states Grier in Luton's *Herald*. But ill-fitting shoes are not the only cause of foot deformities. Babies' feet can be initially deformed when parents put them into all-in-one sleepers, and socks that are too small may be equally damaging, claims Grier.

Being alert to the dangers and adopting a sensible approach in the purchase of well-shaped shoes will do much to prevent deformities, ingrown toenails, bunions, and even arthritis in later life. Grier suggests that shoes for children be 3/4 inch (2 cm) longer than the child's foot (to allow for growth) and have a rounded toe.

When it comes to clothing, as well as shoes, this time-proved piece of advice given to Christian women can benefit all: 'Be modest and sensible about your clothes.'—1 Timothy 2:9, *Today's English Version*.

Sunbathers Beware!

AS PEOPLE now head for sunny beaches in some parts of the world and suntan lamps in other areas, they should heed the warning given by the ACS (American Cancer Society).

"Overexposure to the sun," says the ACS, is by far the most common cause of skin cancer. Who are the most at risk? Although no one is immune to the damaging effect of the sun, an ACS leaflet, *Fry Now. Pay Later.*, warns "sunbathers who deliberately expose themselves to the sun's ultraviolet radiation." It says: "People who sunburn easily and have fair skin with red or blond hair are most prone to develop skin cancer." And the risk is higher in places where there is intense year-round sunshine.

Of the 450,000 new cases of skin cancer reported each year in the United States, approximately 22,000 cases are diagnosed as malignant melanoma —the least common but most serious of the major skin cancers—which begins in skin cells that produce the dark pigment called melanin. Melanomas may begin in or near a mole. They are characterized by a brown or black color and have the strong tendency to spread to other parts of the body.

How does one distinguish between a normal mole and a melanoma? Although the only way to know for certain is to see your physician, the booklet *Why You Should Know About Melanoma*, published by the ACS in cooperation with the American Academy of Dermatology, lists four "ABCD" warning signs of melanoma: *A*symmetry (one half does not match the other half), *B*order Irregularity (the edges are ragged, notched, or blurred), Color (pigmentation is not uniform), and *D*iameter is greater than 1/4 inch (6 mm) (any sudden or continuing increase in size should be of special concern).

If the disease is detected early enough, chances for cure are good. Better still, emphasizes the ACS, most skin cancer can be prevented simply by using good sense and avoiding the hot midday sun, by using sunscreens at the beach or pool, and by covering up.

INDIA'S CATHOLIC CHURCH

Where Is It Heading?

It represents a small minority of the population. Often it is viewed as a foreign intruder and eyed with suspicion by the majority, who adhere to faiths considered native to Indian soil. But India's Catholic Church unquestionably has a foothold on the subcontinent and desires to remain firmly planted here. What is the church doing to reach this goal? Will it succeed? In short, where is the church heading?

By *Awake!* correspondent in India

THE Catholic Church may not be the most important of India's religions—its nearly 14 million members here comprise less than 2 percent of the nation's inhabitants. Yet, the importance of India's Catholic Church to world Catholicism was highlighted when, in February 1986, Pope John Paul II paid a ten-day visit to India. His 14-city tour included a visit to the state of Kerala, where the largest concentration of Catholics in India is found.

Kerala shines as a jewel in the eyes of the church. It is the seat of Catholic power in India, and the church is one of the biggest organized institutions in the state. Kerala is also thought to be the home of Christianity in the nation. According to popular tradition, Thomas—one of the 12 apostles of Jesus Christ—came to the Malabar Coast of Kerala after the death of the Messiah.

It was not until some 14 centuries later, however, that the Roman Catholic Church came to India. Portuguese explorers and missionaries who followed them brought the Roman church to Goa, a former Portuguese colony on India's west coast. From there, believers made their way south to Kerala.

The Catholic Church has long existed as a paradox in the eyes of the local people. While many credit the church for its educational, social, and medical services throughout the country, they disdain what they see as the real purpose behind the presence of the church—the making of converts.

Is 'Conversion' the Aim?

When fundamentalist Hindu organizations warned that the pontiff's presence would itself encourage mass conversions to Christianity, the church did everything possible to put distance between itself and the thought that it desired to convert Indians. "No one need be afraid," said the president of the Catholic

Bishops' Conference of India. "The Holy Father is not coming to convert people." Even more emphatic was the statement of one Indian archbishop: "The Catholic Church strongly opposes proselytisation. It is an interference in religious freedom. We denounce it, condemn it."

What about the pope himself? "The Catholic Church recognizes the truths that are contained in the religious traditions of India and this recognition makes true dialogue possible," he told an audience representing Hinduism, Zoroastrianism, Buddhism, Jainism, Sikhism, Judaism, Islam, and some professing Christianity. On another occasion, he professed a like-mindedness with other faiths, stating: "We proclaim our solidarity with our Hindu and Muslim brothers and sisters and the followers of other religious traditions."

This professed solidarity was manifested not in words alone. During the pope's visit, he was garlanded by a priest of Calcutta's famous Kali Temple of Kalighat.* At another time, he received *vibhuti,* or holy ash, on his forehead from a Hindu priest and donned a Muslim *ponnadai* (shawl) displaying symbols of the Islamic faith.

Despite all of this, when the pope addressed the Indian bishops, he outlined the "proclamation of the Gospel" as one of the key issues affecting the well-being of the church in India. But what kind of gospel proclamation did the pope have in mind? Not surprisingly, he emphasized that the spreading of the gospel should come through programs for social justice and economic advancement.

The pope stated that "the Church's mission of evangelization includes energetic and sustained action for justice, peace, and integral human development. Not to assume these tasks would be to betray the work of evangelization; it would be infidelity to the example of Jesus."

"All who have advanced the dignity and freedom of their brothers and sisters are blessed in the eyes of Christ," the pope proclaimed. Thus the Indian press appropriately observed: "No one—not even the most conservative and pro *status quo* member of the church hierarchy—now talks of preaching the good news in the narrow, literal sense of spreading Christianity as a religion."

A Hindu-Catholic Church?

In an effort to make Catholicism less foreign and more Indian, the church has encouraged a program of adaptation in its worship. Thus, some Catholic priests will read prayers while sitting on the floor as in a Hindu ashram, Vedic mantras may be used in place of Western hymns, and Hindu *Nilavilakku* (brass oil lamps) may be lit before many functions.

"The idea," according to one Catholic layman, "is to identify the universal elements in Hinduism and other religions and to incorporate symbols and rituals associated with those into our worship, to complement and support it." The religious rites and methods of worship in many of Kerala's churches are a definite mixture of Catholic traditions and Hindu customs.

Where Is the Church Headed?

While in India, the pope, alluding to the teachings of Mohandas Gandhi, advocated that "leaders of all peoples must believe and act on the belief that the solution to the world's problems lay within the human heart." He also urged the youth to "follow the teachings of the great sages of yore whose words contain 'perennial wis-

* Kali is a Hindu goddess of destruction.

Image of Jesus Christ seated in Hindu yoga position. Written below is the 'om' mantra, and below it, the star of David

Image of Mary dressed in sari with tilak (dot) on her forehead

dom and truth' and which will inspire them to march forward in life."

How different all of this is from what Jesus Christ taught! The central theme of his teaching was the coming Kingdom of God, a world government that would completely eradicate poverty, social injustice, and diseases. (Matthew 9:35) The entire Bible highlights this Kingdom as the only solution to mankind's problems. Jesus also displayed implicit trust in God's promise when he said in prayer, "Your word is truth." (John 17:17) And he urged his followers: "Keep on, then, seeking first the kingdom and his righteousness." —Matthew 6:33.

What about collaboration with other faiths? The Bible clearly warns true believers: "Do not become unevenly yoked with unbelievers. For what fellowship do righteousness and lawlessness have?"—2 Corinthians 6:14; Deuteronomy 12:30, 31.

So, then, as the Catholic Church in India moves in what it deems a positive direction —and one that will secure its position here— it is in reality drawing further away from Bible truth. As it does so, however, more and more people are being called upon to make a distinction between the teachings of Jesus and the teachings of the Catholic Church. In what way?

Presently, more than 7,000 of Jehovah's Witnesses throughout India are single-mindedly upholding the truth of the Bible. They desire to help interested ones appreciate God's promise of unending peace under his Kingdom rule. And unlike the Catholic Church or other religions, they do not take part in the wars of the nations or political controversies. (Isaiah 2:2-4) If you would like to know why the Witnesses are different and how they are able to conform to the Bible, write and ask the publishers of this journal.

Autumn Leaves

Bow Out in a Blaze of Glory

JACK FROST gets credit for it, but he has nothing to do with it. The leaves do it, but they are forced into it. The trees themselves start it, but they are acting in self-defense. And behind all these mysterious happenings, it is divine wisdom that quietly directs the show. However it comes about, the perfor-

mance dazzles the eye and stirs the heart of those who see it. And even as the extravaganza reaches its climax, next year's performance is waiting in the wings.

In early October the curtain opens on the show, quietly and without fanfare. A tiny band of cells where the leaf's stem is attached to the twig begins to loosen and dry out. Between these cells and the twig, a layer of corklike cells begins growing. It is scar tissue forming even before the amputation of the leaf takes place.

Its appearance on the stage is perfectly timed—just another one of those engaging mysteries so commonly found in creation. It is the season for brightly lighted days and cool, crisp nights—requirements for the colorful extravaganza that is to follow. The freezing presence of the legendary Jack Frost has no role in this drama. That imaginary sprite with his paint pot is no member of the cast.

As the layer of corky cells toughens, the tiny pipelines that bring sap to the leaves are stopped up. All the while the other layer of cells is continuing to loosen and dry out. The flow of sap to the leaves has been cut off, but it is still two weeks before they will fall. These are the days of autumn's blaze of glory. Without sap, photosynthesis in the leaves stops and the green chlorophyll in the leaves is destroyed by the sun's rays.

With the passing of the green, pigments that have been in the leaf all summer now take the limelight. Outstanding is carotene—its name comes from the carrots it colors. It is also the pigment that makes butter yellow and egg yolks orange. Sugar-maple leaves have orange and chrome hues of carotene. Birches have pure yellow carotene.

But what about the crimson of the red maple, the scarlet of the oak, the deep red of the sassafras, the plum color of the ash? Those colors are newcomers to the leaves. Only after the corky layer has cut off the flow of sap from the leaf do these dynamic colors usher in their dramatic finale to the fall show. If the weather is cool and bright, the leaf continues for a time to make sugar, which is now trapped in the leaf and is turned into a chemical called anthocyanin. If the sap is acid, the anthocyanins turn red; if alkaline, they turn blue or purple.

The show now nears its end. Jack Frost has had no role in the drama; nor is it the approaching cold of winter that causes the leaves to fall. The tree itself does it to conserve its water. During winter, very little is available from a frozen earth, and the broad leaves of deciduous trees give off large amounts of it. Without new supplies of water, these leaves would soon dehydrate the tree. So to forestall this, the tree sheds its leaves and seals the open wound with a layer of corky scar tissue.

The tree must retain its water, or the show will not go on next year. There would be no spring green, no summer shade, and no fall foliage to dazzle eyes and stir hearts. The buds of spring that burst open and send out green shoots are not newcomers. They have been there all year, waiting in the wings for warm sunshine to thaw their plumbing and start the sap flowing. Now they grow rapidly, getting the lion's share of available food.

But at the same time tiny buds no bigger than the head of a pin are being formed, packed with leaves, flowers, twigs, and stems. Only by midsummer, however, do these tiny buds get the food they need to grow larger and develop further. By the end of summer, they contain next spring's leaves and flowers, stems and twigs, all tightly packed inside waterproof wrappings. Protected from drying and freezing, they wait without stirring for seven months, waiting for spring. In this state of suspended animation, they are called winter tree buds.

So as you look in awe and wonder at the colorful extravaganza of the fall leaves that are exiting the stage in a blaze of glory, know that the ones that will put on the show next year are quietly waiting in the wings for their turn to dazzle your eyes and stir your heart.

And know and also thank the Producer of the show. Who can sensibly deny that only God can make such trees?

I Gained My Freedom *In Prison!*

I DREW a deep breath of fresh air that seemed so different from that of the prison I had just left behind. It was almost impossible to believe . . . I was free at last! Free to leave the French prison of Villeneuve-sur-Lot. Free to return to my homeland, Spain.

I entered prison at the age of 23 and came out when I was 28, in 1976.

As I drew away from the prison, the pleasant sensation of regained freedom became more and more pronounced. Once more I turned around to cast a long glance at those forbidding walls. One thought dominated my mind—*while still in prison, I had already achieved freedom!*

During my years of incarceration, I had been held in five different penal institutions. But how did I find myself in French prisons? Certainly it was not for any noble cause. I was a delinquent. A wretched childhood in a broken home and a contradictory religious education served to shape my rebellious and bellicose personality. I certainly could not reconcile a loving God with one who tortures his creatures in an inextinguishable fire. I became a problem child. I was expelled from five different primary schools.

Born in Barcelona, I grew up in a hostile environment. When I was six years old, my parents separated, and I was entrusted to my father. However, he didn't give me the firm direction that I needed, and eventually, because of my rebellious and unstable nature, he put me in a reformatory.

I couldn't avoid the bitter resentment I felt toward my father. I felt abandoned. Needless to say, I didn't leave the reformatory reformed.

French Legion or Spanish Prison?

Twice I was arrested for common criminal offenses. After that, I got myself mixed up in smuggling and had to flee to France. I was 20 years old at the time. I was picked up by the French gendarmerie (police), who gave me a choice—either join the French Foreign Legion or be handed over to the Spanish police. I chose the Legion.

Three years of service in the Legion didn't contribute anything positive to my personality. After finishing my first military campaign, I was granted a three months' leave. During this period, I got together with a bunch of fellow legionnaires out for a good time. To make ends meet and to support our Bohemian and reveling way of life, we had to rob. I knew that "trade" well. Some months later the police arrested us.

I was charged with several offenses, among them falsification of documents and, most serious of all, armed robbery and kidnapping. This time my desire for freedom and independence cost me a high price—an eight-year prison sentence! I was taken to the military section of the Les Baumettes prison, Marseilles, in the south of France. There I was assigned to serve meals to the convicts from cell to

cell, 63 cells altogether. I also had to clean the cells and passageways.

A Strange Encounter

One day I was distributing the meals at certain cells when the accompanying officer indicated: "These are Witnesses." At that moment I could not see them, as the meals were handed over rapidly through a hatch in each cell door. However, my first thought was, 'If they are *witnesses* of some crime, how is it that they are in prison?' Of course, they were Jehovah's Witnesses and conscientious objectors.

Some days later, while cleaning their cells, my work companion found a book in French with a blue cover. The Witnesses had been transferred to other cells, and someone must have left it behind. He gave it to me, and I put it with my belongings. Later, during one of those boring, drab days, I started to read it. It was *The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life*. Halfway through the second chapter, I got weary. Yet, before putting it down, I thumbed through a few more pages. The picture on page 95 caught my attention: "1914," "Generation," "End." I was intrigued and read the entire chapter.

Later, I went to the library, where I knew I would find the Witnesses. Turning to one of them, I demanded, "Show me in your Bible this about 1914." The Witness, a little surprised, told me: "First, read this other book, and you will find the answer yourself." He handed me the book *"Your Will Be Done on Earth."*

The next day during the exercise period, I asked them for more information. A Bible study was started—held daily! There was no end to my questions: "What about gambling?" "That involves greed and covetousness, and those are not Christian qualities" was the answer. (Colossians 3:5) And so it went on, question after question about habits, morals, doctrines. Each and every answer was backed by the Bible.

I had the feeling that I was untying myself from ropes and chains, as if I were escaping from a mold that had been crushing me most of my life. It seemed as if the prison walls were no longer on top of me. Those Bible truths opened up a new horizon to me. I learned that human society, "the system of things" as it exists today, will be replaced by a new society of persons who love God's law and justice. My personality changed. *In prison I began to feel free!*—Matthew 24:3; 2 Peter 3:13.

A Cell-to-Cell Preaching Campaign

Proselytizing was prohibited in the prison. But, of course, I was authorized to distribute the meals to the cells. I felt the urge to share with others the same sensation of freedom that I was experiencing. (John 8:32) So whether I was sweeping the floor or distributing meals, I slipped magazines under the heavy metal doors. I even kept a cell-to-cell record so as to remember which

In Our Next Issue

- *Why Do Bad Things Happen to Good People?*
- *I Survived the Sinking of the "Bismarck"*
- *Is Lying All That Bad?*
- *The Spanish Inquisition —How Could It Happen?*

Former criminal Enrique Barber González studying the Bible with his wife and children

issues of the magazines I had left. The pleasant days had begun.

From that prison I was transferred to several others, including one in Paris. I was kept there under observation for a while to determine to what degree I was dangerous. Since I expected another change of prison, I applied to be sent to Eysses in the southwest of France. I had been told that there were Witnesses there.

Indeed, there was a brother, but during the three years I was in that prison, our paths never crossed. He was in a section to which I did not have access. Yet I organized my activity the best I could. I started to distribute magazines in the prison and started several Bible studies. I was even able to conduct a study of *The Watchtower* with two of the inmates each Sunday. Eventually, I had three Bible studies —one with a Frenchman, another with a Spaniard, and a third with a Moroccan.

Tests of Neutrality in Prison

In any prison the spirit of solidarity is part of a convict's ethic. There are moments when your past life, race, and nationality disappear, and each inmate feels that he is tied by a common 'umbilical cord' to a shared 'placenta'—the prison. It is as if by means of one's initiation into crime, one is invested as a member of the 'Order of Convicts.' This common interest obligates you to participate in prison riots—setting fire to your cell, aggressions, and strikes—whenever the popular will so decides. Yet, now I had broken with the 'order.' I had to remain neutral and not get involved in the other convicts' activities.

Because of my neutrality, I suffered some reprisals. Three times I was beaten up, on one occasion a bucket of water was emptied on my bed, I received death threats. Yet, I was surprised, for that was really the least I could expect. Others had been stabbed or been badly beaten for having refused to participate in revolts. Then why did I get off lightly? As time passed, I came to realize that I had a protector. How was that?

During my transfer from Paris to the Eysses prison, I witnessed to another convict in the group. He was a prisoner with great influence, a mafioso. We started a Bible study. The Kingdom message impressed him but not enough for him to change his life. He discontinued the study. However, he turned out to be my protector! Whenever the convicts decided to organize a demonstration, he would intervene on my behalf, warning them to leave me

alone. But then he was transferred to another prison.

About this time another riot was planned. They intended to set fire to the prison. I requested to be locked in solitary confinement so as to avoid possible acts of retaliation. I passed nine days incommunicado. On the tenth day a general disturbance broke out, culminating in a blaze. The devastation was complete and security forces had to intervene. Fortunately I came to no physical harm.

What was most outstanding to me was the fact that despite everything, I could organize preaching campaigns in the prison. Although proselytizing was prohibited, the prison director supported me, saying, "These ideas can't do harm to anybody." I also talked to the trusted prisoners of each section so that they would distribute tracts that I had typed out. They had access to areas that were denied to me. I paid for their help with jars of instant coffee.

Baptism and Free for Good

I was visited by brothers of the local French congregation. Eventually, I indicated to the brothers my desire to be baptized. Yet, how could we do it? There was no possibility in the prison. Would they let me out for such a reason? The idea seemed like a dream. A circuit assembly was to be held in the town of Rodez, very near to the prison. I took the bull by the horns and asked for permission to attend.

Contrary to all expectations, I was granted a three-day leave and was to be accompanied only by the brothers from the local congregation. Some prison officials were opposed to the decision. They were convinced that I would not return. But the permit was already granted.

May 18, 1975, I symbolized my dedication to God by water baptism. I was free for good! Of course, I went back to the prison —much to the amazement of those who had opposed my permit. After that, I was granted two more permits of up to six days each. I used those days to preach and to meet with the brothers. What a sensation of true freedom!

In January 1976, I was finally freed from prison with a three-year remission for good conduct. At last, I crossed the French-Spanish border. Five very intense years of my life were left behind. When I arrived in Barcelona, I immediately contacted a congregation of Jehovah's Witnesses. What a thirst I had for a normal life!

The Way to True Reform

Now I am married. We have two young sons and a daughter, and I relish what I could not savor in my childhood—a united and happy family. I recognize that Jehovah has been merciful in abundance toward me. When I read in Psalm 103, verses 8 to 14 that 'he has not brought upon us according to our sins, what we deserve, for his loving-kindness is superior,' then I understand that only a God of love can replace this present corrupt system of things.

From my experience, it is evident to me that prisons do not have the power to reform and never will. That power has to come from an inner force and motivation that actuates the mind. (Ephesians 4:23) There are so many who debase themselves even more in prison, and upon their release they are almost irreversibly damaged, morally and emotionally.

Happily, in my case those insurmountable prison walls had crumbled long before I was released. There is nothing that can restrict the truth of God's Word, nor can it be imprisoned. I know that, for I gained freedom while still in prison!—*As told by Enrique Barber González.*

JADE *And the Stories Behind It*

By *Awake!* correspondent in Taiwan

"MY TIME is limited," said our dear friend Jim, who was on his first visit to Taiwan, "and I want to see something of the culture of the Chinese. What would you recommend?"

I suggested a visit to the National Palace Museum.

"A museum?" reacted Jim.

"Well, you might not think so, Jim," I explained, "but, actually, a visit to the National Palace Museum is probably the best way to achieve your goal in the time available to you. Its collection of Chinese artwork—nearly a quarter of a million items—is perhaps the largest in the world, and these works of art illustrate the character and attitude of the Chinese in ways not easily seen otherwise."

The National Palace Museum is located just outside of Taipei. As we drive up to the museum, Jim's eyes open wide.

"What a beautiful building!" he exclaims. "It's a work of art in itself!"

The museum is a four-story structure built in the style of the former imperial palace of the Ching dynasty (1644-1912). We enter through the second-floor entrance and wonder what to see. Should we take a whirlwind tour and try to see everything, or should we concentrate on something of particular interest?

After a quick glance at the directory, Jim decides we should start with the jades.

There are two varieties of jade—nephrite and jadeite. On the Mohs' scale, where diamond is given a hardness rating of 10, jades fall between 6 and 7. Nephrite, usually of a single color throughout the piece, comes in a variety of hues—green, pink, white, yellow, and so on. Jadeite, on the other hand, may be of a single color, or it may be green and white, green and black, even red or some other color. Emerald-green jadeite is the favorite for jewelry today.

As we look at the pieces on display, Jim notices a cicada-shaped brown-and-green jadeite from the Han dynasty (206 B.C.E.-220 C.E.).

"What was that used for? Decoration?"

"No," I try to explain. "You know, I'm sure, that cicada larvae live underground for four years and then emerge to become adult cicadas. So the ancient Chinese used it as a symbol of rebirth. From long before the time of Christ, they followed the custom of putting a cicada-shaped piece of jade in the mouth of the deceased, which they thought would prevent the body from decaying. They did this because they believed in the reincarnation of the immortal soul. But apart from that, to know about the cicada's life cycle, they must have been astute students of nature, don't you think?"

Jim agrees. We come to a piece from the Ming dynasty (1368-1644). It is in the shape of a leaf carved from a piece of white nephrite.

"See how the artist utilized the flaws in the stone to enhance his masterpiece?" I ask.

Jim looks carefully and notices a cicada and some marks in the surface of the leaf-shaped jade. "Looks like he turned the little imperfection in the stone into a lively insect nibbling away at the leaf!" he exclaims. The explanatory note next to the exhibit shows this to be exactly what the artist did.

We next come to one of the better-known pieces in the museum—a Ching dynasty

jadeite Chinese cabbage with white stems and green leaves, topped with two grasshoppers. Here again, the artist with an imaginative eye made use of the stone's natural coloration to create his work of art.

We move on and look at a bowl made of grayish-white jade from Hindustan, shaped like a chrysanthemum blossom and engraved with a poem by the Ching emperor Ch'ien-lung (1735-96). The jade is so thin that it is almost transparent. Next to it is a magnificent screen composed of thin slices of elaborately carved green jade set in a wooden frame. Remembering the hardness of jade and the simple tools available, it staggers the imagination to think of the time and work involved in the production of just one such work of art.

Photos: Collection of the National Palace Museum, Taipei, Taiwan

Archaic jade cicadas ▲

Jadeite cabbage ▸

White jade brush washer, cicada and leaf design ▼

"Apart from its obvious beauty, is there any other reason why jade has always been such a favorite with the Chinese?" Jim asks.

"Since ancient times," I explain, "Confucian and Taoist thinking has idealized certain moral virtues, and jade has been looked upon as a fitting symbol of them. Confucius extolled its virtues this way: 'It is soft, smooth and shining—like intelligence. Its edges seem sharp but do not cut—like justice. It hangs down to the ground—like humility. When struck, it gives a clear, ringing sound—like music. The strains in it are not hidden and add to its beauty—like truthfulness.' What imagination!"

Because jade was believed to symbolize these virtues, it was much admired and used by anyone who aspired to be the 'perfect gentleman.' He would wear pendants of jade around his waist, and the tinkling tones produced when he walked would regulate his gait. If he should become agitated or unseemingly hasty—by all means to be avoided by a true gentleman—the discordant jangle would remind him of his lapse from proper demeanor. This perhaps casts a little light on the mistaken notion of the 'inscrutable Oriental.' In reality, Orientals just consider it ill mannered to display their emotions openly!

"I could spend all day here," Jim remarks as we rush through the galleries on our way out, catching fleeting glimpses of the extensive displays of paintings, carvings, porcelain and lacquer ware, and so on. "Thank you for persuading me to come. I really appreciated seeing those beautiful jade pieces and hearing the fascinating stories behind them."

Young People Ask. . .

How Can I Get Along With My Brother and Sister?

ALL brothers and sisters fight! Many youths—and adults—feel that way. And in spite of the fact that over a hundred thousand children a year in the United States reportedly use a gun or a knife against a brother or a sister, an expert on family violence laments: "Most people do not take sibling violence seriously."

You may thus feel little incentive to make peace with your brother or sister, though both of you may constantly be at odds. Nevertheless, even when such clashes do not erupt into violence, they do upset the family peace. Young Camille, for example, speaks of how her parents react when she and her sister argue: "Our parents hate it. They hate it a lot when we fight—it upsets them." More importantly, constant bickering arouses ugly feelings and emotions. Says the Bible: "For where jealousy and contentiousness are, there disorder and every vile thing are."—James 3:16.

A previous article gave some of the reasons why young family members so often disagree.* Among them: a lack of willingness to share, lack of privacy, stepfamily tensions, and jealousies. According to Proverbs 14:6, having this understanding puts you at an advantage because "to the understanding one knowledge is an easy thing." In other words, your understanding *why* you have trouble getting along makes it easier to figure out *how* to get along with your sister or brother. Following are some specific suggestions.

Preventing Fights Through Communication

"Where there is no wood the fire goes out." So says Proverbs 26:20. This principle is often applied to preventing the spread of forest fires by cutting firebreaks, strips of land where all the trees have been cut down. If a fire does start, theoretically it can advance only to that point, and then it dies out. You can apply the same principle and prevent—or at least limit—disagreements with your brother or sister. How? By communicating and working out compromises *before* an argument flares up.

For example, is the problem a lack of privacy? If so, at a time when the issue is not raging, try sitting down together and working out an actual schedule. ('I get the room to myself on these days/hours, and you get it on these.') Then "let your word *Yes* mean Yes, your *No,* No" by respecting the agreement. (Matthew 5:37) If something comes up that calls for an adjustment, let the other person know in advance, instead of just thrusting the change upon him without notice.

Are you battling over property rights?

* See "Young People Ask . . . Why Is It So Hard to Get Along With My Brother and Sister?" in the July 22, 1987, issue of *Awake!*

One teenager complained: "My stepsister always uses my things without asking me. She even used my makeup, and then had the nerve to tell me I didn't buy the right kind!" You could call upon your parents as the final arbiters. Better yet, though, sit down with your brother or sister at a calm moment. Try to agree upon some rules regarding borrowing, one of which might be always to *ask* before taking. Of course, as with so many other situations, the golden rule of Matthew 7:12 is really the key: "All things, therefore, that you want men to do to you, you also must likewise do to them."

Do not conclude that it is unfair that a brother or a sister on occasion receives more attention than you do

So communicate! Work out compromises. Set down specific rules. In this way you can watch the 'fire go out' before it starts!

'It's Not Fair!'

"My sister gets *everything* she wants," laments one youth. "But when it comes to me, I get left out completely." Does this sound familiar? But note those two absolutes, "everything" and "completely." Is the situation really that dire? When we are upset, we do tend to exaggerate the severity of the situation. The Bible gives this encouragement: "Let your reasonableness become known to all men." (Philippians 4:5) Being reasonable literally means to be 'yielding' and 'not insisting upon the letter of the law.' Would it be reasonable to expect perfect treatment from imperfect parents? Would it be reasonable to expect absolutely equal treatment for two different individuals? Of course not!

The danger of being too quick to call parents unfair is illustrated in the Bible's story of Joseph. His brothers hated him because he was specially favored by their father, Jacob. However, when Joseph's brothers shepherded their flocks in a distant area, Jacob demonstrated that he also had deep concern for his other sons by sending Joseph to check on their safety. Similarly, you may find that your resentment over a brother or a sister's receiving 'special treatment' is equally unfounded.—Genesis 37: 1-4, 13.

This is especially important to remember if you have stepbrothers or stepsisters. Says an article in *'Teen* magazine: "There's an important distinction between equal and fair. People have individual personalities and individual needs. . . . Instead of trying

to be treated the *same,* it's important to see if your stepparent is trying to meet each of your needs. If you don't feel as though your needs are being met, then you can talk about that with your stepparent."

Brothers and Sisters a Blessing?

This may seem hard to believe at times —especially when they are annoying you. But an often untapped aid in getting along with your brothers and sisters is calling to mind the benefits of having them! Child psychiatrist James P. Comer reminds us that "rivalry among brothers and sisters is such a prominent feature of childhood that we sometimes forget that siblings are also companions and friends." Diane certainly agrees. "It's fun having brothers and sisters," she says. She has seven. "You have someone to talk to and share your interests with."

Her brother Dennis adds: "There's always someone there to get opinions from." Anne Marie and her brother Andre concur on the advantages of having a ready companion: "Even though you can go places with your friends, you always have your brothers and sisters. They are always there when you want to play a game or sport or go to the park." Donna sees another practical advantage: "You have someone to share the chores with." Others have described their brother or sister as "a special adviser and listener" and someone who "understands what I'm going through."

> ***"There's an important distinction between equal and fair. People have individual personalities and individual needs"***

Furthermore, consider the future benefits. Later in life, you will experience some of the very same problems with others that you now have with your brother or sister. Jealousy, property rights, unequal treatment, lack of privacy, selfishness, personality differences—such problems are a part of life. So view learning to get along with your brothers and sisters as training in the fascinating and often bewildering field of human relations.

Taking Notice of God

The biggest motivation for working for family peace, though, is knowing that it can improve your relationship with God. Seventeen-year-old Andre echoes the Bible's words at 1 John 4:20 when he says: "If you can't get along with people you can see, how can you get along with Jehovah, whom you can't see?"

Admittedly, it is not always easy to remember this. Anne Marie confesses: "When you're fighting, at times you don't think about how it affects your relationship with Jehovah. You just think about how you can make the other person feel stupid or get revenge." But to maintain God's approval you *must* 'take notice of him in all your ways.'—Proverbs 3:6.

This does not mean that you will never disagree with your sisters and brothers. But you can learn to do so without "malicious bitterness and anger and wrath and screaming." (Ephesians 4:31) One 15-year-old girl, for example, used to look for ways to start trouble with her brothers or sisters. But after learning to study and *apply* the Bible in her life, she says: "I no longer look for fights but try to avoid them." Why not try doing the same yourself? You may even find that having a brother or a sister is not so bad after all.

From Our Readers

Good Health

Thank you for the article "Good Health Is Good for Business." (February 22, 1987) Although I don't work outside the home, I sure work a lot better at home since I started regular exercise a year ago, and also I am 80 pounds lighter.

J. W., United States

Acne

Your article on acne was of special interest to me, since this problem caused me much irritation when I was a teenager. (February 22, 1987) What helped me was a remedy that an old Bolivian Indian gave me. Here it is. Eat lots of natural yogurt, preferably unsweetened. Wash the face daily with water to which lemon juice has been added (one lemon to a liter of water). Apply honey to the face once a week, leaving it on for at least one hour.

J. D. S., Brazil

We are pleased that the remedy helped. "Awake!" does not endorse any particular remedy. What works for one person may not always work for another.—ED.

Hope for the Mentally Ill

We were extremely impressed by your articles on "Hope for the Mentally Ill." (September 8, 1986) Our group, Nova Scotia Friends of Schizophrenics, has been in existence since 1981. We have undergone considerable stress and problems as friends and relatives of loved ones who suffer from schizophrenia. We are gradually succeeding in getting the illness "out of the closet" where it can be faced and dealt with. Your research and accurate reporting in the three articles is excellent and goes a long way in helping to educate the public so that we can gain their understanding and support.

C. L. C., Canada

A Birth? Or an Abortion?

I read your articles on "A Birth? Or an Abortion?" (April 8, 1987) I found these excellent, well written and informative. I write not only as a reader but also as a physician to commend you. I face patients with decisions of an abortion. I will give this issue to those patients contemplating a termination. I write from experience in this matter. Not that I perform abortions but that at one time I was almost an abortion. My mother got pregnant just a few months after giving birth to my sister. Both she and my father elected that she have an abortion, since they couldn't afford to have another child so soon. On the way to the doctor's office, my mother changed her mind. I was born one year and two days after my sister. I am now a physician in obstetrics-gynecology, a husband, and a father. I hope these articles will help patients to see the importance of life to our heavenly Father.

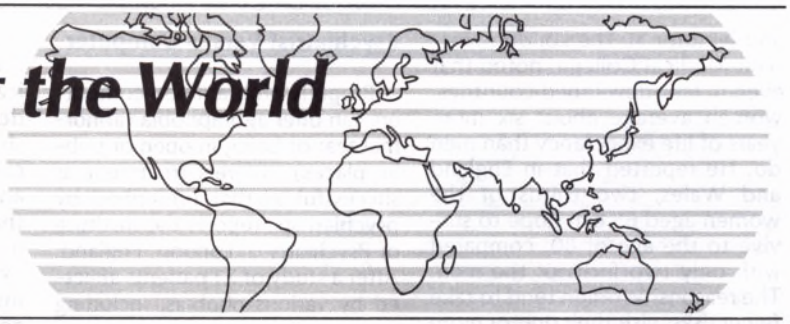
R. R., M.D., United States

Thankful for What I Have

I have just finished reading "Thankful for What I Have" by Lindsay Stead. (May 8, 1987) It is the most heart-tugging story I have read in a long time. It makes me feel very guilty now when I think of how I sometimes complain for no reason at all. The account brought tears to my eyes.

S. v. A., Zimbabwe

Watching the World



AIDS Threatens Asia

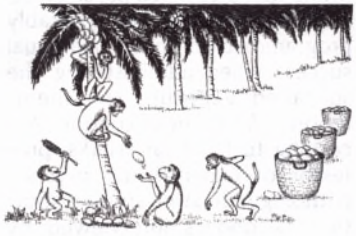
The deadly disease AIDS is threatening Asia with an epidemic, warns WHO (World Health Organization). "If we allow AIDS to get into the powderkeg of Asia, then we are really going to have a problem," says WHO director-general Halfdan Mahler, according to the international news service organization Reuters. Although North and South America now have the highest number of reported cases of AIDS and Asia the lowest, WHO fears that as the lethal virus spreads to the highly populated nations of Asia, governments will not be able to check its growth. "I am afraid you have a potential for a major catastrophe," says Mahler. "I am really afraid of that."

For the Birds

"More Israeli military aircraft have crashed following collisions with birds than have been downed in air fights," reports the German newspaper *Die Zeit*. Millions of large migratory birds, such as storks, herons, and pelicans, cross the country each year. To save energy when gliding, the fowls make use of the warm updrafts from the earth that carry them to heights of over 6,500 feet (2,000 m). The airplane accident rate, however, was reduced recently when ornithologists arranged for gliders to accompany huge flocks of birds in order more easily to warn jet pilots of their "feathered competitors."

"Monkey Business"

If you were in the coconut business, whom would you employ as pickers? In the southern province of Surat Thani, Thailand, one enterprising firm employs about 800 monkeys to do the job. Under a $4,000 (U.S.) grant provided by the Thai royal family, monkeys are given professional training on how to pick coconuts from trees. However, "not any old monkey will do," reports *The Economist*. Some do not have the temperament for the job, as is true of the 'white eyebrow' variety—they often prove to be too lazy. By contrast, a workaholic monkey can pick as many as a thousand coconuts daily, notes *The Economist*. If it were paid a salary proportionate to its productivity, it would earn more than a middle-ranking civil servant in the Thai government. In spite of a working life of only about five years, they are well worth the investment. They cost about $40 to train.



Children's Greatest Fears

A Melbourne psychologist recently surveyed over 3,000 children in Australia between the ages of 8 and 16 concerning their fears. *The Sydney Morning Herald* published his results and listed the fears expressed by the children. They are ranked: (1) being unable to breathe; (2) being hit by a car or a truck; (3) bombs and invasion; (4) earthquakes; (5) being burned; (6) falling from heights; (7) burglars; (8) snakes; (9) death or dead people; (10) electric shocks. Girls revealed nearly twice as many fears as did boys, and children from eight to ten years of age tended to be the most fearful.

Women Live Longer

It has long been known that women live longer than men. Past research has shown that, even in prenatal life, womb deaths, on the average, have been 50 percent higher among male fetuses than among female fetuses. Now, an article published in the *British Medical Journal* confirms that women *still* live longer than men. Alan Silman, the article's author

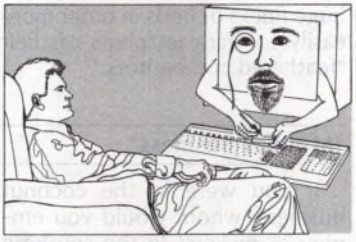
and lecturer at The London Hospital Medical College, noted that even in less-developed countries, women average about six more years of life expectancy than men do. He reported that in England and Wales, two thirds of the women aged 65 can hope to survive to the age of 80, compared with only two fifths of the men. The reasons? Women tend to take fewer risks, visit their doctor more often, and perhaps more importantly, they smoke less. In addition, heavy drinking is less common among women than among men. Yet, according to Mr. Silman, "there is a sting in the tail." The extra years that women survive are often of "poor quality," spent in social isolation and poverty.

Disasters Increase

A Swiss insurance company recorded 2,305 major disasters that struck worldwide between 1970 and 1985. According to statistics, "on the average, a large-scale catastrophe strikes somewhere in the world every three days, taking the lives of more than 20 persons or causing damage in excess of ten million dollars," says the German newspaper *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*. About 1.5 million people lost their lives within these 15 years, some 50 million were left homeless, and the combined estimated cost to national economies was 700 billion dollars. "Together with typhoons and floods, earthquakes are also occurring with increasing frequency, often reducing whole cities to rubble," the newspaper comments. "During the last 16 years, 90 such earthquakes were registered." Because of the increase in disasters, compensation claims made on insurance companies have multiplied.

Psychiatrist Versus Computer

Properly programmed computers can offer agoraphobia (abnormal fear of being in open or public places) sufferers treatment as successful as that prescribed by psychiatrists, reports the Institute of Psychiatry in London, England. After a study of 71 patients afflicted by various phobias, including



40 agoraphobics, researchers found that a qualified psychiatrist, a self-help manual, and a suitably programmed computer had equal success when administering the so-called exposure treatment, reports *The Times* of London. According to Dr. Isaac Marks, professor of experimental psychopathology, related studies show that "alcoholics interviewed by a computer admitted drinking more than alcoholics interviewed by a psychiatrist." Faced by mounting evidence that much of the psychiatrist's work "can be done remotely," doctors who believe their professional expertise is vital "may not find [these] results easy to swallow," concludes the report.

New Therapy?

Osteoreflexology is the name of a new therapy in the Soviet Union. What is it? The treatment of pain and certain diseases by using the sensitivity of bone tissue. Soviet doctors claim that bones can detect changes in blood pressure, temperature, and the composition of various chemicals, reports *The Times* of London. Their experiments have shown that bones relay complicated sensory signals to the brain and central nervous system and that bones of healthy people send information completely different from that of unhealthy ones. By inserting needles into a bone near an area of pain or in the vicinity of an affected organ, the doctors claim that they stimulate nerve impulses that, in turn, help in the treatment of rheumatism, arthritis, circulation disorders, and myopia.

Bibles in Japanese

The Japan Bible Society is publishing a new, 1987 Japanese translation of the Bible, called the *Common Bible*. Both Catholic and Protestant scholars worked on the translation, making it the third ecumenical Bible in the world after those of West Germany and Korea. Japan's financial newspaper *Nihon Keizai Shimbun* says that the translation took 18 years to complete because the scholars "endeavored to come up with a translation faithful to the original text as well as to integrate the interpretation of both parties." The Japan Bible Society hopes that the *Common Bible* will attract wide readership and increase their distribution of Bibles. In 1985 that Bible Society sold 180,000 complete Bibles. Five years ago, however, the Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society published the complete *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures* in Japanese. In 1985, 232,055 copies of the *New World Translation,* including the *Reference Bible,* were shipped from its printing factory in Japan.

When Your Head Aches

WHAT do you do for relief? A headache remedy that for some people may work just as well as medicine is an ice pack. Long used to relieve fevers and sprains, ice can also ease headache pain, according to a recent study. Of 90 patients who suffered from acute headaches, including migraines, use of an ice pack brought relief to 71 percent. Over half noted an immediate decrease in pain. Why does it work?

"A headache is caused by the swelling or dilation of blood vessels," explains Dr. Seymour Diamond, director of a headache clinic in Chicago. "Cold will cause these vessels to constrict." He recommends putting crushed ice in a plastic bag and pressing it against your forehead for 30 to 45 minutes while either sitting or lying down. Some relief may be felt immediately because of the numbing effect of the ice.

Awake!

October 8, 1987

Why Do Bad Things Happen to Good People?

The beauty, variety, and design in creation lead many to believe there must be an intelligent Creator. Yet, for many others, the biggest stumbling block to their belief in God is the existence of suffering and evil in the world. If 'God is love,' why does he allow so many bad things to happen to good people? Are there valid reasons for God's permitting evil? Is there reason to believe that evil will end in the near future?

WHY DO BAD THINGS HAPPEN TO GOOD PEOPLE?

At the base of the San Salvador volcano in El Salvador sits the town of San Ramón. On the morning of September 19, 1982, it was hit by three huge waves of mud. Fed by torrential rains, the first wave was nearly two stories high and carried boulders and tree trunks. Carving out a canyon 160 feet deep and 250 feet wide, it rolled down the side of the volcano, picking up momentum and size as it went. Reaching the bottom, it slammed into the adobe homes in its path.

Ana's home collapsed under the unrelenting wave in one terrifying instant. Her daughters grasped at Ana and cried, "Pray for us!" Then the mud engulfed them . . .

By chance, though, a roofing tile lodged itself in front of Ana's face, leaving her some breathing space. "I just kept calling and calling for help," she says. About four hours later, neighbors heard her cries and began to extricate her. She was found buried in mud up to her armpits, with the bodies of her daughters pressed up against her in the suffocating mud.

THE people of San Ramón were humble and friendly. Among the dead were a number of dedicated Christians, including a newlywed couple, Miguel and Cecilia, and a family of five whose bodies were found locked in an embrace.

Calamity, though, makes no distinction between good and bad people, a fact many find hard to reconcile with belief in a loving God. 'What kind of God,' they ask, 'would allow such a needless waste of life to occur? Or for that matter, how could an all-powerful Deity watch the elderly go unsheltered, hardworking families lose their life savings, young men and women in the prime of their lives being struck down by fatal illnesses—and do *nothing?*'

Harold S. Kushner, a Jewish rabbi, asked such questions when he learned that his son would die of a rare disease. The baffling injustice of this puzzled Kushner. "I had been a good person," he recalls. "I had tried to do what was right in the sight of God. . . . I believed that I was following God's ways and doing His work. How could this be happening to my family?" Out of his search for answers came his popular book *When Bad Things Happen to Good People.*

Kushner is just one of many theologians who have tried to answer the question of why God permits evil. In effect, man has placed God on trial. What verdict have Kushner and other theologians reached? Is their verdict a just one?

How SOME EXPLAIN GOD'S PERMISSION OF EVIL

GOD—guilty or innocent of authoring human suffering? This question looms large over calamities, whether personal or large-scale such as at San Ramón. Says the British journal *The Evangelical Quarterly:* "One of the greatest hindrances to belief in an all-powerful, all-loving God is the existence of apparently undeserved suffering in the world."

Some would therefore fault God for tolerating—if not actually causing—suffering. Wrote theologian John K. Roth: "History itself is God's indictment. . . . Do not take lightly what God's responsibility entails."

Many religious thinkers since Augustine, though, have argued eloquently for God's innocence. Seventeenth-century philosopher Leibniz coined a term for this endeavor: *theodicy,* or "justification of God."—See page 6.

Modern Theology Takes the Witness Stand

Efforts to clear God of blameworthiness have continued into modern times. Mary Baker Eddy, founder of the Christian Science Church, tried to resolve the problem by denying that evil exists in the first place! In *Science and Health With Key to the Scriptures,* she wrote: "God . . . never made man capable of sin . . . Hence, evil is but *an illusion,* and it has no real basis." —Italics ours.

Others have excused God on the basis of there being supposed virtue in suffering. A rabbi once said: "Suffering comes to ennoble man, to purge his thoughts of pride and superficiality." Along similar lines, some theologians have theorized that suffering on earth is "necessary to prepare us as moral personalities for the life of the future heavenly Kingdom."

But is it reasonable to believe that God brings or allows disasters so as to purge and punish people? Certainly those buried alive at San Ramón had little chance to improve their moral development. Did God sacrifice them so as to teach a lesson to the survivors? If so, what was the lesson?

Understandably, then, Kushner's book *When Bad Things Happen to Good People* has popular appeal. Because its author personally knew the pain of suffering, he attempted to comfort his readers, reassuring them that God is good. However, when it came to explaining just *why* God permits the innocent to suffer, Kushner's reasoning took a strange turn. "God wants the righteous to live peaceful, happy lives," explained Kushner, "but sometimes even He can't bring that about."

Kushner thus proposed a God who is not

wicked but weak, a God somewhat less than almighty. Curiously, though, Kushner still encouraged his readers to pray for divine help. But as to just how this supposedly limited God could be of any *real* assistance, Kushner is vague.

An Ancient Debate

The world's religious thinkers have thus failed to mount a convincing defense for God and to render real comfort to victims of evil. Perhaps what should be on trial is not God but theology! For these conflicting theories merely echo the hollow reasonings uttered nearly four millenniums ago. At that time a debate took place centering around the sufferings of a God-fearing man named Job, a wealthy and prominent Oriental who became the victim of a series of calamities. In rapid succession Job suffered the loss of his wealth, the death of his children, and, finally, he was afflicted with a loathsome disease.—Job 1:3, 13-19; 2:7.

Three so-called friends came to Job's aid. But rather than rendering comfort, they assailed him with theology. The gist of their argument was: 'God has done this to you, Job! Obviously you are being punished for having done something wrong! Besides, God has no faith at all in his servants.' (Job 4:7-9, 18) Job could not understand why God seemingly had 'set him up as a target for himself.' (Job 16: 11, 12) To his credit, Job maintained his integrity and never directly ascribed evil to God.

Nevertheless, Job's comforters had, in effect, 'pronounced God wicked,' by implying that every sufferer of calamity was being punished for evildoing. (Job 32:3) But God soon corrected their erroneous views.

Awake!® October 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 19

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 54 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Why Do Bad Things Happen to Good People? 3
How Some Explain God's Permission of Evil 4
Examining Evil From Augustine to Calvin 6
Evil and Suffering —How Will They End? 7

Also in This Issue

I Survived the Sinking of the *Bismarck* 10
A Flashing Burst of Color 15
Brazil's Purple Martin Treat 18
Young People Ask ... Is Lying All That Bad? 19
Crossword Puzzle 22
The Spanish Inquisition—How Could It Happen? ... 23
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Glaciers—"Awesome Ice" 31

Cover: FAO photo

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

25 cents (U.S.) a copy ***Yearly subscription (see language lists above)***

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$5.00	$2.50
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$7.00	$3.50
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures* used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $5.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

Examining Evil
From Augustine to Calvin

IN HIS book *The City of God,* fifth-century theologian Augustine argued that man, not God, was responsible for the existence of evil. Wrote Augustine: "God, the author of natures, not of vices, created man upright; but man, being of his own will corrupted and justly condemned, begot corrupted and condemned children . . . And thus, from the bad use of free will, there originated the whole train of evil."

Augustine

The bad use of free will may explain much, or most, of the evil that has afflicted people. However, could a disaster, such as at San Ramón, be blamed on man's free will? Are not many disastrous events caused by circumstances beyond the control of man? And even if man did willfully choose evil, why would a God of love allow evil to continue?

In the 16th century, French Protestant theologian John Calvin, like Augustine, believed that there are those "predestined [by God] to be children and heirs of the heavenly kingdom." However, Calvin took matters a step further, arguing that God also predestined individuals to be "recipients of his wrath" —condemned to eternal damnation!

Calvin's doctrine had frightening implications. If a man suffered any sort of misfortune, might that not indicate that he was among the damned? Furthermore, would not God be responsible for the actions of those he predestined? Calvin had thus unwittingly made God the Creator of sin! Calvin said that "man sins with the consent of a very prompt and inclined will."—*Instruction in Faith,* by John Calvin.

John Calvin

However, the concepts of free will and predestination proved hopelessly incompatible. Calvin could only gloss over the embarrassing contradiction by claiming that "the crudity of our mind could not indeed bear such a great clarity, nor our smallness comprehend such a great wisdom" as predestination.

EVIL AND SUFFERING —HOW WILL THEY END?

BITTER experiences often embitter. What, though, if there is a legitimate reason for human suffering? With that in mind, let us continue the account regarding Job. After three rounds of bitter debate have elapsed, a young man named Elihu speaks up. He says to Job: "You have said, 'My righteousness is more than God's.'" Yes, Job had been self-centered and self-justifying. "Look!" says Elihu. "In this you have not been in the right, I answer you; for God is much more than mortal man."—Job 35:2; 33:8-12.

God has left abundant evidence that he is *good.* (Acts 14:17; Romans 1:20) So is the existence of evil any reason to challenge the goodness of God? Answers Elihu: "Far be it from the true God to act wickedly, and the Almighty to act unjustly!"—Job 34:10.

God—Powerless Against Evil?

Could it be, then, that God was simply not powerful enough to intervene on Job's behalf or that of anyone else? On the contrary! Out of a fear-inspiring windstorm, God now speaks for himself, powerfully confirming his almightiness. "Where did you happen to be when I founded the earth?" he demands of Job. Why, far from being limited, he speaks of himself as the One who can control the seas and govern the heavens and its living creatures.—Job 38:4, 8-10, 33; 39:9; 40:15; 41:1.

True, God does not explain to Job why he permitted him to suffer. But "should there be any contending of a faultfinder with the Almighty?" God asks. "Really, will you invalidate my justice? Will you pronounce me wicked in order that you may be in the right?" (Job 40:2, 8) How presumptuous, then, to blame God for the world's ills or fabricate philosophical defenses for him! As Job is now moved to do, such ones would do well to "make a retraction" of their contradictory theories.—Job 42:6.

Issues to Be Settled

Job did not realize that his sufferings involved a number of monumental issues that had been raised shortly after man's creation. At that time a rebellious spirit creature called Satan ("Resister") had led man into sin. God had commanded Adam and Eve to avoid eating from "the tree of the knowledge of good and bad." They had to respect God's right to determine what was good or bad for them. The Resister, however, planted doubts in Eve's mind, saying: "Is it really so that God said you must not eat from every tree of the garden?" Next he contradicted God: "You positively will not die. For God knows that in the very day of your eating from it your eyes are bound to be opened and you are bound to be like God."—Genesis 2:17; 3:1-5.

Satan's slanderous words raised imposing issues: Was God a liar when he decreed death for eating the forbidden fruit? Even

so, what right did he have to rob his creatures of independence and to impose his standards upon them? Was he not a selfish God, holding back what was good from his creatures? Could it be that independence from God was desirable?

Killing off the rebels would have done little more than raise more questions. Only by allowing independence from God to go unchecked for a sufficient period of time can it be proved—once for all time—that Satan's offer of independence is an invitation to disaster. Yes, "the whole world is lying in the power of the wicked one," Satan the Devil, not in the power of God. (1 John 5:19) Disease, injustice, economic slavery, heartache—all of these have been the fruitage of man's choosing independence from God and coming under satanic rule! And in spite of any technological progress, world conditions continue to worsen—often *because* of modern technology.

God's toleration of all this indescribable misery, however, does not make him unrighteous. On the contrary, man's unrighteousness has 'brought God's righteousness to the fore.' (Romans 3:5) How?

Suffering Eliminated—Forever!

"All creation keeps on groaning together and being in pain together until now," said the apostle Paul. (Romans 8:22) Yes, 6,000 disastrous years of human independence have shown the words of Jeremiah 10:23 to be true: "It does not belong to man who is walking even to direct his step." Soon, though, God will righteously intervene and begin directing the affairs of mankind.

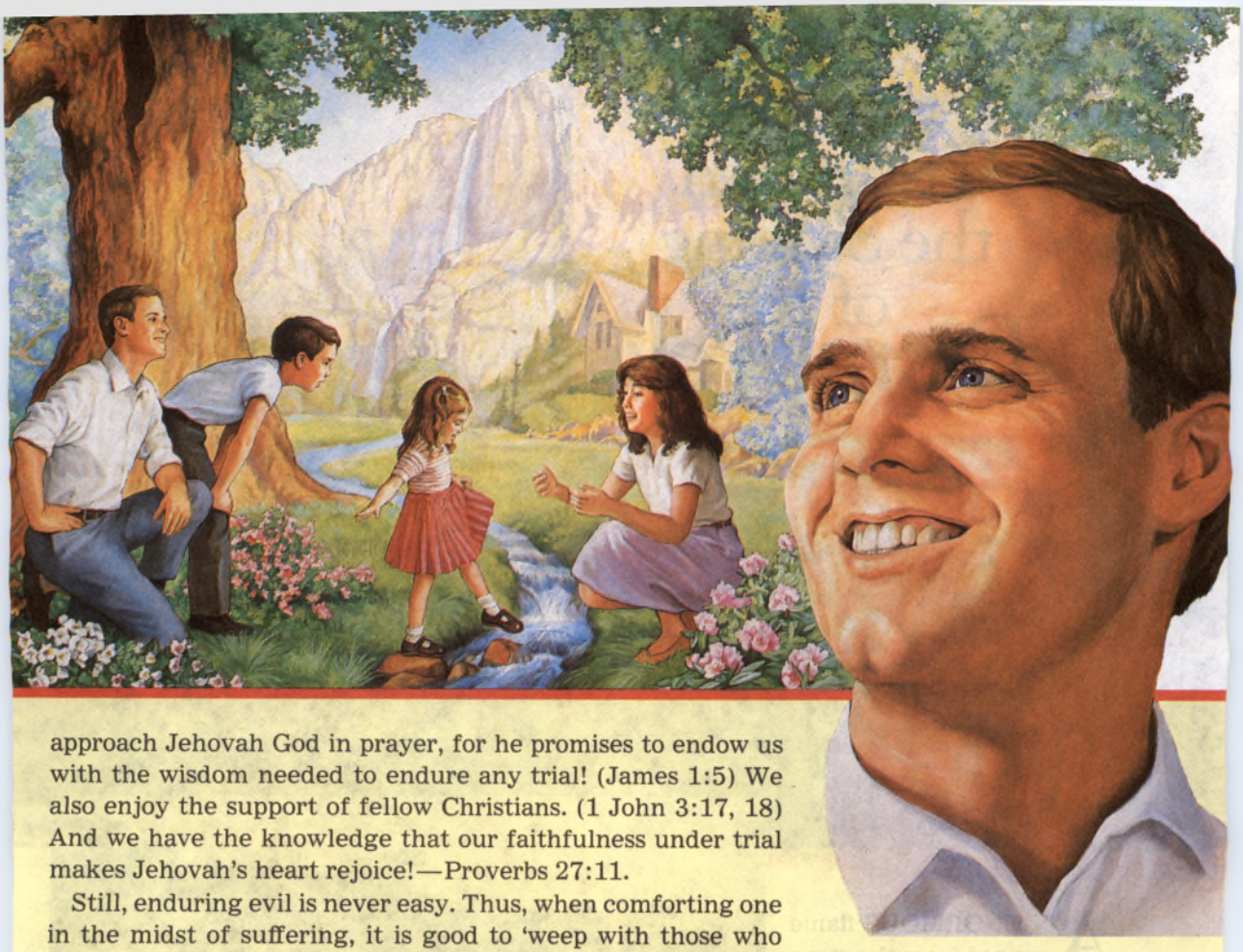
With the catastrophic consequences of human independence so thoroughly exposed, God can then eliminate all the things that have caused suffering: wars, disease, crime, violence—even death itself! (Psalm 46:8, 9; Isaiah 35:5, 6; Psalm 37: 10, 11; John 5:28, 29; 1 Corinthians 15:26) It is as the apostle John heard in a heavenly vision: "God . . . will wipe out every tear from their eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be anymore. The former things have passed away."—Revelation 21:3, 4.

Interestingly, God ended Job's sufferings by restoring his health and wealth and by blessing him with a large family. (Job 42: 10-17) Similarly, the Bible promises us: "The sufferings of the present season do not amount to anything in comparison with the glory that is going to be revealed . . . The creation itself also will be set free from enslavement to corruption and have the glorious freedom of the children of God." (Romans 8:18, 21) Wickedness will thus be virtually erased from our memories! —Compare Isaiah 65:17.

Living With Evil

Until that freedom comes, we must endure living in a wicked world, not expecting God to shield us from personal calamity. Satan the Devil raised a false hope when he enticed Jesus Christ to jump off the temple, twisting the Bible text at Psalm 91:10-12, which says: "No calamity will befall you . . . For he will give his own angels a command concerning you, to guard you." Jesus, though, rejected any notion of receiving miraculous physical protection. (Matthew 4:5-7) God promises to guard only our spiritual well-being.

True Christians therefore do not become "enraged against Jehovah himself," even when tragedy strikes. (Proverbs 19:3) For "time and unforeseen occurrence befall" Christians too. (Ecclesiastes 9:11) Yet, we are not helpless. We have the hope of living forever in a righteous new world, where evil will no longer exist. We can always



approach Jehovah God in prayer, for he promises to endow us with the wisdom needed to endure any trial! (James 1:5) We also enjoy the support of fellow Christians. (1 John 3:17, 18) And we have the knowledge that our faithfulness under trial makes Jehovah's heart rejoice!—Proverbs 27:11.

Still, enduring evil is never easy. Thus, when comforting one in the midst of suffering, it is good to 'weep with those who weep'—and offer practical assistance. (Romans 12:15) Ana, mentioned at the outset, was thus helped to recover from disaster. She is one of Jehovah's Witnesses and found that her fellow Christians were more than willing to assist, offering her temporary housing. Even though she occasionally feels depressed, she finds refuge in the Bible's hope. "I know my children will come back in the resurrection," states Ana. Her faith in the God of goodness is thus stronger than ever.

If you are going through a period of suffering, ask Jehovah's Witnesses to help you with your questions and doubts. From them you can also obtain the book *You Can Live Forever in Paradise on Earth,* which has the helpful chapters "Why Has God Permitted Wickedness?" and "You Are Involved in a Vital Issue." True, right now bad things happen to good people, but soon all of that is to change. Find out more details for yourself by contacting Jehovah's Witnesses in your neighborhood or write to the publishers of this magazine.

In God's righteous new world, evil will be but a fading memory

I Survived the Sinking of the *Bismarck*

Photos: Bundesarchiv, Koblenz, Germany

AN ENORMOUS flame surged from the stern of the British warship *Hood*. Then a column of fire swept upward to maybe a thousand feet, releasing a cloud of dark smoke. As the cloud swelled out and spread into the sky, incandescent debris fell from it into the sea.

When the cloud cleared, nothing remained of the 42,000-ton British battle cruiser *Hood,* the pride of the Royal Navy. A shell from the German battleship *Bismarck* had hit an ammunition magazine. Thus, at six o'clock in the morning of May 24, 1941, off the coast of Iceland, over 1,400 British seamen perished, with only 3 surviving.

Whether friend or foe, none who witnessed this terrible scene could remain indifferent. True, the crew of the *Bismarck,* where I was in command of an antiaircraft battery, were elated over the victory. However, I noticed that some

of the sailors around me had tears in their eyes as the British ship sank. They had fellow feeling for the seamen who were losing their lives.

The "Bismarck" Under Attack

On the evening of May 18 we had left Gotenhafen, today the Baltic port of Gdynia, in Poland. Our group of ships was on a mission to raid Allied commercial shipping in the North Atlantic. This was part of "Operation Rheinübung," or Rhineland Exercise, which had been worked out by the German admiralty.

In charge of our mission was Admiral of the Fleet Lütjens. His flagship was the pride of the German Navy, one of the most powerful battleships afloat, the *Bismarck*. It displaced over 50,000 tons and had a crew of more than 2,000. Learning that we had entered the North Atlantic, British ships set out a couple of days later to intercept the *Bismarck*.

When we sank the *Hood* on May 24, every available British ship set out to sink the *Bismarck*. That evening the British aircraft carrier *Victorious* launched a torpedo-plane attack. I was in command of a 20-millimeter antiaircraft gun situated toward the starboard bow. To this day I can still see those British planes skimming in just above the waves, directly facing our powerful fire. One torpedo hit us but caused only slight damage. We managed to shake off pursuit for over 30 hours.

During the morning of May 26, however, a British Catalina reconnaissance plane located us again. The British aircraft carrier *Ark Royal* sent off two strike forces that launched 13 torpedoes at us. This time the *Bismarck* was hit by two of them, one of which severely damaged the rudder. As a result, we lost control of our course and began going around in an immense circle. Despite this, I was convinced that nothing serious could happen to us. But the succeeding hours were to prove me wrong.

The "Bismarck"—A Sitting Duck

On the morning of May 27, we were surrounded by British warships. These opened fire, literally raining down death and destruction. We were hit by at least eight torpedoes and several hundred shells. Although reduced to a sitting duck, the *Bismarck* obstinately stayed afloat.

The situation on board was desperate. The lifeboats were out of service, having been heavily damaged by repeated shelling and air attacks. Utter desolation reigned on all decks. Tangled metal was scattered all over the place. Black smoke belched from gaping holes in the deck. Fires were raging uncontrolled. The dead and wounded lay everywhere.

The order was given to abandon ship. The survivors all crammed to the back of the ship, life jackets and safety belts firmly attached. I was among those who leaped into the sea, with the wind behind us so as to avoid being dashed against the hull by the waves. Once in the sea, our only thought was to swim away as fast as possible to avoid being sucked down as the ship gradually sank and finally disappeared.

Three Days Alone in the Ocean

Our group was soon scattered by the ocean swells. The day was drawing to an end. The British ships disappeared on the horizon. In all directions, as far as the eye could see, were pieces of floating debris. When night fell only Hermann, who had worked in the engine room, and I were left together in the water.

The sea got rougher and the waves surged higher. Suddenly I realized that I had lost Hermann. There wasn't a sign of

him anywhere. I panicked. I was cold and frightened. We had been trained to be ready to die for the fatherland, but at that moment the idea of dying a hero's death did not appeal to me at all. I wanted to live, even alone in the middle of a heaving, hostile, black ocean.

A stream of memories flooded my mind. I recalled my childhood in Recklinghausen, a coal-mining town in North Rhine-Westphalia. I thought of my dear father, who was a miner, and of my mother, my sister, and my three brothers. Our family were all Protestants, but Father always said that the churches did not put Bible teachings into practice. When I became a teenager, I went to live with my uncle in the country, and he sent me to an agricultural college, where I graduated.

When war broke out, I was enrolled in the navy in Gotenhafen, where my military training started. When I embarked on the "Bismarck," I was the only son left in the family. One of my brothers died from sickness, another lost his life in the mine, and yet another was killed during the invasion of Poland.

The cold brought me back to reality. There I was in the middle of the ocean. I felt a sudden urge to pray, for I did not want to die. Overwhelmed with fear and aching all over, I remembered that my grandmother had taught me the Lord's Prayer. It was the only prayer I knew, and I repeated it incessantly during the night. As the hours passed, my fear subsided and a calm came over me.

When at long last day dawned, I was completely exhausted. The sea got rougher and I started vomiting. Then, overcome with fatigue, I began to doze and eventually went off to sleep. Another day dragged by, with alternating periods of wakefulness and sleep. Then the second night set in. By then I was suffering severe thirst, my limbs were stiff from the cold, and I started getting cramps. I thought the night would never end.

I started praying again, begging God to help me survive. Dawn broke at last, bringing a third day. I fell into a semicoma, losing all notion of time, and in that state I just made out the sound of an engine before I lost consciousness.

Back on Dry Land

I came to in an unfamiliar setting. Slowly things came into focus, and I distinguished a nurse bending over me and vaguely heard her saying: "You've been asleep for three days. I'm sure you would like something to eat now." It gradually dawned on me that I was still alive. Six days had gone by: three in the ocean, where I had drifted over 75 miles before being picked up by a German ship, and three more unconscious in a hospital at La Baule-Escoublac, a French seaside resort on the Atlantic Coast.

It took a month for my body to return to normal proportions; I was completely bloated after three long days in the ocean. I was granted leave, and on my way home to Germany, I learned that only 110 of the *Bismarck's* more than 2,000 crew members had survived. Most had been rescued by the British cruiser *Dorsetshire*.

Homecoming

As I neared home, my heart started beating wildly. I was unaware that the authorities had informed my parents that I was lost at sea. My father caught sight of me first. He hugged me tightly, took my face in his rough hands and said: "My son, you were dead, and now you've come back to us!" He burst into tears, and sobbing, we

My wife and me, reading the Bible together

embraced. He took me over to my mother, who was lying on the sofa, paralyzed. Unable to move or utter a word, her lips said: "My son, my boy . . . " I fell to my knees at her side and wept like a baby.

During the next three years, I followed the pattern of coming home on leave and going back to war. Then, on November 24, 1944, my regiment, the Marine Light Infantry, was captured by the Americans. I remained in captivity until 1947 and on release returned home. Four days later Mother died. It was as though she had managed to survive long enough to see me again before passing away.

In Germany I noticed many changes. Hunger and unemployment were everywhere. The black market held the people in its grip. Inflation was skyrocketing. Poverty was our daily lot for a number of years.

In the French Foreign Legion

Finally, in 1951, I made a decision that influenced the course of my life for the following 18 years. I took the train to Strasbourg, a French town just across the Rhine from Germany. There I joined the French Foreign Legion. I was trained as a parachutist and was sent to Indochina, of which present-day Vietnam was a part.

In July 1954 our regiment left for Algeria, where the stage was being set for the war for independence. We were parachuted all over the territory, day and night, to assist the soldiers of the French contingent. In 1957 I was wounded and obliged to spend three months in a hospital in Constantine, eastern Algeria. In May 1961 my regiment was withdrawn from Algeria, and we embarked for a new destination, Madagascar.

A Changed Life

My life in Madagascar had absolutely nothing in common with my experiences of the previous 20 years. I had almost forgotten what peace and quiet felt like. In Madagascar I started to appreciate life again. I took an interest in my surroundings: the blue sea with its shoals of multicolored fish, the local plantations, and the majestic mountains. Here I met

Marisoa, the girl who was to become my wife.

When I obtained my military pension in 1969, we set up home on the small island of Nosy-Be, five miles off the northwest coast of Madagascar. We stayed there five years but then had to return to France for family reasons. We settled in Saint-Chamond, an industrial town 30 miles from Lyons.

Not long afterward, Marisoa accepted a Bible study with two young Jehovah's Witnesses who visited. I would sit in a nearby room and listen to all that was being said. Yet, when my wife invited me to sit in, I would tell her: "I have done so many bad things. I just know God can never forgive me for what I did as a soldier." A little later my wife offered me a Bible in German, my mother tongue, and obtained a *Watchtower* subscription for me.

But I systematically refused to attend Christian meetings, thinking that only people who had committed minor sins could attend them or approach God in prayer. However, Marisoa insisted that I accompany her to the Memorial celebration of Christ's death, held once a year. I finally gave in, making her promise that she would not bring the subject up again once we returned home. Yet, I had to admit that I was deeply touched by the warm welcome I received that evening.

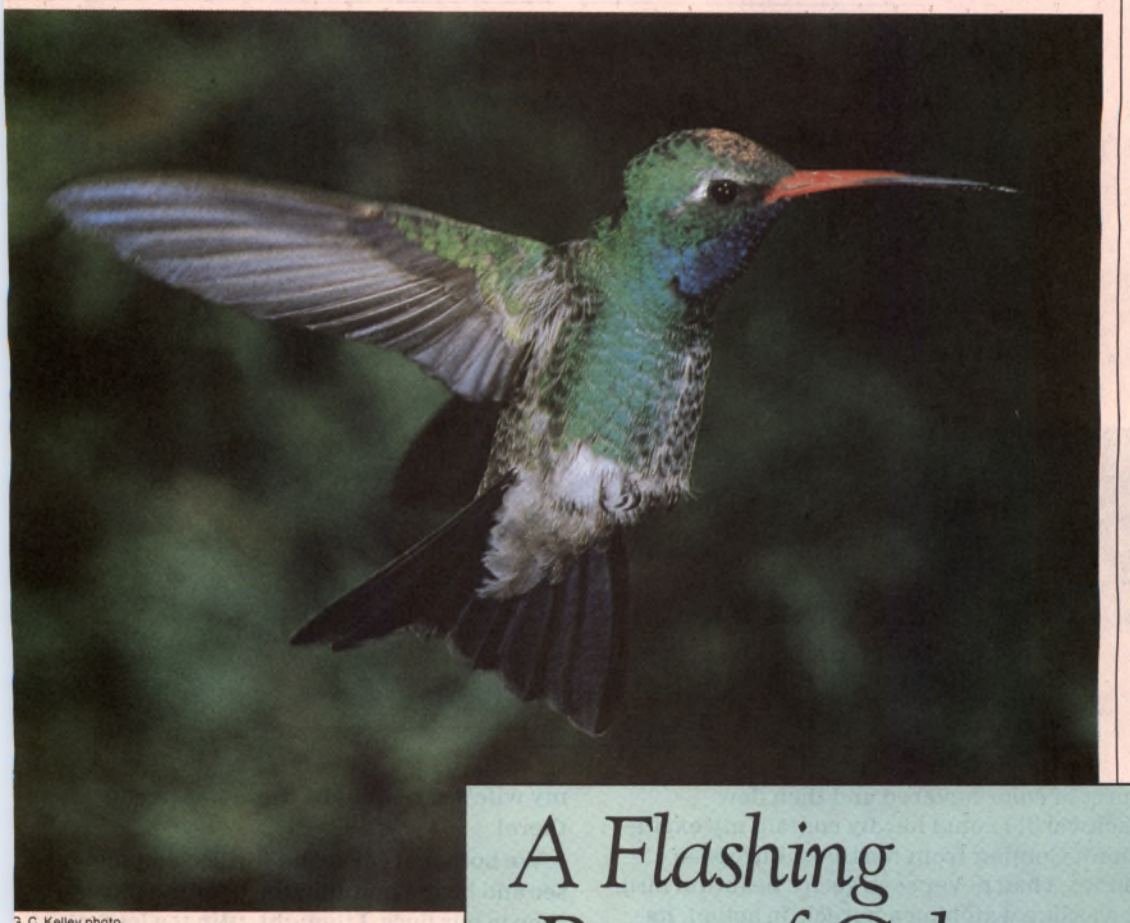
From that time on, contrary to all my intentions, I went with my wife to the meetings at the local Kingdom Hall. Why? Because I felt at ease with these people. I was impressed by their warm love for one another and by their teachings, based on the Bible. I accepted a Bible study, and in 1976 my wife and I symbolized our dedication to Jehovah by water baptism. After that, my mind dwelt less on past experiences, and I spent my time helping others learn Bible truths. Thus, with the expansion of our preaching activity in mind, we returned to Madagascar in 1978.

Roads are few and far between in certain parts of the island, but we cheerfully set off along the dusty tracks, knowing that on arriving at our destination, there would be many a hearing ear. We walked from six to ten miles daily in temperatures of over 104° F. Sometimes by the time we arrived home, our stomachs and Bible book bags were empty! In three months I placed a thousand books, and we helped several persons to share our faith. Unfortunately, we had to leave Madagascar in 1982 because of health problems, and we returned to France.

The horrors I have experienced sometimes still run through my mind. But I know that the time will come when such memories, including those terrible days and nights spent during and after the sinking of the *Bismarck,* will enter my mind no more. Jehovah's promise will be fulfilled: "For here I am creating new heavens and a new earth; and the former things will not be called to mind, neither will they come up into the heart."—Isaiah 65:17.—*As told by Wilhelm Wieck.*

In Our Next Issue

- *Depression—You Can Win the Fight!*
- *Why Did Mom and Dad Split Up?*
- *The United States Constitution and Jehovah's Witnesses*



B. C. Kelley photo

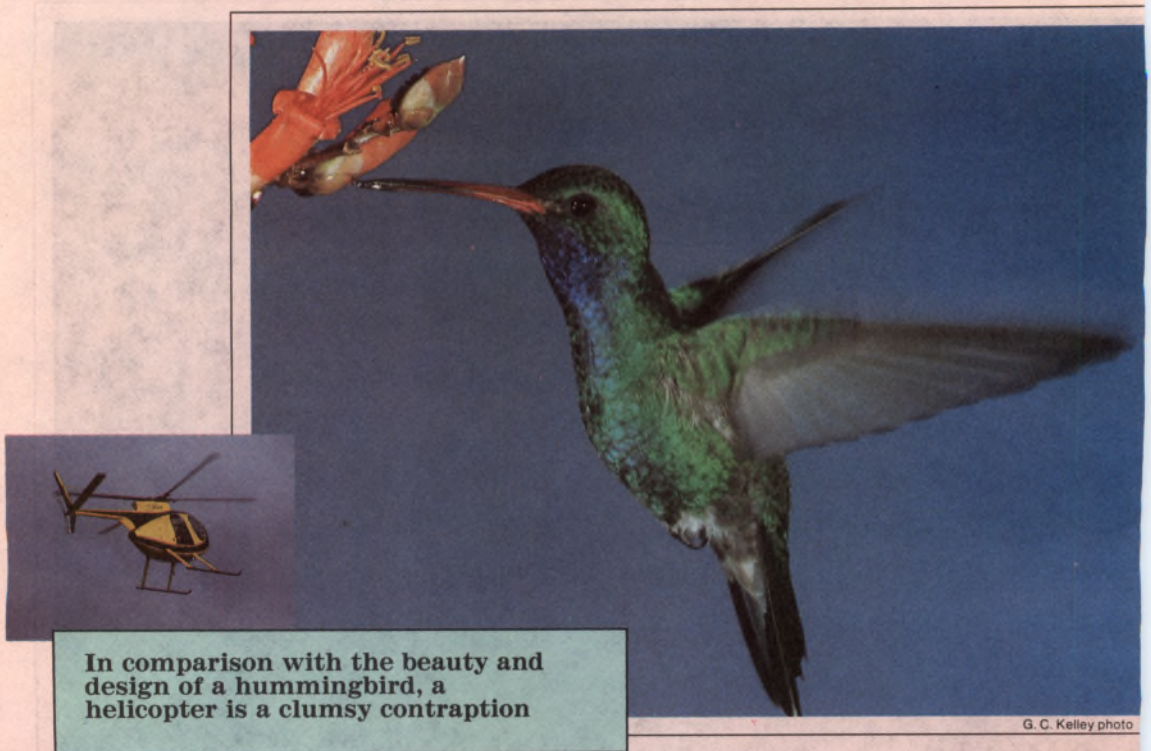
A Flashing Burst of Color

I WAS a European on my first visit to California. On the first morning in Indian Wells, I stepped out into the brilliant desert sun. The flowers were blooming on the patio. As I stood there, I suddenly heard a loud humming noise as what I thought was a large insect went zooming past me.

Within moments there was the sound and the blur once again. I thought it must be some kind of extra-large California bee warning me to get away from its flight path. I called to my host, "What was that that just buzzed me?" "Oh, that was only a hummingbird. We have hundreds of them around here."

Just a hummingbird! That triggered my senses—here was a creature I had heard about but had never seen. I watched carefully and suddenly sighted this tiny, whirring phenomenon poising in front of a flower. This little bird, hanging in midair, darted back and forth to dip its long bill into the precious nectar that was its source of vital energy.

I stood there entranced as the flashing



In comparison with the beauty and design of a hummingbird, a helicopter is a clumsy contraption

G. C. Kelley photo

burst of color hovered and then flew backward! I could hardly contain my excitement. Coming from northern European climes, I had never seen such a beautiful bird. It was like watching a miracle in action. Its iridescent feathers gave off colors that were hard to define—reds, purples, and greens with a kind of metallic sheen. The sheer beauty of it made me call my wife to come and behold such a unique creation.

I could resist no longer. I went for my camera and started looking for angles and light in order to get a good action shot. In the corner of the patio was an artificial feeder in the form of a red, bell-shaped flower. Inside was man-made nectar—a weak sugar solution. Since there was insufficient light in that corner, I asked my wife to hold the feeder at arm's length out in the sun. As she stood still, the bird eventually came zooming toward her and started darting in and out, taking its fill of liquid energy. As it got confident with this new location, it even investigated my wife's ear—maybe there was nectar there!

We both marveled and thrilled actually to see and hear a hummingbird for the first time in our lives. I thought, 'What a lesson! Wherever we are in the world, we should never take any of our own local miracles for granted.' And my friend had said, "Only a hummingbird"!

Hummingbird Versus Helicopter

As I observed its maneuvers, I could not help but think that the nearest man has got to the design of a hummingbird is a helicopter. And yet, what a clumsy contraption it seems in comparison!

Ever since that day some five years ago, I have been intrigued by the beauty and design of the hummingbird. And I have discovered more about these tiny bundles of design and energy. For example, according to the book *Hummingbirds: Their Life and Behav-*

G. C. Kelley photo

It is the only bird that can fly backward

ior, there are "approximately 338 species and 116 genera of the family Trochilidae, the smallest birds in the world." In fact, some are so small they weigh less than a British penny or U.S. cent and are about the size of a bumblebee. The largest are about eight inches in length.

Returning to the helicopter comparison—I checked with Sikorsky Aircraft to find out how many revolutions per minute the rotor blades make as a helicopter flies. The answer was between 200 and 300 revolutions per minute. And the hummingbird? While hovering, some of them achieve a wingbeat of 78 times *per second,* or 4,680 beats *per minute!*

So Much to Learn

Some of the names it is given in other languages are very expressive. The Portuguese call it *beija flor,* which means "flower kisser." The Spanish call it *chupaflor,* which means "flowersucker." In Italian it is *colibrì,* and it is also known as the *uccello mosca,* the "flybird," because of its tiny size.

Have you ever seen a hummingbird in your

D. Biggins/U.S. Fish & Wildlife Service

Some weigh no more than a penny

G. C. Kelley photo

Some hummingbirds have a wingbeat of 78 times per second, while a helicopter's rotor turns only 4 or 5 times a second

part of the world? Unless you live in the Western Hemisphere, you will not have that privilege. Its range stretches from Alaska down through most of the United States, across Mexico and the Caribbean, and into South America. But whether you have seen one or not, you can imagine my thrill at seeing and hearing my very first hummingbird.

In all parts of the earth there are amazing creatures that are stunning with their design and beauty. Even those we may consider to be ugly still display awesome design. Yet, to know all of them and understand them is too big a task for so short a life. Just to know everything there is to know about hummingbirds would take years of study and observation. And yet, some say that everlasting life would be boring—even with so much to learn!

I am reminded of the ancient poetic words, originally written in Hebrew: "How many your works are, O Jehovah! All of them in wisdom you have made. The earth is full of your productions." (Psalm 104:24) It is no wonder that when the psalmist noted such creations as "the birds of heaven," he was moved to add: "O Jehovah our Lord, how majestic your name is in all the earth!" —Psalm 8:8, 9.

Brazil's PURPLE MARTIN *Treat*

AS SUMMER ends in central Brazil, the inhabitants of such cities as Barretos, Bauru, and Rio Claro get a special treat from watching the birds. Their senses respond to the sights and sounds of thousands of migratory purple martins roosting in the trees of their public plazas. Each day as the sun sets, these birds fly in from the fields, converging en masse, staking their perches for the night. In so doing, they shower the excited bird-watchers with a blizzard of tiny feathers. Although a recent drought caused the martins to change their roosting habits, it was calculated that some 50,000 of them occupied one plaza alone in Bauru. Television stations made it possible for the spectacle to be seen throughout Brazil.

Young People Ask. . .

Is Lying All That Bad?

Michelle knew that her folks would get angry when they learned she had broken a cherished knickknack. She was in no mood, though, for punishment or a stern lecture. So she found a simple means of averting her parents' wrath: she accused her younger brother of breaking it.

LYING—many teenagers feel that it is all right under certain circumstances. Some say they would lie in order to hinder some criminal action, to protect the innocent, or to save a life. Such situations, however, are rare in real life. Far more often, youths resort to lies for the same reason Michelle did: to escape punishment or to get out of some uncomfortable situation.

Donald told his mother that he had cleaned his room when, in reality, he had thrown everything under the bed. Along similar lines, Richard told his parents that he got a failing grade, not because he did not study, but because he 'did not get along with his teacher.' Most unconvincing.

Still, you might feel that because these were not malicious lies, no harm was done. 'What's the harm in a white lie?' you may say. And since dictionaries define a white lie as a "polite or harmless lie," telling a white lie may not seem so bad.

In the book *The Importance of Lying,* H. L. Mencken is quoted as giving yet another reason why some resort to the lie: "What ails the truth is that it is mainly uncomfortable, and often dull. The human mind seeks something more amusing and caressing." Not surprisingly, then, people often do not really want to hear the truth, preferring instead "to have their ears tickled." (2 Timothy 4:3) The greatest teacher who ever lived, Jesus Christ, found this to be true. "If I speak truth," he said to the people of his day, "why is it you do not believe me?" (John 8:46) How tempting it is at times to tell pleasing lies instead of unpopular truths!

But does the fact that a lie may be attractive or over a trivial matter or even well meant mean that it is *right?*

God's View of Lying

The tendency of humans to lie was noted back in Bible times. Said the psalmist: "Untruth they keep speaking one to the other; with a smooth lip they keep speaking even with a double heart." Self-interest lurked behind their lies. They said: "With our tongue we shall prevail. Our [lying] lips are with us. Who will be a master to us?" Note, though, how God felt about their lying ways: "Jehovah will cut off all smooth lips, the tongue speaking great things." —Psalm 12:2-4.

Yes, "a false tongue" was and is one of the things that "Jehovah does hate." (Proverbs 6:16, 17) After all, it is Satan the Devil himself who is "the father of the lie." (John 8:44) Interestingly, though, the

Bible makes no distinction between lies and 'white lies.' It simply says, "No lie originates with the truth." (1 John 2:21) That is why a "devious person is a detestable thing to Jehovah, but His intimacy is with the upright ones." (Proverbs 3:32) Yes, Jehovah simply will not have a close relationship with someone who is dishonest.

The God-fearing youth thus cannot view *any* kind of lying as acceptable. As a youngster named Tyrone puts it: "It is like a true-or-false test. Something is either right or wrong."

Lying—Why It Is Harmful

Why, though, is lying so wrong? Might not a lie save you from getting punished? Perhaps. But what happens if the lie is exposed? Then it has merely postponed punishment. Young André also observes: "It makes you mad when someone tells you something and you find out later that it was a lie." Yes, lying stirs up anger and resentment. And when the ones lied to are your parents—a serious dose of discipline can result.

No wonder the Bible says: "The getting of treasures by a false tongue is an exhalation driven away." (Proverbs 21:6) In other words, any advantages a lie may bring are as short lived as vapor.

Lies are often unconvincing and may merely delay punishment until they are exposed

Lying and Your Conscience

Lying also harms the liar himself. Michelle (mentioned at the outset) managed to convince her parents that it was her brother who had broken the knickknack. However, she later felt compelled to confess her wrongdoing to them. Michelle explains: "I felt really bad most of the time. My parents had put trust in me, and I let them down."

Michelle's bad conscience well illustrates a principle stated by the apostle Paul. In Romans 2:14, 15 he indicates that God has placed within mankind the faculty of conscience. Paul explains how this works, saying: "Their conscience is bearing witness with them and, between their own thoughts, they are being accused or even excused." In Michelle's case her conscience 'bore witness' to the fact that lying was wrong and 'accused her'—tormenting her with guilt feelings.

Of course, an individual can ignore his conscience, hardening it. An article in the journal *Adolescence* indicated, for example, that younger teens tend to view lying as wrong. But as they get older, their view of lying hardens. "Fifteen-year-olds," said the article, "perceive lying as sometimes not wrong with greater frequency than do twelve-year-olds." Evidently, the more a person practices lying, the more he is in danger of becoming 'marked in his conscience as with a branding iron.'—1 Timothy 4:2.

Developing "an Honest Conscience"

By way of contrast, the apostle Paul could say of himself and his companions: "We trust we have an honest conscience." (Hebrews 13:18) Paul's conscience would not permit him to resort to lies or half-truths. Is your conscience likewise sensitive to untruth? If not, train it by studying the Bible and Bible-based literature, such as this magazine and its companion, *The Watchtower*.

A youth named Bobby has done so, with good effects. On occasion these publications have dealt with a problem he has

been having. Rather than covering over the problem with a web of lies, he has been prodded by his conscience to approach his parents and honestly discuss the matter. At times this has resulted in his receiving discipline. He nevertheless admits that he 'feels better inside' for having been honest.

Granted, as one youth put it: "If you tell the truth, it will hurt your parents." However, they will respect your telling them the truth. It will demonstrate to them that you are growing up and realize you are accountable for your actions.

Confessing a wrong is not easy, but your parents will respect your honesty

Another aid in developing an honest conscience is to be careful in choosing friends. "He that is walking with wise persons will become wise, but he that is having dealings with the stupid ones will fare badly," says Proverbs 13:20. Observes Bobby: "A friend you lie along with will get you in trouble. He is not a friend you can trust." The psalmist thus wisely said: "I have not sat with men of untruth." (Psalm 26:4) Try to find friends who respect godly standards.

Finally, if tempted to lie, remember the standards Jehovah God sets for his own friends. "O Jehovah, who will be a guest in your tent?" asked the psalmist. "He who is . . . speaking the truth in his heart." (Psalm 15:1, 2) Reflecting on what a privilege it is to have a relationship with God motivates one to be honest!

Speaking the truth is not always easy. You may even be in a situation where "a group of people tell a lie, and you have to tell the truth," as a youngster named Mark puts it. But the one who makes a decision to tell the truth will maintain a good conscience, a good relationship with his real friends, and best of all, a good relationship with his Creator. A youth named Steven thus sums the matter up nicely when he says: "The fact that others tell lies does not mean that *you* have to!"

crossword puzzle

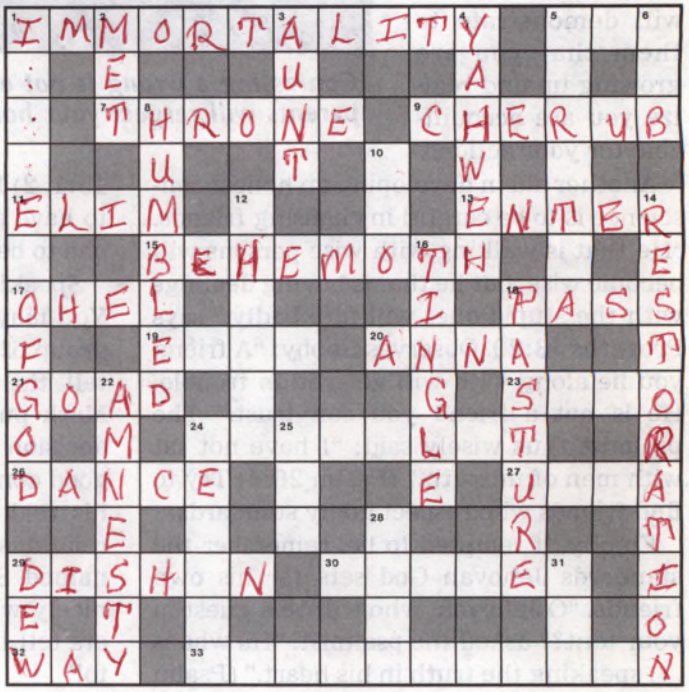
Clues Across

1. This distinguishes anointed Christians from the angels (1 Corinthians 15:50-53)
5. Offering this animal in sacrifice was considered disgusting worship (Isaiah 66:3)
7. Signifies a seat of ruling authority (1 Kings 2:12)
9. High-ranking angelic creature mentioned some 90 times in the Bible (Ezekiel 10:7)
11. A site of springs and palm trees where the Israelites camped after crossing the Red Sea (Exodus 15:27)
13. Go into (Hebrews 9:6)
15. Herbivorous animal mentioned only in Job (Job 40:15)
17. A son of Governor Zerubbabel (1 Chronicles 3:19, 20)
18. Go by (Numbers 20:17)
19. This well received its name because of a quarrel over it (Genesis 26:20)
20. Aged prophetess who was privileged to see the child Jesus (Luke 2:36-38)
21. Incite (Isaiah 19:2)
23. A city fortified by Rehoboam (2 Chronicles 11:5, 7)
24. A place settled by Benjamites after the Babylonian exile (Nehemiah 11:31, 34)
26. Endorsed as a means of honoring and praising Jehovah (Psalm 150:4)
27. An Asherite whose three sons were valiant warriors (1 Chronicles 7:39, 40)
29. One of seven "sheiks of the Horite, the sons of Seir" (Genesis 36:20, 21)
30. A family head involved in the attestations to the confession contract drawn up during Nehemiah's governorship (Nehemiah 10:14, 24)
32. Early Christianity was known as The --- (Acts 9:2)
33. Result of disobedience (Deuteronomy 11:26-28)

Clues Down

1. The "new creation" [3 words] (Galatians 6:15, 16)
2. Came together (Amos 3:3)
3. The wife of one's uncle (Leviticus 18:14)
4. Alternate form of the divine name
5. One of Haman's ten sons (Esther 9:8, 10)
6. Where David's men twice struck down giant Philistine warriors (2 Samuel 21:18, 19)
8. Made lower in status or prestige (Luke 14:11)
10. Seventeenth letter of Greek alphabet
12. Christian woman recommended by Paul (Romans 16:1, 2)
14. Brought back to an earlier state (Acts 3:21)
16. What one's ears would do upon hearing the calamity coming on Jerusalem (Jeremiah 19:3)
18. Land used for grazing (Micah 2:12)
22. Pardon (Esther 2:18)
24. Judean site inhabited by potters in the king's service (1 Chronicles 4:23)
25. Levite musician who accompanied the Ark to Jerusalem (1 Chronicles 15: 16, 18)
28. To impart (2 Timothy 1:10)
29. Two signs involving this gave Gideon proof of divine support (Judges 6:36-40)
31. First letter of the word "Christ" in Greek

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS PAGE 27



The Spanish Inquisition

How Could It Happen?

By *Awake!* correspondent in Spain

IT WAS June 5, 1635, when Alonso de Alarcón was informed that a warrant for his arrest had been issued. His protests of innocence were ignored. He was imprisoned in solitary confinement. Three times he was "invited" to confess his crimes, but he proclaimed his innocence.

On April 10, 1636, he was tortured on the rack until he lost consciousness. On October 12, he was condemned to 100 lashes and was banished for six years.

"To the Greater Glory of God"

Alonso was a weaver in Toledo, Spain, (shown above) father of three daughters, and paralyzed on one side. His own doctor had informed the interrogators that torture could be applied without risk—at least to the side that wasn't paralyzed. Alonso was a victim of the Spanish Inquisition.

His crime? He was accused of eating meat on a Friday (it implied that he had Jewish leanings) and of blasphemy against the Virgin Mary (he had reportedly declared that one of his daughters was more of a virgin than Mary). His accuser was the local priest.

Theologians studied the case and decreed that the accusations against him were a clear proof of heresy. The entire procedure claimed to be *ad majorem Dei gloriam* (to the greater glory of God), although Alonso and the 100,000 or so others who were tried by the Inquisition did not see it in that light.

Not surprisingly, the Spanish Inquisition has become a byword for religious oppression and fanaticism. Even the word "inquisition," which at first just meant "the act of inquiring," now has connotations of torture, injustice, and a merciless disregard for human rights. How did such an oppressive machinery get established? What were its goals? Can it be justified as a "necessary evil"?

The Inquisition—The Way to Unity?

In the 13th century the Catholic Church established the Inquisition in France, Germany, Italy, and Spain. Its main purpose was to stamp out dissident religious groups that the clergy viewed as dangerous to the church. After the demise of these groups, this church-sponsored Inquisition declined in influence, but the precedent was to have dire consequences for many Spaniards some two centuries later.

In the 15th century the Catholic Kings Isabella and Ferdinand conquered the last of the Muslim Moors who had occupied much of Spain for eight centuries. These monarchs looked for ways to forge national unity. Religion was considered to be a convenient tool to achieve that end.

In September 1480 the Inquisition reappeared in Spain, but its power was wielded by the State. Its purpose was the "purification of the nation and the unity of the faith." The Catholic rulers of Spain persuaded Pope Sixtus IV to issue a bull authorizing *them* to name inquisitors for the purpose of investigating and punishing heresy. Thereafter, the State financed the Inquisition and established the procedures for its operation. A crusade to impose strict religious uniformity on the nation had begun. The institution was operated mainly by Dominican and Franciscan friars but was supervised by the monarchy.

Exposición de Antiguos Instrumentos de Tortura, Toledo, Spain

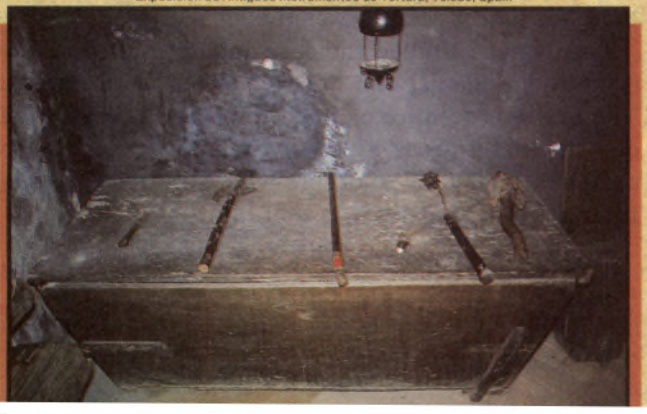
Ladder rack used for stretching the limbs of the victim

This was a marriage of convenience between Church and State. The church wished to stamp out the threat it perceived from the thousands of Spanish Jews and Moors who had been forcibly converted to Catholicism but who were suspected of keeping their former beliefs. It would later use the same apparatus to stamp out Protestant groups that appeared in the following century.

The Inquisition also proved to be a powerful weapon for the State. It suppressed dissent, generated substantial income confiscated from its victims, and concentrated power in the hands of the monarchy. For over three centuries this fearful institution imposed its will on the Spanish people.

Coffin where tied victim was left inside for days

Exposición de Antiguos Instrumentos de Tortura, Toledo, Spain



Exposición de Antiguos Instrumentos de Tortura, Toledo, Spain

The pendulum—victim was suspended by wrists tied behind his back

Torquemada—The Most Notorious Inquisitor

In 1483, three years after the reemergence of the Inquisition in Spain, Tomás de Torquemada, a Dominican friar and ironically of Jewish descent himself, was appointed inquisitor-general. His cruelty toward suspected heretics was unsurpassed. He was praised by Pope Sixtus IV for "directing [his] zeal to those matters that contribute to the praise of God."

Later, however, Pope Alexander VI, alarmed by Torquemada's excesses, tried to dilute his power by appointing two other inquisitors-general. It was to little avail. Torquemada continued exercising overall authority, and during his term of office, he burned at least 2,000 people at the stake —"an awful holocaust to the principle of intolerance," according to *The Encyclopædia Britannica*. Thousands fled abroad, while countless others suffered imprisonment and torture and had their property confiscated. Apparently, Torquemada was convinced that his work was done in the service of Christ. Indeed, church doctrine justified his actions.*

However, the Bible warns that religious zeal can be misguided. In the first century, Paul described Jews who persecuted Christians as persons who had "a zeal for God; but not according to accurate knowledge." (Romans 10:2) Jesus predicted that misguided zeal would even cause such ones to kill innocent people, imagining that they were 'rendering a sacred service to God.'—John 16:2.

Torquemada's policies well illustrate the tragic consequences of a zeal hardened by bigotry instead of tempered by love and accurate knowledge. His was not the Christian way to achieve the unity of the faith.

The Inquisition and the Bible

Because of the inquisitors, for centuries it was almost impossible for Spaniards to read the Bible in their common language. The mere possession of one in the vernacular was deemed heretical by the inquisitors. In 1557 the Inquisition officially banned the Bible in any of Spain's vernacular tongues. Countless Bibles were burned.

It wasn't until 1791 that a Catholic Bible in Spanish was finally printed in Spain, based on the *Latin Vulgate*. The Spanish church's first complete translation from the original languages, the Nacar-Colunga Bible, was not forthcoming until 1944.

* Prominent Catholic "saints" had pronounced themselves in favor of the execution of heretics. Augustine asserted that "it is necessary to resort to force when words of reason are ignored." Also, Thomas Aquinas declared that "heresy . . . is a crime that merits not only excommunication but even death."

Dungeon for housing prisoners, such as Alonso de Alarcón

Exposición de Antiguos Instrumentos de Tortura, Toledo, Spain

Prison of the Holy Brotherhood, where victims were housed in Toledo

The extent of the Inquisition's power in this regard can also be seen by the fact that even handwritten Romance (early Spanish) Bibles in the king's personal library, in El Escorial, were reviewed by the inquisitor-general. The warning "prohibited" can still be seen on the flyleaf of some of these works.

Perhaps the proscription of the Bible for so many centuries in Spain has been one factor contributing to the interest of Spanish people in the Holy Scriptures today. Many now possess a Bible and have a sincere desire to know what it really teaches.

The Real Face of the Inquisition

An inevitable result of the Inquisition was the fostering of greed and suspicion. Pope Sixtus IV complained that the inquisitors were showing more lust for gold than zeal for religion. Any wealthy person was in danger of being denounced, and although he might be "reconciled to the church" during the inquisitorial process, his goods would be confiscated anyway.

Others were judged posthumously, and their heirs were left penniless, sometimes on the basis of anonymous informers who would receive a percentage of the forfeited riches. The widespread use of spies and informers produced a climate of fear and suspicion. Often torture was invoked to obtain the names of "fellow heretics," resulting in the arrest of many innocent people on the flimsiest of evidence.

Strong anti-Semitic suspicions led to other abuses. For example, Elvira del Campo of Toledo was accused in 1568 because of putting on clean clothes on Saturday and abstaining from eating pork, both of which were supposed proofs of secretly practicing Judaism. Mercilessly tortured on the rack, she implored: "Sirs, why don't you tell me what you want me to say?" In a second torture session she had to confess that it was not a delicate stomach that made her dislike pork but, rather, her Jewish inclinations.

Hearts and Minds Not Won Over

However, brave voices of protest were heard, even at the height of the Inquisition's power. Elio Antonio de Nebrija, one of the foremost scholars of his day, was denounced to the Inquisition for his desire to improve the text of the Latin Vulgate Bible. He protested: "Must I be obliged to declare that I do not know what I know? What slavery or what power is so despotic as this?" Luis Vives, another scholar whose whole family was wiped out by the Inquisition, wrote: "We live in difficult times in which we can neither speak nor keep quiet without danger."

In the early 19th century, Antonio Puigblanch, a Spanish writer and politician who campaigned for the abolition of the Inquisition, argued: "[As the] Inquisition is an ecclesiastical tribunal, its rigor is incompatible with the spirit of meekness that ought to distinguish the ministers of the Gospel."

Even today, many sincere Catholics are still trying to come to terms with the church's role in the Inquisition.

Thus, an appropriate question is: Were the hearts and minds of the people really won over by these methods? One historian observes: "The Inquisition, while it did impose conformity of dogma and outward observances, was not able to inspire a genuine respect for religion."

For example, Julián, a young man studying to be a priest, was shocked when he first read about the part the church played in the Inquisition. His teacher argued that as God had invented hell to torment the wicked eternally, the church would use torment when deemed necessary. But this reply did nothing to allay his doubts, and he left the seminary. Similarly, Julio, a young Spanish lawyer who already had doubts about Catholicism, was convinced that the church could not be truly Christian after he had read extensively about the Inquisition.

The use of threats, imprisonment, torture, and even death to attain political and religious ends has proved counterproductive. The Spanish church, tainted by its history of suppression, is still reaping the consequences of having sowed violence, hatred, and suspicion.

Does the End Justify the Means?

The concept of 'religious unity at any price' is a dangerous one. Religious zeal can easily become fanaticism. This tragedy can be avoided by faithful adherence to Bible principles. The example of the first-century Christians proves that this is so.

Regarding the methods used by early Christians to maintain doctrinal harmony, *The New Encyclopædia Britannica* explains: "During Christianity's first three centuries, penalties against heretics were exclusively spiritual, usually excommunication." This was in harmony with the Scriptural instructions: "A man that is a heretic, after the first and second admonition, avoid." —Titus 3:10, *Douay*.

Christian Warfare —For the Minds of Others

The Bible describes the preaching of the good news as being spiritual warfare. The goal is to bring "every thought into captivity to make it obedient to the Christ." To achieve lasting unity, weapons would be needed but not for torture. Rather, spiritual weapons, "powerful by God," would be the means, always employed along with "a mild temper and deep respect."—2 Corinthians 10:3-5; 1 Peter 3:15.

Happily, we can look forward to the time when religious persecution will be no more. God's promise is that soon a time will come when "they will not do any harm or cause any ruin." Real religious unity will be achieved, and the whole "earth will certainly be filled with the knowledge of Jehovah as the waters are covering the very sea."—Isaiah 11:9; Revelation 21:1-4.

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS

I	M	M	O	R	T	A	L	I	T	Y		P	I	G
S		E				U				A		O		O
R		T	H	R	O	N	E		C	H	E	R	U	B
A			U			T		R		W		A		
E	L	I	M		P			H		E	N	T	E	R
L			B	E	H	E	M	O	T	H		H		E
O	H	E	L		O				I		P	A	S	S
F			E	S	E	K		A	N	N	A			T
G	O	A	D		B				G		S	O	C	O
O		M		N	E	B	A	L	L	A	T			R
D	A	N	C	E		E			E		U	L	L	A
		E		T		N		S			R			T
D	I	S	H	A	N		S	H	O	B	E	K		I
E		T		I				E				H		O
W	A	Y		M	A	L	E	D	I	C	T	I	O	N

From Our Readers

Spiritism

I would like to comment on the *Awake!* article "Allan Kardec—Pioneer of Spiritism." (May 22, 1987) I believe that everyone has the right to choose the religion he wants, provided it moves the person to do good and does no harm to other persons or animals. I am a spiritist, and in the classes I attend, those present do not waste time criticizing other religions, much less waste paper and money to publicize such criticisms. Spiritists disagree with Jehovah's Witnesses about the immortality of the soul, communication with the dead, and other things. However, we are not so ignorant or unloving as to say that you participate with the demons, as you do with us. Spiritism incites us to personal reform, transforming vices into virtues. It counsels us to practice charity and solidarity with our less fortunate brothers. It is impossible for the demons to counsel persons to act like that, for they would not get any advantage from doing so. A bit contradictory, don't you think?

C. M. G., Brazil

We agree that each one should be free to choose his religion. Yet, we feel obligated to call attention to the Bible's warnings of dangerous religious practices. Those who believe in communicating with the dead, the Bible shows, are vulnerable to subtle, deceptive influence by wicked spirits who falsely impersonate people who have lived and are now dead and hence powerless to do anything at all. (See Ecclesiastes 9:5, 6, 10 and Isaiah 8:19, 20.) For this reason, the Bible at Leviticus 19:31 and Deuteronomy 18:10-12 warns against spiritistic practices of any sort. As to spiritism's apparently inciting one to transform vices into virtues, the Bible at 2 Corinthians 11:14, 15 says that "Satan himself keeps transforming himself into an angel of light. It is therefore nothing great if his ministers also keep transforming themselves into ministers of righteousness." As stated at 2 Timothy 3:16, 17, the man of God should look to the Bible, not to spirits, as the true, dependable source of guidance concerning God's will.—ED.

Pollution

I read with interest your articles on "What Is Happening to Our Forests?" (June 22, 1987) I wonder why you did not suggest—what appears to me to be the obvious solution as the alternative to pollutive, limited fossil fuels—the use of an inexhaustible, unlimited source of energy, solar power. It is clean and will provide a source of power forever.

R. A. M., United States

We are very positive about the potential for solar power as a solution both to much of earth's pollution and to the limited supply of fossil fuels. (See our issue of February 22, 1980.) However, the problem is more that of human selfishness and special interests, which hinder the development and universal application of solar energy. For these reasons, we believe only God's Kingdom will be able to address itself successfully to all the problems involved and provide the lasting solution.—ED.

Watching the World

AIDS and Breast Milk

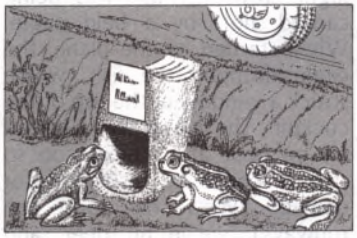
It is acknowledged that the AIDS virus can be passed to an infant through its mother's breast milk. Knowing this raises some concerns for a group of mothers who do not themselves have AIDS. Why? Because many hospitals have milk banks that accept breast-milk donations. This milk is then supplied to mothers who have an inadequate supply of their own milk or who for any other reason are unable to feed their baby themselves. Additionally, such donated milk is often used in hospitals to feed premature babies. However, since it does not appear that any testing is done to determine whether donated breast milk may contain the AIDS virus, mothers could inadvertently expose their infant to the AIDS virus in the event the milk obtained is from an infected donor.

Biodegradable Plastic Film

Plastics pollute our seas, forests, and cities. However, chemists Felix H. Otey and Richard F. Westhoff have recently succeeded in producing a plastic film that is biodegradable. Working in the U.S. Department of Agriculture's laboratory in Peoria, Illinois, these scientists have combined cornstarch molecules with plastic molecules for strength to make a sturdy plastic film. They claim that exposure to the dampness and warmth of soil will decompose the starch in the film, and as a result, the small fragments of plastic left will eventually be digested by bacteria in the soil.

Toad Tunnel

The festivities marked the opening of Britain's newest tunnel. As photographers and the press covered the occasion, some words of the English author Kipling were read, and a ribbon



across the opening was ceremoniously cut by Lord Skelmersdale, the Government's Under Secretary of the Environment. He had to kneel down to do so, since the mouth of the tunnel was only six inches wide. It was built so toads could cross under the Henley roadway. Each year, during the mating season, some 20 tons of them are killed by British drivers as the toads cross roads to reach their spring breeding ponds. So successful was the tunnel that others have sought information for their particular animal road-crossing problems.

Homicidal Robot

A robot suddenly activated a lathe and killed a factory worker in Japan. The cause? An electromagnetic wave that originated from an electric spark from a crane. This 1982 incident was disclosed in a recent study by a Japanese Posts and Telecommunications Ministry council on "electronic smog." Sources of "electronic smog," or unwanted electromagnetic waves, are everywhere: personal computers, TV game machines, and boosters for TV antennas, to name just a few. However, such unwanted electromagnetic waves are said to cause malfunctions by interfering with integrated circuits in high-tech control systems. Robots in Japan have killed ten persons in the last eight years. It is suspected that in six of those cases electromagnetic waves were involved.

Bread, Wine, or . . .

This year, some East Germans attending the Eucharist (Communion) at Easter were surprised. Next to the traditional bread and wine provided on this occasion, some of the Lutheran and United Churches now also offered an

alternative drink: grape juice. Why the juice? "To accommodate alcoholics and others not wishing to drink alcohol," comments the Geneva-based Ecumenical Press Service.

A Scientist Speaks Out

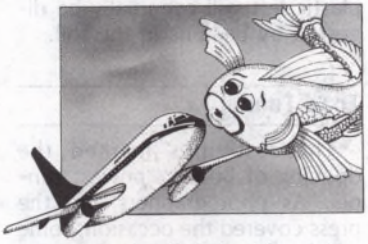
"I get more intellectual satisfaction in accepting there is a God than merely accepting that it (we) happened by chance," stated Dr. Louw Alberts, according to the *Cape Times,* a newspaper of South Africa. Alberts, a physicist who discovered giant magnetostriction (changes in dimensions because of magnetism) in rare earth metals, also expressed his view of the Bible. "The Bible is the written word of God, science is the reading of the created work. Both have the same author—God."

Fibrocystic Cure?

Up to 80 percent of today's women are afflicted with fibrocystic breast disease, reports *Dimensions,* a Canadian magazine. The disorder thickens milk duct linings and forms painful cysts. However, since 1971 Dr. William Ghent of Queens University in Ontario, in collaboration with Dr. Bernard Eskin of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, has been experimenting with elemental iodine to treat the disease, with a considerable measure of success. Their results showed that of the 315 fibrocystic women treated, 75 percent of the sufferers returned to normal and only 2 percent of the total did not improve. Some relatively minor side effects, however, were noted among a small percentage of the women treated. The good news, according to Dr. Ghent, is that many women would not need this therapy if they included more iodine in their regular diet. Supporting this is the fact that New York City reports twice as much fibrocystic breast disease among women as does Tokyo, where women eat more iodine-rich foods.

Plane Collides With Fish

Shortly after it took off from Alaska's Juneau Airport, a Boeing 737 jetliner with 40 passengers aboard collided with a salmon in midair. According to the flight crew, the fish was being carried aloft by a bald eagle. When startled by the plane, the eagle dropped the fish, which struck a window at the top of the cockpit. The plane was delayed for an hour at its next stop so that it could be inspected for damage. "We've hit moose (on runways); we've hit deer, and we've hit various and sundry things," says Jerry Kvasnikoff, customer service manager for Alaska Airlines, "but we've never hit a fish before."



Energy From Ocean Waves

Could ocean waves be an important energy source of the future? Australia's Minister for Minerals and Energy, Mr. Parker, thinks so and has authorized Wave Power International, a newly formed company, to construct a power station at Esperance in Western Australia, to generate electricity by waves. The large generator will rise above sea level by about 23 feet and will measure approximately 66 feet in diameter. The operation of the generator, as explained in the newspaper *The West Australian,* requires good ocean waves year round. A float inside a concrete structure that uses air pressure to control the seawater level is lifted to create a pumping force. Water is then drawn to the top of the tower and generates power when it falls. It is estimated that about 20 percent of the power needs for Esperance and the surrounding district will be met by this pollution-free method of generating electricity.

"Paper Food"

"Our aim was to produce highly nourishing, easy-to-carry, easy-to-eat food," declared Eiji Miyazaki, a Japanese industrialist, when introducing his edible card to which he has given a French name. According to the French weekly *L'Express,* this food specialist has succeeded in cramming into a half-ounce bar, about the size of a credit card, the same amount of calories as in a complete meal. This discovery is of interest to such people as mountaineers wishing to "transport a maximum of calories in a minimum of space" or to truck drivers wishing to save the time needed to eat at roadside diners. *L'Express* does not expect this to be a big hit in France. The reason? Although there are 14 flavors, the French magazine finds they taste a little too much like the French name given to the product—*"Papier"!*

Alaska Division of Tourism

Glaciers

—"Awesome Ice"

GLACIERS are formed when massive amounts of unmelted snow, crystals closely packed together, accumulate on mountainsides. This type is called a valley glacier. When the pileup becomes very heavy, its weight starts to slide the ice mass downward toward a valley or the sea. Icebergs are great chunks of glacier ice that have fallen off the tip of the glacier into the sea.

Some valley glaciers are as large as great rivers. Indeed, they are "ice rivers." Other forms, called continental glaciers, cover vast areas, such as we see in Antarctica and Greenland.

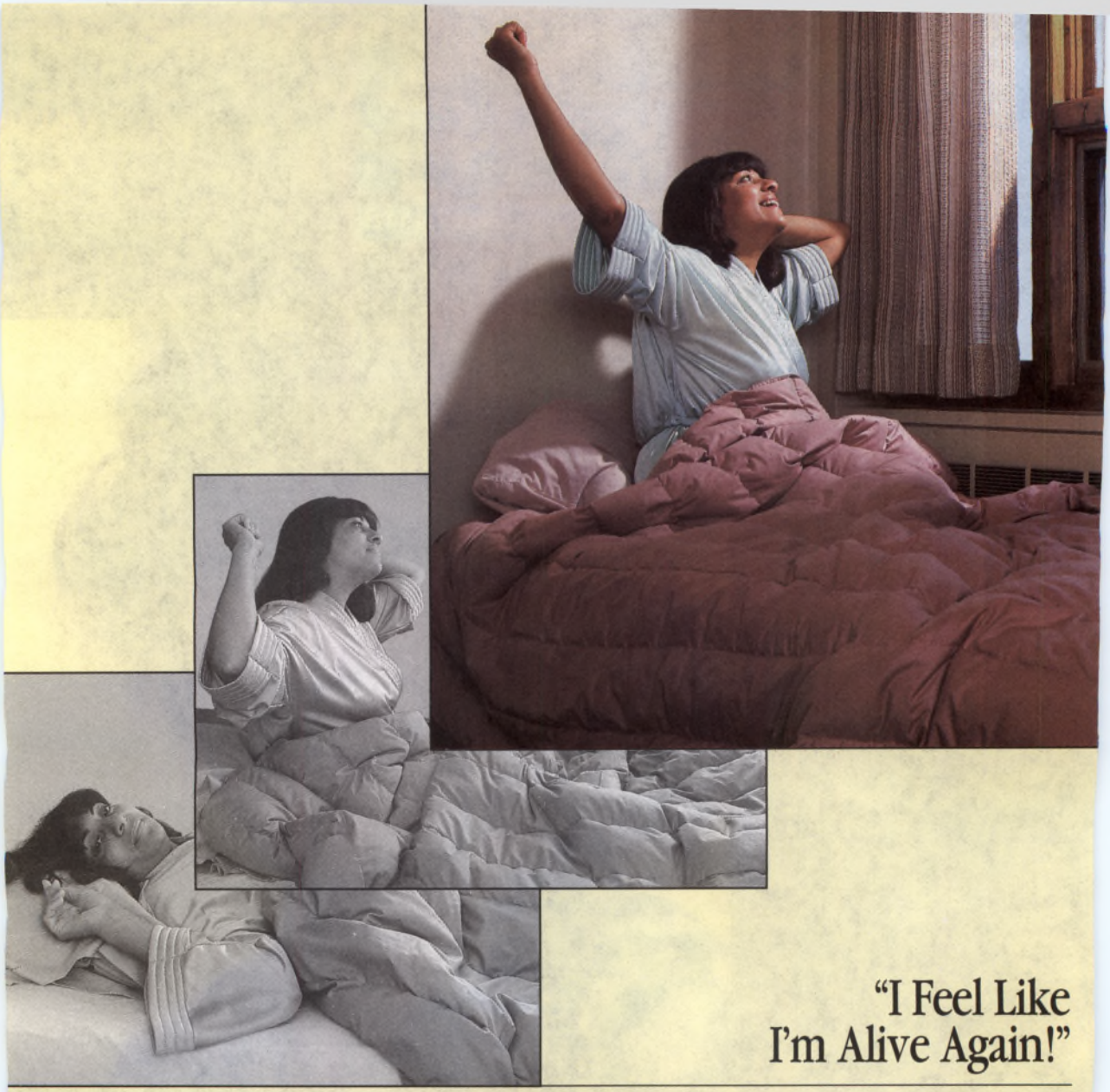
They are all storehouses of frozen water that produce "the sparkle of awesome ice," another creation of Jehovah.—Ezekiel 1:22; Job 37:10.

Alaska Division of Tourism

Awake!

October 22, 1987

DEPRESSION
You Can Win The Fight!



"I Feel Like I'm Alive Again!"

Sarah lost interest in everything as a 'dark cloud' filled her mind. "I felt dead inside," she said. "Now I feel like I'm alive again!"

She was one of the millions worldwide who fight a ruthless foe that has attacked people of all kinds—young and old, rich and poor, single and married, men and women. It is a killer, for up to 70 percent of all suicides are traceable to depression. This foe also destroys careers and shatters families.

Read how Sarah and others won their fight.

Fighting a Relentless Foe

"THIS was the biggest trial of my life," said Elizabeth. "To be on my feet again is wonderful. I feel as if I have a new lease on life. I can now smell the roses!" This 42-year-old woman had conquered a foe said to cause more suffering than any other mental disorder—depression.

Alexander was not as fortunate. This 33-year-old became very depressed, lost his appetite, and wanted to be by himself. "He felt like the whole world had come down and that nothing was worth living for anymore," explained his wife, Esther. "He believed he wasn't worth anything." Convinced that he would never get better, Alexander plunged to his death in suicide.

Both Elizabeth and Alexander were among the reported 100,000,000 people worldwide who *each year* develop clinically recognizable depression. One out of every four Americans and one out of every five Canadians experience a major depressive episode during their lifetime. Depression is also reported to be a common ailment in Africa, and it is increasing in the Federal Republic of Germany. So chances are you may have a friend or a relative who is or has been a victim.

Alexander's wife, who did all she could to help her husband, warns: "When someone talks about being depressed and feeling worthless, take it seriously." Severe depression is thus more than a passing mood or just a case of the blues. It can be a killer, a relentless foe that can cripple and maim. Being able to recognize it could mean the difference between life and death.

"A Plague in My Brain"

All of us are subject to painful losses, frustrations, and disappointments. Sadness is a natural response. You close down emotionally, lick your wounds, and eventually begin to cope with the reality of the changed situation. You hope for a better day tomorrow and soon begin to enjoy life again. But in cases of major depression it is different.

"For eight months no shopping trip, *nothing,* made me feel better," said Elizabeth. Another sufferer, Carol, added: "It was like a plague in my brain, like a terrible cloud hanging over me. You could give me a million dollars, and it wouldn't stop the awful feelings." One man said that 'you feel as though you've put on smoke-colored glasses —everything looks unattractive. Also, the glasses have magnifying lenses, so that every problem seems overwhelming.'

Depression is a spectrum of emotions ranging from feeling sad to becoming hopeless and suicidal. (See box on page 4.) The number of symptoms, their intensity, and their duration are all factors in pinpointing when the blues become major depression.

Not Always Easy to Identify

Depression is often difficult to identify because the sufferer may also have physical symptoms. "My legs stung, and at times I had pain all over. I went to many doctors," said Elizabeth. "I was convinced that they were overlooking some physical illness and

that I was going to die." Like Elizabeth, about 50 percent of depressed patients who seek medical help complain of physical rather than emotional symptoms.

"Usually, they will complain of headache, insomnia, anorexia, constipation, or chronic fatigue," writes Dr. Samuel Guze, head of the Department of Psychiatry of Washington University in St. Louis, "but will say nothing about feeling sad, hopeless, or discouraged.... Some depressed patients seem unaware of their depression." Chronic pain, weight loss or gain, and a diminished sexual desire are also classic symptoms.

Dr. E. B. L. Ovuga of Umzimkulu Hospital, Transkei, South Africa, reports that while depressed Africans rarely report feelings of guilt or worthlessness, they do complain of overactivity, withdrawal, and body pains. A 1983 report by the World Health Organization found that the vast majority of depressed persons studied in Switzerland, Iran, Canada, and Japan all had the same basic symptoms of joylessness, anxiety, lack of energy, and ideas of insufficiency.

Alcohol and drug abuse, as well as sexual promiscuity, are just some of the ways in which some try to cover depressed feelings. Yes, "even in laughter the heart may be in pain." (Proverbs 14:13) This is especially true of youths. "Adults *look* depressed, but if a depressed child walks into a room, you would not notice a thing," explained Dr. Donald McKnew of NIMH (National Institute of Mental Health) in an interview with *Awake!* "That's why childhood depression went unrecognized for so long. But as soon as you talk to them about it, they will pour out their depression."

Yet, the 1980's have seen significant advances in understanding and treating depression. The mysteries of brain chemistry are being unraveled. Tests have been developed to identify certain types of depression. The fight has been augmented by the use of antidepressant medications and nutrients such as certain amino acids. Additionally, short-term talk therapies have been effectively used. According to NIMH scientists, between 80 and 90 percent of all victims can be helped substantially with appropriate treatment.

But what causes this disabling emotional disorder?

The Spectrum of Depression

Simple Blues		*Major Depression*
Sadness, normal grief Self-pity, discouragement Self-blame and guilt Able to find some pleasure	**Mood**	Overwhelming hopelessness Feeling of worthlessness Destructive guilt and self-blame Find no pleasure, no longer care
Remorse or regret	**Thinking**	Thoughts of suicide Hard to concentrate
Brief duration (few days)	**Duration**	Prolonged duration (two weeks or more)
Normal functioning Slight physical problems (temporary)	**Physical Symptoms**	Constant fatigue; unexplained aches Changes in eating and sleeping habits Inability to sit still, pacing, handwringing Slowed speech or body motions

Depression: All in One's Head?

THE MAN became depressed as soon as he began to restore his 200-year-old home. He slept badly and found sustained mental effort unusually difficult. His family wondered whether the house was haunted! He noticed that his worst symptoms, which included abdominal pain, followed periods spent removing old paint from interior woodwork. A doctor discovered that poisoning from the lead in the layers of old paint he was scraping caused his depression.

Yes, at times, even toxic materials are to blame for depression. In fact, you may be surprised to learn that depression can be triggered by a number of physical causes.

Several years ago researchers carefully examined 100 persons who were admitted to a city hospital with psychiatric problems, including depression. In 46 of these cases, the emotional symptoms were found to be directly related to physical illnesses. According to the report in the *American Journal of Psychiatry,* when these physical ills were treated, 28 "evidenced dramatic and rapid clearing of their psychiatric symptoms," and 18 were "substantially improved."

The role of physical illness in depression,

Awake!® October 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 20

Average Printing: 10,610,000

Published in 54 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

"I Feel Like I'm Alive Again!" 2
Fighting a Relentless Foe 3
Depression: All in One's Head? 5
The Psychological Roots 7
Childhood Depression: "I Wish I Weren't Alive" 8
Winning the Fight Against Depression .. 11

Also in This Issue

Wisdom Beyond Her Years 17
Young People Ask ... Why Did Mom and Dad Split Up? 21
The United States Constitution and Jehovah's Witnesses 24
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Lamb Power 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

25 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$5.00	$2.50
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$7.00	$3.50
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures* used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $5.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

however, is complex. The experience of many doctors is that a depressed patient may also have a physical illness that is not responsible for his depression but that becomes the focal point in his mind. Yet, the underlying depression often must be addressed and treated.

Though some physical illnesses can cause or intensify emotional disorders, psychiatric symptoms can also develop as a *reaction* to a previously existing illness. For instance, after major surgery, especially of the heart, recovering patients almost always get depressed. When they recover, the depression usually lifts. The strain on the body from a serious illness may also cause the disorder. In addition, an allergic reaction to certain foods or other substances can cause severe depression in some persons.

Heredity may also be a factor in whether one develops certain types of depression. Earlier this year, researchers announced the discovery of an inherited genetic defect that is believed to predispose some persons to manic depression.

Additionally, some medical experts say that from 10 to 20 percent of new mothers experience a full-blown clinical depression. Researchers do not agree, however, whether the hormonal changes associated with childbirth or the emotional strains of motherhood bring on the disorder. Recent findings also indicate that premenstrual syndrome and the taking of birth-control pills tend to cause depression in some women.

Current research has also revealed that some people appear to have seasonal mood cycles, referred to as Seasonal Affective Disorder. Such ones feel very depressed during the fall and winter. They slow down and generally oversleep, withdraw from friends and family, and experience changes in appetite and food preference. But come spring and summer, they are elated, active, and energetic, and they generally function well. Some have been successfully treated with the regulated use of artificial lighting.

So depression is not always 'in the head.' Therefore, if a depressed mood lingers, having a complete medical examination is vital. But what if no physical reason can be found?

Some Physical Causes of Depression

Medical research has associated the following things with the development of depression in some people:

Toxic metals and chemicals: lead, mercury, aluminum, carbon monoxide, and some insecticides

Nutrient deficiencies: certain vitamins and some essential minerals

Infectious diseases: tuberculosis, mononucleosis, viral pneumonia, hepatitis, and influenza

Endocrine-system diseases: thyroid disease, Cushing's disease, hypoglycemia, and diabetes mellitus

Central-nervous-system diseases: multiple sclerosis and Parkinson's disease

"Recreational" drugs: PCP, marijuana, amphetamines, cocaine, heroin, and methadone

Prescription drugs: barbiturates, anticonvulsants, corticosteroids, and hormones. Some medications that treat high blood pressure, arthritis, cardiovascular problems, and some mental disorders (Certainly, not all such medicines will cause depression, and even when there is a danger, it usually involves a small percentage of those who use the drug under the proper medical supervision.)

The Psychological Roots

"I'VE done every test, and nothing shows up," the kindly doctor told Elizabeth. "I believe you are severely depressed and *for good reason.*"

Elizabeth, who felt that her problem was a physical illness, began to wonder if the doctor was correct. She reflected on her daily struggle for the past few years with her unruly, and often uncontrollable, six-year-old son, who was later diagnosed as having an attention-deficit disorder. "The day-in, day-out stress and anxiety that never let up took an enormous toll on my emotions," confided Elizabeth. "I had reached the point where I felt hopeless and suicidal."

Many depressed persons, like Elizabeth, have faced an exceptional amount of emotional strain. In fact, a landmark study by British researchers George Brown and Tirril Harris found that depressed women had a rate of "major difficulties," such as bad housing or a strained family relationship, that was over *three times greater* than that of nondepressed women. These difficulties had caused "considerable and often unremitting distress" for at least two years. Severe life experiences, such as the death of a close relative or friend, a severe illness or accident, shockingly bad news, or the loss of a job, also were *four times more common among the depressed women!*

Yet, Brown and Harris found that adversity alone does not cause the depression. Much depended on the mental response and emotional vulnerability of the individual.

"Everything Seemed Hopeless"

For instance, Sarah, a hardworking wife and the mother of three young children, wrenched her back in a job-related accident. Her doctor said that she would have to curtail much of her physical activity because of a ruptured disk. "I thought my whole world had come to an end. I had always been an active, athletic person who played sports with my kids. I pondered this loss and felt things would never get better. Soon I lost all joy of living. Everything seemed hopeless," confessed Sarah.

Her reaction to the accident led to thoughts of hopelessness concerning her life as a whole, and this bred the depression. As Brown and Harris, in their book *Social Origins of Depression,* state: "It [the provoking incident, such as Sarah's accident] may lead to thoughts about the hopelessness of one's life in general. It is such *generalization* of hopelessness that we believe forms the central core of a depressive disorder."

But what makes many people feel unable to repair the damage of a painful loss, causing them to fall into major depression? Why was Sarah, for example, vulnerable to such a negative train of thought?

'I'm Unworthy'

"I've always lacked confidence in myself," explained Sarah. "My self-esteem was very low, and I felt unworthy of any attention." The painful feelings associated with one's lacking self-worth are often the critical factor. "Because of the pain of the heart there

is a stricken spirit," states Proverbs 15:13. The Bible recognizes that a depressed spirit can be the result, not of external pressures alone, but of inward misgivings. What can cause low self-esteem?

Some of our thought patterns are shaped by our upbringing. "As a child, I was never praised by my parents," confided Sarah. "I cannot ever remember receiving a compliment until after I was married. Consequently, I sought approval from others. I have this terrible fear of people's disapproval."

Sarah's intense need of approval is a common element with many who become seriously depressed. Research has revealed that such persons tend to build their self-esteem on the love and approval received from others, rather than on their own achievements.

Childhood Depression: "I Wish I Weren't Alive"

An interview with Dr. Donald McKnew of the National Institute of Mental Health, who has researched this subject for 20 years.

Awake!: How prevalent do you consider this problem to be?

McKnew: A recent New Zealand study of a thousand children found that by the age of nine, some 10 percent of the children had already experienced a depressive episode. And we get the impression that 10 to 15 percent of schoolchildren have mood disorders. A smaller number suffer from severe depression.

Awake!: How can you tell if children are severely depressed?

McKnew: One of the key symptoms is that they find no pleasure in anything. They don't want to go out and play or be with their friends. They're not interested in the family. You see loss of concentration; they can't keep their mind even on television programs, much less their homework. You see a feeling of worthlessness, a personal sense of guilt. They'll go around saying they think they're no good or nobody likes them. Either they can't sleep or they oversleep; they lose their appetite or they overeat. Plus you hear suicidal ideas such as, "I wish I weren't alive." If you see a conglomeration of these symptoms, and it's lasted for a week or two, then you're talking about a seriously depressed child.

Awake!: What are the key triggers of childhood depression?

McKnew: When you get down to the specific factors in any given child's life, the major thing is probably a loss. While this usually means a parental loss, it could include friends, close relatives, or even a pet. Second to losses I would put depreciation and rejection. We see an awful lot of children who are maligned and made to feel they're small or insignificant by their parents. At times a child is made a scapegoat. He is blamed for anything that goes wrong in the family whether he is at fault or not. Hence, he feels unworthy. Another factor is a mood disorder in a parent.

Awake!: The book *Why Isn't Johnny Crying?,* which you coauthored, states that some children who are depressed engage in drug and alcohol abuse or even delinquent behavior. Why is this?

McKnew: We believe they're trying to hide the depression, even from themselves. Their way of dealing with it often is to stay

They may estimate their own worth by the extent that they are likable or significant to someone else. "Loss of such support," reports one team of researchers, "will lead to a fall in self-esteem and this contributes significantly to the onset of depression."

Perfectionism

An exaggerated concern about gaining the approval of others often expresses itself in an unusual way. Sarah explains: "I strove to do everything just right so that I could get the approval that I didn't get as a child. On my secular job, I did everything just so. I had to have the 'perfect' family. I had *this* image that I had to live up to." When she had her accident, however, all seemed hopeless. She adds: "I believed I was keeping the family going and feared that if I couldn't

---

busy with other things, like stealing cars, taking dope, or drinking. These are ways of disguising how badly they feel. In fact, trying to hide their depression is one of the clearest ways that children differ from adults.

Awake!: How can you tell when it is depression and not a child just misbehaving?

McKnew: By talking with these children, getting them to open up, you will often find the depression. And if the depression is properly treated, their behavior improves. Though something else was showing up on the surface, the depression was still there underneath all the time.

Awake!: How can you get a depressed child to open up?

McKnew: First of all, choose a quiet time and place. Then ask specific questions like, 'Is something bothering you?' 'Have you been feeling sad or blue?' 'Are you upset?' If there has been a loss, you could ask, depending on the circumstances, 'Do you miss Grandma as much as I do?' Give the child a chance to ventilate his feelings.

Awake!: What would you tell severely depressed children to do?

McKnew: Tell their parents about it. This business of detection is a serious one because generally only the children know they're depressed. Parents and teachers usually don't see it. I have seen adolescents who have gone to their parents and said, "I am depressed, I need help," and they've gotten it.

Awake!: How can a parent help a depressed child?

McKnew: If the depression seems to be debilitating, then it's not something to be handled at home, any more than is pneumonia. A debilitating depression must be taken to a professional because there may be a need for medication. We use medication in well over half of our cases, even with children down to five years of age. We also try to readjust the child's thinking. And by these means the depression is eminently treatable.

Awake!: If it's not a debilitating illness, what can a parent do?

McKnew: Take an honest look at yourself and your family. Has there been some serious loss that needs to be talked about and dealt with? When losses occur, don't belittle a child's sadness. Allow him the freedom to work through his grief. Give a depressed child special amounts of attention, praise, and emotional support. Spend extra time with him alone. Your warm involvement is the best form of treatment.

'When I realized that my thinking caused my depression, this gave me some relief and comfort because I believed then I could also fix it.'

function, they would fail and then people would say, 'She is a bad mother and wife.'"

Sarah's thinking led to major depression. Research about the personalities of depressed persons reveals that her case is not unique. Margaret, who also suffered from severe depression, admitted: "I worried about what others thought of me. I was a perfectionistic, clock-watching, organized worrier." Setting unrealistically high goals or being overly conscientious, and yet failing to live up to expectations, is at the root of many depressions. Ecclesiastes 7:16 warns: "Do not become righteous overmuch, nor show yourself excessively wise. Why should you cause desolation to yourself?" Trying to show yourself nearly "perfect" to others can lead to emotional and physical desolation. The frustrations can also lead to a destructive type of self-blame.

"I Can't Do Anything Right"

Self-blame can be a positive reaction. For instance, a person may be robbed because of walking alone in a dangerous neighborhood. He may blame himself for putting himself into such a situation, resolving to change and thereby avoid a similar problem later. But a person could go further and blame himself for the type of person he is by saying: 'I'm just a careless person who is unable to stay out of trouble.' This type of self-blame faults one's character and undermines self-esteem.

An example of such destructive self-blame occurred with 32-year-old Maria. For six months she harbored resentment toward her older sister because of a misunderstanding. One evening she lambasted her sister over the phone. Their mother, upon finding out what Maria had done, called and strongly reprimanded her.

"I got mad at my mother, but I was even more upset with myself, for I learned how much I had hurt my sister," explained Maria. Shortly afterward she yelled at her nine-year-old son, who was misbehaving. The boy, who became very upset, later said to her: "Mommy, you sounded like you wanted to kill me!"

Maria was crushed. She reported: "I felt that I was a terrible person. I thought, 'I can't do anything right!' That's all I could think about. Then the deep depression really began." Her self-blame proved destructive.

Does all of this mean that everyone with major depression has low self-esteem? Of course not. The causes are complex and varied. Even when the result is what the Bible calls 'pain of heart,' there are many emotions that cause this, including unresolved anger, resentment, guilt—real or exaggerated—and unsettled conflicts with others. (Proverbs 15:13) All of these can lead to a stricken spirit, or depression.

When Sarah realized that her thinking was at the root of much of her depression, at first she was crushed. "But then I felt a measure of relief," she confided, "because I realized that if my thinking caused it, then my thinking could also fix it." Sarah said this thought was exciting to her, explaining: "I realized that when I changed the way I was thinking about certain things, this could affect my life from here on for good."

Sarah made the necessary changes, and her depression lifted. Maria, Margaret, and Elizabeth likewise won their fight. What changes did they make?

Winning the Fight Against Depression

"BY SKILLFUL direction you will carry on your war," states Proverbs 24:6. Skill, not just good intentions, is needed to win a battle. Certainly, if depressed, you do not want inadvertently to cause yourself to feel worse. For instance, a 1984 study of depressed persons found that some tried to cope with their depression by 'taking anger out on other people, reducing tension by drinking more, eating more, and taking more tranquilizing drugs.' The result: "more depression and physical symptoms."

Some depressed persons fail to seek skillful direction because of their fear of being viewed as mentally weak. Yet, major depression is a sign neither of mental weakness nor of spiritual failure. Research indicates that this severe disorder may exist when there is a certain chemical malfunction in the brain. Since a physical illness may cause this, if you have been severely depressed for longer than two weeks, a medical examination may be advisable. If no physical illness is found to be contributing to the problem, often the disorder can be improved by adjusting the thinking pattern along with some help from appropriate medication or nutrients.* Winning the fight against depression does not mean that you will never have a depressed mood again. Sadness is a part of life. Yet, skillfully directing your blows will help you deal with depression better.

A doctor will often prescribe antidepressants. These are drugs designed to clear up the chemical imbalance. Elizabeth, mentioned earlier, used these, and within weeks her mood began to improve. "Still, I had to cultivate a positive attitude to work along with the drugs," she said. "With the 'push' from the medicine, I was determined to get well. I also maintained a daily exercise program."

However, the use of antidepressants is not always successful. There are also troublesome side effects for some. And even if the chemical malfunction is corrected, unless one's thinking is corrected, the depression may return. Much relief, however, can come by being willing to . . .

Open Up Your Feelings

Sarah deeply resented the one-sided load of family responsibilities that she carried, as well as the pressures of a secular job. (See page 7.) "But I just stuffed my feelings inside me," explained Sarah. "Then one night when I felt so hopeless, I phoned my younger sister, and for the first time in my life, I began to pour out my feelings. This was a turning point, as that call brought such relief."

So, if depressed, seek out an *empathetic person* in whom you can confide. This one may be a marriage mate, close friend, relative, minister, doctor, or trained counselor. One of the essentials in defeating depression, according to a study reported in the *Journal*

* *Awake!* does not endorse or promote any form of treatment but provides current information to be helpful. See "Attacking Major Depression—Professional Treatments" in our October 22, 1981, issue. To overcome the simple blues, which are quite different from major depression, see "How Can I Get Rid of the Blues?" in our October 8, 1982, issue.

Pouring out your feelings to an empathetic confidant can be a healing process and provide great relief

of Marriage and the Family, is "having a support helper available with whom to share the tribulations of life."

Putting your feelings into words is a healing process that prevents your mind from trying to deny the reality of the problem or loss and, hence, leaving this unresolved. But open up your real feelings. Don't allow a sense of false pride, wanting to have an undaunted-by-adversity appearance, to inhibit you. "Anxious care in the heart of a man is what will cause it to bow down, but the good word is what makes it rejoice," states Proverbs 12:25. Yet, only by opening up can others begin to understand your "anxious care" and thus give that "good word" of encouragement.

"I just wanted sympathy when I called my sister, but I got a lot more," recalled Sarah. "She helped me to see where my thinking was wrong. She told me that I was putting too much responsibility on myself. Though at first I didn't want to hear this, when I began to apply her counsel, I could sense that a huge load began to be lifted." How true are the words of Proverbs 27:9: "Oil and incense are what make the heart rejoice, also the sweetness of one's companion due to the counsel of the soul."

There is sweetness in having a friend or a mate who talks frankly and helps you to put things in proper perspective. This may help you to focus on just one problem at a time. So rather than becoming defensive, cherish such "skillful direction." You may need someone who, after several conversations, can offer some short-term goals that will indicate steps you can take to change or modify your situation so as to reduce or eliminate the source of the emotional strain.*

Fighting depression often requires contending with feelings of low self-esteem. How can these be skillfully resisted?

Fighting Low Self-Esteem

For instance, Maria, as the preceding article shows, became depressed after conflicts within her family. She concluded: 'I am a terrible person and can't do anything right.' This was wrong. If she had just analyzed her conclusions, she could have challenged these by reasoning: 'I do some things right and some wrong, just like other people. I made a couple of mistakes, and I need to work on being more thoughtful, but let's not blow this all out of proportion.' Such reasoning would have left her self-esteem intact.

So often that overly critical inner voice that condemns us is wrong! Some typical distorted thoughts that breed depression are listed in the accompanying box. Learn to

* The confidant of a depressed person must not only avoid judgmental statements that would add to that one's feelings of guilt and worthlessness but also not be unrealistically optimistic. Our next issue will have information on how others can help depressed ones.

recognize such erroneous thoughts and mentally challenge their validity.

Another victim of low self-esteem was Jean, a 37-year-old single parent. "I was under strain trying to rear two boys. But when I saw other single parents get married, I thought, 'Something must be wrong with me,'" she explained. "By dwelling on just negatives, these snowballed, and I ended up hospitalized for depression."

"After leaving the hospital," Jean continued, "I read in the *Awake!* of September 8, 1981, a list of 'Thoughts That Can Incline One to Depression.' Each night I read that list. Some of the wrong thoughts were, 'My value as a person depends on what others think of me,' 'I should never feel hurt; I should always be happy and serene,' 'I should be the perfect parent.' I tended to be a perfectionist, so as soon as I would think that way, I'd pray to Jehovah to help me stop. I learned that negative thinking leads to low self-esteem, for all you see is the trouble in your life and not the good that God has given you. By forcing myself to avoid certain incorrect thoughts, I got over my depression." Do some of your thoughts need to be challenged or rejected?

Is It My Fault?

Although Alexander was very depressed, he managed to teach a school class. (See page 3.) When some of his pupils failed a very important reading test, he became suicidal. "He felt that he had failed," reported Esther, his wife. "I told him it was not his fault. You can't have 100-percent success." Yet, his overwhelming guilt closed his mind and led him to suicide. Often, exaggerated guilt is caused by assuming an unrealistic responsibility for the behavior of other people.

Even in the case of a child, a parent can strongly influence his life but not absolutely control it. If something does not go as well as you had planned, ask yourself: Did I face unforeseen occurrences beyond my control? (Ecclesiastes 9:11) Did I do all I *reasonably* could within the limits of my physical, mental, and emotional resources? Were my expectations just too high? Do I need to learn

Distorted Thinking Patterns

All-or-nothing thinking: You see things in black-and-white categories. If your performance falls short of perfection, you see yourself as a total failure.

Overgeneralization: You see a single negative event as a never-ending pattern of defeat. For instance, after an argument with a friend, you may conclude: 'I'm losing all my friends. Nothing turns out right for me.'

Disqualifying the positive: You reject positive experiences by insisting that they "don't count" or, "I'm not worthy of such." By dwelling on a single negative detail, your whole view darkens.

Jumping to conclusions: You arbitrarily conclude that someone doesn't like you, and you don't bother to check this out. Or you are absolutely convinced that things will always turn out badly.

Magnification or minimization: You exaggerate the importance of things (such as your own mistake or someone else's achievement) or play down things until they appear tiny (your own desirable qualities or the other fellow's imperfections). You make nightmarish disasters out of commonplace negative events.

Personalization: You see yourself as the cause of some negative external event that, in fact, you were not primarily responsible for.

Based on *Feeling Good—The New Mood Therapy,* by David D. Burns, M.D.

to be more reasonable and modest?—Philippians 4:5.

But what if you do make a serious mistake, *and it is your fault?* Will continuing to beat yourself mentally change the mistake? Is not God willing to forgive you, even "in a large way," if you are genuinely repentant? (Isaiah 55:7) If God will "not for all time keep finding fault," should you sentence yourself to a lifetime of mental suffering over such wrongdoing? (Psalm 103:8-14) Not constant sadness but taking positive steps to 'right the wrong' is what will please Jehovah God and also ease your depression.—2 Corinthians 7:8-11.

'Forget the Things Behind'

Some of our emotional problems may be rooted in the past, especially if we were victims of unjust treatment. Be willing to forgive and forget. 'Forgetting is not easy!' you may be thinking. True, but it is better than destroying the rest of your life by dwelling on what cannot be undone.

"Forgetting the things behind and stretching forward to the things ahead," wrote the apostle Paul, "I am pursuing down toward the goal for the prize." (Philippians 3:13, 14) Paul did not dwell on the wrong course he had pursued in Judaism, including even approving of murder. (Acts 8:1) No, he concentrated his energies on qualifying for the future prize of eternal life. Maria also learned not to dwell on the past. At one time she blamed her mother for the way she had reared her. Her mother had stressed excellence and physical beauty; hence, Maria was a perfectionist and tended to be jealous of her attractive sister.

"This underlying jealousy was the root of the conflicts, but I blamed my family for the way I acted. Then I came to the point where I thought, 'Really, what difference does it make whose fault it was?' Maybe I have some bad traits because of the way Mother raised me, but the point is to *do something about it!* Don't continue to act that way." This realization helped Maria make the needed mental adjustments to win her fight against depression.—Proverbs 14:30.

Your Real Value

All factors considered, successfully fighting depression requires having a balanced view of your own worth. "I would say to every one of you," wrote the apostle Paul, "not to estimate himself above his real value, but to make a sober rating of himself." (Romans 12:3, *Charles B. Williams*) False pride, ignoring our limitations, and perfectionism are all an overestimate of ourselves. These tendencies must be resisted. Yet, avoid going to the other extreme.

Jesus Christ stressed the individual worth of each of his disciples by saying: "Five sparrows sell for two coins of small value, do they not? Yet not one of them goes forgotten before God. But even the hairs of your heads are all numbered. Have no fear; you are worth more than many sparrows." (Luke 12:6, 7) We are of such worth to God that he takes note of even the minutest detail about us. He knows things about us that we do not know ourselves because he deeply cares about each of us.—1 Peter 5:7.

Recognizing the personal interest God had in her helped Sarah to improve her feelings of self-worth. "I always felt awe for the Creator, but then I came to realize that he cared about me as a person. No matter what my children do, no matter what my husband does, regardless of how my mom and dad raised me, I realized I had a personal friendship with Jehovah. Then my self-esteem really began to grow."

Since God considers his servants precious, our worth does not rest on approval by another human. Of course, rejection is unpleasant. But when we use another's approval or dis-

approval as the yardstick by which to measure our own worth, we are making ourselves vulnerable to depression. King David, a man after God's own heart, was on one occasion called a "good-for-nothing man," literally, a "man of worthlessness." Yet, David realized that the name-caller had a problem, and he did not view the remark as a final judgment of his own worth. In fact, as people often do, Shimei later apologized. Even if someone justly criticizes you, recognize it as directed against a specific thing you did, not your worth as a person.—2 Samuel 16:7; 19: 18, 19.

Sarah's personal study of the Bible and Bible-based literature and attending the meetings of Jehovah's Witnesses helped her lay the foundation for a relationship with God. "But my changed attitude about prayer was the biggest help," recalled Sarah. "I used to think that we only prayed to God about big things and should not bother him with insignificant problems. Now I feel I can talk to him about anything. If I'm nervous about making a decision, I ask him to help me be calm and reasonable. I draw even closer as I see him responding to my prayers and helping me get through each day and each trying circumstance."—1 John 5:14; Philippians 4:7.

Indeed, the assurance that God has a personal interest in you, understands your limitations, and will give you the strength to tackle each day is the key in the fight against depression. Yet, at times, regardless of what you do, the depression lingers.

'Hour-by-Hour' Endurance

"I have tried *everything,* including nutritional supplements and antidepressants," bemoans Eileen, a 47-year-old mother who has struggled with major depression for years. "I have learned to adjust wrong thinking, and this has helped me to be a more reasonable person. But the depression remains."

God considers even little sparrows of worth, so of what greater worth God considers us

The fact that depression persists does not mean that you are not fighting it skillfully. Doctors do not know all the answers to treating the disorder. In some situations the depression is a side effect of some medicines taken to treat a serious illness. Thus, the use of such medicines is a trade-off because of the benefit they may be in treating some other medical problem.

Of course, pouring out your feelings to another understanding person helps. Yet, no other human can really *know* the depth of your agony. However, God knows and will help. "Jehovah has provided strength to keep trying," revealed Eileen. "He has not let me give up, and he has given me hope."

With God's help, emotional support from others, and your own efforts, you will not be overwhelmed so that you give up. In time you can adjust to the depression, just as you would to any chronic illness. Endurance is not easy, but it is possible! Jean, whose severe depression persisted, said: "We didn't even take it day by day. It was more like hour by hour." With both Eileen and Jean, the hope promised in the Bible kept them going. What is that hope?

A Precious Hope

The Bible speaks of a time in the near future when God "will wipe out every tear from [mankind's] eyes, and death will be no more, neither will mourning nor outcry nor pain be anymore. The former things have passed away." (Revelation 21:3, 4) God's Kingdom will then bring about the complete physical and mental healing of all its earthly subjects. —Psalm 37:10, 11, 29.

Not only will physical pain be removed but painful distress and affliction of the heart will disappear too. Jehovah promises: "The former things will not be called to mind, neither will they come up into the heart. But exult, you people, and be joyful forever in what I am creating." (Isaiah 65: 17, 18) What a relief it will be to mankind to be relieved of the burdens of the past and to awaken each day with crystal-clear minds, eager to tackle the day's activity! No longer will humans be hampered by the haze of a depressed mood.

With 'no more death, mourning, or outcry,' gone will be the sense of tragic losses and daily emotional strains that now lead to depression. Since loving-kindness, trueness, and peace will permeate dealings that people have with one another, bitter conflicts will cease. (Psalm 85: 10, 11) As the effects of sin are removed, what great joy to be able finally to measure up perfectly to God's standard of righteousness and have full peace within!

This exciting prospect is a great incentive to keep fighting, no matter how intense depression becomes. For in God's new world, perfected humans will have gained an *absolute* victory over depression. What good news that is!

Wisdom Beyond Her Years

IT WAS midnight. Twelve-year-old Lisa, acutely ill and weak, was startled when a nurse entered her hospital room to give her a blood transfusion.

Lisa pleaded: "How can you force this on me? My dad and my mom aren't even here!" The nurse gave it to her anyway.

The Question of Treatment

Lisa, a bright, active, talented "A" student, had enjoyed life with her parents and five-year-old brother in Winnipeg, Canada. In the spring of 1985 she was given an antibiotic for a case of tonsillitis and suffered a severe reaction. Her health waned, and soon afterward she was diagnosed as having acute myeloid leukemia, a condition that is usually fatal.

Winnipeg physicians prescribed intensive chemotherapy and multiple blood transfusions. Chemotherapy is a treatment by toxic chemicals. The theory is that these poisons kill the disease. However, Lisa and her parents wanted alternative treatment. They objected to blood transfusions for Scriptural reasons. (Acts 15: 28, 29) They also found repugnant the agony and debilitating side effects of intensive chemotherapy.

Finally, Lisa's parents took her to Toronto's Hospital for Sick Children, hoping to find cooperative doctors. But instead of cooperation, that midnight blood transfusion was administered. The next morning, October 25, a court order was sought to authorize the hospital to use force in imposing this treatment. Judge David R. Main expressed reservations. He appointed Sarah Mott-Trille as Lisa's lawyer. The case was adjourned to Monday, October 28, 1985.

The Trial

The trial lasted five days and was held in a room at the hospital. Each day, at her own request, Lisa was wheeled into the room on her hospital bed. Although very ill, she was determined to be personally involved in decisions that involved her faith.

The hearing began with the physician's proposal for treatment. In his written judgment, Judge Main explained: "The treatment as described by the physicians who have testified before this court is both intensive and aggressive and could go on for a considerable period of time. It is anticipated that repeated blood transfusions would be required to maintain the patient." It was also noted that the side effects of the chemotherapy are many and extreme.

The drama escalated sharply on the fourth day. Lisa was propped up so she

Lisa, age 12, maintained her integrity under great adversity and opposition

could directly address the judge. Everyone in the courtroom, including Lisa, knew she was facing death whether she received blood transfusions or not. There is no cure for the leukemia from which she was suffering.

Lisa's lawyer questioned her with care and sensitivity. There were few dry eyes as Lisa courageously discussed her impending death, her faith in Jehovah, and her determination to remain obedient to his law on the sanctity of blood. She said she would strenuously and physically resist any effort to give her a blood transfusion. Her simple and bold statement touched everyone's heart.

"Now you told us you believe in God," her lawyer said. "Can you tell us if he's real to you?"

"Well, he's like a friend," Lisa responded. "Sometimes when I'm by myself, I can talk to him . . . as a friend; if I'm scared and I'm home by myself, I ask him for help and I just talk to him like he's in the room beside me."

"Lisa, if someone was to say to you, what are the most important things in your life, what would you say?"

"My obedience to Jehovah God and my family," Lisa answered.

Her lawyer asked: "Lisa, would it make any difference to you to know that a Court orders you to take blood transfusions?"

"No, because I am still going to remain faithful to my God and listen to his commands because God is a lot more superior than any court or any man."

Lisa explained her feelings about the one blood transfusion already forced on her, saying: "It made me feel like a dog being used for an experiment, because I couldn't control anything. Just because I'm a minor, people feel they can do anything to me, but I feel that I have a right to know what's going to happen to me and why they're doing these treatments and why they're doing them without my parents' consent."

"Did you sleep that night?" her lawyer asked.

"No, I didn't."

"What were your concerns?"

"Well, my concerns were what was Jehovah God going to think of me because I know that if I go against his wishes, I don't

There were few dry eyes as Lisa courageously discussed her impending death

have his promise of everlasting life, and I was very sickened to my stomach that I was getting somebody else's blood into me, because there's always the possibility of getting AIDS or hepatitis or some other infection, and all I did that night was just stare at that blood and look at it."

"Lisa, can you think of a comparison to explain to the judge what getting a blood transfusion is like against your will?"

"Well, the one I can think of is rape because . . . a rape is getting something done without your will, and it's just like that."

The Decision

Day five was climactic. From the beginning Judge Main had been fair and balanced. Would his kindness be reflected in his decision? He concluded: "The child Lisa Dorothy K. is to be returned to the custody, care and control of her parents."

Judge Main explained the reasons for his judgment in much detail. Among other things, he said: "Lisa's position is now and has been from the day she saw a documentary on this disease, that she does not want any part of chemotherapy and blood transfusions. She takes this position not only because it offends her religious beliefs, and I am satisfied that it does, but also because she does not want to experience the pain and anguish associated with the treatment process. . . . I refuse to make any order which would put this child through that ordeal. I find the proposal that she undergo this treatment totally unacceptable."

Concerning the surreptitious midnight transfusion forced on Lisa, Judge Main said: "I must find that [Lisa] has been discriminated against on the basis of her religion and her age pursuant to subsection 15(1) [of The Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms]. In these circumstances, upon being given a blood transfusion, her right to the security of her person pursuant to Section 7 was infringed. As a result, even if she could be said to be a child in need of protection, the application must be dismissed pursuant to subsection 24(1) of the Charter."

Finally, Judge Main reaffirmed his personal admiration for Lisa, noting: "Lisa is a beautiful, extremely intelligent, articulate, courteous, sensitive and most importantly, a courageous person. She has wisdom and maturity well beyond her years and I think it would be safe to say that she has all of the positive attributes that any parent would want in a child. She has a well thought out, firm and clear religious belief. In my view, no amount of counselling from whatever source or pressure from her parents or anyone else, including an order of this court, would shake or alter her religious beliefs.

"I believe that Lisa K. should be given the opportunity to fight this disease with dignity and peace of mind. That can only be achieved by acceptance of the plan put forward by her and her parents."

Integrity to the End

Lisa and her family left the hospital that day. Lisa did, indeed, fight her disease with dignity and peace of mind. On November 17, 1985, she died peacefully at home, in the loving arms of her mother and father.

"This case constitutes a new precedent."—British Columbia Health Association

During the trial, Lisa described a conversation with her mother at the time her leukemia was first diagnosed, explaining: "I discussed with my Mom all the possibilities I have, and we read the Bible together, and we read other books from our religion together, and I told her, . . . 'If I do die, I will see you in the new order, and I will have a guaranteed hope of seeing you and living forever on a paradise on earth.'"

A Lesson for Hospitals and Doctors

Canadian medical-legal writers L. E. and F. A. Rozovsky noted in *Canadian Health Facilities Law Guide:* "Hospitals and physicians alike can draw certain lessons from this decision. In particular, they should proceed carefully with treatment over the known objection of pediatric patients or their parents. Care should be taken to avoid forced treatment to areas mapped out as 'discriminatory' in Section 15(1) of the Charter, including age, sex, religion or ethnic origin."

In Our Next Issue

- *Liberation Theology —Will It Help the Poor?*
- *Defeating Depression —How Others Can Help*
- *Four Hundred Died, I Survived*

Yet, how should physicians "proceed carefully" and avoid such religious discrimination? The Rozovskys point out a balanced solution: "It must be remembered, however, that the basic duty of the health facility is *not* to be the patient's adversary. The real task is to do what is in the best interests of the patient. In this case the court found that the best interests favoured an alternate form of care."

Obviously, where the patient is one of Jehovah's Witnesses, his best interests will be met where family and physician cooperate in providing an alternative to blood transfusions. Doctors who have followed this course have not sacrificed good medical care. As the pediatric specialists at M. D. Anderson Hospital in Texas reported: "Transfusion therapy is not necessary as often as it is used. In this series of patients with cancer and related diseases, good medical care did not suffer as a result of withholding transfusions."

The implications of the case of Lisa are far-reaching. Already, following the lead of the Canadian court, a California judge has refused to force treatment on a 14-year-old girl. Additionally, on February 11, 1986, the British Columbia Health Association issued a directive to all hospital administrators based directly on Lisa's case, stating: "This case constitutes a new precedent."

In an area of legal and medical confusion, this decision has lit a beacon. It is just and right. The future will tell us how many doctors, hospitals, and judges will follow the humane and sensitive lead given us by Judge David R. Main and by Lisa.

Young People Ask. . .

Why Did Mom and Dad Split Up?

"Dad had left us before," says Denny. "But he always came back." This time, however, was different. Recalls Maurice, Denny's younger brother: "One day I was at my baby-sitter's house, from which I could see our backyard. I saw Dad trying to break into our house. I realized then that he wasn't living with us anymore. It turned out that Mom had changed the locks."

For Annette, the breakup of her parents had no such note of finality. "My folks were always splitting up—ever since I was eight," she recalls. "But they never stayed apart for long. After a couple of months, Mom would call Dad and say, 'OK, I forgive you,' and they'd get back together. But Dad is an alcoholic. He would just totally wreck Mom's world and then come back, and she'd forgive him. I resented her doing that."

DIVORCE. Separation. Breakups. Over a million youths a year in the United States alone witness the tragic breakup of their parents' marriage.

Divorce hurts. It often triggers an onslaught of shame, anger, anxieties, fears of abandonment, guilt, depression, feelings of profound loss—even a desire for revenge. The above youths expressed it this way:

"I was angry. I was glad that it was finally peaceful at home, but I was *never* glad Dad was gone. I didn't think it was right for Dad to leave!"—Maurice.

"I was sort of hurt and embarrassed. We had come into the neighborhood as a family, and now we were broken up. When people would ask, 'Where's your Dad?' I would give some excuse, but I would never say my folks were separated."—Denny.

"I felt rejected and guilty. Mom and I always had a close relationship, which Dad resented. I wondered if they might have got along better if it weren't for me."—Annette.

How Divorce Affects You

If your parents have recently obtained a divorce or a separation, you too might feel confused and angry. After all, our loving Creator meant for you to be raised by both a mother and a father who love you. (Ephesians 6:1-3) Yet, now you have been deprived of the daily presence of a parent you love. "I really looked up to my father and wanted to be with him," laments Paul, whose folks split up when he was seven. "But Mom got custody of us."

Being raised by just one parent—usually the mother—often means that you are also suffering economic deprivations. This was true of "fatherless" children even in Bible times. (Deuteronomy 10:17-19) Keith, for example, recalls the hardships following the breakups of his mother's two marriages:

"Dad took off when I was five years old. It was a nightmare. Life was so unstable; we moved every six months. Mom had no education, no job, nothing. We moved from apartment to apartment, often getting

thrown out because she couldn't pay the rent.

"Then Mom married a super nice guy. I really liked him. For once in my life, we had some stability and weren't moving around all the time. We lived in a house, not an apartment, with a yard and a dog! But soon they started fighting, and Mom finally said she wanted to leave. I jumped into the fight, screaming that I wanted to stay! It was to no avail, however. We moved in with an aunt."

Considering such hardships—not to mention being forced to choose between two people you love or being torn away from friends—you may bitterly resent your parents' divorce. The fact that you know of other families that have been through the same thing is of little comfort. 'Why did this happen to *my* folks?' you wonder.

Why Parents Break Up

True, your parents may occasionally have squabbled in front of you. They might have become violent. Even at that, you may never have dreamed they would split up! Some parents manage to keep their problems well hidden. "I don't remember my folks fighting," says Lynn, whose parents divorced when she was a child. "I *thought* they got along." Indeed, divorce researchers Judith S. Wallerstein and Joan Kelly found "that fully one-third of the children [of divorced parents] had only a brief awareness of their parent's unhappiness."

Although you beg your parents for an explanation, you may receive only vague or evasive generalities. Wallerstein and Kelly discovered that "four-fifths of the youngest children [of divorced parents] studied were not provided with either an adequate explanation or assurance of continued care. In effect, they awoke one morning to find one parent gone."

Understandably, then, a divorce under any circumstances can be a terrible blow. Even though the Bible counsels that "a wife should not depart from her husband" and "a husband should not leave his wife," marital breakups have become a painful fact of modern life. (1 Corinthians 7:10, 11) The reasons?

Sad to say, sometimes a parent is guilty of sexual misconduct. And when this occurs, God permits the innocent parent to obtain a divorce. (Matthew 19:9) In other cases, the "wrath and screaming and abusive speech" erupt into violence, causing a parent to fear for his or her physical well-being and that of the children.—Ephesians 4:31.

Some divorces, admittedly, are obtained on flimsy grounds, especially when couples are not willing to follow Bible principles. For example, rather than working out their problems, some selfishly divorce because they claim they are 'unhappy,' 'unfulfilled,' or 'no longer in love.' Needless to say, this is displeasing to the God who "has hated a divorcing." (Malachi 2:16) Jesus further indicated that some would break up their marriages because their mates became Christians.—Matthew 10:34-36.

Why Telling You Is Hard

Why your parents have broken up, though, may be a mystery to you. Nevertheless, their silence or vague answers do not mean they do not love you. Divorce stuns parents. Researcher Wallerstein says it takes the average woman from "3 to 3 1/2 years" to regain her balance after a divorce. And while men seem to recover more quickly, writer Frank Ferrara (himself divorced) confesses: 'It's a rare man who doesn't feel guilt, loneliness, anger, depression, sense of failure, abandonment.' Wrapped up in their own hurt, your parents may find it hard to talk about the divorce. As the Bible says: "Have you shown yourself discouraged in

the day of distress? Your power will be scanty."—Proverbs 24:10.

Furthermore, it usually takes two to 'tear down' a household, and your parents may find it awkward and embarrassing to admit to their failures. (Compare Proverbs 14:1.) At times even a parent whose mate has committed adultery is reluctant to reveal the indiscretion of his or her mate.

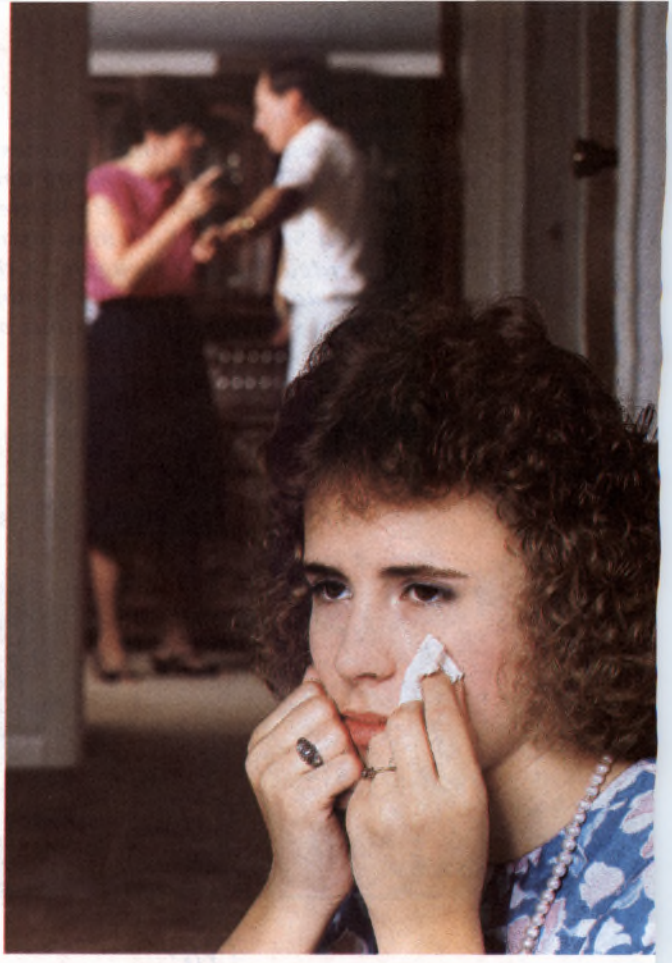
What You Can Do

Though being in the dark is frustrating, it does you little good to respond with anger and rage. Instead, use thinking ability and discernment to safeguard yourself from lasting emotional harm. (Proverbs 2:11) Try to discern the right time to discuss calmly your concerns with your parents. (Proverbs 25:11) Let them know how saddened and confused you are over the divorce.

Perhaps your parents will give you a satisfactory explanation. If not, do not despair. Ask yourself, Is it really wrong for my parents to withhold information from me? Did not Jesus withhold information that he felt his disciples were not ready to handle? (John 16:12) And do not your parents have a right to privacy? Besides, if a parent has obtained a divorce on the grounds of sexual immorality, is not he or she exercising a Scriptural right?

Discern, too, the emotional state of your parents. As distressing—even catastrophic—as the divorce may seem to you, can you not see that it is equally distressing to your parents? Would it be realistic to expect lengthy explanations from them at this time?

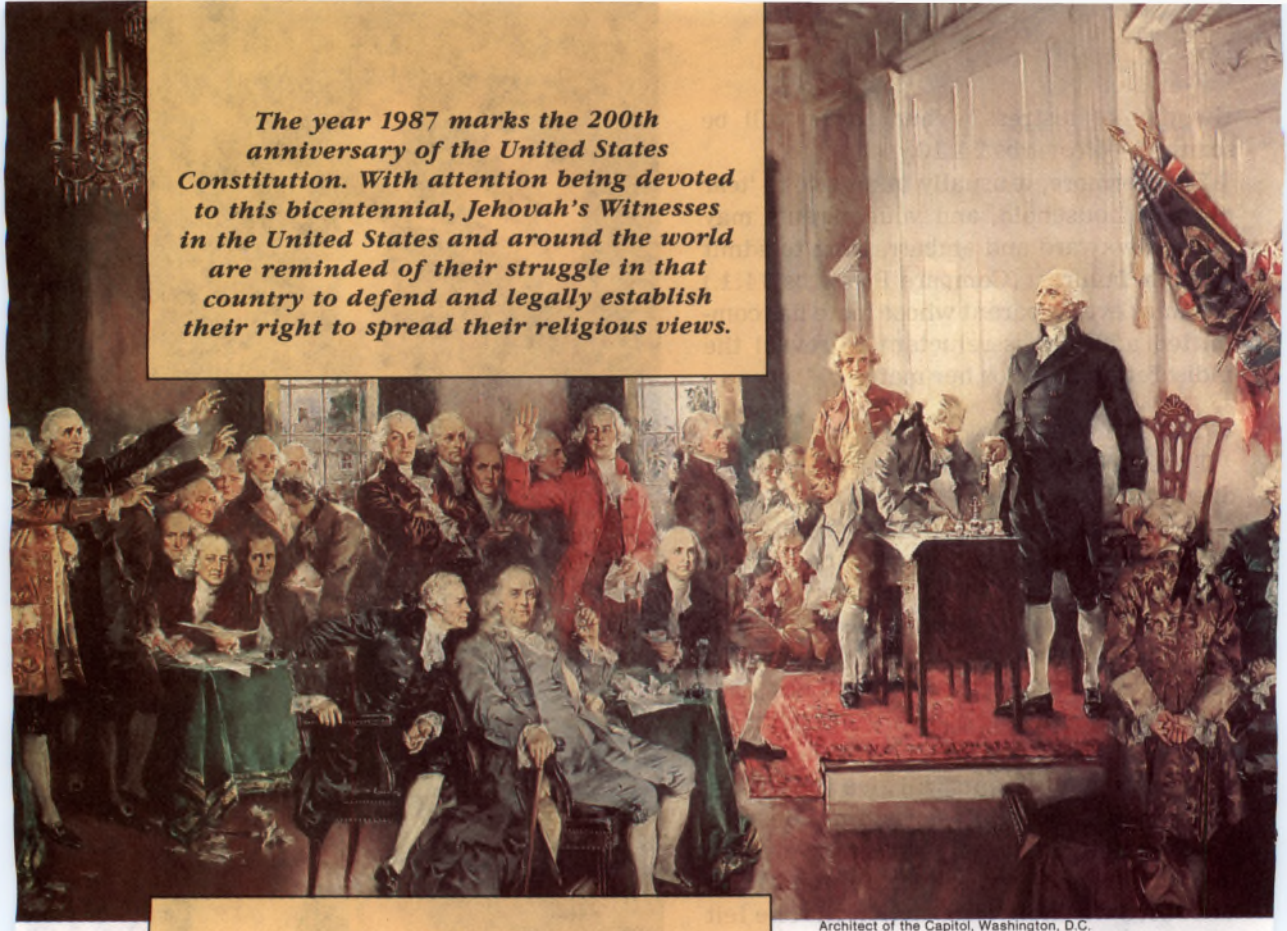
Finally, appreciate that the divorce, whatever the reason for it, is a dispute between them—*not* with you! In their study of 60 divorced families, Wallerstein and Kelly found that couples blamed each other, their employers, family members, and friends for the divorce. But, say the researchers: "No one, interestingly enough, blamed the children." So if you must live for a while without knowing why, take comfort in knowing that the divorce is not your fault. And that despite their problems with each other, your parents' feelings toward you are unchanged.



Watching the breakup of your parents' marriage is one of the most painful experiences imaginable

No, this will not erase the pain of your parents' divorce. But endeavoring to have some understanding of what has taken place between them can be the first step in putting your own life back on track.

The year 1987 marks the 200th anniversary of the United States Constitution. With attention being devoted to this bicentennial, Jehovah's Witnesses in the United States and around the world are reminded of their struggle in that country to defend and legally establish their right to spread their religious views.



Architect of the Capitol, Washington, D.C.

The *United States Constitution* *and* *Jehovah's Witnesses*

WHAT does the Constitution mean to you? To illustrate, suppose that in your community you wanted to distribute on the streets and from house to house printed information that you felt was of concern to the people. But what if you learned that to distribute such material was a violation of laws designed to ensure public peace and good order? Or what if you had to get a permit to do so, and officials would not issue one? Or you had to buy a license and doing so would be an economic burden for you?

This was the position in which Jehovah's Witnesses found them-

selves back in the 1930's and 1940's. They wanted to distribute printed matter containing their religious views. However, in many communities local laws and ordinances were used to hinder them. Thus, appeals were made on the basis of the U.S. Constitution, which guarantees freedom of speech and of the press. But in order to secure these constitutional rights, they had to take such matters to the courts. Let's take a look at how the Constitution guarantees individual rights.

Securing Individual Rights

Like any blueprint, a constitution sets forth a design for the accomplishment of an objective—in this case the government of a people. As stated in the United States Declaration of Independence, governments are instituted among men to secure for the governed certain "unalienable Rights."

The Preamble to the U.S. Constitution picks up this theme and states that the Constitution was ordained and established to secure "the Blessings of Liberty" for the people. The final draft of the Constitution was completed at Independence Hall in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, on September 17, 1787. This Constitution is unusual because it is the oldest written constitution still in effect.

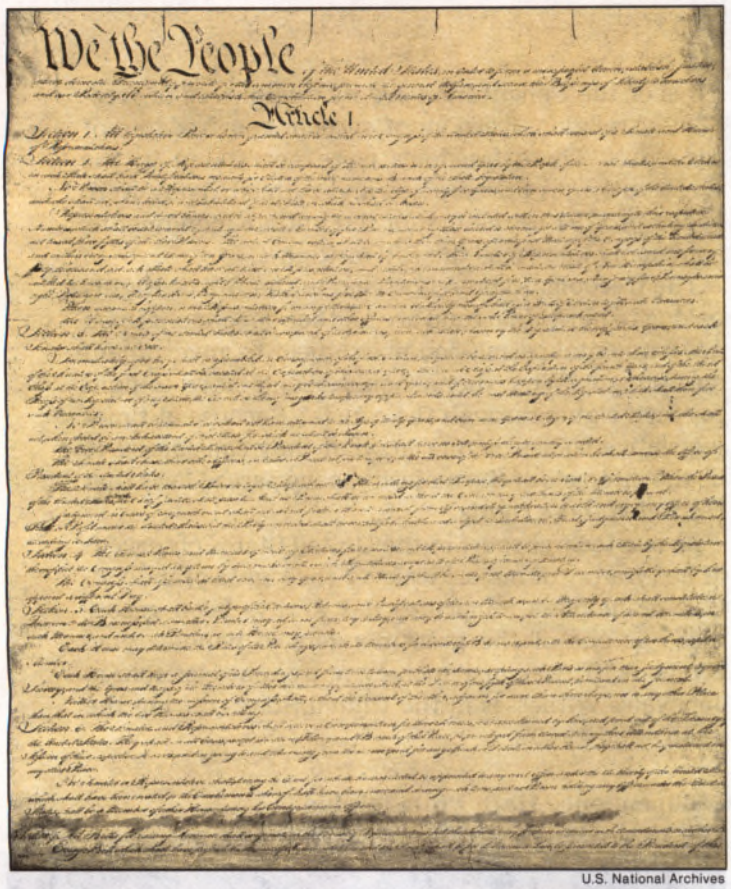
The U.S. Constitution is noted for its distrust of overly powerful government and its elevation of individual liberties above the reach of governmental interference. Among the best-known features of the Constitution are its guarantees of freedom of religion, freedom of speech, and freedom of the press. These freedoms were not stated in the Constitution as first drafted and ratified. They were added in 1791 as the first of ten initial amendments, commonly known as the Bill of Rights.

The freedoms expressly stated in the Bill of Rights belong to individuals and are neither dependent upon governmental permission nor subject to government curtailment. Why, then, should people have to fight for their rights through the courts? Because at times legislative bodies, acting in what they considered to be the interests of the majority, have passed laws that restricted those rights.

As one federal court in the United States observed: "The tyranny of majorities over the rights of individuals or helpless minorities has always been recognized as one of the great dangers of popular government." It was just such tyranny that confronted Jehovah's Witnesses in the United States during the 1930's and 1940's.

Independence Hall, Philadelphia, where the Constitution was formulated

Philadelphia Convention and Visitors Bureau



U.S. National Archives

The original Constitution is kept in the National Archives

Preachers or Peddlers?

As the second world war approached, the public preaching work of Jehovah's Witnesses was the focus of much opposition. Municipal ordinances requiring solicitors and peddlers to obtain permits were wrongfully applied to the Witnesses' preaching work. Realizing that this application of such laws violated their constitutional rights, the Witnesses challenged these ordinances by going about their preaching work without first obtaining permits. (Mark 13:10; Acts 4:19, 20) As a result, many Witnesses were arrested.

If the lower courts ruled against them, the Witnesses paid no fines but went to jail instead. They kept appealing the cases as high up in the court system as possible so as to build up a bulwark of favorable decisions that would stem this unconstitutional interference with their work. As time went on, the U.S. Supreme Court repeatedly struck down these ordinances as being either unconstitutional in themselves or as applied, and the convictions of Jehovah's Witnesses were reversed.

In addition to permit ordinances, license-tax laws were used to restrict the preaching work of Jehovah's Witnesses. Viewing such a tax as a temporal restriction on the divinely commissioned preaching activity, Jehovah's Witnesses refused to pay it. Again, many Witnesses were arrested, and again, the Supreme Court ruled in favor of the freedoms of speech and worship.

The Court stated that the privilege of freely disseminating religious teachings by the printed page "exists apart from state authority. It is guaranteed the people by the federal constitution." Simply put, the State could not take away what the Constitution had already given.

The Flag Salute

Jehovah's Witnesses have always been law-abiding citizens who intend no disrespect by their refusal to salute the flag of any country. The Witnesses believe that their paramount duty and allegiance belong to their God and Maker, Jehovah. (Luke 4:8) To pledge total allegiance to any earthly authority would be to put worldly interests before spiritual interests. (Acts 5:29) Despite this sincere motive, the Witnesses' refusal to salute the flag has often

been misunderstood and used as a basis for persecution.

As the second world war was approaching, local school boards and state legislatures in the United States promulgated mandatory flag-salute exercises to promote national unity and security. Despite the tide of popular opinion in support of these flag-salute requirements, Jehovah's Witnesses steadfastly refused to compromise their Bible-based principles.

In reviewing this state of affairs, the U.S. Supreme Court acknowledged that while school boards unquestionably had important and highly discretionary functions, those functions had to be performed within the bounds of the Constitution. A school board was not free to interfere with the fundamental constitutional rights guaranteed to the individual. The Supreme Court thus held that a school board's notions about methods of instilling appreciation for the flag and national heritage did not override a student's constitutional right of freedom of conscience in matters of religion.

The Supreme Court was not unaware of the gravity of its decision in view of the national war effort then in progress. But the Court did not shirk its duty and explained that under the U.S. Constitution, "freedom to differ is not limited to things that do not matter much. That would be a mere shadow of freedom. The test of its substance is the right to differ as to things that touch the heart of the existing order."

The Supreme Court concluded its flag-salute opinion with the following statement: "If there is any fixed star in our constitutional constellation, it is that no official, high or petty, can prescribe what shall be orthodox in politics, nationalism, religion, or other matters of opinion or force citizens to confess by word or act their faith therein."

The Witnesses' Contribution

In all, Jehovah's Witnesses have been successful in 23 appeals to the U.S. Supreme Court. They have made a tremendous contribution to the constitutional jurisprudence of the United States, as has been noted by many legal scholars. And it would have been impossible if Jehovah's Witnesses had not been willing to suffer indignities, beatings, and jailings in their efforts to be obedient to their God.

That the constitutional rights of freedom of religion, freedom of speech, and freedom of the press have been advanced and more clearly defined because of the Witnesses' endurance is really only a by-product of the Witnesses' higher objective of serving Jehovah in harmony with his Holy Word.

Jehovah's Witnesses are grateful for the privilege of serving the Sovereign of the Universe, Jehovah God, and they have used many means, including the protections afforded by the 200-year-old U.S. Constitution, to accomplish that end.

Constitution Backs Witnesses Again

On June 10, 1987, the courts once again ruled in favor of religious freedom for Jehovah's Witnesses on constitutional grounds. As reported in "The New York Times," the U.S. Court of Appeals for the Ninth Circuit ruled that freedom to act in harmony with their religious beliefs "must be tolerated by society, under the Constitution, 'as a price well worth paying to safeguard the right of religious difference that all citizens enjoy.'" The case involved the Witnesses' right to obey the Bible's command 'never to receive into your homes or say a greeting' to those who do "not remain in the teaching of the Christ."—2 John 9-11.

From Our Readers

My Life With Hemophilia

I must express how touching I found John A. Wortendyke's account "My Life With Hemophilia." (June 22, 1987) The amount of faith that he showed in Jehovah God is truly amazing. I am at present studying the Bible with the Witnesses, and reading about John has made my own problems seem small in comparison and has made me determined not to falter in my service to God.

A. C., England

Of all the wonderful experiences in your magazine, this has got to be the most touching, faith-strengthening article I've ever read. I would somehow like to tell John Wortendyke that my prayers are with him and his courageous family! As I read the article, I could feel my stomach muscles tighten every time he would have another bleeding episode. This is an experience I will keep in mind whenever I suffer sinus headaches, migraines, or attacks of arthritis!

D. S., United States

Africans Drinking Milk

Your article "Will Africa Ever Be Free From Hunger?" was particularly enlightening. (March 8, 1987) However, please be informed that your cover photo of the youngster with an apple and a glass of milk is not what we want to see in Africa. At least 70 percent of the world's black population is lactose intolerant. We will not do service to the native Africans by encouraging them to drink milk.

G. H., M.D., Hawaii

Our correspondent in South Africa states: "We checked with several Africans, and they said they had all drunk milk as children. The use of cattle and their milk has been important in the lives of black people of southern Africa from before the days of European settlement. In fact, the Zulu language has a word, 'ukukleza,' that describes the practice African herders have of milking a cow straight into their mouth. Of course, the situation may be different in other parts of Africa."—ED.

Breaking Free From Drugs

I wish to thank you for the article "Young People Ask . . . How Can I Break Free From Drugs?" (September 22, 1985) Some time ago, I suffered illness due to anxiety and stress, and my doctor prescribed a minor tranquilizer for me. I soon felt much better and was grateful for the medication. Later, after learning of the dangers of these drugs and realizing that I no longer required it, I decided to stop taking it. After four and a half years of dependence on it, I knew there would be some withdrawal effects. But by constantly applying the appropriate guidance and counsel in the article, I finally succeeded.

G. O., England

What Is Happening to Our Forests?

Thank you for the issue on "What Is Happening to Our Forests?" (June 22, 1987) Having to get ready for an oral examination in geography on the ecological problem, I used these articles, which were of great help. And I obtained a good result in the test. I have used articles published in *Awake!* before for school research. Heartfelt thanks!

G. C., Italy

Watching the World

Hunger Amid Plenty

Because of technical and scientific advances in agriculture, more food is now actually being harvested than the world needs. Yet, the number of hungry people in the world increased to 512 million in 1985. "The increase in hunger is coming at a time when the world is awash with cheap surplus food," reports *The New York Times.*

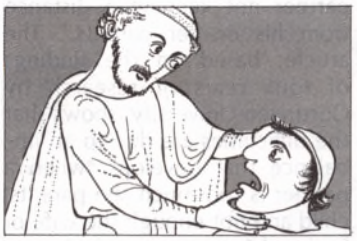
Children suffer the most. According to the United Nations World Food Council, an estimated 40,000 children die every day from hunger-related causes. Two thirds of those undernourished are found in Asian countries, some of which now export food that increasing numbers of their people cannot afford to buy. "Today hunger is less the result of absolute food shortages than of political situations and policy decisions," says the *Times.*

Fear of War by Accident

Soviet and United States scientists have recently warned that the ever more sophisticated technology being used in nuclear defense systems actually heightens rather than lowers the risk of accidental nuclear war. According to the *Sunday Times* of London, the scientists concluded at a joint meeting in California "that there was a significant probability that a nuclear war could start by accident unless there was a change in the technology that governed the systems." So far, all errors that might have led to launching some of the world's 50,000 nuclear warheads have been spotted. But, say the scientists, this will not always be the case. "If we keep going along the present path, we're going to blow ourselves up," predicts Dr. Martin Hellman of Stanford University.

Unhealthy Fillings?

"Contrary to popular belief, so-called 'silver' amalgam fillings



are really composed of nearly 50 percent mercury—a known toxin," states *Your Health.* Dr. Hal Huggins, a dental researcher in Colorado, claims that trace amounts of the element seep into the body and can cause symptoms such as chronic fatigue, severe depression and anxiety, numbing of extremities, and facial tics. He also points to epilepsy patients who improved when their mercury fillings were removed. Dr. Huggins estimates that some 10,000 of the 130,000 dentists in the United States have stopped using mercury and now use other compounds available.

An Added Benefit

Researchers have now added something new to the list of benefits from breast-feeding —straighter teeth. According to a study at the Johns Hopkins School of Public Health, growth patterns in the mouth caused by breast-feeding differ from those caused by bottle-feeding. This is because the infants must use their tongues and mouths differently. In bottle-feeding, the tongue is moved forward to stop milk flow from the nipple during swallowing. In breast-feeding, that forward thrust is unnecessary, and infants must use their mouth muscles more vigorously. Children breast-fed for more than a year had the fewest problems with tooth alignment.

Topping Five Billion

Matej Gaspar, a baby boy born in Zagreb, Yugoslavia, in

mid-July, has been named the world's five billionth human, although, of course, no one knows for sure who the five billionth person was or where he was born. Zagreb was chosen as the place of birth, since UN Secretary-General Javier Pérez de Cuéllar was in that city at the time specified by demographers. "In a speech marking the occasion," says *Time* magazine, "Pérez de Cuéllar drew attention to the fact that 90% of this year's 120 million births will occur in countries where food, health services and education are inadequate." The earth's population hit four billion in 1974.

Japanese "Threat"

Japan's "defense agency is proposing for the first time to build its own jet fighters instead of buying American-made aircraft," reports the New York newspaper *Newsday*. "[Defense] analysts see the proposed Japanese plane as a threat to U.S. domination of the aerospace market in Southeast Asia." While Japanese companies have been working along with American firms in producing helicopters and trainer airplanes, a home-built fighter would be a first for them in the post-World War II world. Says David Smith, editor of the trade publication *Journal of Defense and Diplomacy:* "Knowing what the Japanese did with cars, the last thing the U.S. aerospace industry wants them to do is make airplanes."

Eye Security

Eye prints have taken over from fingerprints as the method of foolproof security. "Fingerprints can be copied by someone using specially-designed plastic gloves," says Chuck Fargo, representing the company marketing the new system. As reported in *The Times* of London, identification is made by a microprocessor that scans the pattern of blood vessels in the eye and compares it with the pattern on file in a data base. As with fingerprints, each individual's eye pattern is said to be unique. The advantage of eye patterns is that they cannot be predicted, copied, or changed.

Another Cause for Divorce

"Failed marriages are not always the result of incompatibility or self-generated problems,"

says *The German Tribune*. "Breakdown can be caused by one partner not keeping a distance from his or her parents." The article, based on the findings of four years of research by Göttingen University, shows that the difficulties are due to an imbalance that develops "when a partner is too much the parents' child and not enough the wife or husband." It is mental dependence on parents, often deeply rooted and unconsciously adopted, that precipitates the divorce. Persons who are "married more with their parents than they are with their spouse" will also often accept parental criticism of their mate.

Airport Bird Patrol

Travelers landing at New York's Kennedy Airport are usually unaware of a potential accident threat: birds. Hit by planes or sucked into jet engines, birds cause from $25 million to $40 million in damage to commercial aircraft each year. Because of its close proximity to the Jamaica Bay Wildlife Refuge and the Edgemere garbage dump —both of which attract hordes of birds—Kennedy Airport has more problems with birds than other airports have. Gulls are the worst problem at Kennedy, accounting for up to 90 percent of all bird strikes. An eight-member bird patrol has the job of scaring the birds away from the runways, using exploding projectiles and tape-recorded gull distress calls. Birds are killed by the patrol only as a last resort.

Rock Addiction

Heavy rock music "has a very strong narcotic effect," claims Dr. G. A. Aminev of Bashkiria University in the U.S.S.R. As reported in the Belfast *News Letter,* rock fans who do not get a regular fix of heavy rock music develop the characteristic withdrawal symptoms of drug addiction. "If you completely isolate them for a week from such music," says the Soviet psychologist, "they feel worse, their irritability rises, their hands start to tremble and their pulse is unstable." Some who were tested could not last even three days without their music before the symptoms appeared. Dr. Aminev also found that heavy-rock fans were only 50 percent as productive in work as those who did not listen to rock music.

Lamb Power

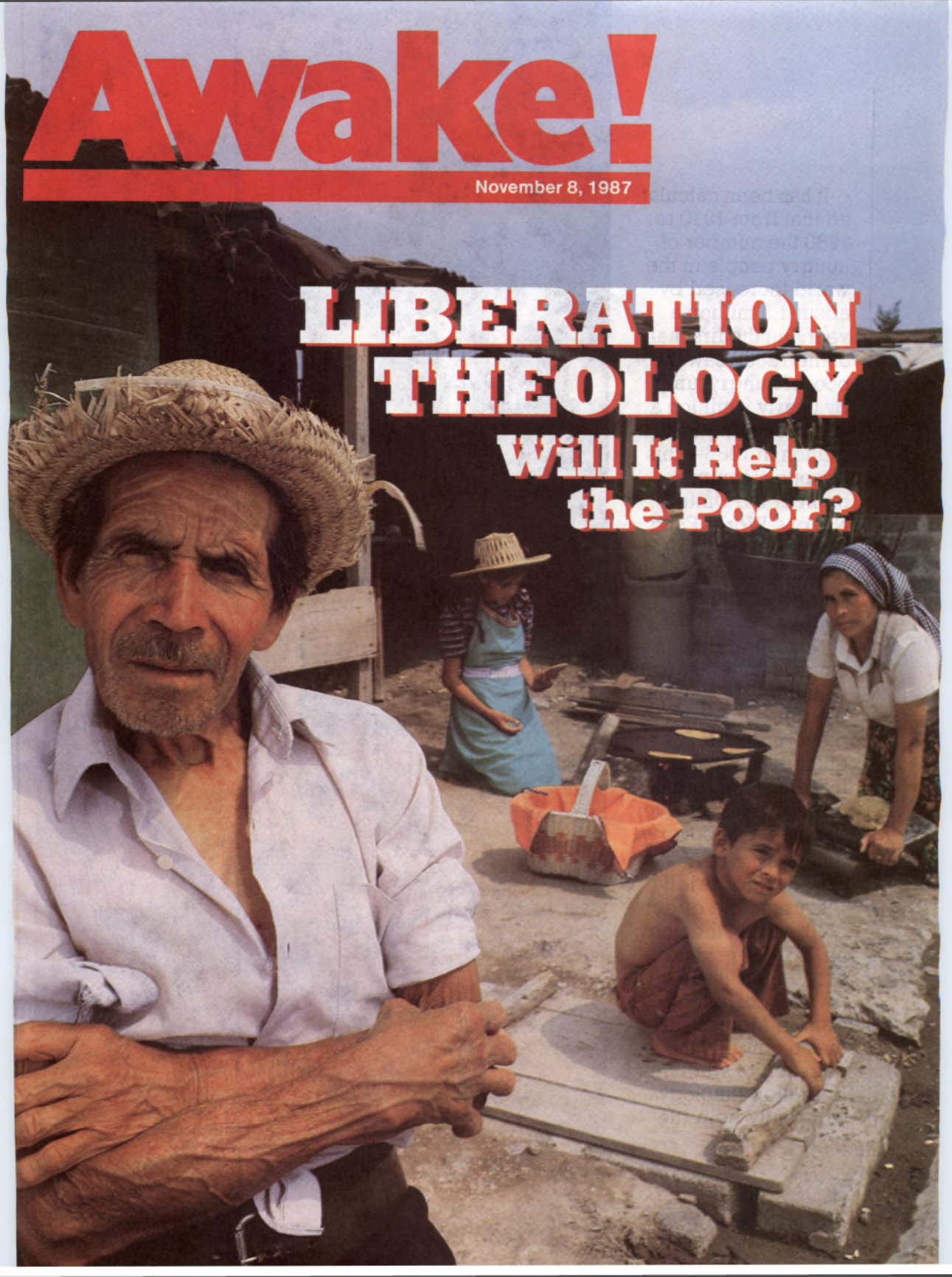
IN New Zealand, where sheep outnumber the three million inhabitants by 23 to 1, the animals are being used to produce some of the country's horsepower. The surplus fat of an average lamb is processed to produce a half gallon of methyl ester of tallow, which is blended with regular diesel fuel.

The resulting diesel-fuel blend has been successfully tested in everything from electrical generators to fishing boats.

Trucks and buses are said to get about ten miles per lamb. According to *Omni* magazine, "sheep could provide more than 10 percent of the country's diesel fuel and ensure that when world oil prices start to rise again, New Zealand drivers won't get fleeced at the pumps."

Awake!

November 8, 1987



LIBERATION THEOLOGY

Will It Help the Poor?

It has been calculated that from 1970 to 1980 the number of hungry people in the world increased by about 1.5 million a year. But the first half of the 1980's saw the pool of hungry jump by nearly 8 million a year, reaching 512 million in 1985—this despite a commitment of the United Nations World Food Council back in 1974 to eradicate world hunger within ten years.

Now, liberation theology is touted as a solution—getting the churches involved in the struggle to change national political and social structures so as to remove the causes of poverty.

Our issue of August 8, 1987, briefly discussed the effect of liberation theology on Third World poverty. In this issue, *Awake!* correspondent in Mexico further examines the question of whether liberation theology can really help the poor.

Third World Catholicism
How Stable?

By *Awake!* correspondent in Mexico

"ALL CHRISTIANS are disciples of a political prisoner who had been assassinated on the cross." 'Pope John Paul II is the most political pope we've ever seen!' "It is impossible to live our faith in isolation from politics." These are but a few of the many controversial statements that were made by Catholic theologians at a forum held in Mexico City in December 1986.

At the same meeting, there were those in the audience who did not agree with the speakers. Some began shouting in defense of the Catholic Church, while others supported the visiting theologians. Still others were speechless—confused by the lack of unity. Interrupting this disturbance, South African priest Bonganjalo Goba cried out: "Brothers, it looks as if we have a struggle of Catholics against Catholics!"

Why had such a scene taken place? What was the quarrel about?

The Issue

The subject under discussion was the practice of *liberation theology*—a struggle, backed by priests and theologians worldwide, to free the poor and oppressed people of Third World nations from "the socio-economical mechanisms that produce wealth at the expense of the poor."

Although some call it radical or revolutionary, others refer to it as a 'new expression of the Roman Catholic Church.' At the second Latin American Bishops' Conference, in Medellín, Colombia (1968), it was declared that the suffering of the people in Third World nations is caused by "structural sin" and that, to follow Christ, the church must exercise "a preferential option for the poor." But what may this entail?

Brazilian Catholic priest Leonardo Boff warns, as reported by a Mexico City newspaper, that "if an undivided society is not reached, the alternative is violence" and that it is "justifiable when fundamental rights are violated." Yes, Boff, along with other advocates of liberation theology throughout Third World nations, believes that terrorism, revolutions, and war may be necessary to relieve the poor of their "misery."

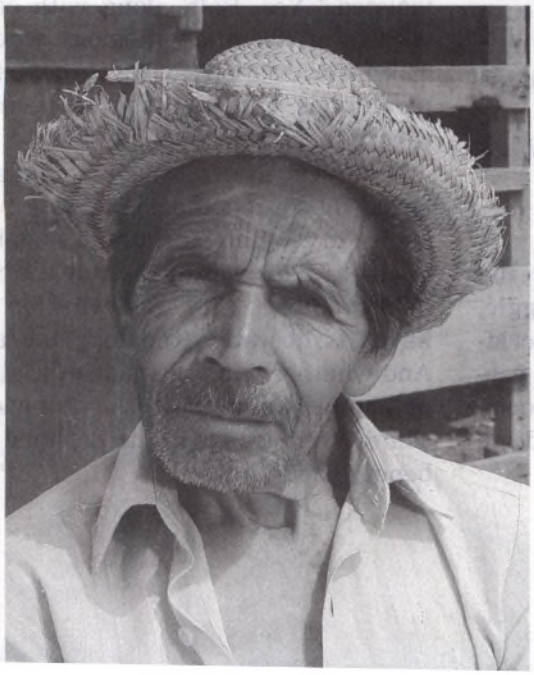
However, as *Newsweek* magazine reports, "liberation theology has a powerful ability to pit Roman Catholics against one another." This was evident at the meeting held in Mexico City. But what do you believe? Is liberation theology the answer? And whether you are a sincere Catholic or of another faith, how can knowledge of Third World trends in the Catholic Church benefit you?

Liberation Theology
Will It Help the Poor?

Millions 'living in dirt-floored stick houses work incredibly hard for just the necessities of life: they carry water; they travel by foot, by horse, by oxcart; they eat rice, beans and bananas. Although the land around them is rich, they know that they will probably always be poor. And so out of poverty, out of struggle, out of the worst kind of oppression, a new form of "the ancient church" is being born.'—*The Christian Century*.

"THE future of the church seems to lie with the poor." So reports *Newsweek* magazine. Some believe that this "new church" working for liberation may be "the single best hope" for the poor and for bringing a peaceful change to their countries. Is it?

First, let's examine liberation theology from the supporter's viewpoint. Why is armed struggle at times deemed necessary to liberate the poor? What conditions are said to justify liberation theology?



Poverty and Oppression

Two thirds of the world's population —mostly in Latin America, Africa, and Asia—live in degrading poverty, and reports of political violence from these continents are common. For "this downtrodden people," poverty, suffering, and captivity have always been a way of life. Here are some reports:

□ Brazilian liberation theologian Leonardo Boff says that in his country "a peasant is murdered every 22 hours."

□ "Nicaragua is attempting to organize a nation in the interest of those who have been held down for generations—80 per cent of the people." Yet, more than 40 percent of the country's economy is reportedly used for military defense.

□ According to Mexico City's daily *El Universal,* 40 million people are said to live in poverty due to

"social injustice." Forty percent of the population is said to be capable of reaching "minimum levels of subsistence," while only 18 percent has a "balanced diet."

□ One report states that in Guatemala 80 percent of the cultivable land belongs to just 2 percent of the population. Of children under five years of age, 81 percent suffer from malnutrition. During the past 30 years, there have been 100,000 acts of political violence and 38,000 kidnappings.

□ In the Philippines, 2 percent of the population possesses 75 percent of the riches. "If we are not going to solve that," says Filipino nun Mary John Mananzan, "we are not going to solve anything!"

People in many lands are said to live in constant fear of the authorities, unofficial armies, and vigilante groups. Thousands have taken refuge in nearby countries.

This is why some Catholic prelates are "taking the part of the poor." "We have heard a lot about confessors, virgins and prophets," says Boff, but "what about the peasants and laborers?" Yet, what do liberation theologians prescribe to remedy this situation? What does 'taking sides with the poor' mean?

The Third-World Struggle

"Poverty is an injustice" plead liberation theologians. So the "preferential option for the poor" is to "help them search for a dignified life that they have a right to." In his book *The Power of the Poor in History,* Peruvian Gustavo Gutiérrez, considered to be the father of liberation theology, says that "today more than ever before, it is important to belong to those who resist, who fight, who believe and hope." But according to liberation theologians, this is possible only through "the realization of social justice through deep structural

Awake!® November 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 21

Average Printing: 10,610,000

Published in 54 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Third World Catholicism—How Stable? .. 3
Liberation Theology —Will It Help the Poor? 4
A Dilemma for Sincere Catholics 7
Liberation Theology, the Bible, and You ... 8

Also in This Issue

Defeating Depression—How Others Can Help .. 12
Tips for Your Cassette Tapes 17
Young People Ask... Why Is It So Hard to Avoid Masturbation? 18
Four Hundred Died, I Survived 21
Why Giraffes Do Not Have Blood-Pressure Problems! 24
The Bible's Viewpoint Can the Bible Help the Lonely? 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
The Golden Gate Bridge—50 Years Old 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

25 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$5.00	$2.50
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$7.00	$3.50
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures* used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $5.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

transformations of society." How is this being done in some areas of the world?

□ In Haiti, the Catholic Church is said to have helped topple the Duvalier "tyranny."

□ Manila's Jaime Cardinal Sin is reported to have done "more than anyone else in the Philippines to bring down the dictatorship of Ferdinand Marcos."

□ Explains Bonganjalo Goba of South Africa: 'Our experience is that of a people arriving with the Bible in one hand and a gun in the other, promising to build God a church if he gives us the land.'

But poverty is just one of the problems. Illiteracy, unemployment, hunger, and sickness are also the results of a poor socioeconomic system in many lands. Consequently, the poor and oppressed are fighting back.

Yet, how do liberation theologians, such as Gutiérrez and Boff, reason on the matter using *the Bible?*

Liberation Theologians and the Bible

"Liberation is an essential part of the Bible," explains South Korean Catholic priest Augustine Ham Sei Ung. But in order to explain it, Gutiérrez says that "history . . . must be *reread from the side of the poor.*"

Thus, liberation theologians claim that certain Bible accounts, such as that of "the liberation of Israel," are political actions. "God . . . reveals himself through . . . 'the poor' and 'the least,'" says Gutiérrez. "If the church wishes to be faithful to . . . God . . . , it must become aware of itself *from beneath,* from among the poor of this world." So "God's love for his people," they reason, "could be manifested politically" today as well.

How do liberation theologians feel about the relationship between the Bible and politics? Leonardo Boff explained to *Awake!* that "it is not the Bible's function to be a book of inspirations of political methods and political alternatives; rather, the Bible is a source of inspiration in the search for more righteous human relationships." Yet, what are the results of the clergy's participation in social reform?

Violence often leads to death. Not to be overlooked is the fact that the clergy have had a free hand in world politics for centuries. They have aligned themselves with the kings of the earth and dictators or elite ruling classes who have crushed the poor people. As a result, many lives have been lost.

"It is important to belong to those who resist, who fight, who believe and hope."
—Gustavo Gutiérrez

A "Preferential Option"?

Modern "liberation movements" are no exception. They too have led to many deaths. As Gustavo Gutiérrez admits: "Today, worsening hunger and exploitation, as well as exile and imprisonment . . . , torture and death . . . , make up the price to be paid for having rebelled against a secular oppression."

So, really, no human theology can remove mankind's anguish. As long as greed and hatred exist, there will be a need for something better. But is there a better option for the poor?

A Dilemma
for Sincere Catholics

In 1984 the Vatican sent out an instruction condemning liberation theology, and Leonardo Boff, one of the "most controversial" Catholic theologians, was sentenced to one year of "penitential silence"—a punishment imposed by the church that forbade him to publish or give interviews or promulgate in any way his suspect theology.

But in 1986, one month before the 'year of silence' was up, Boff was granted amnesty. *Instrucción Sobre Libertad Cristiana y Liberación* (Instruction on Christian Freedom and Liberation) was sent out, stating that it is "fully legitimate that those who suffer oppression from the holders of wealth or of political power should act with morally acceptable means . . . " "Armed struggle" was approved of as a "last resort." Was the church correcting itself?

Not according to the author of the new instruction, Joseph Cardinal Ratzinger, prefect of the Vatican's Sacred Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith. "The first instruction loses none of its value," he stated. "The second document is a continuation." But others, such as the press, define the second instruction as a "new stand on 'liberation theology.' " Why the inconsistency?

The careful wording of the new instruction can be interpreted in various ways. For example, it states that "it is not for the pastors of the church to intervene directly in the political construction and organization of social life." As *Newsweek* magazine keenly observes: "That kind of language leaves a lot of room in which canny prelates . . . can maneuver."

One report says that 'virtually everyone in the church can find something he can agree with.' A liberationist like Gutiérrez could now say that "liberation theology is a sign of the times in Latin America, and the church recognizes it as such," while a conservative Catholic could rejoice that his church still "strongly opposes Marxist collectionism for negating the liberty of man." Nevertheless, the various concepts of liberation theology conflict with church tradition and continue to pit Roman Catholics against one another.

However, the apostle Paul admonishes true Christians: "Make up the differences between you, and instead of disagreeing among yourselves, . . . be united . . . in your belief and practice." "Be united in your convictions . . . with a common purpose and a common mind." (1 Corinthians 1:10; Philippians 2:2)* What do you believe? Are Roman Catholics 'united in their convictions'?

* Scriptures quoted are from the Catholic *Jerusalem Bible.*

UN photo

Is the church 'united in its convictions'?

Liberation Theology, the Bible, and You

"All scripture is inspired by God and can profitably be used for teaching, for refuting error, for guiding people's lives and teaching them to be holy."—2 Timothy 3:16.*

DO YOU believe that? Which is more important to you: Serving God the way *he* wants you to serve him or serving him the way *you* think best? 'Of course,' you say, 'the only way is God's way!' Do you really feel that God's way is best? If so, then you will agree with the above statement made by the apostle Paul.

Yes, God has spoken, and you can read his Word. We invite you to consider liberation theology from the Bible's viewpoint. Is liberation theology Bible-based?

"You Do Not Belong to the World"

Jesus once told his disciples: "You do not belong to the world." That same evening, the night before his death, he said in prayer to his Father: "I passed your word on to them, and the world hated them, because they belong to the world no more than I belong to the world." Then, almost immediately, he repeated: "They do not belong to the world any more than I belong to the world."—John 15:19; 17:14, 16.

Most religions of Christendom make no effort to be separate from the world. Perhaps you have read about it in the news. Wherever you look—in the Americas, Asia, Europe, or Africa—the story is the same. The clergy of virtually every religious stripe are in the political arena. But their involvement in world politics is just one of the conflicts with God's Word.

Is Violence Justified?

Liberation theologians say that violence is justified when it is employed to help the poor. Even the Vatican now officially says that violence is justified as "a last resort." Pope John Paul II, in a letter to all the bishops in Brazil, has declared that "Liberation Theology is not only opportune but also useful and necessary for Latin America." Is this what the Bible says?

While on earth, Jesus Christ did not get involved in the world's social movements. On the contrary, when the apostle Peter resorted to "the sword" to defend God's Son, Jesus rebuked him by saying: "Put your sword back, for all who draw the sword will die by the sword."—Matthew 26:52.

But what about the wars that Israel fought? According to the Bible, Israel had

* All scriptures quoted in this article are from the Catholic *Jerusalem Bible.*

not known warfare prior to their deliverance from Egypt. (Exodus 13:17, 18) When the time came, they were directed by God. However, Jehovah strictly commanded Israel that they were to conquer only the land he had promised to their forefathers.—Genesis 17:7, 8; Deuteronomy 2:5, 9, 19.

While Christians do not engage in a physical war against blood and flesh, they are engaged in warfare nonetheless, a spiritual fight. As the apostle Paul clearly stated: "It is not against human enemies that we have to struggle, but against . . . the spiritual army of evil in the heavens." —Ephesians 6:12.

So how does Christendom's clergy justify today's violence?

God's Word in Third Place!

Liberation theologian Gustavo Gutiérrez told *Awake!* that a teaching, such as liberation theology, comes from 'the Christian community's discernment and acceptance of it.' Yes, popular opinion and human wisdom are put ahead of God's Word. Do you agree with this?

"I was dedicated to serving God with the . . . goal of becoming a good priest"—Carlos

"It was then that I truly began understanding the Bible—as if a blindfold had been removed"—Maria

Carlos D—— was a staunch Catholic who had spent 11 years in a Catholic seminary. "I was dedicated to serving God with the . . . goal of becoming a good priest," says Carlos. Yet, over the years, something began to bother him.

'Among other things,' he says, 'I realized that the Bible was left in the background. The tradition of the fathers of the church came first. Then came the authority of the pope when he spoke ex cathedra, and finally—in third place—the Bible.'*

After leaving the Catholic Church, Carlos spent years looking for the truth in several other religions. Dissatisfied, he became an atheist until he was contacted by Jehovah's Witnesses and accepted a home Bible study. Carlos is now a dedicated witness of Jehovah.

Maria V—— was also a practicing

* Ex cathedra: When the pope speaks out officially on matters of "doctrine of Christian faith or rule of morals to be held by the Church."

Catholic. "I would go to Mass almost every day," she says. "I also belonged to a group called *La Acción Católica de Señoritas* [Catholic Action for Young Women]." Maria taught catechism for several years. What did her training consist of? 'Each Saturday the priest would talk to us about philosophies of Plato and others. Most of us understood nothing. I knew there was something wrong. What I was learning didn't fill my spiritual needs.' What changed her life?

'We may not be rich, but we have the necessities of life, and we are happy'—Rafael

"My boyfriend regularly received the *Awake!,* and he would pass the magazines on to me." Then Maria obtained the book *From Paradise Lost to Paradise Regained* and began reading it on her own. "It was then that I truly began understanding the Bible—as if a blindfold had been removed."

Maria and her boyfriend both became dedicated Witnesses of Jehovah and then were married. Instead of teaching catechism, Maria now conducts 12 home Bible studies with others who are interested in learning Bible truth.

Knowledge of God's Word has also benefited many sincere people who come from a materially poor background.

The Bible's Alternative —God's Kingdom

In one of the best-known prayers of all times, Jesus Christ highlighted mankind's only hope for better world conditions. "Our Father in heaven," he petitioned, "may your name be held holy, *your kingdom come,* your will be done, on earth as in heaven." (Italics ours.)—Matthew 6:9, 10.

Do you favor government by God, or do you prefer human rulership? This is an issue that all of us must face. In view of present world conditions, you too may feel that we need something other than what man has accomplished. But what can the Kingdom of God do for the poor today?

Rafael R—— comes from a poverty-stricken family of nine children. "I quit school after first grade in order to help my family make a living," he recalls. "After the harvest in our village, I would go out into the fields and gather whatever was left over from the crop so that we could eat."

However, at the age of 15, Rafael developed a costly and degrading habit. He began spending his money—what little he had earned—on alcoholic beverages. "On two occasions," says Rafael, "I remember even committing assault in order to get enough money to buy more drinks."

Eventually, Rafael was married and had

ten children of his own to support. Still his drinking habit only grew worse. Says his wife, Carmen: "Materially, we had absolutely nothing. I tried to earn some money washing clothes in order to put food on the table. Our breakfast and dinner usually consisted of a cup of tea and a piece of bread. Lunch was nothing more than a little soup and perhaps some potatoes or squash. We were fortunate enough to eat meat once a week sometimes." So Rafael's drinking habit affected others as well. But was there hope for this family?

"Definitely," says Carmen, "though it wasn't until we began studying the Bible with Jehovah's Witnesses that my husband began to change. We learned of the Kingdom promise—that Jehovah will soon rid the world of poverty and oppression. My prayers to God were finally answered!" Rafael quit his drinking and began putting God's Kingdom in first place. Bible knowledge helped him put on "the new personality." (Ephesians 4:22-24) As a result, he and his family no longer struggle with extreme poverty. Says Rafael: "We may not be rich, and we do not own our own home, but we have the necessities of life, and we are happy."

A Christian education also helps develop latent abilities. Because of discontinuing his schooling at an early age, Rafael could hardly read or write. However, by attending and participating in Christian meetings, he not only became fluent in these areas but also gives talks in his congregation and regularly conducts a home Bible study with his family. That is not all.

Rafael and his family have discovered another benefit in putting Kingdom interests first. "When my husband was sick from his drinking problem," recalls Carmen, "we received the loving support of the congregation." What kind of support was this? As Carmen explains: "The brothers and sisters came to our aid spiritually as well as financially." Yes, there is loving congregational support within this worldwide brotherhood of Jehovah's people.

So the Bible does provide a practical hope for the poor. Jesus once stated: "Set your hearts on [God's] kingdom first, and on his righteousness, and all these other things [the necessities of life] will be given you as well." (Matthew 6:33) And as seen in Rafael's case, there are more advantages than just material benefits.

Can accurate Bible knowledge help you as well?

How You Are Involved

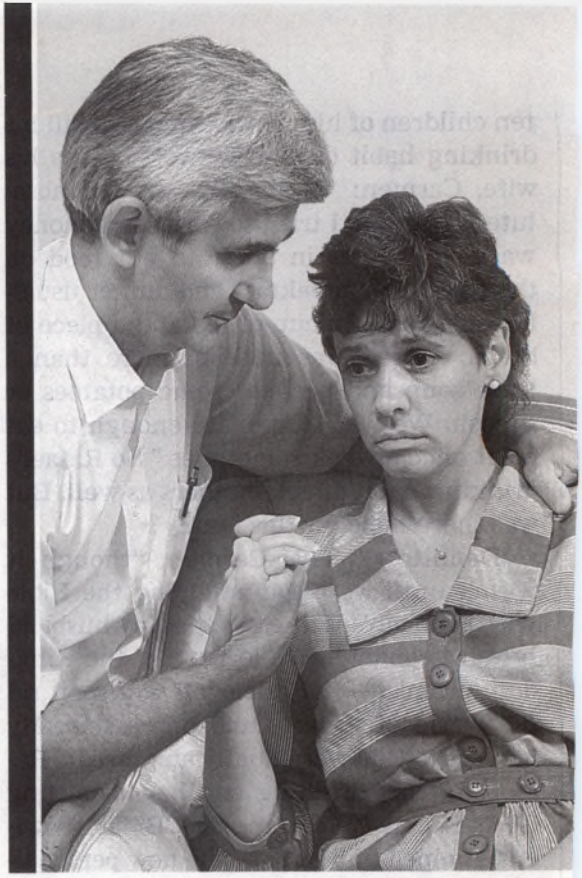
The apostle Paul once admonished true Christians of his day: "Examine yourselves to make sure you are in the faith; test yourselves." (2 Corinthians 13:5) And Jesus, in speaking to his Father, said that "eternal life is this: to know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom you have sent."—John 17:3.

Is your faith based on knowing "the only true God"? Are you like the people of Beroea, who the Bible says were "more open-minded"? They "welcomed the word very readily; every day they studied the scriptures to check whether it was true."—Acts 17:11.

Are you "open-minded" as to God's Word? Do you study the Bible regularly? This is the only way to "discover the will of God and know what is good, what it is that God wants, what is the perfect thing to do." (Romans 12:2) In the Bible, you will find God's promise to rid the earth not just of poverty, oppression, and international struggle but of 'tears, death, mourning, and sadness.' (Revelation 21:4) This will certainly be true liberation!

DEFEATING DEPRESSION

How Others Can Help



IT WAS the third time within just a few days that Ann had phoned long distance for no apparent reason. Her mother, Kay, noticed that her voice seemed lifeless. "It was like a voice of depression," explained Kay. "Though she didn't complain, the tone of her voice was saying out loud, 'I need help!'" Kay's heart raced as she sensed trouble.

"I told my daughter that I would be there the next day!" recalls Kay. "Ann started crying, muttered 'OK,' and then hung up." Upon arriving, the mother was shocked to learn that Ann had revealed to her friends that she felt totally hopeless and worthless. She had even seriously talked about suicide! Nevertheless, the support Kay gave during her five-day visit helped her daughter recover. It was the turning point. "This taught me a lesson about listening," reflected the mother. "She could have killed herself, and how awful we would have felt if we had not helped in her time of need."

Help from others can often mean the difference between life and death to a severely depressed person. Would you have been as alert as Kay? Since each year a hundred million persons worldwide develop a severe depression, the chances are that someone who is your friend or relative may be affected. But helping someone who is severely depressed can be exasperating.

Dr. Leonard Cammer in his book *Up From Depression* tells of one mother who was at her wit's end with a depressed son. As she and her son conferred with the doctor, she bemoaned: "He just moves away from us and acts as if we're not there. He

knows we love him. Why does he have to hurt us this way? You don't know what I've been going through, Doctor." Dr. Cammer remarks: "If only she knew the suffering *he* has been going through! . . . The depressed person senses that he is a burden to the family. But he is a burden to himself too, because he is helpless to rectify his condition and is ashamed and humiliated by it. His only recourse then is to drift farther away." The mother's lack of sensitivity made the situation worse. To help, therefore, the first essential is . . .

Empathy

Empathy, or "fellow feeling," is an effort to identify emotionally with another. (1 Peter 3:8) Realize that the depressed person really hurts. His distress is real and not feigned. "Weep with people who weep," advised the apostle Paul. (Romans 12:15) In other words, try to understand the pain the depressed one feels.

Though you cannot know exactly what he feels, you can show a genuine interest in *wanting* to know. Encourage that one to talk, and when he vents his feelings, try to see things through his eyes, putting yourself in his place. Avoid judgmental statements such as, 'You shouldn't feel like that' or, 'That's the wrong attitude.' The depressed person's emotions are especially fragile, and such critical comments only make him feel worse about himself. Usually his self-esteem has evaporated.

Rebuilding Self-Esteem

To restore his self-esteem, you must appeal to the person's reason. Ever so gently, help him see that his low assessment of himself is incorrect. But simply giving him a stirring speech, telling him that he is 'a great person,' is not the answer. "He that is removing a garment on a cold day is as vinegar upon alkali and as a singer with songs upon a gloomy heart," observes Proverbs 25:20. Such shallow efforts leave a depressed one emotionally cold and irritated, since they rarely address the reasons why that one feels worthless.

For instance, a depressed person may say: 'I feel that I'm just no good and that I'll never be worth anything.' You could in a nonchallenging manner ask: 'Can you tell me why you feel that way?' As he begins to explain, listen carefully. Such close attention assures him that what he is saying is worth while. As he opens up, you will be able to ask further questions to help him identify and correct the reasonings that can cause depression.*

Reasoning in a Way That Builds Self-Esteem

One woman, whose marriage was shattered by her husband's infidelity, became depressed and suicidal. She later confided to a skilled counselor: "Without Raymond, I am nothing . . . I can't be happy without Raymond."

The counselor asked: "Have you found yourself happy when you are with Raymond?" Her reply: "No, we fight all the time and I feel worse." He continued: "You say you are nothing without Raymond. Before you met Raymond, did you feel you were nothing?"

"No, I felt I was somebody," blurted the depressed woman. The counselor then replied: "If you were somebody before you knew Raymond, why do you need him to be somebody now?" Discussing this case in his book "Cognitive Therapy and the Emotional Disorders," Dr. Aaron Beck stated: "In a subsequent interview, she stated that the point that really struck home was: How could she be 'nothing' without Raymond—when she had lived happily and was an adequate person before she ever knew him?" She overcame her depression.

* See "Winning the Fight Against Depression" in our October 22 issue of this year.

Use simple, direct questions, not in a scolding way, but in an effort to get the person to reason. (See box, page 13.) If you see that the person is doing things that are contributing to his problem, then in a non-accusing way, you could kindly ask: 'Is what you're doing up to this point helping you? Do you need to do something different?' Getting him to offer suggestions may restore some of his self-confidence.

A depressed person tends to ignore all his good qualities; so focus his attention on his personal assets and capabilities. She may have a knack with plants or be a good cook. He may have reared happy, stable children. Look for areas where the depressed one has succeeded and draw these to his attention. You may even have him write down some of these to review later. It helps also when that one can use his talent to help you.

For instance, Maria, who was an excellent seamstress, became severely depressed. One of her friends asked: "Would you like to help me pick out some fabric and a pattern? I want to make a suit." Maria offered to make it for her. "Oh, would you?" responded her friend. Later, she warmly thanked Maria for the suit and by mail told her of all the fine compliments she had received on it. "This increased my confidence and brightened my days," said Maria. "I later found out that she had gone through a depression and knew this task would be a big help. It was. She did more for me than I did for her."

So help depressed ones to develop a few specific short-term goals that are within their ability and circumstances. These may be simple household duties, a handicraft project, or even wholesome words. As one severely depressed woman said: "I would try each day to say something upbuilding to either my family or a friend." Reaching these small goals builds self-esteem.

When It's Your Spouse

The first assumption of many whose mates become severely depressed is that they are somehow responsible for the other's low mood. This produces guilt that, in turn, creates friction. Yet, depression is not necessarily a sign that one has had a bad marriage.

After studying the lives of 40 depressed women, Myrna Weissman and Eugene Paykel in their book *The Depressed Woman* concluded: "Not all the depressed women had poor marriages prior to their illnesses. We found a number of marriages where free and easy communications, mutual sensitivity to each other's needs, . . . had existed prior to the depression. The *illness* put considerable strain on the relationship." —Italics ours.

Sometimes, however, though not always causing the depression, a strained or detached relationship with a mate can create an environment that makes depression much more likely. Some factors that induce depression are listed in the box on page 15. One husband whose depressed wife became suicidal admitted: "I was not serious about watching over her emotional and spiritual needs. To me she was a roommate rather than a wife. I was too busy helping others to give the reassurance and warmth she wanted and needed. I had to work at communication as well as sharing myself and my life with her." Are there areas that you might see in your family that need improvement? But what else will help a spouse?

□ **Patience, Patience, Patience!** Because a depressed person is in emotional pain, he or she may lash out at a mate. Victoria, who suffered major depression, confessed: "I hated myself and felt miserable. I'm sure that my husband and kids would have liked to lock me in the closet and throw away the key. Yet, I heard hun-

dreds of times, 'We love you; we know you don't mean it' or, 'You're just tired.'" Yes, realize that the person will say many things that he doesn't mean. Even Job, a man of faith, admitted that because of his vexation "my own words have been wild talk." (Job 6:3) Having the insight to know that you are not the target will enable you to respond with mild, kindly replies that will usually defuse the situation. (Proverbs 15:1; 19:11) Don't expect a spouse to get well overnight.

□ **Give Spiritual and Emotional Support.** Many depressed persons have found that the meetings of Jehovah's Witnesses provided the spiritual encouragement to endure. (Hebrews 10:25) But Irene, whose depression lasted 18 months, admitted: "One evening before the meeting, I cried because I could hardly bear to think of facing everyone." She added: "But my husband encouraged me, and after saying a prayer, our family did go. Though I had to fight back tears during the meeting, I was so thankful to Jehovah God for giving me the strength to be there."

In addition to the spiritual help, a depressed mate needs the reassurance that he or she has your emotional support. Irene describes how her husband did this: "At home after the children were asleep, my husband and I would talk, and sometimes I would cry for close to an hour. His supportive understanding was so helpful. He prayed with me, listened to me, or gave me a shoulder to cry on—whatever I needed at the time." Since a Christian is concerned about pleasing his or her spouse, frequently reassure the depressed one that he or she is doing this.—1 Corinthians 7:33, 34.

□ **Provide Physical Help.** Household chores and care of the children may suddenly seem overwhelming to a depressed wife. The husband (as well as the children) can help with cleaning and cooking. Try to avoid asking her what to do, as this can add pressure. "My husband, Bob, didn't let anyone pile anything on me at that time. He was sort of a buffer," explained Elizabeth, a mother who became severely depressed. "All I really had to concentrate on was just getting better." She added: "The doctor not only prescribed medication but also told me to exercise every day. Bob encouraged me to follow the doctor's orders. We walked every day." A well-planned outing with the depressed one also helps. All of this takes much initiative on the part of the husband.

Could Your Home Environment Cause Depression?

□ Is self-esteem undermined by thoughtless comments such as 'Why aren't you a better wife?' 'I love you in spite of the kind of person you are,' or 'Why are you always so thoughtless?'
□ Is guilt repeatedly provoked by making the spouse always feel responsible, regardless of the facts?
□ Does the atmosphere in the home discourage the open show of emotions, making whoever displays such seem to be a weakling?
□ Is one made to feel that he or she must be nearly perfect to measure up to the expectations of a spouse?
□ Is open and direct communication blocked?

Help From Others

"A true companion is loving all the time, and is a brother that is born for when there is distress," states Proverbs 17:17. The genuineness of a friendship is evident during a time of distress, such as depression. How can a friend help?

"When I was depressed, a friend wrote to me several times and always included encouraging Scriptures," reported Maria. "I would read the letter over and over, crying as I read it. *Such letters were like gold to*

One depressed person said that 'letters from a friend were like gold'

me." Encouraging letters, cards, and phone calls are deeply appreciated. Warm visits also help. "If no one comes, it reinforces the idea that we're all alone," adds Elizabeth. "Pray with the person, tell some upbuilding experiences, even cook a meal and bring it over as a family. One friend made me a box of little odds and ends. Unwrapping each item provided such a pleasant surprise."

Of course, when it comes to things like running errands and doing housework for a depressed person, be discerning. Listen to him. Don't insist on doing something if he does not want it done. At times, knowing that someone is doing work that he should be doing may add guilt. The depressed one may prefer that it be left undone.

The elders, or spiritual shepherds, in the congregations of Jehovah's Witnesses have also provided invaluable help. Irene explains: "I talked with a couple of the elders about my problem. (My husband came along for support.) This was a big step and helped me a great deal. I found that these men really do care." By carefully listening and by being well prepared, these men will be able to "speak consolingly to the depressed souls."*—1 Thessalonians 5:14; Proverbs 12:18.

Knowing when to seek professional help is vital—in fact, it may save a life! At times the condition becomes so severe that arrangements should be made to see that the depressed one gets needed professional care. Don't count on the depressed one to decide. Often it means making the necessary appointment for him. You can reassure him by saying: 'I'm sure your illness is not serious, but it should be checked to relieve everyone's doubts. Though I love you very much, I'm not a doctor.' Be kind but firm!

Helping a friend or mate defeat depression is not an easy task, but perseverance may be lifesaving. Often, your caring makes the difference. For instance, Margaret, when she reached her deepest low, told her husband that she wanted to give up and die. He warmly said: "I'll help you not to give up." Overwhelmed to see his care, Margaret explained: "I *knew* then I could go on." She did and eventually defeated her depression.

* See "An Educated Tongue—'To Encourage the Weary'" in the June 1, 1982, issue of our companion magazine, *The Watchtower*.

Tips for Your Cassette Tapes

YOU push the play button, sit back, and prepare to be entertained. But suddenly, the clear, distinct sound speeds up to a high-pitched whine. You leap up, but too late. The cassette tape that was giving you such pleasure is now hopelessly tangled in a horrible mishmash. Your recording is ruined.

Incidents like this happen quite often, but there is something you can do that might avert them. At the same time, it will enable you to get the most out of your recordings. Here are a few tips for your cassette tapes:

■ Store your cassettes in their own boxes or albums. These will keep dust out and lock the reels of the cassette so that the tape does not loosen. This reduces the risk of the tape's tangling up in the mechanism of the recorder.

■ Never leave cassettes near a heat source or in the sun, such as the ledge in front of the rear window of your car.

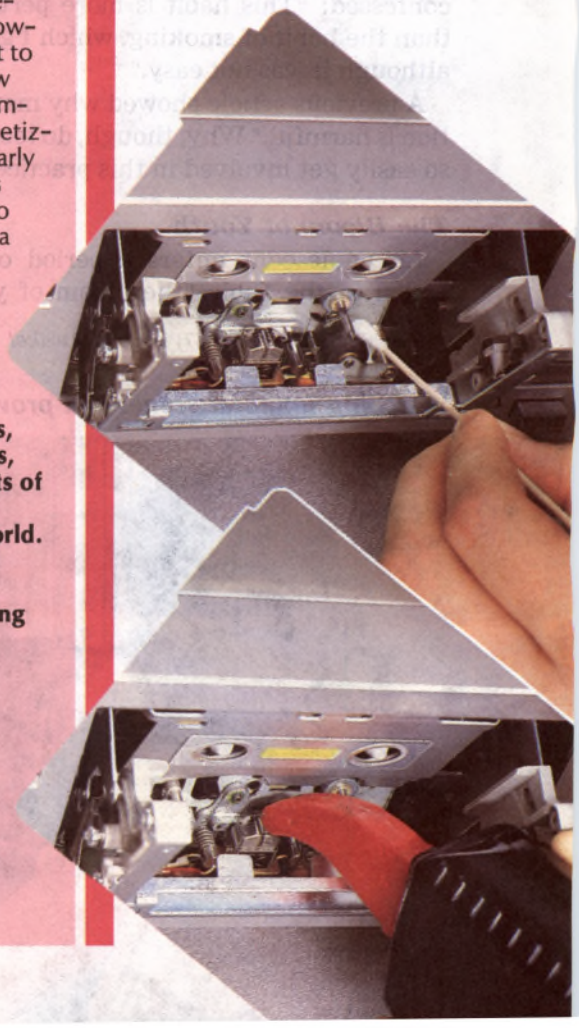
■ Do not leave your cassettes near a loudspeaker, on a television, close to a telephone, or next to some other item having a magnetic field. They may be partially or even totally erased.

■ Regularly clean the magnetic heads, pinch rollers, capstans, and all the metallic parts in the path of the tape. You can usually reach these parts quite easily by opening the door of the tape compartment. Unless the instruction manual states otherwise, you may do this cleaning job with cotton swabs and isopropyl alcohol. Avoid pressing on the heads, since their position has been carefully adjusted. Of course, you should not leave any cotton in the machine.

■ A demagnetizer is very useful in eliminating the residual magnetism that is detrimental to the performance of the recorder. But be sure to switch off the tape deck and place the cassettes a good distance away from the path of the demagnetizer. And be careful not to bump or scratch the heads. To make the job easier, there are ready-made cleaning or demagnetizing cassettes that you can purchase.

If these maintenance procedures seem too complicated to you, ask someone to help you. Cassette tapes and recorders are so common nowadays that it is not difficult to find a friend who can show you what to do. But remember, cleaning and demagnetizing your equipment regularly and storing your cassettes properly will enable you to enjoy your recordings for a long time.

Currently, the Watchtower Society produces about 500,000 cassettes each month. These include recordings of Bible books, dramas with Bible themes, and musical arrangements of songs used by Jehovah's Witnesses all over the world. This modern means of communication has an important role in spreading the good news of the Kingdom earth wide. —Matthew 24:14.



Cleaning and demagnetizing: two easy operations to get the most out of your cassettes

Young People Ask. . .

Why Is It So Hard to Avoid Masturbation?

"HABITS are like a soft bed—easy to get into but hard to get out of." So goes one saying. And how true this is of masturbation! One man who practiced it from the age of 10 till he was 43 years old confessed: "This habit is more perturbing than the habit of smoking, which I gave up although it was not easy."

A previous article showed why masturbation is harmful.* Why, though, do teenagers so easily get involved in this practice?

The Bloom of Youth

An adolescent enters a period of time called in the Bible "the bloom of youth," when sexual desires become strong. (1 Corinthians 7:36) Since the body is beginning to prepare itself for parenthood, powerful hormones are released that affect the reproductive organs. During this period, a youth becomes aware that these organs are capable of producing pleasurable sensations. At times, curiosity and the novelty of these new, exciting sensations lead some youths to experimenting by deliberately manipulating these organs for additional pleasure or to relieve a high level of arousal.

Because of the changes taking place within his or her body, a youth can become sexually excited even when he or she is not necessarily thinking about sex. Among

* See September 8, 1987, issue of *Awake!*

Watching immoral scenes can provide "mental fuel" for masturbation

boys, for instance, the tensions produced by various worries, fears, or frustrations can affect their sensitive nervous systems and cause sexual arousal. A buildup of semen may in turn produce a nocturnal emission (wet dream), usually accompanied by an erotic dream, or cause a boy to awaken sexually excited. Similarly, some young girls may find themselves stimulated accidentally. And a young woman may have a heightened sexual desire just before or after her menstrual period.

If you have experienced such unwanted arousal, there is nothing wrong with you. This is a normal response of a youthful body. Such sensations, even if very intense, are not the same as masturbation, since they are largely involuntary. And as you grow older and pass on through this "bloom of youth," the intensity of these new sensations will subside.

"Mental Fuel"

At times, though, the arousal results from more than just the action of one's hormones. For instance, the Bible describes a young man who meets a promiscuous woman. She kisses him and says: "Do come, . . . let us enjoy each other with love expressions." Then what happens? *"All of a sudden* he is going after her, like a bull that comes even to the slaughter." (Proverbs 7: 7-22) Obviously, this youth's passions were aroused by what he saw, heard, and experienced—not merely by his hormones! Similarly, one young man admits: 'The root of my whole problem with masturbation boiled down to what I put in my mind. I would watch TV programs that included immorality and in some cases watch programs on cable TV that would show nudity. Such scenes are so shocking that they stay with you. They would surface again in my mind, providing the mental fuel needed to engage in masturbation.'

So, often it is what one reads, watches, or listens to for entertainment, talks about, or meditates on, that makes it hard to avoid masturbation. Therefore, being careful about what you take into your mind is essential to break this habit. As a 25-year-old woman confessed: "I just couldn't seem to stop the habit. However, I used to read romance novels, and this contributed to the problem." Interestingly, it was not simply sexually unclean thoughts that led to her practice of masturbation. Indeed, her experience reveals perhaps the greatest reason why the habit is so hard to break.

An Emotional "Tranquilizer"

The young woman continues: "Usually I masturbated to release pressure, tension, or anxiety. That fleeting pleasure was like the drink the alcoholic takes to calm his nerves." She is by no means unique. Researchers Suzanne and Irving Sarnoff write: "For some people masturbation may become a habit to which they turn for solace whenever they are rebuffed or feel apprehensive about something. Others, however, may withdraw in this way only occasionally, when they are under the most acute emotional stress."

Dr. Sherwyn Woods adds: "A high proportion of masturbatory experiences are motivated less by erotic needs than by general anxiety, tension, and boredom for which it becomes a sought-for tranquilizer." So when one is upset, depressed, lonely, or under much stress this habit becomes a convenient "tranquilizer" to blot out one's troubles. (Compare Proverbs 31:6, 7.) Therefore, to avoid masturbation, you must recognize this as an immature way to deal with problems and be willing to . . .

'Put Away the Traits of a Babe'

The apostle Paul wrote: "When I was a babe, I used to speak as a babe, to think as a babe, to reason as a babe; but now that I have become a man, I have done away with the traits of a babe." (1 Corinthians 13:11) Masturbation is a childish way to react to problems. Once ingrained, these "traits of a babe" can persist in adulthood. As an example, at the age of nine, a boy on one occasion was confronted with a very difficult mathematical problem at school. He first resorted to masturbation to soothe his mind. After that he turned to the habit whenever he could when facing a knotty problem. Now, as an adult, he admits: "To this day, a very hard piece of brain work calls up in me the strongest impulse to masturbate. Without this, I can hardly work."

While the previous case may be extreme, there is real danger in using this "tranquilizer" to try to sidestep emotionally difficult situations. But rather than mentally escaping through masturbation, show "thinking ability" and attack the problem itself. (Proverbs 1:4) When problems and frustrations seem overwhelming, learn to "throw all your anxiety upon [God], because he cares for you" and understands your plight, even if you feel that no other human does. (1 Peter 5:6, 7) Allow God to help you "to be made mighty in the man [or woman] you are inside with power through his spirit." (Ephesians 3:16) Rather than weakly resorting to masturbation as a "tranquilizer," "carry on as men [and women, not as babes], grow mighty."—1 Corinthians 16:13.

The Sarnoffs in their book *Masturbation and Adult Sexuality* state: "Regardless of why or how people feel deficient, their decision to masturbate means they are *not* trying to repair the deficiency through purposeful social activity. . . . True, a person could adopt the general policy of trying both to resolve his problems and to masturbate whenever he experiences their tensions. But the temptation to favor the latter 'solution' is very great, since you always carry your body around with you. So it is best to focus on figuring out and implementing real solutions to your problems." If one masturbates when faced with problems rather than working these out, the habit can become a real compulsion.

"A Very Strong Addiction"

After struggling with masturbation for over 15 years from the time he was 11 years old, one man confessed: "It is a very strong addiction—it is not something to take lightly. It can be just as habit forming as any drug or alcoholic beverage." The book *Your Growing Child* by Penelope Leach explains: "The pleasure and relaxation he can get from masturbation has become compulsive because other aspects of his life are intolerable to him. Like a true addict, he must masturbate more and more, and by doing so he increasingly cuts himself off from alternative pleasures."

The urge to resort to masturbation for sheer pleasure when things are not going well in one's life can easily cause one to become a 'senseless *slave* to various desires and pleasures.' (Titus 3:3) Yet, the apostle Paul states: "I will not let myself be brought under authority by anything." (1 Corinthians 6:12) He was not going to let his desires become like a harsh master. On the contrary, Paul wrote: "I pummel my body [fleshly desires] and lead it as a slave." (1 Corinthians 9:27) He got tough with himself! A similar effort will enable *anyone* to break free from masturbation—regardless of how hard that is to do.*

* A future article will discuss just how a person can fight to get free from this habit.

FOUR HUNDRED DIED, I SURVIVED

IT WAS October 10, 1986. I was getting ready to close my cosmetics shop in San Salvador to return home for the noon meal. Suddenly, the entire five-story Rubén Darío Building rumbled furiously.

Later, I learned it was the worst earthquake in El Salvador's history —7.5 on the Richter scale. It killed 1,200 persons, about 400 in the Rubén Darío Building alone, and left 300,000 homeless. President Duarte said it caused 'more losses than the seven years of civil war.'

When the quake struck, I was hit on the head and knocked out. When I came to, I was lying face down, in total darkness. People were calling out in pain and fear: "Lord, save me!" "Why did you bring down this punishment on us?" "Help me!"

I touched my face. Thankfully, I wasn't cut, but my feet were trapped under the debris. The air was so thick I could hardly breathe. Nearby I heard a voice. The building office clerk, Mr. Quijano, was calling out to me, "You're the lady from the cosmetics stand! Are you all right?"

"Yes, but my feet are trapped," I answered. "How are you?"

"I think my arms and legs are broken—I can't move. Help me, please."

I stretched out my hands and arms as far as I could but only felt broken glass. "I'm sorry, I can't do anything. My feet are trapped."

The lack of oxygen was oppressive, and I prayed to God: "Please help me!" I recalled his words to Joshua: 'Be courageous and strong, for Jehovah your God is with you.'

The Rubén Darío Building

The five-story Rubén Darío Building, located in the center of downtown San Salvador, housed coffee shops, barber and beauty shops, dental offices and laboratories, shoe stores, and business offices. Closely pressed around the outside of the building was a group of vendors selling everything from snacks to lottery tickets. Television news reported that as many as 400 persons died inside, either crushed to death, asphyxiated, or burned; several of Jehovah's Witnesses were among them. At least 92 of the trapped victims were rescued alive, although some of these died afterward from injuries sustained within the building.

(Joshua 1:9) But I *must* do my part, I reminded myself.

After that I began to feel stronger and greatly encouraged. I decided I had to get my feet free before they became numb and swollen. I began trying to wriggle one of my feet loose. Meanwhile, the ground continued to tremble, and the building creaked and heaved. My shop had been on the first floor.

Finally, my right foot was free. I thanked Jehovah aloud for this. Mr. Quijano, his breathing now labored, must have heard. He said: "Keep praying to Jehovah, and pray for me too, please!"

My feet felt cold and moist. 'I'm bleeding!' I thought. When I touched the lower part of my left leg, I realized that the sticky, moist substance I felt was either shampoo or moisturizing lotion from the showcase. Now lubricated, my left foot slipped out of its trap.

"Has Jehovah helped you?" Mr. Quijano asked.

"Yes!" I answered. "My feet are free now."

"Please help me!" he cried.

I used all my might to inch forward to Mr. Quijano. With every movement I cut myself with broken glass. Then I felt a mass of twisted metal between us.

"I'm sorry, Mr. Quijano. I can't come any closer."

"That's all right," he answered. "Let's just stay put."

From nearby came voices of at least two men and a young boy. These were people from the second floor, now less than a meter above. I was able to stick my head up through a gap but immediately reeled back. The atmosphere was thick with a fine dust that left me gasping for air. Suddenly, I felt exhausted and wanted only to sleep.

I awoke to an eerie silence. 'Has everyone been rescued, or have they all died?' was my first thought. I quickly called out to Mr. Quijano three times, but he only groaned softly. I continued to pray.

After a while I heard a picking sound. "Mr. Quijano," I cried out, "God has sent someone to save us! They'll be here soon,

In Our Next Issue

- *Christmas Giving—A Time of Joy or Depression?*
- *Watch Out! Spies About!*
- *I Sought a Simpler Life Through Drugs*

and I'll tell them to get you out!" His only response was a faint moan and then silence.

Not long afterward, a voice called from the dark recesses ahead of me, "Is there anyone there?"

"Yes, yes!" I cried.

"How many?"

"There are several of us, some badly injured," I answered. More picking. Then, "Do you see a light?"

"Yes!" I shouted back, "I see the light!" Our rescuers kept picking at the opening, and soon the light almost illuminated the area I was lying in.

"Can you see a way out following the light?" the rescuers called. "Yes, I'll try!" I answered.

I shouted to the others on the second floor: "Over here, try to get yourselves over here! We can get out! Send the boy first!"

I began to drag myself forward over pieces of twisted iron, brick, glass, and concrete. 'I must keep moving ahead,' I thought. 'I can't stay here.' I was close enough to the opening to reach a hose with an oxygen mask attached that was passed through the hole. I continued to inch along until I reached the narrow opening.

The rescuers pulled me out, one arm first, then the rest of my body. My clothing was torn, my body scraped. "How do you feel?" they asked. "Happy," I answered.

When I reached the street, there was a maze of people, some assisting injured ones, some digging in the ruins of the building. Anguished onlookers converged on me, wanting to know in what part of the building I had been.

"Have you seen my wife?" "Have you seen my father?" "Did you see my sister?" they asked desperately. I could only answer: "There are many more trapped and alive down there, so keep trying."

The Rubén Darío Building before and after the quake struck.

Antonieta de Urbina was rescued alive early in the evening of the first day of the quake

Others were rescued from the same opening as I, some severely injured. Many others, though, died from asphyxiation. On the street just outside the building was a pitiful sight—a row of corpses. Mr. Quijano and the young boy from the second floor were among these unfortunate ones. —*As told by Antonieta de Urbina.*

Why Giraffes Do Not Have Blood-Pressure Problems!

MR. Giraffe is the tallest animal on earth! His circulatory system is a marvel. Why? Because his heart pumps blood way up his long neck, and that takes a lot of pressure. Yet, when he lowers his neck, the blood vessels in his brain and eyes do not burst. "Why does the high pressure not rupture those delicate vessels or at least force leakage from them?" asked a scientific journal.

The answer appears to be due, in part, to a marvelous network of fine blood vessels appropriately called the "wonderful net." Blood from the neck arteries passes through this "wonderful net" before reaching the brain. This protects the brain from any sudden surge of blood.

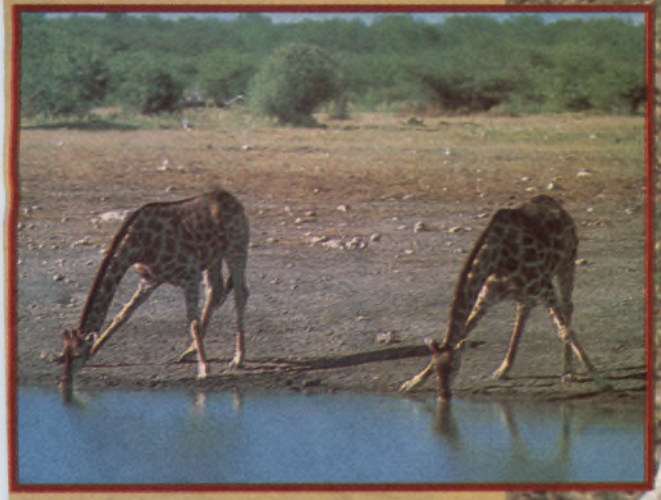
To watch these graceful creatures stoop for a drink is fascinating. For their heads to reach the water, they must first spread or bend their front legs. If, while in this awkward position, a giraffe senses danger, it can quickly straighten up and raise its head. Such action should cause giddiness due to a sudden lowering of blood pressure. Yet, in less than two seconds, Mr. Giraffe can gallop away. An article in the *South African Journal of Science* attributed this to "the phenomenon of blood flow regulation in the giraffe head" and claimed that more research was needed to understand it.

Another phenomenon, which has long puzzled scientists, concerns the giraffe's legs. "The effect of gravity," states *Scientific American,* "should be expected to make the blood pressure in the legs so high that it would force fluid out of the capillaries." But there is no evidence of this. Giraffes do not suffer from varicose veins and edema (tissue swelling). Why is this?

Not too long ago, an international team of scientists took a fresh look at

the giraffe and discovered more details about its amazing design. They measured the arteries and found that those traveling from the heart down the legs increased in diameter and in wall thickness. This, according to the *South African Panorama,* prevents the "accumulation of blood in the vessels and varicose veins . . . in the giraffe's legs. Moreover, the thickened walls of the arteries and the thick, muscular skin around the giraffe's legs help it to sustain the pressure."

Africa is the only continent where giraffes still live in the wild. If you visit a game park there, you might observe these gentle giants galloping gracefully across grasslands or quietly nibbling leaves from treetops. If so, remember Mr. Giraffe's amazing system of blood circulation that reaches 18 feet above the ground. And if you have the rare pleasure of watching Mr. Giraffe stoop for a drink, remember that man is still trying to unravel his secret of coping with extreme changes of gravity. Why do giraffes not suffer from high or low blood pressure? Only Jehovah God their Maker knows! They are his marvelously designed creatures.—Job 37: 14, 16.



Can the Bible Help the Lonely?

Life was lonely for the old man now that his wife was in a nursing home. As the weeks passed, he decided there was no reason to stay alive. That is why he got ahold of a gun . . .

LONELINESS has been called "the disease of the 20th century." It not only strikes the old but is the cause of drug abuse, alcoholism, and even suicide among the young.

Yes, loneliness is a modern-day plague. Attempts to fill the void of loneliness often prove vain. Some try to surround themselves with "friends"—only to find that such relationships are often shallow and unsatisfying. Others rush into marriages. Observed popular psychologist Dr. Joyce Brothers: "Rushing into a marriage is not the answer [to loneliness]. Before you can enjoy any relationship, you need to get more insights into your own problems."

The Right Outlook

The Bible, though, offers a practical outlook on loneliness. Admittedly, loneliness can be painful, but being alone is not always a bad thing. Jesus Christ is spoken of as enjoying brief periods of solitude. (Matthew 14:13) Rather than becoming lonely or withdrawn, he used such occasions for needed rest and prayer.—Mark 6:31; Luke 9:18.

The lesson? If you find yourself alone, you do not have to feel lonely! Really, your *outlook* on being alone is more of a factor as to how you feel than is the fact of physical isolation. So how do you use your time when you are alone? Do you simply kill time? Why not use such time productively? There are many worthwhile activities that can be enjoyed alone, such as listening to music or performing long-delayed household chores. Reading the Word of God can be particularly beneficial. It is "alive and exerts power" and can take our minds off ourselves. (Hebrews 4:12) Used properly, moments alone can help you get recharged—physically, emotionally, and spiritually.

Good Relations With Others

There are times, though, when you *want* and *need* the company of others. Not surprisingly, then, the Bible also has advice on cultivating satisfying relationships with other people. Proverbs 18:24, for example, says: "There exists a friend sticking closer than a brother." It is therefore not always necessary to have a large circle of friends in order to quell loneliness. You can nurture a few close *friendships*.

Lonely people, though, often find it hard to make friends. But observes a Canadian family counselor: "Lonely people, particularly those in their 20's, expect a lot, but don't want to give anything." The Bible similarly notes that 'one isolating himself seeks his own selfish longing.'—Proverbs 18:1.

So if you suffer from loneliness, you may need to demonstrate more interest in others. When meeting potential new friends, do you show an interest in *their* concerns or do you steer the conversation toward yourself? To break the cycle of loneliness, one must be a giver.

At Philippians 2:4 the apostle Paul urges us to 'keep an eye, not in personal interest upon just our own matters, but also in personal interest upon those of the others.' How can that advice cure loneliness? In the original Bible language, the verb rendered "keeping an eye" implies making a 'mental consideration' or 'surveying' for the purpose of pinpointing the most favorable time to act. So look around and see who needs help, who needs a friend. Once you have spotted such a person—act! Many people look out only for themselves; everyone else comes last, if at all. The Bible recommends the opposite: Look out for others first.

Thus, in order to have friends, you must first *act as a friend!* The Bible says: "Practice giving, and people will give to you." (Luke 6:38) Besides, "there is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving."—Acts 20:35.

"I Am Not Alone"

Human relationships, however, can never entirely satisfy all our needs. This is because man was created with a need to be close to his Creator. (Compare Matthew 5:3.) A friendship with God can prove secure, even when human friendships fail. Jesus Christ once said to his disciples: "Look! The hour is coming, indeed, it has come, when you will be scattered each one to his own house and you will leave me alone." How devastating! But Jesus could say: "And yet *I am not alone,* because the Father is with me."—John 16:32.

A friendship with God is thus the best cure for loneliness. So take the time to get to know him. "Taste and see that Jehovah is good" by beginning a study of the Bible. (Psalm 34:8; John 17:3) But you need not do so alone.

God has taken out "a people for his name." (Acts 15:14) Over three million people today proudly bear that name as Jehovah's Witnesses. They are pleased to help you learn about this God. Remember the lonely old man mentioned at the outset? Before he could kill himself, Jehovah's Witnesses called on him. They helped him appreciate that there was a living God who *cared about him.* (1 Peter 5:7) Despair gave way to joy as he began a study of the Bible.

Interestingly, associating with true Christians also opens up opportunities to make new friends. Because such friendships are based on a mutual love of God, these are bound to be lasting, enduring relationships. So seek out Jehovah's people. With their help and the help of God's Word, you can learn to dispel the pangs of loneliness.—Matthew 12:48-50; John 15:14.

From Our Readers

Our Dying Forests

I was very pleased to see that you had reserved so much space for discussing the forest and the dangers it faces. (June 22, 1987) Our forests can be saved only if as many citizens as possible realize the danger and do their part in combating it. The purpose of our foundation is to instruct the population as to just how severely our forests are endangered and to tell them what each individual can do.—Managing Director, Endangered Forests Foundation.

C. A., Federal Republic of Germany

Getting Along With Brothers and Sisters

I am very grateful for the article "Young People Ask . . . Why Is It So Hard to Get Along With My Brother and Sister?" (July 22, 1987) I live in a family of nine, and naturally we share rooms. I'm 12, and the brother I share with is 5. I used to find it hard to put up with him dumping toys and clothes on my side of the room. Your article helped me to understand him better. We still argue, but we've talked and realize that it takes two to make a friendship. We are both untidy kids, and we tend to blame each other. But now I look for his advantage and have found that it's easy to overcome frictions if you stick by Bible principles.

E. H., England

College Education

Very disappointed in your printing the letter on your "From Our Readers" page on college education. (August 22, 1987) Even you must admit that the article "College Education—A Preparation for What?" (January 8, 1987) was unfair and biased, and that finally the decision to go to college or not must be made on a personal, responsible, individual basis. I am sure you received letters disagreeing with that article. I know of many who read it and thought it was a narrow and unfair viewpoint, but you never printed a word of differing opinion. Now, six months later, a letter equally narrow agrees with the article and is printed.

T. B., U.S.C., United States

Actually, until your letter arrived, no letters disagreeing with the item on college education were brought to our attention. We agree that the question of whether to get a college education or not is a personal and individual matter. Nevertheless, we felt that the half-page item, based on comments from a respected news columnist, presented some very discerning and sobering thoughts. As valuable as some knowledge acquired in college can be, it cannot be equated with wisdom gained through experience. The item questioned the practical value of some things that are learned in college and gave a realistic view of the possibility of college students' realizing their hopes for the future. Also, caution was given against seeking materialistic goals. Obviously, the columnist quoted did not cover all aspects of the subject, but we think that in a few choice words, he made some very valid points that are worth serious consideration.—ED.

Watching the World

Tobacco-Using Toddlers

The addiction to smokeless tobacco by many students in junior and senior high school has long been known by researchers. Until recently, however, no information was available on the tobacco habits of elementary school students and preschoolers. A survey of 5,000 children by the U.S. Centers for Disease Control has revealed that children as young as three years of age are addicted to tobacco products. Seventeen percent of the five-year-old girls surveyed and 10 percent of the boys within the same age bracket were found to have been using products like snuff for a year or more. According to *Health Letter,* published in Washington, D.C., "extensive advertising and distribution of free samples have made smokeless tobacco products" attractive and available to young users, many of whom cannot read warning labels required on all packaging. Smaller children have likely been introduced to such products by friends, older siblings, or even their parents.

Unemployed Graduates

"A university degree does not guarantee a job." That was the conclusion drawn from a survey of the 1985 spring graduates from more than 15 universities in Ontario, Canada. These graduates had a 7.3-percent unemployment rate, essentially the same as the rest of the labor force in the province. They fared only slightly better than other workers in the same 20- to 24-year age group, whose rate of unemployment was 10.6 percent. Additionally, the survey showed that a degree is also no guarantee of equal pay for work.

Mountain Gorillas in Peril

"Unless we come to the aid of the mountain gorillas now," warns the WWF (World Wildlife Fund), "these defenseless creatures may actually be wiped out within the very century they were discovered." Why? Miners and loggers, reports the WWF, continue to destroy the Impenetrable Forest of southwestern Uganda —home of almost one third of all mountain gorillas in the world. Furthermore, poachers are killing gorillas to supply the black market in live infants "and grotesque products like gorilla-hand paperweights." During the last 20 years, almost half the entire mountain gorilla population has disappeared. Today, only about 400 of these shy and gentle African apes survive in the wild.

Alcohol Use Costly

Although some politicians believe that taxation on the sale of alcoholic products provides a net gain in government revenue, information now available argues otherwise. Barbara Coultes of the Addiction Research Foundation in Toronto, Canada, says that in Canada in one year "alcohol caused an extra $2-billion in health-care costs, . . . raised social welfare costs by $1.4-billion, [and] cost an extra $652-million in law enforcement." It also "cut productivity on the job by an estimated $1.2-billion," an aspect of costs not to be overlooked. Is all of that cost covered by alcohol tax revenues? In just the province of Ontario, costs ($1.6 billion) outstripped revenues ($678 million) by almost $1 billion in a recent year.

Solution Found

In Bethlehem, the annual general cleaning of the Church of the Nativity, which is said to stand over the site of Jesus' birth, has finally been accomplished peacefully. In past years, fistfights and

U.S. Postal Service

STATEMENT OF OWNERSHIP, MANAGEMENT AND CIRCULATION

Required by 39 U.S.C. 3685)

1A. TITLE OF PUBLICATION	1B. PUBLICATION NO.	2. DATE OF FILING
AWAKE!	0 3 9 2 0 0	Sept. 1, 1987
3. FREQUENCY OF ISSUE	3A. NO. OF ISSUES PUBLISHED ANNUALLY	3B. ANNUAL SUBSCRIPTION PRICE
Semimonthly	24	$5.00

4. COMPLETE MAILING ADDRESS OF KNOWN OFFICE OF PUBLICATION *(Street, City, County, State and ZIP+4 Code) (Not printers)*

117 Adams Street, Brooklyn, Kings, New York 11201

5. COMPLETE MAILING ADDRESS OF THE HEADQUARTERS OF GENERAL BUSINESS OFFICES OF THE PUBLISHER *(Not printer)*

25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, New York 11201

6. FULL NAMES AND COMPLETE MAILING ADDRESS OF PUBLISHER, EDITOR, AND MANAGING EDITOR *(This item MUST NOT be blank)*

PUBLISHER *(Name and Complete Mailing Address)*
Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc.
117 Adams Street, Brooklyn, New York 11201

EDITOR *(Name and Complete Mailing Address)*
Same as "Publisher"

MANAGING EDITOR *(Name and Complete Mailing Address)*
By corporation - Same as "Publisher"

7. OWNER *(If owned by a corporation, its name and address must be stated and also immediately thereunder the names and addresses of stockholders owning or holding 1 percent or more of total amount of stock. If not owned by a corporation, the names and addresses of the individual owners must be given. If owned by a partnership or other unincorporated firm, its name and address, as well as that of each individual must be given. If the publication is published by a nonprofit organization, its name and address must be stated.) (Item must be completed.)*

FULL NAME	COMPLETE MAILING ADDRESS
Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc.	25 Columbia Heights Brooklyn, New York 11201
No stockholders	

8. KNOWN BONDHOLDERS, MORTGAGEES, AND OTHER SECURITY HOLDERS OWNING OR HOLDING 1 PERCENT OR MORE OF TOTAL AMOUNT OF BONDS, MORTGAGES OR OTHER SECURITIES *(If there are none, so state)*

FULL NAME	COMPLETE MAILING ADDRESS
None	

9. FOR COMPLETION BY NONPROFIT ORGANIZATIONS AUTHORIZED TO MAIL AT SPECIAL RATES *(Section 423.12 DMM only)*
The purpose, function, and nonprofit status of this organization and the exempt status for Federal income tax purposes *(Check one)*

(1) ☒ HAS NOT CHANGED DURING PRECEDING 12 MONTHS
(2) ☐ HAS CHANGED DURING PRECEDING 13 MONTHS
(If changed, publisher must submit explanation of change with this statement.)

10. EXTENT AND NATURE OF CIRCULATION *(See instructions on reverse side)*	AVERAGE NO. COPIES EACH ISSUE DURING PRECEDING 12 MONTHS	ACTUAL NO. COPIES OF SINGLE ISSUE PUBLISHED NEAREST TO FILING DATE
A. TOTAL NO. COPIES *(Net Press Run)*	4,121,398	4,227,030
B. PAID AND/OR REQUESTED CIRCULATION 1. Sales through dealers and carriers, street vendors and counter sales	3,435,535	3,499,613
2. Mail Subscription *(Paid and/or requested)*	676,360	719,361
C. TOTAL PAID AND/OR REQUESTED CIRCULATION *(Sum of 10B1 and 10B2)*	4,111,895	4,218,974
D. FREE DISTRIBUTION BY MAIL, CARRIER OR OTHER MEANS SAMPLES, COMPLIMENTARY, AND OTHER FREE COPIES	2	3
E. TOTAL DISTRIBUTION *(Sum of C and D)*	4,111,897	4,218,977
F. COPIES NOT DISTRIBUTED 1. Office use, left over, unaccounted, spoiled after printing	9,501	8,053
2. Return from News Agents	None	None
G. TOTAL *(Sum of E, F1 and 2--should equal net press run shown in A)*	4,121,398	4,227,030

11. I certify that the statements made by me above are correct and complete

SIGNATURE AND TITLE OF EDITOR, PUBLISHER, BUSINESS MANAGER, OR OWNER
Director

PS Form 3526, July 1986 *(See instruction on reverse)*

violent arguments erupted between the rival groups of priests, as the right to clean is regarded as a sign of ownership. How was it resolved? The press service of the World Council of Churches reports: "Following delicate negotiations by Israeli officials that lasted late into the night the two major parties in the dispute —Greek (Eastern Orthodox) and Armenian (Oriental Orthodox) agreed to leave a disputed section high above the entrance to the Grotto of the Nativity uncleaned by either side."

Name Choice

A new law on family names went into effect in Finland at the beginning of 1986. A wife was allowed to keep her maiden name when marrying, or both could adopt the wife's surname. The results? According to the Population Register Center, almost 24,000 of the 26,000 couples wed last year chose the traditional way of using the husband's last name. In almost 1,950 marriages, each partner kept his or her own surname. Only 116 couples chose the wife's maiden name as their common name.

"Internal Jogging"

"Mirth and laughter affect most of the major physical systems of the body," claims Dr. William Fry, an authority on the physiology of laughter. He told the New York

Daily News that the muscle activity involved in laughing is the same as in exercising. Fry labeled laughing "internal jogging" that is beneficial even when faked. He explained that it doubles the heart rate for three to five minutes and works out the chest, neck, face, shoulder, abdomen, and scalp muscles. Fry claims that a hearty laugh reduces muscle tension and helps the body get rid of greater amounts of accumulated carbon dioxide. Other beneficial side effects are said to include the stimulation of the nervous system, the deadening of pain through the secretion of endorphins (the body's natural analgesics), and the sharpening of the mental processes. "You can get really a good workout from it," says Fry.

Coffee the Culprit?

The claim that coffee drinking increases the chances of getting heart disease is being challenged by Dr. Katsuhiko Yano of the Honolulu Heart Program. The research involved a 15-year study of 7,194 Japanese men, 6,055 of whom were coffee drinkers. According to Yano, increased coffee intake should have raised the risk of heart trouble. However, researchers in the program found that when other risk factors, such as tobacco smoking, were taken into consideration, the link between heart disorders and coffee consumption disappeared. The researchers conclude that heart disease among some coffee lovers could very well be the result of their tobacco use, not their coffee drinking.

SOME thought it was a mild earthquake! But no, it was the effect of the wind plus the weight and movement of an estimated 250,000 people who packed the deck of San Francisco's Golden Gate Bridge for its 50th anniversary on May 24, 1987. Another 500,000 crowded the bridge approaches. Engineers hastily calculated that the bridge could support the weight.

With a main span of 4,200 feet, the Golden Gate was the world's longest suspension bridge at its completion in 1937. The tallest ships in the world can pass safely under the elevated highway arching 19 stories above the water.

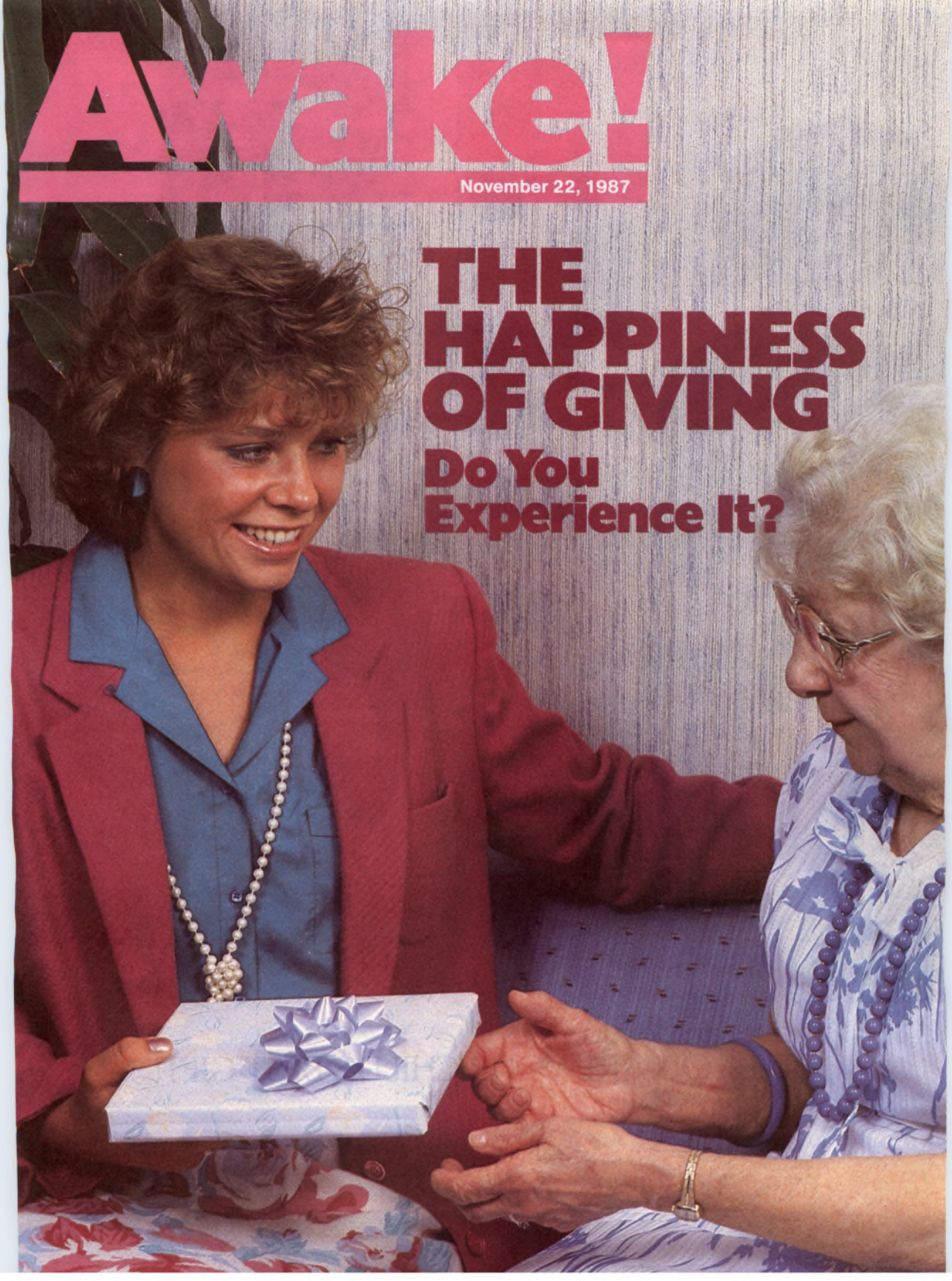
A total of 80,000 miles of wire compose the two cables from which the bridge is suspended. Each one is 3 feet in diameter and 7,650 feet long, and has an estimated ultimate tensile strength of 200 million pounds.

Because of the excellent design and continuing maintenance, it is estimated that the bridge will have a life of 200 years.

The GOLDEN GATE BRIDGE 50 Years Old

Awake!

November 22, 1987



THE HAPPINESS OF GIVING

Do You Experience It?

Toys can be fun,
BUT YOU ARE YOUR CHILD'S BEST GIFT!

The Greater Happiness of Giving

Do You Experience It?

THE banquet room's houselights have been dimmed. The music has been muted. The dancers have stopped. A spotlight plays its beam on a pyramid of gaily wrapped boxes. There are big boxes and little boxes. There are square ones and round ones, pink ones and blue ones, silver-colored ones and gold-toned ones. Fancy ribbons and bows adorn them all. Nervous hands of an excited bride carefully unwrap each, while a self-conscious groom offers silent assistance.

There are toasters and blenders for the kitchen; china and silverware, tablecloths and matching napkins for the dining room. There are towels galore and washcloths aplenty, and bed sheets and pillowcases to last a lifetime. There are enough clocks for every room in the house and cookbooks with more than enough recipes to satisfy the taste of every gourmet.

As the gifts are opened there are "oohs" and "aahs" and heartfelt expressions of gratitude by the newlyweds. They have experienced the happiness of receiving from those who knew the joy of giving.

Weddings, anniversaries, Christmases, birthdays, and a host of other celebrations are all social mores in which gift giving is an expected and accepted part of the rituals. But because it is expected in many countries, it often works a hardship on the giver that detracts from the joy of giving. There is, however, the spontaneous giving, the giving that is not expected. It delights the receiver, whether the gift is little or big, and it brings the giver the greatest happiness.

Admittedly, those who have more are able to give more. For example, America's 19th-century industrialist Andrew Carnegie could have been his country's first billionaire. Instead, he gave away 90 percent of his fortune over a period of 18 years. When his secretary warned him that he was depleting his personal capital, he happily replied, "Delighted to hear it my boy, keep it up." That same era saw John D. Rockefeller, one of the richest men in the world, give away $750 million in his lifetime. It has been written that singer Elvis Presley "would hand out Cadillacs by the dozen" and thoroughly enjoyed doing so.

Not a New Custom

The giving of gifts is a custom almost as old as man himself. From earliest times it

Awake!® November 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 22

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 54 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

The Greater Happiness of Giving —Do You Experience It? 3
Christmas Giving—A Time of Joy or Depression? 5
The Happiness of Giving Enhanced by Grateful Receiving 8

Also in This Issue

Watch Out! Spies About! 10
Papal Visit Reopens Old Wounds 13
Who Suffered the Agony of the Holocaust? 14
The Li River—Where Adjectives Fail 15
Young People Ask ... Does Being God's Friend Matter? 18
I Sought a Simpler Life Through Drugs 21
"We'll Be Back in 2004!" 24
The Miracle of Language—How We Acquire It 26
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Yellowstone Park, Devil's Monument 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

25 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$5.00	$2.50
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$7.00	$3.50
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures* used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $5.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

has played an important role in the lives of people. Abraham's aged servant gave gifts of jewelry to Rebekah after seeing evidence that Jehovah had assigned her as a wife for Isaac. Also given were "choice things to her brother and to her mother." (Genesis 24:13-22, 50-53) After the adversity suffered by Job was over, he was presented with gifts by his brothers and sisters and former acquaintances—each one giving "a piece of money and each one a gold ring."—Job 42:10, 11.

When the unnamed queen of Sheba traveled to Jerusalem to visit King Solomon, she was moved by his God-given wisdom and pronounced his servants happy for being able to hear and benefit from this wisest of men. So moved was she that she presented Solomon with gifts of 120 talents of gold (worth about $50,000,000) as well as precious stones and much-prized balsam oil. She may have depleted her tiny kingdom's treasury by a considerable sum, but doubtless she experienced the joy of giving. Solomon too was to experience the joy of giving, for he gave her gifts in return that apparently exceeded the value of the treasures she had given him.—2 Chronicles 9:12; *American Translation, Moffatt.*

The early Christians made gifts or contributions in behalf of their needy brothers. The apostle Paul wrote of the Macedonian and Achaian Christians, who, although poor, expended themselves beyond their actual ability in giving to their brothers in want in Judea. "They have been pleased to do so," Paul said.—Romans 15:26, 27.

Gifts That "Speak"

Today, it is obvious that gift giving continues to be a basic human way of establishing and strengthening the bond of love and friendship, to let others know that we care.

There are gifts from one marriage mate to another, simply to say, "I love you"—a simple box of candy or a bouquet of flowers. There are gifts from children to parents. And what loving parents are not always giving to their children? There are gifts to soothe a broken heart, to cheer a depressed soul, to say "get well soon," to express appreciation for kindnesses shown and hospitality extended, or merely to say, "I had a wonderful time."

There are gifts to the needy, to disaster victims whom we may never see and from whom we may never receive an expression of thanks. A basket of fruit for the sick, houseplants for the shut-ins, a piece of jewelry for a dear friend—little things that mean a lot. It is giving with the joy that comes from the heart. These are the gifts that are often the most cherished.

Of all the occasions for giving, none are as visible as the worldwide pageantry of Christmas. It is an orgy of gift giving rooted also in the distant past. It is a celebration dreaded by many and eagerly anticipated by others. It can mean the difference between financial disaster and a horn of plenty. Even though gifts are exchanged between friends, the ritual can bring them closer together or drive them apart. This paradox of Christmas giving will be considered in the next article.

Christmas Giving

A Time of Joy or Depression?

THE following letter addressed to Santa Claus is typical of many written by young children and given to parents and teachers on the promise that the letters will be duly mailed to the North Pole:

"Dear Santa Claus:

"How are you? I am fine. I hope you will have a nice Christmas. I hope you have a lot of nice toys because there are a lot of nice things I want. First, I would like to have a baby brother. My daddy says you don't have babies at the North Pole, so you can bring me a puppy instead. I want a shotgun, a machine gun, a ten-speed bike and a tape recorder. Oh, by the way, Santa, this will be the last letter I will write you as I will not believe in Santa Claus next year. But I believe in Santa Claus this year."

Do you recognize this letter? Does it have a familiar ring? Does it perhaps sound like one you wrote when you were a child? Millions of such letters are received each year at post offices in many countries from hope-filled children and addressed to that mythical purveyor of gifts they so fondly know as "Santa Claus."

Few write the word "please" and even fewer write "thank you." Some tug at the

heartstrings, others smack of greed. The younger the child, the less he asks for. The older the child, the greater the number of gifts it takes to satisfy him, thus raising his expectations for greater and more lavish gifts the following year.

There are toys designed for every period of a child's life. There are toys that teach, that test skills, that direct thoughts toward violence. There are toys that stand up to hard play and those that fall apart after a few days of use. There are safe toys and toys so dangerous that officials fight to have them removed from the market. There are toys that appear to be demon-inspired in design—balls with grotesque faces so dreadful they could cause nightmares, yet they were last year's best-sellers, notwithstanding parental objection. For over two months before the event, children are tuned in to Christmas. Supposedly, the joy of giving and receiving pervades the air.

The Fall Into Depression

But alas, in a few days the thrill is gone. The child has squeezed all the fun and enjoyment from his gifts, be they many or few. The reality has not lived up to the expectations. Boredom has set in. The tinsel of Christmas and all the gifts received were not the cure-all he expected. Commenting on this, child psychologist Dr. Nancy Hayes says that Christmastime "is a period of the highest rate of depression and suicide among children." She notes that many youngsters become depressed when Christmas does not provide the "magical solution to problems." Imagine, too, their further devastation on learning that Santa Claus is only a myth, that their parents went to great lengths to perpetuate a lie.

So it is from infancy that children are taught to ask for, write for, and expect gifts at Christmastime—and it is not limited to children. Friendship among adults is sometimes measured by the value of the gifts exchanged. Often the bond is strained to the breaking point because one person gave a gift of greater value than the one he received. Possibly at no other time of the year does the expression "It's the thought that counts" mean so little.

Credit cards approach the limit of their purchasing power. Checks written cause bank accounts to become overdrawn. Forays in crowded stores jammed with shoppers fray the nerves. The scene of clawing, grabbing shoppers literally fighting over disappearing items on sale can make even the stouthearted retreat. Aching feet, plus being in a quandary over what to buy, make this rite of winter a nerve-shattering ordeal. It takes its toll on Christmas shoppers.

Said one salesperson: "You see people running around, getting a present for so and so, and they're really grouchy. People don't give presents with joy." Is it any wonder, then, that a clergyman called Christmas "the annual season of depression and neurosis"?

What compounds the frustration is the fact that many gifts are purchased and given as an obligation, often with selfish motivations. Said one professor of sociology: "The giver has not only the anxiety of trying to guess what the recipient would like, but also the added anxiety of projecting a suitable image of himself."

What is the busiest day of the season? Often the day following Christmas. Then the stores are crowded to capacity with gift receivers returning their gifts, many for the cash value. Yet, had they been given cash as a gift, they would have resented it as a vulgar offering. Thus, the utter frustration, the jangled nerves, the weary bones, the grouchy crowds, the picking through literally hundreds of pieces of merchandise, the

packing, the wrapping, the tying of bows, all has often been in vain. So many gifts received with so little appreciation!

For so many, Christmas is not 'the season to be jolly.'

Giving Requires No Season

But what a joy it is when families get together and enjoy the companionship and love of each one! The bringing of gifts, too, can be an outward expression of heartfelt love. Jesus himself encouraged Christians to "practice giving." And what Christian or non-Christian is it who does not often quote Jesus' words, "There is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving"? (Luke 6:38; Acts 20:35) Surely, giving requires no season. But there is another reason why Christmas giving is questionable.

The real problem with Christmas is that it is founded on a falsehood. The season professes to represent the birthday of Jesus. How can this be, however, when the Bible does not give the date of his birth? In actuality, Christmas is timed to coincide with the "birth" of the sun—a ritual of sun worship.

In his book *The Story of Christmas,* Michael Harrison writes: "First of all, it must be noted that, despite the efforts of innumerable scholars, it has not yet been proved upon what day . . . Christ was born." The Bible makes clear only the date of his death, and it is this date alone that Jesus commanded his followers, true Christians, to celebrate. Is it any surprise, then, that *The New Schaff-Herzog Encyclopedia of Religious Knowledge* makes this point: "There is no historical evidence that our Lord's birthday was celebrated during the apostolic or early postapostolic times"?

Now consider these questions objectively: Would Jesus approve of a celebration that professes to honor him, yet is steeped in pagan rites and customs? Would he condone this festive holiday when more murders are committed than at any other time of the year and when non-Christian drunken bouts and lascivious living are an accepted way of life? Would he sanction a season noted for its depression, neurosis, and suicides? To true Christians the answer must be obvious.

Rather than setting aside a certain time of the year for giving joyfully to others, the generous soul will find that the giving that brings happiness to the giver and joy to the receiver is always in season. Gifts of our time, our energy, our sympathy; gifts of kindness and thoughtful words; and, yes indeed, material gifts that are needed—all such giving brings joy and happiness to both giver and receiver.

The Happiness of Giving

Enhanced by Grateful Receiving

REFLECT back to the newly wedded couple mentioned in the first article. Can you see them privately going over each gift received, commenting on how each item is just the thing they need? Can you see the bride carefully putting the sheets and pillowcases on a special shelf for easy access, the dishes in the cupboards, the silverware in the drawers, the toaster on the kitchen counter for quick daily use?

Together they carefully hang each picture in just the right place, the clocks in the most convenient locations. They decorate their hand-me-down dining table with one of the new tablecloths. The matching napkins in their gift napkin rings add a touch of class.

They are particularly fond of this gift—an electric can opener. The bride expects to use this convenience often. It was given them by a dear friend who they know could not afford one for herself. And this bedspread, made by an aged aunt with arthritic hands. It must have taken her months to do all the fancy needlework. What a labor of love!

They cherish each gift. Take back any single item and swap it for something else or for cash? Never! Now comes the most loving part of all—their expressions of thanks. Will they take the time to do it?

Have you been the recipient of a material gift, an expensive or an inexpensive one—a bouquet of flowers, a basket of fruit, a simple houseplant perhaps? Did some dear friend clean your house when you were ill or cook a meal for your family when you were unable? Did you thank them?

What a simple word "thanks" is. With one tiny expulsion of breath one can say it. Yet how often the expressing of it is ignored. Once a taxi driver returned a man's wallet left in his cab. What a gift! The owner took the wallet without a word. Imagine how crushed the taxi driver was by this ingratitude. He lamented, "If the guy had only said 'Thanks.'"

An issue of this magazine reported on a group of high-school boys who had formed a club for the purpose of aiding people. "They assisted stranded motorists by fixing flat tires, gave them gas if they unexpectedly ran out, and helped them in other ways," the article said. 'They took no money for their services. They asked only that the motorists write a "thank you" letter for their club files.' What were the results? A club spokesman

said: "You know, to date we have received only two letters, although our club records show we have assisted over 150 motorists in the two years we've been organized."

How profusely would you thank someone who had saved your life? Imagine what a gift that person had given you! Yet, one man risked his life to save passengers on a sinking ship, pulling 17 from the clutches of death, after which he had to be carried exhausted to his home. When asked years later what stood out in his memory of so gallant a rescue, he replied: 'Only this, sir. Of the seventeen people I saved not one ever thanked me.'

Is it a sign of weakness to say "thank you" for an act of kindness, a material gift, or a gift of life? Would these ever thank Jehovah God, the Great Life-giver, for their own life? If they cannot thank someone whom they can see, is it likely they will thank the One whom they cannot see?—1 John 4:20.

Is it any wonder that so many of today's youths find it difficult to express heartfelt thanks for a gift received or an act of kindness shown? If parents do not say "please" and "thank you," their children are not likely to do so.

Lack of appreciation is one of the identifying marks that we are living in "the last days." The apostle Paul warned: "In the last days critical times hard to deal with will be here. For men will be lovers of themselves, . . . unthankful."—2 Timothy 3:1, 2.

How to Show Appreciation

The designing and selling of thank-you cards is big business. Many of the cards express the sentiments beautifully. It is convenient to purchase these and send them to those who have given gifts or extended acts of kindness. But in addition, would it not be a loving and kind thing to add a personal touch, to write on them our own words of appreciation in our own handwriting—perhaps naming the gift received and how much we appreciate it and the happiness we have received or expect to receive from its use?

Along with this, where possible, would not a cheerful oral expression of gratitude, a handshake, a warm embrace, or other gesture of affection be appreciated by the giver? If we complain that time does not allow for our doing so, then think of the time, effort, and money the giver expended in our behalf. The giver's happiness in giving is enhanced by our appreciation shown.

We do well to remember the words of the greatest giver of all, Jesus: "There is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving." (Acts 20:35) Soon, in the coming earthly Paradise of righteousness, not only will all human inhabitants daily thank Jehovah God for the gift of life but they will also show loving appreciation to one another for neighborly acts of kindness. May we show appreciation now and have the approval both of Jehovah and of our neighbor.

Watch Out! SPIES ABOUT!

SHE knew that her husband was a spy. He had been passing information to a foreign power for years. He even bragged to her about it. Should she go to the police or keep quiet? What would you do under such circumstances? Would loyalty to principle or to your family get the upper hand? What about the fear of scandal? Finally, the woman informed the authorities. But she was in for a big surprise.

The above is one of so many spy stories that have hit the headlines in recent times. Perhaps you also recall the following:

Norway, January 1984: A top Norwegian diplomat arrested and charged with passing highly sensitive documents to a foreign power.

India, January 1985: Government officials and businessmen held on charges of violating the Official Secrets Act.

Federal Republic of Germany, summer 1985: Number of suspected agents, including a counterintelligence chief, defect to German Democratic Republic.

Russia and Britain, September 1985: Each country expels 31 of the other's diplomats, journalists, and commercial employees, many of whom are accused of spying.

Switzerland, December 1986: Married couple charged with espionage.

France, March 1987: Members of spy network arrested on suspicion of having fed classified space center know-how to a foreign power.

United States, April 1987: U.S. Marine

guards recalled from Russia, Austria, and Brazil for investigation into spy charges.

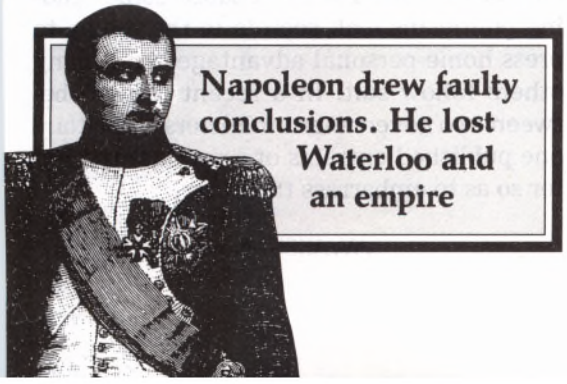
Inundated with reports like these, you may be left guessing at terms such as "moles" and "counterintelligence." Are there really more spies these days or simply more of them being caught? Could any of this affect you personally? You may be surprised to know just how much the world of espionage touches your life.

Back Into the Cobwebs of Spying

Peering into the past points us to a partnership of long standing: politics and the military. Webster's dictionary defines espionage as "spying by special agents upon people of a foreign country or upon their activities or enterprises . . . the accumulation of [such] information . . . for political or military uses."

Among the earliest to organize a secret service were the Egyptians. King Thutmose III used spies to smuggle 200 soldiers, sewn in flour bags, into the city of Jaffa. About 400 B.C.E., Chinese Sun Tzu wrote a book called *Ping Fa* (The Art of War), in which he stressed the importance of good intelligence organization. In the 15th century, European countries began to use their embassies in foreign capitals for spying. Diplomacy and espionage tiptoed hand in hand across European frontiers. Plumed in the colors of nationalism, the once fellow travelers became kinsmen.

Nationalism swept abroad in Europe and with it the need for armies, diplomats, and agents. Techniques were developed for making and breaking codes. Intelligence (gathering and analysis of information) and counter-intelligence (preventing others from getting secret information) became separate parts of the espionage web. Cardinal de Richelieu (France) and Frederick the Great (Prussia) spun notable spy networks. The threads of Britain's secret service were at one time spun by Daniel Defoe, author of *Robinson Crusoe.*



Napoleon drew faulty conclusions. He lost Waterloo and an empire

All developments were offset, though, by one great obstacle: communication. Agents relied on ship, horse, or carrier pigeon to transmit messages. Opposing armies could still assemble within a short distance of each other without knowing it. In 1815 Napoleon drew faulty conclusions about enemy troop movements a few miles away. He lost Waterloo and an empire. Intelligence was revolutionized much later by the technology of our century.

Out of the Cloak-and-Dagger Age

This century of conflict has thrust new challenges on intelligence services. Offshoot branches of secret service flourish in a climate of mistrust. "Fear is the very soul of the espionage business," states German newsweekly *Der Spiegel.* "The shakier the world situation, the more secure [spying] as a profession becomes." As a result, "there is not a country on earth that believes it can manage without a secret service." Spying thrives on suspicion and breeds it; hence the multitude of intelligence fields: strategic (needed by top-level planners), military (army, navy, and air), economic, scientific, geographic, and so on. Each adds its piece to the jigsaw.

Intelligence has indeed broadened its horizons. Formerly, classified data was mostly to be found along the corridors of political power or within military preserves. Today's rootstock of national secrets, though, is more broadly based. Why so?

The huge arms buildup since World War II means that several nations produce sophisticated weaponry. But the country

that also has the technology to process split-second decisions or aim its firepower more accurately clearly holds a trump card. This know-how is in the hands of manufacturers of everything from ball bearings to video games.

Hundreds of companies and millions of employees have thus become targets for the industrial spy. In the United States alone, over four million people have access to some 20 million secret documents. Do you work with so-called sensitive information or does a family member? That information may be of value to someone on the lookout for classified data.

What About Spies in the Bible?

The term "spying" was known in Egypt and Canaan by the 18th century B.C.E. at the latest. Joseph, who was then the chief food administrator of Egypt, used a ruse to identify the motives of his ten half brothers, insisting that they were spies.—Genesis, chapter 42.

Over two hundred years later, Moses acceded to the request of the Israelites and dispatched 12 men to spy out the land of Canaan.—Numbers, chapter 13; Deuteronomy 1:22-25.

Joshua sent Israelites to have a look at the cities of Jericho and Ai before each battle. —Joshua 2:1; 7:2.

A spy was expected to take a close look at the land in order to gather information about it. The Hebrew word translated "spy" depicts someone who wanders through the land on foot, observing intently what he sees.

Note that when the tribe of Joseph wanted details on the city of Bethel before trying to capture it, they employed spies. (Judges 1:22, 23) Various translations of the Bible tell us that they "sent scouts" (*The Living Bible*), "made a reconnaissance" (*The Jerusalem Bible*), or "sent men to reconnoitre" (*Moffatt*).

Hence, spying mentioned in the Bible is a far cry from the grossly immoral world of espionage of today.

Such are the spoils of undercover warfare. The network that sneaks off with expertise developed at enormous cost in another land has a prized trophy. Yes, intelligence setups can save huge sums of money. But they also run up immense budgets. *The Sunday Times* book review quotes an estimate that intelligence worldwide costs a staggering $29 billion a year. It is said to employ over a million people. Even the United Nations' budget is dwarfed by such figures. Fischer's *Weltalmanach* puts that at less than $1 billion and the payroll at 40,000. The colossal expense of espionage is met out of public funds, taxes you pay.

Itchy Fingers and Itchy Feet

Agents used to ply their trade out of principle, for country or ideology. For instance, Oleg Penkovsky, famous spy of the 1960's, allegedly leaked to the West details of Russia's military situation at the time of the Cuban missile crisis. *Der Spiegel* then wrote that he did it because of his political ideals and went on: "Only once did he receive money. He was given 3,000 rubles [then worth about $3,330] for expenses, 2,000 of which he returned."

Spies nowadays have baser motives. *Time* wrote: "Most recent converts to espionage care little about politics, and are rarely trapped by blackmail. Mainly, they are either hard up or greedy for cash."

"The public has ceased caring about secrets," writes *The Sunday Times*, "assuming them all to have been given away long since." Why this erosion in public respect for confidentiality? Partly because some leading politicians leak secrets to the media to press home personal advantage. And many others follow suit. In a recent dispute between two government ministers in Britain, one published extracts of a confidential letter so as to embarrass the other.

In the case mentioned at the start, the husband betrayed not only his employer but also his family. Unknown to his wife, he had drawn their own son into the espionage net. Both men went to prison.

Books and films portray the spy world with bronzed heroes, minicameras, and clandestine rendezvous. Newspapers herald the unearthing of the latest mole, that is, an agent who infiltrates the intelligence service of the opposition and tunnels his way into a key post. This media image is completely out of focus with reality. Moles and minicameras are used but to a very small degree. Collecting intelligence information is mostly a tedious affair. It involves poring over trade journals and finance or scientific magazines to glean seemingly trivial details that together build an intelligible whole. And yet, some people are still attracted to the undercover realm in search of thrills.

No More Lies, No More Spies

The espionage web casts a broad shadow, even beclouding the lives of outsiders. They pay for it. They live in the climate of suspicion it breeds and feeds on. They are confronted by its dazzling image. The wise course for Christians is to resist totally the greedy, dishonest, and immoral world of spying.—Compare 1 Timothy 6:7-10; Colossians 3:5-10.

How different things would be if we had one world government that dispensed with nationalism to unite citizens, not divide them! How splendid if officials gave a shining example in trustworthiness and honor and if love, not fear, prevailed! All that is exactly what the Kingdom of God will achieve. —Revelation 7:9, 10, 16, 17; 2 Peter 3:13.

Papal Visit Reopens Old Wounds

DURING the pope's visit to Germany last May, he referred to "the hardships the Church faced in the Nazi era." The *Kölner Stadt-Anzeiger* reported this, then added: "He failed to mention that some leading Catholic clergymen were lacking in courage, preaching sermons in support of denominational schools but not against persecution of the Jews."

The beatification rites for Edith Stein—a Jewess converted to Catholicism—also became a focal point of controversy. Jews objected to her being represented as a Catholic martyr. The *Nürnberger Nachrichten* said: "Edith Stein was beatified as a martyr for the Christian faith, which is not strictly true. She was sent to her death in the gas chamber at Auschwitz in 1942 as a Jewess, not as a Catholic nun." One Catholic group claimed that the beatification was an attempt to gloss over the "embarrassing silence of the Catholic Church after the Nazis came to power." Another Catholic group said that the beatification "dare not blind us to the fact that the Catholic bishops offered next to no resistance, but rather openly cooperated with the National Socialistic system."

Some critics demanded an admission of guilt for the silence of the Catholic Church during the Holocaust, but none was forthcoming. "During his meeting with the bishops the previous evening," the report in the *Süddeutsche Zeitung* said, "the pope exercised the greatest caution in touching this thorn in the conscience of the church. During the Nazi dictatorship, the Apostolic See sought by means of the concordat 'to prevent the worst' but was 'unable to arrest the calamitous developments.' The pope said he saw no reason to accuse the German bishops of guilt because of their silence."

LAST June the American Jewish Congress sent an open letter to Pope John Paul II. It was published in *The New York Times,* June 26. It protested the papal audience granted to Kurt Waldheim, the president of Austria, accused of being involved in the Nazi killing of Jews during World War II. Waldheim was cited as the symbol "of current efforts to diminish, falsify and forget the Holocaust."

After acknowledging that the agony of the Holocaust could not be undone, the letter said: "But surely the most sacred command of our generation is memory: not to forget how silence became indifference, indifference became complicity, and finally turned into a nightmare of slaughter for millions upon millions." Waldheim, the letter said, "wishes to inflict on the victims of the Holocaust the final indignity of forgetfulness." The pope was then castigated because he "put moral principle aside" and received Waldheim at the Vatican. The letter continued:

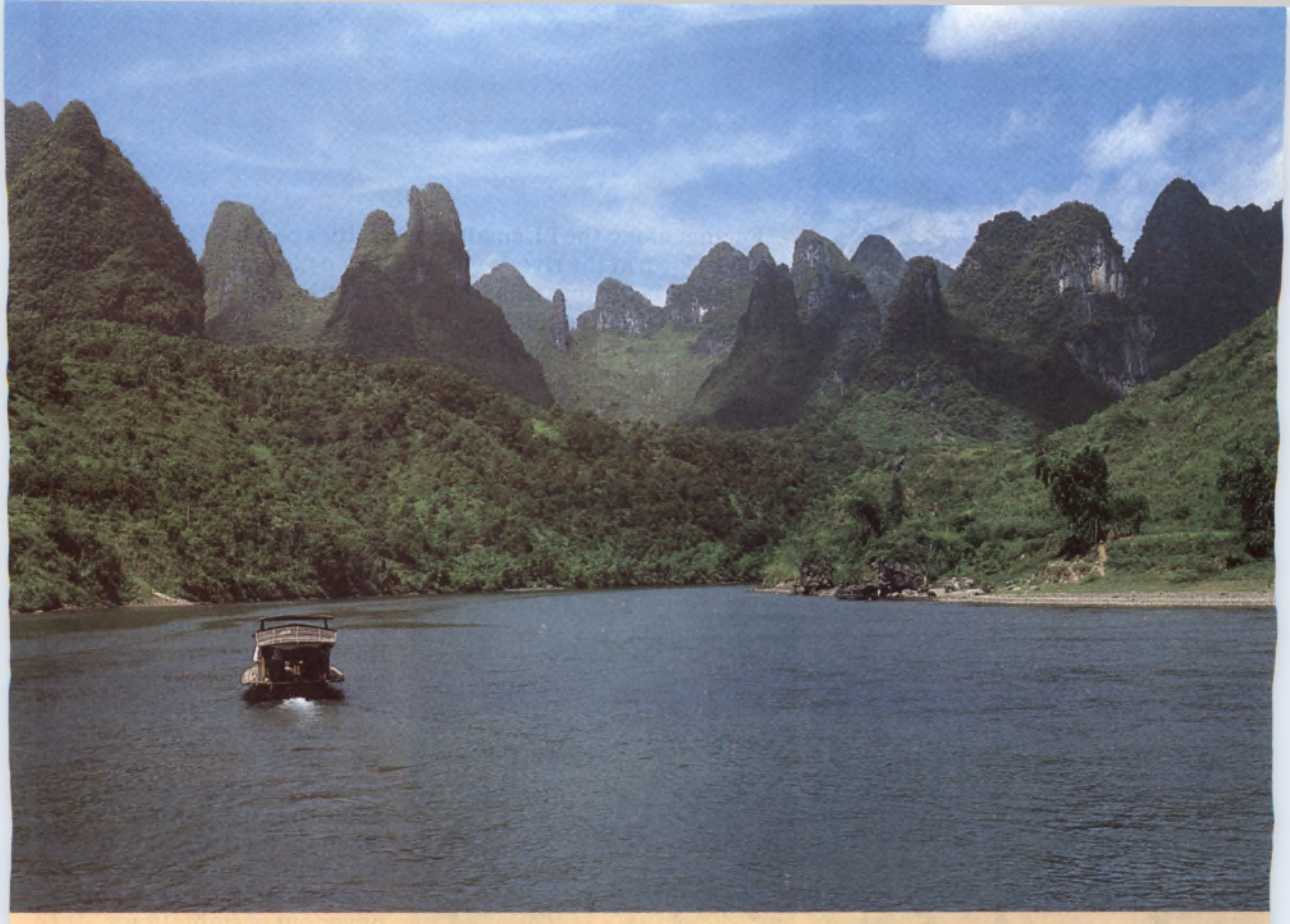
"Is it possible, Your Holiness, that in Waldheim's forgetfulness [of the Holocaust] there is an echo, however distant, of the Church's forgetfulness as well? Has Your Holiness dealt with the indifference of the Catholic churches in Europe to the fate of the Jews during World War II? Not a word on the subject has been uttered in any of your Papal visits to various European countries and to the Death Camps. Despite the extraordinary heroism of so many individual Catholics, isn't it true that, along with so much of the rest of the world, the official churches were largely silent and abandoned the Jews in their agony? And if the Church, to which millions look for moral guidance, cannot yet come to terms with its past, if it cannot respond to the demands of sacred memory, what hope is there for others?"

WHO Suffered the Agony of the Holocaust?

Of course, the attempted genocide of millions of Jews does cry out for remembrance. But reflect a moment. When the letter mentions the Holocaust, is it not presented exclusively as a Jewish holocaust? Was it not "to the fate of the Jews" only that the Catholic churches were accused of indifference? And according to this letter, was it not 'much of the rest of the world and other churches' that "abandoned the Jews in their agony?" Only the Jews? Did not others in addition to the Jews suffer?

The book *The Forgotten Holocaust* shows that there were three million non-Jewish Poles caught up in the Holocaust. *A History of the Modern World* refers to the millions of other people involved in it. Even of the German Jehovah's Witnesses, non-Witness sources have reported that "some 10,000 were imprisoned" and "more than two thousand perished in concentration camps."

The Holocaust is not to be regarded, therefore, as an assault on the Jews alone. Hitler was determined to exterminate any group of people that did not bow to his doctrine of Aryan superiority. Jehovah's Witnesses were included because they believed and applied the Bible principle at Acts 17:26, 27.



The LI RIVER

Where Adjectives Fail

漓江

FROM its headwaters in the mountains, the Li River comes tumbling southward. By the time it reaches the bustling city of Guilin in southeastern China, it has widened out and moves sedately by this ancient city sprawled on its western bank.

Guilin is different from Western cities. During rush hour its streets are solid bicycles. A sprinkling of taxis and trucks work their way through the mass, horns honking. The cyclists pedal blithely along, quite oblivious as they are missed by inches. No one upset, no angry screaming, no tempers flaring. Different from rush hour in New York or Rome or Mexico City. It's different, but there's no loss for words to describe it.

AWAKE!—November 22, 1987

Farther along the Li, small communities perch on the banks. Down at the river's edge, children play and wave at the tourist boats that chug their way southward. Women wash clothes and vegetables in the water. Men herd water buffalo along the riverbanks. A short way inland, farmers work in rice paddies, some planting by hand, some plowing with water buffalo. Different, but describable.

But all along the Li River are mountains, rows upon rows of them, jutting straight up into the sky. Very different mountains, and indescribable. For all the other exotic sights on the Li River boat trip from Guilin to Yang-shuo, there were adjectives adequate to describe them, but for these strange mountains there were no adjectives.

For 5 hours and 50 miles the boat traveled down the Li river, and for 5 hours and 50 miles those mountains were never out of sight. Rows of them close up, more rows behind them, and still more rows beyond, until they were so faint in the distance that they looked unreal. To capture what adjectives couldn't, cameras clicked and greedily ate up roll after roll of film. Surely, here a picture would be worth a thousand words!

But the cameras also failed to capture the eerie feel of these bizarre pinnacles jumbled together as far as the eye could see. The boat's crew served a hot meal for lunch. All went down to eat except this observer, who was much too fascinated to leave the

upper deck. He could fill his stomach anytime; this feast for his eyes would soon pass by. What his camera missed, his memory must retain.

"According to geological survey," one travel folder says, "Guilin was originally a vast expanse of sea. As a result of repeated crustal movements, the limestone once on the sea bed rose and became land. With weathering erosion and rainy solution, the limestone took shapes of forest of peaks, solitary summits, underground rivers and caves. It is this unique Karst* formation that has made the landscape in Guilin the most marvellous in the world."

* "A limestone region marked by sinks, abrupt ridges, irregular protuberant rocks, caverns, and underground streams."—*Webster's Unabridged.*

If that last statement is a little exaggerated, it is forgivable exaggeration. Surely, this jungle of limestone pinnacles through which the Li River weaves and winds its way is unforgettable. We cannot be positive just how it came about, but we can be certain who brought it about. If adjectives fail to describe the Li River mountains, how much greater their failure to describe their Maker. "Jehovah is great and very much to be praised, and his greatness is unsearchable."—Psalm 145:3.

The Icing on the Cake

That's what it seemed like to us. After the Li River trip we went to a nursery school in Guilin. In the classroom four-year-olds played games, did little dances, and then sat and listened fascinated as the visiting American lady sang a child's song. It was about a girl and her 'dear little dolly with eyes of bright blue.' Of course, they didn't understand the words, but they were captivated by the soft voice and the gentle lilt of the simple tune, and by the miming of the story as the dolly was being dressed, went out to play, and was finally 'rocked to sleep at the close of the day.' They sensed the mood. Faces glowed. There were smiles. Some sat very still, entranced. When we left they happily waved their good-byes.

They stole our heart.

Young People Ask. . .

Does Being God's Friend Matter?

A FRIEND is a special person. The Bible describes a true friend as one who sticks closer than a brother, is constant in his loyalty and friendship, comes to the aid of his companion in distress, and gives counsel to him in faithfulness. (Proverbs 17:17; 18:24; 27:6, 9) Could there be a relationship any better than this?

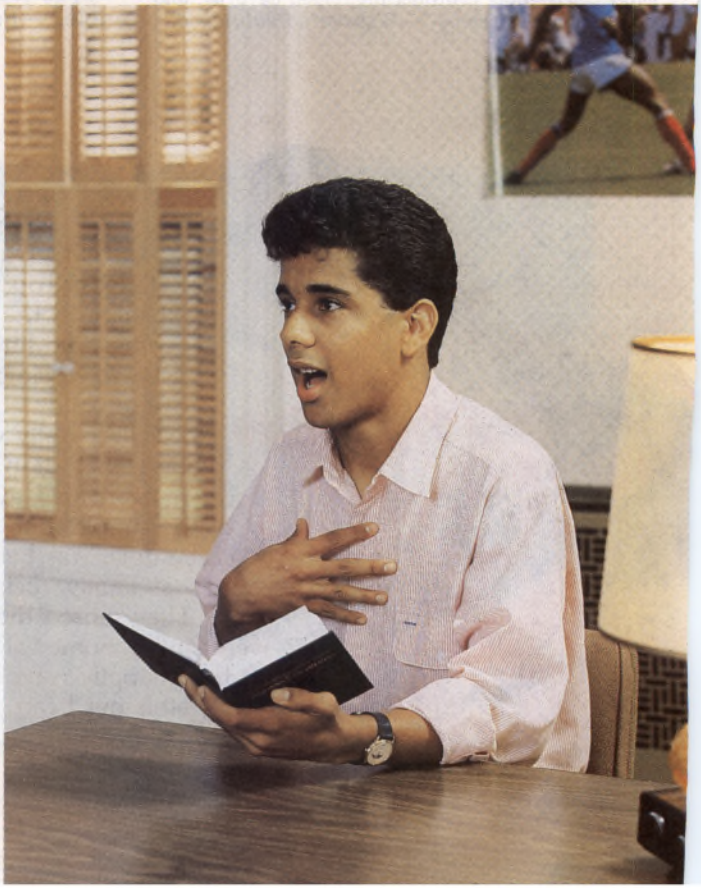
Many youths sincerely believe that being God's friend has much more to offer. Yet, perhaps you agree with others who feel that such a relationship with God is impossible or impractical. 'Lots of people claim they have faith in God,' they may say, 'but even believers still suffer and go through life just as those who don't have faith in him.'

So, what's the difference? Does getting close to God really matter? Can being God's friend benefit you at all? The experiences of some teenagers today have shown that the benefits of intimacy with God are unique and surpass the closeness that you can develop with any other friend. How so?

"Abraham was called 'Jehovah's friend.' Jesus called his followers 'my friends.' . . . So I too can become their friend!"

Dealing With Pressure

Some young people, now pursuing a deeper relationship with God, say that being God's friend has aided them in restraining hostile feelings. Eighteen-year-old Virginia, who was deeply affected by her parents' separation, confesses: "I held a grudge against my father. I was always



angry. As a result, I began hating other people. I would try to make my friends miserable. I wanted others to experience what I was suffering!"

Now, after studying God's Word, Virginia happily admits: "What a change has come over me! I don't despise Dad anymore. I have come to realize that he is just a victim of a rotten system backed up by Satan the Devil. I respect him and get along better with everyone now." Yes, Bible knowledge helps youths like Virginia to understand the reason for today's anxieties and to learn how to cope with them.

Being close to God can help you deal with seemingly overwhelming pressure. Juana is a 19-year-old girl whose father is an alcoholic. "Sometimes Dad comes home drunk and beats us up," she says. How does she endure this situation? "When I feel depressed, I know I can go to Jehovah God in prayer and feel strengthened." Getting to know God and imitating his fine qualities—such as mildness and long-suffering—have also helped Juana to learn how to deal with her father.—Galatians 5: 22, 23.

It may not always be easy for you to show respect for your parents and to give them their due honor. But what helps is for you to be convinced of the power of God's Word, the Bible. The apostle John says that the spiritually strong "young men" in the congregation to which he wrote had even "conquered the wicked one" because 'the word of God remained in them.' (1 John 2:14) Hence, Bible counsel such as the following has helped youths like Juana and Virginia: "When being reviled, we bless; when being persecuted, we bear up; when being defamed, we entreat."—1 Corinthians 4:12, 13.

Too, the apostle Peter says that a fine example—"chaste conduct together with deep respect"—may win over those who cause you pressure in the first place. (1 Peter 3:1, 2) Although Peter directed these words to Christian wives, you can benefit from this counsel as well.

Of course, it is not always easy to put up with pressure, but pouring your heart out to Jehovah in properly motivated prayer can ease the stress. How refreshing it is to know that Jehovah wants to help and has the power "to do so much more than we can ever ask for, or even think of"! (Ephesians 3:20, *Today's English Version;* Jeremiah 9:24) Furthermore, the Bible assures us that God "is not far off from each one of us." (Acts 17:27) Yes, you can have a friend who is always within reach.

Higher Moral Standards

Being God's friend has also helped youths cultivate higher moral standards that bring contentment and peace of mind. (Matthew 6:13; Psalm 141:3, 4) Sixteen-year-old Sofia admits that she had sexual intercourse with a boy when she was only 14 years old. Looking back, Sofia says: "It wasn't until I began studying the Bible

In Our Next Issue

- *'Who Will Watch Our Children?'*
- *My Struggle to Leave a Violent Life*
- *Time—Are You Its Master or Its Slave?*

that I decided to stop dating him." Since then, she has resisted immoral conduct and says that Bible knowledge has fortified her relationship with Jehovah.

Premarital sex is common in many parts of the world. In Mexico alone, 90 percent of the youths are said to have had a sexual relationship before marriage! As a result, many teenagers have suffered the consequences, such as a premature marriage or an illegitimate childbirth. During just one year, more than one million babies were born to teenage girls in Mexico!

Today, there is often overwhelming pressure to get sexually involved at an early age. But rather than just plunging into sexual immorality, why not first examine the consequences? Besides the immediate physical results, consider how God is affected if we break his law. Satan has challenged God, claiming that under test humans will not be faithful to Him. So Jehovah urges: "Be wise, my son, and make my heart rejoice, that I may make a reply to him that is taunting me." (Proverbs 27:11) Think about it: Will you break God's law and make Satan happy and God sad?—Compare Psalm 78:38-41.

The greatest protection against immorality is for you to develop a personal, intimate relationship with Jehovah.

No Superhuman Temptation

On the other hand, some youths are hesitant about getting involved with God. "I'm so scared," says one 14-year-old girl, "that when I accept God, he'll totally take over. I'm so much my own person, but I want to open my heart. I'm really torn apart and confused. I just want to learn and start slowly. I feel if I'm rushed, I'll get scared and give up." Do you feel this way?

If so, you can be comforted by the fact that God will help you through any problem in life. "It is no superhuman temptation that you have had," says the Bible. "And God can be depended on not to let you be tried beyond your strength, but when temptation comes, to give you a way out of it, so that you can withstand it." (1 Corinthians 10:13, *An American Translation*) What more could you ask?

But you cannot pray for help and then read immoral literature, go to immoral movies, or daydream about or flirt with one of the opposite sex. Although prayer has a high priority—just as communication is essential in any personal relationship—you must work for what you request in prayer! —Luke 11:9, 13.

A Bright Future!

However, the price you must pay—the effort involved in maintaining your friendship with God—is very small in comparison to the many future blessings that God promises. Says 17-year-old Noe: "Jehovah offers us a bright future: life in eternal happiness on a paradise earth! This is something that no man can offer!"

God's Word promises that "just a little while longer, and the wicked one will be no more . . . The righteous themselves will possess the earth, and they will reside forever upon it." (Psalm 37:10, 29) As the generous Giver of "every good gift and every perfect present," Jehovah takes delight in rewarding his faithful young Witnesses with blessings.—James 1:5, 17; Psalm 35:27; 84:11, 12; 149:4.

So being God's friend does matter. God cares for you. When you have a problem, he wants to help. He is always available. He has the power to help you with any problem in life. And only Jehovah can give you everlasting life—the exclusive possession of the friends of God.—Revelation 21:3, 4; Matthew 25:46.

I Sought a Simpler Life Through Drugs

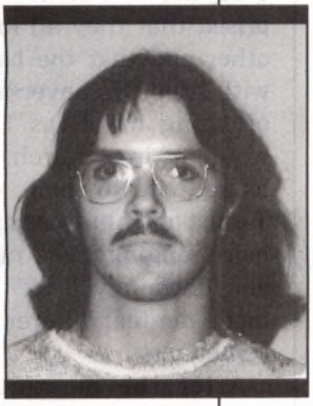
I SAT in the dimly lit cell on a dirty old piece of foam rubber. My mind reviewed the day's events. How could we have been so stupid as to get caught!

If only we had remained calm and not panicked, our car wouldn't have been pulled over by the police. If only we had got rid of those marijuana butts and hidden that bag of pot before the police looked in the ashtray. How did I get into this mess? My mind drifted back over the years . . .

As a teenager, I was tall and skinny and therefore felt awkward and out of place. I was extremely shy and had few friends. Yet, I wanted to be popular at school, to be cool. Gradually, I began to grow my hair longer, wear faded jeans, and sit in the back of the class with other cool kids.

Then one day it just happened. I was out in the smoking area with some kids. A marijuana cigarette was passed in my direction. Not wanting to be looked down on, I joined in and smoked it. Soon I found myself drawn into a new circle of friends. At last I had gained a measure of popularity and had many friends.

Later I began taking harder drugs. It was all exciting and adventurous, sneaking around getting high and doing other things a loose way of life entailed. I began to tell myself that life would be much simpler if everyone smoked pot. Why? Because it helps you to appreciate the beauty around you and to relax, therefore it must be good for you. So I reasoned. But now, in this dirty cell, reality had hit me smack in the face.



My parents did not know that I had been using drugs. How badly they would be hurt when they found out! After what seemed an eternity, the cell door swung open. An officer told me that my father was there to bail me out. It was a tense ride home.

My father called a lawyer to help me face the court officials. He was a friend of the family and was perplexed to hear that I had got into trouble. Later at the police station, the lawyer spoke with the local officials in my behalf. Anxiously I awaited the outcome.

Finally, it was decided that I was to be released, since I had no previous record of arrests. The lawyer kindly counseled me to center my attention on other pursuits instead of drugs. I told him I would for sure. But words are cheaper than actions.

Depression and Attempted Suicide

I continued to associate with my old friends. So because of peer pressure, I resumed taking drugs. After a time the thrill was gone. But I could not do without them. I needed a boost to get away from the problems around me and help me through the day. My friends and I could not enjoy ourselves without drugs. Even on a beautiful day on the lake waterskiing, we would all mourn and say, "Oh, if we just had some pot!"

Eventually I began to experience periods of deep depression. Life had no purpose. I had nothing to look forward to except getting high. I began to contemplate suicide. One day I swallowed almost everything in my grandmother's medicine cabinet in an attempt to overdose. But to my dismay, I awoke again the next morning.

One evening when I was not on drugs, I climbed up on the roof of our house. I was particularly struck by the beauty of the night. The moon was full, huge gray clouds were blowing across the sky, and the tall pine trees were swaying in the breeze. 'Is there someone behind this serene beauty and order in nature?' I wondered. 'Is there some higher purpose in life than just living like an animal, seeking to satisfy one's physical desires?' I was becoming aware of my spiritual need.

I began reading about reincarnation. I looked into Zen Buddhism. I also dug out an old Bible, dusted it off, and began to read the "New Testament." There I found some thoughts that I liked, such as Jesus' words: "All things therefore whatsoever ye would that men should do unto you, even so do ye also unto them."—Matthew 7:12, *American Standard Version.*

'Who on earth applies such things?' I wondered. 'Who can explain the Bible to me?' I decided to go around to different churches to find out. But because of my shyness, I could not even bring myself to get out of my truck to enter any of them.

The Answer in a Secondhand Book

One evening I tried to pray to God. "Please help me to find those who truly apply Bible principles," I asked. A week later I was looking around in a secondhand shop. Among some used books, a small blue one entitled *The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life* caught my eye. I bought it and read it through. It explained the Bible's main doctrines and supported the statements with Bible quotations. I decided to follow the advice on page 138 about attending the meetings at one of the Kingdom Halls of Jehovah's Witnesses.

I had never spoken to any of the Witnesses before. But I remembered my mother once telling me that a man who did upholstery work for her was a Witness. She had warned me never to talk with him about religion, since he would talk my ears off. I looked him up in the phone book and gave him a call and asked where the Kingdom Hall was.

The upholstery man met me on the porch of the hall and took me inside. He began introducing me to everyone who came by. I was surprised that they all knew one another and that the hall was alive with friendly conversation instead of being quiet, as I thought it would be in a church. I must have looked odd to them, dressed in a T-shirt and blue jeans and with my hair hanging over my shoulders and down my back. But no one made me feel different. They welcomed me.

After the meeting, Mr. Parciacepe, the upholstery man, asked me if I would like to study the Bible. I accepted. As the study progressed, I saw the need to make changes in my life. My dress

Ladd and Sue Stansel today

and grooming changed. I broke free from drugs. I replaced my former associates with new friends from among Jehovah's Witnesses.

The Lawyer and His Client

In 1979, about a year after I was baptized as one of Jehovah's Witnesses, I was able to enter the ministry full-time. The first summer I was doing that, something unexpected happened.

One of the Witnesses, a lawyer by profession and an elder in the congregation, decided to visit some of the local lawyers in town to tell them about our beliefs. He took me along with him. One of the lawyers we visited turned out to be the one who helped me years ago when I was arrested for drug possession.

My companion explained the purpose of our visit and then introduced me. As we shook hands, a look of surprise and disbelief came over his face, and then he smiled broadly and exclaimed: "Ladd Stansel! I would never have recognized you! You have certainly changed!"

After the initial shock wore off, I showed him a copy of the book that I had first read and said: "This book has really helped me to understand the Bible's principles and to see the importance of making these changes. I would like you to have a copy of it." Taking the book, he thanked me kindly. As we drove away, we wondered how this had affected him.

A few days later we found out. My mother and my lawyer companion received very touching letters from my former defense lawyer. He wrote that he had witnessed a miracle—the transformation of an insecure drug-using teenager into a fine young man who was now able to contribute to the community.

These last seven years have been of great help in my maturing process. In 1981 I was accepted to work as a volunteer at Bethel, the world headquarters of Jehovah's Witnesses in New York. My life became even more enriched when last year I married Sue, who joined me in serving at Bethel.

So it was not drugs that simplified my life—quite the contrary! It was by shunning drugs and serving my Creator, Jehovah God, that my life became simple and filled with contentment and happiness. (Matthew 6:22)—*As told by Ladd Stansel.*

"We'll Be Back in 2004!"

THERE were crushed bodies everywhere. Casualties were crawling around as best they could. Those that were hale and hearty were up in the trees—by the thousands. But they too were in the last phase of their life span. They were the 1987 generation of cicadas.

The periodical cicada is a flying insect that makes its appearance in the eastern United States once every 17 years. Different broods pop up in different years, although on the same 17-year cycle. We were watching what the scientists call brood number ten. Its cousins in other regions operate on a shorter life cycle from egg to its final, mating, adult stage. According to one source, there are over 1,500 species of cicadas.

The Methuselah of the Insect World

They last appeared in 1970—when U.S. forces were still fighting in Vietnam, the civil war in Nigeria had just ended, Salvador Allende was about to become president of Chile, and former French president Charles de Gaulle died. Ever since then, the cicadas had been lying low.

This extraordinary creature, anywhere from one to two inches long, has a brownish black head and body and diaphanous wings. It has two red eyes that are really compound eyes, with three simple eyes in between.

Where we stayed in Baltimore, Maryland, they were everywhere—on the bushes, in the trees, on the fence and doors. Out in the garden, we had to walk carefully. They settled just as readily on my shirt or my wife's blouse —much to her consternation! But don't worry. They are harmless. They don't bite or sting.

The ones we were watching had already lived a full life before ever appearing around our friend's apple tree. They start life as eggs laid in slits cut by the female in the branches and twigs of trees and bushes. These eggs then become tiny nymphs that fall to the ground and burrow their way down to a root, usually about two feet down. There they start their 17-year wait—not hibernating but sucking on the sap of the plant. And down there under the ground, they go through five different molts, or stages of change, as they slowly attain maturity. Theirs is the longest insect life cycle known to man. They are the Methuselahs of insectdom!

"An Amazing Demonstration of Biological Complexity"

Then comes the step that baffles scientists —what triggers their exit from below exactly on time? One biologist stated: "It's an amazing demonstration of biological complexity." I could not help but think how it demonstrates the diversity and intricacy of the Creator's handiwork.—Romans 1:19, 20.

Scientists speculate that hormones perhaps play a role. Anyway, in Maryland it happened this year in the months of May and June. Around the base of the tree trunk in our friend's backyard, hundreds of little tunnel openings began to appear, some in the form of a chimney. Out staggered the cicadas in their penultimate form—pale brown, wingless insects about an inch long. Now what do they do? We watched some as they laboriously headed up the tree trunk to pick out anchorages for their final metamorphosis.

There they wait briefly, and then the miracle occurs. The cicada breaks open its own back casing and starts emerging, new head and shoulders first, revealing what appears to be an albino cicada. Then, within hours it fills with color. It is no longer a pale brown, earthbound insect—now it can fly. The tree was already covered with thousands of their empty shells. And the cicadas were everywhere around us, flitting about from twig to twig and leaf to leaf.

Insect Noise Champions

In the heat of the day, we didn't just see them —we heard them! Multitudes of males were vibrating their drumlike abdominal tymbals at anywhere from 120 to 600 vibrations per second. We caught one cicada in the house, and it showed its annoyance by a strange rasping,

Cicada emerging from its husk

Cicadas emerge from holes about half an inch in diameter

White cicada freshly emerged from its husk

Mature cicada waiting to mate

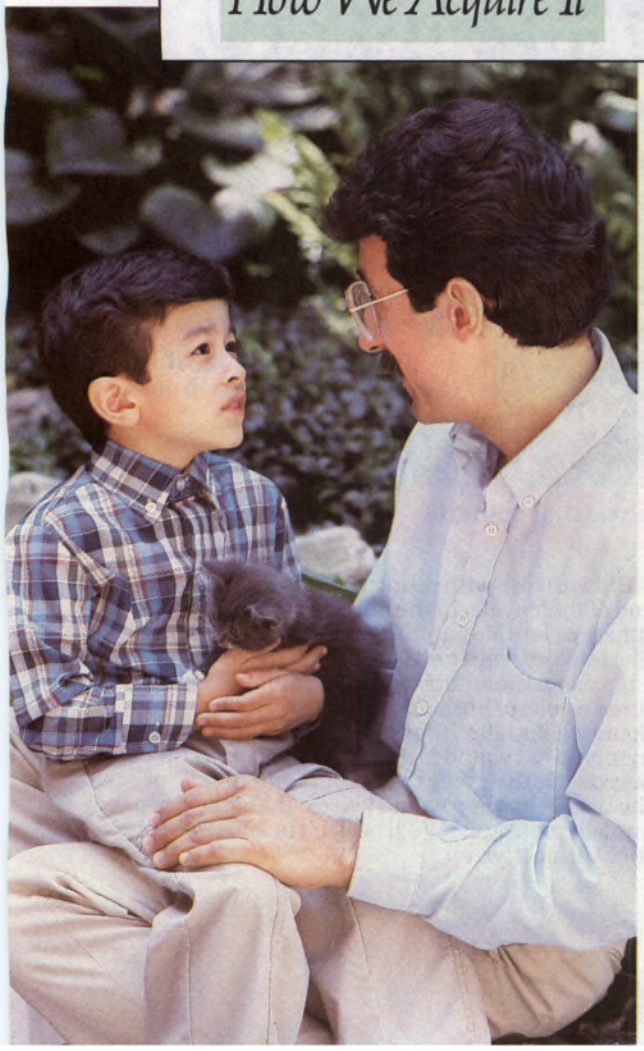
clicking sound. However, the sound of thousands of them in unison seemed like that of wind howling through a distant tunnel. In fact, the cicada is considered the noise champion of the insect world.

Fortunately, the female is silent, which led one ancient Greek wag to write: "Happy are cicadas' lives, for they all have silent wives." But there was one consolation—at nighttime the males all piped down and let the neighbors sleep.

But we were witnessing the beginning of the end of their cycle. In the hot, humid atmosphere of late May and June they were mating. The females were getting ready to lay their eggs. Soon the adults would be ending their three weeks of life above ground by dying. Some weeks later, the eggs would hatch as tiny nymphs that would fall to the ground and start burrowing their way to the roots and the sap of the trees. But they would leave behind them an implicit message: "We'll be back in 2004!"—By *Awake!* staff writer.

The Miracle of Language

How We Acquire It



HAVE you ever been at a loss for words? Such moments are rare, for we usually delight in communicating our thoughts and feelings. Language allows us to do that. One authority asserts: "Thought is impossible without language."

True, in the animal world, creatures manage to exchange information without words: birds sing, lions roar, dolphins whistle, bees dance. Other creatures use postures and movements, touch and sound —even smell—as communication methods. 'Keep your distance!' 'Look out!' 'Come and join me!' These are animal messages that come across clearly!

Animal communication, though, is quite limited. Language, on the other hand, allows humans to talk about *anything* they observe or imagine. Education professor Dennis Child thus claimed: "Language is a human being's finest asset." But how do we acquire this wonderful asset? And how can parents help their children to develop it?

Language and the Brain

How we learn to talk has intrigued scholars for centuries. Remarkably, young children who are barely able to walk and feed themselves learn to speak without even knowing the rules of grammar and without any special tutoring! Writes linguist Ronald A. Langacker: "[The child] masters . . . a linguistic system. He does this on the basis of indirect and fragmentary evidence, and at an age when he is not yet capable of logical, analytical thought."

Most scientists thus believe that the ability to learn a language—not the specific language—is inborn, an ability that unfolds during a child's early years.

At first, though, a child's brain is too immature to master speech development. This, of course, does not stop a baby from trying. Indeed, some researchers believe

that a tiny baby's babbling is a part of speech development, a rehearsal of sorts for his later enunciating of words. As the baby struggles with vocalization, his brain is also rapidly preparing itself for speech. Though a child's body develops relatively slowly in his preteen years, his brain reaches 90 percent of its adult weight by age five. (It reaches its full adult weight by about age 12.) That means that the first five years of life are a critical learning period, particularly the first two.

During that time, billions of nerve cells in the brain's cortex grow and branch, forming a densely interconnected web. Between 15 and 24 months of age, a dramatic spurt in brain-cell growth occurs. Now the brain is ready to handle the learning of language. Thus, it is critical that a child be exposed to language during these early years.

Interestingly, the Bible speaks of a young man Timothy who was taught the Bible "from infancy."—2 Timothy 3:15.

Helping Children Develop Their Language Skills

Mothers play an important role in a child's speech development. A sensitive mother recognizes her baby's signals and will talk with her baby often, long before it understands what she says. Nevertheless, the groundwork for speech is being laid. Soon the child responds to the mother's words with words of its own. Researcher M. I. Lisina says: "It is clear that children's speech emerges mainly as a means of interaction with surrounding people." So fathers, siblings, grandparents, and friends can also share in the child's speech development by means of conversation, storytelling, and reading.

Swedish psychologist C. I. Sandström further observed that children who did best linguistically "had on average much better contact with adults. The families usually had breakfast together, and the children were allowed to take part in the conversation." Conversely, youngsters with poor language ability "usually had breakfast alone" and "did not take part very much in the conversation at supper." Family togetherness at mealtimes thus encourages language development.

Taking your child with you on outings also provides you fine opportunities to develop his speech by explaining things to him in simple terms. Together, look into the mouth of a flower, watch a caterpillar eat a leaf, or a spider spin its web. Use your child's natural inquisitiveness to expand his language. Talk about the animals you see at the zoo, the shells and pebbles along the pathways you walk, and the varieties of food you enjoy. True, all of this takes time and patience, but the results are so worth while!

Parents have found another very valuable aid in teaching children at a young age to speak. This is by letting them listen regularly to the cassette recording of *My Book of Bible Stories.**

New words, new phrases and expressions, new depths of understanding will not only color your child's speech but increase his intellectual capacity. And when you show how natural wonders relate to their Maker or discuss God's purposes, a child's love and appreciation for the Creator also deepen. —Deuteronomy 6:6-9.

Fortunately, the potential to enlarge the quantity and improve the quality of language is not limited to our youthful years. Each day, we can further perfect our ability to communicate by learning new words and practicing good grammar. In this way, we take part in the continuing miracle of language, and rarely are we at a loss for words.

* Available from the publishers of this magazine.

From Our Readers

Loss of a Child

After reading the articles on the loss of a child, I just had to commend you for such factual and realistic articles. (August 8, 1987) My wife and I have been able to relate to everything you said because we recently suffered the loss of our five-and-a-half-year-old son due to a heart attack. We have had all the feelings of guilt, anger, and so forth, that you listed in your article. Also, we have been through all the "Expressions That Don't Always Comfort" and more besides. We look forward to the new world very much. Only when I have my little boy back in my arms will the hurt really disappear. Once again, thank you for such a loving and understanding series of articles, which we are sure many will, like us, be able to relate to and be helped.

K. I., England

I can't tell you how much I appreciated your articles on facing the loss of a child. Our son committed suicide last August. Your information made me feel so normal. I didn't know so many people felt as I do. But as much as I needed that information on the various stages a person goes through after the death of a child, I couldn't understand why suicide was connected with ordinary death, as it is on page 15. No death is ordinary, I know that, but suicide is so tragic because the hope of the resurrection is not always there. I don't know if I'll ever see my boy again.

J. D., United States

The item about George, who committed suicide, was included, not to indicate that suicide is ordinary death, but to show how George's father was able to cope even with this tragedy through the comfort of certain scriptures. Yes, committing suicide is very serious and tragic, but in each case the assurance is always there that Jehovah and his Son, Jesus Christ, will do the right thing. Jehovah knows all the circumstances involved, the degree of responsibility, and the possibility of repentance. We can put complete trust in him to apply his mercy to the fullest extent possible in harmony with his will.—ED.

Taking Another's Life

I am writing you in regard to a statement made in the article "World Peace —How and When?" (June 8, 1987) The statement is made regarding Jehovah's Witnesses: "They have become peaceful persons, and under no circumstance will they take the life of their fellowman." Does this mean that we cannot use deadly force to protect ourselves or our family?

H. N., United States

The expression 'take the life of a fellowman' implies a conscious effort to kill another. A true Christian would not do this. If attacked and unable to flee from his assailant who is determined to inflict injury or death, a Christian may try to ward off the blows or even strike out in defense, perhaps using whatever was at hand to protect himself or others. But his actions would be defensive only. He would not try to kill or punish his attacker but only try to neutralize the attack. If the attacker was to receive a fatal blow, it would be accidental, not intentional.—ED.

Watching the World

Productive Vacations

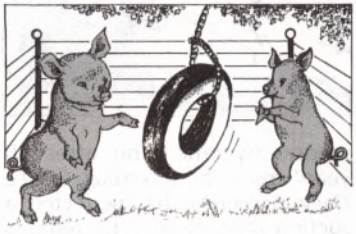
Parents should turn children's vacations from school into productive time, says Mexican psychologist and university professor Rafael Martínez. By careful advance planning, parents can coordinate the instruction given at home and at school. According to the report in Mexico City's daily *El Universal,* Martínez pointed out that "the school is an educational center that should in no way substitute for the education that parents should give their children." Among other things, he suggests a flexible schedule that includes training in domestic chores, some occupational activity, and helping handicapped and needy persons. Martínez advises that "vacation time should not mean total leisure and rest but, rather, a change in activity."

Concern for Workers

Japanese companies have gained great expertise in many areas. They are, however, reluctant to reduce the work force when it is necessary. One company even temporarily reduced the workweek to three days to avoid laying off any of its employees. Normally, Japanese workers are accustomed to lifetime employment with their company. Some firms even educate their employees' children and then take them into the firm. But because of economic changes and the need to be more competitive in world markets, as well as a glut of workers on certain levels, some companies have had no choice but to reduce their work force. Great effort is made to find new employment for the workers, out of loyalty to one another.

Pigpen Playpen

When pigpens became playpens, piglets "had an average daily gain that was four-percent higher than penmates that weren't so favored." That report, published in the *Calgary Herald* on the results of scientist Al Schaefer's work at



Agriculture Canada's Lacombe Research Station, spells good news for hog producers. Schaefer's research indicates that when pigs have playthings to occupy their time, they grow better. He experimented with an ordinary automobile tire hung on a chain that was slung across their pen. The pigs played with the tire "by pushing the tire back and forth along the chain or biting the rubber." In this way, the aggressions of the more pugnacious pigs in the pen were diverted toward the "toy" instead of their more timid pen mates. As a result, after a two-year study, pigs in these pens who went to market had fewer bruises and less meat loss.

Stardust Diamonds

Researchers from the U.S. National Bureau of Standards and the Enrico Fermi Institute in Chicago, studying a meteorite's fragments, have made an interesting discovery. Some of the meteorite consists of tiny diamonds. In subjecting the meteorite's fragments to X-ray and electron diffraction, the researchers saw the clear diffraction pattern of diamond, reports *New Scientist.* Scientists believe that the diamonds must have condensed from carbon atoms emitted by a star and conclude that "possibly nature makes diamond more efficiently than even the best laboratory synthesis discovered so far."

A Long Sleep

Miners claimed an extraordinary find when they recently excavated for gold in the bleak Siberian region of Yakutia, just above the Arctic Circle. Thirty feet below the surface of the polar tundra, they discovered a triton, a tailed amphibious animal resembling a

newt (salamander), trapped in the permafrost. The news agency *Tass* asserts that, to the amazement of the miners, after a while in the sun "it crawled slowly . . . on its five-fingered limbs, turning its head, with round bulging eyes, from side to side." It died after a few days. Soviet scientists say that in a state of reduced animation, known as anabiosis, it is possible for such creatures to live for hundreds, even thousands, of years.

Attacking Music Pirates

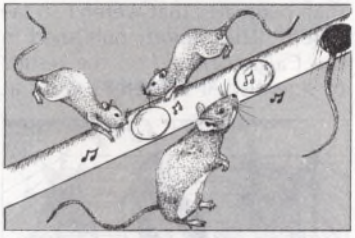
The recording industry has been fighting pirates who unlawfully tape records and sell them. One firm has developed a system that "notches," or cuts out, a narrow band of frequency in a recording so that circuits set up to react to the notch will automatically shut off a tape recorder. However, experts who have auditioned the process insist that the notch drastically affects the music. Thus, musicians, technicians, and record buyers are concerned that the notch, intended to stop those victimizing the music industry, will ruin many years of technology designed to achieve lifelike sound recordings, making them the new victims.

"Seeds of Rebellion"

In July of this year, 110 New Jersey teachers were arraigned in court for defying a court order to end an illegal strike. The presiding judge, Paul R. Huot, said that their "defiance of his back-to-work order had corrupted the students and inspired disrespect for law and contempt for the courts," reports *The New York Times*. Concerned that society is drifting away from respect for law, social decorum, and discipline, the judge said: "Things aren't black and white anymore. Everything is gray. We've lost good manners. We've lost courtesy. We've lost decency." The reason? "Fewer people recognize the difference between right and wrong," says Huot. "The sin now is getting caught, not the violation." Placing the blame on parents, he explained that they tell their children to obey the law, while they themselves cheat on taxes, pad expense accounts, or violate speed limits. "I think we're growing seeds of rebellion in this country like mad."

Music to Their Ears

To gather and destroy rats, the legendary Pied Piper of Hamelin played his musical pipe. Recently, a "Pied Piper" has appeared in Tokyo, luring rats away with modern musical pipes. Today's "Piper" is a company specializing in environmental hygiene, and after 20 years' research, according to *The Daily Yomiuri*, it has perfected a suction-pipe system to remove rats from high-rise buildings. Pipes with holes about every seven feet are laid along floors and walls. The music? Rats communicate by ultrasonic waves with frequencies of 20 to 38 kilohertz, and even waves from computer wires attract them. The pipes release ultrasonic waves to "call" the rats, who then enter the holes and are sucked along to a disposal section, suffocated by carbon dioxide, and immediately wrapped in a vinyl sheet for sanitary removal. From Hamelin to Tokyo, the conclusion is the same: Addiction to piped music can be hazardous to rats.



Fines, Fines, and More Fines!

The metropolitan area of São Paulo, Brazil, with its estimated 12 million inhabitants, has its traffic problems. In one month, a total of 1,218,491 traffic fines were issued. By the end of the year, three million of the four million vehicles in the city are expected to have been fined. Every month, nearly 30,000 vehicles are fined Cz$1,290 (about $30, U.S.) for parking on sidewalks, reported *O Estado de São Paulo*. Still on the books, though not enforced, are fines for driving a herd of oxen through the streets (Cz$1,149) and for parking a horse-drawn cart on the sidewalk (Cz$384). Leaving on a windowsill an object that could fall on a pedestrian may mean a fine of Cz$99. One incident, still remembered by many, was when a pig being raised on the terrace of a bakery became frightened and jumped over the edge and landed on a pedestrian, breaking his arm. This fine was collected.

Troubled Waters

According to Israeli sources, water supplies for Israel and Jordan may be seriously jeopardized by important works undertaken by Syria, their neighbor to the north. The project under way is to divert the flow of the largest tributary of the Jordan, the Nahr al Yarmuk, to irrigate "24,700 acres of land" to the north. To this end, large lakes have been dug, connected by a network "of over 160 miles of open canals." Syria is planning to move 500,000 inhabitants into the southern Golan Heights area.

YELLOWSTONE, First National Park

The oldest, biggest, and most famous national park in the United States. Located primarily in Wyoming and established in 1872, it covers some 2,220,000 acres and is visited by more than two million persons yearly. Rugged mountains, deep canyons, thundering waterfalls, sparkling lakes, evergreen forests, and lush meadows—a magnificent setting for the bear, elk, and bison that roam its precincts and for the eagles, swans, and pelicans that raise their families there.

Yellowstone gains much of its fame from the thousands of hot springs and hundreds of geysers—foremost among them Old Faithful, shown here. It used to erupt on an average every 65 minutes, but in recent years it has not been quite so faithful.

DEVIL'S TOWER, First National Monument

Wyoming was also first with a national monument. Looking like a huge, petrified tree stump, Devil's Tower was declared to be such in 1906. Said to be of volcanic origin, it thrusts its bulk 865 feet into the sky. Geologists say it is the remnant of a volcanic intrusion. As time passed, it was eroded into its present form.

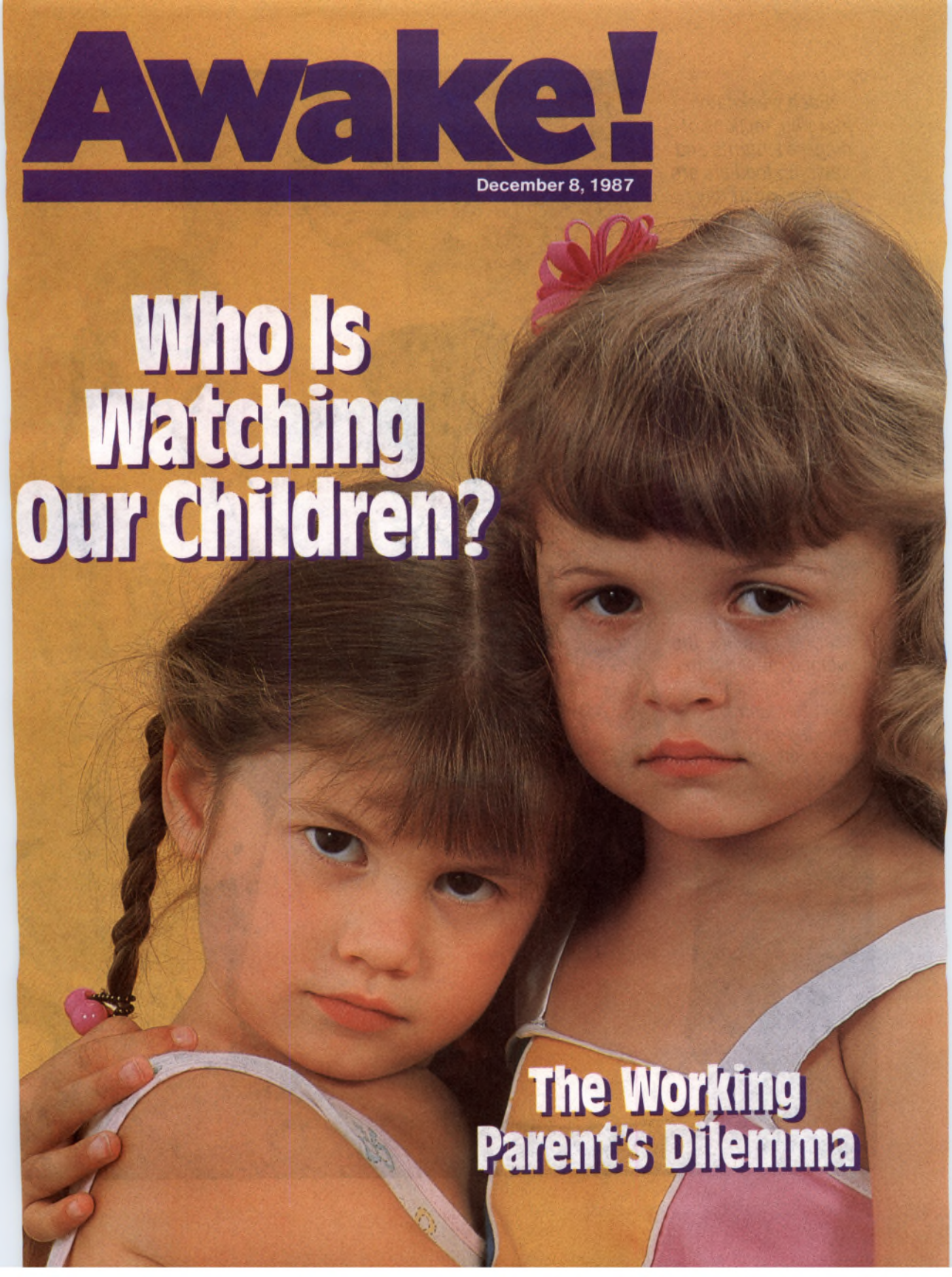
Indian legend says seven little Indian girls were chased by bears and sought refuge on a low rock, and to save them, the gods raised the rock high up into the sky. The girls, the legend says, are still visible as seven stars, the Pleiades. The enraged bears clawed the sides in a vain effort to reach them—the claw marks still being visible as the fluting on the sides of the tower.

That is the legend. But one thing is certain: Behind the magnificence of the first national park and the first national monument is their Creator, the living God Jehovah: "He is firmly establishing the mountains with his power." —Psalm 65:6.

Awake!

December 8, 1987

Who Is Watching Our Children?



The Working Parent's Dilemma

Each weekday morning, millions of diapered infants and yawning toddlers are dropped off at day-care centers. For many youngsters, the transition from home to day care goes smoothly.

Those used to the routine respond affectionately—or impassively. Newer children may cry and cling to their mothers. A few reassuring words from Mom, though, usually stop the tears. If not, a day-care worker takes over the comforting because, tears or no tears, the women must get to work. And for the next ten hours, the day-care center must substitute for Mom . . .

"Who Will Watch Our Children?"

DAY-CARE centers throughout the world are a product of the unprecedented influx of women into the job market. "The fastest-growing group in the labor market," says day-care expert Alison Clarke-Stewart, "is mothers of preschool children, particularly children under three. This trend is pronounced and worldwide."

Finding someone dependable to look after the children while mother works, however, may be easier said than done. Relatives rarely volunteer. Complicated networks of sitters—formed by recruiting friends and neighbors—often prove precarious at best and bewildering to the children. Reliable paid sitters and nannies are hard to come by—and too expensive for most couples.

The situation is no less frustrating in developing lands. Nigerian women simply used to carry their infants on the back while working. But increasing numbers of African women have forsaken domestic or farm work for jobs in offices, stores, and factories where the strap-baby-on-the-back method is inappropriate. In times past, the women could always call upon their extended families for a handy baby-sitter. But, explains the *Sunday Times* of Lagos, Nigeria, "with free primary education and availability of more manual, unskilled jobs, the last residue of [relatives available] to sit babies at home went too." Suggested this newspaper: "Well organised Day Care Centres may be the answer."

Yes, day-care homes and centers are rapidly becoming the child-care option of choice. After all, they are generally dependable, convenient, and cheaper than a hired sitter. They allow children to associate with a group of peers. They provide nutritious meals, along with recreational and educational programs. As day-care consultant Delores Alexander told *Awake!:* "Day care is a support to the whole family."

Nevertheless, some fear that the current move toward day care may have ominous implications for children. Are there legitimate reasons for such concerns? Parents need to know so that they can make an informed decision when it comes to their own children.

Awake!® December 8, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 23

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 54 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

'Who Will Watch Our Children?' 3
The Day-Care Controversy 4
Day Care—Choosing the Best for Your Child! 7

Also in This Issue

Crossword Puzzle 12
Young People Ask ... How Can I Face My Grief? 13
Sunsets Reflect the Glory of Their Creator 16
My Struggle to Leave a Violent Life 18
Segovia's Amazing Aqueduct 22
Time—Are You Its Master or Its Slave? 24
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Oregon's Blue Jewel in a Volcano 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

25 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$5.00	$2.50
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$7.00	$3.50
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures* used. Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $5.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

The Day-Care Controversy

It is a pleasant place. The playrooms are painted in cheerful colors and adorned with posters and samples of toddler art. Toys and games are neatly stacked on shelves. And the place rings with the sound of children.

"We care for about 130 children," says Bernice Spence, the motherly woman who runs this day-care center. And just where do these children come from? "For the most part, they are the children of working parents who live nearby. Our staff? A number are certified teachers."

A WELL-MANAGED day-care center that is staffed by caring and competent personnel does leave a fine impression. Parents feel secure when their children are cared for in such a place. Nevertheless, day-care centers are the focus of raging controversies. The reason? For one thing, quality centers are not always the norm. Some are poorly maintained, poorly managed, poorly staffed, and pack children in like luggage.

Publicly funded day care in New York City is generally of good quality. But it will cost the city $201 *million* in 1987—over $4,800 per child! In lands such as Sweden, where governments have allocated generous day-care budgets, a high quality of care likewise prevails. But in the Third World, and even in some U.S. communities, public

day-care funds are inadequate. The result? Children may receive inferior care.

Child Care for Sale

This is true even of for-profit day-care centers. Granted, many fine ones exist. Some centers, though, trim costs by assigning fewer caretakers to more children. Or they cut corners by hiring at rates hovering above minimum wage—which turns away the best-trained professionals.

True, many day-care workers put up with poor pay because they simply love children. But what can happen when such commitment is lacking? Samuel and his wife found out. Together they ran a day-care center in Lagos, Nigeria—until they felt obliged to shut it down. Samuel recalls: "Whenever my wife had to go shopping or be away for other reasons, on returning she would find that the helpers had not been caring for the children."—See page 6.

In the United States, profit-making centers must survive the scrutiny of licensing agencies. But reports *Newsweek:* "Most licensing requirements are lax, and state agencies don't have the money or the manpower to regulate the day-care industry."

Day-Care Homes

Similar to day-care centers are day-care homes, private homes where small groups of children are cared for. Less expensive than centers, they are immensely popular, looking after roughly three quarters of U.S. children cared for outside the home. The day-care mother is usually a parent herself.

For the child, a day-care home can offer a homelike environment, a caring woman to look after him, and the company of a small group of children. But often little is done to monitor such facilities. The Toronto *Globe and Mail* thus reports that the quality of day-care homes in Canada ranges from "excellent to abysmal." Ten percent of the homes were unsafe for children.

Day Care—How Does It Affect Children?

Because day care covers such a wide spectrum of quality, researchers have had a difficult time determining how day care really affects children. True, some day-care advocates speak quite optimistically. Says Alison Clarke-Stewart in her book *Daycare:* "The good news from all these studies—in Canada, England, Sweden, Czechoslovakia, the United States—is that care in a decent day-care facility has no apparent detrimental effects on children's intellectual development." Some studies even indicate that children from low-income families benefit from the intellectual stimulation of day care!

However, researchers Belsky and Steinberg caution: "To an overwhelming degree, research on day care has been conducted in

How does day care affect the bond between mother and child?

university-based or university-connected centers with high staff-child ratios and well-designed programs. . . . Yet, most of the day care available to the nation's parents is certainly not of this type and may not be of this quality." How, then, do children in more typical day-care settings fare? Concluded Belsky and Steinberg: "We know shockingly little about the impact of day care on children."—The journal *Child Development,* Volume 49, pages 929-30.

Even less is known about the effect of day-care homes—which do the bulk of the care giving. It appears, though, that a day-care mother may do little to stimulate a child's intellectual and emotional growth; her concern may be little more than to feed and keep him out of mischief until mother returns. Day-care-home children are thus often found plopped in front of a TV set.

Little is also known about how day care affects the emotional bond between mother and child or to what extent children become overly attached to their care givers. Tests demonstrate, however, that given a choice between mother and day-care worker, most children still prefer mother.

The Problems of Peer Contact

One benefit of day care is that the children learn to get along better with peers. There is another side to this, however. Says a Biblical adage: "Bad associations spoil useful habits." (1 Corinthians 15:33) Research from the United States and Europe shows that day-care children tend to be 'more aggressive, less cooperative with adults, more self-assertive, less conforming, and less impressed by punishment than home-reared children.'

Alison Clarke-Stewart claims that such behavior really "reflects greater maturity and social competence rather than being something to worry about." But this may be of little comfort to parents who see a for-

Day Care and Sexual Abuse

Much publicity has recently been given to child-abuse scandals involving day-care workers. Are day-care centers havens for pedophiles and child pornographers?

Such a question evokes strong emotions from some day-care workers. "I really get angry at that," said Bernice Spence, a day-care-center administrator. "I just hate to see day care get a bad name. Most of the people I know in day care are dedicated people—they care about children."

Responsible administrators, however, have taken firm steps. *Awake!* spoke to Doby Flowers, deputy administrator for the Agency for Child Development in New York City. Over 40,000 children are enrolled in day-care programs under her supervision. Said Miss Flowers: "We screen our day-care staffs thoroughly. We check to see if they have criminal or child-abuse records. And since 1984, all day-care workers must be fingerprinted."

Do child abusers tend to gravitate toward day-care work? Replied Miss Flowers: "You have pedophiles in religious orders, the legal order, in education. The profile of the pedophile crosses all income, occupational, racial, and ethnic lines." Nevertheless, as Dr. Roland Summit, a psychiatrist specializing in treating sexually abused children, puts it: "The risk of exploitation for a child increases directly as the child is removed further from the care of its biological mother."

What, then, should parents with children in day care do? "Listen to your child!" says Doby Flowers. "Sit down and talk with your child. Watch for changes in behavior or signs of distress, such as bed-wetting or a sudden reluctance to go to day care." Parental vigilance and education of a child are the best weapons against child abuse.—See *Awake!* of January 22, 1985, "Child Molesting—You Can Protect Your Child."

merly mild child unleash profanity, especially if those parents are endeavoring to instill Bible principles in their child. —Ephesians 4:29.

Health Risks

Day care also involves health risks. The CDC (U.S. Centers for Disease Control) speaks of "a growing need for controlling infectious diseases that frequently affect children in day care." The so-called day-care diseases include hepatitis A, shigellosis (a serious intestinal disorder), and *Hemophilus influenzae* type B (a bacterial infection). Diarrhea and fever are common symptoms. Disease is often the result of clustering small children who tend to put everything in their mouths and who are untrained in proper toilet habits.

A good center, though, takes health precautions seriously. "We teach the children to wash their hands after using their toilet," explained day-care consultant Delores Alexander. "And we don't accept sick children knowingly." Added Willoughby House director Bernice Spence: "If a child becomes sick during the day, we often call the parent and tell her to take him home." Regular medical exams of staff and children are also important precautionary measures.

Nevertheless, researcher Clarke-Stewart admits: "Children in daycare centers get more flu, rashes, colds, and coughs than children at home . . . A child's runny nose may be a price mothers are willing to pay to have their children in a daycare center while they work." But in view of the foregoing, it seems that day care could entail risks of greater consequence than a runny nose. What does all of this mean, then, for mothers who feel they have to work?

Day Care Choosing the Best for Your Child!

THE issue of day care is complex. For many families, day care fills a real need. At the same time, disturbing questions have been raised regarding its effect upon children. Parents must therefore face the fact that day care has both positive and negative aspects, that not all day care is *quality* care. Serious thought must be given before placing a child in day care.

'What's Best for Infants?'

For example, is your child a small infant? Some experts, such as respected psychologist Burton White, strongly advise against putting infants into day care. He told *Awake!:* "During the first six months of life, the children who develop best are those who have a tremendous amount of attention lavished upon them; the ones who get prompt attention when they're uncomfortable and who enjoy a lot of fun play with someone who thinks that there's nothing more important in the world than that child!

"Once the child gets to be a crawler at six or seven months of age," Dr. White continued, "that child now needs *ready access to somebody who's crazy about him!* That's in order to facilitate the natural learning process, to support his curiosity, to increase his enthusiasm, to do any number of things that feed into the development of a solid human being. A child does not get this support from substitute caretakers. Rarely will anyone other than a child's parents or grandparents show such interest."

A prophet of old asked: "Can a wife forget her suckling so that she should not pity the son of her belly?" (Isaiah 49:15) Mothers are quick to respond to a baby's virtually nonstop demands for love and attention. But will a hired caretaker —with several infants crying for attention—respond the way a parent will? The Bible speaks of the way "a nursing mother cherishes her own children." (1 Thessalonians 2:7) Though not all mothers are able to breast-feed, doing so enhances the mother-child bond. Will an infant in day care receive this nurturing?

Examining Your Priorities

Some doctors thus recommend delaying substitute care until a baby is at least four months old. Dr. White, however, suggests that infants should have "nothing but an occasional baby-sitter for the first six months of life. Afterward, no more than three to four hours a day of *high-quality* substitute care."

Let's assume that day care is not good for infants. Will not infants simply outgrow any problems resulting from it? Dr. White bristles at that notion: "That amounts to speculation. I'm not going to take chances with *my* kids that way, and I'm not going to recommend it for anybody else."

Though many are inclined to reject such a strong position, Dr. White's sentiments are hard to dismiss. Nevertheless, parents —not researchers—must decide what is best for them and their children, and often economic considerations prevail. So after carefully weighing all factors involved, some may still decide to utilize some form of infant child care.—See page 10.

Some may be in a position to rethink their priorities. After all, children are infants only once. The opportunity to train a child "from infancy" passes quickly. (2 Timothy 3:15) If putting off secular work for a few years—or simply living with less income—is not practical, some may therefore decide to work part-time. This allows parents to remain their child's primary caretakers.

Choosing Day Care

Can toddlers safely be placed in day care? Researchers are divided, but most agree that a child's ability to tolerate separation from his parents increases with age. Once again, parents must decide if *their* child can handle day care. If so, this does not mean placing him in the first day-care home or center they find. Doby Flowers, deputy administrator of New York's Agency for Child Development, advises: "Choose day care *very carefully*. What reputation does the center have in the community? Are the equipment and toys age-appropriate? Is it well cared for and clean? What are the staff's credentials?"

Yes, the staff—not fancy equipment or toys—is the most important ingredient in child care. So visit several centers and homes and personally observe the way the

care givers relate to children—particularly *your* child. Ask: How stable is the staff? What kinds of meals are served? How many children does each worker care for? (The fewer, the better.) Do the children seem happy and at ease? Does the center or home meet local licensing and safety requirements? What is the daily routine of activities?

Knowing that you have the best child care available—and affordable—can do much to alleviate unnecessary guilt.

Making the Most of Day Care

Now that a suitable home or center has been found, do not simply begin dropping your child off there. Explain *why* he must be there. Assure him he has not been abandoned. Ease him into day care, perhaps accompanying him on a number of visits —of increasing duration—to the center or home before leaving him there all day. And, advises day-care-center director Bernice Spence, when dropping him off in the morning, "don't rush the child! Take the time to calm him if he's upset."

Former day-care-center operators William and Wendy Dreskin warn: "Children can begin to feel that they have no choice, and they will become reconciled to their fate. They may stop expressing their feelings to the day care workers and their parents, but these feelings have not evaporated." You must therefore monitor your child's response to day care. Take time to discuss the events of his day. Hear out his complaints. (Proverbs 21:13) Be alert to signs of distress, such as nightmares or bed-wetting. "Every child reacts differently," explained day-care consultant Delores Alexander. "And not all children can handle group centers."

Rarely will a day-care worker show the same interest in a child that a parent will

Child-Care Options—Pros and Cons

The vast majority of parents utilize a variety of informal means to care for their children. Here are some of them:

GRANDPARENTS: Some believe that as care givers, grandparents are second only to the natural parents. Grandparents may quickly tire of the added responsibility as baby becomes a toddler. And differences in child-rearing standards ('Grandmother knows best!') often ignite disputes. In her book *The Child Care Crisis,* Fredelle Maynard says: "Precisely because [grandmother] *is* family, she doesn't take orders and may need kid-glove treatment. If a hired caretaker hits your child or feeds him marshmallow fluff instead of cottage cheese, you can protest and if necessary end the arrangement. If grandmother violates your values and standards, that's trouble."

Frank communication between parents and grandparents, however, can often prevent needless friction. "There is a frustrating of plans where there is no confidential talk," says the Bible. (Proverbs 15:22) A grandmother may cherish a child, but she must also recognize that the Bible assigns the responsibility of child rearing to the child's parents. (Ephesians 6:4) Parents and grandparents must thus establish agreed-upon rules and standards if such an arrangement is to work satisfactorily.

TEENAGE SIBLINGS: When they are reasonably mature and responsible, this too can work out fine. Often, youths bitterly resent being told, 'Look after your baby sister.' And an apathetic childminder is likely to be unreliable, careless, and neglectful. Remember, the Bible says: "Foolishness is tied up with the heart of a boy [or girl]."—Proverbs 22:15.

So care of young children by siblings must be closely monitored. Make sure your older son or daughter has specific instructions on feeding, care, and handling emergencies and that he or she is willing to give your child needed attention.

WORKING DIFFERENT SHIFTS: A large number of couples are attempting to handle child care themselves by working different shifts. Explains one father: "I go to work in mid- or late afternoon when my wife gets home. Thus our children are 'covered' by one or the other parent. . . . We feel that this arrangement has enabled both of us to know our children very well and to be the primary influences upon their lives."

There are clouds within this silver lining, however. Couples can become 'ships passing in the night,' with little time for each other. And a parent who has just come in from a night of work is not always the most alert of caretakers; nor is he likely to get much rest during the day. Some couples feel that being able to care for their children personally is worth the sacrifice.

HIRED SITTERS: A qualified, caring babysitter or full-time nanny can often be an exceptional care giver. However, nannies are expensive. Some families leap the financial hurdle by getting together with one or two other families and jointly hiring someone to care for their children. The problem is finding the *right* someone. Warns the Bible: "As an archer piercing everything is the one . . . hiring passersby." —Proverbs 26:10.

This means carefully screening anyone you would entrust your child to. What do you really know about the prospective sitter? Does she have any previous experience or training in child care? How does she relate to your child and vice versa? Does she have undesirable habits—like excessive TV watching, tobacco smoking, or drug abuse? Is she willing to abide by your principles and house rules?

When a family finally does locate a responsible, caring individual, they often find to their dismay that sitters are notoriously transient. For a child, this can mean periodically suffering heartbreak as sitters come —and go.

Christian parents need to give particular attention to their children. Jehovah's Witnesses, for example, decline to participate in activities relating to certain religious holidays. Though they take pains to teach this Bible-based stand to their youngsters, their preschool children may be unable to grasp fully the issues involved. They may become upset when left out of "fun" activities. Christian parents must thus act as their children's advocates, letting care givers know exactly what activities are off limits and discussing alternatives.*

They also watch that their children do not pick up ungodly traits from other children. The book *Listening to the Great Teacher* (published by the Watchtower Society) has helped many parents instill an appreciation for godly principles even in very small children.

* The brochure *School and Jehovah's Witnesses* (published by the Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc.) can be left with day-care teachers to clarify the Christian's position in these matters.

Do not let day care destroy the bond of love between you and your child. The Bible tells about a woman named Hannah, who though separated from her young child Samuel for long periods of time maintained a loving relationship with him. (1 Samuel 2:18, 19) Certainly, you can do the same if you make wise use of the precious time you have with your child at the end of each day and on weekends. Indeed, with proper attention, that relationship can flourish!

Even at its best, substitute care is just that—a mere substitute for the care of a loving mother and father. Admittedly, it is far from ideal. Until God's promised new system arrives with its ideal conditions, many parents may be forced to utilize substitute care. (2 Peter 3:13; Isaiah 65:17-23) But if this is true in your case, choose it carefully. Closely monitor how it affects your child—physically, emotionally, and spiritually. After all, children are an inheritance from God.—Psalm 127:3.

Children Left Alone

Growing numbers of children are their own caretakers. They are dubbed latchkey children because they are given the keys to their home so that they can let themselves in, since no one is home yet. Some estimate that there are millions of latchkey children in the United States alone.

Child-care experts are divided as to how old a child should be before he can safely be left alone for any length of time. Parents must therefore carefully decide what is best for *their* child, taking into consideration his or her age, temperament, abilities, and the particular circumstances of the home and neighborhood. The law of the land is also an important factor, as leaving a child unsupervised may be illegal in your community.—Romans 13:1.

When a latchkey arrangement *must* be used, a number of practical steps may help ensure the safety of the child:

1. Make sure he knows how to contact you, perhaps phoning you as soon as he arrives home from school.

2. Keep important phone numbers (doctor, police, fire department) posted near the telephone.

3. Instruct your child not to open the door to strangers.

4. Give your child guidelines on the use of potentially dangerous appliances. Don't leave matches lying around.

5. Keep your child busy with chores and homework.—See *Awake!* of August 22, 1986, pages 14-16.

crossword puzzle

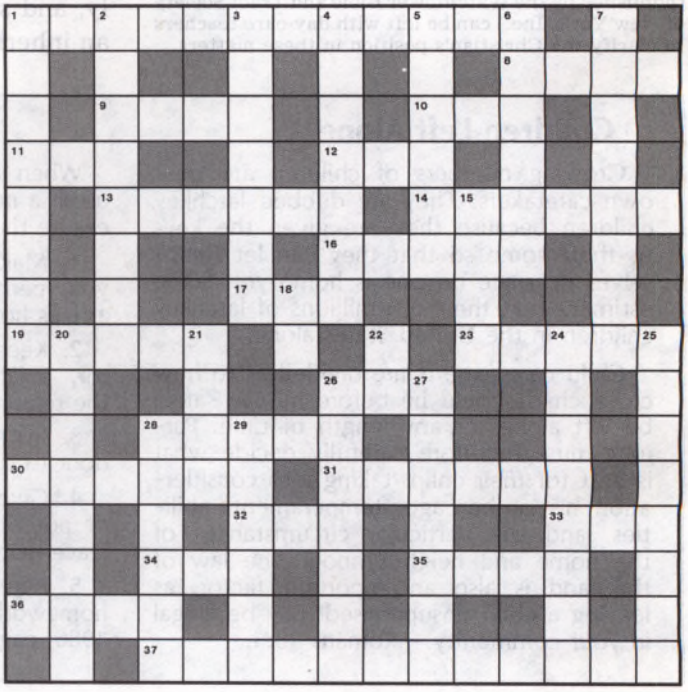
Clues Across

1. Symbolic heavenly city [2 words] (Revelation 21:2)
8. Isaiah's father (Isaiah 1:1)
9. Tailed amphibian listed as unclean in the Mosaic Law (Leviticus 11:30)
10. Needs more than bread to live (Matthew 4:4)
11. A fruit of the carob tree (Compare Luke 15:16.)
12. What idols cannot do with their eyes (Psalm 115:5)
13. A grandson of Abraham through his second wife (Genesis 25:1, 4)
14. Father of Ezri, who served under David as overseer of those cultivating fields (1 Chronicles 27:26)
16. Though not a prominent son of Jacob, he was promised an abundance of rich foods (Genesis 49:20)
17. High priest who was lax in disciplining his sons (1 Samuel 2:22-25)
19. She gave birth at the age of 90 (Genesis 17:17; 21:2)
23. The point up to which the Pharisees would wash their hands, for tradition (Mark 7:3)
26. Jehovah said to David's Lord: "--- at my right hand" (Matthew 22:44)
28. Become father to (Deuteronomy 4:25, *King James Version*)
30. He helped repair the Gate of the Old City when Jerusalem's wall was rebuilt (Nehemiah 3:6)
31. This ambidextrous Benjamite joined forces with David at Ziklag (1 Chronicles 12:1, 2, 5)
32. Objects arranged in a line (1 Kings 7:12)
33. Female pig (2 Peter 2:22)
34. That of marriage is sacred and not to be defiled (Hebrews 13:4)
35. He played an instrument at the inauguration of Jerusalem's rebuilt wall (Nehemiah 12:36)
36. At this site, noted for its great cistern, Saul sought the location of David and Samuel (1 Samuel 19:22)
37. Jesus was sent to preach concerning it [3 words] (Luke 4:43)

Clues Down

1. Greek city where Paul entered Europe after the call to Macedonia (Acts 16:9-11)
2. What Cain would become under curse (Genesis 4: 11-14)
3. To go back over (Isaiah 38:8)
4. He was among those who dismissed their foreign wives at Ezra's urging (Ezra 10: 40, 44)
5. Noah's father (Genesis 5:30)
6. Where the newborn Jesus was laid (Luke 2:7)
7. Blood-sucking insect (Jeremiah 46:20)
15. The guardian of the women at King Ahasuerus' court (Esther 2:3, *King James Version*)
18. Look! See! (Psalm 68:33)
20. Apportioned (Psalm 16:5)
21. Pay attention (Job 23:6)
22. The 16th letter of the Greek alphabet
24. Causing contusions (Luke 9:39)
25. Plant representing bitter experiences (Lamentations 3:15)
26. One entrusted with another's belongings (Luke 12:42)
27. Used together with the Urim to get an answer from Jehovah (Exodus 28:30)
28. Forefather of certain *Nethinim* who returned to Jerusalem with Zerubbabel (Ezra 2:51)
29. One was used as Jesus' burial location (John 19:41, 42)

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS PAGE 21



Young People Ask. . .

How Can I Face My Grief?

EIGHTEEN-YEAR-OLD Jonathan died in a car accident on his way home from Long Island, New York. His nine brothers and sisters suffered different kinds of grief.

Three of Jonathan's siblings, Howard, Agustín, and Lorna, explained their feelings to *Awake!* Agustín recalls: "I was in bed at the time. Police and paramedics came to the door to break the news. I got out of bed and could hear what they were saying. 'What, Johnny dead! I don't believe it,' was my first response. Then when the truth sank in, I felt really hurt."

The eldest brother, Howard, reacted with anger. "I wanted to know why. How did it happen? I was angry with the other driver. But there was nothing I could do. The other guy had died too." Lorna did not cry but had an attack of nerves. It was a shattering blow for the whole family.

If you have lost a brother or a sister in death, how did it affect you? If you are facing that loss right now, without a doubt you will identify with our question, How can I face my grief?*

Denial—"Maybe It Was the Wrong Guy Who Died"

Bereaved persons tend to deny that the death has occurred. They may even think they suddenly see the dead person on the street, in a passing bus, on the subway. Any fleeting resemblance can spark the hope that perhaps it has all been a mistake.

In other cases, parents sometimes impose an unconscious conspiracy of silence, pretending that the death never occurred. According to the writers of *The Sibling Bond,* the parents create a setting in which "one must stifle or choke back sadness, anger, or happy remembrances." The end result is that neither the parents nor the children fully face the loss, and that merely delays the grief process.

Sometimes a family multiplies its grief by hanging on to routines that serve as a reminder of the loved one. For example, at mealtimes the same place is left vacant at the table, perhaps even set as if the dead child were about to come in for a meal. This is another form of denial. How did one family handle that situation? The mother answers: "We never sat at the kitchen table in the same order anymore. My husband moved into David's chair, and that helped to fill that void." However, real acceptance of the fact of death may take time.

"If only . . . "

Guilt is also a frequent reaction when a member of the family dies. Questions and doubts pour through the mind. 'Is there anything more we could have done? Should we have consulted another doctor?' And then there are the *"If onlys . . . " If only* we had

* For more information on surviving grief, see *Awake!* of August 8, 1987, "Facing the Loss of a Child" and April 22, 1985, "When Someone You Love Dies."

not allowed him or her to borrow my car that day. *If only* I had been kinder to my brother/sister. And so the accusations and the guilt continue. Yet, these are only natural reactions to the sudden loss of a brother or a sister.

Some years ago in Brazil, an 18-year-old girl died of a heart problem. How did her brother react? "While she was sick, I felt jealous of her for getting more attention than the rest of us. Now I am so sorry that I ever felt that way." While this guilt feeling is normal, no good purpose is served by carrying it as a perpetual burden.

"Why This Test?"

When her 12-year-old brother died because of cancer, Cleide, in Brazil, felt a tremendous loss. She told *Awake!:* "We had never been separated before. I asked myself, 'Why this test? And with four sisters and only one boy, why did it have to be him? Other relatives have sons. Why was it that ours had to die?'"

Grief can also bring on health complications. Doris, Cleide's sister, had a physical reaction—the worst bronchitis she had ever experienced. The father suffered some heart pains that were diagnosed as resulting from the stress caused by the boy's death.

Another factor that can affect your reaction is, How many children were there in the family? If one of two dies, the survivor becomes the only child and may feel the loss deeply.

You Need a Shoulder to Cry On

So how can you face the loss of your brother or sister? Therapists recommend that you express, not repress, your grief. Counselor Dr. Earl Grollman suggests: "It is not enough to recognize your conflicting emotions; you must deal with them openly. That is why there is a mourning period. This is a time to share your feelings." Therefore, it is not a time to cut yourself off from people. —Proverbs 18:1.

Frustrated grief can lead to psychological problems. You need a shoulder to cry on—a parent, a brother or a sister, a good friend, or an elder in the Christian congregation. As Dr. Grollman says: "An emotion that is denied expression is *not* destroyed. You only prolong the agony and delay the grief process." So, what does he suggest? "Find a good listener, a friend who will understand that your many feelings are *normal* reactions to your bitter grief."

And what if you feel like weeping? Dr. Grollman adds: "For some, tears are the best therapy for emotional strain, for men as well as for women and children. Weeping is a natural way to ease anguish and release pain."

"I Had Never Seen Dad Cry Before"

Your parents can be a great help in time of loss—and you can also be a help to them. For example, Jane and Sarah, from England, lost their 23-year-old brother Darrall. How did they survive their grief? Jane answers: "Because there were four of us, I went and did everything with Dad, whilst

In Our Next Issue

- *Why Is My Church Divided?*
- *Will My Parents' Divorce Ruin My Life?*
- *My Sikh Heritage —And My Search for Truth*

Sarah did everything with Mum. In this way we were not on our own."

Sarah explains: "My parents were strong, determined to keep going, no matter what. If ever we felt like feeling sorry for ourselves, they would say, 'Come on! Let's get going again.' That does help because really you are feeling sorry for yourself, which is not upbuilding."

When we lose a brother or a sister in death, we need someone compassionate

But how could they help their parents? Jane answers: "I had never seen Dad cry before. He cried a couple of times, and in a way, it was nice, and looking back, I feel good now that I could be there just to comfort him."

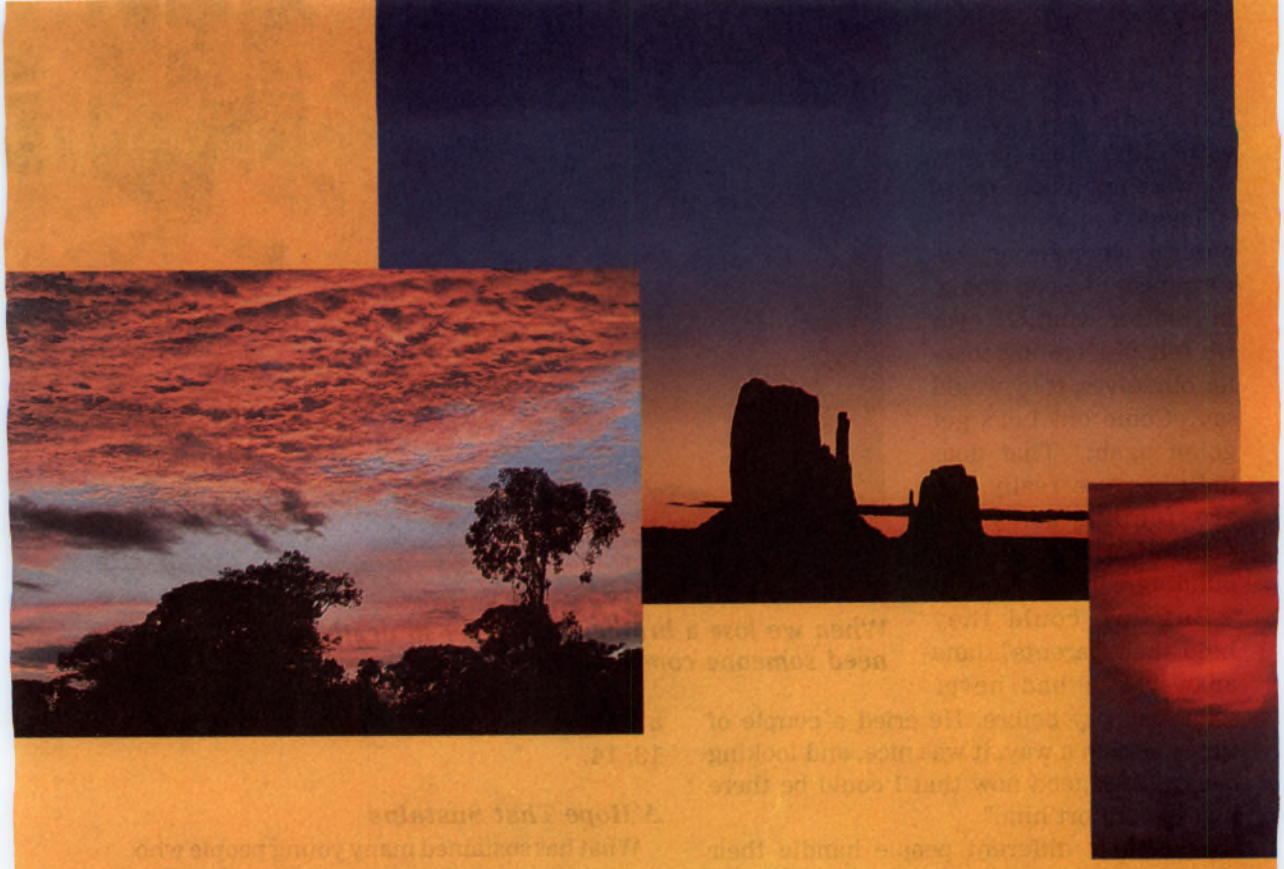
Of course, different people handle their grief in different ways. We are not trying to suggest that one way is necessarily better than another. Danger arises when stagnation sets in, when the grief-stricken person is unable to be reconciled with the reality of the situation. Then help might be needed from compassionate friends and perhaps qualified Christian elders. So do not be afraid to seek help and talk. And also weep.

The Bible has many examples of persons who openly expressed their grief. Jesus wept on nearing the tomb of his friend Lazarus. (John 11:30-38) David mourned the loss of his murdered son Amnon. (2 Samuel 13: 28-39) Mary Magdalene wept as she neared Jesus' sepulcher. (John 20:11-16) True, a Christian with an understanding of the Bible's resurrection hope does not grieve unconsolably, as some might do. But as a human with normal feelings, he does grieve and mourn the loss of a loved one, especially a brother or a sister.—1 Thessalonians 4: 13, 14.

A Hope That Sustains

What has sustained many young people who have lost a brother or a sister? Young David, from England, lost his 13-year-old sister Janet to Hodgkin's disease. He says: "One of the things that benefited me greatly was one text quoted in the funeral talk. It states: 'Because God has set a day in which he purposes to judge the inhabited earth in righteousness, and he has furnished a guarantee to all men in that he has resurrected him, Jesus, from the dead.' The speaker stressed the expression 'guarantee' concerning the resurrection. That was a great source of strength to me after the funeral."—Acts 17:31.

Yes, the Bible teaching about the state of the dead and the hope of the resurrection is a real comfort in time of loss. The more you realize that the Bible hope is confirmed by historical facts, the more solid will be your faith to sustain you in time of grief.—Mark 5: 35-42; 12:26, 27; John 5:28, 29; 1 Corinthians 15:3-8.



Sunsets

Reflect the Glory of Their Creator

NO MATTER how often we see a beautiful sunset, we always appreciate the glorious spectacle. Clouds scattered on the horizon add to the splendor as the setting sun bathes them in colorful splashes of violet, red, orange, pink, and yellow.

Why does the sky take on a reddish glow during sunset, when earlier in the day it is a bluish color? It has to do with the sun's light passing through the atmosphere that surrounds our earth for about a hundred miles up. This air blanket supplies the oxygen we breathe. It also contains other gases, such as nitrogen, carbon dioxide, and water vapor, and dust particles as well.

When sunlight passes through this atmosphere, it strikes these air molecules and dust particles, and the light tends to scatter. The colors that make up sunlight travel in "waves," and the shorter the wavelength of a color, the more it scatters when it strikes the particles in the air. Blue light has a short wavelength and scatters more. Red light has a long wavelength and scatters less.

On a clear day with the sun well above the horizon, the sky looks blue because the shorter blue waves are scattered by the air and are reflected back to earth from all parts of the sky. But when the sun drops toward the horizon at evening, its light travels through many additional miles of the earth's atmosphere to reach us. Thus it strikes many more air molecules and dust particles than when the sun is overhead. The shorter blue rays are blocked and absorbed in the atmosphere before they can reach our eyes. The longer red rays penetrate the atmosphere to reach us, causing the colors we see at sunset and at sunrise.

When there is more dust in the atmosphere, such as from volcanic action, sunsets are even more colorful. As an example, when the Krakatau volcano near Java exploded in 1883, vast quantities of dust spewed miles into the atmosphere. *The New Encyclopædia Britannica* notes the result: "The fine dust drifted several times around the Earth, causing spectacular red sunsets throughout the following year."

The gorgeous sunsets should make us appreciate the Creator of the sun, the earth, and our atmosphere, which make possible such glorious displays. We should feel as did the Bible writers who wrote: "The heavens are declaring the glory of God; and of the work of his hands the expanse is telling." "You are worthy, Jehovah, even our God, to receive the glory and the honor and the power, because you created all things, and because of your will they existed and were created."—Psalm 19:1; Revelation 4:11.

G. Ludwig/U.S. Fish & Wildlife Service

My Struggle to Leave a Violent Life

FOR eight years I was a member of a well-known motorcycle club. Most of these groups do not get along well with other motorcycle clubs, and there is constant rivalry. One night a large number of us were in the center of New Orleans looking for a rival club from out of town. We were anxious to "bang a few heads" to straighten out some differences we had.

The other group was nowhere to be found, so we split up and went our separate ways. However, some stayed at a bar, where a fistfight broke out with two plainclothes policemen. The officers started shooting and wounded one of my friends. I was sitting in a quiet old neighborhood bar when I heard what had happened. I didn't know whether my friend was alive or dead, so I went to the hospital to find out. As soon as I arrived, a man pointed at me, shouting, "He was one of them! Grab him!" Although I had not been involved in the fight, I guess that with long hair and beards, we all looked the same to them. Anyway, they grabbed me, and I ended up in prison for several weeks. But how did I ever get started in this violent lifestyle? Let me backtrack to my childhood.

Love at First Sight

Most parents would be disappointed if their children became involved in this type of life, and this was certainly true of my mom and dad. They were kind but firm with me and believed in discipline.

My problem started in the last year of high school when I started to rebel against my parents' authority and also began to drink heavily. One day, while standing on the front steps of our high school, I saw something that was to leave a deep impression on me for years to come. Chrome plated, brightly painted, a "Harley Chopper" motorcycle passed, seeming to glide by in front of me. The rider looked as if he didn't have a care in the world. I fell in love with motorcycles then and there!

Later that year after I graduated from school, I used my hard-earned funds from my younger years and bought a big 750 cc English motorcycle. That summer I traveled through the Midwestern states, ending up in Iowa, where I attended college.

The Motorcycle "Family"

The Vietnam War was on, and for many of us young people, it was a difficult time in

our lives. The thought of going to war and killing was repulsive to me. Yet, if I didn't stay in college, that is where I would be —by force. I decided to speak up in protest, along with many other disillusioned youths. I joined an antiwar group, but their meetings were very disorganized. After a short time, I realized that this group could not change the system and bring about better conditions. I then considered joining another group but discovered that they were involved in other acts of violence. This did not seem right to me—using violence to protest violence.

During my time in college, I also became aware of religious hypocrisy. As a Catholic, I had been taught that those who did bad things would suffer forever in hellfire when they died. To me it seemed that few people could be so holy in their lives that they would end up going to heaven. It didn't make sense to me when I learned that the church as a whole approved of going to war to fight and kill people. Disillusioned, I stopped attending church services and considered myself no longer part of the Catholic Church. In search for more understanding, I took a course in the philosophy of religion. My instructor turned out to be an atheist and taught us that just as there is no Santa Claus, so there is no God!

The only things that remained constant during this time were my heavy drinking and my motorcycle riding. Discouraged with college and with life in general, I moved to New Orleans, in the deep South. Here I met a group of others who were pursuing the same things that I was. Many of them were also disgusted with society. They taught me the many things involved in building a motorcycle; they found me work and looked after me when I was sick. It was this concern that attracted me to them as a group.

Our "family" grew to include groups from cities throughout the United States. Summertime found us riding our motorcycles throughout the Midwest, as far north as Minnesota and Wyoming, as far west as California, and even into Mexico. We visited many state parks and enjoyed the beauty and peacefulness of the countryside.

Our way of life included spending a lot of time drinking in barrooms. Some of the fellows enjoyed a good fight, but I didn't. I became good at spotting situations leading to fights and gracefully tried to avoid them. At other times, though, people would do things that I couldn't handle, and I'd jump in to teach them a lesson. One time I was standing outside a barroom when a motorcycle passed. I was looking to see who it was, when the passenger pointed a gun at me and fired! How he failed to hit me, I don't know.

The Effects of a Homicide

I began to realize that there was no real happiness in this pleasure-seeking way of life. In time I married, but the marriage didn't work out; it lasted only three months. Later, my motorcycle was stolen. Then one night, after drinking very heavily, I had a bad argument with my best friend. This left me very depressed. Trying to end it all, I swallowed a handful of pills. Then I lay down to die on the levee of the Mississippi River. However, I woke up in the hospital. On two other occasions, I also ended up in the hospital because of my drinking problem.

Then came a morning I will never forget. At five o'clock I received a phone call telling me that one of my best friends had been shot and killed. He had gone out drinking with two other club members, and they tried to stop a man from beating a woman. It turned out that she was his wife. He shot

In my more violent biking days

and killed my friend. All of us were in a state of shock, and I spent the entire next day with his brother, making funeral arrangements.

While alone at night in the funeral home, I touched my friend's face. He was cold, stiff, and lifeless. Where had he gone? Was that it—the end of everything? Surely there must be more than this—life just for a few years, then death ending it all. I realized that I did not understand life at all, and from then on I would try to find out. I began to dabble in spiritism, and several times it seemed that we could contact my friend. But it was all rather vague and still did not answer my questions.

What Is Life's Purpose?

One night I had too much to drink and passed out while riding my motorcycle. In the accident that followed, I seriously hurt my ankle. I couldn't walk and had to stay at home for two weeks. During this time, a man and his young son knocked on my door. They wanted to talk about the Bible. I invited them in. They told me they were Jehovah's Witnesses. As I had never heard that name before, I asked them if they were a new religious group. The man kindly showed me from the Bible that God's name is Jehovah and that they were speaking to people about him. That was new to me. God had a name, Jehovah. My religious training as a youth had not taught me that. I wondered what else I had not been taught.

Next I was shown that the Bible speaks of the end of the world, or system of things, that we live in. The "end of the world"! Why wasn't I told of this before? This paved the way for several further discussions during which I had many questions. They left me the book *Is This Life All There Is?* I couldn't read it fast enough, for I was finally finding out what life was all about.

I learned that it is not God's purpose that we live for such a short period of time and then die. I learned of a coming end to death and the prospect of everlasting life on a paradise earth. As for my dear friend, I learned that he was not conscious or suffering anywhere; rather, he was in a deep sleep, awaiting a resurrection from the dead. What a grand hope that was! Maybe I would see him again!—Revelation 21:4, 5; Ecclesiastes 9:5; John 5:28, 29.

A Difficult Decision

Our Bible discussions were interrupted when I left on the biggest motorcycle club trip planned for that summer. I told my Witness friend, Daniel, that I would call him when I returned. He gave me the book *The Truth That Leads to Eternal Life.* During the next four weeks of traveling, each time we stopped to rest I read a portion of the book. When I got back, I called Daniel. We made arrangements to study the Bible together, and after the first study, he invited me to attend a meeting at the Kingdom Hall the following Sunday afternoon.

Now, we had a club ride planned that Sunday, and I was expected to be there to take the lead. Sunday morning came and

off we went. We stopped at a bar, and everyone started drinking. About one o'clock I casually walked out, started my bike, and returned to the city. At 3:00 p.m., I was at the Kingdom Hall, with T-shirt, blue jeans, boots, beard, and my hair in a pony tail. The Witnesses received me warmly, not mentioning anything about my appearance. They encouraged me to come back. I did, and I have been attending meetings ever since.

The first month was difficult, though, because I was still attending weekly motorcycle club meetings. I soon came to see that if I continued with the club, I would have difficulty applying and living by Bible principles. So I made my decision to quit the club. It was hard to leave those fellows. Over the years, we had experienced many things together, and this had united us closely. On the other hand, it was a relief to leave that violent world behind and to enter Jehovah's peaceful worldwide organization. I even sold the rifle that was always by my bedside.

Don't Stick Your Finger in the Fire

Six months after I began my study, I was baptized. In this short period, with Jehovah's help, I had been able to conquer my drinking habit, and my conduct in general had improved. I now enjoy visiting people at their homes just as Daniel visited me at the beginning. From the Bible, I try to show my neighbors that Jehovah God has a government that outlaws violence, that rules with justice, and that will provide all the righteous things that human governments cannot provide, and that soon there will be no violent people left in the earth. This especially appeals to me because of my past experiences with violence, so I stress it all I can.—Revelation 11:18.

Jehovah God has blessed me with a devoted Christian wife and two beautiful children. The four of us are able to work together from door to door and attend Christian meetings and conventions. I have the privilege to serve as a ministerial servant in the Christian congregation. Indeed, I have left violence and have found real peace. What a contrast! After returning to New Orleans, I learned of the deaths of two of my former friends. Since I have been here in Louisiana, three more have been shot and killed. If it wasn't for Jehovah, where would I be?

To the young ones, I wish to say that although the world seems glamorous and exciting, don't stick your finger in the fire. I was in the world and tasted it all. You are not missing anything. And for those of you who are seeking to gain a relationship with Jehovah but don't think that you can make the necessary changes, please note Jesus' encouraging words: "With God all things are possible." (Matthew 19:26)—*As told by David L. Wirges.*

CROSSWORD SOLUTIONS

N	E	W	J	E	R	U	S	A	L	E	M		M	
E		A			E		H		A		A	M	O	Z
A		N	E	W	T		A		M	A	N		S	
P	O	D			R		S	E	E		G		Q	
O		E	L	D	A	A	H		C	H	E	L	U	B
L		R			C		A	S	H	E	R		I	
I		E			E	L	I			G			T	
S	A	R	A	H		O		P		E	L	B	O	W
	L			E			S	I	T			R		O
	L		B	E	G	E	T		H			U		R
J	O	I	A	D	A		E	L	U	Z	A	I		M
	T		K		R	O	W		M			S	O	W
	T		B	E	D		A		M	A	A	I		O
S	E	C	U		E		R		I			N		O
	D		K	I	N	G	D	O	M	O	F	G	O	D

SEGOVIA'S AMAZING AQUEDUCT

WE TEND to marvel at the accomplishments of modern man. Science and technology have created the marvels of space flight and have revealed the secrets of the atom. But if you want to be humbled, visit the ancient city of Segovia in Spain. As you drive toward the old city quarter, you are struck by a marvel of ancient architecture and engineering—the aqueduct of Segovia. From ancient times it has brought water from the nearby Sierra Fuenfria mountains down to Segovia.

In the Plaza del Azoguejo, the aqueduct's arches rise to a height of some 91 feet above the old market square. Since the aqueduct stretches over 1,000 yards across Segovia, its 166 arches form a delicate two-tiered design, like a curtain inviting you to pass through to old Segovia and see history unfurl before you. And the aqueduct is history—built by the Romans, some say under Emperor Augustus (27 B.C.E.-14 C.E.), and others under Emperor Trajan (98-117 C.E.).

Modern architects are impressed by this structure and more so when they recall that the Romans constructed it without cement or lime. The stones were designed, cut, and placed so precisely that they have withstood the wear and tear of nearly 2,000 years, and the slender pillars stand as proudly as ever.

The arches were built over a wooden frame, and then the keystone was put in place to lock the rest of the arch in position. Then the wooden frame was removed.

In the 17th century the aqueduct was given the name *El Puente del Diablo* (The Devil's Bridge). What started that? One legend says that the Devil constructed the bridge and that he would confound anyone trying to count the arches. Even today there is some controversy as to the exact number of arches, since some may be hidden. The current count is 166.

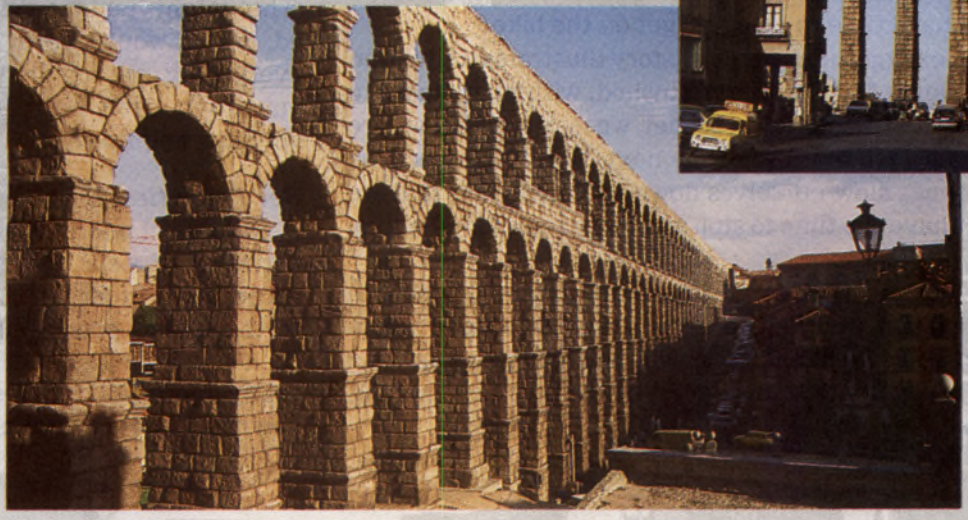
The Romans were very conscious of the importance of a clean water supply for their cities. For example, ancient Rome was served by 11 major aqueducts supplying daily some 84,000,000 gallons of water, according to one source. A large portion of the route taken by these aqueducts was not in the form of a bridge but as tunnels cut through hills and mountains. The Romans were very skilled at lining up these tunnels with sufficient gradient for the water to flow. They also built shafts to prevent air locks and to allow for inspection and maintenance.

Even today, spread across Europe, "it is likely that the remains of more than 200 of these old Roman aqueducts—many with arches more striking than those around Rome—are extant." (*The New Encyclopædia Britannica*) And one of those is the amazing aqueduct of Segovia.

The aqueduct, built without mortar, has 166 arches

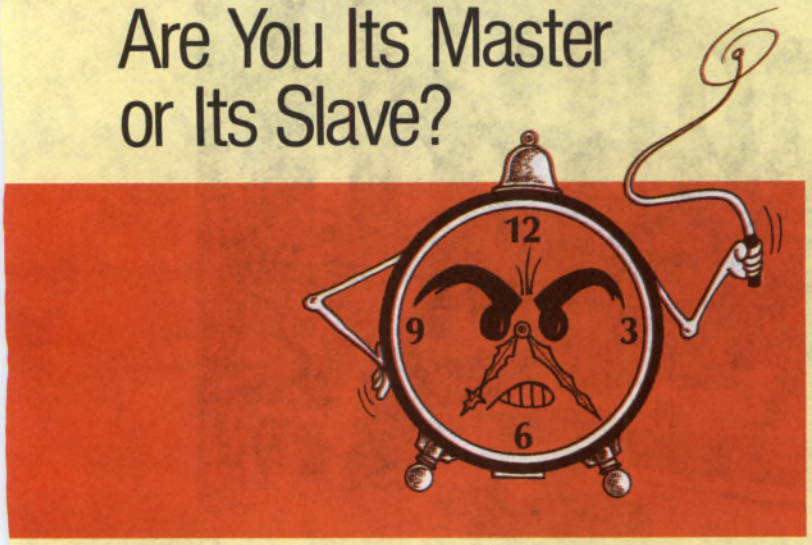
Partial view from within the city

It was built by the Romans nearly 2,000 years ago



TIME

Are You Its Master or Its Slave?



"WHY are you late?" inquired the teacher as Albert walked into the classroom. "Because I ran alongside my bicycle all the way to school," Albert replied, almost out of breath.

"Why didn't you *ride* your bicycle?" asked the teacher curiously. "Because," explained Albert, "I was so late I didn't have time to stop and get on the bike."

This exaggerated, comical story illustrates a situation that many of us face daily. Rushed, with many tasks to be done and deadlines to be met, we may feel that we are racing from one thing to the next. But, like Albert, we sometimes slow ourselves down by concluding that we do not have the time to stop and reorganize for effectiveness.

Nevertheless, we could save time, accomplish more in the long run, and reduce stress if we did pause to sharpen our skills in managing time. Then, instead of viewing time as a relentless master, it could become a helpful servant.

How can you achieve more effective management of your time? Following are some suggestions. As you read them, choose those that fit your needs and adapt them to your circumstances.

Plan Your Day

Imagine that your day has just begun. Before you is a seemingly endless number of tasks. The thought of all these duties may cause you to dread the day. Where should you begin? By planning your day.

Many start by writing what is known as a To Do List. One person with many responsibilities in a large organization notes how he stays on schedule. He states: "I keep a written list of things to be done. As new tasks present themselves or come to mind, I add them to the list. Then I cross off each item as it is completed."

Might a similar written plan help you to organize your daily activities? You may respond: 'That might help me get started, but I would never finish everything on my list!' And you are probably right. That is why it is helpful to . . .

Set Priorities

You can set priorities by numbering each item on your list according to importance. Then, to the extent possible, handle each activity in that order. Naturally, there will be times when you may choose to make an ex-

ception and not handle a matter in strict priority order, according to your circumstances and preferences. So stay flexible. Your objective is to stay in control so that what you do accomplish each day is by choice rather than by chance.

Do not rush from job to job or worry about doing everything that you have listed. Time-management consultant Alan Lakein stresses: "One rarely reaches the bottom of a To Do List. It's not completing the list that counts, but making the best use of your time."

You will have accomplished this if the bulk of your time was directed toward what is truly important. As for the unfinished items, see if they can be delegated to others or transferred to tomorrow's list. A hard look at lower-priority items sometimes reveals that they do not need to be done at all. On the other hand, an item at the bottom of today's list may have a higher priority tomorrow.

But how do you go about determining which activities on your list are of high priority? After all, when looking at a long list of duties, many things may appear to be equally important. So to set priorities effectively, you must . . .

Distinguish Between "Urgent" and "Important"

A wise king in Bible times said that a man should "see good for all his hard work." (Ecclesiastes 3:13) Some tasks yield better results than others. So when looking over a list of duties, consider the *results* each one will bring. Will finishing the job produce significant benefits? Will you "see good" for your hard work? If not, it may not be a high-priority task.

True, at first glance everything on your list may seem urgent. But are urgent matters always important, deserving a major time investment? Michael LeBoeuf, a professor of time management at the University of New Orleans, makes this observation: "Important things are seldom urgent and urgent things are seldom important. The urgency of fixing a flat tire when you are late for an appointment is much greater than remembering to pay your auto insurance premium, but its importance [the tire] is, in most cases, relatively small."

Then he laments: "Unfortunately, many of us spend our lives fighting fires under the tyranny of the urgent. The result is that we ignore the less urgent but more important things in life. It's a great effectiveness killer."

So when setting priorities, ask yourself which activities are truly important. Then try to spend most of your time on these. Perhaps an urgent matter does not need immediate attention. Does it justify a large time

Many find it helpful to make a priority list of things to be done

Personal organization and the setting of priorities can make all the difference in the world

investment? Can you handle it quickly and move on to an activity that will result in greater accomplishment? Better yet, can it be delegated to someone else?

No doubt you will agree that it is more rewarding to work at something that yields important results than it is simply to be busy at whatever activity happens to be at hand. Try to direct as many of your efforts as possible toward activities that result in true accomplishment.

The 80/20 Rule

Applying the principles discussed thus far, what percentage of your day's activities would you expect to categorize as top priority? Of course, that will depend upon your specific responsibilities. But a number of time-management experts feel that, in many cases, you can narrow the top-priority items down to about 20 percent. They cite, as a guide, the 80/20 rule.

This principle was formulated by the 19th-century Italian economist Vilfredo Pareto. It states that only about 20 percent of the causes produce about 80 percent of the results. If you are alert, you may discover that there are a number of situations in everyday life where Pareto's principle applies. But how can the 80/20 rule be applied to your use of time?

Analyze the items on your To Do List. Perhaps you can be 80 percent effective by accomplishing two out of ten items listed. If so, those are the two most important items on your list. Also, analyze a project before diving in. How much of it

is truly important to your objective? What part of the job will produce the most significant results? This portion of the task is priority.

Time-management consultant Dru Scott, after discussing Pareto's principle, explains how to make it work for you. She says: "Identify the vital ingredients necessary to achieve your objective. Do these things first. You will get the most results in the least amount of time."

Enjoy the Benefits

Perhaps at this point you can better appreciate that being the master of your time is not a matter of being preoccupied with never wasting a minute or rushing from crisis to crisis. Rather, effective time management means selecting the appropriate task for right now. It means discerning what activities yield the best results and spending your time on these whenever possible.

There are no fixed rules for personal organization of your time. To benefit from the suggestions in this article, be flexible. Experiment. Adapt. Discover what works best for you. Read the ideas in the box on this page and see which ones will help you turn a relentless master into a helpful servant.

By getting better control of your time, what a sense of accomplishment you will have at the end of each day! Though more duties likely remain for tomorrow, you have the satisfaction of knowing that you directed your efforts toward the most important things. You will "see good" for your hard work.

You may even feel that—at last—there is enough time for the things that really matter. Then you will not be a victim of hectic circumstances, but you will be the master of your time. That will bring not only increased effectiveness to your work but likely increased joy as well.

WAYS TO SAVE TIME

1. Have a clear set of values and goals in life. It is the key to setting daily priorities.
2. Work on tasks requiring concentration when you are most alert.
3. Make phone calls when you are most likely to contact the person.
4. Delegate work whenever possible. It frees you to accomplish more, and it gives experience to others.
5. When doing paperwork, try to handle each piece of paper once, rather than giving it a temporary 'parking place.'
6. At meetings with others, stick to an agenda. Have specific starting and finishing times.
7. Organize your work area with needed tools close at hand.
8. Do not feel obligated to accept every social invitation that comes your way. Learn to say no tactfully.
9. Standardize shopping and packing lists as much as possible rather than writing up new ones repeatedly.
10. Get sufficient rest and relaxation so that you can work effectively.
11. Set deadlines.
12. Do not procrastinate.
13. Break overwhelming tasks into smaller ones.
14. Do not be a perfectionist. Concentrate on what is truly important.
15. Make good use of waiting time. Write a letter, read, or accomplish some other essential task.
16. Know that there will be occasions when you will need to spend time on activities you would not choose. Do not waste time fretting about it. Instead, work to get it done.

From Our Readers

Loss of a Child

Thank you for your issue on "Facing the Loss of a Child." (August 8, 1987) Even though I cried several times as I read the articles, it was helpful to know that others have felt exactly as I have. It was March 1978 that our 24-year-old Karen was killed when a truck hit her car at an intersection just a few blocks from her home. I appreciated it so much that your article stated that it is not wrong to grieve, and it doesn't show a lack of faith in God's promises of a resurrection; rather, it indicates a deep love for the dead person. That was so comforting to me. Diane Krych's writing to David about having a party for him when Jehovah wakes him from his sleep touched my heart. I too have thought about Karen's party when she is resurrected. I just can't wait to see her beautiful smile!

D. L., United States

I have just read your issue "Facing the Loss of a Child." I can testify to the trueness of every word therein. The grief never goes away. For 13 years I have felt guilty because of grieving over my son's death. I do not feel guilty anymore. Now I feel relieved to know that grieving doesn't in any way betray a lack of faith in our great God, Jehovah.

A. M., United States

I want to express my deep appreciation for the article "Facing the Loss of a Child." Our dear son John died about seven years ago. I went through many of the feelings described in your article —disbelief, denial, guilt feelings. I didn't write letters to him but had a suitcase packed with his things. In my mind he was on vacation and couldn't communicate with me. For two years I was depressed, withdrawn, and despondent. I couldn't understand my feelings. Now I am much better, though the loss is still great. Thanks so much for helping others understand our feelings and what positive things they can say or do to help.

V. W., United States

I have just finished reading the articles on "Facing the Loss of a Child." It's been six years and eight months since we lost our only daughter in a car accident. Your articles helped me to see that what I've gone through was normal. I couldn't accept her being dead. I thought of her as a missionary in another land, even though I knew she was gone. I too felt the need to write letters. It has only been in the last year that I have come to accept her death; I realized that no matter how long I grieved I couldn't bring her back. So it was time to come out of my excessive grief. Thank you so much for this article.

V. B., United States

As stated on page 14 of the above-named issue, "Awake!" was not recommending writing letters to the deceased as a help in getting through the grieving process. Diane Krych's letter was published not only to illustrate how the resurrection hope sustained her but also to illustrate how some people react when stricken with extreme grief, so that others will be able to respond with understanding and compassion.—ED.

Watching the World

Highest Suicide Rate

The suicide rate in Hungary ranks as the highest in the world, and the Hungarian government is worried, reports *The New York Times*. According to psychiatrist Dr. Bella Buda, a researcher with the Hungarian Academy of Sciences, Hungarian suicide victims are viewed as 'brave men' who have accepted death to avoid more suffering. Each year "nearly 5,000 persons commit suicide in Hungary," says Buda, while "as many as 50,000 try." Prompted by the alarming increase of suicides, the government is asking researchers to find better means of prevention. Cited as factors in suicide cases were economic stagnation, inflation, and alcoholism spurred on by "a frantic pursuit" of a materialistic life-style.

How Salt Preserves

Salt preserves meat—but how? Microbiologist Robert Buchanan of the U.S. Department of Agriculture says he has figured it out. "It doesn't kill food-spoiling bacteria by drying them," reports *Hippocrates* magazine. "Instead, salt forces the bacteria to use so much energy getting rid of sodium that they have no energy left to eat and reproduce." Perhaps this news will help meat processors learn how to get by with less salt in their products.

"A Bleak Picture"

Statistics for 1986 show that the membership of Canada's largest Protestant denomination, the United Church of Canada, has again decreased by more than 9,000. In 1985 the drop was over 10,000. *The Toronto Star*

described the 1986 figures as "a bleak picture for a denomination that is at times beset by controversy." Among the causes for the "general unrest" that has led to loss of members are listed "the proposed ordination of self-declared homosexuals and the use of non-sexist language in church literature." A former church moderator admitted that some believe "the leadership of the church is so out of touch with the local people."

New Pyramid Theory

How the ancient Egyptians lifted the massive stones that form the pyramids into place has long intrigued scholars. Now Joseph Davidovits, a chemist at Florida's Barry University, claims they were not lifted at all but rather cast in place. He bases his hypothesis on analysis of samples of the pyramid blocks that he obtained in 1982. The blocks, he says, contain minerals that do not occur naturally in limestone and that differ from the stone in Egypt's quarries. He asserts that the ancient Egyptians cast the stones by putting limestone and rock rubble together with a natural cement, using the edge of a finished stone as part of the mold for the next. The Egyptian government has challenged his hypothesis.

Pope's Visit Commercialized

Months before the pope's nine-city tour of the United States in September, entrepreneurs started selling papal memorabilia. "Vatican and U.S. Roman Catholic Church officials refuse to lend their endorsements to any of the commercial ventures," says *Newsweek*. "Still, the amount of papal paraphernalia is multiplying like loaves

and fishes." Among the offerings were T-shirts: A reported favorite sold to priests and nuns features a "canine beer mascot . . . in papal hat and robe." Hats, masks, and rings: A gold plastic imitation papal ring has red lips attached. "When you kiss it," says its creator, "it'll kiss you back." Posters and pictures: You can have your picture taken with a life-size, cutout likeness of the pope. Videos and comic books: Both offer the pope's life story. Lawn sprinklers: Water shoots from the "out-turned palms of a plywood pope." They were marketed under the slogan: "Let Us Spray." For refreshment, an ice bar in the pope's image—called the Popesicle—was proposed.

Universally Rejected

It began as a good idea: Take bales of tightly compacted garbage; put them in small, controlled landfills; and make energy from the methane gas produced as the garbage decomposes. To start the project, contractor Lowell Harrelson had 3,100 tons of commercial garbage from Islip, New York, loaded on a barge and towed down to North Carolina, where he had an agreement with some farmers to use their land. But when it arrived, protests caused officials to order the barge away. Gaining in notoriety, it was similarly rejected by the states of Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana, Texas, and Florida. Belize and other Caribbean nations also said no, and Mexico dispatched its coast guard and air force to keep it from going ashore there. Finally, 60 days and 6,000 miles later —at a cost of $6,000 a day for the barge and tug—it arrived back in New York. But officials would not let it dock there either, citing issues of health and safety. After the garbage had been sitting in Gravesend Bay for three months last summer as somewhat of a tourist attraction, agreement was finally reached to have it incinerated in Brooklyn and the ash buried back in Islip. "Sometimes," said Harrelson, "I wonder how I could have been so stupid, how I could have caused a fury like this."

Heavy Responsibility

The fact that almost all women who undergo an abortion suffer thereafter from severe psy-

chological disturbances is often kept hidden from the public, claims Professor P. Petersen of the Hannover, Germany, gynecological hospital. Aftereffects include "severe feelings of guilt; depression; apathy or irritability; hatred for partner, doctor, or for men in general; frigidity; [and] terrible nightmares." According to the German newspaper *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung,* Petersen pointed out that the doctors who make abortions possible must also bear "a share of the responsibility for killing humans." This has already taken a heavy psychological toll on many doctors.

Thirst Quenching?

What do you drink when you are thirsty? "Ironically, the most popular choices—sugar-sweetened carbonated soft drinks—do not even quench thirst," states *The New York Times.* "Rather, their high sugar content can leave you thirstier, setting off a thirst cycle that supports soaring soft-drink consumption." A typical 12-ounce soda contains nine teaspoons of sugar and "supplies no nutrients other than sweet calories." It may also contain up to half as much caffeine as in a cup of coffee. Then there is the acidity—in colas, about the same as that of vinegar—that attacks tooth enamel. Diet, noncaffeine, and "natural" sodas address some problems but leave others and usually do not add anything to the soda's nutritional value.

Fetal Feelings?

Do fetuses and newborn babies suffer pain and fear? Düsseldorf professor H. G. Lenard feels that the question should be fully answered. As reported in the German newspaper *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung,* he points out that fetuses, "upon being pricked with a needle, react with defensive gestures, anxiety, and increased heartbeat." Since an unborn baby with water on the brain may be treated by means of puncture needles through the top of the skull, he advocates a "search for a practicable method of anesthetization for fetuses." The question of pain, he says, should also be considered when using forceps and suction apparatus during a difficult delivery.

OREGON'S BLUE JEWEL *in a Volcano*

OUR expectation heightened as we started to climb into the mountains in southwest Oregon on the western coast of the United States. We had been told that Crater Lake would be like nothing else we had ever seen. It was still wintertime, and the snow was piled up by the side of the highway, way above eye level. As a consequence, when we arrived at our destination, we still could not see the famous lake. But there was a gap that a bulldozer had cut through the wall of snow that gave us a view over the edge of the precipice. And what a view!

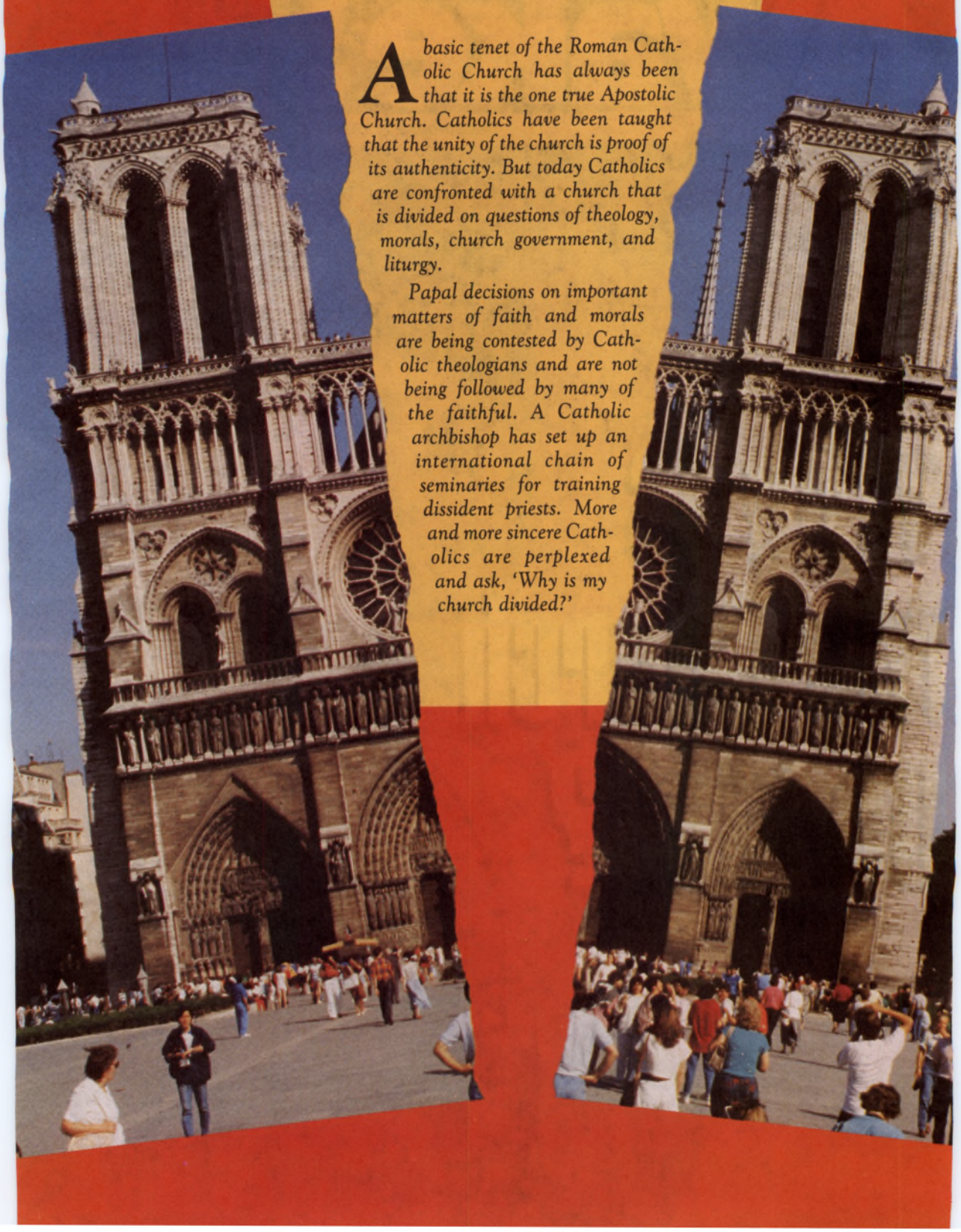
There, way below us, was Crater Lake, truly a deep-blue jewel set in the collapsed heart of a volcano. We were looking at a lake 1,932 feet deep that had been filled by rain and snow. The beautiful reflection in the mirror-still water made it hard to believe that the lake is some six miles wide. A 20-mile circle of snow-covered cliffs surrounded this jewel.

We were on the edge of a huge caldera formed by the collapsed cone of a volcanic mountain that was given the name Mount Mazama in 1896. Geologists theorize as to when it was formed and exactly how. We could only stand in amazement at such a unique sight and give thanks to the Creator for the senses that allow us to perceive and appreciate such beauty.—*Contributed.*

Awake!

December 22, 1987

Why Is My Church Divided?



A basic tenet of the Roman Catholic Church has always been that it is the one true Apostolic Church. Catholics have been taught that the unity of the church is proof of its authenticity. But today Catholics are confronted with a church that is divided on questions of theology, morals, church government, and liturgy.

Papal decisions on important matters of faith and morals are being contested by Catholic theologians and are not being followed by many of the faithful. A Catholic archbishop has set up an international chain of seminaries for training dissident priests. More and more sincere Catholics are perplexed and ask, 'Why is my church divided?'

Cracks in the Edifice

By *Awake!* correspondent in France

THAT day the massive towers of Notre Dame cathedral in Paris seemed to symbolize the solidity of the traditional Roman Catholic Church. In the large square in front of the 12th-century edifice, an official church procession commemorated the Assumption of Mary.

Strange to relate, however, on that same August 15, 1986, just a few hundred yards away across the Seine River, a rival procession formed in front of the Saint-Nicolas-du-Chardonnet Catholic church. As the procession wound its way through the streets of the Latin Quarter, it was followed by several thousand Catholics, reportedly many more than were at the official ceremony held at Notre Dame. Yet, both processions were organized by priests of the Roman Catholic Church, and both were in honor of Mary. Why two rival processions to celebrate the same Catholic feast?

This incident well illustrates the cleavages that now divide the Catholic Church. They are spreading in all directions, running through the edifice and splitting it from left to right and from top to bottom.

Progressive Versus Traditional Catholics

To the left are the progressive, or liberal, Catholics. Many of these are tempted by so-called liberation theology, which originated in Latin America. For these, ecumenism, socialism, and even communism are not scare words. But even in Latin America, not all Catholics are in agreement with liberation theology. In Brazil, for example, the Catholic clergy itself is divided between the progressives and the traditionalists.

Traditionalist Catholics are mostly right-wing conservatives who feel that the Second Vatican Council opened the door to reforms that betray traditional Catholicism. They insist that Mass be said in Latin and refuse to fraternize with Protestants or political leftists.

In between are the mainstream Catholics, doubtless the most numerous but not necessarily the most fervent. Both the progressives and the traditionalists feel that middle-of-the-road Catholicism is losing its soul as a result of either too few or too many reforms. Many progressives feel that the reforms do not go far enough and that the church's political involvement in favor of the poor is too timid. The traditionalists are convinced that post-Vatican II Catholicism is reforming itself out of existence.

Running through these main tendencies are further cleavages, at all levels. Catholics are divided on matters of faith and

Awake!® December 22, 1987
Vol. 68, No. 24

Average Printing: 10,610,000
Published in 54 Languages

Contents

Feature Articles

Cracks in the Edifice 3
The Rebel Archbishop 5
Why Is My Church Divided? 10

Also in This Issue

Young People Ask...
Will My Parents' Divorce Ruin My Life? 13
New Additions for Printing Expansion 16
Activities in the Pearl Street Building 18
My Sikh Heritage—And My Search for Truth .. 19
Earthquakes—How You Can Prepare for Survival! 24
From Our Readers 28
Watching the World 29
Index to Volume 68 of *Awake!* 30
The Wonder of Snowflakes 31

SEMIMONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Afrikaans, Cebuano, Danish, Dutch, English, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Iloko, Italian, Japanese, Korean, Norwegian, Portuguese, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Yoruba

MONTHLY LANGUAGES AVAILABLE BY MAIL: Chichewa, Chinese, Cibemba, Hiligaynon, Igbo, Malayalam, New Guinea Pidgin, Polish, Russian, Sesotho, Swahili, Tahitian, Tamil, Thai, Twi, Ukrainian, Xhosa, Zulu

25 cents (U.S.) a copy Yearly subscription (see language lists above)

Watch Tower Society offices	*Semimonthly Languages*	*Monthly Languages*
America, U.S., Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589	$5.00	$2.50
Canada, Box 4100, Halton Hills, Ontario L7G 4Y4	$7.00	$3.50
England, The Ridgeway, London NW7 1RN	£5.00	£2.50

Remittances should be sent to the office in your country or to Watchtower, Wallkill, N.Y. 12589, U.S.A.

Changes of address should reach us 30 days before your moving date. Give us your old and new address (if possible, your old address label).

Copyright © 1987 by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., and International Bible Students Association. All rights reserved.

Unless otherwise indicated, *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures* used.

Printed in U.S.A.

Awake! (ISSN 0005-237X) is published semimonthly for $5.00 (U.S.) per year by Watchtower Bible and Tract Society of New York, Inc., 25 Columbia Heights, Brooklyn, N.Y. 11201. Second-class postage paid at Brooklyn, N.Y., and at additional mailing offices. ***Postmaster:*** Send address changes to Watchtower, ***Wallkill, N.Y. 12589.***

morals. On questions of faith, or beliefs, such official Catholic dogmas as hellfire, purgatory, original sin, and even the Trinity no longer go unchallenged within the Catholic Church. A recent poll in France, said to be "the oldest daughter of the church," showed that 71 percent of French Catholics interviewed expressed doubts about life after death, 58 percent denied the existence of hell, 54 percent expressed disbelief in purgatory, and 34 percent did not accept the Trinity.

Admittedly, there are many members of the Catholic Church throughout the world who still fervently believe in these doctrines. But that only serves to prove that Catholics are divided on matters of faith.

"The Central Issue . . . Is Obedience to Rome"

As to morals, Catholics are deeply divided over such matters as sex before marriage, adultery, and homosexuality. Many sincere Catholics are deeply shocked by the permissive attitude of members of their church, including some of the clergy and even certain theologians. Catholics with good morals may be comforted by the fact that the pope has come out strongly against sexual immorality. But does this not simply underscore the disquieting truth that more and more Catholics are challenging the pope's authority in such matters?

The London *Observer* recently wrote: "Tensions between the Pope and many of his flock have been expressed in well-publicised disagreements about abortion, artificial birth control, the admission of women to the priesthood and the participation in communion of divorced Catholics. The central issue underlying them is obedience to Rome."

Bishop James Malone, former president

of the National (American) Council of Catholic Bishops, warned of "a growing and dangerous disaffection of elements of the church in the United States from the *Holy See*." He spoke of "dissent," "division," and "developing estrangement."

On the other hand, traditionalist Catholics are in open rebellion against the pope because they feel that he is not strict enough. The leading figure in this revolt is a French Catholic archbishop. He has created a movement that has further divided the Roman Catholic Church, as the following article will explain.

The Rebel Archbishop

THE French journalist jumped into a taxi in Rome and asked to be driven to the Rospigliosi-Pallavicini Palace. The taxi driver gave him a knowing look and said *"Si,"* he would drive him to *"il vescovo ribelle!"* (the rebel bishop).

For days everybody who was anybody in Rome had been in a state of excitement. To the great indignation of Vatican authorities, Princess Elvina Pallavicini, a member of one of Rome's leading patrician families, had agreed to help dissident French Catholic archbishop Marcel Lefebvre air his views in Rome, even sending out hundreds of invitations to a semiprivate press conference. She had placed at Lefebvre's disposal the family palace that had housed a pope and several cardinals among her ancestors. To make matters worse, she would allow him to hold his conference in the throne room under the huge canopy of Pope Clement IX.

In spite of much pressure brought to bear on her by Vatican dignitaries, the princess stood by her decision. The Roman press reported fully on this meeting, considered to be a "provocation" right "at the Vatican's doorstep." The taxi driver was obviously up-to-date on the local news!

The Church "Is No Longer Catholic"

Princess Pallavicini justified her decision, stating that the Catholic Church is divided and that such "serious problems cannot be solved by ambiguous silence but only by courageous lucidity." By offering Archbishop Lefebvre the opportunity to express his views, she hoped to foster "peace and serenity within the Catholic world." The prelate thanked his hostess and blessed her and her household, congratulating them for having "kept the traditional faith."

About a thousand persons attended the

meeting, mainly traditionalist Catholics representing several countries, including many press representatives and TV journalists. The archbishop expressed his profound disagreement with official church policy since the Second Vatican Council (1962-65). French daily *Le Monde* commented: "For nearly two hours [Archbishop Lefebvre] aired grievances against the new Church 'that is no longer Catholic.' He spared nothing: the catechism, seminaries, Mass, ecumenism, not to mention 'collectivizing the sacraments' and 'Communist-oriented cardinals.'"

Archbishop Lefebvre concluded: "The situation is tragic. The Church is moving in a direction that is not Catholic and that is destroying our religion. Should I obey or remain a Catholic, a Roman Catholic, a lifelong Catholic? I have made my choice before God. I do not wish to die a Protestant."

Cardinal Poletti, Paul VI's vicar in the diocese of Rome, stated that by organizing this conference in Rome, "Monsignor Lefebvre offended the faith, the Catholic Church, and her divine Lord Jesus [and] personally offended the pope, abusing his patience and attempting to cause trouble within his apostolic see."

Archbishop Marcel Lefebvre

UPI/Bettmann Newsphotos

How the Rebellion Began

That conference was held on June 6, 1977. But even as early as 1965, before the Second Vatican Council had ended, there was talk of a "schism" in the Catholic Church. Many conservative Catholics felt that Vatican II was bringing in reforms that betrayed traditional Catholicism.

Archbishop Lefebvre, former archbishop of Dakar, Senegal, and bishop of Tulle, in south-central France, had taken part in the Second Vatican Council. In 1962 he was elected superior general of the "Holy Ghost Fathers" in France. But increasing disagreement with Vatican II policies being applied within the Catholic Church brought about his resignation from that position in 1968.

In 1969 a Swiss Catholic bishop authorized the dissident archbishop to open up a traditionalist seminary within the diocese of Fribourg, Switzerland. The following year, Archbishop Lefebvre founded what he called the "Saint Pius X Sacerdotal Fraternity" and opened up a seminary at Ecône in the Swiss canton of Valais. He did this with the approval of the Catholic bishop of Sion.

To begin with, this seminary was only marginally dissident. The seminarians did, of course, wear black cassocks and received a solidly traditionalist education. Mass was said in Latin, whereas Pope Paul VI had decreed that a revised Mass should be said in a vernacular language. But the seminary was tolerated by the official church authorities because Archbish-

Ecône, the rebel archbishop's traditionalist seminary in the Swiss Alps

op Lefebvre did not at that time propose to train the future priests right up to their ordination. He had hoped that they would be able to complete their education at what he considered to be the last two remaining bastions of traditional Catholicism, the Latran Pontifical University in Rome, and Fribourg University in Switzerland.

The trouble really began when Archbishop Lefebvre concluded that even these two Catholic universities could not be relied upon to train future priests in what he considered to be the true Catholic tradition. He decided that he himself would ordain the future priests trained at the Ecône seminary. To make matters worse, in 1974 he published a manifesto that expressed violent opposition to most of the reforms of the Second Vatican Council. By then Ecône had over a hundred seminarians trained by a group of traditionalist professors.

In 1975, acting through the local Swiss bishop, the Vatican withdrew its authorization from the Ecône seminary. Disregarding this, Archbishop Lefebvre continued to ordain new priests as they completed their studies. For this, in 1976 Pope Paul VI suspended him from all priestly functions, including saying Mass, officiating at first communions, administering sacraments, and, as bishop, ordaining priests. Since Ecône continued regardless, this brought about the paradoxical situation of an ultra-Catholic seminary producing scores of ultratraditionalist Catholic priests ordained by a disavowed bishop claiming to be more Catholic than the pope!

Extent of the Rebellion

The rebellion of this French archbishop would not be worth the telling if it were limited to a seminary tucked away at the foot of the Swiss Alps. But Archbishop Lefebvre quickly became the rallying point for an influential segment of Catholicism throughout the world. In his book *L'Église Catholique 1962-1986—Crise et renouveau* (The Catholic Church 1962-1986—Crisis and Renewal), author Gérard Leclerc wrote: "The traditionalist controversy does not reflect the tendency of a tiny minority.

It expresses the feelings of a large part of the faithful."

Archbishop Lefebvre has received the financial backing of many conservative Catholics throughout the world. This has enabled him to travel widely, often at the invitation of groups of traditionalist Catholics. He has criticized Vatican II before large audiences in many countries, saying Mass according to the Latin liturgy of the 16th-century Council of Trent, called the Tridentine, or Pius V, liturgy. These traditionalist meetings were sometimes held in the most unusual places, such as an unused supermarket north of London, England.

This wide financial support has enabled the rebel archbishop to open up additional seminaries for training traditionalist Catholic priests in France, Germany, Italy, Argentina, and the United States. In February 1987, French daily *Le Figaro* reported that these institutions were then training 260 seminarists. Archbishop Lefebvre has been ordaining between 40 and 50 priests a year from many parts of the world, including Africa.

Many of these traditionalist priests operate from the 75 "priories" that Archbishop Lefebvre's "Fraternity" has established in 18 countries in North and South America, Europe, and Africa. These priests celebrate Mass in Latin for conservative Catholics in those countries.

Traditionalist services are often held in specially created chapels. But more and more right-wing Catholics are waging a fight with the orthodox Catholic hierarchy in order to obtain the right to use regular Catholic church buildings for their services. This has given rise to situations that have deeply disturbed many sincere Catholics.

Fights Over Church Buildings

Ever since 1969, when Pope Paul VI introduced the new Mass that involves the use of the vernacular and other reforms, traditionalist Catholics have organized private Masses using an older Latin liturgy. In Paris, France, hundreds of them would gather in the Wagram Hall, near the Arc de Triomphe. Since the new liturgy was obligatory at that time, the local Catholic archbishop refused to allow them to use a church.

Finally, on February 27, 1977, the traditionalists took matters into their own hands and, led by a conservative priest, forcibly occupied the church of Saint-Nicolas-du-Chardonnet, in the Latin Quarter. The regular Catholic priests and parishioners found themselves evicted from their own church. When they tried a few days later to hold Mass inside the church, a fight broke out. One priest had to be taken to the hospital, and the others took refuge in the nearby presbytery.

At present, ten years later, Saint-Nicolas-du-Chardonnet is still occupied by traditionalist Catholics, in spite of two court orders expelling them. About 5,000 people attend the five Latin Masses celebrated there every Sunday. Services are held

In Our Next Issue

- *Safe Driving—The Urgent Need*
- *Living With Parkinson's Disease*
- *Is Sectarian Worship Acceptable to God?*

by a priest ordained at Ecône by Archbishop Lefebvre, and the "rebel prelate" regularly comes to this church for the confirmation of traditionalist Catholic children.

A few months after Saint-Nicolas-du-Chardonnet was first occupied by the traditionalists, several hundred progressive Catholics held a meeting to protest against the forcible occupation of this church. Several priests and Catholic professors from the Sorbonne and the Institut Catholique de Paris took part. Suddenly, a group of traditionalist Catholic youths forced their way into the hall and broke up the meeting, using iron bars and a smoke bomb. Several people were injured, and one Catholic professor had to be taken to the hospital.

Saint-Nicolas-du-Chardonnet church, in Paris, illegally occupied by traditionalist Catholics for the past ten years

The Catholic bishop of Strasbourg in eastern France was harassed by traditionalist Catholics when he tried to enter a church they had occupied in order to celebrate Mass in Latin. In Paris "commandos" of traditionalist Catholics burst into Catholic churches to break up services. They did this because a woman was being used to read the gospel during Mass or because Protestant and Orthodox ministers were present for an ecumenical service.

In March 1987 traditionalist and regular Catholics almost came to blows in Port-Marly, just west of Paris, and had to be separated by the police. The fight was over who was to occupy the Catholic church of Saint Louis. The following month traditionalist Catholics used a battering ram to break down a walled-up door and enter the church to celebrate Palm Sunday Mass in Latin. *The Times* of London, England, reported on this under the headline "Battle of St Louis—French Catholic rebels back in contested church." Latin Mass was said for them by a priest ordained by the rebel archbishop Lefebvre.

A Wound in the Church's Flank

Catholic author Gérard Leclerc writes: "Over 20 years after the [Vatican] Council, the traditionalist dissent remains an open wound in the Church's flank." And in their

book *Voyage à l'intérieur de l'Église catholique* (A Journey Inside the Catholic Church) Jean Puyo and Patrice Van Eersel state: "If Rome is so dismayed by Monsignor Lefebvre's activities, it is because he is asking basic questions. Bishop Mamie of Fribourg and Geneva, who found himself obliged to condemn the activities of his rebellious confrere, told us frankly: 'The distress of those of the faithful who have followed him is not without foundation. The thousand-year-old doctrine of the Church is in mortal danger.'"

Thus, from the luxurious patrician palaces in Rome to millions of humble abodes throughout the world, many sincere Catholics are deeply perplexed. They are asking: "Why is my church divided?" The reason why, and what some Catholics are doing about it, will be considered next.

Why Is My Church Divided?

THE divisions within the Catholic Church are so visible that many sincere Catholics feel as did the apostle Paul, who wrote to the divided Corinthian Christians: "It is clear that there are serious differences among

you. . . . Has Christ been split up?"—1 Corinthians 1:11, 13, *The New Jerusalem Bible*.

Many observant Catholics realize full well that Christianity should not be "split up." Catholics, more than most other claimed Christians, are conscious of the oneness of the true Christian religion. They thought they were practicing such a united religion in the Catholic Church. They considered Protestantism to be a confused mix-up of contradictory religions. For them, the Catholic Church represented stability and, above all, unity. Now they are confused.

Why Divided?

The Catholic Church is divided between left-wing progressives, right-wing traditionalists, and the Vatican II mainstream. Many left-wing liberal Catholics are preaching various liberation theologies that justify political revolution. Some have come very near to adopting a Marxist approach and are even justifying armed revolt. Yet, the Founder of Christianity told his disciples: "You do not belong to the world, because my choice of you has drawn you out of the world. . . . Mine is not a kingdom of this world."—John 15:19; 18:36, *NJB*.

The traditionalists are defending man-made traditions and a Latin liturgy that does not go back to Bible times, since the language of primitive Christianity was Greek, not Latin. Furthermore, by their intolerance and their aggressiveness, are they not belying their claim to being Christians? Henri Fesquet, former religion columnist in the French daily *Le Monde*, wrote: "The exhibition of Christians [Catholics] lampooning each other and quarreling over places of worship is a counter-witness that can only backfire on them. Of what use is it to preach the light in the name of the Gospel if one's acts belie one's words?"

"Of what use is it to preach the light in the name of the Gospel if one's acts belie one's words?"—French daily "Le Monde"

Jesus told the Pharisees: "For the sake of your tradition you have nullified God's word." (Matthew 15:6, *The New American Bible*) Many sincere Catholics feel the same way about modern-day traditionalists.

Both the progressives and the traditionalists (for opposite reasons) consider that the Vatican II council has produced a mass of wishy-washy mainstream Catholics. Authors Puyo and Van Eersel interviewed French Catholic philosopher Jean Guitton, member of the French Academy. They summed up his feelings as follows: "The Catholic Creed, the essence of the Church, is flying into contradictory pieces, the most zealous among the faithful are devoting themselves exclusively to politics, young Christians [Catholics] calmly make love before marriage, nobody knows how to apply the [Vatican] Council correctly, and God's people are all at sea."

Understandably, sincere Catholics are asking, 'Why is my church divided?' The answer is: Because not one of its various segments accepts the Bible as the one authentic authority for defining the position of true Christians on all matters. They are therefore divided by diverse theologies and interpretations of traditions.

What Can Sincere Catholics Do?

On one occasion in 1981, traditionalist Catholics broke up an ecumenical service

"We have seen a mirror of the divisions among Christians, the specter of Babel."
—Cardinal Lustiger of Paris

being held in a Catholic church in Paris. Archbishop (now Cardinal) Lustiger of Paris told those who remained in the church after the disturbance: "We came here to request the gifts of the Spirit that reunite scattered sons. Instead, we have seen a mirror of the divisions among Christians, the specter of Babel."

Babel was where God confused the language of those practicing false worship. (Genesis 11:1-9) Later, it was the site of the city of Babylon, the source of a confused pantheon of gods and goddesses. In the Bible it became a symbol of a worldwide religious system of confused religion. A *Theological Wordbook of the Old Testament* states: "Even as late as the first century A.D., [the apostle] John referred to the religious system, Babylon, as the 'Mother of harlots and of the abominations of the earth' (Rev 17:5)."

Referring to this symbolic Babylon, or world empire of false religion, the Bible invites all sincere persons to act quickly, saying: "Depart from her, my people, for fear of sinning with her and sharing the plagues inflicted on her!"—Revelation 18: 4, *NAB*.

Many sincere persons are leaving Christendom's organized religions. For example, a formerly dyed-in-the-wool Catholic living in the French Alps spontaneously wrote the following to the French branch office of Jehovah's Witnesses: "In line with the 1,000-year-old tradition of the Catholic Church, I was baptized from birth into the Catholic faith. I was an active Catholic for some 50 years. Around 1980, I became convinced that the Catholic Church was wrong. I became demoralized and deeply shocked. I had many arguments with priests who were not respecting their vows. For several years I had heard about Jehovah's Witnesses, mostly unfavorably. After a long period of reflection, I opened my door to them. They helped me to see that the Bible contains the answers to our questions. I also realized that after 50 years of active service within the Catholic Church, I knew nothing about the Bible, even though I possessed one. It was the Witnesses who helped me 'discover' the Bible."

Ginette, who lives near Paris, was also a staunch Catholic. In fact, when her husband began studying the Bible with Jehovah's Witnesses, she did all she could to prevent him, and she maintained her opposition for several years. What made her change? She writes: "I lost confidence. The church was no longer doing me any good. To start with, I arranged a face-to-face meeting between my priest and the Witnesses. But I soon saw that the priest was unable to answer their questions." Ginette accepted a study of the Bible with the Witnesses. Now she and her husband are happily serving God within the united international family of Jehovah's Witnesses.

If you are perplexed and distressed because of the divisions within your church, we invite you to seek further information from the Witness who supplied you with this magazine or write to the editors. Jehovah's Witnesses will be happy to help you find a loving international family of Christians who are truly united in their worship of God.

Young People Ask. . .

Will My Parents' Divorce Ruin My Life?

ECONOMICALLY disadvantaged, depressed, prone to misbehavior and marital failure—such is the grim picture some experts paint of the children of divorced parents. So if your parents are divorced or separated, understandably you may fear for your future.

Indeed, your parents' divorce may already seem to be wrecking your life. Recalls a youth named Denny: "I was unhappy and depressed after my parents' divorce. I started having problems in school and failed one year. After that I said, 'What's the use?' So I became the class clown and got into a lot of fights." Some youths even react by turning to alcohol, drugs, or sex —or by making tragically impulsive decisions.

Why, though, does divorce ruin so many young lives? And how can you avoid letting it ruin yours?

What Emotional Pain Does

In the wake of a divorce, some youths vent their frustration and anger by misbehaving in ways they would never have dreamed of before. For some youths, acting up is a warped way of "punishing" their parents for getting the divorce. In some cases it is a pathetic cry for attention from parents who seem to have suddenly lost interest in their children. "Mom wasn't home," laments 15-year-old Tina. "There was no discipline and no rules, only an empty house. That's how I got into drugs and sex."

Why, though, do parents sometimes let discipline fall by the wayside after a divorce? Often, it is simply because they, too, are suffering great emotional pain. One divorced woman thus confessed: "I definitely neglected my kids. After the divorce, I was such a mess myself, I just couldn't help them."

Need to Assume Responsibility

Shocking behavior may very well get a rise out of one's parents. But what is really accomplished, other than adding stress to an already stressful situation? The only one "punished" by wrongdoing is the wrongdoer. Admitted a 19-year-old boy who, after his parents' divorce, got involved in drugs, immorality, and theft: "I'm suffering from these mistakes."—Compare Galatians 6:7.

The Bible's advice at Hebrews 12:13 makes sense: "Keep making straight paths for your feet, that what is lame may not be put out of joint." Even where parental discipline is absent, there is no excuse for misconduct, especially if you have been taught righteous principles. "If one knows how to

do what is right and yet does not do it, it is a sin for him." (James 4:17) Assume responsibility for your actions and exercise *self*-discipline. (1 Corinthians 9:27) Avoid actions you may regret for the rest of your life.

Rash Decisions

Another way youths can wreck their future after the divorce of their parents is by making rash decisions. Lacking firm parental guidance, many quit school—with little thought to how they'll support themselves one day. Others jump at the first chance for an escape from their unhappy homelife. A young woman named Lynn recalls: "Coming from a broken home, I felt as if I had a bad past, as if I had done something wrong. I wondered, 'Who would want to marry *me?*' So when a boy from a nice family wanted to have me, I married him, though neither of us was ready for marriage." Tragically, divorce soon followed.

Really, though, it's just common sense to avoid making weighty decisions when you're too confused to think straight. "The shrewd one considers his steps." (Proverbs 14:15) If your parents seem too distracted at this point to give you their ear, why not talk your decisions over with an older friend?

Concern Over Livelihood

No longer having a father at home (as is often the case) may raise yet another seeming threat to your future. For the first time you may find yourself worrying about things you formerly took for granted —food, clothing, shelter, money.

Do you face starvation? Not likely. Parents usually work out some means of supporting their children after a divorce, even if it means that Mom has to take on a secular job. Unfortunately, though, parents often fail to explain any of this. So you may need to be a real son or daughter to your parents and communicate your concerns to them. (Proverbs 4:3) Calmly ask what arrangements for your care have been made. If your parents are too upset to discuss the matter, show some fellow feeling. (1 Peter 3:8) Wait for the right time to ask again. —Proverbs 15:23.

Nevertheless, the book *Surviving the Breakup* realistically warns: "What once supported one family unit must now support two families, forcing a decline in standard of living for every family member, regardless of level of affluence." It may well be, therefore, that you'll have to get used to doing without things you used to enjoy—like new clothes. But the Bible reminds us: "We have brought nothing into the world, and neither can we carry anything out. So, having sustenance and covering, we shall be content with these things." (1 Timothy 6:7, 8) Perhaps you can even assist in working out a new family budget. Remember, too, that Jehovah is "a father of fatherless boys." (Psalm 68:5) You can be sure that he is deeply concerned about your needs.

Effect on One's Own Marriage

Since your parents have failed at marriage, it's understandable that you might worry about your own prospect of enjoying a successful marriage. Fortunately, marital unhappiness is not something you inherit from your parents—like freckles. You are a unique individual, and how any future marriage of yours turns out will depend, *not on* your parents' failings, but on the extent to which you and your mate apply God's Word. Coming from an unhappy home need not stop you from one day enjoying a secure marriage if you build it on unselfish love. Such "love *never fails.*"—1 Corinthians 13:8.

Annette, for example, was raised by an

alcoholic father, who repeatedly abandoned his family. "I'm a bit insecure as a result," admits Annette. "Even now, I hate it when my husband leaves on an errand without assuring me he's coming back." Nevertheless, Annette further says: "I decided that when I got married, my marriage would be a peaceful one and that I would marry someone I knew I could be happy with. I'm happy now and feel my parents' splitting up is pretty much behind me."

Turning It to Your Advantage

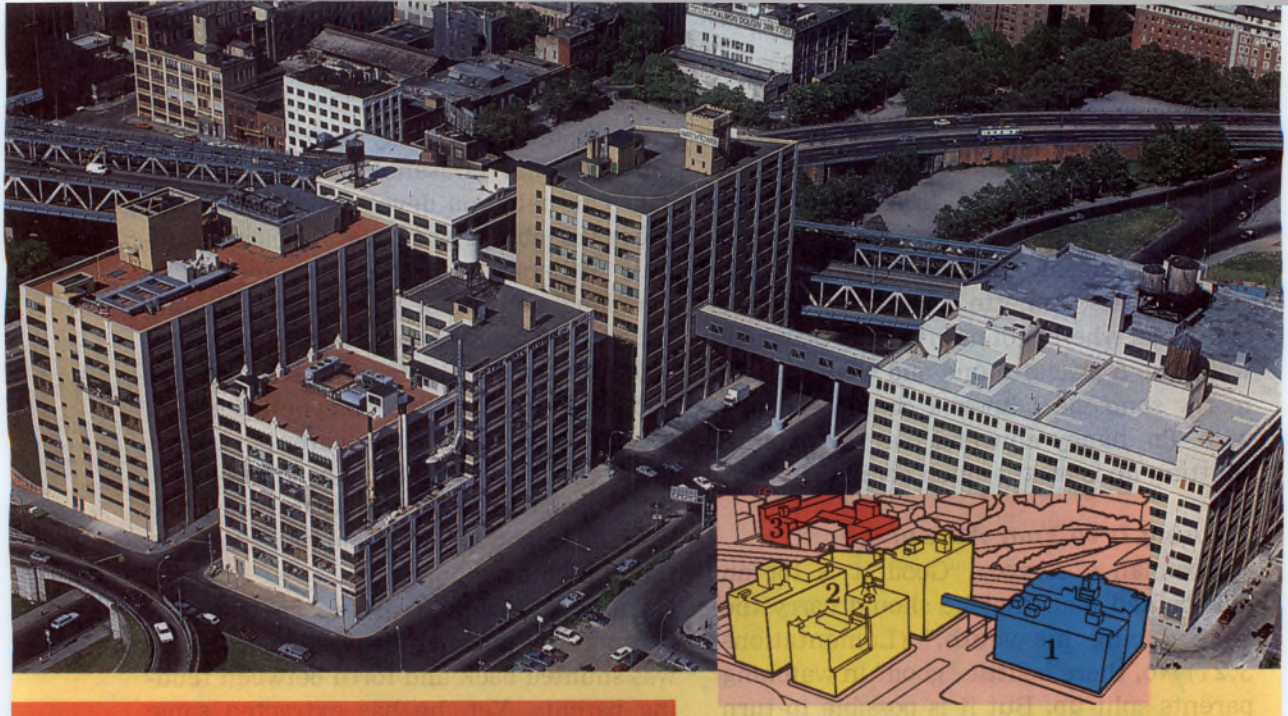
Jeremiah observed: "Good it is for an able-bodied man that he should carry the yoke during his youth." (Lamentations 3:27) No, there is little "good" in watching parents split up. But it is possible to turn even this negative experience to your advantage.

For example, you may be forced to take on additional household responsibilities. This can help you develop skills that will prove valuable later in life. Researcher Judith Wallerstein further observed: "The emotional and intellectual growth [among children of divorced parents] that was catalyzed by the family crisis was impressive and sometimes moving. The youngsters . . . soberly considered their parents' experiences and drew thoughtful conclusions for their own futures. They were concerned with finding ways to avoid the mistakes their parents had made."

Young Paul found this to be true. His parents split up when he was little, and he was shunted back and forth between feuding parents. Yet, he has extracted some benefits from having survived this. "I'm determined not to repeat my parents' mistakes," he says. And having learned to live with an unstable situation, he says: "I'm able to adapt to situations easily." Keith, a young man who has lived through two divorces of his parents, has similarly come out intact. "I have insecurities," he admits. "But I think everyone does. And I don't think I'm going to end up the same way as my parents because I'm determined to use my head a little bit more."

No doubt about it, your parents' breakup is sure to make its mark on your life. But whether that mark is a fading blemish or a gaping wound is to a great extent up to you.

How are a child's prospects for future happiness affected when his parents get divorced?



New Additions for Printing Expansion

SITUATED between approaches to the Brooklyn and Manhattan bridges is the main printery of the worldwide organization of Jehovah's Witnesses. You can see this six-building complex in the photographs above and to the right. A 161-foot-long bridge connects the two new additions, located at 175 Pearl Street and 160 Jay Street (Number 1), with the earlier four-city-block facility across the streets (Number 2).

This 14-foot-wide by 16-foot-high connecting bridge, 51 feet above the streets, was completed in the summer of 1986. It provides access from the pressroom floors of the printery to the sixth floor of 175 Pearl Street.

The Pearl Street building, originally constructed in 1917 and added to in 1947, was purchased by Jehovah's Witnesses on January 7, 1983. By July 1985 the last of the previous tenants had moved out. But even before all of them had left, a construction crew of Witnesses began renovating the building.

First, a new roof was put on, and a 30,000-gallon water tank was installed. To handle the materials movement within the building, a new 12,000-pound-capacity freight elevator was added, and a passenger elevator was replaced. Most of the floors were resurfaced with a tough coat of epoxy. Old exterior walls that no longer met the city's Building Code requirements were replaced with insulated brick walls. Aluminum window frames and thermopane insulated glass units were installed. And the entire building was given a fresh paint job inside and out.

Meanwhile, on December 11, 1986, the building at 160 Jay Street, adjoining 175 Pearl Street, was also purchased. About one third of the building, which was constructed in 1928, is still occupied by tenants. As these move out, cleaning and renovation of this building will also proceed. Eventually, where possible, passageways between the two buildings will be made, thus, in effect, integrating 160 Jay Street with the other five factory buildings.

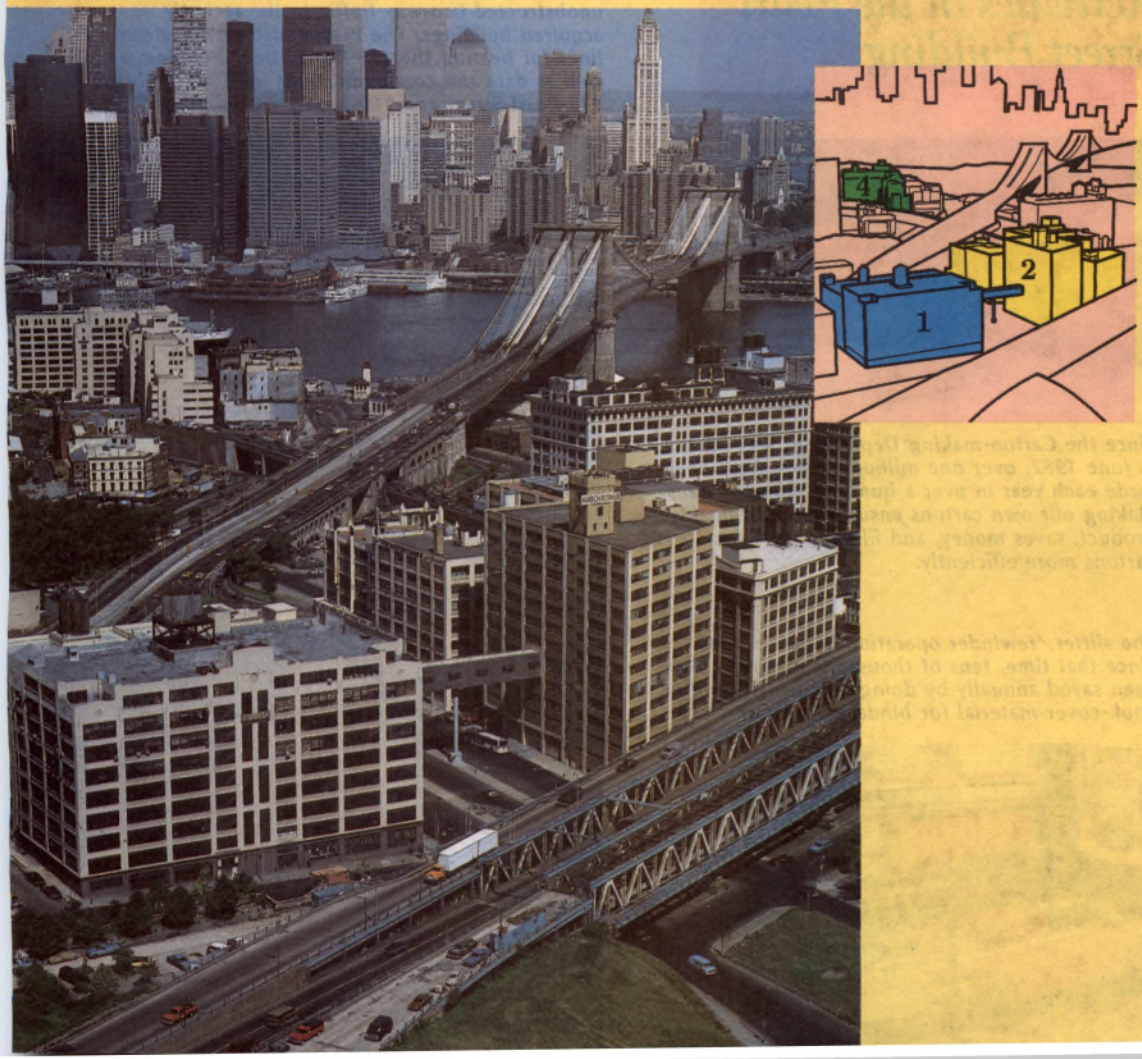
The two recent factory additions (Number 1), which are about equal in size, provide

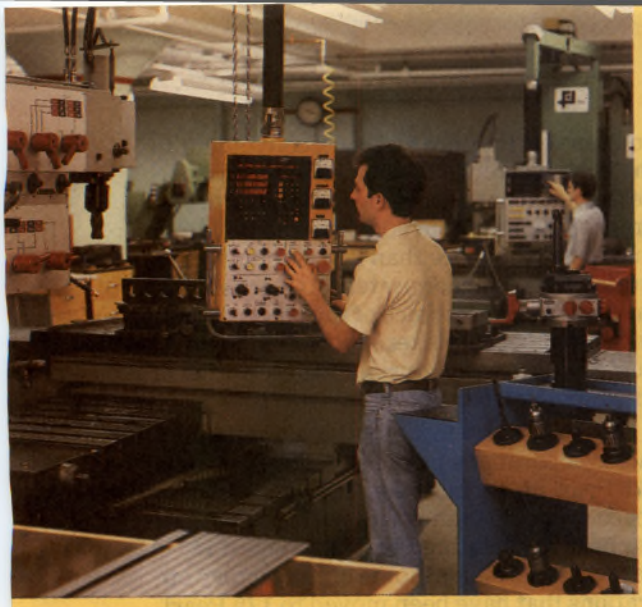
an additional 360,000 square feet or so of floor space. The other four buildings have a combined floor space of 662,000 square feet. So the new additions add about 55 percent more space—a total of some 1,022,000 square feet! That is over 23 acres!

But what if even these newly added facilities prove inadequate to care for the ever-growing demands for more Bible literature? Well, you will notice in the photograph on page 16 the area with the number 3. That land area of over 60,000 square feet has been purchased by Jehovah's Witnesses. If need be, this provision can be utilized for further printing expansion.

Located in the New York harbor area, the printing facilities are ideally situated for shipping Bible literature throughout the world. As you can see, they are also very convenient to the headquarters offices of Jehovah's Witnesses, seen in the accompanying photograph. (Number 4) In addition, the buildings that house the more than 2,500 volunteer workers of the headquarters staff are all within easy walking distance of the office, factory, and shipping complexes.—See *Awake!* of August 22, 1987, for pictures and description of the shipping facilities.

During the past few months, a number of factory operations have been moved into the 175 Pearl Street building. This has made space available in the printery for storing paper near the printing presses, where it is needed. Let's look at some of the factory operations that have been moved to 175 Pearl Street.





These cards, made of dense cardboard, are used to make book covers. They are cut to size on a special machine. An average of 7.2 tons of cards, cut into five standard sizes, is supplied to the bindery each day.

In the Machine Shop, there are 19 lathes, 17 milling machines, 6 drill presses, and 11 grinders. Machining is needed to keep the printing presses and bindery equipment running. Besides a tremendous cost savings as compared with having the work done by a commercial shop, our shop provides quick service for the printery, office, and housing complexes.

Activities in the Pearl Street Building

The 161-foot-long, 175-ton bridge provides for unobstructed two-way traffic to the recently acquired buildings. The bridge also carries steam lines for heating the 175 Pearl Street building, as well as data and communications lines for both the 175 Pearl Street and 160 Jay Street buildings.

Since the Carton-making Department was started in June 1982, over one million cartons have been made each year in over a hundred different sizes. Making our own cartons ensures a better-quality product, saves money, and fills the need for cartons more efficiently.

The slitter/rewinder operation began in 1980. Since that time, tens of thousands of dollars have been saved annually by doing our own slitting of book-cover material for bindery operations.

My Sikh Heritage *And My Search for Truth*

As told by Balbir Singh Deo

WHEN I see the hatred people have for one another because of their religion, it saddens me. Even here in India, the role of so-called Christians in politics and nationalistic wars is well known.

Why, the two world wars were fought almost exclusively by nations saying they are Christian! And the tortures and killings sponsored by "Christians" in the past continue today in such places as Northern Ireland, where Catholics and Protestants fight and kill one another. This constant warring, along with a reputation for buying converts with food, has hardly left a favorable impression. Can you see why so many of us Indians have such a distaste for what is called Christianity?

At the same time, I've been saddened to see the hatred Indians have for one another because one may be a Sikh rather than a Hindu or a Hindu rather than a Muslim. True worshipers, I thought, should love even those who believe differently. Particularly shocking has been the terrorism involving Hindus and Sikhs during the past few years here in India.

Despite the continuing episodes of violence, however, neither I nor my three older brothers and my sister-in-law have felt great fear. My sister and her husband, too, felt protected from the violence. Why, since all seven of us were raised as Sikhs? Before explaining, let me tell you something about the Sikhs.

The Sikh Religion

Sikhism is a monotheistic religion with its own scriptures, initiation rites, marriage and funeral ceremonies, and places of pilgrimage and worship. The world's

15 million Sikhs trace their beliefs back to a 15th-century Indian guru, or teacher, named Nanak. His followers were known as Sikhs, from a Sanskrit word meaning "disciple."

Nanak was born to Hindu parents in the Punjab region of northern India, his birthplace now being a part of Pakistan. The majority of his followers are from the Punjab, although Sikhs have settled throughout India and in other parts of the world. Britain alone has some 300,000 Sikhs.

During Nanak's early life, Hindus and Muslims were in constant conflict, and he was deeply affected by wartime suffering on both sides. When asked which religion he would follow, he replied: 'There is neither Hindu nor Mussulman, so whose path shall I follow? I shall follow God's path. God is neither Hindu nor Mussulman, and the path that I follow is God's.'

Although not intending to establish a new religion, Nanak became the leader of a religious movement. Like others of his day, he taught that the caste system prevailing in India was evil. He summed up his message in three basic commandments: Work, worship, and give in charity.

The Final Guru

Believers in Guru Nanak understood that it is through the guru, or teacher, that God reveals himself. This necessitated successors, so over a period of some 200 years, ten different gurus took the lead of the growing number of Sikhs. Finally the tenth guru, Gobind Singh, indicated that his successor would not be a man. Rather, the sacred writings of Nanak, later Sikh gurus, and Hindu and Muslim "saints" would take the place of human gurus. These writings, collected into a book known as the Guru Granth Sahib, came to be viewed by Sikhs as the word of God.

The Guru Granth Sahib book is given the same honor and respect that the former human gurus received. The book is displayed and read in a special room in Sikh homes. Within the gurdwaras (places of Sikh worship), there are no idols or formal services, nor is there an altar or a pulpit. The Guru Granth Sahib is placed upon cushions on a raised platform and covered by a canopy. Its verses are read and sung to listeners.

Gobind Singh, the last human guru, also formed an organization called the Khalsa (pure ones). This is a special brotherhood of Sikhs who are willing to commit their lives totally to religious principles. In order to eliminate any caste distinctions indicated by their previous surnames, Khalsa members took the surname Singh, meaning "Lion." Female members of the Khalsa assumed the surname Kaur (Lioness and Princess). Such surnames are at times followed by an identifying family name.

The wearing of the five K's was also required in order to distinguish male Khalsa members by their appearance. First, *kesh,* an uncut beard and long hair neatly wrapped up on the head. Second, the hair was secured with a *kangha,* or comb, and normally covered by a turban. Third, there was *kachs,* or short pants, worn as an undergarment, and, fourth, *kara,* a steel bracelet. Finally, a *kirpan,* or sword, was carried for the defense of religious beliefs. These five K's constituted an identifying uniform, separating the Sikhs from other Indian groups. Although sometimes modified, Khalsa members continue such traditions today.

Unlike Hindus, who have many gods, Sikhs believe in one god. Sikhs also reject asceticism, fasting, and vegetarianism. But

A book known as the Guru Granth Sahib came to be viewed by Sikhs as the word of God

like Hindus, Sikhs generally feel that man is bound to a cycle of rebirths unless released through enlightenment. The word of God, imparted by the guru, is believed to be the only means of such release. It is thought that man's ultimate purpose is to be united with God, free from the physical body.

A Personal Search

Though raised as a Sikh, happenings in my life raised questions. At the same time, the upbringing by my father allowed me to keep an open mind as I encountered ideas different from those of our family.

My mother died when I was seven years old. This left me feeling helpless and confused. Relatives tried to console our family, saying, 'Remember that the good die young' and, 'She is at peace in heaven.' I would write her letters and then burn them, hoping that by this means she would come to know how much we missed her. Still I felt an emptiness, as I had no hope of ever seeing her again.

As I grew older, I more seriously investigated Sikhism, regularly reading the Guru Granth Sahib and fervently praying to Guru Nanak. Although we believed in one god, it was common for us also to pray to Nanak, whom we viewed as one who could help us come closer to God. Still, I puzzled over why people did bad things.

Desiring that we have the best education possible, my father sent us to a "Christian" school. While a few professed Christians seemed sincere, it was easy to see the hypocrisy among the majority of them. We and other non-Christians at the school were told that the cost of our education would be covered by a foreign sponsor if we attended church and took part in its activities. Such offers appeared like a bribe to me.

But when I was 17 years old, something happened that sparked my interest in the Bible. A friend told me that wars and many other modern-day problems were predicted in the Bible. I didn't believe that could be true, so when I was shown Matthew chapter 24, I was amazed at the things prophesied. Surely, I thought, the Bible must contain much truth.

The Witnesses Call

One day in 1976 a young man, one of Jehovah's Witnesses, appeared at our home in Calcutta. He left me a copy of the publication *Your Youth—Getting the Best out of It,* which I read completely through in one day. He returned and invited me to a meeting at the Kingdom Hall. I attended, and immediately I was impressed.

Although I was casually dressed in a T-shirt and jeans, there were clearly no distinctions made among those present as to clothing, economic status, age, race, or family background. And there was sincere warmth among the people. I was invited to sit in the front row, where I listened to a meaningful talk on the question, "Does the Bible Contradict Itself?" I began to study the Bible with the help of a Witness I met

at the Kingdom Hall, and not long after, I was regularly attending all the meetings.

What I learned was so different from what I had heard at the "Christian" school I had attended. Jehovah's Witnesses do not worship Jesus. Rather, they worship Almighty God, the One that Jesus himself worshiped. Moreover, I learned that God's name, as it is given in the Bible, is Jehovah. —Psalm 83:18.

At the meetings in the Kingdom Hall, we really studied the Bible, something we didn't do in the "Christian" school. It pleased me when I learned that there is a big difference between the Catholic and Protestant religions, which claim to be Christian, and what the Bible actually teaches. Jehovah's Witnesses showed me from the Bible that Jehovah God condemns the support that the "Christian" religions give to wars promoted by their political leaders.—John 17:14; 18:36; Matthew 26:52; Isaiah 2:4.

Understandably, my associates began to view me in a different light. 'It's only an emotional experience you're going through,' my friends claimed. Relatives were very surprised and questioned my stand. However, learning the truth of the Bible has not been a passing emotional experience for me. Rather, it has enriched my life and given me deep satisfaction. Where else can one find such a worldwide brotherhood where each member genuinely practices love—not in words alone but in deeds as well?

My Family Takes an Interest

My family too felt that Bible study was just a fad and expected it to pass soon. Eventually, my eldest brother Rajinder decided to accompany me to one of these meetings. He was warmly welcomed and likewise was impressed by what he saw. He began to attend with me. But since our Bible interest was vastly different from our religious upbringing, neither of us openly discussed it much at home. This created some problems for Rajinder, recently married.

His wife, Sunita, began to worry when her husband went off with me to the Kingdom Hall several times each week, leaving her behind. 'What is really going on?' she wondered. After some discussion, misunderstandings were cleared up, and Rajinder invited his wife to join us. While at first not completely following what was being discussed, Sunita began attending meetings with us and learning the Bible.

Another brother, Bhupinder, started to take an interest in our activities and could see the value of what we were learning and applying in our lives. He too began to study. Our remaining brother, Jaspal, did not like our associating with Jehovah's Witnesses and was fond of ridiculing me. But after some time, he came to appreciate the wisdom of Bible counsel and started studying. As a result of these studies, I was baptized as one of Jehovah's Witnesses in 1978. Rajinder, Sunita, Bhupinder, and Jaspal were baptized in 1979.

Then, after five years in England, my sister Bavi and her husband Kartar returned to India. Bavi felt that becoming Jehovah's Witnesses was our decision, but personally she wanted nothing to do with the Witnesses. We respected her feelings and did not try to push our beliefs on her. It was not long, however, before both Bavi and Kartar began to ask us many questions. Eventually, this led to a Bible study. Their faith in Jehovah and love for him began to grow, and this served as a protection during a time of religious violence in India.

Truth Was a Protection

The night of October 31, 1984, the day of Mrs. Gandhi's assassination, Bavi and Kartar hardly slept at all. By then they were living away from the rest of our family in northern India. There, many Sikhs were being killed by mobs. Some residents readily identified the homes inhabited by Sikhs —in effect giving a death sentence to their Sikh neighbors.

The following morning Bavi and Kartar awoke to a nightmare of death and destruction. Despite what was going on around them, and though they bear the surname Singh, they were not harmed. Although they were only studying, their neighbors knew them as Jehovah's Witnesses, and their home was not attacked. Likewise in Calcutta, my brothers are known in the community as ministers of Jehovah's Witnesses, and this has been a protection for them.

With my wife at the branch office in India

Father's Reaction

It is true that our Sikh father has not seen the outcome he expected from his four sons and one daughter. My three brothers, while helping with the family business, do not have the drive, so common among Indian businessmen, to increase transitory material riches. Their minds and hearts are firmly fixed on the lasting spiritual riches and the peaceful new earth that Jehovah God has promised mankind. One of my brothers serves as an elder in the Christian congregation. Two of us are ministerial servants. My dear wife, Lavinia, and I also have the privilege of serving as full-time ministers in India. And my sister and her husband, now living in Africa, became baptized Witnesses in 1986.

Our father has seen the fine effects that the Bible's righteous standards have had upon us. These are things that make him happy. When he speaks of his offspring to others, he expresses pride in us. 'Tell me what wrong my children are doing as Jehovah's Witnesses, and I will throw them out of the house,' he has challenged.

My father has come to recognize that our efforts are toward something far more valuable and long lasting than the acquisition of fortune and prestige. And he has personally seen the protection we received during the recent time of violence. It is our fervent desire that one day he, along with many other sincere seekers of truth, will join us in worshiping the true God in a genuine brotherhood earth wide.

EARTHQUAKES

How You Can Prepare for Survival!

"We have no knowledge of what we should do. Panic would break out." So said a meteorologist from Pakistan regarding the effect an earthquake would have in his land. In reality, few people know what to do in an earthquake. Nevertheless, the spate of disastrous earthquakes in this century has led to increased research about earthquake protection. "Awake!" has thus interviewed a number of researchers from different lands. Since their advice has proved to be remarkably similar, it is hoped that this information will be of use to readers in many lands.

Y. Ishiyama, Building Research Institute, Ministry of Construction, Government of Japan

By *Awake!* correspondent in Japan

"THERE was a rumbling," recalls Michiko, "and then a tremendous jolt that seemed to throw our wooden house up in the air. The noise of things crashing down and dishes and glasses breaking terrified me more than anything else. Suddenly, our home was contorted and balancing precariously on its foundations.

"My mother did not panic. She calmly told us to change into outdoor clothes and collect the things that were important to us. She explained that it was only a matter of time before our home would be destroyed, so we were to abandon it and go to the hospital where my father was working."

Michiko was just a girl of 12 when she experienced one of the greatest disasters of this century—the 1923 earthquake that reduced two thirds of Tokyo and the whole of Yokohama to ashes. Thousands of homes crumbled. And when the dust settled, over 143,000 were dead. Interestingly, though, a government report issued later stated: "Those who died because of their homes collapsing accounted for about one tenth" of the total fatalities. What, then, accounted for the other 130,000 deaths?

The earthquake had struck at two minutes to noon—a time when many housewives had started fires to prepare the midday meal. The result? Countless fires

broke out in a matter of seconds! Michiko continues: "By the time we left, hysterical people packed the narrow streets. All were desperate to get away from the fires. We edged our way into the crowds. My mother told us to do our best to stay together and also where to meet in case we got separated. I remember the amazement I felt at the things people had snatched from their homes—from rice pots to heavy chests of drawers. In their confusion, they had brought things that would be of no use whatsoever!"

Earthquake photos, Yokohama City Fire Bureau

Twelve-year-old Michiko at the time of the great Japan earthquake in 1923. Note the huge, grounded ships and the devastation of Yokohama

Air, intensely heated by the fires, rose to a high altitude, sucking in fresh air below that intensified the fires even more. Tornadoes formed, flinging burning debris everywhere. Tens of thousands of people stampeded their way into open parks for safety. The next day they were found piled four and five deep—those on top burned to death and those underneath suffocated.

Water mains were broken and communications were disrupted. In the next few days, rumors abounded that foreigners were poisoning what little drinking water there was. Vigilante groups formed and murdered foreigners. The military police arbitrarily murdered vigilantes. Unwarranted fear and panic caused the breakdown of order even among the police.

Michiko, however, was shielded from all of this. Within three hours of the earthquake, Michiko's mother had led her children to their father, following plans they had already made as a family. He, in turn, took them to a place of safety and protected them from the resulting turmoil. "How grateful I am to my parents," says Michiko, "that they remained calm and knew what to do."

Japanese authorities have since concluded that fire, panic, and rumors are by far the most serious dangers in connection with earthquakes. A government report concluded that 83 percent of the deaths in the 1923 quake resulted from homes catching fire. Fire continues to be a threat in Japan, as wood is used extensively in construction. The danger of fire is reduced considerably

in countries where other materials, such as concrete, are more commonly used. Nevertheless, panic and rumors are lethal dangers almost anywhere a quake might strike. The experience of Michiko's family illustrates that these problems can be averted by advance preparation.

Advance Preparation

How can you similarly plan ahead? First, sit down with your family and select some potential places of refuge in your neighborhood. Arrange where to meet in case you are separated, and establish which routes each can take to get there. Discuss dangerous places that should be avoided, such as gasoline stands (stations), which could explode. Because of the danger of fire, teach your family how to turn off the gas and electricity where they enter your home. Make sure everyone knows how to put out fires. If you will need help with old or sick people, arrange this with your neighbors.

Do you live in an earthquake zone? Then it may be practical to secure heavy furniture that is likely to topple over. (It is said that in a California earthquake, a grand piano on casters rolled around the room, injuring several people.) Heavy and dangerous objects, including containers of flammable liquids, should be stored down low or at least at the back of shelves. Also, anchor any propane-gas cylinders that may be on hand.

When an Earthquake Strikes

Above all, *do not panic!* The first quake is usually the most severe and seldom lasts more than a minute.* If you are able to move around, though, get busy. Extinguish all sources of fire. Gas leaking from broken pipes means danger, as do exposed wires and appliances left on. Therefore, turn off the gas and electricity at their sources as quickly as you can. Open a door or a large window—which could get jammed shut—so that you will have an escape route. Then get under a desk or a table. A desk's drawers serve as reinforcement. Thus, desks are often able to support several tons of weight without being crushed. Wooden desks are usually stronger than metal ones. Dr. Yuji Ishiyama of the Building Research Institute of Japan told *Awake!:* "I firmly believe that telling people to take refuge under a desk far surpasses any other advice one could give."

If no desk is available, crouch or lie *by* the side of a sofa, bed, or some other strong piece of furniture that will not topple over. Do not crawl *under,* as the legs can easily snap. Try to protect your head. Because of

* Please note that the following instructions will *not* apply if you are in a house that is very old or not reinforced. Experts say that if an earthquake finds you in such a fragile building, it is best to get out immediately! "Put a big cushion or chair over your head for protection from falling tiles, etc., and move quickly," advise Japanese authorities.

Earthquake 'Survival Kit'

Following a disaster, one must often wait two or three days for help. So it is recommended that families living in earthquake zones always keep on hand a three-day supply of water and food. (Canned or dried food is recommended.) If it is necessary for you to evacuate your home, authorities recommend taking along a 'survival kit' consisting of the following:

1. A three-day supply of water.
2. A first-aid kit.
3. A flashlight.
4. A transistor radio, in order to receive *accurate* information and instructions.
5. Clothing, strong shoes, blankets, underclothing, towel, and tissues.

having so many walls in a small area, the bathroom may very well be your safest room.

Ironically, though, adobe homes survived the recent Mexico City quake, while buildings 8 to 20 stories high toppled. Professor Motohiko Hakuno of Tokyo University's Earthquake Research Institute told *Awake!* that this had to do with the peculiar "resonance" of the earthquake wave. Buildings react differently to different frequency waves. "Besides not knowing when an earthquake will hit," added Professor Hakuno, "we do not know what kind it will be or which buildings will be most affected. This makes it difficult to lay down rules for safety."

"Stand in the doorway," say experts in countries where door frames and lintels are built strong enough to support the weight of the building above and around. This is not the case in Japan.

What if a fire breaks out? Obviously, you should deal with it as soon as possible, perhaps calling your neighbors for assistance. Remember that however bad the fire, there is usually breathable air just above the floor.

Suppose, though, that a quake finds you in a location other than your home?

Large Buildings: Do not attempt to rush outside, as elevators and stairs can be death traps during earthquakes. If you cannot get under a desk, get near pillars or other main supports of the building. Stay away from objects that could fall on you, and avoid glass, which might break. Oftentimes, the managers of schools, department stores, and theaters have set procedures to follow in case of an emergency. So follow instructions and do not act independently.

City Streets: Get away from telephone poles, hanging signs, and signboards. Watch out for falling roof tiles and breaking glass. If there are no parks or other open spaces nearby, seek refuge in a well-constructed building.

Underground Railway Passages and Stations: These have held up well in quakes in Mexico, Japan, and Greece. The greatest danger is fire. People, though, often panic at the thought of being trapped and make a mad dash for the stairs and exits. It is best, however, to remain underground until the initial earthquake is over and wait for instructions.

Automobiles: Roads must be left open for fire engines, ambulances, and emergency services. In Japan the roads are narrow, and we are thus told to pull over to the side of the road, stop, turn on the radio, and wait for instructions.

Beaches: Get to high ground as fast as possible. There may be tsunamis, or seismic sea waves, up to a hundred feet high and traveling at hundreds of miles per hour! Usually, the second and third tsunamis are even stronger than the first.

Of course, it is hoped that you will never experience an earthquake's horror. But with adequate preparation, many people have survived major disasters. Michiko, now 76 years old, says: "When I was a child, old people said major earthquakes came once in 60 years. I have often thought that their words have not applied in my lifetime. I have known countless severe earthquakes." Yes, we live in the times of which Jesus prophesied that there would be "earthquakes in one place after another." (Matthew 24:7) So be prepared! Stay calm and obey warnings and instructions issued by the proper authorities. You will increase your chances of surviving an earthquake!

From Our Readers

When Memorizing Comes Easy

I want to confirm how beneficial your article was on memorizing. (July 22, 1987) My four-year-old has spent considerable time with me in the house-to-house ministry. To help keep her from getting restless, I had her memorize Psalm 83:18, which she was delighted to recite at the door, with her Bible open to it. Within a couple of weeks, I read your article on memorizing and resolved to help her learn more scriptures. This month she is reciting John 17:3 at the door when appropriate. This week a man declined my sharing a Bible verse with him, and just as he was starting to close the door, my four-year-old daughter said: "Could I share a scripture?" Immediately he said yes and reopened the door.

B. C., United States

Hope for the Mentally Ill

For 12 years I have been a victim of mental illness, suffering much from pain, disillusionment, and lack of understanding on the part of others, despite medical care and attention from a loving wife. You see, I would not accept the fact that I was mentally ill but would put my troubles down to other causes. Your articles "Hope for the Mentally Ill" (September 8, 1986) prompted me to do an about-face. I came to understand that my illness was not necessarily of demonic origin, as I had thought, and so accepted alternative explanations and submitted to medical treatment. How grateful I am to *Awake!* for the help it has given me in this and many other matters!

A. A. C., Brazil

Getting Along With a Brother or Sister

I would like to thank you for the article "Young People Ask . . . Why Is It So Hard to Get Along With My Brother and Sister?" (July 22, 1987) I am 16 and have two brothers. They often get on my nerves, and I have sometimes even wished something bad would happen to them. Nevertheless, I realize that deep down I love them. It has taken real effort to avoid getting angry each time they tease me. The last paragraphs of the article under the subtitles "Mom Likes You Best!" and "Overcoming Jealousy" have helped me a lot. I can see now that I was just like Joseph's brothers who were jealous of him.

S. L., Guadeloupe

I want to thank you for the article "Young People Ask . . . Why Is It So Hard to Get Along With My Brother and Sister?" I have a big brother with whom I always used to fight, but I'm getting on much better with him now. And since I've read your article, I'm going to try much harder. Thank you again.

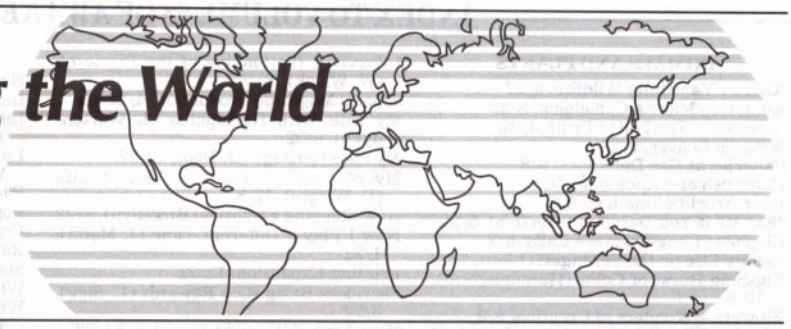
L. M., England

Papal Articles

As Catholic Christians, we read your informative magazines with interest, and we thank you for presenting factual information about the pope. ("Prayers for Peace—Who Listens?" June 8, 1987; "The Pope's Visit to Australia—Just a Pilgrimage?" July 8, 1987) Even though your teachings are contrary to those of Catholicism, we are happy to see the fairness with which you deal with such subjects.

P. O., Federal Republic of Germany

Watching the World



Fearful Surgeons

Surgeons face a perplexing dilemma with regard to operating on patients who test positive for AIDS. "At this time, it is our policy not to do the surgery," says Dr. W. Dudley Johnson, a prominent heart surgeon. "We are dealing with a procedure that has a high blood profile. There is blood all over the place. There is an absolute danger from needle sticks." A growing number of surgeons seem to have the same fear. In one survey, over 90 percent of the surgeons responding agreed with Dr. Johnson's practice of turning such patients away. "In truth," notes *Newsweek* magazine, "neither the ancient Hippocratic oath nor the modern code of medical ethics *requires* a doctor to treat a patient if he doesn't want to." Dr. Johnson did concede that as yet he knew of no doctor who had contracted AIDS from a patient. "I want to keep it that way," he declared.

Clergymen Rebaptized

Two Protestant clergymen, Lutheran Reinhart Weber and Klaus Hoffmann of the United Church, "were rebaptized 'biblically'" in Lensahn, Federal Republic of Germany, reports the Ecumenical Press Service. Infant baptism, explained retired pastor Weber, is "not according to the Bible." Hoffmann even asked regional leaders of the Evangelical Church "to stop the baptism of very young children," notes the report. The reaction? He has been suspended from his pastoral duties.

Psychotic Polar Bears

Penned-up polar bears become "psychotic," reports *The Sunday Times* of London. More than half of the 15 polar bears now kept in British zoos are affected, it says.

Keeping such an active and inquisitive animal in restricted zoo conditions seems to cause severe mental disturbance in the bears, which is evidenced by their meaningless pacing and swaying movements coupled with, in some cases, self-mutilation.

Both Mates Suffer

Men with marriage problems are more susceptible to disease than are those who are happily married, say researchers Janice Kiecolt-Glaser and her husband, Ronald Glaser, of Ohio State University. Though previous studies have shown this to be true of unhappily married women, until recently the extent to which the male immune system was weakened by marital stress was not known. However, blood tests on men with troubled marriages showed them less able to ward off two common herpes virus infections. In addition, a study conducted by researcher Christopher Coe, of the University of Wisconsin, suggested that "emotional influences on physical health can persist for a long time after the emotional problem has been resolved," reports the *New York Post*.

Killer Stress

In 1987 in Japan, sudden deaths of top business executives in their 40's, 50's, and 60's jumped to three times that of the same period the previous year. Their deaths were attributed to "unimaginable stress" that accompanies the post of today's top executives, notes Tokyo's *Mainichi Shimbun* newspaper. Though all were said to have had strong confidence in their health, harsh business conditions aggravated by inflation contributed to their stressful life. To counteract the trend, Japan's Federation of Employers Association has issued eight rules to prevent stress. The rules include: Avoiding hard schedules, exercising more than 30 minutes every day, and laughing.

INDEX TO VOLUME 68 OF *AWAKE!*

ANIMALS AND PLANTS

Africa's Vanishing Wildlife, 9/22
Alligators Make a Comeback, 8/22
Almonds—The Nutty Fruit, 4/22
Autumn Leaves, 9/22
Canaries as Gas Detectors, 9/8
Clownfish and Anemone, 7/22
Deer, World's Smallest, 5/8
"Eat Me if You Dare!" (Pufferfish), 5/22
Elephant Long-Distance Calls, 6/8
Family Life on the Serengeti (Lion), 7/22
Flashing Burst of Color (Hummingbird), 10/8
Flowers—Wonders of Creation, 8/8
Forests, What Is Happening to Our? 6/22
Forests in the Sea, 3/22
Giraffes, 11/8
"I'm a Truffle Hunter!" 6/8
Lamb Power, 10/22
Multipurpose Animal (Reindeer), 3/8
Ostrich and Stork, 1/8
Plants Under Stress, 8/22
"Reluctant Hero" (Armadillo), 5/8
"Technology Can't Improve" (Mule), 7/8
"We'll Be Back in 2004!" (Cicadas), 11/22
When Kelp Comes Ashore, 3/22
Winter Showers, Desert Flowers, 5/22

ECONOMICS AND EMPLOYMENT

Money—Origin and Use, 2/8
Trade War—How It Affects You, 8/22

HEALTH AND MEDICINE

Abortion, 4/8
Depression—You Can Win the Fight! 10/22
Good Health Is Good for Business, 2/22
Headaches, 9/22
Health for All Mankind—When? 5/8
'I Thought Blood Transfusion Was Life,' 8/8
My Life With Hemophilia, 6/22
Phobias, 2/8
Tobacco's Menace, 6/22

HUMAN RELATIONS

Depression—How Others Can Help, 11/8
Disasters—A Time for Acts of Love, 7/8
Facing the Loss of a Child, 8/8
Happiness of Giving, 11/22
Time to Possess, Time to Share, 3/22
Train Your Child From Infancy! 5/22

JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES

As a Lawyer, I Put God to the Test (J. McCabe), 2/8
Assembly Halls—A Sign of What? 9/8
Cambodia—Surviving a Nightmare (K. Sou), 2/22
Expansion at Watchtower Farms, 2/22
Fast Work Far North! (Norway), 3/8
Finding the Right Army (S. Soostmeyer), 4/22
From Black Militants to Jehovah's Witnesses (L. Whitehead), 7/22
Gilead Students, 3/8
How Knowing Greek Led Me to Know God (N. Kip), 3/22
I Gained My Freedom—In Prison! (E. Barber), 9/22
I Sought a Simpler Life Through Drugs (L. Stansel), 11/22
I Survived the Sinking of the *Bismarck* (W. Wieck), 10/8
Japan's Magazine Production, 4/22
My Life With Hemophilia (J. Wortendyke), 6/22
My Sikh Heritage (B. Deo), 12/22
My Struggle to Leave a Violent Life (D. Wirges), 12/8
New Shipping Facilities (Brooklyn), 8/22
Now I Play a Different Tune (J. María), 1/22
Printing Expansion, 12/22
Sacrifices Bring Rich Rewards (L. Sigg), 8/22
"Speaking of Working Together," 1/22
Talk of the Town, 3/22
Thankful for What I Have (L. Stead), 5/8
U.S. Constitution and Jehovah's Witnesses, 10/22
Wisdom Beyond Her Years, 10/22

LANDS AND PEOPLES

Africa Ever Be Free From Hunger? 3/8
Africa's Vanishing Wildlife, 9/22
Cambodia—Surviving a Nightmare, 2/22
Do You Heed Warnings? (Japan), 7/8
Florida's Looe Key, 1/22
Four Hundred Died, I Survived (El Salvador), 11/8
Hawaii's Fountains of Fire, 5/8
Li River, 11/22
Mute Stones Speak Out (Mexico), 2/8
Namibia—Vast, Lonely, Inviting, 9/8
Oregon's Blue Jewel in a Volcano, 12/8
Rio's Sugarloaf and Hunchback, 8/22
Segovia's Amazing Aqueduct, 12/8
Singapore's World of Birds, 7/8
Using Your Head—The African Way! 8/8
Where Did It Start? (Morris Dancing), 4/8
Yellowstone Park, Devil's Monument, 11/22

MISCELLANEOUS

Allan Kardec—Pioneer of Spiritism, 5/22
Cassette Tapes, Tips for, 11/8
College Education—Preparation for What? 1/8
Crossword Puzzles, 2/8, 4/8, 6/8, 8/8, 10/8, 12/8
Does It Really Come Back? (Boomerang), 1/22
Earthquake, What to Do in an, 3/8
Earthquakes—Prepare for Survival! 12/22
Eyes in the Sky, 4/22
Gambling—Does Anyone Win? 9/8
Glaciers—"Awesome Ice," 10/8
Golden Gate Bridge, 11/8
Jade—And the Stories Behind It, 9/22
Language, Miracle of, 11/22
Light on Your Subject (Photography), 7/8
Reading Aloud, 6/22
Snow, Marvel of, 2/22
Snowflakes, Wonder of, 12/22
Sunsets, 12/8
Time—Master or Slave? 12/8
Ultimate Questions, 1/22
What Do Clothes Mean to You? 2/8
When Memorizing Comes Easy, 7/22
Why All That Dust? 2/8

RELIGION

Homosexuality and the Clergy, 6/22
India's Catholic Church, 9/22
Liberation Theology—Help the Poor? 11/8
Liberation Theology—Solution for Third World? 8/8
Papal Visit Reopens Old Wounds, 11/22
Pope's Visit to Australia, 7/8
Prayers for Peace—Who Listens? 6/8
Religion in Politics, 4/22
Spanish Inquisition, 10/8
Who Suffered the Holocaust? 11/22
Why Bad Things Happen to Good People, 10/8
Why Is Luther's House in Shambles? 9/8
Why Is My Church Divided? 12/22
Why Is the Vatican Worried? 3/22

SCIENCE

Bible Is Scientific, 1/22
Four-Color Printing, 1/8
How Did Life on Earth Begin? 1/22
Phones on Wheels, 6/22
Satellite Television, 8/22
Talking and Seeing Through Glass, 5/22
When a Fact Is Not a Fact (Evolution), 7/22

THE BIBLE'S VIEWPOINT

Can the Bible Help the Lonely? 11/8
Civil Disobedience Ever Justified? 9/8
Does God Have Time for Me? 1/8
Jehovah's Witnesses—Different, 2/8
Speaking in Tongues, 4/8
Superstitions Harmless? 5/8
What Happens to the Soul After Death? 3/8
Who Can Silence the 'Cry of Hunger'? 6/8
Women Belong in the Pulpit? 7/8

WORLD AFFAIRS AND CONDITIONS

Computing Fraud and Sabotage, 9/8
Coping With Today's Hectic Pace, 2/22
Earth—How Much Will We Leave Our Children? 7/22
1987—Year of the Homeless, 7/8
Terrorism—A Scourge Forever? 1/8
Watch Out! Spies About! 11/22
'Who Will Watch Our Children?' 12/8
World Since 1914, 3/8, 3/22, 4/8, 4/22, 5/8, 5/22, 6/8, 6/22

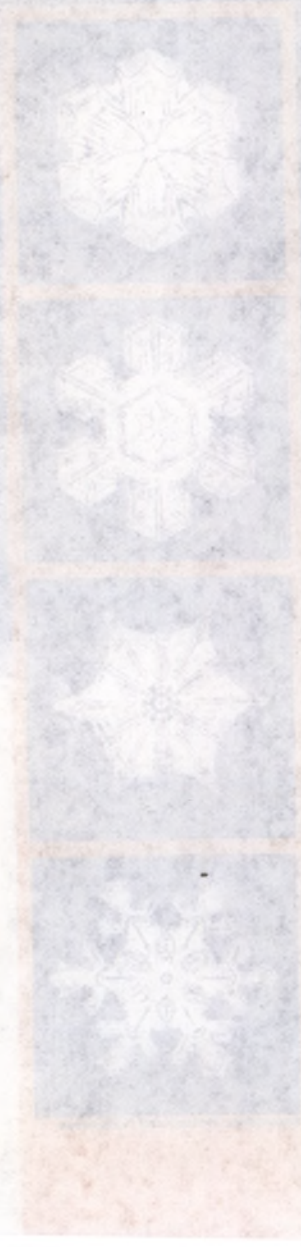
YOUNG PEOPLE ASK . . .

Acne, 2/22
Being God's Friend, 3/8, 11/22
Bible Really True? 6/8
Can I Beat Stress? 4/8
Crushes, 1/8, 1/22
Getting Along With Brother and Sister, 7/22, 9/22
Happiness as an Only Child? 5/22
How Can I Face My Grief? 12/8
Loneliness, 6/22, 8/8
Losing, Controlling My Temper, 4/22, 5/8
Lying All That Bad? 10/8
Masturbation, 9/8, 11/8
Parents' Divorce, 10/22, 12/22
Prayer Really Help? 3/22
Serve God if Parents Oppose? 7/8
Why Be Neat? 8/22
Why Be Thankful? 2/8

The Wonder of Snowflakes

Snowflakes, Bentley and Humphreys

Have you marveled at the millions of delicate, featherlike flakes that fall during a snowstorm? Usually floating in the wind for an hour or more, each snowflake becomes a masterpiece of construction. Amazingly, no two have been discovered that are exactly alike, and there are enough possible combinations of patterns to suggest that there will never be such a discovery. Yet, all are six-sided in shape!

Why do all snowflakes have six sides or arms? "Lots of people have thought that there has to be some mechanical equivalent of somebody sitting at the center of the snowflake and telling all of them to do the same thing," notes Dr. James S. Langer of the Institute for Theoretical Physics in Santa Barbara, California.

Indeed, the more scientists study snowflakes, the more they appreciate, as "The New York Times" reported January 6, 1987: "Snowflakes obey mathematical laws of surprising subtlety." Do you not agree that snowflakes are a tribute to the wisdom of their Maker? "For to the snow he says, 'Fall earthward.' "—Job 37:6.